GREAT BOOKS OF THE WESTERN WORLD

ROBERT MAYNARD HUTCHINS *EDITOR IN CHIEF*

TOLSTOY

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

War and Peace

BY LEO TOLSTOY

Translated by LOUISE *and* AYLMER MAUDE



WILLIAM BENTON *Publisher*

ENCYCLOPÆDIA BRITANNICA INC

CHICAGO LONDON TORONTO GENEVA SYDNEY TOKYO

BIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

LEO TOLSTOY 18 8—1910

COUNT LEO N OLAYEVICH TOLSTOY was born h f mil estate of Y n

tances. H had, h we er d ne a great deal f read g, f Fre ch, E gl sh d Russ n n els, th New Testam t V ltaire a d Hegel. Th tho exe ci the greatest i fl e ce pon h m t thi t m was R usseau he ead his co pl t wo ks d f r sometime wore bo t his neck med ll n of R usseau

Immedi ely pon lea g the un ers ty T lst y returned t his estat d perhaps n p red by his e th s m f Rousseau pre pared t des te h mself to gr culture a d to impro the co dit n f hi erfs. H s first ttempt at social f rm pro ed d sappo ti g and after ix m nths h w thdrew t Moscow d St. P ersb rg wh h ga e him lfo er to th rreeul l f charact ri c f h s cl ss d time. In 8 d erm ed t escape my debts d, m re than thing ls my habi ts, h l ed th Army ge tleman volunteer d w t th Ca casus. Wh le t Tiflis, p epar g f his exam t cad t, he r th first po t n f the trilogy *Ch ldhood Boyhood d Y th* n wh ch he el brated th happ ess f be w h N ture see g her mmu g w th her He al so bega *Th C ss k* w th th tent n f ho g that cult re is the e emy of happ ess. Although co ti his army life, h gradually cam t ealiz hat mil tary ca teer is t f m d th sooner I get out of t d des t mys lf t rely t l t ra ure the bet er His *Sevast p l Sk t h* (8 5) were so essful that Czar N chola issued peci l ders tha h sh uld be emo ed from post f da ge

R urn t St. P tersburg, T lst y was re ed w th grea f n both th offici l d literary ci cles f the cap tal. He soon became nterested n the popul r progress re mo e ment of the t me nd i 18 7 he decided to go abro d nd study the ed cat onal nd mu c pal sy tems of other cou tr es. That year nd ri led n Europe At Y s

s harmful He tarted m maz ne to pro his n t ns n ed cation nd t the same t e served as n offi ial arb trat r for grieva ces between the nobles a d the recently ema ic pated se fs. By the end of 86z he was so ex hau ted that he d cont ued h s ct it es nd *retired to the teppes t drink k m s f r l is* health.

Tol t y had been co templ t ng m rri ge *fo some time,* and n 862 he marr ed Sopl e Behrs, teen years his ju and the da h ter f fashionable Moscow doct r The *early married l fe t Y snaya P lyan* w tranquil. F m ly cares occup ed th Countess, d in tl e course f he l fe she bo e th rteen *childr n n of whom surv ed nf ncy* Yet h also cted s a copyist f r her husba d, who after their marri ge turned ga n to wr t g He was soon at wo k upon n el of th 8 os d wh ch bso bed all l t m and eff rt. H went frequet tly to Mos cow study ng letters, d r es, nd trad t n d cumul ted wh le l brary of h t cal mat al on the per od. He ter ewed urv rs f the b ttles f that tin nd tra led to Borod o to draw up map of th battleground. F nally n 869 fter h w k had undergo e several changes n co c pt o and he h d pe t fi years of un nterrupted d ex eptu n lly strenu us l bor u der the best co d tio f l f he published *W d*

co t mporary wr ters.

Th years immedi tely f ll w g the com pl t n of *W d P* were passed n great vari ty f occupat s, n of wh l T lst y f u d satisfy g H tried busy g

By arrangement with Oxford University Press



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

The Great Books
is published with the editorial advice of the faculties
of The University of Chicago

CONTENTS

himself with the affairs of his estate, undertook the learning of Greek to read the ancient classics, turned again to education, wrote a series of elementary school books, and served as school inspector. With much urging from his wife and friends, he completed *Anna Karenina*, which appeared serially between 1875 and 1877. Disturbed by what he considered his unreflective and prosperous existence, Tolstoy became increasingly interested in religion. At first he turned to the orthodox faith of the people. Unable to find rest there, he began a detailed examination of religions, and out of his reading, particularly of the Gospels, gradually evolved his own personal doctrine.

Following his conversion, Tolstoy adopted a new mode of life. He dressed like a peasant, devoted much of his time to manual work, learned shoemaking, and followed a vegetarian diet. With the exception of his youngest daughter, Alexandra, Tolstoy's family remained hostile to his teaching. The breach between him and his wife grew steadily wider. In 1889 he wrote the *Kreutzer Sonata*, in which he attacked the normal state of marriage and extolled a life of celibacy and chastity. In 1881 he divided his estate among his heirs, and a few years later, despite the opposition of his wife, announced that he would forego royalties on all the works published after his conversion.

Tolstoy made no attempt at first to propagate his religious teaching, although it attracted many followers. After a visit to the Moscow slums in 1881, he became concerned with social conditions, and he subsequently aided the sufferers of the famine by sponsoring two hundred and fifty relief kitchens. After his meeting and intimacy with Chertkov, "Tolstoyism" began to develop as an organized sect. Tolstoy's writings became almost exclusively preoccupied with religious problems. In addition to numerous pamphlets and plays, he wrote *What is Art?* (1896), in which he explained his new aesthetic theories, and *Hadji Murad* (1904), which became the favorite work of his old age. Although his activities were looked upon with increasing suspicion by the official authorities, Tolstoy escaped official censure until 1901, when he was excommunicated by the Orthodox Church. His followers were frequently subjected to persecution, and many were either banished or imprisoned.

Tolstoy's last years were embittered by

poverty living on his great estate. Finally, at the age of eighty-two, with the aid of his daughter Alexandra, he fled from home. His health broke down a few days later, and he was removed from the train to the station-master's hut at Astopovo, where he died, November 1910. He was buried at Yasnaya Polyana in the first public funeral to be held in Russia without religious rites.

BOOK SEVEN

BOOK EIGHT

BOOK NINE

BOOK FOURTEEN

BOOK FIFTEEN

FIPST EPILOCLE

SECOND EPILOGUE

MAPS

THE PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS ARRANGED IN FAMIL1 GROUPS

THE BEZUKHOVS

Count Cyril Bezukh *a w althy obl m of C the t e the G at s t me*
P erre *his u h leg t m d fte l fatl s de th bec mes* Count
B z kh *—tl ce t l cha cter of the novel*
P n es Cat ch P *s cous n*

THE ROSTÓVS

—

s t the rmy as a cadet

Co tess Véra Rostóva *the eld d ugl t r*
Countess N taly (N tásh) Ro tó *the y u g d ught the central f m l h t*
So y p c of th R tó s
Lieute t Alpho e Ká l ch Berg *ffic who marr es Vé*

THE BOLKÓNSKIS

Pr e N ch la A d é ch B lkó sk *t d g er l*
n

th most
fas t g m P t b g
Pri N h l (Kok) Andrée h B lkó k *P e A d ews n*

THE KURÁGINS

Pr ce V il Kurág *ld ly bl m*
Pri H ppolyt Kurá *h u k m d d elder n*
P A t l Ku á *h p fl g t y g s n*
Pr es Hélè e Kurági *his d g! t th b t f l Hélè e*

THE D UBETSKOYS

P ess V M Lháyl n Drubetskáya *mpoverish d bleu m n*
P Bo i (B ry) Drub tsk y *h u h t th my*
J l K g *h u h l t m B*

THE PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS ARRANGED IN FAMILY GROUPS

THE BEZUKHOVS

Co t Cyril Bezukho *ue lthy n blem f Cath rine the G e t s t me*
P erre *hs u h l git m zed ft r l s f thers de th be omes* Count
B zukh *—th e t l h ct r f the ovel*
Pr n ess Cat che *P e e s c us*

THE ROSTOVS

Cou t Ilyá Rostó *u lthy obl m n*
Cou tess N t ly R tó a *h u f*
Co t N ch l R tó *tl ld s u h g es t the rmy as a cadet*
Count Pete (Pétya) R st *the y*
Count ss Véra Rostó *th ld d ht*
Co tess N taly (N tá h) Rostó *th r yo g r d ught the central f m le h ter*
Só ya, *p e f the R t*
Lie t n nt Alpl nse Kárl ch B rg *ffi u h m rri Vé a*

THE BOLKÓNSKIS

Pri ce N ch la And ée ch Bolkó k *a t d g er l*
Prince A d ei B lkó ski *his m mb of Kut ov' st ff*
Pr ess M ry B lk skaya *h d ght*
P cess El sabeth (Lis) B lkón k ya *Pri A d ew u f th most fas t g m P te b g*
Prin N ch l s (N k) A d é ch Bolkó k *P A d ew s on*

THE KURAGINS

Pri e V l Kurág n *lderly bl m*
Pri H ppolyte Kurá *h u k m d d lders*
Pri e An le Kurá *h p fl g te y g s*
Pr es Hélè Kurági *his da g) t th b t f l Hélè e*

THE DRU ETSKOYS

Pri ess An M khá l n Drub tskáya *mpov rish d bleu m n*
Pr Bo (B ry) Drubetsk y *h u h t th my*
J l K rág *h wh l t m s B s*

DATES OF PRINCIPAL HISTORICAL EVENTS

	O.S.	N.S.	
	Oct 11	Oct 3	Kutuzov inspects regiment near Braunau. *Le malheureux Mack* arrives
	Oct 3	Nov 4	The Russian army crosses the Enns
	Oct 4	Nov 5	Fight at Amstetten
1805	Oct 28	Nov 9	The Russian army crosses the Danube
	Oct 30	Nov 11	Defeats Mortier at Durrenstein
	Nov 4	Nov 16	Napoleon writes to Murat from Schonbrunn
	Nov 4	Nov 16	Battle of Schon Grabern
	Nov 19	Dec. 1	The Council of War at Ostralitz
	Nov o	Dec.	Battle of Austerlitz
	Jan 7	Feb 8	Battle of Preussisch Eylau
1807	June 2	June 14	Battle of Friedland
	June 13	June 25	The Emperors meet at Tilsit
	May 17	May 29	Napoleon leaves Dresden
	June 1	June 24	Napoleon crosses the Niemen and enters Russia
	June 14	June 6	Alexander sends Balashev to Napoleon
	July 13	July 25	[illegible]
	Aug 4	Aug 16	
	Aug 5	Aug 17	
	Aug 7	Aug 19	Prince Nicholas Bolkónski leaves Bald Hills for Boguchárovo
	Aug 8	Aug 20	Kutuzov appointed Commander in Chief
	Aug 10	Aug 22	Prince Andrew's column abreast of Bald Hills
	Aug 17	Aug 29	Kutuzov reaches Tsárevo Zaymíshche and takes command of the army
	Aug 17	Aug 29	Nicholas Rostóv rides to Boguchárovo
1812	Aug 24	Sept 5	Battle of the Shevárdino Redoubt
	Aug 26	Sept 7	Battle of Borodinó
	Sept 1	Sept 13	Kutuzov orders retreat through Moscow
	Oct 6	Oct 18	Battle of Tarutino
	Oct 6 7 and 8	Oct 18 19 and 20	The French leave Moscow
	Oct 12	Oct 4	Battle of Málo Yaroslávets
	Oct 21	Nov 2	Cossacks harry the French at Vyázma
	Oct 8 Nov	Nov 9- Nov 14	The French at Smolénsk
	Nov 4-8	Nov 16-20	Battles at Krásnoe
	Nov 9	Nov 21	Ney with rearguard reaches Orshá
	Nov 14-16	Nov [illegible]-28	Crossing of the Berezina
	Nov 23	Dec 5	Napoleon abandons the army at Smorgóni
	Dec. 6	Dec 18	He reaches Paris

Book One 1805

*

CHAPTER I

m tod w th you d y r no l ng r my frie d l ger my f thf l l you call y rself But h w do y u do I se I h e fri hte d you—sit d wn nd tell m all the ne s.

It was n July 8o nd the speaker was th w ll kn wn A n Pá l n Schérer m d of h d f nt of the Emp ess Márya Fe d ro n W th these d she greeted P V T h ragin m n f h hra k d mpor t ce wh wa the first t rr e t her recep- t A Pá l n h d h d *cou h f som* d ys. Sh as, he sa d suffers g f om *l gr pp grippe* be the new word n St. P tersb rg, used ly by tl el t

All her tat n w th t ex ept n writ t Fre ch d d l ered by sca let l er ed footman that m rn ra as f llow

If y h n thing b tter to d Co nt [r P] d f the prospect of pe ding n even w th poo al d n t too terr bl I hall be ery h rmed t se y u t n ght be t e 7 d o—A tt Sché

Hea en wl t rul t tt kl epl ed th p th least d sc cert d by thi ecept He h d j ter d ears n em bro dered court n f rm knee b eeches, nd hoes d had tars h breast d e exp es h fl t f H pok n th t refi ed F h wh ch grandf thers t l pok b t tl ght, d wi h the gentl p tr u n n tural to m n f mport wh had grown ld soc ty nd t urt H went p An Pá lovn k ssed her h d present g her h b ld scen d d sh head, d ompl cently sea d h mself the sofa.

First f ll, dear fri nd tell m h w y a e Set yo fr end s m d at rest sa d he tho t lte n h s t ne beneath the pol te ness and affected symp thy of wh ch nd ffer nc a d even irony could be d scerned.

Can e be w ll wh le suffers g m rally? Can o e be calm n t mes l ke these if one l a y f l ng? sa d A na Pá l na "You are stay ng th hole even I hope?

And th fete at the E l h ambassad r s? Tod y Wednesday I m t put n an appear nce there sa d the p nce My dau l ter i com fo me to t ke me ther

I th u l t today fet had been ca celed I co fess all these fest ties and fireworks are be om g risom

If they h d kno n that y u w hed t, the en rt nme t would h e be n put off said the p ce wh l ke wound up clock by *fo ce of hab t sa d thin s he d d n t e en wish* to b bel eved

D t tease Well and wh t has been de ci led bo t N ltsev s disp tch? You kn w everyth ng

Wh t can n say about t? epl ed th p n cold l tless tone What h s be n decided They h e dec ded th t B ap te h b rnt h bo t and I bel eve that ar re dy t b rn ours

P e Vasil lw y poke l n u dl l k n ct r peatu tal p rt. Ann Pá lo n Sché er n the contrary desp t her forty y rs o fl w d w th m t n d mp l enes T be n nthu a th d bec m h social o- cat n d som t mes even wh n h d d not f l l ke t she became enthu ast c n order n t t d sappoint the expect t n f th se wh k ew her Th subd ed sm le wh h th gh t did n t u t her f d d f tures al

I don t understand things but Austria never has wished and does not wish for war She is betraying us! Russia alone must save Europe *Our gracious sovereign recognizes his high vocation* and will be true to it That is the one thing I have faith in! Our good and wonderful sovereign has to perform the noblest role on earth and he is so virtuous and noble that God will not forsake him He will fulfill his vocation and crush the hydra of revolution *which has become more terrible than ever in* the person of this murderer and villain! We alone must avenge the blood of the just one

Whom I ask you can we rely on? England with her commercial spirit will not and cannot understand the Emperor Alexander s

abnegation of our Emperor who wants nothing for himself but only desires the good of mankind And what have they promised? Nothing! And what little they have promised they will not perform! Prussia has always declared *that Buonaparte is invincible and that all* Europe is powerless before him And I don t believe a word that Hardenburg says or Haugwitz either Th s famous Prussian neutrality is just a trap I have faith only in God and the lofty destiny of our adored monarch He will save Europe!

She suddenly paused smiling at her own impetuosity

I think said *the prince with a smile* that if you had been sent instead of our dear Wintzingerode you would have captured the King of Prussia s consent by assault You are so eloquent Will you give me a cup of tea?

In a moment *A propos* she added becoming calm again I am expecting two very interesting *men tonight* le Vicomte de Mortemart who is connected with the Montmorencys through *the Rohans one of the best French* ... the ... you ... n re ...

... id the ... ud ed ... carelessness as if it had only just occurred to him though the question he was about to ask was *the chief motive* of his visit is it true that the Dowager Empress wants Baron Funke to be appointed *first secretary at Vienna?* The baron by all accounts is a poor creature

Prince Vasili wished to obtain this post for his son but others were trying through the Dowager Empress Márya Fëdorovna to secure it for the baron

Anna Pávlovna almost closed her eyes to indicate that neither she nor anyone else had a right to criticize what the Empress desired or was pleased with

Baron Funke has been recommended to the *Dowager Empress by her sister* was *all she* said in a dry and mournful tone

As she named the Empress Anna Pávlovna s face suddenly assumed an expression of profound and sincere devotion and respect mingled with sadness and this occurred every time she mentioned her illustrious patroness She *added that Her Majesty had deigned to show* Baron Funke *beaucoup d estime* and again her face clouded over with sadness

The prince was silent and looked indifferent But with the womanly and courtierlike quickness and tact habitual to her Anna Pávlovna wished both to rebuke him (for daring to speak as he had done of a man recommended to the Empress) and at the same time to console *him so she said*

Now about your family Do you know that since your daughter came out everyone has been enraptured by her? They say she is amazingly beautiful

The prince bowed to signify his respect and gratitude

I often think she continued after a short pause drawing nearer to the prince and smil*ing amiably at him as if to show that political* and social topics were ended and the time had come for intimate conversation— *I often think* how unfairly sometimes the joys of life are distributed Why has fate given you two such splendid children? I don t speak of Anatole your youngest I don t like him she added in a tone admitting of no rejoinder and raising her eyebrows Two such charming children *And really you appreciate them less than any* ... them

... Lavater would have said *I lack the bump of paternity*

Don t joke I mean to ha e a serious talk with you Do you know I am dissat fed w th your younger son? Betw een oursel es (and her face assumed its melancholy express on) he was mentioned at Her Majesty s and you were pitied

The prince answered nothing but she

looked t h m s gn ficantly wa t g a r ply
H f ned
m d he a d at
f r
ned
ut fools H ppo y d but
A at l n ct n Th t s the only d f
fere ce betwe n them He a d th m l g
ay m t ral and n m ted than
l so th t the wr nkles r u d h s mouth
ery clearly re e led s m th g une pectedly
o rse a d u ple s nt.

*A d why e ch ld en b n to uch men as
y u? If you w n t f ther the wo ld be
th I o ld p hyou w th s d Anna*

med t ted

H e y u ev tho ght f m rr g your
p d gal n A tole? he a ked "They ay
ld ma ds ha e m n fo m tchm k ng and
w k es n m elf

q ck of mem ry a d p pt n b htt g
m n f the w ld h d cat d by a m e
m t f the he d th t he wa c ns d ng this
f rmat

D y k w he s d at l t d ntly
bl t h k th d rr t f hus th ghts,
th t A t l c ung me f ty thou nd
rubles year? A d h went fter p e
hat w ll t b n fi y rs f he goe on l ke
th P ese tly he dded That wh t we
f thers h e t p t up w th Is this p nce s
f y rs ch

He f her ery h and stingy H l es
th untry ffe th w ll known Pr ce
B lkó k wh h d t t re from th rmy un
d th l te Emp d was n k am d the
K g f Pruss He s ery clever b t n
tr c, d bo e Th poor g l s ery u happy
Sh ha brother I th k y kn w h m, h
m rried Lise M in n l t ly H s an de-de
c mp f Kut d will b he t n ght.

Li te dear A ette sa d th p n s d
de ly tak g An Pá l n ha d a d f r
som so draw g t d nw rd Arra
that ff f me d I hall l y be y u

most de oted sla e—*slafe* th an f as a illage
elder of m e writes n h repo ts She is ricl
and f good f m ly and th t all I w nt

And w th the f m l ar ty nd easy gr e
pec l r to h m he rai ed the ma d of h n s
h nd to h s l ps kissed t nd swung it to and
fro s he l y b k n h s rmch r look ng i
nother d r ct on

Atte d sa d Anna Pávlovna reflecti g
I ll peak to Lise y ung B lkónski s fe d
very e n ng d perh ps the th n ca be
arranged It h ll be on y ur f m ly bel lf
th t I ll start my apprent ceship old m d

CHAPTER II

drawing room was gradually

t th mb s d se terta nme t sl e w re
ball d ss nd he badge a ma d of ho r The
youthful l ttle Pr nces B lkó kaya kn wn
as *la f mme l pluss du a t de Péte sb u g*

me w th Mortem rt wh m he intr duc d
The Abbé Mo o and m ny thers h d also
come

To ch new arri l Ann Pá lo n sa d
Y u h e not yet e n my unt r Y u do
n t k w my unt? nd ery gra ely con
ducted h m o her to a l ttle old l dy
large bows f bbon n her cap wh h d me
s l g n fr m n ther room as soon the
gue t *began to arriv* nd slo ly t rn he
eyes fr m the v t to her aunt Ann Pá
l n ment d ach one n m a d th
left them

Each t perf rmed th c em ny of
greet ng th old unt wh m n t n f them
kn w n t of them w nted to know a d
not on f them c red b t A Pá l n
observed th gre t w th mo rnf l and sol
emn nter t d s l t pp val The unt
sp ke to each f them n the same w rds about
their health a d her wn and the he lth of
Her M jesty wh thank God was better to-

Th most fas t g m P b

her the whole evening

The young Princess Bolkónskaya had

[illegible]

too short for her teeth but it lifted all the more sweetly and was especially charming when she occasionally drew it down to meet the lower lip As is always the case with a thoroughly attractive woman her defect—the shortness of her upper lip and her half open mouth—seemed to be her own special and peculiar form of beauty Everyone brightened at the sight of this pretty young woman so soon to become a mother so full of life and health and carrying her burden so lightly Old men and dull dispirited young ones who looked at her after being in her company and talking to her a little while felt as if they too were becoming like her full of life and health All who talked to her and at each word saw her bright smile *and the constant gleam of her white teeth* thought that they were in a specially amiable mood that day

The little princess went round the table with quick short swaying steps her workbag on her arm and gaily spreading out her dress sat down on a sofa near the silver samovar as if all she was doing was a pleasure to herself and to all around her I have brought my work said she in French displaying her bag *and addressing all present* Mind Annette I hope you have not played a wicked trick on me she added turning to her hostess You wrote that it was to be quite a small reception and just see how badly I am dressed And she spread out her arms to show her short waisted lace trimmed dainty gray dress girdled with a broad ribbon just below the breast

Soyez tranquille Lise you will always be prettier than anyone else replied Anna Pávlovna

You know said the princess in the same tone of voice and still in French turning to a general my husband is deserting me? He is going to get himself killed Tell me what this wretched war is for? she added addressing Prince Vasíli and without waiting for an answer she turned to speak to his daughter the beautiful Hélène

[illegible]

cc

built young man with close-cropped hair spectacles the light colored breeches fashionable at that time a very high ruffle and a brown dress coat This stout young man was an illegitimate son of Count Bezukhov a well known grandee of Catherine s time who now lay dying in Moscow The young man had not yet entered either the military or civil service as he had only just returned from abroad where he had been educated and this was his first appearance in society Anna Pávlovna greeted him with the nod she accorded to the lowest hierarchy in her drawing room But in spite of this lowest grade greeting a look of anxiety and fear as at the sight of something too large and unsuited to the place came over her face when she saw Pierre enter Though he was certainly rather bigger than the other men in the room her anxiety could only have reference to the clever though shy but observant and natural expression which distinguished him from everyone else in that drawing room

It is very good of you Monsieur Pierre to come and visit a poor invalid said Anna Pávlovna exchanging an alarmed glance with her aunt as she conducted him to her

Pierre murmured something unintelligible and continued to look round as if in search of something On his way to the aunt he bowed to the little princess with a pleased smile as to an intimate acquaintance

Anna Pávlovna s alarm was justified for Pierre turned away from the aunt without waiting to hear her speech about Her Majesty s health Anna Pávlovna in dismay detained him with the words Do you know the Abbé Morio? He is a most interesting man

Yes I have heard of his scheme for perpetual peace and it is very interesting but hardly feasible

You think so? rejoined Anna Pávlovna in order to say something and get away to attend to her duties as hostess But Pierre now committed a reverse act of impoliteness First he had left a lady before she had finished speaking to him and now he continued to speak to another who wished to get away With his head bent and his big feet spread apart he began explaining his reasons for thinking the abbé s plan chimerical

We will talk of it later said Anna Pávlovna with a smile

And having got rid of this young man who did not know how to behave she resumed her duties as hostess and continued to listen and watch ready to help at any point where the conversation might happen to flag As the foreman of a spinning mill when he has set the hands to work goes round and notices here a

sp dl that has st pped there one that creaks makes more n se tha t sh uld, nd hasten t check the ma h e r set t in proper motion so A Pá l n mo ed about her drawin room approach n w lent n w too-n usy gro p and b word l oht re rranvem nt kept th c ersat nal ma hi e steady proper d regular motu B t amid these cares her nxi ty about P err wa evident. She kept n nx ou watch n him hen he pproached th group ound M rt mart to li ten t wh t was be ng said there nd main hen he p ssed to an th group whose enter was the bbé

P erre had been ed cated broad and thi recepu at Ann P l vn wa th first h had tte ded Russ H knew that ll th int llectual l hts f Petersburg were gathered there and, like ch ld tos h p d d not k w wh ch wa t look fraid of missing any clever co versati that wa to be heard. See in the self-co fid t d refined express o th fa es f those present he w l ays ex pectin t hear som thi ery prof u d. At last h came p t M rio Here the con ersa tion seemed interesti d h stood waitin for an pportun ty t express his wn ews u. peopl ar f d of d

CHAPTER III

A x P lo x s recept was full swing The spindles h mmed ead ly d easelessly on ll des. W th th excep io of th unt, beside hom sat onl on elderly l d wh w th her th careworn f was rather out of plac th brillia t soc ty th wh le com p h d s.ttled into three gro p O e chiefl mascul had f rm d ound th bbe An other of g peopl wa grouped round th bea tiful Princes H l Prince V sil s daugh er d th littl Pri cess Bolk n ka a ery pretty and rosy th h rather too plump f w her a e. Th th rd gro p wa gathered rou d M rtemart and A Pá lo na.

Th omt was m look youn man w th soft features d pol shed man ers, who ev d ntly on dered himself a el brity but out f pol tenes modestly placed himself at th disposal f th circl in which h found h mself Anna Pá lovn was obvio sly servin him p treat to her guests. As clever maître d'hôtel serves up speci lly cho ce d licacy p ec f mea that o who had seen t the kitchen would ha cared t eat, so A na Pá lovna served up to her guests, first th icomte and then the bbé as peculiarly cho ce morsels. The gr up abo t M rtemart mmediat l be an d scuss g th m rder of tl D c d En h e Tl e comte sa d that tl e Duc d En h en h d perished b l o n ma n m t nd th t th e were part cular reason

e

the

sou d of that se ten e *C te ous gela I e mi*

Tl vicomte bowed nd m led courteou l n t ken of hi will ngness to comply Ann P l vn arra ged a group ro nd him n t everyo t li t n to his tal

Th comte knew the du person ll wh spered Anna P lo n too e of the guests. "Th comt wo derful ra ont ur sa d s t *an ther H w* ev dently h belon to the best soc ety sa d she to a th d nd th vi omt wa served up t th comp n in the ch est nd most ad antageou t l The well-garn shed j nt of oa t beef on hot di h

Th comt wi hed to begin his st ry and ga e ubtl mile

Come er her H lène dea sa d A n Pá lo n to the bea t ful y u p cess ho was s tti s me wa ff, the c ter of nother gr up

The princess smiled. She rose w th the same u ch n g mile w th wh ch he h d first en tered the oom—th m le of a perfectly beaut f l wom W th l ht ru tl of h wh te d es trimmed w th moss nd th leam f wh te ho ld rs, los h r d sp kl diamo ds, sh passed between t e m n who m de wa f r her n t look n ny of them but sm l g n all s f gr ously ll w n ea h th p le f dm her beautif l figure d shapel hould rs, back, and bosom —wh ch n th fash n of those d ys were ery m ch exposed— nd sh seemed to b g the glamou f b llroom th h he m ed t ward A n P l vn Hélè wa so lo el that n t l d d sh n t sh w trace of coquetry b t n the o trary sh ev n ppeared sh f h quest n bl nd ll oo t ou beaut Sh seemed t w sh, but t be un bl t d min sh ts effect.

H w lov ly sa d very n who saw h r and th comt l fted his h ulders nd dropped h s eyes s f tartled by som thin ex tra rd ry wh sh took her seat oppos t nd beamed pon him also with her u chang smil

Madame I doubt my ability before such an audience said he smilingly inclining his head

The princess rested her bare round arm on a little table and considered a reply unnecessary She smilingly waited All the time the story was being told she sat upright glancing now at her beautiful round arm altered in shape by its pressure on the table now at her still more beautiful bosom on which she readjusted a diamond necklace From time to time she smoothed the folds of her dress and whenever the story produced an effect she glanced at Anna Pávlovna at once adopted just the expression she saw on the maid of honor s face and again relapsed into her radiant smile

The little princess had also left the tea table and followed Hélène

Wait a moment I ll get my work Now then what are you thinking of? she went on turning to Prince Hippolyte Fetch me my workbag

There was a general movement as the princess smiling and talking merrily to everyone at once sat down and gaily arranged herself in her seat

Now I am all right she said and asking the vicomte to begin she took up her work

Prince Hippolyte having brought the workbag joined the circle and moving a chair close to hers seated himself beside her

Le charmant Hippolyte was surprising by his extraordinary resemblance to his beautiful sister but yet more by the fact that in spite of this resemblance he was exceedingly ugly His features were like his sister s but while in her case everything was lit up by a joyous self satisfied youthful and constant smile of animation and by the wonderful classic beauty of her figure his face on the contrary was dulled by imbecility and a constant expression of sullen self confidence while his body was thin and weak His eyes nose and mouth all seemed puckered into a vacant wearied grimace and his arms and legs always fell into unnatural positions

It s not going to be a ghost story? said he sitting down beside the princess and hastily adjusting his lorgnette as if without this instrument he could not begin to speak

Why no my dear fellow said the astonished narrator shrugging his shoulders

Because I hate ghost stories said Prince Hippolyte in a tone which showed that he only understood the meaning of his words after he had uttered them

He spoke with such self confidence that his hearers could not be sure whether what he said was very witty or very stupid He was dressed in a dark green dress coat knee breeches of the color of *cuisse de nymphe effrayée* as he called it shoes and silk stockings

The vicomte told his tale very neatly It was an anecdote then current to the effect that the Duc d Enghien had gone secretly to Paris to visit Mademoiselle George that at her house he came upon Bonaparte who also enjoyed the famous actress favors and that in his presence Napoleon happened to fall into one of the fainting fits to which he was subject and was thus at the duc s mercy The latter spared him and this magnanimity Bonaparte subsequently repaid by death

The story was very pretty and interestin especially at the point where the rivals suddenly recognized one another and the ladies looked agitated

Charming! said Anna Pávlovna with an inquiring glance at the little princess

Charming! whispered the little princess sticking the needle into her work as if to testify that the interest and fascination of the story prevented her from going on with it

The vicomte appreciated this silent praise and smiling gratefully prepared to continue but just then Anna Pávlovna who had kept a watchful eye on the young man who so alarmed her noticed that he was talking too loudly and vehemently with the abbé s she hurried to the rescue Pierre had managed to start a conversation with the abbé about the balance of power and the latter evidently interested

Europe and the rights of the people the abbe was saying It is only necessary for one powerful nation like Russia—barbaric as she is said to be—to place herself disinterestedly at the head of an alliance having for its object the maintenance of the balance of power of Europe and it would save the world

But how are you to get that balance? Pierre was beginning

At that moment Anna Pávlovna came up and looking severely at Pierre asked the Italian how he stood the Russian climate The Italian s face instantly changed and assumed an offensively affected sugary expression evidently habitual to him when conversing with women

"I m so encha ted by the b illiancy of the w t and culture of th society more especially I th fem e soc et in wh ch I ha e had th h or f be rece ed that I ha e n t yet h d time to think f the cl mate said he

N tlem g th abbé nd P erre escape A n P lovna th more con en ently to keep them under bservat b ght them int the larger circle.

CHAPTER IV

JUST THEN an ther vi t entered the draw g room Pri ce Andrew B lkón k th little princess hu ba d. He wa very h ndsome

added n I w v ce so s n t to disturb the vicomte who was continu ng h story

N mposs ble sa d Prince Andrew l ugh g and p es n P erre s h nd to show th t there wa no need to k the quest on He

p ss.

You mu t excuse m dea V c mte sa d Prince V sil t the Fren hman h ld ng h m d wn by the lee e na fri ndly w y t prevent his ri ng "Th u f rtunat fete at the ambassador s depri es me f a pleasure and obl es *me to nterrupt* ou I am ery sorry to lea e your enchant p rty sa d h turn ng to Ann Pá l na.

n ted he

l knew rs n th draw n room, but had found them to be so tiresom th t t wearied him t look t o listen t them And m all these faces that he f d so ted ous, seemed to bore him so much s th t f h pretty wife. He t rned a from her w th grimace that d t rted his h ndsome f ce, kissed Anna Pá l vn hand nd screw n p h eyes scan ed th wh l compa y

l ff t th war Pr nce sa d Ann Pá lovn

General K t zo said Bolk n k peak in Fre h d tres g th l t sill ble of th general n l ke Frenchm n has been pleased t tak m n aide-de-camp

A d Lise your w f

"She w ll go to th country

Are you t shamed t d pri us f your harm f

f d sa d hi w f ddress her husband in th sam coq tt sh ma ner in which sh pok t other men th comte has been llu us uch tal bou M demoiselle George d B parte

Pri Andrew screwed up his eyes and turned wa P err wh from the m ment Prince Andrew ed th room h d watched h m th gl d affect nate eyes. ow cam p d ook his rm. B f re h looked round Pri A drew frowned ga express ng his annoya w th whoever was t ch h arm b t en h saw P rre beami f e h ga e h m expected! ki d and pleasan sm l

"There now! So y u, too, are in the great wo ld? said h to P erre

I k ew you would be here repl ed P erre I w l com t suppe w th you M y I?" h

radia tly on her beautiful face. P erre gazed t h w tl rap urous, almost frightened, eyes he passed h m.

"V ry l ely sa d Prince Andrew

"Very said P erre

m nth and this th first tim I h e seen h m n society Noth n so necessary fo young m n as the soci t of leve men.

ANNA P LOVNA smiled nd promised to tak P erre n ha d. Sh knew his f ther t be con ect on of Prince V ili s. The lderly l dy who had been tti w th th old nt rose hurriedly and o ertook Prince Vas l n the anteroom. All the affectation of nterest she had as med h d l ft her kindly d te r w rn f ce and t n w e pressed only nxiety and f ar

H w bout my son Boris, Prin sa d she, hurry ng fter h m nto th teroom. I can t remain any l nger n P t rsburg T ll m what ews I may take b ck t my poo boy

Alth u h Pri ce V sil l ten d reluctantly d n t ery pol ely t the lderly lad even betraying som imp tience sh ga h m n grat tin and ppeal g smile nd took h h d that he m ght n t go way

What would t cos yo t sa w rd to th

Madame I doubt my ability before such an audience said he smilingly inclining his head

The princess rested her bare round arm on a little table and considered a reply unnecessary She smilingly waited All the time the story was being told she sat upright glancing now at her beautiful round arm altered in shape by its pressure on the table now at her still more beautiful bosom on which she readjusted a diamond necklace From time to time she smoothed the folds of her dress and whenever the story produced an effect she glanced at Anna Pávlovna at once adopted just the expression she saw on the maid of honor s face and again relapsed into her radiant smile

The little princess had also left the tea table and followed Hélène

Wait a moment I ll get my work Now then what are you thinking of? she went on turning to Prince Hippolyte Fetch me my workbag

There was a general movement as the princess smiling and talking merrily to everyone at once sat down and gaily arranged herself in her seat

Now I am all right she said and asking the vicomte to begin she took up her work

Prince Hippolyte having brought the work bag joined the circle and moving a chair close to hers seated himself beside her

Le charmant Hippolyte was surprising by his extraordinary resemblance to his beautiful sister but yet more by the fact that in spite of this resemblance he was exceedingly ugly His features were like his sister s but while in her case everything was lit up by a joyous self satisfied youthful and constant smile of animation and by the wonderful classic beauty of her figure his face on the contrary was dulled by imbecility and a constant expression of sullen self confidence while his body was thin and weak His eyes nose and mouth all seemed puckered into a vacant wearied grimace and his arms and legs always fell into unnatural positions

It s not going to be a ghost story? said he sitting down beside the princess and hastily adjusting his lorgnette as if without this instrument he could not begin to speak

Why no my dear fellow said the astonished narrator shrugging his shoulders

Because I hate ghost stories said Prince Hippolyte in a tone which showed that he only understood the meaning of his words after he had uttered them

He spoke with such self confidence that his hearers could not be sure whether what he said was very witty or very stupid He was dressed in a dark green dress coat knee breeches of the color of *cuisse de nymphe effrayée* as he called it shoes and silk stockings

The vicomte told his tale very neatly It was an anecdote then current to the effect that the Duc d Enghien had gone secretly to Paris to visit Mademoiselle George that at her house he came upon Bonaparte who also enjoyed the famous actress favors and that in his presence Napoleon happened to fall into one of the fainting fits to which he was subject and was thus at the duc s mercy The latter spared him and this magnanimity Bonaparte subsequently repaid by death

The story was very pretty and interesting especially at the point where the rivals suddenly recognized one another and the ladies

sticking the needle into her ... to ... that the interest and fascination of the story prevented her from going on with it

The vicomte appreciated this silent praise and smiling gratefully prepared to continue but just then Anna Pávlovna who had kept a watchful eye on the young man who so alarmed her noticed that he was talking too loud and vehemently with the abbé so she hurried to the rescue Pierre had managed to start a conversation with the abbé about the balance of power and the latter evidently interested

which was why Anna Pávlovna disapproved

The means are the balance of power in Europe and the rights of the people the abbé was saying It is only necessary for one powerful nation like Russia—barbaric as she is said to be—to place herself disinterestedly at the head of an alliance having for its object the maintenance of the balance of power of Europe and it would save the world!

But how are you to get that balance? Pierre was beginning

At that moment Anna Pávlovna came up and looking severely at Pierre asked the Italian how he stood the Russian climate The Italian s face instantly changed and assumed an offensively affected sugary expression evidently habitual to him when conversing with women

D r Pt d to G ch la torch

I hope this will prove the la t drop that will mak th lass ru over" Anna Pá lo na continued. "The sovereign will n t be able t endure this man who men ce to every thin

"Th soverei n I do not speak f Russia," said th vicomt po te but hopeles "The — Wh t h ve they done

mated. and ... ...
reward of th ir betrayal of the Bourbon cause The sovereign Wh they are sendin am- ba sadors t compliment the usurper"

And u hm disda nfull h a n changed h po tion.

Pri ce H ppolyt who had been atin t the vicomt f som time throu h his lor nett suddenly turned completel round to- ward th littl princess d h ing a ked f ed, began tracin the Cond coat f arms on th tabl H explai ed this t her with much gravi y as if sh had ked him to d t.

B ton d g eules en l d gueul s d' azu —ma on C d sa d he

The princess listened sm g

If B onapart remain on th thron of Fra ce ear longer th comt continued with th ai f m n wh matter w th hi h h is be er equain ed th n lse does t listen t others but f llows the cur rent f his own thou ts things will ha gone too far B tri es lence ex le and executions. F ench society—I mean good French society—will ha e been f rever destroyed, and then

H shrugged h shoulders nd spread out h hands. Pierre w hed mak remark f the onversation terested him, but A Pa lovn who h d him under observati n n terrup ed

"Th Emperor Alexander said sh w th the m anch l which always ccompan ed reference of hers to th Imperial famil "h declared that he will lea t the French peop themsel es to choose their own f rm of governmen and I bel ev that once free from th usurper th whol n ti n will er tainl throw tself into th arms of ts rightf l kin,, th concl ded, try t be ami bl to th royalist emigrant.

"That is doubtf l, said Prince Andrew Mon ieur l V comt qu t rightly supposes that ma ters ha e lready gone oo far I think will be difficult t return the old regime.

From what I ha e heard sa d P erre blu hing and breakin to the con ersation almost all the ristocracy has lready gone o er t Bon p rt s side

It s the Bu n p rti ts who sa that" re pl ed the vicomte w thout looking t P erre At the present time t s difficult to know the real state of French publ op n n

"Bonaparte ha sa d so remarked Prin e Andrew w th a sarcastic sm l

It wa ev dent that he d d not like the i *comt* and wa aim ng h remarks at h m though w thout looki t him.

I showed them the path to glory but the

justified n savin so

"Not in th least," repl ed the vicomte. Aft er the murder of the duc even the most pa tial ceased to regard him hero If to som people he went on turn to Anna Pá lovna h ever was hero after the murder of the du there was on martyr more n hea en and on hero less on earth

Before Anna Pá lovn nd the others had tim to smile their ppreciation of the comt epigram P err ga n broke nto the conversati n, and though Ann Pá lovna f lt sure h would say somethin in ppropriat she wa unabl to st p him.

"The execution of the D c d Engh en" de lared M nsieur P erre "was pol tical neces- sity and t seems to m th t Napoleon showed greatness of so l by not fearing to tak on him self the whol responsibil ty of that deed.

D eu Mon D eu!" muttered Anna Pá lovna in terrified whisper

"What, *M n eur P err* Do you con sider that assassination shows greatness of soul. said th littl princess, smil ng a d drawi her work nearer t her

"Oh Oh ex laimed several vo ces

"Cap tal!" said Prince H ppolyte n En lish, and began sl ppin his knee w th the palm of h hand.

The vicomt merely shrugged his shoulders P erre looked solemnly t h d ence o e hi spectacles d conti ued.

I sa so h conti ued desperately "be ca se th Bourbon fled from th Revol tion lea th peopl to anarchy and N poleon alon understood th Revolution d q lled t, nd so for the general good, he could not stop short f the sak f o e man lif

ficult for me to ask the Emperor I should advise you to appeal to Rumyántsev through Prince Golítsyn That would be the best way

The elderly lady was a Princess Drubetskáya belonging to one of the best families in Russia but she was poor and having long been out of society had lost her former influential connections She had now come to Petersburg to procure an appointment in the Guards for her only son It was in fact solely to meet Prince Vasíli that she had obtained an invitation to Anna Pávlovna s reception and had sat listening to the vicomte s story Prince Vasíli s words frightened her an embittered look clouded her once handsome face but only for a moment then she smiled again and clutched Prince Vasíli s arm more tightly

Listen to me Prince said she I have never yet asked you for anything and I never will again nor have I ever reminded you of my father s friendship for you but now I entreat you for God s sake to do this for my son —and I shall always regard you as a benefactor she added hurriedly No don t be angry but promise! I have asked Golítsyn and he has refused Be the kindhearted man you always were she said trying to smile though tears were in her eyes

Papa we shall be late said Princess Hélène turning her beautiful head and looking over her classically molded shoulder as she stood waiting by the door

Influence in society however is capital which has to be economized if it is to last Prince Vasíli knew this and having once realized that if he asked on behalf of all who begged of him he would soon be unable to ask for himself he became chary of using his influence But in Princess Drubetskáya s case he felt after her second appeal something like qualms of conscience She had reminded him of what was quite true he had been indebted to her father for the first steps in his career More over he could see by her manners that she was one of those women—mostly mothers—who having once made up their minds will not rest until they have gained their end and are prepared if necessary to go on insisting day after day and hour after hour and even to make scenes This last consideration moved him

My dear Anna Mikháylovna said he with his usual familiarity and weariness of tone it

Guards Here is my hand on it Are you satisfied?

My dear benefactor! This is what I expected from you—I knew your kindness! He turned to go

Wait—just a word! When he has been transferred to the Guards she faltered You are on good terms with Michael Ilarionovich Kutuzov recommend Boris to him as adjutant! Then I shall be at rest and then

Prince Vasíli smiled

No I won t promise that You don t know how Kutuzov is pestered since his appointment as Commander in Chief He told me himself that all the Moscow ladies have conspired to give him all their sons as adjutants

No but do promise! I won t let you go! My dear benefactor

Papa said his beautiful daughter in the same tone as before we shall be late

Well *au revoir!* Good by! You hear her?

Then tomorrow you will speak to the Emperor?

Certainly but about Kutuzov I don t promise

Do promise do promise Vasíli! cried Anna Mikháylovna as he went with the smile of a coquettish girl which at one time probably came naturally to her but was now very ill suited to her careworn face

Apparently she had forgotten her age and by force of habit employed all the old feminine arts But as soon as the prince had gone her face resumed its former cold artificial expression She returned to the group where the vicomte was still talking and again pretended to listen while waiting till it would be time to leave Her task was accomplished

CHAPTER V

And what do you think of this latest comedy the coronation at Milan? asked Anna Pávlovna and of the comedy of the people of Genoa and Lucca laying their petitions before Monsieur Buonaparte and Monsieur Buonaparte sitting on a throne and granting the petitions of the nations? Adorable! It is enough to make one s head whirl! It is as if the whole world had gone crazy

Prince Andrew looked Anna Pávlovna straight in the face with a sarcastic smile

Dieu me la donne gare à qui la touche! [1]

They say he was very fine when he said that he remarked repeating the words in Italian

1 God has given it to me let him who touches it beware!

Won t you come over to the other table? suggested Anna Pávlovna

But Pierre continued his speech without heeding her

No cried he becoming more and more eager Napoleon is great because he rose superior to the Revolution *suppressed its abuses* preserved all that was good in it—equality of citizenship and freedom of speech and *of the press—and only for that reason did he* obtain power

Yes if having obtained power without *availing himself of it to commit murder he had* restored it to the rightful king I should have called him a great man remarked the vicomte

He could not do that The people only gave him power that he might rid them of the Bourbons and because they saw that he was a great man The Revolution was a grand thing! continued Monsieur Pierre betraying by this desperate and provocative proposition his extreme youth and his wish to express all that was in his mind

What? Revolution and regicide a grand thing? Well after that But won t you come to this other table? repeated Anna Pávlovna

said the vi

I am speak

regi

they are not what is most important What is important are the rights of man emancipation from prejudices and equality of citizenship and all these ideas Napoleon has retained in full force

been discredited Who does not love liberty and equality? *Even our Saviour preached liberty and equality* Have people since the Revolution become happier? On the contrary We *wanted liberty* but Buonaparte has destroyed it

Prince Andrew kept looking with an amused smile from Pierre to the vicomte and from the vicomte to their hostess In the first moment of Pierre s outburst Anna Pávlovna despite her social experience was horror struck But when she saw that Pierre s sacrilegious words had *not* exasperated the vicomte and had convinced herself that it was impossible to stop him she rallied her forces and joined the vicomte in a vigorous attack on the orator

But my dear Monsieur Pierre said she *how do you explain the fact of a great man* executing a duc—or even an ordinary man—who is innocent and untried?

I should like said the vicomte to ask how monsieur explains the 18th Brumaire was no

no

was horrible! said the little princess shrugging her shoulders

He s a low fellow say what you will remarked Prince Hippolyte

Pierre not knowing whom to answer looked at them all and smiled His smile was unlike the half smile of other people When he smiled his grave even rather gloomy look was instantaneously replaced by another—a childlike kindly even rather silly look which seemed to ask forgiveness

The vicomte who was meeting him for the first time saw clearly that this young Jacobin was not so terrible as his words suggested All were silent

How do you expect him to answer you all at once? said Prince Andrew Besides in the actions of a statesman one has to distinguish between his acts as a private person as a general and as an emperor So it seems to me

Yes yes of course! Pierre chimed in pleased at the arrival of this reinforcement

One must admit continued Prince Andrew that Napoleon as a man was great on the bridge of Arcola and in the hospital at *Jaffa where he gave his hand to the plague* stricken but but there are other acts which it is difficult to justify

Prince Andrew who had evidently wished to tone down the awkwardness of Pierre s remarks rose and made a sign to his wife that it was time to go

Suddenly Prince Hippolyte started up making signs to everyone to attend and asking them all to be seated began

I was told a charming Moscow story today and must treat you to it Excuse me Vicomte—I must tell it in Russian or the point will be lost *And Prince Hippolyte began to tell* his story in such Russian as a Frenchman would speak after spending about a year in

Russia. Every ne waited so emphatically and eagerly did he demand th ir attention to his story

"Ther is in M scow a lady u e dame and sh is ery u g) Sh must ha e tw footmen behi d her carri ge and ery b g ones. That was her tas e. And she had a l dy maid also

riage, and come w th me while I make som calls.

Here Princ H ppolyte pl ttered and burst ou t la hi g l bef re his udience which

The girl l st her h t and h l g hair came do n. Here h could contain himself no longer and w nt n betw n gasps f laugh ter And th whole w ld knew

A d so th ecd te nded. Th u h t was un tell bl why he had t ld t, r why it had to be told Russian, still Ann Pá lovna

anecd t th rsat n broke up int in sign ficant small talk bo t th las and next balls, bo t tl tricals, nd who w uld meet whom, and when and where.

CHAPTER VI

H N THA ED An Pá l n f her harmi g sour th guests began to tak their lea e.

P err w gainl S t, bout the er ge hei ht, broad, w th h ge ed hands he did not kn w as the sa g s how t nter draw g room d till less how to lea e e that is, how to say something part cularly gr eable bef go way Bes des this h was bsent minded When h rose to go he took up in st ad f h n th ge ral three-cornered hat, d held t, pulling the plume, till the general asked him to rest t. All h bsent m ded ess nd in bili en er room and co rse t was, however redeemed b h ki dl simpl and modes expression A a Pá l n urned tow d h m and w tl Christ mildness th t exp essed f rg ess f hi discr ti nodded d said I h pe see you gain, b I also h pe y u w ll cha your op n ons, my dear Monsieur P erre.

When h said this, he did not reply and only bowed but again everybody saw h ssmile, which sa d nothing unless pe haps, Op n ns are opin ns, but y u se wh t cap tal good n tured fellow I am. And e eryone includ ing Anna Pá l na felt this.

Prince Andrew had gone out nto the hall and turn ng his shoulders to the footman who was helping h m on w th h cl ak, li tened n differently to hi w f s chatter w th P ince H ppolyte who had also come into the hall Pri ce H ppolyte tood close to the pretty pregnant princess, nd tared fixedly at her through his eyeglass.

Go in Ann tte or you will catch cold, said the little pri cess, taking lea e of Anna Pá lo na "It is settled, she dded n a l w o ce.

Anna Pá l n had already man ged to speak to Lise bout the match she contem plated between *An tole and the little prin ess* sister n law

"I rely n you my dear sa d A n Pá lo na also in l w t ne. W te to her d l t me know h w h f ther looks t the mat ter *Au re o* "— nd she l ft th hall.

Prince H ppolyte pp oached tl e l ttle p n cess and, bendi g h s f c cl se to l r began to wh sper som th g

Two footmen the pr ncess and l s o stood h lding shawl and a cl k w t g f th con ersati n to finish. They l t ed u the Fren h senten es which t tl em w mean gless, w th an ir f unde ta d g b t n t w sh g to pp to d so Hi pt as usual pok smilingly and liste ed u laugh.

I am very glad I d d n t go t th am sadors, said Pr ce H ppolyte —so It has been del ghtf l e e ir has Del ghtful!

"They say the ball will be plied the p di w d l p All the p tty women be ther

N t all fo y sa d P c H p snatch g tl

[illegible]

turning and glancing at her husband Prince Andrew s eyes were closed so weary and sleepy did he seem

Are you ready? he asked his wife look ing past her

Prince Hippolyte hurriedly put on his cloak which in the latest fashion reached to his very heels and stumbling in it ran out into the porch following the princess whom a footman was helping into the carriage

Princesse au revoir cried he stumbling with his tongue as well as with his feet

The princess picking up her dress was tak ing her seat in the dark carriage her husband was adjusting his saber Prince Hippolyte un der pretense of helping was in everyone s way

Allow me sir said Prince Andrew in Rus sian in a cold disagreeable tone to Prince Hippolyte who was blocking his path

I am expecting you Pierre said the same voice but gently and affectionately

The postilion started the carriage wheels rattled Prince Hippolyte laughed spasmod ically as he stood in the porch waiting for the vicomte whom he had promised to take home

Well *mon cher* said the vicomte having seated himself beside Hippolyte in the car riage your little princess is very nice very nice indeed quite French and he kissed the tips of his fingers Hippolyte burst out laugh ing

Do you know you are a terrible chap for all your innocent airs continued the vicomte I pity the poor husband that little officer who gives himself the airs of a monarch

Hippolyte spluttered again and amid his laughter *said And you were saying that the* Russian ladies are not equal to the French? One has to know how to deal with them

Pierre reaching the house first went into Prince Andrew s study like one quite at home and from habit immediately lay down on the sofa took from the shelf the first book that came to his hand (it was Caesar s *Commentaries*) and resting on his elbow began read ing it in the middle

What have you done to Mlle Schérer? She will be quite ill now said Prince Andrew as he entered the study rubbing his small white hands

Pierre turned his whole body making the sofa creak He lifted his eager face to Prince Andrew smiled and waved his hand

That abbé is very interesting but he does not see the thing in the right light In my opinion perpetual peace is possible but—I do not know how to express it not by a bal ance of political power

It was evident that Prince Andrew was not interested in such abstract conversation

One can t everywhere say all one thinks *mon cher* Well have you at last decided on anything? Are you going to be a guardsman or a diplomatist? asked Prince Andrew after a momentary silence

Pierre sat up on the sofa with his legs tucked under him

Really I don t yet know I don t like either the one or the other

But you must decide on something! Your father expects it

Pierre at the age of ten had been sent a broad with an abbé as tutor and had remained away till he was twenty When he returned to Moscow his father dismissed the abbé and said to the young man Now go to Petersburg look round and choose your profession I will agree to anything Here is a letter to Prince Vasili and here is money Write to me all about it and I will help you in everything Pierre had already been choosing a career for three months and had not decided on any thing It was about this choice that Prince Andrew was speaking Pierre rubbed his fore head

But he must be a Freemason said he re ferring to the abbé whom he had met that evening

That is all nonsense Prince Andrew again interrupted him let us talk business Have you been to the Horse Guards?

No I have not but this is what I have been thinking and wanted to tell you There is a war now against Napoleon If it were a war for freedom I could understand it and I should be the first to enter the army but to

at Pierre s childish words He put on the air of one who finds it impossible to reply to such nonsense but it would in fact have been difficult to give any other answer than the one Prince Andrew gave to this naive question

If no one fought except on his own con viction there would be no wars he said

And that would be splendid said Pierre.

Prince Andrew smiled ironically

Very likely it would be splendid but it will never come about

"Well, why are you goin to the war?" asked Pierre.

What for? I d n t know I must. Besides that I am going He paused. I am going because the lif I am leadin here does not suit me!

CHAPTER VII

The rustle of woman dress was heard in the next room. Prince A drew shook himself as if wakin up and his f ce assumed the look had had in Anna P l na drawing room. Pierre removed his feet from the sofa. The princess came in. She had changed her gown or house dress as fresh and elegant as the ...er Prince Andrew rose and politely placed hair for her

H w is t, she began usual in French, settlin down briskly and fussily in the easy cha... "ho is t Anne te never got married? H w stupid you men all are not to have mar ied her! Excuse me for sayin so, b t you ... no sense bout women. What an argumentatu fellow u are, Monsieur P erre!

And I am still arguin with your husband. I can t understand why he wants to go to the ar replied P erre, addressin the princess th non of the embarrassm nt so mmonly shown b youn men in their intercourse with oung women.

r P erre s

derstand wh men can t l e w thout wars. H w is it tha w women don t want anything of th kind don t need it? Now you shall judge between us. I alwa ll him Here he is Uncle aide-d -camp most brilliant position. H so well kn wn so much pp eciated by every Th ther da t th Apraksins I heard lad aski I that th famous Pri ce Andrew" I did indeed. Sh laughed. H s so well recei ed erywhere. H might easily become aide-d -camp to the Emper You know the Emperor pok to him most gra ciously An ette and I were peakin of how to arrange t. What d ou think?

P err looked t his friend and, noticin that h did no like the con ersation, ga no reply

When ar ou startin he asked.

"Oh, don t peak f his goin do I won t hear t pok n of, said th pri cess in th same pe lantly pla ful in which sh had poken to H ppo te in the drawing room and which was so plainly ll-suited to the family circle of which P erre was almost a member "Today when I remembered that all these de lightful associations must be broken off and then you know André " (she looked sign ficantly t her husband) I m afraid, I m afra d she whispered, and a shudder ran down her back.

Her husband looked t her as if surprised to notice that someone besides P erre nd him self was n the room, and ddressed her in a tone of fri d politeness.

"What is t you are afraid of Lise? I don t understand, said h

"There what egotists men all are all ll egotists. Just for a wh m of his own goodness onl kn ws wh he lea es me nd locks me up al ne n the country

"W th my f ther nd sister remember " sa d Prince Andrew gently

Alone all the sam w thout *my* friends. And h expects me not to be afra d.

Her ton was now querulous and her l p drawn up giving her not joyful, but n animal, squirrel-like expression. She paused as if she felt t indecorous to peak of her preg nancy bef P erre, though the gist of the matter la in that.

I still can t understand what ou are afra d of said Prince Andrew slowl n t takin hi eyes off hi wife.

Th prin ess blushed, and raised he arms with gesture of despair

No, Andrew I must say you ha e changed.

short down lip quivered. Prince Andrew rose shrugged his sh ulders, and walked bout th room.

P erre looked er his pectacles w th nat urp ise, n a t him and n w t her mo ed as f bout to rise too but chan ed hi mind.

"Why should I mind Mons eur P err bein here. exclaimed the li tle p ess sudd nl her pretty face all t once distorted by a tea ful grimace. I ha l ng wan ed to ask you Andrew why you ha changed so to m What ha I d n to you. You are go n to th war and ha e no p ty fo me. Wh t.

Lise was all Prince A drew sa d. But that on w rd exp essed an entreaty threat, and bo all con ction that she would herself e gret her w rds. But she went on hurriedly

You treat me lik an in al d o child. I

see it all! Did you behave like that six months ago?

Lise I beg you to desist said Prince Andrew still more emphatically

Pierre who had been growing more and more agitated as he listened to all this rose and approached the princess He seemed unable to bear the sight of tears and was ready to cry himself

Calm yourself Princess! It seems so to you because I assure you I myself have experienced and so because No excuse me! *An outsider is out of place here* No don t distress yourself Good by!

Prince Andrew caught him by the hand

No wait Pierre! The princess is too kind to wish to deprive me of the pleasure of spending the evening with you

No he thinks only of himself muttered the princess without restraining her angry tears

Lise! said Prince Andrew dryly raising his voice to the pitch which indicates that patience is exhausted

Suddenly the angry squirrel like expression of the princess pretty face changed into a winning and piteous look of fear Her beautiful eyes glanced askance at her husband s face and her own assumed the timid deprecating expression of a dog when it rapidly but feebly wags its drooping tail

Mon Dieu mon Dieu! she muttered and lifting her dress with one hand she went up to her husband and kissed him on the forehead

Good night Lise said he rising and courteously kissing her hand as he would have done to a stranger

CHAPTER VIII

The friends were silent Neither cared to begin talking Pierre continually glanced at Prince Andrew Prince Andrew rubbed his forehead with his small hand

Let us go and have supper he said with a sigh going to the door

They entered the elegant newly decorated and luxurious dining room Everything from the table napkins to the silver china and glass bore that imprint of newness found in the households of the newly married Halfway through supper Prince Andrew leaned his elbows on the table and with a look of nervous agitation such as Pierre had never before seen on his face began to talk—as one who has long had something on his mind and suddenly determines to speak out

Never never marry my dear fellow! That s my advice never marry till you can say to yourself that you have done all you are capable of and until you have ceased to love the woman of your choice and have seen her plainly as she is or else you will make a cruel and irrevocable mistake Marry when you are old and good for nothing—or all that is good and

[illegible]

from yourself in the future you will feel at every step that for you all is ended all is closed except the drawing room where you will be ranged side by side with a court lackey and an idiot! But what s the good? and he waved his arm

Pierre took off his spectacles which made his face seem different and the good natured expression still more apparent and gazed at his friend in amazement

My wife continued Prince Andrew is an excellent woman one of those rare women with whom a man s honor is safe but O God what would I not give now to be unmarried You are the first and only one to whom I mention this because I like you

As he said this Prince Andrew was less than ever like that Bolkonski who had lolled in Anna Pávlovna s easy chairs and with half closed eyes had uttered French phrases between his teeth Every muscle of his thin face was now quivering with nervous excitement his eyes in which the fire of life had seemed extinguished now flashed with brilliant light It was evident that the more lifeless he seemed at ordinary times the more impassioned he became in these moments of almost morbid irritation

You don t understand why I say this he continued but it is the whole story of life You talk of Bonaparte and his career said he (though Pierre had not mentioned Bonaparte) but Bonaparte when he worked went step by step toward his goal He was free he had nothing but his aim to consider and he reached it But tie yourself up with a woman and like a chained convict you lose all freedom! And all you have of hope and strength merely weighs you down and torments you with regret Drawing rooms gossip balls vanity and triviality—these are the enchanted circle I cannot escape from I am now going to the war the greatest war there ever was and I know nothing and am fit for nothing I am very amiable and have a caustic wit, continued Prince Andrew and at Anna Páv

n s they l ten t m And that tup d set h th t wh m my f c not x st nd tho e m l knew wh t those soc ety

ı
ı

m ...

yo y sho ld n d r yourself in p e d ur l fe a sp led l fe. You ha e very

and h w m ch he e pe ted of h m n th su r

e ery th g and had n op n bout every th g) b t bo all t his cap ty f wo k d t dy A d I P erre was ft stru k by And ew l k of cap ty f r pl l soph cal m ditat n (t wh ch he h m lf was p rt cu larly dd cted) le garded n this t as defect b t as g f tr ngth.

E en n the be t m t fr e dly d m plest l u f l fe, p se nd omme d t n are esse t l j t grease n essary to wh ls that th y m y run moothly

My part is pl y d t d P nce An drew What th use f talk g b t m? Let us talk bo t y u h dded fte l e, sml g th ssuri g th ughts

Tl t m le w mm diat ly fl ted n P rr f

B t h t is th er t say bo t me? sa d P rre h f c l g t arele merry sm le Wh t am I? An ll g tim t so ! He ddenly blushed cr mso d tw pl n th t he l d m d great eff t to say this. W th t am d w tl t mean A d t really B t he d d t say wl t t really as. F r the p esent I am f e nd am ll r ght O ly I ha e t th le t dea wl I n t d I w ted to co ult y se sly

Pr ce A d ew looked k ndly at l m y t

—e

ne l e man mong our wh le set xes y a Choo e s h t you w ll its ll tl e

l

u u ...
tl

What would you ha e my dear fellow? nsw r d P erre, l rugg g l ho lders. W men my d ar f ll w women!

I don t underst nd t r pl ed Pr nce An dre W men who ar omme l fa t tl at s a differe t m tt r but the Kurági s set of m n omen a d w ne I d n t under tand!

P rre was t y ng t Pr ce V sil Kurág n s and sharing the d ss pated l fe of his son Ana tol the son wh m they ere pl n g to re form by marry g h m to Pr nce Andre s ster

D y u k ow? a d P erre a f s ddc ly

—

th ng One head che and ne p ds ll o e m ney H ask d m f t n gl t but I w t go

Y u g me your w d of h no not to g ?

O my hon l

CHAPTER IX

IT AS past ne o clock wh n P err left h s f nd It was a l udl ss n thern umn r ght P erre took an pen cab nt nd ng to dri tra ght home B t tl e n arer h dre t th h use th m he f lt the mpo b l ty f go ng t l ep n such n ght It w l gl t gh to lo g w y n tl d s ted str t d t med m e l ke m rn re n g

—

I l uld l k to go t Ku ág n tho ght he

B t he mm d tely r all d l p m e to P n A dre n t t go th Then as h p p ns t p pl f weak ch racter he de ed so pass t ly e m t joy that dissi p t he was ccu tomed to that h de cid d to g Th th ught mm diately occurred

see it all! Did you behave like that six months ago?

Lise I beg you to desist said Prince Andrew still more emphatically

Pierre who had been growing more and more agitated as he listened to all this rose and approached the princess He seemed unable to bear the sight of tears and was ready to cry himself

Calm yourself Princess! It seems so to you because I assure you I myself have experienced and so because No excuse me! An outsider is out of place here No don t distress yourself Good by!

Prince Andrew caught him by the hand

No wait Pierre! The princess is too kind to wish to deprive me of the pleasure of spending the evening with you

No he thinks only of himself muttered the princess without restraining her angry tears

Lise! said Prince Andrew dryly raising his voice to the pitch which indicates that patience is exhausted

Suddenly the angry squirrel like expression of the princess pretty face changed into a winning and piteous look of fear Her beautiful eyes glanced askance at her husband s face and her own assumed the timid deprecating

lifting her dress with one hand she went up to her husband and kissed him on the forehead

Good night Lise said he rising and courteously kissing her hand as he would have done to a stranger

CHAPTER VIII

The friends were silent Neither cared to begin talking Pierre continually glanced at Prince Andrew Prince Andrew rubbed his forehead with his small hand

Let us go and have supper he said with a sigh going to the door

bore that imprint of newness found in the households of the newly married Halfway through supper Prince Andrew leaned his elbows on the table and with a look of nervous agitation such as Pierre had never before seen on his face began to talk—as one who has long had something on his mind and suddenly determines to speak out

Never never marry my dear fellow! That s my advice never marry till you can say to yourself that you have done all you are capable of and until you have ceased to love the woman of your choice and have seen her plainly as she is or else you will make a cruel and irrevocable mistake Marry when you are old and good for nothing—or all that is good and noble in you will be lost It will all be wasted on trifles Yes! Yes! Yes! Don t look at me with such surprise If you marry expecting anything from yourself in the future you will feel at every step that for you all is ended all is closed except the drawing room where you will be ranged side by side with a court lackey and an idiot! But what s the good? and he waved his arm

Pierre took off his spectacles which made his face seem different and the good natured expression still more apparent and gazed at his friend in amazement

My wife continued Prince Andrew is an excellent woman one of those rare women *with whom a man s honor is safe* but O God what would I not give now to be unmarried You are the first and only one to whom I mention this because I like you

As he said this Prince Andrew was less than ever like that Bolkonski who had lolled in Anna Pávlovna s easy chairs and with half closed eyes had uttered French phrases between his teeth Every muscle of his thin face was now quivering with nervous excitement his eyes in which the fire of life had seemed extinguished now flashed with brilliant light It was evident that the more lifeless he seemed at ordinary times the more impassioned he became in these moments of almost morbid irritation

You don t understand why I say this he continued but it is the whole story of life You talk of Bonaparte and his career said he (though Pierre had not mentioned Bonaparte) but Bonaparte when he worked went step

had

reach [illegible]

and like a chained convict you lose all freedom! And all you have of hope and strength merely weighs you down and torments you with regret Drawing rooms gossip balls vanity and triviality—these are the enchanted circle I cannot escape from I am now going to the war the greatest war there ever was and I know nothing and am fit for nothing I am very amiable and have a caustic wit continued Prince Andrew and at Anna Páv

in them b t there n th g oth g n u
mg! N d t marry my dear fellow d n t
m rry! ncluded Prince Andrew

It seems f y to me, sa d P erre th t
y u y u sh ld c s der yo rs lf nc p ble
nd yo lf a p led l fe Y u h e e ery

t e

H w an l e talk l ke th t? tho ght P erre
He d d h f nd a model f p rfec
t be e P e A drew p sse ed n the

e eryth g d l d n op n bout ery
th g) b t bo e ll t h s cap city f wo k
d t dy A d f P rre w ft stru k by
And ws l ck f cap ty f ph l soph cal
med tat n (t wh ch he h mself w s p t cu
l ly dd t d) h eg d d e nt l t
d fect b t s a g f str gth.

Ev the best m t f e dly nd m
pl t l t f l fe, p se d mm da
t se t l j t as gr e n cessary t
wheel that they m y run sm thly

My part pl yed o t a d P e An
d e Wh t th of t lk g b t me?
Let t lk b t y u he dd d fte
l e ml g th s g th ught

Th t m l w mm diat ly r flect d
P rr f

B t wh t s th t y b ut m ? d
P rre h f l g t le merry
m le Wh t m I? A ll g t m te so ! He
dde ly bl shed cr mso d t spl n th t
h h d m d gr t ff t to y this W th
t am d w th t m And t
ally But h d d t say wh t t e lly
For th p nt I m f d m ll
ght O ly I h n t h l t d wh t I m
t d I w t d t n lty ly
P A dr w look d k ndly t h m yet

l s gla ce—fr endly and affectionate as it was
—e pressed a sen e f h s own s p r ty

I an fo d of y u e j ec ally as y u are th e
one l en na i ng our whole set Yes y u re
all r ght! Choose what you will ts ll the
same Y u ll be all r ght anywhere B t look
here g ve p s tt g th o e Ku ág ns and l ad
i g th t sort of l fe. It s ts you so b dly— ll
th s deba l ery d s j t n a d the re t of
th

Wh at w uld you h ve my dear fell w
nswered P erre l rugg g l sh ould rs.
Women my de r f ll w wo nen!

I d n t u derst d it r pl ed I r nce An
drew W men wh o are *c m e l f ut* th t s
a d ffer nt m tter but the K rág ns set of
w me wome nd w i e I don t u der
tand!

I erre was stay ng t P ce Va ll Ku ág n s
and sh r g th e d ss pated l fe of h i son An
tole the son wh they we e p l nn g to re
form by m rry ng h m to I rince A drc s
s ster

Do y u kn w? sa d P erre as f ddenly
stru k by a h ppy th ght er ly I h e
l g b n th k g f t. Le d g uch
l fe I can t decide or th k pr perly b ut ny
th ng One he d ach a d o e ; ends all
o e m ey He a k d me f r t g ht but
I w n t g

Y u g e me y ur w d f l no not to
g ?

O my ho !

CHAPTER IX

IT as past e o l k when P e e left h s
f d It w s l udless, n d u mer
ght. P er took n open cab te d ng, to
d est a ght l me But th en l d ew t o
th h e them r he felt the mp b l ty of
g g t sl ep on uch n ght It w l ght
e ght see l g w y th de erted street
d t m d m e l ke m n g e h

I l ld l ke to go to Ku ág th ught
l e

B t h mm d tely re all d l s p m e to
P A d e n t t g th e Th n h p
p s to peopl f we k char t he d ed
so p t ly o e m e t e j y th t d s
p t h w s tom d to th e de
d d to g The th ght mmed tely occ rred

to him that his promise to Prince Andrew was of no account because before he gave it he had already promised Prince Anatole to come to his gathering besides thought he all such words of honor are conventional things with no definite meaning especially if one considers that by tomorrow one may be dead or something so extraordinary may happen to one that honor and dishonor will be all the same! Pierre often indulged in reflections of this sort nullifying all his decisions and intentions He went to Kurágin s

Reaching the large house near the Horse Guards barracks in which Anatole lived Pierre entered the lighted porch ascended the stairs and went in at the open door There was no one in the anteroom empty bottles cloaks and overshoes were lying about there was a smell of alcohol and sounds of voices and shouting in the distance

Cards and supper were over but the visitors had not yet dispersed Pierre threw off his cloak and entered the first room in which were the remains of supper A footman thinking no one saw him was drinking on the sly what was left in the glasses From the third room came sounds of laughter the shouting of familiar voices the growling of a bear and general

bear one pulling him by the chain and trying to set him at the others

I bet a hundred on Stevens! shouted one

Mind no holding on! cried another

I bet on Dólokhov! cried a third Kurágin you part our hands

There leave Bruin alone here s a bet on

At one draught or he loses! shouted a fourth

Jacob bring a bottle! shouted the host a tall handsome fellow who stood in the midst of the group without a coat and with his fine linen shirt unfastened in front Wait a bit you fellows Here is Pétya! Good man! cried he addressing Pierre

Another voice from a man of medium

the bets! This was Dolokhov an officer of the Semenov regiment a notorious gambler and duelist who was living with Anatole Pierre smiled looking about him merrily

I don t understand What s it all about?

Wait a bit he is not drunk yet! A bottle here said Anatole and taking a glass from the table he went up to Pierre

First of all you must drink!

Pierre drank one glass after another looking from under his brows at the tipsy guests who were again crowding round the window and listening to their chatter Anatole kept on refilling Pierre s glass while explaining that Dólokhov was betting with Stevens an English naval officer that he would drink a bottle of rum sitting on the outer ledge of the third floor window with his legs hanging out

Go on you must drink it all said Anatole giving Pierre the last glass or I won t let you go!

No I won t said Pierre pushing Anatole aside and he went up to the window

Dolokhov was holding the Englishman s hand and clearly and distinctly repeating the terms of the bet addressing himself particularly to Anatole and Pierre

Dolokhov was of medium height with curly hair and light blue eyes He was about twenty five Like all infantry officers he wore no mustache so that his mouth the most striking feature of his face was clearly seen The lines of that mouth were remarkably finely curved The middle of the upper lip formed a sharp wedge and closed firmly on the firm lower one and something like two distinct smiles played continually round the two corners of the mouth this together with the resolute insolent intelligence of his eyes produced an effect which made it impossible not to notice his face Dolokhov was a man of small means and no connections Yet though Anatole spent tens of thousands of rubles Dólokhov lived with him and had placed himself on such a footing that all who knew them including Anatole himself respected him more than they did Anatole Dólokhov could play all games and nearly always won However much he drank he never lost his clearheadedness Both Kurágin and Dólokhov were at that time notorious among the rakes and scapegraces of Petersburg

The bottle of rum was brought The window frame which prevented anyone from sitting on the outer sill was being forced out by two footmen who were evidently flurried and intimidated by the directions and shouts of the gentlemen around.

Anatole with his swaggering air strode up to the window He wanted to smash something Pushing away the footmen he tugged at the frame but could not move it He smashed a pane

"You have tr Hercules, said he, turning o P erre.

Pierre seized the crossbeam, tugged, and wrenched the oak frame out w th a crash.

"Take t right out, or they'll think I m hold- on, said Dolokh

"I the En lishman braggin Eh? Is t al right said Anatole.

"First rate, said Pierre, lookin at Dolok hov ho with bottle of rum in his hand was pproaching the window from which the light of the sk the dawn merein w th the after low of sunset, was visible.

Dolokho th bottl of rum still his hand, jumped onto the indow sill. Listen cried e, standing there and dressing those in the room. All were silent.

"I bet fi t imperials —he poke French that the Englishman might understand him, but he did not speak t ery well— I bet fifty imperials or do ou wish to make t hun dred, added he, dressin th Englishman.

No, fif replied the latter

All right. Fifty imperials that I will drink who bottl of rum w thout takin it from my mouth, sitt outsid th window on this spot (he stooped and poin ed to the sloping ledge outside th w nd w) and w th out holdin on to an thing I that right.

"Quite rig t, said th En lishman.

Anato e turned th Englishman and tak ing him by on of the bu tons of his coat and lookin own him—the En lishman was short—began repeatin th erms f the wager to him in English.

"Wai cried Do kh hammering w th the bottl on the window sill to attract tten- tion. "Wait b t, Kuragin. Listen If an o else does the same I will pa him hundred imperials. Do you understand?

The En lishman nodded, bu ga no in- dication wh ther he intended to accept this challenge or not Ana l did not release him, and though h kep noddi o show that h understood. Anato wen translatin Do- lokhov words in o English. A thi oun lad, an hussar of the Lif Guards, who had been losin that evenin limbed on th wind w sill, leaned over and looked d wn.

Oh Oh Oh he mu ered, lookin down from the wind w th sto es of the pave- ment

"Shut p cried Dol kh pushing him ay from th window The lad jumped wk ward back into the room, tripping o er his spurs.

Placin the bottle on the w ndow sill where he cou d reach t e sily Dolokho l mbed carefull d slowly th ou h th w d w nd lowered his legs. Press a a n t both sides of the w dow he adjusted himself on his seat lo ered h hands, mo ed a l ttle to the ht and then to the left, a d took p the bottle. An tole brought two candles and placed them on the w ndow sill, thou h t was lrea ly qu te light. Do kh s back n h s whi e sh rt, and his curly head, were l t up from both sides. E eryone cro ded to the wi w the En l sh- man n front. P erre stood smil but silent. O e man, old r than th others present, sud- denly pushed forward w th scared and ngry look and wanted to seize hold of Dolokho shirt.

I sa this is fool He'll be killed," sa d this more sensibl man.

Anatole st pped him.

Don t touch him! You'll startle him and then he'll be killed. Eh? What then? Eh.

Dolokho turned round and, a n hold on w th both hands, arranged l mself on his seat.

Now then

Sa g this he aga n turned round, dropped his hands, took the bottle and lifted t to his lips, threw ba k hi head a d raised h s free hand to balan e himself On of the footm n who had stooped to p ck up some broken glass remained in that position w thout taki g h eyes from the w dow and from Dol kho s back. An tole stood erect w th staring eyes. The Englishman looked on sideways, pursing up his lips. The man who had w shed to st p th affair ran to corner of th room and threw himself on sofa with his f e to the wall. P erre hid his face from which a faint smile f rgot to fade though his features n w expressed horror and f ar All were still. P erre took his hands from his eyes. Dolokho still sat in th sam position only his head was thrown further back till his curly hair t uched his shirt collar and the hand h ldi the bot tle was lifted h her and h her and tremb ed w th th ffort. Th bottle was emptyin per ceptibly and rising still higher and his head tilti further back. "Wh is t so lon ?" thought P erre It seemed to him th t more than half an hour had elapsed. S ddenly Do- l kh made backward mo ement w th his

to him that his promise to Prince Andrew was of no account because before he gave it he had already promised Prince Anatole to come to his gathering besides thought he all such words of honor are conventional things with no definite meaning especially if one considers that by tomorrow one may be dead or something so extraordinary may happen to one that honor and dishonor will be all the same! Pierre often indulged in reflections of this sort nullifying all his decisions and intentions He went to Kurágin s

Reaching the large house near the Horse Guards barracks in which Anatole lived Pierre entered the lighted porch ascended the stairs and went in at the open door There was no one in the anteroom empty bottles cloaks and overshoes were lying about there was a smell of alcohol and sounds of voices and shouting in the distance

Cards and supper were over but the visitors had not yet dispersed Pierre threw off his cloak and entered the first room in which were the remains of supper A footman thinking no one saw him was drinking on the sly what was left in the glasses From the third room came sounds of laughter the shouting of familiar voices the growling of a bear and general commotion Some eight or nine young men were crowding anxiously round an open window Three others were romping with a young bear one pulling him by the chain and trying to set him at the others

I bet a hundred on Stevens! shouted one

Mind no holding on! cried another

I bet on Dólokhov! cried a third Kurágin you part our hands

There leave Bruin alone here s a bet on

At one draught or he loses! shouted a fourth

Jacob bring a bottle! shouted the host a tall handsome fellow who stood in the midst of the group without a coat and with his fine linen shirt unfastened in front Wait a bit you fellows Here is Pétya! Good man! cried he addressing Pierre

Another voice from a man of medium height with clear blue eyes particularly striking among all these drunken voices by its sober ring cried from the window Come here part

I don t understand What s it all about?

Wait a bit he is not drunk yet! A bottle here said Anatole and taking a glass from the table he went up to Pierre

First of all you must drink!

Pierre drank one glass after another looking from under his brows at the tipsy guests who were again crowding round the window and listening to their chatter Anatole kept on refilling Pierre s glass while explaining that Dólokhov was betting with Stevens an English naval officer that he would drink a bottle of rum sitting on the outer ledge of the third floor window with his legs hanging out

Go on you must drink it all said Anatole giving Pierre the last glass or I won t let you go!

No I won t said Pierre pushing Anatole aside and he went up to the window

Dolokhov was holding the Englishman s hand and clearly and distinctly repeating the terms of the bet addressing himself particularly to Anatole and Pierre

Dolokhov was of medium height with curly hair and light blue eyes He was about twenty five Like all infantry officers he wore no mustache so that his mouth the most striking feature of his face was clearly seen The lines of that mouth were remarkably finely curved The middle of the upper lip formed a sharp wedge and closed firmly on the firm lower one and something like two distinct smiles played continually round the two corners of the mouth this together with the resolute insolent intelligence of his eyes produced an effect which made it impossible not to notice his face Dolokhov was a man of small means and no connections Yet though Anatole spent tens of thousands of rubles Dolokhov lived with him and had placed himself on such a footing that all who knew them including Anatole himself respected him more than they did Anatole Dólokhov could play all games and nearly always won However much he drank he never lost his clearheadedness Both Kurágin and Dolokhov were at that time notorious among the rakes and scapegraces of Petersburg

The bottle of rum was brought The window frame which prevented anyone from sitting on the outer sill was being forced out by two footmen who were evidently flurried and intimidated by the directions and shouts of the gentlemen around.

Anatole with his swaggering air strode up to the window He wanted to smash something Pushing away the footmen he tugged at the frame but could not move it He smashed a pane

lif nd kn h w to h he wa eu au fro th d n t offered urmises bout th eather touched on questi f health, som time in Russia and som times n ery bad b t self-c fident F en h then a like man eary b t nfl nching n the fulfillm nt of d ty h rose t see som is tors off nd, stroking his scanty gra hairs er h bald p tch, also asked th m t dinner Sometimes on his wa ba k fr m the nteroom he w uld thro h h co servatory nd pantry to

ask tabl h en h w ld call Dmitri V sile ch, man of good fam l d th man ger of all his affairs, and wh le looking w th pleasure t th en rmous t bl w ld sa "W ll

h uld return t th draw g room.

"Marya L n Karagin nd her da gh ter! an unced th countess gigantic foot man in his bass o c nteri th draw oom. Th co tess reflected moment d took pinch from a gold uffbo w th her husband portrait t.

I m qu te w rn t by these call rs. How *ever I'll see her and n mo Sh is so affec ed.* Ask her sh said t th footman n sad ice as if saying Very well fin sh m off

A tall st ut, d pro d looki g woman w th round-faced smil g da ghter entered th dra ing oom, th ir dresses ru tli

"Dear Coun ess, what an g She has been laid p poo ch ld t th Razumó ski ball and Coun ess Apraksina I was so d l ghted came the so nds of anim ted femini ces, terrupting on an ther d mingli g w th th rustl ng f dresses d the scrap g f cha rs. Then f those o er sations began whi h last t until, t the first p use th guests rise w th rustle of dresses and say I am so d l ght d Mamma health and Countess Apráksina and then ain rustl g pass into the anteroom p t cloaks mantles, nd dri way The ersati was th ch f t p of th day th ill ess f th wealth d l brated be u f Cather da Count Bezukho and bo t hi illegitimate so P erre the on wh had beha ed so properly at An P l re epti n.

I m so sorry fo the poor ount, sa d the sit He s n uch b d he lth and n w this t n bo t h s son en ugh t kill l m

Wh t is that? ked the ntess s I d e d d not know what the sitor lluded t though she h d al e dy l eard about the ca se of Cou t Bezukl s distress some fifteen t mes.

"Th t wh t omes f a mod n educa t ex l med the v t It seems that wh le he was abroad this you g man w s l lo ed t d as he l ked and n w in Petersburg I h ar he h been do ng uch terrible th ngs that he l as been expelled by the police."

You d n t say so epl ed the co tess.

He hose h f ends badly nterposed A M khaylo na. Prince V sil s so he d erta n Dol kh ha e t is sa d, been up to hea e only kn w what. And they ha e had t uffer f r t. Dol kh h s been de graded to th ranks d Bezukhov s son sent ba k to Moscow An tole Kurág n f th er man ed s m h w t get h s son all r l ushed up b t even he was o dered out of Petersburg

B t what ha they been p t ked th cou tess.

"They are regular brigands, espec ll D l kho repl ed th sit r H son f Márya I áno na Dol kho a, such worth y woman b t there ju t fancy Those thr e got h ld of bear som where, put t in carria e and set ff w th t to sit some tresses The police tr ed to int fer and wh t d d th young m n do They t ed a policeman and the bear back to b ck d put the bear t the M yka Canal A d there was the be m m g bo t w th th pol eman o h b k

"Wh t figure the pol ceman ust h *cut, my dear* shouted the c u t, dy th la ghter

Oh how dr dful H w can u l gh t t, Count

Y t th lad es themsel es ld not help l ghing

It wa ll th y could do t rescu th poo man ontinued th sito And t th nk t Cyril Vl dimiro ch Bezukh son who muses himself n this sensible man er! And h said to be so well educated a d les *This is all that his f eign education has do* f him I h pe that here n Moscow n o e w ll ece him n p of his money Th y wanted to introduce him to me, b t I quite decli ed I ha e my d u hters to cons d r"

spine and his arm trembled nervously this was sufficient to cause his whole body to slip as he sat on the sloping ledge As he began slipping down his head and arm wavered still more with the strain One hand moved as if to clutch the window sill but refrained from touching it Pierre again covered his eyes and thought he would never open them again Suddenly he was aware of a stir all around He looked up Dolokhov was standing on the window sill with a pale but radiant face

It s empty!

He threw the bottle to the Englishman who caught it neatly Dolokhov jumped down He smelt strongly of rum

Well done! Fine fellow! There s a bet for you! Devil take you! came from different sides

The Englishman took out his purse and began counting out the money Dolokhov stood frowning and did not speak Pierre jumped upon the window sill

Gentlemen who wishes to bet with me? I ll do the same thing! he suddenly cried Even without a bet there! Tell them to bring me a bottle I ll do it Bring a bottle!

Let him do it let him do it said Dólokhov smiling

What next? Have you gone mad? No one would let you! Why you go giddy even on a staircase exclaimed several voices

I ll drink it! Let s have a bottle of rum! shouted Pierre banging the table with a determined and drunken gesture and preparing to climb out of the window

They seized him by his arms but he was so strong that everyone who touched him was sent flying

No you ll never manage him that way said Anatole Wait a bit and I ll get round him Listen! I ll take your bet tomorrow but now we are all going to — s

Come on then cried Pierre Come on!

And we ll take Bruin with us

And he caught the bear took it in his arms lifted it from the ground and began dancing round the room with it

CHAPTER X

PRINCE VASILI kept the promise he had given to Princess Drubetskáya who had spoken to him on behalf of her only son Boris on the evening of Anna Pávlovna s soiree The matter was mentioned to the Emperor an exception made and Boris transferred into the regiment of Semenov Guards with the rank of cornet He received however no appointment to Kutuzov s staff despite all Anna Mikháylovna s endeavors and entreaties Soon after Anna Pávlovna s reception Anna Mikháylovna returned to Moscow and went straight to her rich relations the Rostóvs with whom she stayed when in the town and where her darling Bóry who had only just entered a regiment of the line and was being at once transferred to the Guards as a cornet had been educated from childhood and lived for years at a time The Guards had already left Petersburg on the tenth of August and her son who had remained in Moscow for his equipment was to join them on the march to Radzivílov

It was St Natalia s day and the name day of two of the Rostóvs—the mother and the youngest daughter—both named Nataly Ever since the morning carriages with six horses had been coming and going continually bringing visitors to the Countess Rostóva s big house on the Povarskáya so well known to all Moscow The countess herself and her handsome eldest daughter were in the drawing room with the visitors who came to congratulate and who constantly succeeded one another in relays

The countess was a woman of about forty five with a thin Oriental type of face evidently worn out with childbearing—she had had twelve A languor of motion and speech resulting from weakness gave her a distinguished air which inspired respect Princess Anna Mikháylovna Drubetskáya who as a member of the household was also seated in the drawing room helped to receive and entertain the visitors The young people were in one of the inner rooms not considering it necessary to take part in receiving the visitors The count met the guests and saw them off inviting them all to dinner

I am very very grateful to you *mon cher* or *ma chère* —he called everyone without exception and without the slightest variation in his tone my dear whether they were above or below him in rank— I thank you for myself and for our two dear ones whose name day we are keeping But mind you come to dinner or I shall be offended *ma chère* On behalf of the whole family I beg you to come *mon cher* These words he repeated to everyone without exception or variation and with the same expression on his full cheerful clean shaven face the same firm pressure of the hand and the same quick repeated bows As soon as he had seen a visitor off he returned to one of those who were still in the drawing room

thro ght arsofl ghter and ran h dhe f

The sitor compelled t look on t th family scene thou ht it ne essary to take some part t.

"T ll m my dear s d she to N tál M mt a rel ti f yours. A da gl ter I ppose?

N tasha did not l k tl e t s t e of co desce si n to ch ldish th ngs. Sh d d n t reply b t looked t h ser usly

M whil tl y u ge generat i B the ffi er An M khá l n s son N cl l th und rgrad th count s ll st so Só ya, tl e u fift n y r-old i nd l t l P(t) h u gest boy h d ll ttl d l the dr groo n nd r b l try g t estra th tl bou d f l o rum th t d th that l e ll th f es. E dently n tl b k room s, f wh cl tl ey had d shed t pet sly he co rsati n h d bee m s i g ha tl e draw g room t lk of soci ty sca dals, th w th r d Cou tess Ap ák na. N w d tl tl y gla ed t tl r hardly bl upp ess tl l gl t

Th t n tl tudent d he ffi er friend f n cl ldl ood wer f tl sam d bt th h dso f ll w tl l t al k Bo f u t ll d f d l lm d h dsom f h d regula del t f tures. N cl l was sl t tl curly ha d pe p ess n Dark l rs w lre dy sh g h pper l t d l l l f e pessed mpetu sity d ntlu sm N l o l bl shed wl en h nt red the draw room He es d l tried to fi d som th to say b t f l d Bo l tl trary t f u d h f ou d lated q tly nd l m r usl h w h l d k w ll t d ll M m wl en sl t ll q t y u gl dy bef l ose brok h w l h d ged d rang tl fi e ye h i d k w her nd h w l l d l d er ked n ht cr ss tl k ll H g said th h gl ed t N ásh Sl t d n y f m him d gl n d t l yo b ther wh was scr w n p h y and sl ki g w th pp essed la ght d un ll o n trol h rself y l n e sh jumped p and rushed f m th oom fast as h bl l t l f t w uld carry l Bo is d d n l h.

Y u w m n g t go u w re t u M mm ? D y w t tl rr he asked h m ther w th sm le

"Yes, yes, go d ll th m t eet dy sh nswered, turn g h sm l

Bo q ly l f h roo d w n search of Natáli a The plump boy ran fter them angr ly as if v ed th t the r pro ra i had been d turbed.

CHAPTER XII

THE o ly y ng peo le ren a ning in the drawing room n t c u ti g the young l dy t r and th cou tess eldest daughter (wl w fo r years l ler th n l er sister and be f ed already l ke a grow t p person) were N l l d S y tl e nie e Sónya w a l nder l ttle brun tte w th a tender look i l r ey s wl l ere eiled by long lasl es, th k bl k pl ts o l ng t er ui d her l l d t wny t n h r n l on n l espe c lly n tl ol r f l er ler der but g c ful a d n u ular n is d n k By the gr ce of l t by the softness nd fl bl l ty f l r small l mbs, nd by c rta n coy ess d reserve f m nner sher n nded one of a pretty l lf-gr wn k tten wh cl pron se t beco e be utif l l ttl cat. She ev dently m l n l t nr per to sl w i t te est tl e

an y w th ucl p ssi n te g f sl do t d c l er le uld n t f i gle i tart pose pon a y ne d t w clea tl t tl k tten l d settled d i o ly t y y i l w tl n o e e rgy nd g n y lay w th l r n a soon as they too could l k N tasl d Bor scape f om tl e draw g oo t. M es y de s d tl u t dd es

nd l s old f ther nd e ter ng the n l tary serv c my d r And th e s y l e d e rythi g w u f r l m n tl e Ar l D p tm tl I nt th t f e dsh y em ked the count n n nq n g t c

But they say that a h s be n de l l r pl d d us to

"Th y e been say g so long wl l sa d th co t, nd tl y ll say so g n d ga t, d th t w ll b tl e nd of t. My d tl fri ndsh p f you l repeated H y n g th hussars.

Th sit n t kn w ng hat to say sh ok l er l e d

It t r ll f om fri dsh p d cl ed N cl l fl n g up nd turn ng w y s f f m sham ful y ers It s not f m fri dsh p t ll l m y ly feel th t the army y ocat

Why do you say this young man is so rich? asked the countess turning away from the girls who at once assumed an air of inattention His children are all illegitimate I think Pierre also is illegitimate

The visitor made a gesture with her hand

I should think he has a score of them

Princess Anna Mikháylovna intervened in the conversation evidently wishing to show her connections and knowledge of what went on in society

The fact of the matter is said she significantly and also in a half whisper everyone knows Count Cyril s reputation He has lost count of his children but this Pierre was his favorite

How handsome the old man still was only a year ago! remarked the countess I have never seen a handsomer man

He is very much altered now said Anna Mikhaylovna Well as I was saying Prince Vasili is the next heir through his wife but the count is very fond of Pierre looked after his education and wrote to the Emperor about him so that in the case of his death—and he is so ill that he may die at any moment and Dr Lorrain has come from Petersburg—no one knows who will inherit his immense fortune Pierre or Prince Vasili Forty thousand serfs and millions of rubles! I know it all very well for Prince Vasili told me himself Besides Cyril Vladímirovich is my mother s second cousin He s also my Bóry s godfather she added as if she attached no importance at all to the fact

Prince Vasili arrived in Moscow yesterday I hear he has come on some inspection business remarked the visitor

Yes but between ourselves said the princess that is a pretext The fact is he has come to see Count Cyril Vladímirovich hearing how ill he is

But do you know my dear that was a capital joke said the count and seeing that the elder visitor was not listening he turned to the young ladies I can just imagine what a funny figure that policeman cut!

And as he waved his arms to impersonate the policeman his portly form again shook with a deep ringing laugh the laugh of one who always eats well and in particular drinks well So do come and dine with us! he said

CHAPTER XI

Silence ensued The countess looked at her callers smiling affably but not concealing the fact that she would not be distressed if they now rose and took their leave The visitor s daughter was already smoothing down her dress with an inquiring look at her mother when suddenly from the next room were heard the footsteps of boys and girls running to the door and the noise of a chair falling over and a girl of thirteen hiding something in the folds of her short muslin frock darted in and stopped short in the middle of the room It was evident that she had not intended her

and a plump rosy faced boy in a short jacket

The count jumped up and swaying from side to side spread his arms wide and threw them round the little girl who had run in

Ah here she is! he exclaimed laughing My pet whose name day it is My dear pet!

Ma chère there is a time for everything said the countess with feigned severity You spoil her Ilyá she added turning to her husband

How do you do my dear? I wish you many happy returns of your name day said the visitor What a charming child she added addressing the mother

This black eyed wide mouthed girl not pretty but full of life—with childish bare shoulders which after her run heaved and shook her bodice with black curls tossed backward thin bare arms little legs in lace frilled drawers and feet in low slippers—was just at that charming age when a girl is no longer a child though the child is not yet a young woman Escaping from her father she ran to hide her flushed face in the lace of her mother s mantilla—not paying the least attention to her severe remark—and began to laugh She laughed and in fragmentary sentences tried to explain about a doll which she produced from the folds of her frock.

Do you see? My doll Mimi You see was all Natásha managed to utter (to

Now then go away and take your monstrosity with you said the mother pushing away her daughter with pretended sternness and turning to the visitor she added She is my youngest girl

Natásha raising her face for a moment from her mother s mantilla glanced up at her

st p d q k at l rn g was well brought up and had a pleasa t e wh t she sa d w true and pproprı t) t, trange t sa) e ery one–the ıs t rs d co ntess l ke–turned *to look* t her as f w nd rıng why she had sa d ı f lt wkward.

W ıu gooo

Our dear ntess w *too cle*v r w th Vé a said th c u t. W ll what I that? She s turn d t pl nd dly all the same he added ınkıng t Véra.

Th guests g t p a d took their lea e promıs ng to return to dı ne

What m ers l th ght they w uld never go sa d *the countess,* wh sh had see t he guests t.

CHAPTER XIII

W E N tásh ran t of th draw g room she nly w t far tl e co servatory The e she p sed d tood l t n g t the e sat th dra g room w t ng f Borı c m ut. Sh was lr dy grow g p t ent d tamped h r foot re dy to cry t h s

m g th fl er t b d h d the

Bo p used th m ddl f th room look d r d brushed l ıtl d t f m th sleev I his f rm d go up t m rr examined his h dsome f ce N tásha, ery ll pee ed ut f m her mbush u g t see what h w uld d He tood l ttle wh l bef re th gl ss m led and w lked to ard th ther doo N tásh was bo t t call h m b t ch ged h m d Let h m look f me th ght sh Hardly h d B rı gon than So) fl shed tears nd m tt rı angrıl) cam n th th doo N ásh checked h first impulse t run u to h nd e- ma ed h h d g pl ce w ch –as u der sible cap– see wh t went n the ld. Sh w p ct g n w d pecul ıar pl asur So) muttering to herself k pt look g ro nd wa d th dra g oom doo lt pe d d N ch l m

So a wh t th m tt w th u? H ca) *t* sa d h ru g pt l

It n thı g, n thı g lea m al n l sobbed So ya.

Ah, I kn wha ıs.

W ll, f) u d so m h the bett and) u can go ba k to l e l

Soo-o)a! Look l e e! H c r u t r t re me nd) rself l ke tl at f r t fa cs? sa l N chol t k ng l er l nd.

Sonya d d n t pull t a a) nd left ff r) g N *t á l* nor t rrıng nd sca ccl l eath g wat hed fr n l er mbush tl p rkl g eyes. What w ll h pp n now? th gl t l e

Sc)a! Wh t s n) ne n the w ld to e? Y u l ne are eryıl ng sa d N h las. A d l ll pr e t to) u

I don t l ke you to t lk l ke that

Well then I nt o l) *I* g e r e So) l He drew her to h m a d kıss d l er

Oh how n ce th ht N tásl d wh n Sony a d N cl l s h d go e o t of the n serv t ry she f ll wed and called B *is to her*

B rıs om l ere sa d he w th a sly d gn fica t look I l e so etl n to t ll) u Her her l a d he led h m nto the serv atory to the pl ce among tl e tubs wl ere sl e had be n h d ng

Bo ı f ll wed h r sm l g

Wh t s the s m th g! ked he.

She gr w co fused gl n ed rc und l see- g the d ll sh had thrown down on ne of th tubs, p ked t up

K ss the d ll sa d he

Bo ı look d ttent ely and k dl t l er eager f e b t d d t eply

D n t) u wa t to? Well tl e ome l e e sa d she nd w t f r the n amo g tl e pl ts and thr w d wn the d ll Cl ser lose sh wh pe ed.

Sh ca gl t th you g ffi er by l ff and look l solem ty nd fear ppear d on l er flush d f c

And m ? Wo ld) u l ke to k ss me he whı pered alm t ud bly gl c g up t hım f m u de he brow sm l and al most cry g f o t m nt.

Borı bl sl ed

H w fu ny) u re he sa d bend ng d wn t her nd bl sh g st ll mo b t l e waited nd did n th g

Sudd ly h jump d up o to a tub to b h gher th n he mbra ed h m so th t both h l nd b e rm l p d h m abo h n ck nd t ss g b ck her h ır kıssed h m f ll n the l ps.

Th she sl pp d d wn am the fl er pots n th th d of the tub nd tood h gı g her he d

N tásh he sa d you know tl t I l e) u but

You are n l th m ? N tash b ke n

He glanced at his cousin and the young lady visitor and they were both regarding him with a smile of approbation

Schubert the colonel of the Pávlograd Hus

I have already told you Papa said his son that if you don t wish to let me go I ll stay But I know I am no use anywhere except in the army I am not a diplomat or a government clerk —I don t know how to hide what I feel As he spoke he kept glancing with the flirtatiousness of a handsome youth at Sónya and the young lady visitor

The little kitten feasting her eyes on him seemed ready at any moment to start her gambols again and display her kittenish nature

All right all right! said the old count He always flares up! This Buonaparte has turned all their heads they all think of how he rose *from an ensign and became Emperor Well* well God grant it he added not noticing his visitor s sarcastic smile

she giving him a tender smile

The young man flattered sat down nearer to her with a coquettish smile and engaged the smiling Julie in a confidential conversation without at all noticing that his involuntary *smile had stabbed the heart of Sónya* who blushed and smiled unnaturally In the midst of his talk he glanced round at her She gave him a passionately angry glance and hardly able to restrain her tears and maintain the artificial smile on her lips she got up and left the room All Nicholas animation vanished He waited for the first pause in the conversation and then with a distressed face left the room to find Sónya

How plainly all these young people wear their hearts on their sleeves! said Anna Mikháylovna pointing to Nicholas as he went out *Cousinage—dangereux voisinage* she added

Yes said the countess when the brightness these young people had brought into the room had vanished and as if answering a question no one had put but which was always in her *mind* and how much suffering how much anxiety one has had to go through that we *might rejoice in them now! And* yet really the anxiety is greater now than the joy One is always always anxious! Especially just at this age so dangerous both for girls and boys

It all depends on the bringing up remarked the visitor

Yes you re quite right continued the countess Till now I have always thank God been my children s friend and had their full confidence said she repeating the mistake of *so many parents who imagine that their chil*dren have no secrets from them I know I shall always be my daughters first confidante and that if Nicholas with his impulsive nature does get into mischief (a boy can t help it) he will all the same never be like those Petersburg young men

Yes they are splendid splendid youngsters chimed in the count who always solved questions that seemed to him perplexing by deciding that everything was splendid Just fancy wants to be an hussar What s one to do *my dear?*

What a charming creature your younger girl is said the visitor a little volcano!

Yes a regular volcano said the count Takes after me! And what a voice she has *though she s my daughter I tell the truth* when I say she ll be a singer a second Salomoni! We have engaged an Italian to give her lessons

Isn t she too young? I have heard that it harms the voice to train it at that age

Oh no not at all too young! replied the count Why our mothers used to be married at twelve or thirteen

And she s in love with Boris already Just fancy! said the countess with a gentle smile looking at Boris mother and went on evidently concerned with a thought that always occupied her Now you see if I were to be severe with her and to forbid it goodness knows what they might be up to on the sly (she meant that they would be kissing) but as it is I know every word she utters She will come running to me of her own accord in the evening and tell me everything Perhaps I spoil her but really that seems the best plan With her elder sister I was stricter

Yes I was *brought up quite differently* remarked the handsome elder daughter Countess Véra with a smile

But the smile did not enhance Véra s beauty as smiles generally do on the contrary it gave her an unnatural and therefore unpleasant expression Véra was good looking not at all

Cous nhood is a dangero s ne ghborh od

"The pleasant tl gs were sa d to me rem ked Vera I sa d n n to nyone.

M dame de Genl l M dame de Genlı shouted l ghing es thro gh the door

Th handsom Véra wh p od ced such an ırrıtatı g and u ple sant ff t on everyo e smiled and e de tly unmo ed by wh t ha l been said t her we t to the looking glass d arra ged her haı nd scarf. Look g t l er ha dsom face sl e seemed to become ıull colder nd calmer

In the draw g room the co ersatı n was

the co try d w g t any est? Th trıcals b u g, and b n kn ws what bes d B t d t l ts talk b t me tell m h w y u ma ged eryth g I often nder t yo A t—h w t y e y can rush ff al ın carriag t M sc w to P tersburg t those m nisters d gre t p ple nd k h w to deal w th them all! It qu te aston d g H w d d y u g t things settled? I uldn t poss bly d t.

Ah my l e an wered Ann M kháyl vn God grant y u e kn w wh t t be left d w w th t means nd th a so y l tod traction O el rn m y th gs then l dded w th ertain pride. Th t

t the f urtım s— ll I g t what I want. I d t m d wh t they th k f me.

Well nd t wh m d d y u pply bout Borıs? ask d the o n ess Y u se y urs lr d n ffi n the Guards h l my N ch las g cade There s n t terest him lf f him To wh m did y u ppl e

"T P Vas'l H w s so k nd. H t greed to eryth and p t th m tt bef th Empero sa d Prı ess Ann M kháyl n th as cally qu t f rg ttı g all th humil t sh h d d ed to gaı her d.

H Prı V fl aged m ch? asked the *tess I h n t se h m ce w acted* w th t th Rumyántso the tr cal I pecth has f rgo m H p d m tt nt s n thos days, sa d th countess w th m le.

He ı just the sa ne as e er repl ed An a M kháyl n o erflow ng with amı b l ty H po tıon l as n t tu ned his he d t ll He sa d to n e I m sorry I can do so l ttle fo y u dear Pr n ess I am t y ur con n a d Yes, h s f ne f ll w nd very kind rela u n But N taly you k ow my lo e f r y so I uld d y tl f r h l pp ness And my ff rs re t uch b d w y tl t my po u n n w terr ble one c nt nued Ann M kháyl n sadly dropp ng her vo e My wretcl ed l w u t takes all I l e and makes no progress. Wo ld y u bel eve ıt I ha e l terally n t p n y d d t kn w how t equ p Borıs. She took out her l ndkercl ef nd began to cry I need f e hu dred rubles, and ha e o ly o e twenty five ruble note. I h a t e My only l ope now s

godıatner—a u m ten nce all my tr ble ll h e be thr wn away I shall n t be bl t equ p him.

The co te eyes filled th tear nd sl e ponde ed n l nce

I ofte th nk th ugh perh p s t s sa d th pr n ess that here l es Co t Cy l Vladim ro h Bez khó so r ch ll al e that treme d u fortu e nd wh t ıs l s l f w rth? It s burden to h m a d B rys l fe ly j t bem g

Su ly h w ll le e someth ng to Bor s, d th cou tess.

to h m tr ght out Let p ple th nk what they w ll of me t really ll the same t me he s *my so s f t s t take* Th pr n ess rose It n t o o lock nd y u d e at f ur Th re w ll just be tıme

And l k pract cal Petersburg l dy ho kn ws h w t m k the m t of t me Ann M kháyl n se t someone to call he so and went to th *nteroom* w th h m

Good by my dear s d she t th c u t ss who saw her to th doo nd dd d n h per so that her son should n t l ear Wısl me good l ck

Ar y g g t Count Cyr l Vl dim o- ch, my d ar? sa d th count *om g* ut from th d ng hall t th anteroom and h dded H h bette k P err to dın th us. H h been to th l se you k w and d ced th th ch ldre Be u to n

Yes I am but please don t let us do like that In another four years then I will ask for your hand

Natasha considered

Thirteen fourteen fifteen sixteen she counted on her slender little fingers All right! Then it s settled?

A smile of joy and satisfaction lit up her eager face

Settled! replied Boris

Forever? said the little girl Till death itself?

She took his arm and with a happy face went with him into the adjoining sitting room

CHAPTER XIV

After receiving her visitors the countess was so tired that she gave orders to admit no more but the porter was told to be sure to invite to dinner all who came to congratulate The countess wished to have a tete a tete talk with the friend of her childhood Princess Anna Mikháylovna whom she had not seen properly since she returned from Petersburg Anna Mikháylovna with her tear worn but pleasant face drew her chair nearer to that of the countess

With you I will be quite frank said Anna Mikháylovna There are not many left of us old friends! That s why I so value your friendship

Anna Mikháylovna looked at Véra and paused The countess pressed her friend s hand

Véra she said to her eldest daughter who was evidently not a favorite how is it you have so little tact? Don t you see you are not wanted here? Go to the other girls or

The handsome Véra smiled contemptuously but did not seem at all hurt

If you had told me sooner Mamma I would have gone she replied as she rose to go to her own room

But as she passed the sitting room she no-

out some verses for her the first he had ever written Boris and Natásha were at the other window and ceased talking when Véra entered Sonya and Natásha looked at Véra with guilty happy faces

It was pleasant and touching to see these little girls in love but apparently the sight of them roused no pleasant feeling in Véra

How often have I asked you not to take my things? she said You have a room of your own and she took the inkstand from Nicholas

In a minute in a minute he said dipping his pen

You always manage to do things at the wrong time continued Véra You came rushing into the drawing room so that everyone felt ashamed of you

Though what she said was quite just perhaps for that very reason no one replied and the four simply looked at one another She lingered in the room with the inkstand in her hand

And at your age what secrets can there be between Natásha and Boris or between you two? It s all nonsense!

Now Véra what does it matter to you said Natásha in defense speaking very gently

She seemed that day to be more than ever kind and affectionate to everyone

Very silly said Véra I am ashamed of you Secrets indeed!

All have secrets of their own answered Natásha getting warmer We don t interfere with you and Berg

I should think not said Véra because there can never be anything wrong in my behavior But I ll just tell Mamma how you are behaving with Boris

Natálya Ilyníchna behaves very well to me remarked Boris I have nothing to complain of

Don t Boris! You are such a diplomat that it is really tiresome said Natásha in a mortified voice that trembled slightly (She used the word diplomat which was just then much in vogue among the children in the special sense they attached to it) Why does she bother me? And she added turning to Véra You ll never understand it because you ve never loved anyone You have no heart! You are a Madame de Genlis and nothing more (this nickname bestowed on Véra by Nicholas was considered very stinging) and your greatest pleasure is to be unpleasant to people! Go and flirt with Berg as much as you please she finished quickly

I shall at any rate not run after a young man before visitors

Well now you ve done what you wanted put in Nicholas— said unpleasant things to everyone and upset them Let s go to the nursery

All four like a flock of scared birds got up and left the room

A l e h t r of th t per od a thoress of educat onal work and no els.—Tr.

he had d e n Petersburg at Anna Schérer s re ep

'Try toserve well ndsh w} urs lfwo thy add d he ddress g B ris w th sev ty I am gl d. Are you he e on le e? he went his us al to e f ndiffe ence.

I m wa ting rders t jo n my new eg ment, your e ell cy r pl ed Bori betray ing eithe nn } n e t th pr c s brusque des e t nter nto con ersati n

taly Shunsh á sa d An M kl áylo na.

I ln w l k w an e d Pri Vasil n his m to ce I ne er could u der d h w N taly made p he mi d to marry

M kháyl w th p th t mile, as tl gl he took ew tl t Co nt R t de rved tl ce ur b t ask d l m t to b too hard the poo ld man Wh t d the doctors say? ask d th p fter p e h w rn f ce ga exp ess g d p sorr w

Tl y gi l ttle h p pl ed the pr e A d l h ld so l k to tha k *U l o* ce f ll h k dnes to m d Bo f H is h godso he dd d, her to ggest g th t thus f ct ht g e P ce V l m ch t s- f n.

P ce Vasil becam th ghtf l and fr wned A M kháyl s w th t h was f d f fi d g h l f *Co nt B* kh f t and hastened to eas ure h m If t *er n t f my* cere ff ct n nd d t t *U l* d h utte g th w d w th p ul ass d unco cern I k w his ch ra er n bl upright b t } u h has n w th h m c pt th } u g p ess They ar till } u g She be t h head d co t d n wh per Has h p f rmed his fi al duty Pr ce? H w p les ar th la t m me ts! It can mak th gs w rs d t bsol t ly n essary top p h m fh uss o ll Wew m n Pri ce d l m led t d ly l } k wh w to say tl ese th gs. I bsol t ly must se h m h ev pai ful t may b f m I mus d to uffi g

E d tly the p in e u d rstood her d al so d *tood as h* had d n t A n Pá l

na that t w uld be d ff cult to get r d of An a M kháyl n

Would not such meet g be too try g f r h m de r An a *M kháylo na?* sa d he. Let us w t unt l e en g The doctors are expect ng a cr s s

B t ne ca not delay Prince at such a moment! *Co der that tl e well re of l s soul is* at stake Ah, t is wful the dut es of a Cl r s- t n

A door of one of the er rooms pened id f h esses the cou t s n c e ite ed

gs.

Well h w s he

St ll the same but what can you expect th s noise said the p n ess look g t An a M kháylo na as t stranger

Ah my dear I ha dly knew you sa d An a M kl áylo n w th happy smile, mbl n l ghtly up to the co t s n ece I h ve come and am t your serv ce to l elp you urse *my* u *le* I imag e what } u ha e go e tl ugl nd h ympathet cally tu ed up f er e} s.

Th es ga e no eply a d d d n te e

po

armch u g P nce Vas li t tak a eat bes de h r

Bo f he d to her son w th a sm le I h ll g n to ee the co t my cle but } u my de r h d bett r g t P *rre meanwl le and* d n t f rg t to g e h m th Ro t s n v ta t *n They ask h m to din er* l upp e l e w tg ? he cont u d turn ng t tl e p ce.

O the contrary repl ed the p nce who h d pla nly b com d p essed I h ll be o ly too gl d f } u l e e m f th t} ung m n He e h and the co nt has n t e ask d f h m.

He hrugg d h h ulders. A footm n d t d Bo f d wn o fl ght of tairs d up n th t P err s rooms.

CHAPTER XVI

se t t M cow Tl e t ry t ld bout h m t Co t R t w s true P rr had taken p t t} g pol m n to b r He h d n w b n f some d y M cow nd was ta} g as us l at h f th h us Th ugh h p ct d th t th tory f h escap d w uld be

vite him my dear We will see how Tarás dis tinguishes himself today He says Count Orlóv never gave such a dinner as ours will be!

CHAPTER XV

MY DEAR Borís said Princess Anna Mikháylovna to her son as Countess Rostóva s carriage in which they were seated drove over the straw covered street and turned into the wide courtyard of Count Cyril Vladímirovich Bezukhov s house My dear Borís said the mother drawing her hand from beneath her old mantle and laying it timidly and tenderly on her son s arm be affectionate and attentive to him Count Cyril Vladímirovich is your godfather after all and your future depends on him Remember that my dear and be nice to him as you so well know how to be

If only I knew that anything besides humiliation would come of it answered her son coldly But I have promised and will do it for your sake

Although the hall porter saw someone s carriage standing at the entrance after scrutinizing the mother and son (who without asking to be announced had passed straight through the glass porch between the rows of statues in niches) and looking significantly at the lady s old cloak he asked whether they wanted the count or the princesses and hearing that they wished to see the count said his excellency was worse today and that his excellency was not receiving anyone

We may as well go back said the son in French

My dear! exclaimed his mother imploringly again laying her hand on his arm as if that touch might soothe or rouse him

Borís said no more but looked inquiringly at his mother without taking off his cloak

My friend said Anna Mikháylovna in gentle tones addressing the hall porter I know Count Cyril Vladímirovich is very ill that s why I have come I am a relation I shall not disturb him my friend I only need see Prince Vasíli Sergéevich he is staying here is he not? Please announce me

The hall porter sullenly pulled a bell that rang upstairs and turned away

Princess Drubetskáya to see Prince Vasíli Sergéevich he called to a footman dressed in knee breeches shoes and a swallow tail coat who ran downstairs and looked over from the halfway landing

The mother smoothed the folds of her dyed silk dress before a large Venetian mirror in the wall and in her trodden down shoes briskly ascended the carpeted stairs

My dear she said to her son once more stimulating him by a touch you promised me!

The son lowering his eyes followed her quietly

They entered the large hall from which one of the doors led to the apartments assigned to Prince Vasíli

Just as the mother and son having reached the middle of the hall were about to ask their way of an elderly footman who had sprung up as they entered the bronze handle of one of the doors turned and Prince Vasíli came out—wearing a velvet coat with a single star on his breast as was his custom when at home—taking leave of a good looking dark haired man This was the celebrated Petersburg doctor Lorrain

Then it is certain? said the prince

Prince *humanum est errare* but replied the doctor swallowing his r s and pronouncing the Latin words with a French accent

Very well very well

Seeing Anna Mikháylovna and her son Prince Vasíli dismissed the doctor with a bow and approached them silently and with a look of inquiry The son noticed that an expression of profound sorrow suddenly clouded his mother s face and he smiled slightly

Ah Prince! In what sad circumstances we meet again! And how is our dear invalid said she as though unaware of the cold of

[illegible]

ly Prince Vasíli without acknowledging the bow turned to Anna Mikháylovna answering her query by a movement of the head and lips indicating very little hope for the patient

Is it possible? exclaimed Anna Mikháylovna Oh how awful! It is terrible to think This is my son she added indicating Borís He wanted to thank you himself

Borís bowed again politely

Believe me Prince a mother s heart will never forget what you have done for us

I am glad I was able to do you a service my dear Anna Mikháylovna said Prince Vasíli arranging his lace frill and in tone and manner here in Moscow to Anna Mikháylovna whom he had placed under an obligation assuming an air of much greater importance than

To err is human

will come off badl you know if N po eon gets across the Channel. I think the expedition is quite feasible. If onl Villeneu e doesn t make mess of things!"

Boris knew nothing bout th Boulo ne expedition, he did not read the papers and t was the first time he had heard Villeneu e name.

"We here in Moscow are mor occup ed w th dinner parties and scandal than w th pol tics," said he in his quiet ironical tone. "I know nothing about it and ha e not thought bout it. Moscow is chiefl busy with gossip, he continued. Just now they are talking bout you and your father

Pierre smiled in his good natured wa as if afraid for h companion s sake that the latter might say something he would afterwards regret. But Boris poke distinct clearly and dry ly looking straight into P erre eyes.

"Moscow has nothing else to do but gossip, Boris went on. E erybody is wondering to whom the coun will leave his fortune, though he ma perhaps outli e us all, as I sincerely hope he will

"Yes, is all ery horrid, interrupted Pierre, ery horrid.

Pierre was still afraid that this officer m ht inad ertently say somethin disconcerting to himself.

"And t must seem to ou, said Boris flush ing slightly but not changin his ton attitude, it must seem to you that everyon is trying to get somethin out of the rich man."

"So it does, thou t Pierre.

"But I just wish to sa to o d misunderstandings, tha ou are quit mistaken if o reckon me or m mother among such people. W are ery poo but for m own part I am glad for the ery reason tha your father is rich, I don regard m self as relation of his, and either I nor m mother would ever ask or take an thing from him.

For long tim Pierre could not understand, but when he did, he jumped p from the sofa, seized Boris under th arm w th quick, clumsy and, blushing far mor than Boris, be gan to peak w th feeling of mingled shame and exation.

"W l this is strange Do ou suppose I who could think. I know ery well

But Boris gain interrup ed him.

"I am glad I ha poken ou full Perhaps you did not like it. Y u must excuse me, said he, putting P erre ease instead of bein put t ease by him, "but I hope I ha no offended you. I alwa make it rul to peak out.

Well, what answer am I to take? W ll ou come to dinner t the Rost s?"

And Boris, ha ing apparently r l eved himself of an o erous u ty and extricated himself from an awkward si uation and placed another in t, became qu te pleasa t a n.

"No but I sa said P erre, calmi g down, you are wonderful fellow What you ha e just said d good, ery good. Of course you do t k

I could not ha e done t myself, I shou d have had the courage but t plendid. I am ery glad to ha e ma e our a quai tance It s queer he dued after pause, that ou shou d ha e suspect d m He began to lau h. Well, what of t I hope w ll get better cquainted, and h pressed Boris hand. Do ou know I ha e not once been in to see tl count. He has not sent for me. I am sorry f r him as man, but what can o e do?"

"And so you think N poleon will manage to get n army across asked Boris with a smile.

of th Boulo ne expediti n.

A footman came in to summon Boris—th princess was go P erre, in order to make Boris better equa ta ce promised to come to dinner and warml press his hand looked affectiona el o er his pectacles nto Boris eyes. After he had gon P err conti ued pac

man.

As often happens in early youth, especiall to o who leads lon l life, he felt an unaccountab enderness for this oung man nd made up his mind that they would be friends.

Prin Vasili saw the prin ess off. She held handkerchief to her eyes and her fa e was tearful.

"It is dreadful, dreadful she was saying, "but cost me what it ma I shall do m d t I will come and spend the n ght. He must not be left lik this. E ery moment is precious. I can think why his nieces put t off. Perhaps God will help m to find wa to prepare him! Adieu, Prince M y God pport you

"*Adieu ma bo* answered Prince Vasili turning way from her

"Oh, he is in dreadful state, said th moth-

already known in Moscow and that the ladies about his father—who were never favorably disposed toward him—would have used it to turn the count against him he nevertheless on the day of his arrival went to his father s part of the house Entering the drawingroom where the princesses spent most of their time he greeted the ladies two of whom were sitting at embroidery frames while a third read aloud It was the eldest who was reading—the one who had met Anna Mikháylovna The two younger ones were embroidering both were rosy and pretty and they differed only in that one had a little mole on her lip which made her much prettier Pierre was received as if he were a corpse or a leper The eldest princess paused in her reading and silently stared at him with frightened eyes the second assumed precisely the same expression while the youngest the one with the mole who was of a cheerful and lively disposition bent over her frame to hide a smile probably evoked by the amusing scene she foresaw She drew her wool down through the canvas and scarcely able to refrain from laughing stooped as if trying to make out the pattern

How do you do cousin? said Pierre You don t recognize me?

I recognize you only too well too well

How is the count? Can I see him? asked Pierre as awkwardly as usual but unabashed

The count is suffering physically and mentally and apparently you have done your best to increase his mental sufferings

Can I see the count? Pierre again asked

Hm If you wish to kill him to kill him outright you can see him Olga go and see whether Uncle s beef tea is ready—it is almost time she added giving Pierre to understand that they were busy and busy making his father comfortable while evidently he Pierre was only busy causing him annoyance

Olga went out Pierre stood looking at the sisters then he bowed and said Then I will go to my rooms. You will let me know when I can see him

And he left the room followed by the low but ringing laughter of the sister with the mole

Next day Prince Vasíli had arrived and settled in the count s house He sent for Pierre and said to him My dear fellow if you are going to behave here as you did in Petersburg you will end very badly that is all I have to say to you The count is very very ill and you must not see him at all

Since then Pierre had not been disturbed and had spent the whole time in his rooms upstairs

When Borís appeared at his door Pierre was pacing up and down his room stopping occasionally at a corner to make menacing gestures at the wall as if running a sword through an invisible foe and glaring savagely over his spectacles and then again resuming his walk muttering indistinct words shrugging his shoulders and gesticulating

England is done for said he scowling and pointing his finger at someone unseen Mr Pitt as a traitor to the nation and to the rights of man is sentenced to But before Pierre —who at that moment imagined himself to be Napoleon in person and to have just effected the dangerous crossing of the Straits of Dover and captured London—could pronounce Pitt s sentence he saw a well built and handsome young officer entering his room Pierre paused. He had left Moscow when Borís was a boy of fourteen and had quite forgotten him but in his usual impulsive and hearty way he took Borís by the hand with a friendly smile

Do you remember me? asked Borís quietly with a pleasant smile I have come with my mother to see the count but it seems he is not well

Yes it seems he is ill People are always disturbing him answered Pierre trying to remember who this young man was

Borís felt that Pierre did not recognize him but did not consider it necessary to introduce himself and without experiencing the least em

made Pierre feel uncomfortable

Ah Count Rostóv! exclaimed Pierre joyfully Then you are his son Ilyá? Only fancy I didn t know you at first Do you remember how we went to the Sparrow Hills with Madame

Borís son of Princess Anna Mikháylovna Drubetskáya Rostov the father is Ilyá and his son is Nicholas I never knew any Madame Jacquot

Pierre shook his head and arms as if attacked by mosquitoes or bees

Oh dear what am I thinking about? I ve mixed everything up One has so many relatives in Moscow! So you are Borís? Of course Well now we know where we are And what do you think of the Boulogne expedition? The English

they were kindhearted, and because they—friends from childhood—had to think about such base thing as money and because their youth was er But those tears were pleasant to them both.

CHAPTER XVIII

h went t to ask Hasn t she come et?" They wer expecting Marya Dmitrievna Akhrosimova, kn n n society as *le terrible d* lady distu uished not for wealth or rank, but for commo sense and frank plainness of peech. Marya Dmitrievna was known to the Imperial family as w ll as to all Moscow and Petersbur nd both cities wondered t her laughed privat ly t her rudenesses, and told ood ories bout her while n n th less all thout exceptio respected and feared her.

I the count s room, which was full of tobacco smoke, they talked of th war that had been announced manifesto and bo t the recruitin None of them had yet seen th manifesto, but they all knew t had ppeared. The count sat o the sofa between two guests who were smoki g and talking H neither smoked nor talked, b t bending his head first to one sid and then to th other watched the smokers with evident pleasure and listened to th con ersati n of his two nei hbors, whom he egged ainst each other

O f them was sallow clean-sha en ci ilian w th thin and wrinkled face, already ro ing ld, though he was dressed lik most fashionab young man. H sa with his legs up the sofa as f quite t hom and, ha ing stuck an amber mo thp ece far into his mouth, as inhali the smoke spasmodicall and screwin p his eyes. This was an old bachelo Shinshin cousin f th countess man w th sharp to u as they said in Moscow soci ety H seemed to be co descendin to his companion. The latter fresh, osy officer of the Guards, irreproachably washed, brushed, and butto ed, held his p pe n th middl of his mouth and w th red lips gentl inhaled the smok lettin escape from his handsome mouth in rin s. This was Lieutenan Berg, an officer in the Semenov re iment with whom Boris was to tra el to jo n the army and bout whom N tasha had teased her elder sister Véra, peaki g of Berg as her intended. Th count sat between them nd listened ttenti ely His fa orite occupation when not play n boston, card game he was very f nd of was that of listener especially when he succeeded n set tin two loquacious talkers t o e another

"Well, then old chap *m t h ble* Alph nse Karl ch, said Shinsh n la h ironically and mixin th most ordinary Russian expressions w th the cho cest French phrases—which was pecul arity of his peech. *I us mpte ous f des nt s l'etat* you want to make something out of our company

No Peter N koláev ch, I o ly wa t t show that in th ca alry the d a tages are far less than n the nfantry Just consider my own position now Peter N koláevich

Berg always poke quietl polit l and w th great precision. His con ersation alwa related entirely to h mself he would rema calm and silent when the talk related to any topic

than two hundred rubles every four months, even w th th rank of lieutenant, b t as t I recei e two hundred nd th rty said he look at Shinshin and the count w th a joyful, pleasant smile as f t were ob ous to him that hi success must always be the ch ef desire of everyon else

Bes des that, Peter N kolaev ch, by ex chan ing to the Guards I shall be in more prominent position continued Berg and vacancies occur much more frequently n the Foot Guards. Then just think what can be do e with two hundred and thirty rubles I even man e to p t little aside d t send som thing to my father " he went on, emi ting smok rin

La b la y t A German knows h w to kin flint, as th pro erb says, remarked Shinshin, movi his p pe to the other d of his mouth and winkin at the count.

The count burst out laughin Th other guests seein that Shinshin was talking cam up to listen. Berg, bli ous f irony o ndif ference, contin ed to explain how by exchan

You expect to mak an income out of th ov ernment.

So that squares matters.

titude to Pierre? asked the son

The will will show that my dear our fate also depends on it

But why do you expect that he will leave us anything?

Ah my dear! He is so rich and we are so poor!

Well that is hardly a sufficient reason Mamma

Oh Heaven! How ill he is! exclaimed the mother

CHAPTER XVII

AFTER ANNA MIKHAYLOVNA had driven off with her son to visit Count Cyril Vladimirovich Bezukhov Countess Rostóva sat for a long time all alone applying her handkerchief to her eyes At last she rang

What is the matter with you my dear? she said crossly to the maid who kept her waiting some minutes Don t you wish to serve me? Then I ll find you another place

The countess was upset by her friend s sorrow and humiliating poverty and was therefore out of sorts a state of mind which with her always found expression in calling her maid my dear and speaking to her with exaggerated politeness

I am very sorry ma am answered the maid

Ask the count to come to me

The count came waddling in to see his wife with a rather guilty look as usual

Well little countess? What a *sauté* of game *au madère* we are to have my dear! I tasted it The thousand rubles I paid for Tarás were not ill spent He is worth it!

He sat down by his wife his elbows on his knees and his hands ruffling his gray hair

What are your commands little countess?

You see my dear What s that mess? she said pointing to his waistcoat It s the *sauté* most likely she added with a smile Well you see Count I want some money

Her face became sad

Oh little countess! and the count began bustling to get out his pocketbook

I want a great deal Count! I want five hundred rubles and taking out her cambric handkerchief she began wiping her husband s waistcoat

Yes immediately immediately! Hey who s there? he called out in a tone only used by persons who are certain that those they call will rush to obey the summons Send Dmítri to me!

Dmítri a man of good family who had been brought up in the count s house and now managed all his affairs stepped softly into the room.

This is what I want my dear fellow said the count to the deferential young man who had entered Bring me he reflected a moment yes bring me seven hundred rubles yes! But mind don t bring me such tattered and dirty notes as last time but nice clean ones for the countess

Yes Dmítri clean ones please said the countess sighing deeply

When would you like them your excellency? asked Dmítri Allow me to inform you But don t be uneasy he added noticing that the count was beginning to breathe heavily and quickly which was always a sign of approaching anger I was forgetting Do you wish it brought at once?

Yes yes just so! Bring it Give it to the countess

What a treasure that Dmítri is added the count with a smile when the young man had departed There is never any impossible with him That s a thing I hate! Everything is possible

Ah money Count money! How much sorrow it causes in the world said the countess But I am in great need of this sum

You my little countess are a notorious spendthrift said the count and having kissed his wife s hand he went back to his study

When Anna Mikháylovna returned from Count Bezukhov s the money all in clean notes was lying ready under a handkerchief on the countess little table and Anna Mikháylovna noticed that something was agitating her

Well my dear? asked the countess

Oh what a terrible state he is in! One would not know him he is so ill! I was only there a few moments and hardly said a word

Annette for heaven s sake don t refuse me the countess began with a blush that looked very strange on her thin dignified elderly face and she took the money from under the handkerchief

Anna Mikháylovna instantly guessed her intention and stooped to be ready to embrace the countess at the appropriate moment

This is for Boris from me for his outfit.

Anna Mikháylovna was already embracing her and weeping The countess wept too They wept because they were friends and because

A fine lad. My wo d A fine lad H s fa th r lies hi deathbed nd he amuses himself settin policeman trid a bear! F r shame, ir fo sham ! It would be better if you t t the ar

She turned way and ga e h r ha d to the t who could hardly keep from laughing

"Well, I suppose t time we re t table?" said Márya Dmitri a.

Th count went first w th Márya Dmitr e na, th countess f ll wed n the arm of colo- l th rs man f mportan e t them be

hole dining tutors, and go ernesses f llowed su el Th footm began m bo t, cha rs scraped the band struck up n th gallery and the guests settled down n their pl es. Then the tra n f th unt househ ld band wer r placed by the clatter of kn es and f ks, th o ces of isitors, and the soft tep f the footmen At e end f th table sat th countess w th Márya Dmitrievna on her right and Anna M kháyl na her l ft, th oth l dy isitors wer fa ther do n. At th ther e d sat the cou t, w th th hussar col el n his lef and Shinsh n nd the ther mal tors n hi ht. M d ay

ess, threw gnificant glan es from behi d th p pples her husb nd whose f e and bald head seemed b their redness t trast mo e than usual with his gray hai At th fad es end an e n chatter of es was h ard all th time, t the m n d th essou ded loud er d l der especiall that f th col nel f hussars who grow m re and m flushed t and drank so much tha the count held him p as p ern to th ther guests. Berg w th te der smiles was sa in t Véra tha l is not earthly b h enly f eling Boris was t ll ghis new fr nd P erre who th gu ts were and exchanging glan es w th N tasha who was sitti g pposit P erre poke li tle but exam- ed th new fac s, and te grea deal. Of the two soups he chose turtle w th sa ory patt es nd went on to the game w tho t om tt n a s ngle dish r one of the w nes. These latter the butler thrust mysteriously f rward, wrapped n napk n from behi d the next man s should rs and wh pered Dry M deira Hu garian or Rh ne w ne as the case might be. Of the f ur cry tal gl sses engra ed w th the count s monogram th t stood before his pl te P erre held out one t random and drank w th nj yment gazi g w th ever increas- amiabil ty t the other guests. Natásha who sat opposite was looking at Boris as g ls of thirteen look at the boy they re n lo e w th and ha e ju t k ssed f the first t e Some- times that same look fell n P erre, a d th t fu y l ely l ttl girl s look m de him n lined to la gh w th ut kn w hy

N ch las sat t some dist nce from Só y be side Jul e Karág n to wh m he was a talk in w th the same n lu tary sm le. Sonya wo a compan sm l but was e de tly tor mented by j alousy n w sh turned pale n w blushed and trained ery nerve to o er hear wh t N ch las d Jul e were sa ing to n n ther The go erness kept look grou d u easily as f preparing to resent a y l ght that m ght be put upon th ch ld en. Th Ger man t tor was trying to rem mber ll th dish- es, w es, and kinds of dessert, n rder to send full description f the d nn to hi peo pl n Germany nd he f lt greatly offended when the butler w th bottl wrapped in pk n passed h m by H fr wned try g to pp r f h d d not want any f that w e, b t was mort fied because no o e would u derstand th t t was not to quench l thirst o fr m greedi ess that he wanted t but simply from a conscientiou desire f r kn wledge.

CHAPTER XIX

AT THE MEN S nd f the table th e talk grew more nd mo e n mated. Th co lo el t ld them that th declarati n of war had already ppeared in Pe ersburg d that a copy l h he h d h mself seen h d that day been f warded by cour er to th mma der chi f.

"And why th d u e are we go g to fight Bonaparte?" emarked Shinshi "He has t pped Austria ca kl and I fear t will be our urn next."

Th col el was tout, tall pl th ric Ger ma dently de ted to th serv ce d pa tri tically Russ an. H esented Shinshín s re- mark.

ing into the Guards he had already gained a step on his old comrades of the Cadet Corps how in wartime the company commander might get killed and he as senior in the company might easily succeed to the post how popular he was with everyone in the regiment and how satisfied his father was with him Berg evidently enjoyed narrating all this and did not seem to suspect that others too might have their own interests But all he said was so prettily sedate and the naiveté of his youthful egotism was so obvious that he disarmed his hearers

Well my boy you ll get along wherever you go—foot or horse—that I ll warrant said Shinshin patting him on the shoulder and taking his feet off the sofa

Berg smiled joyously The count followed by his guests went into the drawing room

It was just the moment before a big dinner when the assembled guests expecting the summons to zakuska avoid engaging in any long conversation but think it necessary to move about and talk in order to show that they are not at all impatient for their food The host and hostess look toward the door and now and then glance at one another and the visitors try to guess from these glances who or what they are waiting for—some important relation who has not yet arrived or a dish that is not yet ready

Pierre had come just at dinnertime and was sitting awkwardly in the middle of the drawing room on the first chair he had come across blocking the way for everyone The countess tried to make him talk but he went on naively looking around through his spectacles as if in search of somebody and answered all her questions in monosyllables. He was in the way and was the only one who did not notice the fact Most of the guests knowing of the affair with the bear looked with curiosity at this big stout quiet man wondering how such a clumsy modest fellow could have played such a prank on a policeman

You have only lately arrived? the countess asked him

Oui madame replied he looking around him

You have not yet seen my husband?

Non madame He smiled quite inappropriately

You have been in Paris recently I believe? I suppose it s very interesting

Very interesting

Hors d oeuvres.

The countess exchanged glances with Anna Mikháylovna The latter understood that she was being asked to entertain this young man and sitting down beside him she began to speak about his father but he answered her as he had the countess only in monosyllables The other guests were all conversing with one another

The Razumóvskis It was charming You are very kind Countess Apráksina was heard on all sides The countess rose and went into the ballroom

Márya Dmítrievna? came her voice from there

Herself came the answer in a rough voice, and Márya Dmítrievna entered the room

All the unmarried ladies and even the married ones except the very oldest rose Márya Dmítrievna paused at the door Tall and stout holding high her fifty year-old head with its gray curls she stood surveying the guests and leisurely arranged her wide sleeves as if rolling them up Márya Dmítrievna always spoke in Russian

Health and happiness to her whose name day we ar

said in

drowned

went on

her hand you re feeling dull in Moscow I daresay? Now here to hunt with your dogs? But what is to be done old man? Just see how these nestlings are growing up and she pointed to the girls You must look for husbands for them whether you like it or not

Well said she how s my Cossack (Márya Dmítrievna always called Natásha a Cossack) and she stroked the child s arm as she came up fearless and gay to kiss her hand I know she s a scamp of a girl but I like her

She took a pair of pear shaped ruby earrings from her huge reticule and having given them to the rosy Natásha who beamed with the pleasure of her saint s day fete turned away at once and addressed herself to Pierre

Eh eh friend! Come here a bit said she

tacles

Come nearer come nearer friend! I used to be the only one to tell your father the truth when he was in favor and in your case it s my evident duty She paused All were silent expectant of what was to follow for this was clearly only a prelude.

Y u had b tt r ke care! a d th cou tess
Mamma! What eets re we go ng to
h N tasha ga cr d boldly w th saucy
ga ty co fident that he p k w uld be taken
good part.
So y nd fat l ttle P ty d ubl d up with
l ghter
Y see! I *hav* asked wh pered Natásha
t her l tl brother nd t P err gla ci g t
him a
I e p dd ng b t you w t get any said
Márya Dmitr ev a.
Natásha w th e was othi g t b afra d
fa d so he b d en Márya Dmitrie n
M ry Dm tr evn ! What k d of e pud
di g I d t l ke ce cream.
C rro

swer b t t the cr dibl bold ess d smart
ess f th l ttl gi l wl had dared to t eat
Márya Dm tr n this fash n
N tash lydes t d wh n h h d b e *told*
th t t er ld b p eapple e. Bef e th
es champ m w rv d u d. Th b nd
ga *tru k p tl co t d countess k* ssed
d tl guests l g th ts w t up to
co grat l t the co tess nd reached
cros tl t ble to cl k gl sses w th the cou t
th the cl ldr d w tl o ther Aga
the footme ru hed bo t ch irs scrap d d
th sam de wl h tl y l d e t ed
b t w th edd f ces the guests t rned to
t d w oom d t th cou t tudy

CHAPTER XX

T CARD L r w drawn ut sets m d
p f bost d tl t t rs settled
thems l es some th tw draw g ooms
som tl tt g oom some the l brary
Tl co t, bold g l ca ds fa w e k pt

h rp Jul by g ral q est pl y d first Aft
er sl had pl y d l ttl w th
tl harp h j d tl tl e y u l d es
begg g N tá ha d N ch las, wh ted
f th mus l t l t to g som tl g
N tásha who w ted th gh h w
gr p w er d ly ry p d f thus b t
t th sam t me f lt l y

What sl ll we s ng? sl e sa d.
"The Brook s ggested N l olas.
W ll tl en let s be qu ck. Boris come here
sa d Natásha. But whe e i Sony
Sl e looked rou d nd see g *that her fr nd*
w s n t n tl e room ran to look for l er
R n ng to So y s roo i nd i t fi d g
her there Natásl ran t tl e rsery *but So i*
ya was not there e the N tá ha co icluded that

that sa t s d y uddenly cl ged *her eyes be-*
came fi ed d then l er p ssed down her
broad neck d the co ers of l er m utl
drooped.
Sonya! What s t? Wl t is the matter?
O O Oo l A d N tásl s l rge
mouth w de ed, mak g h r look q te ugly
d l e bega t w ll ke b by w tl ut know
g wl y except that Sor y w cry S i
tri d t l ft her head t an wer b t could t t
d hid l er f e st ll deeper i tl e bed. N tá
sha w pt, s tt g o the bl e t j d fe tl er
bed d hugg g h fr e d. W tl n eff rt
Sony sat up d began w p g l er eyes nd
e pl n g
N chol s go ng aw y n a we k s t me l
p pers ha e com he t ld me h n
self b t t ll I l ld n t cry d l
howed p per l e h ld n l r l d—w tl tl e
rses N ch las had w tt n still I l o ld ot
cry b t y u can t o e ca u d rstand
wh t soul he has!
A d l began to cry ga n b cau e he l d
such bl so l
It s ll cry well f r y I am n t e
ous I l y u d Bori also she we to
ga n g a l ttle tre gth h s e there
ar d fficult es y ur y B t N chol s
my us n n w uld l t the
M tr p l t n l mself de n tl t can t
b do And bes des f h t ll M m n
(So y look d pon th co t ss as f e motl
d call d h r so) tl t I am p l g
N h l ca e d m h rtless d u gr t
f l wh l trul God s my ess d
h m d tl gn f the cross I l e l
much d ll of you o ly Vé A d wh t

It is for the reasson my goot sir said he speaking with a German accent for the reasson zat ze Emperor knows zat He declares in ze manifessto zat he cannot fiew wiz indifference ze danger vreatening Russia and zat ze safety and dignity of ze Empire as vell as ze sanctity of its *alliances* he spoke this last word with particular emphasis as if in it lay the gist of the matter

Then with the unerring official memory that characterized him he repeated from the open ing words of the manifesto

and the wish which constitutes the Emperor's sole and absolute aim—to establish peace in Europe on firm foundations—has now decided him to despatch part of the army abroad and to create a new condition for the attain ment of that purpose

Zat my dear sir is vy he concluded drinking a tumbler of wine with dignity and looking to the count for approval

Connaissez vous le proverbe Jerome Jerome do not roam but turn spindles at home! ? said Shinshin puckering his brows and smiling *Cela nous convient à merveille* Suvorov now—he knew what he was about yet they beat him *à plate couture* and where are we to find Suvórovs now? *Je vous demande un peu* said he continually changing from French to Russian

vill pe vell And ve must discuss it as little as po o ossible he dwelt particularly on the word *possible* as po o ossible he ended again turning to the count Zat is how ve old hussars look at it and zere s an end of it! And how do you a young man and a young hussar how do you judge of it? he added addressing Nicholas who when he heard that the war was being discussed had turned from his partner with eyes and ears intent on the colonel

I am qu te of your opinion replied N cholas flaming up turning his plate round and moving h s wineglasses about with as much de c sion and desperation as though he v ere at that moment facing some great danger I am convinced that we Russians must die or con quer he concluded conscious—as v ere others—after the v ords were uttered that his re marks v ere too enthusiastic and emphat c for the occasion and were therefore awkward

What you said just now was splendid! said his partner Julie

Sónya trembled all over and blushed to her ears and behind them and down to her neck and shoulders while Nicholas was speaking

Pierre listened to the colonel s speech and nodded approvingly

That s fine said he

The young man s a real hussar! shouted the colonel again thumping the table

What are you making such a noise about over there? Márya Dmítrievna s deep voice suddenly inquired from the other end of the table What are you thumping the table for? she demanded of the hussar and v hy are you exciting yourself? Do you think the French are here?

I am speaking ze truce replied the hussar with a smile

It s all about the war the count shouted down the table You know my son s goin Márya Dmítrievna? My son is going

I have four sons in the army but still I don t fret It is all in God s hands You may die in your bed or God may spare you in a battle re plied Márya Dmítrievna s deep voice which easily carried the whole length of the table

That s true!

Once more the conversations concentrated the ladies at the one end and the men s at the other

You won t ask Natásha s little brother v as saying I know you won t ask!

I will replied Natásha

Her face suddenly flushed v th reckless and joyous resolut on She half rose by a glance in v ting Pierre who sat opposite to listen to v hat

of the table

What is it? asked the countess startled but see ng by her daughter s face that it was on ly mischief she shook a finger at her sternly v ith a threatening and forbidding movement f her head

The con ersation v as hushed

Mamma! What sv eets are v e going to have? and Natásha s vo ce sounded still more f rm and resolute

The countess tried to frown but could n ot Márya Dmítriev na sl ook her fat fi er

Cossack! she said threate ingly

Most of the guests uncert n how to regard this sally looked at the elders.

Do you kn w the proverb?
That s i ts us do to the ground
Holl v
I just sk you th t

N tásha blushed and la ghed.
W ll eally Mamma Why should you? Wh t there to be urprised t?

In the midst of th th rd ss there was d tter of cha rs be g push d back n tl e t ing room where th cou t nd Márya Dml trie n had bee pl y g cards w th tl e maj r ty f tl m distu gu shed d lder is tors. They o str t h ng themsel es ft r u n so l d pl a g tl purses d pocket books, e te ed the ballroo First cam Márya Dm tri n and the co nt, both w th merry

usi ians d l uted up to tl r gallery d ressi g th first lun
Sen Do yo kn w tl D l C p ?
Th was th cou t f rit da ce which e had ua ed his y uth (Stri tly peak ng, D l Coop was e figur of the l)
Look t P pa! h ted N tásha to the hol compa y nd q t f rg tti g that sh as da g w h gr wn up partner h bent er curly h d to h k ees d made the h le oom ri g w th l er l gl ter
A d indeed erybody tl room looked th m l f pl asure t th j l old g n tleman wh tandi bes de his tall nd tout partner Máry Dmitrie curved his arms,

d mo p pared tl o look rs f what w t f ll w As soo as the p o ocati ly gay tra f D l C per (som wh t esem bl g h se f merry p asa t dan e) began to so d, ll tl doorw f th ballroom d ly filled b h d mest serfs—th me d d th w men on tne other —wh w tl beami g f ces had com to se their m t m k g rry
Just look the master A egular eagl h l dly emarked th urs h tood in l th doorw ys.
Th cou t d ed well d kn w B his p rt er ld d did n wan to da w ll H rmous figu tood erect her pow erf l arms ha g g d n (h had ha ded her et ul to th co ess) d ly her tern b t ha dsome face eally jo ed the dance.
What w e pressed by the whole of tl e count s pl mp f gure n Márya Dmitr na found x press o o ily n l er m re a d m re be m ng face nd q r nose B t f tl e cunt get t m lm e t the w g f t, charmed s

were watch g tl e count d Márya Dm tr e n N tásha kept pull g everyo e by lee e o d ess, urgi g th t look t Pap l th gh s t was they nev r took th r eyes off tl e ouple. In tl ters ls f tl e da ce tl e cou t b eath g deeply w ed d h uted t

tl turn g h part er rou d to l er seat he ex cu ed the fi al pas rais „his soft foot back wards, bo g l is persp g h d sm l g d m k g w de w ep w th l rm amid th der of pplause nd l gl ter led by N t sha Both p rt ers tood st ll bre th g hea ly and w p their f es w th their cambric ha dk rch fs.
"That h w we used to dance n ou time l er sa d the count.
"That was a D l C op exclaimed M ry D itrie n tucking up her sleeves a d puffin he ly

CHAPTER XXI

W LE the Rost ballroom the sixth g l s w be g danced to t n wl h th w ary mus cian blundered nd wh l t red footm n nd ooks were gett tl e s pper Cou t Bez kh had s th tr ke The doc t rs pro u ed re o ry mposs ble. After a m te co fess n commun n was dm tered to th d man p parat s mad f tl sacram t of u t d his h us th re was the bustl and thrill f usp us al t ch m ts. O ts de tl h use b y nd th gates, gr p of dertak rs, wl o h d wl n ever carr g dro e up wa ted n pectatio of mporta t rder f r n exp fu e al. Th M l tary Go ern of Moscow who

for? What have I done to her? I am so grateful to you that I would willingly sacrifice every *thing only I have nothing*

Sonya could not continue and again hid her face in her hands and in the feather bed Natásha began consoling her but her face showed that she understood all the gravity of her friend s trouble

Sónya she suddenly exclaimed as if she had guessed the true reason of her friend s sorrow I m sure Véra has said something to you *since dinner? Hasn t she?*

Yes these verses Nicholas wrote himself and I copied some others and she found them on my table and said she d show them to Mamma *and that I was ungrateful* and that Mamma would never allow him to marry me but that he ll marry Julie You see how he s been with her all day Natásha what have I done to deserve it?

ing her

Sónya don t believe her darling! Don t believe her! Do you remember how we and Nicholas all three of us talked in the sitting room after supper? Why we settled how everything was to be I don t quite remember how but

And we are only second cousins you know And Boris says it is quite poss ble You know I have told him all about it And he is so clever

anything to Mamma *Nicholas will* tell her himself and he doesn t care at all for Julie

Natásha kissed her on the h r

Sonya sat up The little k tten br ghtened its eyes shone and it seemed ready *to lift* its tail jump down on its soft paws and begin playing with the ball of worsted as a kitten should

Do you *think so?* Really? Truly? she said quickly smoothing her frock and hair

Really truly! answered Natásha pu hing in a crisp lock that had strayed from under her friend s plaits

Both laughed

Well let s go and sing The Brook

Come along!

Do you know that fat Pierre who sat opposite me is so funny! said Natásha stoppin su

to

om of her dress close to her bony little chest ran after Natásha down the passage into the *sitting room with flushed face and light* joyous steps At the visitors request the youn people sang the quartette The Brook with which everyone was del ghted Then Nicholas *sang a song he had just learned*

At n ght n e t l e to s fair glow
How sweet as f ctes u d r free
To f el tl at n tl s world tl e e s o ie
Wl o st ll t thi ki g but of tl ee

Th t u l tle l er f i g s to cl tl e l arp
Waft n s e t music o e tl e lea
It is for tl ee tl u st lls l er heart
Si l ig its nessage o t to thee

A d y r tuo tl n l lss u po lt
B t l till tl n l c n t l e

He had not finished the last verse before the young people began to get ready to dance in the large hall and the sound of the feet and the coughing of the musicians were heard from the gallery

Pierre was sitting in the drawing room where Shinshín had engaged him as a man recently returned from abroad in a political conversation in which several others joined but which bored Pierre When the music began Natásha came in and walking stra ght up to Pierre said lau hing and blushing

Mamma told me to ask you to join the dancers

I am afraid of mixing the figures Pierre replied but if you will be my teacher

And lowering his big arm he offered it to the slender little girl

with a s l

happy she was da icing w th a *grown up* man who had been *abroa l* She was sitting in a conspicuous place and talking to him l ke a grown up lady She had a fan in her hand that one of the ladies had gi en her to hold Assuming quite the pose f a society woman (heaven knows when and *where she l ad learned it*) she talked w th her partner fanning l erself and smiling over the fan

Dear dear! Just look at her! excla med the *countess as she cro sed the ballroom pointing* to Natásha

talk bo t busi ess, Catiche, muttered the prince, seat himself wearily n the chair she had just acated. "Y u ha e mad the pla e arm, I must say h remarked. "Well, sit down let s ha e talk.

I thought perhap somethi g had happened, she said w th her unchan g tonily severe expressi n and, sitting d wn oppos te the prince, she p pared to listen.

I wished to get nap m *ous* but I can t.

"Well, my dear? said Pri ce Vasili, taking her hand and bendi g t d wnwards as was his hab t.

It was plain that this well? referred to much that they both understood w thout nam

might have been tak as an exp ession of so row and devotı n f weari ess nd hope of esti befo e l Pri e Vasil understood t as an exp ess n f w ariness.

And I? h said do y u thi k t is eas er for me? I am as worn t as post horse, but still I must ha talk w th you Catiche, a ery seri us talk.

Prin e Vasili said no more nd his cheeks be an to tw tch erv usly n w n o e de, now the ther n in his f ce an unpleasant ex pressio wh ch was ever to be seen on t in dra in room. His eyes too seemed trang t moment they looked imp dently sly and at the ext gla ed round in alarm.

The pri cess, holding her l ttl do on her lap w th her thin bo hands, looked tten u ely to Prince Vas'l eyes dentl e sol ed t to be th first to break il f she had to ait till morn g

"Well, y see, my dear princess d cousin Cathen Sem no na, contı ued Prin e Vasili, eturni to his theme, ppare tly n t tho t an er truggl t uch moment as this must think f e erything On must think f the f ture, f ll f you I l e y u all, like childre f my wn as you kn w

The princess co ti ued t look t him w th out moving, and w th the sam dull expres n.

A d then f course my family has also to be co idered, Pri ce V sili went o testily pushin ay a little tabl w thout looking t Catherine.

her Y u know Catiche, that we—you three sisters, Mám ntov and my w fe—are the count only direct he rs. I know I know how hard t is f you to talk or thi k of uch matters. It is o easier for me but, my dear I am getting n f r sixty nd must be prepared for anything Do you know I ha e sent f r P erre? The count, po ting to his portrait, defin t ly demanded that he should be called.

Pri ce Vasil looked questioningly t the pri cess, but could n t make out wl ether sl was cons der what he had just sa d r wheth er she was simply looking t him.

"Th re o e thi g I constantly pray God

that he had pushed way But n short th f ct is you know yourself that last w n ter the cou t mad a w ll by wh ch he l ft ll his property t to us his direct heirs, but to P erre.

He has made w lls nough! qu etly re

el tchin the l ttle table nd becom more an mated and talk mo e rap dly what f a l tter has been writt n to the Emperor n wh ch the count asks f P erre le timatio ? Do you understand th t n cons derat n of th cou t serv es, his request would be gran ed?

The princess smiled as people do who thi k they know more bo t th ubject under dis cussion than those they are talki w th.

I can t ll you mo conti ued Prince V sili, ıin her hand, that lette was written though t was not sent, and th Emper kn w of t. Th only questı n is, has t been de troyed not? If n t, then as soon as *ll is over* and Pri ce Vas li hed to intimat what h mea t by th words *ll is ove* and th cou t s papers are pened, th w ll nd le ter will be deli ered to the Empero d

ironically as f anythi m ht happe o ly n t that.

But, my poor Catich t is as clear as day l ght He w ll th n be th legal h to ery thi g and you w n t g t anyth Y u must

had been assiduous in sending aides de camp to inquire after the count s health came him self that evening to bid a last farewell to the celebrated grandee of Catherine s court Count Bezukhov

The magnificent reception room was crowd ed Everyone stood up respectfully when the Military Governor having stayed about half an hour alone with the dying man passed out slightly acknowledging their bows and trying to escape as quickly as possible from the glances fixed on him by the doctors clergy and rela tives of the family Prince Vasili who had grown thinner and paler during the last few days escorted him to the door repeating some thing to him several times in low tones

When the Military Governor had gone Prince Vasili sat down all alone on a chair in the ballroom crossing one leg high over the other leaning his elbow on his knee and cover ing his face with his hand After sitting so for a while he rose and looking about him with frightened eyes went with unusually hurried steps down the long corridor leading to the back of the house to the room of the eldest princess

Those who were in the dimly lit reception room spoke in nervous whispers and when ever anyone went into or came from the dying man s room grew silent and gazed with eyes full of curiosity or expectancy at his door which creaked slightly when opened

The limits of human life are fixed and may not be overpassed said an old priest to a lady who had taken a seat beside him and was listening naively to his words

I wonder is it not too late to administer unction? asked the lady adding the priest s clerical title as if she had no opinion of her own on the subject

Ah madam it is a great sacrament replied the priest passing his hand over the thin griz zled strands of hair combed back across his bald head

Who was that? The Military Governor him self? was being asked at the other side of the room How young looking he is!

Yes and he is over sixty I hear the count no longer recognizes anyone They wished to administer the sacrament of unction

I knew someone who received that sacra ment seven times

The second princess had just come from the sickroom with her eyes red from weeping and sat down beside Dr Lorrain who was sitting in a graceful pose under a portrait of Cather ine leaning his elbow on a table

Beautiful said the doctor in answer to a remark about the weather The weather is beautiful Princess and besides in Moscow one feels as if one were in the country

Yes indeed replied the princess with a sigh So he may have something to drink?

Lorrain considered

Has he taken his medicine?

Yes

The doctor glanced at his watch

Take a glass of boiled water and put a pinch of cream of tartar and he indicated with his delicate fingers what he meant by a pinch

Dere has neffer been a gase a German doc tor was saying to an aide de camp dat one liffs after de sird sdroke

And what a well preserved man he was! re marked the aide de camp And who will in herit his wealth? he added in a whisper

It von t go begging replied the German with a smile

Everyone again looked toward the door which creaked as the second princess went in with the drink she had prepared according to Lorrain s instructions The German doctor went up to Lorrain

Do you think he can last till morning asked the German addressing Lorrain in French which he pronounced badly

Lorrain pursing up his lips waved a sever

self satisfaction at being able clearly to under stand and state the patient s condition

Meanwhile Prince Vasili had opened the door into the princess room

In this room it was almost dark only two tiny lamps were burning before the icons and there was a pleasant scent of flowers and burnt pastilles The room was crowded with small pieces of furniture whatnots cupboards and little tables The quilt of a high white feather bed was just visible behind a screen A small dog began to bark

Ah is it you cousin?

She rose and smoothed her hair which was as usual so extremely smooth that it seemed to be made of one piece with her head and cov ered with varnish

Has anything happened? she asked I am so terrified

No there is no change I only came to have

talk bout bus ness Cat che mutte ed the p e, se u g h m elf w ar ly o tl e cl air she l d just ca d. Y u l e made the place w rm, I m t s y he emark d. W ll s t d wn let ha e a talk.

I tho ght pe haps someth g had h p- pe ed, sh d th her u ch g ng ston ly evere exp ess n nd tu g d wn ppos te the p in e she p ep red to l ten

I ished to get n p *mon co n* but I cant.

W ll my d ar? d P ce Va l tak g her ha d and b d g t d nw ds was h s hab t.

It was pl th t th s w ll? referred to m ch th t they both u d rstood w thout n m

p m e t gr y eyes Th he hook ne d gl n ed p t the co tl gh Th s r ght h b e tak n exp es n f sor d den t f we nes d h pe f

A

f me? I m as w rn t a po t h rse b t still I must h a talk th y u Cat che ery en us talk

Pr V l d m e d h che ks be

o e m me t they look d mpude tly sly and t the ext gl d und n larm.

Th p ess h ld g h l ttle d g n her l p th her thi bo y h ds look d tte u ely t P Vasil s yes de tly e sol ed tt b the first t b e k l c f he h d t tull m g

W ll, y see my d p es d cou Cath Sem n co u d P c Va ili, eturn g to his theme pp ently n t th t an e struggle t ch m m nt as th must th k f rythi g O must th k f the f tur f all f y u I l e y u ll l k ch ldr f my w y u kn w

Th pri ess co t u d t look t him w th t mo g d w th the m d ll exp es- n.

A d th f course my fam ly h lso to b id d, Pr V l w t test ly l h g y l ttle tabl w th t look ng at Cathe ine.

l er Y u kn Cat cl e that we—you three s ters Mámonto nd my w fe—are the count s ly dire t l e rs I k t w I kn w how hard it f r y u to talk or tl k of such matters. It is no e s er f r me but my dear I am getting o l f r s ty and must be prep red for nything Do you know I l a esent for P erre? Tl e count, po nt g to his portrait defin tely demand d I d h called.

er h was s mply look ng at him.

There s one th ng I co stantly p ay God to grant *mo ou* l e repl ed, d it s tl t He wo ld be merciful to h n and w ul l all wh s ble soul pe efully to le e tl s

Yes yes of course nt rrupted l ce V il mp t e tly rubbing h s b ld head a d an g ly p ll g b ck toward l m tl e l ttle table d l ed w y But n sh rt

P err

H l as m de w lls e o gl l qu etly re m l d the p cess. But l e ca t lea e the est

d

tl co nt serv ce h req est would be gr nted?

Tl p n ess m l d s people d wl o th nk they kn w m about the s bject under d uss n tl an tl e they e talk ng w th.

I can tell y u m re contu ued P nce V sil se ng he ha d th t lett r was written though t w n t ent, d the Empe r kn w of t. The nly quest on s has t b en de st yed o not? If n t then as soon as *ll is ov* and Pr ce V l s gh d to nt m te wh t he me t by th w rds *all is e* and th cou t s p pers e ope ed the w ll d

ro cally as f anyth g m ght happ only n t th t.

B t my poo C t cl e t s as clear s day l ght! H w ll tl n be the legal l e r to every th ng d y wont get anyth ng Y u must

know my dear whether the will and letter were written and whether they have been de stroyed *or not* And if *they have somehow been* overlooked you ought to know where they are and must find them because

What next? the princess interrupted smil ing sardonically and not changing the expres sion of her eyes I am a woman and you think we are all stupid but I know this an illegiti mate son cannot inherit *un batar l!* she added as if supposing that this translation of the word would effectively prove to Prince Va sili the invalidity of his contention

Well really Catiche! Can t you under stand! You are so intelligent how s it you don t see that if the count has written a letter to the Emperor begging him to recognize Pierre as legitimate it follows that Pierre will not be Pierre but will become Count Bezukhov and will then inherit everything under the will? And if the will and letter are not destroyed then you will have nothing but the consola tion of having been dutiful *et tout ce qui s en suit!* That s certain

I know the will was made but I also know that it is invalid and you *mon cousin* seem to consider me a perfect fool said the princess with the expression women assume when they suppose they are saying something witty and stinging

My dear Princess Catherine Semenovna began Prince Vasili impatiently I came here not to wrangle with you but to talk about your interests as with a kinswoman a good kind true relat on And I tell you for the tenth time that if the letter to the Emperor and the will in Pierre s favor are among the count s *papers then my dear girl you and your sisters* are not heiresses! If you don t believe me then believe an expert. I have just been talking to Dmitri Onufrich (the family solicitor) and he says the same

At this a sudden change evidently took place *in the princess* ideas her thin lips grew white though her eyes did not change and her voice when she began to speak passed through such transitions as she herself evidently did not ex pect

That would be a fine th ng! said she I *never wanted anything* and I don t now

She pushed the little dog off her lap and smoothed her dress

And this is gratitude—th s is recognition for those who have s crificed e erything for his sake! she cried It s splendid! Fine! I don t want anything Prince

Yes but you are not the only one There are your sisters replied Prince Vasili

But the princess did not listen to him

Yes I knew it long ago but had forgotten I knew that I could expect nothing but mean

is? insisted Prince Vasili his cheeks twitchin more than ever

Yes I was a fool! I still believed in people loved them and sacrificed myself But only the base the vile succeed! I know who has been in triguing!

The princess wished to rise but the prince held her by the hand She had the air of one who has suddenly lost faith in the whole hu man race She gave her companion an angry glance

There is still time my dear You must re member Catiche that it was all done casually in a moment of anger of illness and was after wards forgotten Our duty my dear is to recti fy his mistake to ease his last moments by not letting him commit this injustice and not to let him die feeling that he is rendering un happy those who

Who sacrificed everything for him chime l

ber that in th s world one must expect no re ward that in this world there is neither honor nor just ce In this world one has to be cun *ning and cruel*

Now come come! Be reasonable I know your excellent heart

No I have a w cked heart

I know your heart repeated the prince I value your friendship and wish you to have as good an opinion of me Don t upset yourself and let us talk sensibly while there is still time be it a day or be it but an hour Tell me all you know about the will and above all where it is You must know We will take it at once and show it to the count He has no doubt for gotten it and will wish to destroy it You un derstand that my sole des re s conscient ously to carry out his w shes that is my only reason for being here I came simply to help him and you

Now I see it all! I know who has been in tr guing—I kn w I cried the pr ncess.

A l t !
And ll ll at f ll th f m

"That n t the po nt my de r

Its th t protégé f yours tl at weet Pri cess Drubetskáya th t Ann M kh ylo na hom I ld not take fo a h usema d

h le f rin ght. I kn w t as th n h wrote this le fam us paper b t I thought the thi g was inval d.

W e gott t tl t—why d d y u not tell m bo t t soo er?"

It s the la d portf l o that he k p un der h pillow said the pri ess, gn g his q est N w I k wl Yes f I ha e a great n t h tr d f th t le w ma l l most hrieked the pr ess n v q te cha ged A d hat does l e come w rm g l erself in l er fo ? B t I w ll g e l r a p ece of my m d. Th ume w ll come!

CHAPTER XXII

W ile these c n rsat o were go g o n the re ept o oom d th p ss room, a arr ta g P rr (who had b n sent f) and A M kháyl (wl f u d t nec essary t mp y h m) w d g to the rt f Co t B kh l use. A the wheel roll d softly o e the traw b tl the w d A M kháyl na h g turned w th ds f comf rt t l er comp n l d hat he a asl p h corner and w ke him

fatl wh d ted h m He n t ed th t tl y had t come t th fr t e tranc but tl b ck door Wh le h w g tt g d w f m tl carr ge teps two me who looked like *tradespeopl* f rr dly f m the e tra ce d h d tl e had w f tl wall P us g f mom t P rre ticed eral the men of the sam k d h d g tl sl d w of tl e ho se both des. B t tl Ann M k háyl the footman th co chm

cou t at all st ll less why l e had to go by the back ta rs yet judg g by An a M kl áylo na a r of ass ra ce a d haste P erre co cl ded that t w s all absolutely necessary H lfw y up the t rs they w re almost k ocked o er by some men who carry g p l came run ng d wn ta rs the r boots cl ttering Tl ese me pressed close to tl e wall to let P erre and A M kháyl vn pass nd did not e nce tl e least surp e t see g them there.

Is this the way to the pr ncesses p rt ments? asked Ann M kháylo na of o e f tl em

Yes repl ed footman n bold loud v ce as if nyth ng were now perm ss ble the door to the left ma am.

Pe hap the count did not a k for me sa d P erre when he reached the l di g I d bet ter go to my own room

An M kl áylovna paused and waited for him to come up

Ah, my frie dl she said, touch g h s rm as he h d do e her son s when spe k ng to

m y l a been d ne yo Th k that l e s your f tl er perhaps n the go y f death. She ghed. I ha e lo ed y u l ke so from the fi t. Trust y urself to m P erre I shall not f rget yo terests.

P erre d d n t understa d w rd but the co t th t ll this had to b grew trong d he m ekly foll wed A na M kháyl n who was al dy open g doo

This door led nto a b ck a teroom. An old man a serv t of the pri cesses s t in corn r kn tt g stocki g P erre h d nev r been n this p t f the h use nd d d ot e n kn f the ex tence f these rooms. Anna M kháy lo n ddress g a m d who hurry w p t w th decant on tr y as myd ar nd my w t ked bo t tl e prin esses health nd then led P erre l g ston passage Th first doo tl e left led to th pri cesses ap rtm ts. Th m d w tl the d canter h haste h d n t closed th door (ryth g n th h use was d n in haste t that t m) nd P erre and Anna M kháyl na n pass g t ctu ely gl ced nto the room, whe e Pr n V il and the eldest princess wer t u g cl se t g ther talki g See g th m pass Pri e V il dr w b ck w th ob us mp t n e wl ile th prin ess jumped up nd w th

know my dear whether the will and letter were written and whether they have been destroyed or not And if they have somehow been overlooked you ought to know where they are and must find them because

What next? the princess interrupted smiling sardonically and not changing the expression of her eyes I am a woman and you think we are all stupid but I know this an illegitimate son cannot inherit *un batard'* she added as if supposing that this translation of the word would effectively prove to Prince Vasili the invalidity of his contention

Emperor begging him to recognize Pierre as legitimate it follows that Pierre will not be Pierre but will become Count Bezukhov and *will then inherit everything under the will?* And if the will and letter are not destroyed then you will have nothing but the consolation of having been dutiful *et tout ce qui s en suit'* That s certain

I know the will was made but I also know that it is invalid and you *mon cousin* seem to consider me a perfect fool said the princess with the expression women assume when they suppose they are saying something witty and stinging

My dear Princess Catherine Semenovna *began Prince Vasili impatiently* I came here not to wrangle with you but to talk about your interests as with a kinswoman a good kind true relation And I tell you for the tenth time that if the letter to the Emperor and the will in Pierre s favor are among the count s papers then my dear girl you and your sisters *are not heiresses! If you don t believe me then* believe an expert. I have just been talking to Dmitri Onufr ch (the family solicitor) and he says the same

when she began to speak passed through such transitions as she herself evidently did not expect

That would be a fine thing! said she I never wanted anything and I don t now

She pushed the little dog off her lap and smoothed her dress

And this is gratitude—this is recognition for those who have sacrificed everything for his

A d all tl at f ll s il er f n

sake! she cried It s splendid! Fine! I don t want anything Prince

Yes but you are not the only one There are your sisters replied Prince Vasili

But the princess did not listen to him

Yes I knew it long ago but had forgotten I knew that I could expect nothing but mean

is? insisted Prince Vasili his cheeks twitchin more than ever

Yes I was a fool! I still believed in people loved them and sacrificed myself But only the *base the vile succeed! I know who has been intriguing'*

The princess wished to rise but the prince held her by the hand She had the air of one who has suddenly lost faith in the whole hu*man race She gave her companion an angry* glance

There is still time my dear You must remember Catiche that it was all done casually

letting him commit this injustice and not to let him die feeling that he is rendering unhappy those who

Who sacrificed everything for him chimed in the princess who would again have risen *had not the prince still held her fast* though he never could appreciate it No *mon cousin* she added with a sigh *I shall always remem*ber that in this world one must expect no reward that in this world there is neither honor nor justice In this world one has to be cun*ning and cruel*

Now come come! Be reasonable I know your excellent heart

No I have a wicked heart

I know your heart repeated the prince I

be it a day or be it but an hour Tell me all you know about the will and above all where it is You must know We will take it at once and show it to the count He has no doubt forgotten it and will wish to destroy it. You understand that my sole desire is conscientiously to carry out his wishes that is my only reason for being here I came simply to help him and you

Now I see it all! I know who has been intriguing—I know cried the princess.

ld be proper to call the dy ng man the
t sh med to call him f the

nemlrr tv d lyl te grasped that strok

in doo uptoe.
tiptoe d his wh l body jerked t each tep. The eldest pri ess f ll wed h m, nd the priests d deacon nd some serva ts also ent t th doo Throu h that doo was heard use f thi gs be g mo ed bout, nd t last Anna M kháyl na t ll w th the same exp ess pal b t resolut n the discharge of d ty ran t and t uch g P erre l ghtly on the arm sa d

"Th di ine mercy is nexhaustibl ! U c tio is bo t to be dm t ed. Come.

P err we t t the door t pp the soft carpet, d n ti ed that the tra ge lady the de-de-camp d some f th serva ts, ll f ll ed him n, as f there were n w no fur ther eed f permissi n to nte that room.

CHAPTER XXIII

th columns, w th high lk-curta ed mahog y bedstead d d the other an

chair wy whi smooth p ll ws, ev d t ly freshly changed P erre saw—co ered to th s by bri ht gree quilt—th familiar ma jestic figur f his f ther Co nt Bezukh th that gray man of ha bo his broad f ehead wh ch em ded f l d th deep charact tically n bl wrinkles of his ha dsom ruddy f e. H l y just u der th co h large thi k hands uts de the q l l to th ght h d, which was lying palm d wards w taper had been thrust bet ee f fi ger d thumb d an ld serv ant, bendi g er from beh d th chair held it in positio By th chair tood th priests,

tl e long ha r fall g o er their m g ficent gl tter ng estments, w th l ghted taper n the r ha d low l nd solemnly co duct g th sers
you
the
est ister Cat che, w th a vicious nd deter m ned look te d ly fixed on tl e cons as tho gh de l n g to ll that she could n t n wer f r herself should he glance round. Anna M kháy l w th meek sorrowful a d ll forgi ing exp ess on n h f ce tood by the door near the tra ge lady Pr nce Vasili n front of the doo near the n al d cha r a wax taper n h s m n h

f c w re calm look of p ety d res gnati n to the will of God. If y u do ot u derstand *these sentiments,* he seemed to be say ng, so much the w rse fo you!

Beh nd h m tood th a de-de-camp the doc tors, d the menservants the men d wom en had sep rated as n church. All were lently cross g themsel es d the read g of the church serv ce th subdued cha t ng of de p

to wh P erre was standi d ga e him taper He l t t nd, distracted by observ g th se rou d him began cross g h mself w th th ha d that held th tape

Soph e, the rosy l u hter l n yo gest *prin ess w th th mol watched h m. She* m led hid her f ce n her handkerch ef nd ema ed w th t hidd n f r while then look g p d seeing P err sh gain began to l h. Sh e d tly felt unabl to look t him w th ut l u h g but could n t esist look g t him so t be out f tempt tion he l pped qu tly behind of the columns. I th midst f th serv the es f the priests udd ly ceased, they whi pe ed to ne th and th old servant who was holdi g the count ha d got up d sa d something to the ladies. Ann M kháyl na t pped f rward and, toop ng o er th dy g man beck ed t Lorra n from beh d her back. Th F ench docto held n ta per h wa leaning gainst o e f th c lumns in espectful titud mply ng that he a fo eigner n sp te of all differen es of faith,

a gesture of desperation slammed the door with all her might

This action was so unlike her usual compo sure and the fear depicted on Prince Vasili s face so out of keeping with his dignity that Pierre stopped and glanced inquiringly over his spectacles at his guide Anna Mikháylovna evinced no surprise she only smiled faintly and sighed as if to say that this was no more than she had expected.

Be a man my friend I will look after your interests said she in reply to his look and went still faster along the passage

Pierre could not make out what it was all about and still less what watching over his interests meant but he decided that all these things had to be From the passage they went into a large dimly lit room adjoining the count s reception room It was one of those sumptuous but cold apartments known to Pierre only from the front approach but even in this room there now stood an empty bath and water had been spilled on the carpet They were met by a dea con with a censer and by a servant who passed out on tiptoe without heeding them They went into the reception room familiar to Pierre with two Italian windows opening in to the conservatory with its large bust and full length portrait of Catherine the Great The same people were still sitting here in almost the same positions as before whispering to one another All became silent and turned to look at the pale tear worn Anna Mikháylovna as she

sciousness that the decisive moment had ar rived With the air of a practical Petersburg lady she now keeping Pierre close beside her entered the room even more boldly than that afternoon She felt that as she brought with her the person the dying man wished to see her own admission was assured Casting a rapid

yet seeming to grow suddenly smaller and re spectfully received the blessing first of one and then of another priest

God be thanked that you are in time said she to one of the priests all we relatives have been in such anxiety This young man is the count s son she added more softly What a terrible moment!

Having said this she went up to the doctor

Dear doctor said she this young man is the count s son Is there any hope?

shoulders and eyes almost closing the latter sighed and moved away from the doctor to Pierre To him in a particularly respectful and tenderly sad voice she said

Trust in His mercy! and pointing out a small sofa for him to sit and wait for her she went silently toward the door that everyone was watching and it creaked very slightly as she disappeared behind it

Pierre having made up his mind to obey his monitress implicitly moved toward the sofa she had indicated As soon as Anna Mikháy lovna had disappeared he noticed that the eyes of all in the room turned to him with some thing more than curiosity and sympathy He noticed that they whispered to one another

the priests rose and offered him her seat an aide de camp picked up and returned a glove Pierre had dropped the doctors became re spectfully silent as he passed by and moved to make way for him At first Pierre wished to take another seat so as not to trouble the lady and also to pick up the glove himself and to pass round the doctors who were not even in his way but all at once he felt that this would not do and that tonight he was a person obliged to perform some sort of awful rite which everyone expected of him and that he was therefore bound to accept their services He took the glove in silence from the aide-de-camp

be and that in order not to lose his head and do foolish things he must not act on his own ideas tonight but must yield himself up entire ly to the will of those who were guiding him

stars o

thinner since the morning his eyes seemed larger than usual when he glanced round and noticed Pierre He went up to him took his hand (a thing he never used to do) and drew it downwards as if wishing to ascertain wheth er it was firmly fixed on

d l es f the count s f ce began to tw tch.
Th rr sed the ha dsome mouth

re.
In
hc
t u ely at the s ex mai

hat he wanted sh po ted first to P erre, tl en to some drink, the named P ce Vasil n an inquiring wh per th n po ted to th quilt. Th eyes and f ce f th s k man ho ed im pat en e. He mad an effort to look at the serv t ho stood co stantly t the he d of the bed.

"Wants to turn on the other side," whispered the serv nt, and got p to turn the co t hea y body toward th wall.

P erre rose to help him.

to hissid w th h f ce to th wall He ghed.

H is don g, said Ann M khayl na, observ g that f th p ncesses was comi g to tak h turn t watchu Let us go.

P erre went out.

CHAPTER XXIV

T ere was w no on the recepti n room ex ep P Vasil nd th eldest prin ess, who were u g u der th portra t f Cather th Grea nd talki g eare ly A soo as they saw P err d hi compan o they

in room, said Pri V il to A n M khay l na. Go d tak som th g, my poo Anna M khá l na, you will t hold out.

T P err he said thi merely m g his arm symp tl eti sq eez bel w th shoulder P erre w t w h An Mikhaylo na to th small draw g room.

"Ther is thing so f eshing fter sl ep-

l
l

(
t cold s per w u

bered this small circular draw ng room w u s mirrors nd l ttle tables. Du i g balls gi en at the house P erre who d d not know ho v to dance had l ked s tu g n this room to watch tl l d es who as they passed thr ugh in tl e r ball dresses w th d amonds and pe rls on tl e r bare h ulders looked t themsel es n th brilli ntly l ghted mirrors wh ch repeated the r reflect ons several times. Now tl same room was dimly lighted by two ca dles. On one m ll table tea thi gs d supper d shes stood in d sorder and n the m ddle of th n ght motley thro g of people sat tl ere not m rrymaki g b t somberly whisper ng nd betray n by ev ry wo d d mo ement that they n ne of them forgot what was h pp n d wh t was bout t happe n the bedroom. P erre d d not eat nything tl ough he would ery n uch ha e l ked to. H looked inquir n ly at h mo tress and saw that sl was a a n o ng on tiptoe to the rec pt room where they h d left Prince Vasil d the eldest p cess. I erre co cl ded that this lso was essenti l nd fter a h rt ters l f llowed h r A na M khaylo n was ta ding bes de the p ess, and they wer both peaki g n excited wh pers

Permit me Pri ess t kn w what s necessary and what is n t necessary sa d th you g er of the two peakers, ev de tly n the same tat of exciteme t as when sl had l mm d th doo f her oom.

B t, my dear p cess, nswe ed An a M khayl na bl ndly but imp ess ly block g th way to the bedroom nd pre nti g th other from pass g, won t this be too much f poor Uncle at m ment when h needs pose? Wo ldly co ersation at moment wh n his soul is al eady prepared

Pri Vas l was seated n easy ch ir in hi f mil ar att tude, w th leg crossed l gl bo th otl er His cheeks, which we so fl by that they looked hea er bel wer tw tch ing l tly but h w re the ir f m n lit tl concerned in what th tw l dies were say ing

Come, my dea Ann M khaylo n let Ca tiche d as she pleases. You kn w how f nd the count is f her

understood the full importance of the rite now being performed and even approved of it He now approached the sick man with the noiseless step of one in full vigor of life with his delicate white fingers raised from the green quilt the hand that was free and turning sideways felt the pulse and reflected a moment The sick man was given something to drink there was a stir around him then the people resumed their places and the service continued During this interval Pierre noticed that Prince Vasili left the chair on which he had been leaning and—with an air which intimated that he knew what he was about and if others did not understand him it was so much the worse for them—did not go up to the dying man but passed by him joined the eldest princess and moved with her to the side of the room where stood the high bedstead with its silken hangings On leaving the bed both Prince Vasili and the princess passed out by a back door but returned to their places one after the other before the service was concluded Pierre paid no more attention to this occurrence than to the rest of what went on having made up his mind once for all that what he saw happening around him that evening was in some way essential

The chanting of the service ceased and the voice of the priest was heard respectfully congratulating the dying man on having received the sacrament The dying man lay as lifeless and immovable as before Around him everyone began to stir steps were audible and whispers among which Anna Mikháylovna s was the most distinct

Pierre heard her say

Certainly he must be moved onto the bed here it will be impossible

The sick man was so surrounded by doctors princesses and servants that Pierre could no longer see the reddish yellow face with its gray mane—which though he saw other faces as well he had not lost sight of for a single moment during the whole service He judged by the cautious movements of those who crowded round the invalid chair that they had lifted the dying man and were moving him

Catch hold of my arm or you ll drop him! he heard one of the servants say in a frightened whisper Catch hold from underneath Here! exclaimed different voices and the heavy

As the bearers among whom was Anna Mikháylovna passed the young man he caught a momentary glimpse between their heads and backs of the dying man s high stout uncovered chest and powerful shoulders raised by those who were holding him under the armpits and of his gray curly leonine head This head with its remarkably broad brow and cheekbones its handsome sensual mouth and its cold majestic expression was not disfigured by the approach of death It was the same as Pierre remembered it three months before when the count had sent him to Petersburg But now this head was swaying helplessly with the uneven movements of the bearers and the cold listless gaze fixed itself upon nothing

After a few minutes bustle beside the high bedstead those who had carried the sick man dispersed Anna Mikháylovna touched Pierre s hand and said Come Pierre went with her to the bed on which the sick man had been laid in a stately pose in keeping with the ceremony just completed He lay with his head propped high on the pillows His hands were symmetrically placed on the green silk quilt the palms downward When Pierre came up the count was gazing straight at him but with a look the significance of which could not be understood by mortal man Either this look meant nothing but that as long as one has eyes they must look somewhere or it meant too much Pierre hesitated not knowing what to do and glanced inquiringly at his guide Anna Mikháylovna

neck so as not to touch the quilt followed her suggestion and pressed his lips to the large boned fleshy hand Neither the hand nor a single muscle of the count s face stirred Once more Pierre looked questioningly at Anna Mikháylovna to see what he was to do next Anna Mikháylovna with her eyes indicated a chair that stood beside the bed Pierre obedi

cal pose of an Egyptian statue evidently distressed that his stout and clumsy body took up so much room and doing his utmost to look as small as possible He looked at the count who still gazed at the spot where Pierre s face had been before he sat down Anna Mikháylovna indicated by her attitude her consciousness of the pathetic importance of these last moments of meeting between the father and son This lasted about two minutes which to Pierre seemed an hour Suddenly the broad muscles

yet been p n d. I k w) u well eno gh to be sure that this will n t turn) ur he d but t mpo es d t es n you, and) um t b aman.

P erre was le t.

P h ps I te o I m y tell) u my de r I

u p

terday t t fo get Boris. B t he had n time I h pe my de fr d) u will carry out your f the s w h?

P erre d rstood th g of all th and col ing h)ly looked sile ce t P n es An M khá)l a. After her talk w th P erre A M khá)l a eturn d t th Rostó s

co a w u

that his e d was n t o ly t uch g b t ed fy

h d b h ed b tt r d g th wful mo-me ts—th f ther wh em mbe ed ery th g d every b dy t the l t and had p ken ch p thet w ds to th son P rr wh m t h d b p t f l to e so t k n w he

so d h Of th b ha f th ldest pr ess d P e V il h poked pp gly b t wh p rs d s gr t cr t.

CHAPTER XXV

A B LD H LLS Pri N ch las Andrée ch Bolk k t t th arr al f) g P A drew d his wif was d ly pe ted but th p tat d d t up t th gul u u f l f th ld p e ho eh ld. Gen

tals, l e t ll co u u d t l the co try emark th t) e wh w ted t h m ld com the h dr d m les f m M cowt B ld H lls wh l h h m lf d d n ne d th g H us d to say that th are o ly two so es f h m ice— dleness and p rsu tio and nly tw rtues—acti ty and int l

l ge ce He himself undertook h s d ughter s ed cat o a d to develop tl ese two ca d n l rtues n l er ga e h r lessons in algeb a a d g om try till she was twenty a d rra ged he life s that her whole t me was occ p ed. He wa h m elf lways ccup ed wr t g h mem

was alw)s go ng on t l s est te A regular ty a p me cond t n f c l t t g ctivity r gul rity n h s h useh ld w s carr ed t the h ghest p nt f exact tude He lwa) came to table u der precisely the same co d t ons and

e act g so that w th t bei g hardl earted m he nsp red ch fea nd e pect as f w h *dhea ted men would ha e arou ed.* Al th ugh he w n ret ment d h d now no fluence i pol t cal ff s e ery l gh off c al pp nted to th p i ce n wh ch the p es estat l y co d d th s duty t v s t h m and w *ted n tl e lofty ntech mbe just s the ar*

old m n w th powde ed w g ll w tl e ed h ds d bu hy gray)eb s wl ch wl en h frow ed m t mes h d tl e gle m of l s *hre d y utl f lly gl tt g)es*

On the morn g f tl d y th t the you g co ple w e to rr e Pr ess M ry e te ed

rym g he p) d th t the d ly t rv ew might pass ff well

An ld pond d man rvant who w s t t g n th t cl mb r r eq etly d s d wh per Pl s w lk

Th gh the d o came th egul hum of

work

Th e rmous tudy was full f th gs dently n t t use The larg table co ered w th books d pl ns, the tall gl s fro t d bookcases w th keys the l cks the h gh desk

I don t even know what is in this paper said the younger of the two ladies addressing Prince Vasili and pointing to an inlaid portfolio she held in her hand All I know is that his real will is in his writing table and this is a paper he has forgotten

She tried to pass Anna Mikháylovna but the latter sprang so as to bar her path

I know my dear kind princess said Anna Mikháylovna seizing the portfolio so firmly that it was plain she would not let go easily Dear princess I beg and implore you have some pity on him! *Je vous en conjure*

The princess did not reply Their efforts in the struggle for the portfolio were the only sounds audible but it was evident that if the princess did speak her words would not be flattering to Anna Mikháylovna Though the latter held on tenaciously her voice lost none of its honeyed firmness and softness

Pierre my dear come here I think he will not be out of place in a family consultation is it not so Prince?

Why don t you speak cousin? suddenly shrieked the princess so loud that those in the drawing room heard her and were startled Why do you remain silent when heaven knows who permits herself to interfere mak ing a scene on the very threshold of a dying

But Al

or two to keep her hold on the portfolio and changed her grip

Prince Vasili rose Oh! said he with reproach and surprise this is absurd! Come let go I tell you

Let go I tell you! I will take the responsibility I myself will go and ask him I! does that satisfy you?

But Prince said Anna Mikháylovna after such a solemn sacrament allow him a moment s peace! Here Pierre tell them your opinion said she turning to the young man who having come quite close was gazing with astonishment at the angry face of the princess which had lost all dignity and at the twitching cheeks of Prince Vasili

Remember that you will answer for the consequences said Prince Vasili severely You don t know what you are doing

Vile woman! shouted the princess darting unexpectedly at Anna Mikháylovna and snatching the portfolio from her

Prince Vasili bent his head and spread out his hands

At this moment that terrible door which Pierre had watched so long and which had always opened so quietly burst noisily open and banged against the wall and the second of the three sisters rushed out wringing her hands.

What are you doing! she cried vehemently He is dying and you leave me alone with him

Her sister dropped the portfolio Anna Mikháylovna stooping quickly caught up the object of contention and ran into the bedroom The eldest princess and Prince Vasili recovering themselves followed her A few minutes later the eldest sister came out with a pale hard face again biting her underlip At sight of Pierre her expression showed an irrepressible hatred

Yes now you may be glad! said she this is what you have been waiting for And bursting into tears she hid her face in her handker

sofa

onto it covering his face with his hand Pierre noticed that he was pale and that his jaw quivered and shook as if in an ague

Ah my friend! said he taking Pierre by the elbow and there was in his voice a sincerity and weakness Pierre had never observed in it before How often we sin how much we deceive and all for what? I am near sixty dear friend I too All will end in death all! Death is awful and he burst into tears

Anna Mikháylovna came out last. She approached Pierre with slow quiet steps.

Pierre! she said

th

with her tears Then a

He is no more

P

C

ing

She led him into the dark drawing room and Pierre was glad no one could see his face Anna Mikháylovna left him and when she returned he was fast asleep with his head on his arm

In the morning Anna Mikháylovna said to

te ed
as t
the g
f h
fr d f m ch ldhood th t same Jul e K rá
g a wh h d be n t the Rostóv named-d y
party

Jul wrote n F ench

look I l ed so w ll d seem to see ue-
fo m l t ?

H g e d thu f P cess Mary s ghed
d gl ced to the m rr wh ch tood n h r
r ght. It r flected w ak ungra ful figure d
thi f ce Her eye lw y sad, w look d w th
paruculat h p less ess t her efl ct on n the

f g de p nd I m us (t m d as f at
t mes tl er rad t d f m them hafts f w rm
ght)—w so beaut f l th t ery fte p te
f he pl ess f l er f ce th y ga e h r n t
tr ctt m po f l th n that f be uty
B t th p ces ever w th b ut f l ex
p es f l er w eyes—the look tl y had
wl h was n t th k n f herself As w th
e ry h f e as m d f c du at l
exp es soo as l looked glass. She
t ead g

All M scow talks f th g b war O f my
b other l eady b ad th h w th
! G ds h ta tt g on th ir m h to the
f ter O dea Emper has lef P tersb g
and th gh tends t expose h p ecı us
pe son th cha ces f ar God gr t tl th
Corsica m nster h is des y g th peace f
Eur y may be hr by th g l h m t
l as pleased th Almighty His goodness to g
us as sovereign T say h g f my b thers this
l ep ed m f f th socıa ıo
ea es y hea l y g N ch las Ros ó
t h l th m co ld t be to em
ıa d has lef th er ty t y th
my *F ill confess to* y dea M y th t p te
of h ex et y th h dep f th my

d m f ds w d y am g r d
d p t cula ly he ıs so f k and l as so m l
h t. H so p d poet that my l t ns
th hum tra ent as they h e be on
f th test comf ts t my poo h rt wh h
ha l eady ffer d so m ch So eday I ll t ll
y bo t p t g d ll th t w sa d he
That ıs t ll too f esh Ah dea f d y e
h ppy n t t k w th se po g t y s d so
Y ar f t t f the l tt ar gen
lly th tr ge l I k w ery w ll th t Co t
N h l oo g ev to be m e to m th
f end
p tı
gh
Moscow goss p s
h d his her ta ce F cy l Th th p
cesses h ece ed ery l ttl P ce V il n th
g and t *is M P r uh h s l h* ted
ll tl e p pe y d has be des b n ecogn zed
as l git mate so that h w Co t Bez kh
d possesso of th fi est f t R It
m d th t Pri V ll pl yed ery desp
cabl p t this ff d th t he t rned to
P l te crest f ll n.

kn w as pla Mon eu P err has becom Co t
B kh d h w f f th l gest
f t es Rus I m m h m d to w h
th h g th t e d m f th m m
mas b d ed by m rr geabl da ght d f
th y gl d es th m l t d h m th gh
b en y and m h lw y se med t m
poo so f fell w As f th past t years peopl
ha m sed themsel es by fi d g h b ds f
m (most f uh m I d t ev kn w) th m t h
m kı g chr cl f M sc w w pe k f m as
th f t Co tess Be kh B t y w ll d
ta d th t I h des f th post. *À p p*
f m g do y k w th t wh l g th t
l t Anna M khayl told m n
d th seal f t secr y f pl f ma g
f y It n th m less th th
P ce Vas'l n An l wh m they w h to
f m by m rrying h m t som h *d d*
t g é d t y th t h l ch
has fallen I d t k w wh t y will th k f t
b t I con d t my d y t l t y k w f t. H
ıs d to be ery h dsom d t rribl scap
gr Th t ıs ll I ha bee bl to find t
bo t h m

B t en gh f gos p I m *t th end f my*
seco d heet f p per d M mm has sent f m
to g d d t h Ap áksins Read th my t l
book I m send g y t has rm ccess
her Th gh th th gs t d fficult f th
feebl h ma m d grasp t dmi bl

L

for writing while standing up on which lay an open exercise book and the lathe with tools laid ready to hand and shavings scattered around—all indicated continuous varied and orderly activity The motion of the small foot shod in a Tartar boot embroidered with silver and the firm pressure of the lean sinewy hand showed that the prince still possessed the tenacious endurance and vigor of hardy old age After a few more turns of the lathe he removed his foot from the pedal wiped his chisel dropped it into a leather pouch attached to the

yet unshaven) and regarding her tenderly and attentively said severely

Quite well? All right then sit down He took the exercise book containing lessons in geometry written by himself and drew up a chair with his foot

For tomorrow! said he quickly finding the page and making a scratch from one paragraph to another with his hard nail

The princess bent over the exercise book on the table

table onto which he threw it

At the sight of the letter red patches showed themselves on the princess face She took it

teeth

replied the princess

you write much nonsense I ll read the third

Read this if you like Father said the princess blushing still more and holding out the letter

The third I said the third! cried the prince abruptly pushing the letter away and leaning his elbows on the table he drew toward him the exercise book containing geometrical figures

Well madam he began stooping over the book close to his daughter and placing an arm on the back of the chair on which she sat so

that she felt herself surrounded on all sides by the acrid scent of old age and tobacco which she had known so long Now madam these triangles are equal please note that the angle ABC

The princess looked in a scared way at her father s eyes glittering close to her the red patches on her face came and went and it was plain that she understood nothing and was so

was the teacher s fault or the pupil s this same thing happened every day the princess eyes grew dim she could not see and could not hear anything but was only conscious of her stern father s withered face close to her of his breath and the smell of him and could think only of how to get away quickly to her own room to make out the problem in peace The old man was beside himself moved the chair on which he was sitting noisily backward and forward made efforts to control himself and not become vehement but almost always did become vehement scolded and sometimes flung the exercise book away

The princess gave a wrong answer

Well now isn t she a fool! shouted the prince pushing the book aside and turning sharply away but rising immediately he paced up and down lightly touched his daughter s hair and sat down again

He drew up his chair and continued to explain

This won t do Princess it won t do said he when Princess Mary having taken and closed the exercise book with the next day s lesson was about to leave Mathematics are most important madam! I don t want to have

t and

t will

She turned to go but he stopped her with a gesture and took an uncut book from the high desk

Here is some sort of Key to the Mysteries that your Héloïse has sent you Religious! I don t interfere with anyone s belief I have looked at it Take it Well now go Go

He patted her on the shoulder and himself closed the door after her

Princess Mary went back to her room with the sad scared expression that rarely left her and which made her plain sickly face yet plainer She sat down at her writing table on which stood miniature portraits and which was lit

Julie

Voltaire and

tered w th books and papers. The pri cess was as u tidy as her father was tidy She put down the geom try book d eaerly broke the seal f her l tter It was from her m t t mate fri nd f om hildhood that same Jul e Kará g wh had been t the Rostó ame-day party

Jul wrote n F nch.

Dea and p eci us Friend H w t rr bl d fr ghtful th g is separati Th gh I tell m self th t half my lif and half my happiness ar rapped p in yo and that sp f th distance separa hearts are u ted by dissol bl bonds, my heart bels ga st fate d n p te f tl pleas res and distracti ns arou d me I ca t ercom certain secret sorrow th t has been in my heart ev since w parted. Why ar w t together wer l t summ in vo b g st dy on th bl sof th co fid al sofa? Why can not I ow three m ths go draw fresh m ral trength f m ur look so gentl calm and pen tr tin look I l ed so w ll and seem to see be f m as I wri ?

H ing read thus far Pri cess Mary ghed and gl ed nto th mirro which tood n her ri ht. I eflected weak, ungrac ful figur and *thi f ce. Her eyes, alway sad, w looked w th* particular hopeless ess t her eflecti n n the

large, deep and lum us (t seemed as if t times there radi ted from them hafts of warm gh)—were so beautiful th t ery ften in p te f the pl in ess f her f ce th y ga e her n t tracti mo powerful than that of beauty B t th p ess ever saw th beautiful ex press f her own eyes—the look they had wh he was n t th k f herself As w th every e h f e ass med f ed unn tural exp ess as soo as sh looked in glass. Sh went re di g

All Moscow talks of noth g b ar O of my brothers is already broad h ther is w th the Gua ds wh starti g on thei march to the fron er Our dear Empero has lef P tersburg and is th ht ends expose his p er ous person th cha ces f ar God grant tha th Corsica monster h is destro in th peace f E ope *ma* be erthr by th angel wh m has pleased th Almigh in His goodness, to gi us as sovereign T sa noth g f m *brothers this* ar has epri ed m f on f th associations iea est m heart I ean you N ch las Ros bo *h his* enth siasm could bear ema inact and has lef th ni er jo the arm I ill nfess to y dear M ry th p te of h ex em y th h dep rt for th army

was great *grief to me* Thi y g ma of h I poke to y u last summer so bl m ded *d full* f that real y thfulness wh ch one sel dom finds waday am g ld men f twen y and pa ticula ly he is so fr k and has so m ch hea t. H is so p d poe *c th t my r* l tions w h him transient as they ere h e been on f th ee *est* mf ts t my poor heart, wh ch ha al eady ff ed so m h Someday I w ll t ll y bo t u parti g and ll that wa said then That is till too fresh. Ah dear friend you are h ppy ot t k w these po gna t j j d so f r t f th l ter ar gen

Moscow gossip is th death of ld Cou tser h and his herita ce. *Fancy! The* th ee p cesses ha ec ed ery l ttl Pr ce V sil n th in d is Monsi P erre wh h inher ed all th p perty and has besides been ecogn zed as le*g*it ma so that h is w Co t Bez kho nd possesso of th finest f rt in Russia. It rum red that Prince Vasili pl yed ery desp *cabl part in this ffair and that he ret* rned to P ersburg quite crestfall n.

I co fess I u derstand ry l l bo t ll these ma ters of wills and inherita ce b t I do kn w th t nce this y man h m w ll sed t kn w as plai Monsieu P erre has become Co t Bezukho d h ner f of th largest f es in Russia, I am m h mused to w ch th chan*g*e th to and man ers f th mam mas burd ed by m rri *g*eabl da ghters, d of th y un ladies th msel es, ard him though bet een y u and m h al ys seemed t m *poo sort f fell w As f th past t o years peopl* ha am sed themsel es by finding husbands f m (most f wh m I don t even know) th mat h making chron cles f Moscow w peak of m th f re Co ess Bez kh a. B t y w ll u d stand that I ha n desir f th post. *A pr pos* f marriages. do y know that whil go th t *iversal t* Anna M khayl *n told m* n der th seal f strict secrecy f plan of ma riag f y u. It is eith m no less than w th Prince Vasili so Anatol wh m they wish to e f rm by marryin him someon ch and *is s gu d is y* th t his relati cho has fallen. I don know wh t y will th k f b I consider t my d ty to l t y kn w f t. H is said be ery handsom and erribl scape gra e. That is all I ha been bl to find t *bo him.*

B t en *g*h f goss p I m t th end f my second hee of p per and Mamma has sent for m

book which calms and elevates the sou l Ad eu! Give my espects to mon ieur your father and my compliments to Mademoiselle Bourienne I em l race you as I love you JULIE

P.S Let me have ne s of your brother and h s charming little wife

The princess pondered awhile with a thoughtful smile and her luminous eyes lit up so that her face was entirely transformed. Then she suddenly rose and with her heavy tread went up to the table She took a sheet of paper and her hand moved rapidly over it This is the reply she wrote also in French

Dear and prec ous Friend Your letter of the 13th h s giv n me great del ght So you st ll love me my r mantic J ili ? Sep arati n of which you ay so much th t is bad does not seem to have had its usual effect on you Y u compla n of our separat on Wh at then should I say if I da ed c m pla n I who am lepr ved of all who are dea to m ? Ah f we had not relig on to co sole us life ou ld be very sad Why do you suppose that I should look everely on your aff ction fo that y ung man? On uch matters I am only seve e with my elf I un le tand such feelings n others and if ne er ha ng felt them I cannot appro e of

ter than the feel ngs which the beautiful eyes of a young man ca nsp re n a romant c and lo ng you g girl l ke yourself

Th news of Count Be ukl ov s death e ched us befo your letter and my f ther was muc affe ted by t He ys the count wa the last rep resent ti e but one of the great centu y and th t t is h s own turn now but th at h e w ll lo all he can to let h is turn come as late as possil le God p eserve us f o n th t terr ble misfo tune!

I cann t agree th you al out Pierre h m I knew as a ch ld He al ays seemed to me to ha e an excellent h art and th t t the qu l ty I value most in people As to h s i her tanc and th pa t pl yed by Pr nce V sili it s ery d f r both Ah my dea fr end our d ne S our s wo ds that it i ea e for a camel to g th o gh the eye of a needle th n fo a ch man to nt r the K g d m of God a e ter bly tr I p ty Pr nce Vasil but am ull mo e or y for P er e So y ung nd burder ed w th s ch r ches—t what temptat ns he will be xposed! If I we e asked I t I de e m t on ea th t would b to be poore than the poo est beggar T thou and thanks dear fri nd f r the volume you h e sent me nd wh h has such uccess in Mosco Y t since you tell me th at among some goo l things it conta n othe wh h o r eak human understand ng cann t g p t se s o me rath r seless to pend t me n ad g w fr peop e n

on my t cal books that merely a aken the do bu and excite their mag natio giv g the m a bent for exaggerat on qu te contrary to Chr st a sim plic ty Let us rather read the Epistles a d Gospels, Let us not seek to penetrate what myster es they

I

th at the less we let our feeble human minds ro m the better we shall please God who rejects all knowled e that does not come from H m and the less w e seek to fathom what He has been pleased to conceal from us the soo er w ll He vouchsafe its evelat n to us through H s d vi e Sp t

My father has not poken to me of a su tor b t has only told me that he has recei ed a letter and is expecting a v s t fro n Pr nce Vasil In rega d to this project of marr age for me I ll tell you dear sweet fr end that I look on marr age a di ne nstitut on to h l e m t conform Ho e er painful it may be to me sh uld the Al mighty e er l y the dut s of wife and mother pon me I sh all t y to perform them as faithf lly as I ca ithout disqu eti g m yself l y exa n ng my feel ngs tow a d h m hom He may gi e me f r hu band

eve fo he ll l ve us aga n to tak pa t in th unhappy ar into wh ich w e have been drawn God kn w s how or hy N t only h ere yo r e —at the h art of affai s and of the orld— s the talk all of r e n here a nd f l lwo k and the calm of n ture—wh ch to n folk consider char ct st of the cou nt y—r m o s of w r are h ea d

ng to jo n the my Y u sh uld ha e seen the stat of th mothers es a d ch ld en f the m ho e g g nd hould ha e hea d the

the g e te t me t t sk ll n k ll g o e a t l e

A l u d a and k d f nd m y o r di e Sa o r nd His most Holy Moth er keep you n the r h oly and all powe ful care! MA Y

Ah you are sending off a letter Princess? I have already di patched mine I have w ritten to my poor mother sa d the sm l ng Mademoi selle Bourienne rap dly in her pleasant mellow

t es and w th guttural s. She bro ht nto Pr ess Mary s trenu us, m urnful d g oom w ld q te d fferent tmosphere

mo rym ro e. B p p red.

Ah, dear fr end, repl ed Pr cess M ry I ha asked y u never to arn me f the humo my father is in. I d not all w my self t y d him and w uld n t ha e others do so.

The pr cess glanced t her watch and, see- th t sh was fi e mi tes lat n tarti her practi e n the cla ch rd, went into the *sittin room* w th look of alarm Betw en twel e and t o clock as th day was mapped t, th pri e ested and the princess pl yed th cl ch rd.

CHAPTER XXVI

T GRA HAIRED al t w sitti g drow ly lis- t ni g to the n g of th prin e wh was n his large t dy From th f r side f th h use thro gh the closed doors came the sou d f difficul passages—tw ty times epeated—of a so ta by Dussek.

Just th closed carri ge and ther w th hood dr p to the po ch Pr n Andrew got t f th carriag h lped his l ttle w f t al ght, d l her pass to th h use bef him. Old T kh w ar g w g, put his he d t f the doo f th n echamber eported a whisper that tl pri wa sleep g and hastily closed th doo T kho knew that n ther th so arri al n y other unusual ev t must be ll wed t disturb th ppo ted rder f the day Pr nce A d ew ppar tly knew this as well as T kh he look d t hi tch as f t asc rtain wh ther his f ther hab- its h d changed nce h was t h me l d ha g ssured h mself that they had t, he urned t his w fe.

H will g t p twe ty m tes. Le us go across Mary oom he said.

Th littl pri cess had grown to ter duri this time, b t he eyes a d her hort, d wny smil g lip l f ed whe she began t peak just as merrily d pre tily as er

Why this is pal f she sa d o her hus- ba d, lo ki g aro d w th the exp ess w th wh ch people compl ment the r host at a ball. Let *come* qu ck qu ck! And with gla ce round she miled at T khon at her husb nd, d at the footm n who accomp ed them.

Is that M ry practicing? Let s go qu etly a d tak her by urp ise

Pr nce A drew followed her w th a cou teous but sad e press on

Y u e grown lder T kho he sa d n pass g to the ld m n who k sed l is ha d

Bef re tl y e ched the room from wh ch tl sounds of th cl ch rd came tl e pr tty f haired F ench ma M demoisell Bour e, rusl ed ut apparently bes de l erself w th

They we t up to tl e doo f tl e s tt n room fr m wh ch came the sound of the *f* *ep* ated passage of th sonata. Prince And ew topped d made a grima e, as if expecti g someth u pleasant.

Th l ttl p cess entered the oom. The passa e broke ff n the m ddle cry w h ard, th Prin ess Mary hea y tre d a d the sou d f kiss g Wh n P nce A d w t n tl two p esses wh h d ly m t o bef e f sh t t n at hi wedd were each the rms w rmly p ess g the l ps t hate er pl c th y happe ed to to ch. M demoiselle Bourı nn tood nea them p ess- g her ha d to her heart w th a beat fic sn le and b usly equally ready t cry o t lau h. P ce A drew hrugged his should rs and frowned, as l ers of mus do wh n they hea false note. The two w men l t go of ne n ther d th n as f afraid f be too late, seized ch othe s h ds k ss g them nd pull g them way nd ga n began kissin ch ther on the face d then to Pr n e A dr w surprise both began t cry nd kissed ga M dem sell Bourienne also began to *cry* *Pri ce Andrew* ev d ntly felt ill at ease, but to th two w me t emed qu te n tural th t they should cry and pparently t never tered their heads that t could ha been therw se t this m u g

Ah! my dear! Ah! Mary! th y sud denly exclaimed, nd th n! ghed. I dreamed last ght —Y u w e n t expectin u — Ah! Mary you h e got thinne ! A d y u ha e grown to ter!

Th gu ural p f th let er chiefly ffec ed by P ss —TR.

I knew the princess at once put in Made moiselle Bourienne

And I had no idea! exclaimed Prin cess Mary Ah Andrew I did not see you

Prince Andrew and his sister hand in hand kissed one another and he told her she was still the same crybaby as ever Princess Mary had turned tov ard her brother and through her tears the loving warm gentle look of her large luminous eyes very beautiful at that moment rested on Prince Andrew s face

The little princess talked incessantly her short downy upper lip continually and rapid ly touching her rosy nether lip when necessary and drawing up again next moment when her face broke into a smile of glittering teeth and sparkling eyes She told of an accident they had had on the Spásski Hill which might have been serious for her in her condition and immedi ately after that informed them that she had left all her clothes in Petersburg and that heaven knew what she would have to dress in here and that Andrev had quite changed and that Kitty Odyntsova had married an old man and that there was a suitor for Mary a real one but that they would talk of that later Princess Mary was still looking silently at her brother and her beautiful eyes were full of love and sadness It was plain that she was follow ng a train of thought independent of her sister in law s words In the midst of a description of the last Petersburg fete she addressed her broth er

So you are really going to the war Andrew? she said s ghing

L se s ghed too

Yes and even tomorrow replied her broth er

He is leaving me here God know why when he m ght have had promotion

Princess Mary did not listen to the end but continuing her train of thought turned to her sister in law with a tender glance at her f gure

Is it certain? she said

The face of the little princess changed She sighed and sa d Yes qu te certain Ah! it is very dreadful

Her lip descended She brought her face close to her sister in law s and unexpectedly again began to cry

She needs rest said Prince Andrew with a frown Don t you Lise? Take her to your room and I ll go to Father How is he? Just the same?

Yes just the same Though I don t know what your opinion will be answered the prin cess joyfully

And are the hours the same? And the walks in the avenues? And the lathe? asked Prince Andrew with a scarcely perceptible smile which showed that in spite of all his love and respect for his father he was aware of his weaknesses

The hours are the same and the lathe and also the mathematics and my geometry lessons said Princess Mary gleefully as if her lessons in geometry were among the greatest delights of her life

When the twenty minutes had elapsed and the time had come for the old prince to get up Tikhon came to call the young prince to his father The old man made a departure from his usual routine in honor of his son s arrival he gave orders to admit him to his apartments while he dressed for dinner The old prince al ways dressed in old fashioned style wearin an antique coat and powdered hair and when Prince Andrew entered his father s dressing room (not with the contemptuous look and manner he wore in drawing rooms but with the animated face with which he talked to Pierre) the old man was sitting on a large

a por der

Tikhon

o vanquish

Buonaparte? said the old man shaking his powdered head as much as the tail which Tik hon was holding fast to plait would allow

You at least must tackle him properly or else if he goes on like this he ll soon have us too for his subjects! How are you? And he held out his cheek

The old man was in a good temper after h s nap before dinner (He used to say that a nap after dinner was silver—before dinner gold en) He cast happy s delong glances at h s son from under his thick bushy eyebrows Prince Andrew went up and kissed his father on the spot ind cated to h m He made no reply on his father s favorite topic—mak ng fun of the m litary men of the day and more particular ly of Bonaparte

Yes Father I have come to you and brought my v ife who is pregnant sa d Pr nce Andrew following every movement of h s father s face w th an eager and respectful look How is your health?

Only fools and rakes fall ll my boy You know me I am busy from morning till nigl t and abstem ous so of course I a n well

Thank God said h s son smiling

God has noth ng to do w th it! Well go on

he co tinued, returnin to his h bby tell me how the German ha e taught you to fi ht Bonaparte by this new science you call trategy

Prince A drew smiled.

G e me time to collect my w ts, Father" said he, w th smue that showed that his fa ther f b es did no prev nt his son from lo g and honoring him. "Why I ha e not yet had time to settle down!

"\ nsense, nonsense cried th old man shakin his pigtail to see whether t was firmly pla ted, nd graspin his son by the hand. "The house for your wif is read Princess Mary will tak her there and show her o er nd they'll talk nin teen to th dozen. That their woman wa I am glad to ha e her S t down and talk. About Mikhelso army I understand— To.st too simultaneous expedition.

B t wha the so thern army to do Prussia is utral I know that. What bo t Austria said he, risin from his chair nd paci up and down th room f llowed by Tikhon, who ran after him, handin him different articles of lothin Wha of Sweden H w will they cross P merania?

Prince Andrew seeing that his father in sisted, began—at first cluctantl b t gradual ly w th more d more animation, and from ha ha gi g unconsci usly from Russian to F ench as h wen o —to explain th plan of opera..o for th coming campaign. He ex plained how an arm ninety thousand strong, was to threaten Prussia so as to bri her out of her eutrality and draw her nto th war how part f that arm was to join some Swedish forces at Stralsund how two hundred and twenty thousand Austrians, w th hundred thousand Russians, were to pera in Ital and the Rh how fif thousand Russians and as man English were to land at Naples, and how total force of fi hundred thousand men was to tack the French from different sides. Th old prince did not evince th least interest duri g this explan..ti n, bu as if he were not listenin to continued to dress whil walking bout, and three times unexpectedly interrupted. Once h stopped t b shoutin— "The white e, the whi !

This mea that T khon was not handing him the waistcoat he wanted. Another time he in errupted, saying

"And will she soon be confined nd shak ing his head reproachfully said. "That bad! Go on, go on.

The third interruptio came when Prince Andrew was finishi g his description. The old man began to sin in th cracked o e of old ge *M lbrook s e va-t-en guerre D u sa t qua d e d a.*

His son only smiled.

I don t say t s plan I ppro e of," sa d th son I am only telli g you what t is. Napoleon has also formed h.s plan by now not w rse than this o. e.

"Well you e told me noth new nd tl d man peated, meditati el and rap dly

D eu sait qua d e d a. Go to the din ing room."

\ \

selle bourienne were already waiti him to gether w th his architect, who by a trange ca price of his employer was dmitted to table thou h the position of that ins n ficant indi vidual was such as could ertainly not ha e caused him to expect that hon The pri ce who generally kept ery strictly to social dis ti cti ns and rarel dmitted even mportant o rnment officials to his table, had unex pected selected M chael I an ch (who al ways went nto corner to blow his nose on his checked handkerchief) to illustrate the theory that all men are equals, and had more than on impressed on his daughter that Michael I ano ch was not whit worse than you or I At dinner the prin usually poke to the taciturn Michael Iváno ch more often than to anyone else.

In th din g room, wl ch like all the rooms in th house was exceedi gly lofty th mem bers of the household and the footmen—one behind each chair—stood waiti f the prince to ter The head butler napkin on rm, was sca n g th setting of th table, maki g signs to the footmen, and nxiously glanci from th clock to the doo by which the p ince was to enter Pri Andrew was looki t

lar gilt frame, new to him, containi g the genealogical tree of the Princes Bolkon ski, opposi e which hung another such fram with badly painted portrait (evidently by the hand of the rust bel gin to th estate) of a ruli g prince, n crown—an alleged descendant of Rurik and ancesto f th Bolkonkis. Prince Andrew lookin ain t that genealogical tree, shook his head, laughi g as man l ughs who looks t portrait so characteri ti

Marlborough is going th wars, God knows when he'll eturn.

of the original as to be amusing

How thoroughly like him that is! he said to Princess Mary who had come up to him

Princess Mary looked at her brother in surprise She did not understand what he was laughing at Everything her father did inspired her with reverence and was beyond question

Everyone has his Achilles heel continued Prince Andrew Fancy with *his* powerful mind indulging in such nonsense!

Princess Mary could not understand the boldness of her brother s criticism and was about to reply when the expected footsteps were heard coming from the study The prince walked in quickly and jauntily as was his wont as if intentionally contrasting the briskness of his manners with the strict formality of his house At that moment the great clock struck two and another with a shrill tone joined in from the drawing room The prince stood still his lively glittering eyes from under their thick bushy eyebrows sternly scanned all present and rested on the little princess She felt as courtiers do when the Tsar enters the sensation of fear and respect which the old man inspired in all around him He stroked her hair and then patted her awkwardly on the back of her neck

I m glad glad to see you he said looking attentively into her eyes and then quickly went to his place and sat down Sit down sit down! Sit down Michael Ivánovich!

He indicated a place beside him to his daughter in law A footman moved the chair for her

Ho ho! said the old man casting his eyes on her rounded figure *You ve been in a hurry* That s bad!

He laughed in his usual dry cold unpleasant way with his lips only and not with his eyes

You must walk walk as much as possible as much as possible he said

The little princess did not or did not wish to hear his words She was silent and seemed *confused* The prince asked her about her father and she began to smile and talk He asked about mutual acquaintances and she became still more animated and chattered away giving him greetings from various people and retailing the town gossip

C n An łks na poor thing has lost

at her more and more sternly and suddenly as if he had studied her sufficiently and had formed a definite idea of her he turned away and addressed Michael Ivánovich

Well Michael Ivánovich our Bonaparte will be having a bad time of it Prince Andrew (he always spoke thus of his son) has been telling me what forces are being collected against him! While you and I never thought much of him

Michael Ivánovich did not at all know when you and I had said such things about Bonaparte but understanding that he was wanted as a peg on which to hang the prince s favorite topic he looked inquiringly at the young prince wondering what would follow

He is a great tactician! said the prince to his son pointing to the architect

And the conversation again turned on the war on Bonaparte and the generals and statesmen of the day The old prince seemed convinced not only that all the men of the day were mere babies who did not know the A B C of war or of politics and that Bonaparte was an insignificant little Frenchy successful only because there were no longer any Potemkins or Suvorovs left to oppose him but he was also convinced that there were no political difficulties in Europe and no real war but only a sort of puppet show at which the men of the day were playing pretending to do something real Prince Andrew gaily bore with his father s ridicule of the new men and drew him on and listened to him with evident pleasure

The past always seems good said he but did not Suvorov himself fall into a trap Moreau set him and from which he did not know *how to escape?*

Who told you that? Who? cried the prince Suvorov! And he jerked away his plate which Tikhon briskly caught Suvorov! Consider Prince Andrew Two Frederick and Suvorov Moreau! Moreau would have been a prisoner if Suvorov had had a free hand but he had the *Hofs kriegs wurst schnapps Rath* on his hands It would have puzzled the devil himself! When you get there you ll find out what those *Hofs kriegs wurst Rath* s are! Suvorov couldn t manage them so what chance has Michael Kutuzov? No my dear boy he continued you and your generals won t get on against Buonaparte you ll have to call in the French so that birds of a feather may fight together The German Pahlen has been sent to New York in America to fetch the Frenchman Moreau he said alluding to the invitation made that year to Moreau to enter the Russian

Co rt ar sa sag scl [] Co l tle Au t n Cou c l of Wa —Tr.

service. "W nderfull Were the P temkins, Suv ro s, nd Orl s Germans No l d, either you fellows ha e all lost your w ts, r I ha e th ed mire. M y God help you, but e'll see what will happen. Bu parte has becom a great commander amo g them! Hm!

I don t t all say that all the pl ns are good, sa d Prince Andrew I am o ly surp ised t your pin of Bonaparte. Y u may lau h as m ch as yo like, but all th sam Bon parte is great general!

M chael I än chl cried the ld prince to the architect who busy w th his roast meat, hoped h had been f rgot en D dn t I tell you Buo part was gr t tactician? Here, he says th same thi g

"T be ure, your excellency plied the architect.

Th prince gain la ghed his frigid l h.

Buonapart was born w th sil er spoon his mouth. H has got plendid soldiers. Be des he began by ttackin Germans. And n ly idlers ha failed to beat the Germans. Since th wo ld began ervbody has beaten th Germans. They beat no o —except e an ther He made his eputati n fi hting them.

And the pri ce began explaining all th blunders which, ccording to him, Bo part had made in his campaigns and even in poli tics. His son mad no r jo der but t was ev dent that whatever arguments were presented he was as l ttle bl as his f ther to change his pin n. H list ed, framing from reply and in luntarily w dered how this old man li al in th country f r so many years, could kn w and discuss so minutely and cutely all th ecent European military and political events.

"I think I m an ld man and don t understand the p esent tat f affairs," con cluded his fath B t it bles me. I don t sleep t ight. Come now where has this great commander f yours hown his kill?" he con cluded.

"That w uld tak too l g to tell, answered the son.

W ll, then go ff to y ur Buo part ! Made mouell Bourien e, here another dmirer of that powder mo key empero f yours, he ex claimed in ex llent F ench.

"I kn w Pri I am o Bo partist!

D eu sa t qua d e d hummed the prince ut f tun and, w th lau h till more so, he qui ed th table.

The littl prin ess during the whol discus s o nd the rest of the dinner sat silent, glanc i g w th a fri htened look now t her f ther n-l w nd no t Princess Mary When they l ft the table she took her sister n law s arm and drew her into another room.

"What a clever man y ur f ther is, sa d she perhaps that is why I m fra d of h m.

Oh, he is so kind! nswered Prin ess Mary

CHAPTER XXVIII

PRINCE A DREW was to lea e next evening The old prin e, n t alte ng his rout ne, retired as usual fter dinner The l ttle princess as n her sister in-law s room. Pri ce Andrew n tra el g coat w th ut epaul ttes had been packing w th his valet in the rooms ass ned to him. After inspecti th carria e himself and seeing the trunks p t n, he o dered the horses to be harnessed. O ly those thi s he lwa s kept w th him remained n his room small box, a large canteen fitted w th il er plate, two Turkish pist ls and saber— present from h father who had bro ht t from the e e of Ochákov. All these travel g effects of Pri ce Andrew wer in ery good order new clean

f the future. Pri ce Andrew face looked ery tho htful and tender W th his ha ds behi d him h paced briskly from corn to

wish to be seen n that mood, f r hearing foot teps in th passa e he hurriedly unclasped his hands, topped t a t bl as if t n th co er of th small box, d assumed his usual tran quil and impe trable express on It was th hea y tread of Princess Mary that he heard.

I hear you ha e gi en orders to harness, sh cried, panting (sh had pparently been runni g) nd I did so wish to ha e another talk w th you alo God knows how long w may again be parted. Y u are not an ry w th m f comi g Y u ha cha ged so Andrusha, she dded, as if to explain such question.

She smiled as she uttered his pet nam An drusha. It was ob usly trange to her to think that this stern handsome man should be Andrusha—the slender mischiev us boy who had been her pl yfell w in childhood.

to e d when I am go e You w ll fi d useful

drew did n t tell his f ther that he w uld bt li e a l g time yet. He felt that he t say t.

ll do t all F ther he said

ell w good by! H g e h son his to k ss d mbra ed h m. Remembe

A drew f they k ll y u t w ll hurt ur ld f the he p used u expect d d the n q rul us e s dde ly d b t if I h that you ha e n t be like so f N ch las Bolkó ski I sh ll am d!

ed tha sa d that t me F ther n w th m le.

ld ma was le t.

lso a ted to k y u co t ued Pr ce ew f I m k lled d f I l e so d t him be taken w y f m y u—as I sa d rday l t him grow up th y u.

t l t tle w fe h e h m? sa d the old d l ghed.

ey tood le t f ca g e a othe The nan s harp eyes were fi ed tra ght on h s Som th g tw hed n th l w p rt of ld pri f e

e said good by Gol h sudd nly t d l ud gry c pe g l

What t? Wh t k d boil p es es they saw f m m t t th doo P drew d the f gu f the ld m n white dre g gown spect cled a d w gless

A u u

he were say g Now go thr h y ur per f rm ce.

Andrew lre dy! sa d the l ttle p n ess turn g p le d look g w th d smay t l er husb d

He embra d he Sl e scream d and fell un co cio s n h houlder

H cauti usly ele ed the houlder she lean d on looked t her f ce a d carefully pl ced her in a easy cha r

Ad Mary sa d h gently to his sist r t k g l e by the l nd a d k ss ng l er and th he l ft the roo n w th r pid st ps.

Th l ttle p ncess l y the armcha r Ma d m lle B nne chaf her te ples. Pri ss Mary ppo t ng her siste la still look d w th he b ut f l eyes full of tears t the doo thr gh wh ch P c Andr w h d g d mad the s gn of tl e cr s n l is d recti o F m tl e tudy l ke p stol l ots ca ne tl e f eq e t so d f the old man r ly

dress g gow look d ut.

Go e? Tl t s ll r ght! sa d he nd look g gr ly t tl e uncon us l ttle pri cess h hook l h d repro gly d lamm d the door

of the original as to be amusing

How thoroughly like him that is! he said to Princess Mary who had come up to him

Princess Mary looked at her brother in surprise She did not understand what he was laughing at Everything her father did inspired her with reverence and was beyond question

Everyone has his Achilles heel continued Prince Andrew Fancy with *his* powerful mind indulging in such nonsense!

Princess Mary could not understand the boldness of her brother s criticism and was about to reply when the expected footsteps were heard coming from the study The prince walked in quickly and jauntily as was his wont as if intentionally contrasting the briskness of his manners with the strict formality of his house

u a g oo r

glittering eyes from under their thick bushy eyebrows sternly scanned all present and rested on the little princess She felt as courtiers do when the Tsar enters the sensation of fear and *respect which the old man inspired in all* around him He stroked her hair and then patted her awkwardly on the back of her neck

I m glad glad to see you he said looking attentively into her eyes and then quickly went to his place and sat down Sit down sit down! Sit down Michael Ivánovich!

He indicated a place beside him to his daughter in law A footman moved the chair for her

Ho ho! said the old man casting his eyes on her rounded figure You ve been in a hurry That s bad!

He laughed in his usual dry cold unpleasant way with his lips only and not with his eyes

You must walk walk as much as possible as much as possible he said

The little princess did not or did not wish to hear his words She was silent and seemed *confused* The *prince* asked her about her father and she began to smile and talk He asked about mutual acquaintances and she became

Countess Apráksina poor thing has lost her *husband and she has cried* her eyes out she said growing more and more li ely

As she became animated the prince looked at her more and more sternly and suddenly as if he had studied her sufficiently and had formed a definite idea of her he turned away and addressed Michael Ivánovich

Well Michael Ivánovich our Bonaparte *will be having a bad time of it Prince Andrew* (he always spoke thus of his son) has been telling me what forces are being collected against him! While you and I never thought much of him

Michael Ivánovich did not at all know when you and I had said such things about Bonaparte but understanding that he was wanted as a peg on which to hang the prince s favorite topic he looked inquiringly at the young prince wondering what would follow

He is a great tactician! said the prince to his son pointing to the architect

Ar

war

men ot t u y I u u

vinced not only that all the men of the day were mere babies who did not know the A B C of war or of politics and that Bonaparte was an insignificant little Frenchy successful only because there were no longer any Potemkins or Suvorovs left to oppose him but he was also *convinced that there were no political* difficulties in Europe and no real war but only a sort of puppet show at which the men of the day were playing pretending to do something real Prince Andrew gaily bore with his father s ridicule of the new men and drew him on and listened to him with evident pleasure

The past always seems good sa d he but did not Suvorov himself fall into a trap Moreau set him and from which he did not know how to escape?

Who t

Suvórov

Tikhon bi

Prince Andrew Two *Frederick and Suvorov* Moreau! Moreau would have been a prisoner if Suvorov had had a free hand but he had the ***Hofs kriegs u urst schnapps Rath*** on his hands It would have puzzled the devil himself! When you get there you ll find out what those *Hofs k iegs wu st Raths* are! Suvorov couldn t manage them so what chance has Michael Kutuzov? No my dear boy he continued you and your generals won t get on against Buonaparte you ll have to call in the French so that birds of a feather may fight together The German Pahlen has been sent to New York in America to fetch the Frenchman *Moreau he said alluding to the invitation* made that year to Moreau to enter the Russian

Co t sai ge scl pj Co I tle Au tr a Cou cil of W —Tr.

h o th ed m e. May God help y u, but we'll see h t will h ppen. Buon parte has becom a great command r am g them! Hm!

I d t at all say th t all the pl ar good sa d Prin e And ew I am o ly surp ised t y p m of B p rte. You may l u h as m ch as y u l k but all the same Bo parte is great general!

M chael I á ch! er d th ld prince to the architect who busy w th hi roast meat, h ped he had been f rgott n D dn t I tell y Buo part was gre t tactici n? H e, he say the sam thi g

"T be ure y ur excellency repl ed the architect.

The prince a l ghed his fr gid l gh B part was born w th sil er poon

the o ld bega ery body has beat n the Ge ma They beat e—ex pt e another

de t that what er arguments were p esented he as as l ttl ble as his father to change his pin n. H list ed, efrai g from a eply d luntarily w der d h w this ld ma h al e in the co ntry f so many years could kn w d discuss so m ut ly and cu e- ly all th ecent European military d pol ti cal ev ts.

"Y think I m an old m n nd don t un derstand the p es t tate of ffairs? co cluded his f th B t t tro bles me. I d n t sl p t ght. Com now wher has this great commander f y urs h n his kill? he con cluded.

"That would tak too l g to t ll, nswered th so

I

"Y k Pr I am t Bo partist! D eu t qua d e d humm d the pri e t f e d. w th l u h till mo so, h q tted th table.

The l ttl p ess dur g the wh le discus- s n and the est of the d nner sat s lent, glan g w th a frightened look now at her fat er law and n w t Princess Mary When they left the table she took l er ster n law's arm and drew her nto nother room.

"What a clever m n your fat er s, sa d she pe haps that is why I m afraid f h m

Oh he is so kind! ns ered Pri ess Mary

CHAPTER XXVIII

PRI CE A E was to le e next even g The old prin e not lt ng hi ro t ne retired s usual fter din er The little pri ess as n her sister in l w s room. Prince Andrew in a

s ng the trunk put in h orde ed the h rses to be harnessed. O ly tl o e th ngs he al s kept w th h m rem ed n h roo sm ll bo large ca t en fitted w th l er pl t tw Turk h pistols and saber— pres t from h s f ther wh had brought it f om tl e ege of Ocháko All these tra el g ff ts of Pri e A drew s were n ery good rde n w cle and n cloth co ers carefully tied w th tapes.

When start g on a j urn y o cha their mode of life, men cap bl of r fl ct n ar generally eri us fram of m d. At ch m ments one re ws tl e pa t nd pla fo the future. Pri Andrew s f e looked ry th u htful nd tender W th h s h ds behi d him he p ced briskly f m or er to

w h t b n n th t mood, f l earing foot t p n th p ssag he hurr edly unclasped his hands, st pped t t bl as f ty g the co er f tl small box, nd assum d his usu l tran qu l d impenetrable exp ess n It as the hea y tread f Pr n ess Mary th t h heard

I hear y u ha e g en o ders to harness

— — — — y —

tio

She smiled as h utter d his pet nam An drush It a b o ly tra ge to h to th nk th t this tern handsome man should be Andrush —the l der misch ous boy who had b n her pl y fell w in childhood.

And where is Lise? he asked answering her question only by a smile

She was so tired that she has fallen asleep on the sofa in my room Oh Andrew! What a treasure of a wife you have said she sitting down on the sofa facing her brother She is quite a child such a dear merry child I have grown so fond of her

Prince Andrew was silent but the princess noticed the ironical and contemptuous look that showed itself on his face

One must be indulgent to little weaknesses who is free from them Andrew? Don t forget that she has grown up and been educated in society and so her position now is not a rosy one We should enter into everyone s situation *Tout comprendre c est tout pardonner* Think what it must be for her poor thing after what she has been used to to be parted from her husband and be left alone in the country in her condition! It s very hard

Prince Andrew smiled as he looked at his sister as we smile at those we think we thoroughly understand

You live in the country and don t think the life terrible he replied

I that s different Why speak of me? I don t want any other life and can t for I know no other But think Andrew for a young society woman to be buried in the country during the best years of her life all alone—for Papa is always busy and I well you know what poor resources I have for entertaining a woman used to the best society There is only Mademoiselle Bourienne

I don t like your Mademoiselle Bourienne at all said Prince Andrew

No? She is very nice and kind and above all she s much to be pitied She has no one no one To tell the truth I don t need her and she s even in my way You know I always was a savage and now am even more so I like being alone Father likes her very much She and Michael Ivánovich are the two people to whom he is always gentle and kind because he has been a benefactor to them both As Sterne says We don t love people so much for the good they have done us as for the good we have done them Father took her when she was homeless after losing her own father She is very good natured and my father likes her way of reading She reads to him in the evenings and reads splendidly

To be quite frank Mary I expect Father s character sometimes makes things trying for you doesn t it? Prince Andrew asked suddenly

Princess Mary was first surprised and then aghast at this question

For me? For me? Trying for me! said she

He always was rather harsh and now I should think he s getting very trying said Prince Andrew apparently speaking lightly of their father in order to puzzle or test his sister

You are good in every way Andrew but you have a kind of intellectual pride said the princess following the train of her own thoughts rather than the trend of the conversation— and that s a great sin How can one judge Father? But even if one might what feeling except veneration could such a man as my father evoke? And I am so contented and happy with him I only wish you were all as happy as I am

Her brother shook his head incredulously

The only thing that is hard for me I will tell you the truth Andrew is Father s way of treating religious subjects I don t understand how a man of his immense intellect can fail to see what is as clear as day and can go so far astray That is the only thing that makes me unhappy But even in this I can see lately a shade of improvement His satire has been less bitter of late and there was a monk he received and had a long talk with

Ah! my dear I am afraid you and your monk are wasting your powder said Prince Andrew banteringly yet tenderly

Ah! *mon ami* I only pray and hope that God will hear me Andrew she said timidly after a moment s silence I have a great favor to ask of you

What is it dear?

No—promise that you will not refuse! It will give you no trouble and is nothing unworthy of you but it will comfort me Promise Andrusha! said she putting her hand in her reticule but not yet taking out what she was holding inside it as if what she held were the subject of her request and must not be shown before the request was granted

She looked timidly at her brother

Even if it were a great deal of trouble answered Prince Andrew as if guessing what it was about

Think what you please! I know you are just like Father Think as you please but do this for my sake! Please do! Father s father our grandfather wore it in all his wars (She still

To understand all is to forgive all

did ot take out wh t he as hold g n h r reticule.) So y u p miser

Of course Wh t is it?

A drew I bless y u w th th con d you must p mise me y w ll never take t off Do y p mi ?

If t d es ot we h a hundr dwe l t nd t b k my eck To please y u sa d P A drew B t mmedi tely n tic th pa ed exp ess his j ke h d br ght f ter f ce he r pent d a d dded I m gl d eally dear I am ry glad.

A t y ur will He w ll sa e nd h e m rcy t y u d bri g y u to H mself fo n Him l e is truth a d pea e, d she in a e trembl w th em t sol mnly hold g p both ha ds bef e l brother a mall, al ant q d k f ed c n of the Sa ur n gold se t ng n a finely wr u ht il er cha

Sh crossed hers lf k ssed the co nd

thi kly la u tue

b t l r w uld ha tak n th con b t he stopped him Andrew understood crossed l m self d kiss d the o There was look of te der ess f l e wa touch ed, but lso gleam f u y h f ce

Tha k u, my dear Sh kissed him o th f head d t d wn ga n n the sofa. They were l f while.

As I was sa to y Andrew b k nd and e er us as y lw y used t b D n t j lg Lise harshly h began Sh so w et, so good tur d d her po u wis ery ha d e.

I d t thi k I h complai ed of my d to y Masha o blamed her Why d y sa all this to me?

Red p tches ppea d n Pri cess M ry fac d was lent f sh f lt gu lty

I t sa d d g to you but y u h l dy be t lked to And I am sorry f that I

The p ches grew deepe o he f rehead, eck d c k Sh n d say som t g b ld t. Her brothe had guessed g t t l t p ess h d be n cry g lte d r and had poke f h f bod gs bou l er fi em t, d how l dreaded t, d h d mpla d f her fa e, h f tl er l w d her hush d. After cry g l had f ll asl p Pr A drew f l sorry f his er

kn W I I I can t epro ch have t ot e a fe w elf lw y I may truth h ppy? N I l e PP? k w

h s te but o er her head towaru u e u n f h ne doorw y

g

P

take tnes y

to the ri ht.

P cess Mary rose and m ed to the door th n t pped a d sa d Andrew f you had f th you w ld ha e t rned to God and asked H m to g e y u the lo e y u do not feel nd y u p er w uld l been n we ed.

Well may be! sa d P ce Andrew Go Másha I ll come mmed tely

On tl way to hi s te s oom, n th p s sag wh ch co nected o e w g w th the other P And ew met M demoiselle Bour en e mil g w etly It was the third time that day th t w th an ecst tic nd tles m l he had met him secluded p ssa es.

Oh! I th ught y u we e n your room, l e sa d f some aso bl h g nd dropp g her yes.

I ce A dr w looked ternly t her a d n exp es n f ger dde ly came o f is fa e. H a d thi g to he but looked t her f eh d nd hair w th t look n t l er eyes,

eady w ke nd h r m rry ce hurry g o wo d fter n ther came through the open doo She was sp ki g as usual n F ench d f lt l lf estrai t he w hed t make p f r lo t um

but mag the old Cou tess Zubo w th f lse curl d h r m th f ll of f lse t th as f he wer try g to ch t old ge.

H ha h ! M ry!

This ry t ce bout Countess Z bo

Th w l b means tooth and p this is in e ded.—Tr.

and this same laugh Prince Andrew had al ready heard from his wife in the presence of others some five times He entered the room softly The little princess plump and rosy was sitting in an easy chair with her work in her hands talking incessantly repeating Petersburg reminiscences and even phrases Prince Andrew came up stroked her hair and asked if she felt rested after their jour ney She answered him and continued her chatter

The coach with six horses was waiting at the porch It was an autumn night so dark that the coachman could not see the carriage pole. Servants with lanterns were bustling about in the porch The immense house was brilliant with lights shining through its lofty windows The domestic serfs were crowding in the hall waiting to bid good by to the young prince The members of the household were all gath ered in the reception hall Michael Ivanovich Mademoiselle Bourienne Princess Mary and the little princess Prince Andrew had been called to his father s study as the latter wished to say good by to him alone All were waiting for them to come out

When Prince Andrew entered the study the old man in his old age spectacles and white dressing gown in which he received no one but his son sat at the table writing He glanced round

Going? And he went on writing

I ve come to say good by

Kiss me here and he touched his cheek Thanks thanks!

What do you thank me for?

For not dilly dallying and not hanging to a woman s apron strings The Service before everything Thanks thanks! And he went on writing so that his quill spluttered and squeaked If you have anything to say say it. These two things can be done together he added

About my wife I am ashamed as it is to leave her on your hands

Why talk nonsense? Say what you want

When her confinement is due send to Moscow for an *accoucheur* Let him be here

The old prince stopped writing and as if not understanding fixed his stern eyes on his son

I know that no one can help if nature does not do her work said Prince Andrew evident ly confused I know that out of a million cases only one goes wrong but it is her fancy and

to himself finishing what he was writin I ll do it

He signed with a flourish and suddenly turn ing to his son began to laugh

It s a bad business eh?

What is bad Father?

The wife! said the old prince briefly and significantly

I don t understand! said Prince Andrew

No it can t be helped lad said the prince They re all like that one can t unmarry Don t be afraid I won t tell anyone but you know it yourself

He seized his son by the hand with small bony fingers shook it looked straight into his son s face with keen eyes which seemed to see through him and again laughed his frigid laugh

The son sighed thus admitting that his fa ther had understood him The old man con tinued to fold and seal his letter snatching up and throwing down the wax the seal and the paper with his accustomed rapidity

What s to be done? She s pretty! I will do everything Make your mind easy said he in abrupt sentences while sealing his letter

Andrew did not speak he was both pleased and displeased that his father understood him The old man got up and gave the letter to his son

Listen! said he don t worry about your wife what can be done shall be Now listen! Give this letter to Michael Ilarionovich I have written that he should make use of you in proper places and not keep you long as an ad jutant a bad position! Tell him I remember

half his words but his son was accustomed to understand him He led him to the desk, raised the lid drew out a drawer and took out an exercise book filled with his bold tall close handwriting

I shall probably die before you So remem ber these are my memoirs hand them to the Emperor after my death Now here is a Lom bard bond and a letter it s premium for the man who writes a history of Suvorov s wars Send it to the Academy Here are some jottings

Kutuzov

f t read when I am gone. You w ll fi d them useful.

A drew did ot tell h f ther that he would no d bt h e l g time y t. He felt that he must t say t.

I will do t all F ther he said.

Well n w good by! He ga his son his hand to kiss, d embraced him. Remember this, Pri ce A drew f they kill you t w ll hurt me, y ur old f ther he paused u expected l d then querul us uddenly shrieked but f I hear that y u ha n t be- ha ed like so f N cholas Bolk nski I hall be ashamed!

Y eed n t h e said that to me, F ther sa d the so w th smile.

Th ld m was silent.

yesterday —

Pl ase.

N t I t the w fe ha him. said th old ma d l ghed.

They tood sil t, f cin o another The ld man harp eyes wer fixed tra ht on his so s. Som th g tu ched n the l w part f the ld prince face.

W said good by Go! he udd nly sl ted l ud, gry e pen g his dox

What is t? What ked both pri esses whe th y saw f m m t th doo Pri ce Andrew and th figur of th old man n white d ess n gown spectacled and w less, sl o t g in a ngry e.

Prin e Andrew s ghed a d m de no reply

W lll he sa d turn g to h s w fe.

And th s Well sounded coldly ron c as f he w e saying Now go thro h y ur per f rm nce.

Andrew al eady! said the l ttle princess turn ng pale a d looki g w th d may at her husb nd.

He embraced her She screamed and fell un consci us on hi h ulder

H cauti usly released the should r he lean d on looked nto her face, a d car fully pl ed her an e y cha

Adie Mary sa d he ge tly to his sister taking he by the hand a d k ss h r nd th n h left th room w th rap d teps.

The l ttle p cess lay th armchair Ma dem selle Bouri nne chaf g her temples. Princess M ry s pporti g h sister n law still looked w th her bea tiful eyes full of tears t

the f equ nt so nd of the old m n a ery bl w g his se. Hardly had Pr nce A dr w gon wh n the tudy doo pen d qu ckly d the tern figur f the old man n the w h te dress g gown look d out.

Go ? That ll right! sa d h and look angrily at th un nsci us little pri cess h shook his head repro gly nd lammed the doo

and this same laugh Prince Andrew had already heard from his wife in the presence of others some five times He entered the room *softly* The little princess plump and rosy was sitting in an easy chair with her work in her hands talking incessantly repeating Petersburg reminiscences and even phrases Prince Andrew came up stroked her hair and asked if she felt rested after their journey She answered him and continued her chatter

The coach with six horses was waiting at the porch It was an autumn night so dark that the coachman could not see the carriage pole Servants with lanterns were bustling about in the porch The immense house was brilliant with lights shining through its lofty windows The domestic serfs were crowding in the hall waiting to bid good by to the young prince The members of the household were all gathered in the reception hall Michael Ivánovich Mademoiselle Bourienne Princess Mary and the little princess Prince Andrew had been called to his father s study as the latter wished to say good by to him alone All were waiting for them to come out

When Prince Andrew entered the study the old man in his old age spectacles and white dressing gown in which he received no one but his son sat at the table writing He glanced round

Going And he went on writing

I ve come to say good by

Kiss me here and he touched his cheek Thanks thanks!

What do you thank me for?

For not dilly dallying and not hanging to a woman s apron strings The Service before everything Thanks thanks! And he went on writing so that his quill spluttered and squeaked If you have anything to say say it These two things can be done together he added

About my wife I am ashamed as it s to leave her on your hands

Why talk nonsense? Say what you want

When her confinement is due send to Moscow for an *accoucheur* Let him be here

The old prince stopped writing and as if not understanding fixed his stern eyes on his son

I know that no one can help if nature does not do her work said Prince Andrew evidently confused I know that out of a million cases only one goes wrong but it is her fancy and mine They have been telling her things She has had a dream and is frightened

Hm Hm muttered the old prince to himself finishing what he was writing I ll do it

He signed with a flourish and suddenly turning to his son began to laugh

It s a bad business eh?

What is bad Father?

The wife! said the old prince briefly and significantly

I don t understand! said Prince Andrew

No it can t be helped lad said the prince They re all like that one can t unmarry Don t be afraid I won t tell anyone but you know it yourself

He seized his son by the hand with small bony fingers shook it looked straight into his son s face with keen eyes which seemed to see through him and again laughed his frigid laugh

The son sighed thus admitting that his father had understood him The old man continued to fold and seal his letter snatching up and throwing down the wax the seal and the paper with his accustomed rapidity

What s to be done? She s pretty! I will do everything Make your mind easy said he in abrupt sentences while sealing his letter

Andrew did not speak he was both pleased and displeased that his father understood *him* The old man got up and gave the letter to his son

Listen! said he don t worry about your wife what can be done shall be Now listen! Give this letter to Michael Ilarionovich I have written that he should make use of you in proper places and not keep you long as an adjutant a bad position! Tell him I remember and like him Write and tell me how he receives you If he is all right—serve him Nicholas Bolkónski s son need not serve under anyone if he s in disfavor Now come here

He spoke so rapidly that he did not finish half his words but his son was accustomed *to* understand him He led him to the desk raised the lid drew out a drawer and took out an exercise book filled with his bold tall close handwriting

I shall probably die before you So remember these are my memoirs hand them to the Emperor after my death Now here is a Lombard bond and a letter it is a premium for the man who writes a history of Suvórov s wars. Send it to the Academy Here are some jottings Kutúzov

ppeared n h rse b ck. They were an de-de-camp f ll w d by Cossack.

Th a de-de-camp was sent to co firm the rder which had n t b n clearly w rded the day befo e am ly that the comma der in ch f hed to see the regiment just in the tat hich t had been on the march n th ir greatcoats, and p cks, and w thout any

the army f th Arch duk Fe d and d Mack, d K zo t cons d ri g thi ju c d isable m t m g tl er rgum nts in pport of his ew to sh w tl Austrian g eral the wr tched tate n wh ch the troops rri ed fr m Russia. W th thi bject he in te ded to m t the egim t so tl wors the co d u t was th b tt pleased tl e com ma der chief w uld be. Though the de-de-camp did t k w these circumstan es h evertheless d l ered the defin te rder that th men sh uld be n th greatco ts and n marchi g der d that tl comma der in chi f would otherwise be dissatisfied. On hear this th gim ntal commander hun his head dently shrugged his h ulders and p ead t his rms w th ch leri gesture.

A fi e mess w made of tl h emarked. "There wl D dn t I tell y u, M chael M t r ch that f t was sa d the march t meant greatco ts sa d he epro chfully to th battali commande Oh, my God! he dd ed, t pp resol t ly f rward. Comp y comma ders he h ted n ce accustomed to mam d. "Serrea ts maj ! H w soon w ll he be h h asked the de-d -camp with espectful pol t ess ev dently l u g to the perso g h was ref rr g to

I hour time, I sho ld say

Shall e ha time to cha ge cl thes?

I do kn w G eral.

ra ff to their compan es, th ergeants maj began bus l g (the greatcoats were n t ery good co di io) and nstantly th squares tl t had p to the be egular der d le t be a to way d tr tch d hum w tl c O all des sold rs wer ru g to nd fr thro p their kn psa ks w th l k f their should rs d pull g th trap er th ir he ds, u trapp th ir o erco ts and dr w g th slee es w th upraised arms.

In half n h ur all was again n order o ly the squares had become gray nstead of black. The regime tal comm de w lked w th l s je ky st p to the *fro t of the r ment* nd exam ned t from a dist nce.

Whate er is tl ? This! he l o ted nd tood still Comma der of the th rd com p y!

Comma der of tl e third comp ny w ted by the g erall comma der t the general third comp ny to the comma der Tl e words passed alo tl l es nd n dj tant ran t look f r the miss g officer

Wh n th eage l ut m epe ted words h d eached their dest n tion n a cry of "The g neral to the tl ird compa y the miss n of

bli g on his toes toward the g neral. The captain face h wed the uneas ness of sch ool boy who is told to repeat lesson he has n t learned. Spots ppeared on his nose the red ness f wh ch was ev d ntly d e to ntemper an e, and his m th tw tched nervou ly The general looked the capta n p d d wn as he cam up panting, sl cken g h p as l ap-p ch d.

Y u w ll soon be dres g y m n p t ticoats! What s this? sho ted the eg mental commande thrust g forward his j w d po ting t a sold er n the ra ks of the third company n greatco t of bluish cl th wh ch co trasted w th the hers. "What ha e you be fter? The comma der n ch f ex p cted nd y u l e your pla e? Eh? I ll teach you to dress th men n fancy co ts f p rade Eh

W ll why don t you peak? Wh m ha e y u g t th dressed up as a Hu gar sa d the comma der w th uster g be.

Your excelle cy

W ll y ur excell cy what? You excel l ncy! But what bout y ur excellency? no-body kn ws.

Y ur cell cy t s the ffi er D l kho wh has be n ed ed to th ranks, said the captai softly

W ll? Has he been degraded into field marshal t soldier? If sold e he should be dressed regul tion un f rm l k th oth ers.

Book Two. 1805

*

CHAPTER I

In October 1805 a Russian army was occupying the villages and towns of the Archduchy of

whom they were quartered Braunau was the headquarters of the commander in chief Kutuzov

On October 11 1805 one of the infantry regiments that had just reached Braunau had halted half a mile from the town waiting to be inspected by the commander in chief Despite the un Russian appearance of the locality and surroundings—fruit gardens stone fences tiled roofs and hills in the distance—and despite the fact that the inhabitants (who gazed with curiosity at the soldiers) were not Russians the regiment had just the appearance of any Russian regiment preparing for an inspection anywhere in the heart of Russia

On the evening of the last day s march an order had been received that the commander in chief would inspect the regiment on the march Though the words of the order were not clear to the regimental commander and the question arose whether the troops were to be in marching order or not it was decided at a consultation between the battalion commanders to present the regiment in parade order on the principle that it is always better to bow too low than not bow low enough So the soldiers after a twenty mile march were kept mending and cleaning all night long without closing their eyes while the adjutants and company commanders calculated and reckoned and by morning the regiment—instead of the straggling disorderly crowd it had been on its last march the day before—presented a well ordered array of two thousand men each of whom knew his place and his duty had every button and every strap in place and shone with cleanliness And not only externally was all in order but had it pleased the commander in chief to look under the uniforms he would have found on every man a clean shirt and in every knapsack the appointed number of articles

any fault of the regimental commander for in spite of repeated demands boots had not been issued by the Austrian commissariat and the regiment had marched some seven hundred mi

lettes which seemed to stand rather than he

front of the line and at every step pulled himself up slightly arching his back It was plain that the commander admired his regiment rejoiced in it and that his whole mind was engrossed by it yet his strut seemed to indicate that besides military matters social interests and the fair sex occupied no small part of his thoughts

Well Michael Mitrich sir? he said addressing one of the battalion commanders who smilingly pressed forward (it was plain that they both felt happy) We had our hands full

vial irony and laughed

It would not be turned off the field even on the Tsaritsin Meadow

What? asked the commander

At that moment on the road from the town on which signalers had been posted two men

The Tsaritsin Meadow in St Petersburg was

appeared on h rse back. They were an aide-de-camp f ll wed by Cossack.

The de-de-camp was ent to confirm the rder which had n t been clearly w rded the da bef e, namely that the commander in ch ef wished t see the regiment just in the sta n which t had been on the march n their greatcoats, and packs, and without any p parati whatever

A member f the Hofkriegsrath from V enna had com t K tuzo th day befo w th proposals and demands f him t jo n up w th the army f the Archduke Ferdi and nd Mack, d Kutuz n t cons d ri g this jun tio d isable, m ant am g ther argume ts in pport of his w t sh w th Austr an general th wr tched tat in which the troop mm R W th this bject he in

de-camp did n t kn w these circumstances, ne evertheless d li ered the d fin te rder that the men should be the r greatcoats and in marching rder and that th commander in chi f would therwise be dissatisfied. On hearing this th regimental commander hun his head, silently shrugged his sh ulders, and sp ead t his arms w th ch ler c gesture.

A fine mess w made of tl h emarked. "There w D dn t I tell y u, M chael M t rich tha f t was sa d o the march t meant in greatco ts said he proachfully to th battali command Oh, m God h dd ed, stepp resol el f rward. Company commanders he sh u ed n ce accustomed to mamnd. Serrea ts majo H w soon ll h be here h asked th aid -d -camp with espectful poli eness ev d ntly rel ting to th personage h was ref rri g to.

I an hour time, I sh uld say

"Shall ha tim to change clothes?"

I d kn w G eral.

Th regime tal commander go n up to the h himself, dered th soldiers to change into their greatcoats. Th comp n commanders ran ff to their mpan es, th sergeants major began bustl g (the greatcoats wer not n ery good condit) and nstantly the squares that had p t th bee regular order and silen bec a to swa nd tr tch and hum w th ices. O all sides soldiers wer run ing to and fro, thr w p their kn psacks with jerk f their shoulders d pulli g the straps over their heads, unstrapp g their g eatcoats and drawing th slee es with praised arms.

In half an h ur ll was aga n o der only the squares had become gray nstead of bl ck. The regimental comm nd r walked w th his jerky st ps to th front of the eg n ent d exam ned t from a distance.

Whate is th s? This! he shouted nd stood till. Comma der of the th rd company

C

by th

w c

ran to look for the m ss ng officer

h r l ut misr pe ted words had

th hab t of runnin trotted w ... bling on hi toes toward th general. The captain face h wed the unea ness f a school boy t ll t repeat lesso he has n t lea ne an

general look d the capta n up and d wn as n cam up pa i g, slacken ng his pace as l e p- p hed

po nti g company n greatcoat of bluish cl th which co tra ted w th the others. What ha e you been fter The commander n ch ef is expected d you lea e our place? Eh? I ll teach you to dress the m n fa cy coats for parade. Eh

Th comma der f the company w th his eyes fixed on his super r p essed two fi gers more and mo r gidly to hi cap as f n this pressure l y his nly hope of l at

"Well why do t y u peak? Whom ha e you got there dressed p as Hu gar an said th comma der w th austere g be.

"Your excellency

"Well, y ur excellency what? Y ur excellency B t what bo t your excell cy? nobody knows.

"Y ur cellency t the ffice Dol kho who has been red ed to the ranks, said the captain softly

"Well. Has h bee degraded into a field marshal, r nto soldier? If sold er he sho ld be dressed in regulation uniform l ke the others.

Your excellency you gave him leave your self on the march

Gave him leave? Leave? That s just like you young men said the regimental commander cooling down a little Leave indeed One says a word to you and you What? he added with renewed irritation I beg you to dress your men decently

And the commander turning to look at the adjutant directed his jerky steps down the line He was evidently pleased at his own display of anger and walking up to the regiment wished to find a further excuse for wrath Having snapped at an officer for an unpolished badge at another because his line was not straight he reached the third company

H o o w are you standing? Where s your leg? Your leg? shouted the commander with a tone of suffering in his voice while there were still five men between him and Dólokhov with his bluish gray uniform

Dolokhov slowly straightened his bent knee looking straight with his clear insolent eyes in the general s face

Why a blue coat? Off with it Sergeant major! Change his coat the ras he did not finish

General I must obey orders but I am not bound to endure Dólokhov hurriedly interrupted

No talking in the ranks! No talking no talking!

Not bound to endure insults Dólokhov concluded in loud ringing tones

The eyes of the general and the soldier met The general became silent angrily pulling down his tight scarf

I request you to have the goodness to change your coat he said as he turned away

CHAPTER II

He s coming! shouted the signaler at that moment.

The regimental commander flushing ran to his horse seized the stirrup with trembling hands threw his body across the saddle righted himself drew his saber and with a happy and resolute countenance opening his mouth awry prepared to shout The regiment fluttered like a bird preening its plumage and became motionless

Att ent on! shouted the reg mental commander in a soul shaking voice which expressed joy for himself severity for the regiment and welcome for the approaching chief

Along the broad country road edged on both sides by trees came a high light blue Viennese *calèche* slightly creaking on its springs and drawn by six horses at a smart trot Behind the *calèche* galloped the suite and a convoy of Croats Beside Kutuzov sat an Austrian general in a white uniform that looked strange among the Russian black ones The *calèche*

ly he stepped down from the carriage just as if those two thousand men breathlessly gazing at him and the regimental commander did not exist

the feeble voice of the commander in chief was heard The regiment roared Health to your ex len len lency! and again all became silent At first Kutuzov stood still while the regiment moved then he and the general in white accompanied by the suite walked between the ranks

From the way the reg mental commander saluted the commander in chief and devoured him with his eyes drawing himself up obsequiously and from the way he walked through the ranks behind the generals bending forward and hardly able to restrain his jerky movements and from the way he darted forward at every word or gesture of the commander in chief it was evident that he performed his duty as a subordinate with even greater zeal than his duty as a commander Thanks to the strictness and assiduity of its commander the regiment in comparison with others that had reached Braunau at the same time was in splendid condition There were only 217 sick and stragglers Everything was in good order except the boots

Kutuzov walked through the ranks sometimes stopping to say a few friendly words to officers he had known in the Turkish war sometimes also to the soldiers Looking at their boots he several times shook his head sadly pointing them out to the Austrian general with an expression which seemed to say that he was not blaming anyone but could not help noticing what a bad state of things it was The regimental commander ran forward on each such occa

softly spoken word to be heard followed some twenty men of his suite These gentlemen talked among themselves and sometimes

hed. Ne rest of ll to the commander n hief walk d a ha dsome adj tant. This was Pr e Bolkónsk Be de h m was his comrade Nes tski a tall taff ffi er extrem ly stout, th a ki dly smil ng, ha dsome face nd m t eyes. Nes tsk c ld l rdly ke p f m l hter pro k d by a w rthy hussar officer

make them look at the w g

K tuzov w lked lowly nd langu dly past

Ah, Tim kh l sa d he, cog zi g the r d osed captai who had b n ep m ded co t f the bl greatcoat.

O ld ha e th ght t imposs ble f r a man to tr tch hims lf m e than T mókhi had do e when h was p manded by th eg m tal comm der b t n w th t th com m der ch f ddress d h m he drew him s lf p t s ch n ext t th t t seem d h could tha e usta d t had the comm nder chief co t ed t look t h m nd so Ku tuz wh ev dently u d rstood h ca and hed h m thi g b t good qu ckly turn d Y scar ly per pt ble m le fl tt g o er h scarred and p ffy f

An ther l m l m de d he Ab e fficer! Are y u sat fied w th him? h ask d the egime tal comma d

A d th l tter—u co ci th t he was be g eflected th hus ffi r as n look g glass— t rned m d f rward, d s er d H ghly sat fi d y ur ex elle cy!

W ll ha e ur weak esses sa d Kut zo m l g d w lk g w y f m h m He us d to ha p ed le t f B cl

The egm l comm d was f d he m ght be blam d f th d d d t w Th hussar t tha mom t n t ed the f e f tl red sed capt d his drawn t m ch, and m m cked h p ess n d po th ch exa t t d tl t Nes itski could n t h lp l h g h t t d u d. Th er ev d tly l d compl te trol f h fa e d l l K t zo w turn g m ged

to m ke grimace and tl en assume a most seri ous deferent l nd nnocent e press on

Th thi d comp ny was the last a d Kutu zov po de ed, app e tly try ng to recollect someth ng P n e A d ew stepped f rwa d fr m amo g tl e u te a d said softly n F e ch

Y u t ld me to em id you of the off er D l khov educ d to tl e ranks n tl is regi me t.

Whe e s Dol kho ? a ked Kut ov

Dól kl o wl o h d al eady cha ged i to

om u

ch ef and p esented rms

H e you a compl t t m ke? Kutuzov ask d w th l ght frown

This is Dól kh v said Pri e A drew

Ah! sa d Kut zov I hope th s w ll be a lesson to y u. Do your d ty The Emper r s grac us nd I h n t f rget y u f y u des rve w ll

The clear blue eyes looked at the comm der chief just as boldly s they had looked t tl e regime tal comma der seem g by the ex p ess n t tear pen the e l of con nti n th t eparates comm nde n ch ef so w dely fr m p te.

One tl ng I ask of your excell ncy D lo kh sa d n h s firm n del b rate ce I ask n ppo tu ty t ato e f r my f ult d pro e my de t n to H s M jesty tl e E per d to Russ !

Kutuzo turned w y The same m le of the yes w th wh ch he h d t rned f om C pt n

ld say h d l g been kn wn t h m th t l e wa w ry of t d t was n t t all wh t he w ted. He turned w y nd went to tl car g

Tl g m t b k up t comp n es wh ch w t t th r ppo nted qu t rs ar Brau u where they h p d t r boots d cl thes nd to est ft the r hard marches

Y u w t b ar m a grudge P khó Ig nátych? sa d th egimental omm d o er t k g the th d comp y on ts w y to ts q r ers d r d g p to Capta n T mókh n wl o w walk g n f t. (The eg m ntal mm nde s f n w that th n p t on was h pp ly e be m d th rr p ess ble de l ht) It s th Empe serv e t ca t b h lp d o somet mes b t h ty n

parade I am the first to apologize you know me! He was very pleased! And he held out his hand to the captain

Don t mention it General as if I d be so bold! replied the captain his nose growing redder as he gave a smile which showed where two front teeth were missing that had been knocked out by the butt end of a gun at Ismail

And tell Mr Dolokhov that I won t forget him—he may be quite easy And tell me please —I ve been meaning to ask—how is he behaving *himself and in general*

As far as the service goes he is quite punctilious your excellency but his character said Timokhin

And what about his character? asked the regimental commander

It s different on different days answered the captain One day he is sensible well educated *and good natured and the next he s a* wild beast In Poland if you please he nearly killed a Jew

Oh well well! remarked the regimental commander Still one must have pity on a young man in misfortune You know he has important connections Well then you just

I will your excellency said Timókhin showing by his smile that he understood his

lokhov in the ranks and reining in his horse

thing nor did the mocking smile on his lips change

Well that s all right, continued the regimental commander A cup of vodka for the men from me he added so that the soldiers could hear *I thank you all! God be praised!* and he rode past that company and overtook the next one

Well he s really a good fellow one can serve under him said Timókhin to the subaltern beside him

In a word a hearty one said the subaltern laughing (the regimental commander was nicknamed *King of Hearts*)

heard on

was blind of one eye?

And so he is! Quite blind!

No friend he is sharper eyed than you are Boots and leg bands he noticed everything

When he looked at my feet friend well thinks I

And that other one with him the Austrian looked as if he were smeared with chalk—as white as flour! I suppose they polish him up as they do the guns

I say Fedeshon! Did he say when the battles are to begin? You were near him Everybody said that Buonaparte himself was at Braunau

Buonaparte himself! Just listen to the fool what he doesn t know! The Prussians are up in arms now The Austrians you see are putting them down When they ve been put down the war with Buonaparte will begin *And he says Buonaparte is in Braunau! Shows* you re a fool You d better listen more carefully!

What devils these quartermasters are See the fifth company is turning into the village already they will have their buckwheat cooked before we reach our quarters

Give me a biscuit you devil!

And did you give me tobacco yesterday? That s just it friend! Ah well never mind here you are

They might call a halt here or we ll have to do another four miles without eating

Wasn t it fine when those Germans gave us lifts! You just sit still and are drawn along

And here friend the people are quite beggarly There they all seemed to be Poles—all under the Russian crown—but here they re all regular Germans

Singers to the front! came the captain s order

And from the different ranks some twenty *men ran to the front. A drummer their* leader turned round facing the singers and flourishing his arm began a long drawn-out soldiers song commencing with the words *Morning dawned the sun was rising* and concluding

soldier of forty—looked sternly at the singers

and screwed p his eyes. Then ha satisfied himself that all eyes were fixed on him, he raised both arms as if carefully lifti som n isible b t precious object abo e his head and, holding t there f r some seconds, sudd nly flung t d n and be a

Oh my b er h my bou er
Oh my b er ew chimed n t enty

castan ts if threat nin someo e. The sol diers, sw n their arms and ke pin t m po ta cously marched w th l n teps. Be hind the compa y the sound of wheels, the creaki of pri s, d the tramp f horses hoofs were heard. Kutuz and his uite were return to th town. The commander in ch f mad n that the m n sh uld co tinu to march at ease, d h nd all his su t sho ed p easure t th so d f the ing and th ht f th dancin soldier d the gay d smartly marching men. In the second file from the ri t flank, bes de which th carria e passed th company bl e-eyed soldier in ol

ar cornet f Ku uzo t who had mim icked the r m tal commander fell back from the carriage d rod p to Dol kho

Hussar cornet Zherko had t o time in P tersburg, bel ged to th w ld se led by Dol kho Zherko had m t D l kho broad as p vate and had n t see fit to recogniz him. B t ow that K tuz had poken to the entleman ra ker he dd essed him w th th cordiali y f an ld f end.

My dear fell w h w are y u' sa d h through th si gi g, maki g his horse keep pace w th the company

H w am I Dol kho answered coldly I am as yo see.

The li ely so g ga e a pecial fl o to the ton f f ee and easy ai ty w th which Zher ko poke, d to th tentional coldness f Dolokho reply

A d how do yo get n w th th officers?

I as tached I m d ty
Both er lent.

asked Dol kh

The devil only knows! They say so.

I m glad, an wered Dólokhov briefly d clearly as the so g demanded.

I say come round som ev n ng nd we ll ha e game f faro said Zherk

"Why ha e you too much money

Do come.

I can t. I e sworn not to. I w n t dr nk nd won t play till I get reinstated.

"Well that s only till the first engagem nt.

"W shall see.

They wer ain lent.

Come f you eed anythi g O can at least be f use on th staff

Dol kho smiled. Don t trouble. If I want anythi g, I won t beg—I ll take it!

"Well, never mind I only

And I only

Good by

Good health

It long, long way
T my in la d

Zherkó touched his horse w th the spurs it pra ed excitedly from foot t foot uncertain w th which to tart, th settled d wn gall ped past the compa y d ertook the carria e, till keep g tim to th so g.

CHAPTER III

On returning from th rev ew Kutuz took the Austrian general to his p at room nd, callin his djutant, asked f som papers e latin to th co diti n of the troops o their arri al and th letters that had come fr m th e A chduk Ferd nand, who was n command f th ad an ed army Pri e Andrew Bolkonski cam int th room w th the required p pers. Kutuzo nd th Austrian membe of th H f Kriegsrath were sitting t th tabl n wh ch a plan was spread t.

Ah! said Kuturo glancin t Bolkón ki as f by this exclamation he was a ki g th djutant to wait, nd he w nt on w th the con ersati n in F nch.

All I can say General said he with pleas ant elegance of exp essio nd inton tio that oblig d o to list n to each deliberat ly spok en word. It was ev dent that Kutuzo himself

parade I am the first to apologize you know me! He was very pleased! And he held out his hand to the captain

Don t mention it General as if I d be so bold! replied the captain his nose growing redder as he gave a smile which showed where two front teeth were missing that had been knocked out by the butt end of a gun at Ismail

And tell Mr Dolokhov that I won t forget him—he may be quite easy And tell me please —*I ve been meaning to ask—how is he behaving* himself and in general

As far as the service goes he is quite punctil ious *your excellency but his character* said Timókhin

And what about his character? asked the

answered

u t – – – well edu cated and good natured and the next he s a wild beast In Poland if you please he near ly killed a Jew

Oh well well! remarked the regimental commander Still one must have pity on a young man in misfortune You know he has important connections *Well then* you just

I will your excellency said Timókhin showing by his smile that he understood his commander s wish

Well of course of course!

The regimental commander sought out Do lokhov in the ranks and reining in his horse said to him

After the next affair epaulettes

Dolokhov looked round but did not say any thing nor did the mocking smile on his lips change

Well that s all right continued the regi mental commander A cup of vodka for the men from me he added so that the soldiers could hear I thank you all! God be praised! *and he rode past that company and overtook* the next one

Well he s really a good fellow one can serve under him said Timókhin to the subal tern beside him

i h l

The cheerful mood of their officers after the inspection infected the soldiers *The company* marched on gaily The soldiers voices could be heard on every side

And they said Kutuzov was blind of one eye?

And so he is! Quite blind!

No friend he is sharper-eyed than you are Boots and leg bands he noticed every *thing*

When he looked at my feet friend well, thinks I

And that other one with him the Austrian looked as if he were smeared with chalk—as white as flour! I suppose they polish him up as they do the guns

I say Fédeshon! Did he say when the battles are to begin? You were near him Ev erybody said that Buonaparte himself was at *Braunau*

Buonaparte himself! Just listen to the fool what he doesn t know! The Prussians are up in arms now The Austrians you see are putting them down When they ve been put *down the war with Buonaparte will begin* And he says Buonaparte is in Braunau! Shows you re a fool You d better listen more careful ly!

What devils these quartermasters are! See the fifth company is turning into the villa e already they will have their buckwheat cooked before we reach our quarters.

Give me a biscu t you devil!

And did you give me tobacco yesterday? That s just it friend! Ah well never mind here you are

They might call a halt here or we ll have to do another four miles without eating

Wasn t it fine when those Germans gave us lifts! You just sit still and are drawn along

And here friend the people are quite beg garly There they all seemed to be Poles—all under the Russian crown—but here they re all *regular Germans*

Singers to the front! came the captain s or der

And from the different ranks some twenty men ran to the front. A drummer their leader turned round facing the singers and flourishing his arm began a long drawn-out soldiers song commencing with the words *Morn i In ed the sun was sin* and concluding

u u – – o o

Father Kamenski were rej lice l I y Father Kutuzov

Having jerked out these last words as soldiers do and waved his arms as if flinging something to the ground the drummer—a lean handsome soldier of forty—looked sternly at the singers

K tuzov wr te to his old comrad
P c Andrew f ther

son b ds fai to become fficer dist
gu hed by h d ry fi m ess and peditu
de m self f t t h h b
d by m

t h m l t d t h m, dm co u

g room w th th p pers his h u
A drew cam p to his comrad the de-de
camp d ty Ko l ski wh was tt g t th
d w w th book

Well Pri c asked K zló ki.

I am rd red t write memorandum ex
pla g wh w n t d a cing

A d w

Pri ce A drew hrugged his shoulders.

A news f m M k?

If t er tru that h ha be beaten news
would h me.

Probably sa d Pr e A drew mo g to-
ard th ou doo

B t t that tant tall Austrian g eral
grea coat, w th th rder f Mari Theresa
his eck d bl ck ba dage ro d his head,
ho had ev d tl jus arri ed, t ed q ck
l al mm g the doo Pri ce Andr w t pped
hort.

Comma der Chi f Kutuzo said th
ewl arri ed g eral peak g quickly w th
harsh Germa c t, look to both des
d d anci tra ht t ward th n er doo

"Th command chi f is gaged, said
Kozl sk goin hurriedly p to th unkn wn
general and blocki g his w y to th doo

Whom shall I u

The unknown g neral looked disda fully
dow Kozlovski who wa rather sh t, as if
urp ised tha should not kn w him.

Th mma d ch f is gaged,
pea ed Kozl ski calmly

The g ral fa cl uded, his l ps qui ered

took out a notebook I ur

ga ng t h oom s a

do th y l

tretched

th ng b

en e be

qu e sou u w

doo of the pri ate room pened and Kut
ppeared n the doorway The gen r l w th
the b ndag d head be t f rw d s though run
n g w y fr m som d nger a d mak g
l g qu ck str des w th h thin legs w nt up
to Kut

I us oyez le m lheu e *Mack* he ut
ter d n b oken ce

Kut zo s f e as he stood n the open doo
w y ema ed perfectly immob le f r few mo-
me ts. Then wr nkles ran o r hi f e l ke a
wa nd his fo ehead became smooth g
l bowed his he d espe tfully closed his eyes
l tly let M ck enter his room bef e h m,
and cl sed th doo himself beh d h m.

Th eport which had been circul ted that
th Austri ns had been beaten and that the
whole army had urr ndered *t Ulm p ed to*
be corr ct. W th h lf n hour djutants had
be n sent ar us dir cti ns w th o d rs
wh ch h wed that the Russ an troops who h d
hitherto been n ti e w uld also soon ha e to
meet th enemy

Prin e Andrew was e of those rar taff
ff ers whose ch ef terest l y n th g neral
progress f the war Wh n h saw M ck nd
heard the deta ls f hi d saster h understood
that half the camp n was l t, und rstood ll
th difficulties f th Russ n army pos ti
and dly imagi ed what wa ted t d the
part he w uld ha e *to pl y In olu tarily he*
f lt joyful gitation t the thou ht of th l u
mil tion f arrogant Austri and that n
week tim h mi l t, perhap see and take
part the first Russian encounter w th the
F ch since S ro met them. He fear d that
Bonaparte s g n us m ght o tw gh all th cour
ge f th Russ an troops, and t th same tim
could n t dmit the dea f his hero be ng dis-
graced.

Exci ed nd irritated by these th u hts
Pr n A drew wen toward his oom to write
to hi f ther to whom h wrot every da In
th rrido h m Nes tsk w th whom h
shared room, and the w Zherko they were
as usual laughing

listened with pleasure to his own voice All I can say General is that if the matter depended on my personal wishes the will of His Majesty the Emperor Francis would have been fulfilled long ago I should long ago have joined the archduke And believe me on my honor that to me personally it would be a pleasure to hand over the supreme command of the army into the hands of a better informed and more skillful general—of whom Austria has so many —and to lay down all this heavy responsibility But circumstances are sometimes too strong for us General

And Kutuzov smiled in a way that seemed to say You are quite at liberty not to believe me and I don t even care whether you do or not but you have no grounds for telling me so

out

On the contrary he said in a querulous and angry tone that contrasted with his flattering words on the contrary your excellency s participation in the common action is highly valued by His Majesty but we think the present delay is depriving the splendid Russian troops and their commander of the laurels they have been accustomed to win in their battles he concluded his evidently prearranged sentence

Kutuzov bowed with the same smile

But that is my conviction and judging by the last letter with which His Highness the Archduke Ferdinand has honored me I imagine that the Austrian troops under the direction of so skillful a leader as General Mack have by now already gained a decisive victory and no longer need our aid sa d Kutuzov

The general frowned Though there was no definite news of an Austrian defeat there were many circumstances confirming the unfavorable rumors that were afloat and so Kutuzov s suggestion of an Austrian victory sounded much like irony But Kutuzov went on blandly smiling with the same expression which seemed to say that he had a right to suppose so And in fact the last letter he had received from Mack s army informed him of a victory and stated strategically the position of the army was very favorable

Give me that letter said Kutuzov turning to Prince Andrew Please have a look at it — and Kutuzov with an ironical smile about the corners of his mouth read to the Austrian general the following passage in German from the Archduke Ferdinand s letter

We have fully concentrated forces of nearly seventy thousand men with wh ch to atta k and defeat the enemy should he cr ss the Lech Also, as we are masters of Ulm we cannot be depr ved of the advantage of command ng both sides of the Danube so that shoul l the m

try to d rect his whole force against our fa th l ally We shall therefore conf dently awa t the mo ent when the Imperial Russian army w ll be fully equipped and shall then in co junct on w th it ea ily f nd a way to prepare for the enemy the fate he deserves

Kutuzov sighed deeply on finishing this paragraph and looked at the member of the Hof

Excuse me General interrupted Kutuzov also turning to Prince Andrew Look here my dear fellow get from Kozlovski all the reports from our scouts Here are two letters from Count Nostitz and here is one from His H gh ness the Archduke Ferdinand and here are these he said handing him several papers

give it to his excellency

Prince Andrew bowed his head in token of having understood from the first not only wh t had been said but also what Kutuzov w ul l have liked to tell him He gathered up the papers and with a bow to both stepped softly over the carpet and went out into the waiting room

Though not much t me had passed since Prince Andrew had left Russia he had changed greatly during that per od In the expressi n of his face in his movements in his walk scarcely a trace was left of h s former affected languor and indolence He now looked lik a man wh has no time to think of the i npress on he makes on others but is occupied w th agreeable and interesting work His face expres e l m re sat isfact on with himself and th se ar und h m h s smile an d glance were brighter and more attractive

Kutuzov whom he had o ertak n in Poland had rece ved him very kindly pr mi se l not to

Vienna Kutuzov wrote to his old comrade, Prince Andrew's father:

> Your son bids fair to become an officer distinguished by his industry, firmness, and expedition. I consider myself fortunate to have such a subordinate by me.

On Kutuzov's staff, among his fellow officers and in the army generally, Prince Andrew had, as he had had in Petersburg society, two quite opposite reputations. Some, a minority, acknowledged him to be different from themselves and from everyone else, expected great things of him, listened to him, admired, and imitated him, and with them Prince Andrew was natural and pleasant. Others, the majority, disliked him and considered him conceited, cold, and disagreeable. But among these people Prince Andrew knew how to take his stand so that they respected and even feared him.

Coming out of Kutuzov's room into the waiting room with the papers in his hand Prince Andrew came up to his comrade, the aide-de-camp on duty, Kozlovski, who was sitting at the window with a book.

"Well, Prince?" asked Kozlovski.

"I am ordered to write a memorandum explaining why we are not advancing."

"And why is it?"

Prince Andrew shrugged his shoulders.

"Any news from Mack?"

"No."

"If it were true that he has been beaten, news would have come."

"Probably," said Prince Andrew moving toward the outer door.

But at that instant a tall Austrian general in a greatcoat, with the order of Maria Theresa on his neck and a black bandage round his head, who had evidently just arrived, entered quickly, slamming the door. Prince Andrew stopped short.

"Commander in Chief Kutuzov?" said the newly arrived general speaking quickly with a harsh German accent, looking to both sides and advancing straight toward the inner door.

"The commander in chief is engaged," said Kozlovski, going up hurriedly to the unknown general and blocking his way to the door. "Whom shall I announce?"

The unknown general looked disdainfully down at Kozlovski, who was rather short, as if surprised that anyone should not know him.

"The commander in chief is engaged," repeated Kozlovski calmly.

The general's face clouded, his lips quivered and trembled. He took out a notebook, hurriedly scribbled something in pencil, tore out the leaf, gave it to Kozlovski, stepped quickly to the window, and threw himself into a chair, gazing at those in the room as if asking, "Why do they look at me?" Then he lifted his head, stretched his neck as if he intended to say something, but immediately, with affected indifference, began to hum to himself, producing a queer sound which immediately broke off. The door of the private room opened and Kutuzov appeared in the doorway. The general with the bandaged head bent forward as though running away from some danger, and, making long, quick strides with his thin legs, went up to Kutuzov.

"*Vous voyez le malheureux Mack*," he uttered in a broken voice.

Kutuzov's face as he stood in the open doorway remained perfectly immobile for a few moments. Then wrinkles ran over his face like a wave and his forehead became smooth again, he bowed his head respectfully, closed his eyes, silently let Mack enter his room before him, and closed the door himself behind him.

The report which had been circulated that the Austrians had been beaten and that the whole army had surrendered at Ulm proved to be correct. Within half an hour adjutants had been sent in various directions with orders which showed that the Russian troops, who had hitherto been inactive, would also soon have to meet the enemy.

Prince Andrew was one of those rare staff officers whose chief interest lay in the general progress of the war. When he saw Mack and heard the details of his disaster he understood that half the campaign was lost, understood all the difficulties of the Russian army's position, and vividly imagined what awaited it and the part he would have to play. Involuntarily he felt a joyful agitation at the thought of the humiliation of arrogant Austria and that in a week's time he might, perhaps, see and take part in the first Russian encounter with the French since Suvorov met them. He feared that Bonaparte's genius might outweigh all the courage of the Russian troops, and at the same time could not admit the idea of his hero being disgraced.

Excited and irritated by these thoughts Prince Andrew went toward his room to write to his father, to whom he wrote every day. In the corridor he met Nesvitski, with whom he shared a room, and the wag Zherkov; they were as usual laughing.

"Why are you so glum?" asked Nesvítski noticing Prince Andrew's pale face and glittering eyes.

"There's nothing to be gay about," answered Bolkónski.

Just as Prince Andrew met Nesvítski and Zherkóv, there came toward them from the other end of the corridor Strauch, an Austrian general who was on Kutúzov's staff in charge of the provisioning of the Russian army, and the member of the Hofkriegsrath who had arrived the previous evening. There was room enough in the wide corridor for the generals to pass the three officers quite easily, but Zherkóv, pushing Nesvítski aside with his arm, said in a breathless voice:

I

I

ping forward and addressing the Austrian general, "I have the honor to congratulate you."

He bowed his head and scraped first with one foot and then with the other, awkwardly, like

stupid smile could not but give him a moment's attention. He screwed up his eyes showing that he was listening.

"I have the honor to congratulate you. General Mack has arrived, quite well, only a little bruised just here," he added, pointing with a beaming smile to his head.

The general frowned, turned away, and went on.

"Gott, wie naiv!" said he angrily, after he had gone a few steps.

Nesvítski with a laugh threw his arms round Prince Andrew, but Bolkónski, turning still paler, pushed him away with an angry look and turned to Zherkóv. The nervous irritation aroused by the appearance of Mack, the news of his defeat, and the thought of what lay before the Russian army found vent in anger at Zherkóv's untimely jest.

"If you, sir, choose to make a buffoon of yourself," he said sharply, with a slight trembling of the lower jaw, "I can't prevent your doing so; but I warn you that if you dare to play the fool in my presence, I will teach you to behave yourself."

Nesvítski and Zherkóv were so surprised by this outburst that they gazed at Bolkónski silently with wide-open eyes.

"What's the matter? I only congratulated them," said Zherkóv.

"Come, what's the matter, old fellow?" said Nesvítski trying to soothe him.

"What's the matter?" exclaimed Prince Andrew standing still in his excitement. "Don't you understand that either we are officers serving our Tsar and our country, rejoicing in the successes and grieving at the misfortunes of our common cause, or we are merely lackeys who care nothing for their master's business. *Quarante mille hommes massacrés et l'armée de nos alliés détruite, et vous trouvez là le mot pour rire*," he said, as if strengthening his views by this French sentence. "*C'est bien pour un garçon de rien comme cet individu dont vous avez fait un ami, mais pas pour vous, pas pour vous*. Only a *hobbledehoy* could amuse himself in this way," he added in Russian—but pronouncing the word with a French accent—having noticed that Zherkóv could still hear him.

He waited a moment to see whether the cornet would answer, but he turned and went out of the corridor.

CHAPTER IV

The Pavlograd Hussars were stationed two miles from Braunau. The squadron in which Nicholas Rostóv served as a cadet was quartered in the German village of Salzeneck. The best quarters in the village were assigned to cavalry captain Denísov, the squadron commander, known throughout the whole cavalry division as Váska Denísov. Cadet Rostóv, ever since he had overtaken the regiment in Poland, had lived with the squadron commander.

On October 11, the day when all was astir at headquarters over the news of Mack's defeat, the camp life of the officers of this squadron was proceeding as usual. Denísov, who had been losing at cards all night, had not yet come home when Rostóv rode back early in the morn

Good God, what simplicity!

f jest gl
It is all very w ll f r th t g od f r n th
f ll f wl y y l a le n f l l t t
fo y u not f y t

caset unif rm, w th jerk to his horse, rod up to the porch, swu his le er th saddl w th sapp yo thful mo me t, tood for mo ment the tirrup as if loathe t part from his horse, and t last pran do vn nd called to his orderl

Ah Bo darenko dear friend! said he to who rushed up headl to the

Mind, walk him up d d wn well!

Another hussar also rushed toward th horse, but Bo daré ko had already thrown the reins of the snaffle bridl o er th horse head. It as ev dent that th cad t was l beral w th his tips and that paid t serve him. Rosto pat ted the horse neck and then h s flank, and lingered f r mom t.

porch. His landlord, who in waistcoat d po ted cap, p thfork in hand, was clearin manure from th cowhouse, looked out, and his face immediatel bri l tened on seeing Ros to Sch gut M gen Sch gut M gen!" he said w nkin w th merry smile, evidently pleased to gree th u man.

Sch fleiss g?" said Rosto w th th sam gay brotherly smil which did not lea e his ea ger face. Hoch O st icher Hoch Russe Kaiser Alexa der hoch!" said he, quotin wo ds ften repeated b the German landlord.

Th Germa la hed, came out f th cow shed, pulled ff his cap nd waving t bo his head cried.

U d di g e W lt hoch!"

Rost wa ed his cap bo his head like th Germa and cried la hing, U d s rat d e g nze W lt!" Thou h either the German clea g his cowshed no Rost back w th his platoo from f ragi f hay had an reaso for jo ci g, they looked t each ther w th j yful gel ht and brotherly l e, wagged their heads in token of their mu ual affec tion, and parted sm l g th German return in to his owshed and Rostó go g to th

cotta e he occup ed w th Deniso

What bout your maste ? he asked La ru shka Deniso s orderly wh m all the regiment knew f r rogue.

Hasn t been n since l ev n n Must ha e been los n nswered La rushka. I know by n w f he wins he comes back early to bra bo t t, but f he stays out till mornin t mea he s lo t nd will come back n a rage. W ll you ha e coffee?

"Yes, b some.

Ten minutes later La rushk bro ht th coffee. H s comi said l e. N w f r trou bl ! R sto looked out of the w nd w a d saw Deniso comin home. Den so was small man w th red face, sparkl g bl k eyes, nd black tousled mustache and ha He wore an unf stened cloak, w de b eeches han down n cr ses, and crumpled shako on the ba k of his head. H cam up to the po ch gloomily ha n his he d.

Lav u ka! he shouted loudly d a grily tak t off, blockhe d

"Well I am taki g t off re l ed Lavrushka ce.

Ah, you re p already sa d Deniso enter th room.

Lo go answered Rosto I ha e al ead been f the hay and ha e seen Fraulein M thilde.

Such ill luck. A soo as you left, t began nd went on. H llo there Tea

And what d vil mad me go to that wat (n officer n ckn med th rat") he sa d, rub b h f el ead nd whole f ce w th both ha ds. Just fancy h didn t l t me w n sin l cahd, ot o cahd.

H took the l hted p pe that was offered to him, gripped t in his fi t, and tapped t o th floo maki g the parks fly while he co tinued to sh ut.

H lets on w n the si gles d collahs t as soon as one doubles t gi es th singles and sn tches th doubles

H scatt red th burnin t bacco mashed th p pe, and threw t way Then h remai ed ilent f while, and all t once looked cheer full w th his gli tering, black eyes t Rosto

If t least w had som w men here but

Very good morning A ery good morning! Busy ready

Hurrah for th Austrians. Hurrah f th R ssians. Hurrah for he Empero Alexander! And hurrah for the hol ld.

– – ^ ƃo pu

that came to a stop and a respectful cough

The squadron quartermaster! said Lavrushka

Denísov s face puckered still more

Wetched! he muttered throwing down a purse with some gold in it Wostóv deah fellow just see how much there is left and shove the purse undah the pillow he said and went out to the quartermaster

Rostov took the money and mechanically arranging the old and new coins in separate piles began counting them

Ah! Telyánin! How d ye do? They plucked me last night came Denísov s voice from the next room

Where? At Bykov s at the rat s I knew it replied a piping voice and Lieutenant Telyánin a small officer of the same squadron entered the room

Rostov thrust the purse under the pillow and shook the damp little hand which was offered him Telyánin for some reason had been transferred from the Guards just before this campaign He behaved very well in the regiment but was not liked Rostóv especially detested him and was unable to overcome or conceal his groundless ant pathy to the man

Well young cavalryman how is my Rook behaving? he asked (Rook was a young horse Telyánin had sold to Rostóv)

The lieutenant never looked the man he was speak ng to straight in the face his eyes continually wandered from one object to another

I saw you riding this morn ng he added

Oh he s all right a good horse answered Rostov though the horse for which he had paid seven hundred rubbles was not worth half that sum He s begun to go a little lame on the left foreleg he added

The hoof s cracked! That s nothing I ll teach you what to do and show you what kind of rivet to use

Yes please do said Rostóv

I ll show you I ll show you! It s not a secret And it s a horse you ll thank me for

Then I ll have it brought round said Rostóv wish ng to avoid Telyánin and he went out to give the order

In the pass ge Denísov with a pipe was squatting on the threshold facing the quartermaster who was report ng to him. On seeing Rostov Denísov screwed up his face and pointing over his shoulder with his thumb to the room where Telyánin was sitting he frowned and gave a shudder of disgust.

Ugh! I don t like that fellow he said regardless of the quartermaster s presence

Rostóv shrugged his shoulders as much as to say Nor do I but what s one to do? and having given his order he returned to Telyánin

Telyánin was sitting in the same indolent pose in which Rostov had left him rubbing his small white hands

Well there certainly are disgusting people thought Rostóv as he entered

Have you told them to bring the horse? asked Telyánin getting up and looking carelessly about him

I have

Let us go ourselves I only came round to ask Denísov about yesterday s order Have you got it Denísov?

Not yet But where are you off to?

I want to teach this young man how to shoe a horse said Telyánin

They went through the porch and into the stable The lieutenant explained how to rivet the hoof and went away to his own quarters

When Rostóv went back there was a bottle of vodka and a sausage on the table Denísov was sitting there scratching with his pen on a

pen n his hand and evidently glad of a chance to say quicker in words what he wanted to write told Rostóv the contents of his letter

You see my fwiend he said we sleep when we don t love We are childwen of the dust but one falls in love and one s a God one is pua as on the fihst day of cweation Who s that now? Send him to the devil I m busy! he shouted to Lavrushka who went up to him not in the least abashed

Who should it be? You yourself told him to come It s the quartermaster for the money

Denísov frowned and was about to shout some reply but stopped

Wetched business he muttered to himself How much is left in the pulse? he asked turning to Rostóv

Seven new and three old imper als

Oh it s wetched! Well what are you standing there for you sca cr ow? C ll the quahtehmasteh he shouted to Lavrushka

Please Denísov let me lend you some I have some you know said Rostov blushing

"Do t like bown w ng from my wn fel lows, I don t, growled Deniso

B t f y w t accept mo ey f om me like comrade, yo will ffend me. Really I ha e some, Ro to epeated.

No, I tell y u.

A d Deniso we t to the bed to get the purse fr m under the p ll w

"Where ha ou put t, Wostó

U der the l wer pillow

It t there.

Deniso threw both pillows n the floor The purse was n t there.

"That m wacle.

"Wait, ha e t ou dr pped t. said Ros- t p cki g p th pill ws one t time d shaki them.

He pulled ff th quilt and shook t. Th purse was no there.

De m ca I ha f rgotten No f re- member think g that u kept t u der your head lik treasure sa d Rost I put t just here. Wh re is t? h asked, turn g to La ru shka.

I ha been n the room. It must be her v p t t.

B t is t?

"I eal ay l k that y u thwow thin do n ywher and f rget t. Feel n your pockets.

N f I had t th ught f t being treas ure, sa d Rosto but I emember p tti g t there.

La rushka turned ll the beddin er looked under th bed and u der th table, searched everywhere d tood till n th mid dl f th room. D so silently watched La rushka mo ements, d wh n the l tter threw p his arms urprise saying t was no- here to be f und D n so glanced t Rostó

"Wostu you n t been pl y g schoolboy t cks.

Rosto felt Deniso gaz fixed n him, raised his eyes, and insta tl dropped them ga n. All the blood which had seemed co gested some- here bel w his throat rushed to his face and eyes. H could t draw b eath.

A d ther has t be n nyo th room except the li ut nant d y ursel es. It must be here somewher sa d La rushka.

N w then, y de l p ppet, look al e and hunt f t! sho ed D níso uddenly urn g purpl and rushi g the man w th threa en g gesture. If the purse is t f d I ll flog u. I ll flo y ll.

Rost hi eyes d g D niso began b tton n his coat, buckled on his saber nd put on his cap

I must h e th t purse, I tell you, shouted De so sh kin his orderly by the houlders d knocki h m ga nst the wall

Deniso l t h m alone I kn w who has taken t, sa d Ro t go g towa d tl e doo w thout rais g his eyes. De iso paused thought moment, and, ev dently understa d i g wh t Rostó hinted t, sei ed h rm.

N e sel he cried nd th o h s fo ehead nd neck stood ut l k c is. You are mad, I tell y u. I won t allow t. Tl e purse is here! I ll fl y this scoundwel al e a d t will be f und.

I kn w who has taken t," repe ted Rost in an un teady o ce, and went to the doo

And I tell you, don t you d he t do tl shouted De so rush g at the cadet to re- tra him.

But Rost pulled way his arm nd w th as much anger as thou h Den so were h s w rst emy firmly fixed his eyes directly on h face.

Do you u derstand what ou say he sa d n trembl o e. "There wa no o e else n the oom except myself. So th t f t is n t so then

He could not fi sh, and ran out of th room.

Ah, may the dev l take you nd e ery body were the last words Rost heard.

Rost went to Telyan n s quarters.

"The master is not in he gone to head quarters, said Tel án n orde ly Has some- thi g happened? he dded surprised t the cad t troubled f ce.

N n th

"You e only just missed him, sa d tl or derly

Th headquarters were tuated two miles aw y from Salzeneck, and Rosto w thout re turning home took horse and rod there There was an nn n the ill ge wh ch the of fi ers freque ted. Rosto rod up to t nd saw Telyán n h rse t the porch.

In the seco d room of the inn th lieuten ant was tti g o er dish of sausages and a bottl f w ne.

nearest table.

Both were l nt. There w t o Germ and Russ noffi er n th room. N one poke and th only so ds heard were th cl tter of kn es nd the munchi g of th li utenant.

there s nothing foh one to do but dwink If we

that came to a stop and a respectful cough

The squadron quartermaster! said Lavrushka

Denísov s face puckered still more

Wetched! he muttered throwing down a purse with some gold in it Wostov deah fellow just see how much there is left and shove the purse undah the pillow he said and went out to the quartermaster

Rostov took the money and mechanically arranging the old and new coins in separate piles began counting them

Ah! Telyánin! How d ye do? They plucked me last night came Denísov s voice from the next room

Where? At Bykov s at the rat s I knew it replied a piping voice and Lieutenant Telyánin a small officer of the same squadron entered the room

Rostov thrust the purse under the pillow and shook the damp little hand which was offered him Telyánin for some reason had been transferred from the Guards just before this campaign He behaved very well in the regiment but was not liked Rostóv especially detested him and was unable to overcome or conceal his groundless antipathy to the man

Well young cavalryman how is my Rook behaving? he asked (Rook was a young horse Telyánin had sold to Rostov)

The lieutenant never looked the man he was speaking to straight in the face his eyes continually wandered from one object to another

seven hundred rubbles was not worth half that sum He s begun to go a little lame on the left foreleg he added

The hoof s cracked! That s nothing I ll teach you what to do and show you what kind of rivet to use

Yes please do said Rostov

I ll show you I ll show you! It s not a secret And it s a horse you ll thank me for

Then I ll have it brought round said Rostov wishing to avoid Telyánin and he went out to give the order

In the passage Denísov with a pipe was squatting on the threshold facing the quartermaster who was reporting to him. On seeing Rostov Denísov screwed up his face and pointing over his shoulder with his thumb to the room where Telyánin was sitting he frowned *and gave a shudder of disgust*

Ugh! I don t like that fellow he said regardless of the quartermaster s presence.

Rostóv shrugged his shoulders as much as to say Nor do I but what s one to do? and having given his order he returned to Telyánin

Telyánin was sitting in the same indolent pose in which Rostóv had left him rubbing his small white hands

Well there certainly are disgusting people

lessly about him

I have

Let us go ourselves I only came round to ask Denísov about yesterday s order Have you got it Denísov?

Not yet. But where are you off to?

I want to teach this young man how to shoe a horse said Telyánin

They went through the porch and into the stable The lieutenant explained how to rivet the hoof and went away to his own quarters

When Rostóv went back there was a bottle

face and said I am writing to her

He leaned his elbows on the table with his pen in his hand and evidently glad of a chance to say quicker in words what he wanted to write told Rostov the contents of his *letter*

You see my fwiend he said we sleep when we don t love We are childwen of the dust but one falls in love and one is a God one is pua as on the fihst day of cweation Who s that now? Send him to the devil I m busy! he shouted to Lavrushka who went up to him not in the least abashed

Who should it be? You yourself told him to come It s the quartermaster for the money

Denísov frowned and was about to shout *some reply but stopped*

Wetched business he muttered to himself How much is left in the pulse? he asked turning to Rostóv

Seven new and three old imperials.

Oh it s wetched! Well what are you standing there for you sca cwow? *Call the quahtehmasteh* he shouted to Lavrushka

Please Denísov let me lend you some I have some you know said Rostov blushing

"Do t l ke bowwow from my own fel l s, I d t growled Den so

B t f y o t ccept m ney from me l ke comrade will off d me. Really I have som Ro t repe ted.

No I t ll y u.

A d De iso went t the bed t get the purse from der the p ll w

Whe e h ou p t t, Wostó ?

U d d l wer pillo

It t there

D iso threw both pill ws o the floor The p rse wa t there.

That m wacle.

W t l t you dropped t? sa d Ros- t/ p ck g p th p ll s o e t t me and hak g them.

He p ll d ff the q lt and shook t. The p rse a t tl

D me ca I h e f rgotte No I remember th k g th t y k pt t u der y ur head l ke tr as sa d Rostó I p t t just l e Where t? l ked, turn t La ru hka.

I ha e t b n the room It must be here y p t t

B t t is t?

"I l ys l k th t y u thwow th g d n ywl er d f g t t. Feel n y r pockets.

N I I had t tl ght f t be g a treasure, said Ro to b t I em mber p tt g t there.

I the oom. D so l tly w tched L ushka mo eme t d whe the l tter th ew p his arm rpr es y g t was nohere to be f d De is gl ced t Rostóv "Wost yo t be pl y g schoolboy icks.

Rosto felt D niso gaze fixed h m r sed l eyes and in ta tly d pp d them g n All the blood hich had seen ed co gested somehere bel w his thr t ru h d to his face and eyes. He could not draw b eath.

And tter ha t be y e tl e room except the l eut ant d y ursel es. It must l ber ewher said La ru hka.

"Now then, d l s p ppet, l ... nd h... for it al ted Denisov ... turning p... and rusl g at ... threatening gestur If the purse ... I'll flog ... I'll flog ...

Ro... eyes

butto g h s coat, buckled t l s saber an l p t on h cap.

I m t l a e that purse I tell y u sl u ted Den so shak g h s rderly by the sl ul ters n l knock g l m ag st tl e v all

De iso l t h ! alone I kn t l s tak n it sa d Rost go g t war l the l r th t ra s g l s eyes De t u ed tho ght a m e t a l e ! le tly unl r t l ng wl at Rost v l nted at e ed his arm

N e el l e cr ed t l tle v n n h s for l e d d eck tood o t l ke t l Y u re m l I tell you I w n t all v it H e p ut e t l e rel I ll flay th s scoun h el l is n l it w ll be found.

I know v l o has taken it repe ted R st v in an un te dy ice and v e t t the l r

And I tell y u d n t y t l he t l ull shou ted Denis v ru l g at the c let t restra h

B t Ro tóv p lle l a ay l s arm and th at

t tl e

He could ot f r h r d r no t f tl e r m. Al may tl e devil t ke y u nd eve yl o ly we the l t w ds R t v he rd

Ro t v went to Telyá i s qu ters.

Tl e m st r is not in l e s g ne to headq ters sa d Telyánin s rderly Has som th g h ppe ed? he dded, surprise t t cadet s t oul led face

N noth ng

You e only just missed h m," ... derly

The headquarters were ... aw y fr m Salzeneck and ... t n g home, ... There was ... ficers fro... Telyán...

In ... and was ... hors...

When Telyánin had finished his lunch he took out of his pocket a double purse and drawing its rings aside with his small white

l

The coin was a new one Rostóv rose and went up to Telyánin

Allow me to look at your purse he said in a low almost inaudible voice

With shifting eyes but eyebrows still raised Telyánin handed him the purse

Yes it s a nice purse Yes yes he said growing suddenly pale and added Look at it young man

Rostóv took the purse in his hand examined it and the money in it and looked at Telyánin

where to spend it said he Well let me have it young man I m going

Rostóv did not speak

And you? Are you going to have lunch too? They feed you quite decently here continued Telyánin Now then let me have it

He stretched out his hand to take hold of the

Yes yes I am putting my purse in my pocket and that s quite simple and is no one else s business

Well young man? he said with a sigh and from under his lifted brows he glanced into Rostóv s eyes

Some flash as of an electric spark shot from Telyánin s eyes to Rostóv s and back and back again and again in an instant

Come here said Rostóv catching hold of Telyánin s arm and almost dragging him to the window That money is Denísov s you took it he whispered just above Telyánin s ear

What? What? How dare you? What? said Telyánin

But these words came like a piteous despairing cry and an entreaty for pardon As soon as Rostóv heard them an enormous load of doubt fell from him He was glad and at the same instant began to pity the miserable man who stood before him but the task he had begun had to be completed

Heaven only knows what the people here may imagine muttered Telyánin taking up his cap and moving toward a small empty room We must have an explanation

I know it and shall prove it said Rostóv

I

Every muscle of Telyánin s pale terrified face began to quiver his eyes still shifted from side to side but with a downward look not rising to Rostóv s face and his sobs were audible

Count! Don t ruin a young fellow here is this wretched money take it He threw it on the table I have an old father and mother!

Rostóv took the money avoiding Telyánin s eyes and went out of the room without a word. But at the door he stopped and then retraced his steps O God he said with tears in his eyes how could you do it?

Count said Telyánin drawing nearer to him

Don t touch me said Rostóv drawing back. If you need it take the money and he threw the purse to him and ran out of the inn

CHAPTER V

THAT SAME EVENING there was an animated discussion among the squadron s officers in Denísov s quarters

And I tell you Rostóv that you must apologize to the colonel! said a tall grizzly haired staff captain with enormous mustaches and many wrinkles on his large features to Rostóv who was crimson with excitement

The staff captain Kírsten had twice been reduced to the ranks for affairs of honor and had twice regained his commission

I will allow no one to call me a liar! cried Rostóv He told me I lied and I told him he lied And there it rests He may keep me on duty every day or may place me under arrest but no one can make me apologize because if he as commander of this regiment thinks it beneath his dignity to give me satisfaction then

You just wait a moment my dear fellow and listen interrupted the staff captain in his deep bass calmly stroking his long mustache You tell the colonel in the presence of other officers that an officer has stolen

I m not to blame that the conversation began in the presence of other officers Perhaps I ought not to have spoken before them but I am not a diplomat. That s why I joined the hussars thinking that here one would not need finesse and he tells me that I am lying—so let him give me satisfaction

"That all ght. Noo e thinks you coward, but that s not the po t. A k Deniso wl ether t is not t f the q estion f cadet to demand sa sf cti f his regimental command er

Deniso sat gloomily b t g his mustache and listeni g to th con rsati ev dently th no wish to take part n t. He answered the staff captain q est n by disappro g shake f his head.

"Y u pe k to the col nel bo t this nasty busi ess bef re other officers, continued the staff capta d Bogdan ch (the col nel as called Bogdánich) shuts y u p

He did t sh t me up, he said I was tell in u truth.

Well, ha e t so d you talked a lot f

capiai sciious u... —

to pologize, but, man, t not only to him but to th whole egim nt—all of us—you re to blam all ro d. Th case is this you o ght to ha tho ght th m tter er d taken d ce b t no, o go and blurt t all traight out be fore the fficers. N w what was th col nel to do. H th fficer tr ed and disgrace the hol egiment. Disgrac the whole regiment because f e sc undrel? I that how you look t W d t see t l k that. And Bogdan ch was bri k h told y u were say what as t true. I n t pl asa t, b t what to be done, my dear f ll w? You landed yourself n t. A d w when e wants to mooth th thing over some con t p events your pologizin and you wish to mak the whol ff ir p bl Y off ded t be g p t duty

ell) Y quick t taki g ff se, but you do t mind disgraci th whole regiment! The taff captain e began to tremble. "I ha been in th regiment next to no time, m lad, yo re here today and t morrow you'll be ppo ted dj ta t somewhere nd ca snap ur fingers wh n t is said 'Ther are thieves amo g th P lograd officers' But t s not all the sam to us Am I t ight, Deniso ? It not th same!

Deniso rema ed silent d did n t mo but occasionally looked w th his glittering black eyes t Rosto

"You al e your n p d nd do t wish to polo e, co tin ed t taff captain but w old fell ws, who ha e grown up in and, God will g, are go to die n the e ment, we pri the hono of the regiment nd Bog da ch kn ws t. Oh, we do prize t, old fel l w! And all thi is not ght, t not r gl t! You may take ffense r not but I always tuck to mother truth. It s n t right!

A d the taff captain rose and turned away from Rost v

"That s twue, de tl take t! shouted D niso jumping up. N w th n Wostó now then!

Rost grow n red nd pale altern tel looked first at on ffi er and then t the other

N g ntlemen no you mustn t think I quite u derstand. Y u re wro g to think that of me I fo me f th ho o of th regiment I d Ah well, I'll show that in act and f r me th hono of the flag Well never mind, t true I m t blame, to blame all round. Well what else do you want

Come, that ht, Count! er ed the staff capta n, turn g rou d and clapp Rosto on th shoulder w th his b g hand.

I tell you, shouted Deniso he fine fel l

—

Gentlem n I ll do nyth g No o shall hear w rd from me, said Rosto in an impl r ing o ce, but I can t pologize by God I can t, do what you will! How can I go and pologize like a l ttl boy askin f rgi eness

Deniso began to l gh.

It ll be worse f you. Bogdán ch is ndic ti e d you ll p y f your obstinacy said Kirsten.

No on my word t n t obstinacy! I can t describe the feeli I can t

Well, t as you like, sa d th taff captain. And what has become of that scoundrel? he asked Deniso

He has weported himself sick, he to be stwuck off the list tomoww w muttered Deniso

It is an illness, there no other way f explainin t, said th taff captain

Illness not, he d bet er not c ss my path. I d kill him! sho ted D niso a bloodthirsty tone.

Just th n Zherk ntered th room.

"What bri s you here. cried th officers turning to th newcomer

We to go to ctio gentlem n! M ck has urrendered with his whole army

When Telyánin had finished his lunch he took out of his pocket a double purse and drawing its rings aside with his small white

The coin was a new one Rostóv rose and went up to Telyánin

Allow me to look at your purse he said in a low almost inaudible voice

With shifting eyes but eyebrows still raised Telyánin handed him the purse

Yes it s a nice purse Yes yes he said growing suddenly pale and added Look at it young man

Rostov took the purse in his hand examined it and the money in it and looked at Telyánin The lieutenant was looking about in his usual way and suddenly seemed to grow very merry

If we get to Vienna I ll get rid of it there but in these wretched little towns there s nowhere to spend it said he Well let me have it young man I m going

Rostóv did not speak

And you? Are you going to have lunch too? They feed you quite decently here continued Telyánin Now then let me have it

He stretched out his hand to take hold of the

I

ness

Well young man? he said with a sigh and from under his lifted brows he glanced into Rostóv s eyes

Some flash as of an electric spark shot from Telyanin s eyes to Rostov s and back and back again and again in an instant

Come here said Rostov catching hold of Telyánin s arm and almost dragging him to the window That money s Denísov s you took it he whispered just above Telyánin s ear

What? What? How dare you? What? said Telyánin

But these words came like a piteous despairing cry and an entreaty for pardon As soon as Rostov heard them an enormous load of doubt fell from him He was glad and at the same instant began to pity the miserable man who stood before him but the task he had begun had to be completed

Heaven only knows what the people here may imagine muttered Telyánin taking up his cap and moving toward a small empty room We must have an explanation

I know it and shall prove it said Rostov

I

Every muscle of Telyánin s pale terrified face began to quiver his eyes still shifted from side to side but with a downward look not rising to Rostóv s face and his sobs were audible

Count! Don t ruin a young fellow here is this wretched money take it He threw it on the table I have an old father and mother!

Rostóv took the money avoiding Telyánin s eyes and went out of the room without a word. But at the door he stopped and then retraced his steps O God he said with tears in his eyes how could you do it?

Count said Telyánin drawing nearer to him

Don t touch me said Rostóv drawing back. If you need it take the money and he threw the purse to him and ran out of the inn

CHAPTER V

THAT SAME EVENING there was an animated discussion among the squadron s officers in Denísov s quarters

And I tell you Rostov that you must apologize to the colonel! said a tall grizzly haired staff captain with enormous mustaches and many wrinkles on his large features to Rostov who was crimson with excitement

The staff captain Kírsten had twice been reduced to the ranks for affairs of honor and had twice regained his commission

I will allow no one to call me a liar! cried Rostóv He told me I lied and I told him he lied And there it rests He may keep me on duty every day or may place me under arrest but no one can make me apologize because if he as commander of this regiment thinks it beneath his dignity to give me satisfaction then

You just wait a moment my dear fellow and listen interrupted the staff captain in his deep bass calmly stroking his long mustache You tell the colonel in the presence of other officers that an officer has stolen

I m not to blame that the conversation began in the presence of other officers Perhaps I ought not to have spoken before them but I am not a diplomatist That s why I joined the hussars thinking that here one would not need finesse and he tells me that I am lying—so let him give me satisfaction

H d t I bett r ride o er your exc lle cy?
I ed Nes ki

But the cons yman took no n t e t u
t l e al and shout d at the sold ers

they ar
ordered d the fl mm ble mater l on the bridge must be re pected.

Very good, ans ered Nes it ki

He called the Cossack w th his horse told him to p t ay th kn psack d flask, and s u g h s hea y person e ly nto the s ddle

I ll really call on the nu s he s d to the fficers wh w tched h m mil ngly a d he rod off by th w di g path d n the hill

N w then I t s e h w far t w ll carry Captain Just try! sa d the ge ral tu n g to artillery offi er H e l ttle f n t pass the time.

Crew t your gu l co m ded the f ficer

I mom t th me came ru n ng gaily from their campfires d bega l di g

O ! cam the comn d.

N mbe e jumped b skly as de The gun ra t w th de f g metall c oar d h u g gre de flew bo e th l ds f our troops bel w the hill a d fell fa sho t f th my little m ke show g the pot here t burst

The f es f ffi ers d m n brightened up at th so d. E ery e got up d bega w tch g the m m ts f ur troop bel w as plainly sibl f b t a st e s throw w y d th m m ts f th pp oach g my farther ff. At th same ta t the un can fully t from beh d th cl ds, d th clear so d f the sol tary h t nd the brill n e of the bright h merged n si gle j yous d p ted mp ess n.

CHAPTER VII

T o the emy sh ts had al eady fl wn cross th bridg where there wa crush. H lf y across tood Pr Nes it ki who h d al ghted from h h rse d whose b g body as j mmed a t th ra l gs. He looked back la l t th Cossack who ood f w teps beh d h m hold tw h rses by th ir bridles. Each tim Pr Nes tsk tr ed t m e on ldi rs d carts pushed h m back a d pressed h m ga nst the rail gs, nd all h could do was to sm le.

"What f ll w you are fr di said the Cossack co oy sold er w th wa o who was press g to th infantrym n who were

un f rm l ng ra es of soldiers sh ulder strap co ered h kos, knapsacks bayonets lo g mu kets, and under the shakos, f ces with broad ch ekbones, unken che ks, nd l stless t red express n nd feet th t m ved throu h the st ky mud that c vered the pla ks of the b dge. Sometimes thro gh the non ton us w es of n n l k a fl ck of wh te foam on the wa es of the Enns an offi er n a cloak nd

on foot o derly o tow ma was carr ed thro gh the wa es of nf ntry a d so etimes l k a lo fl tin down the r ve n officers o compa y b gga e wago p led l gh le the co ered, nd h mmed n on all s des n ved across the br dge

It s as f a d m had burst, sa d the Cossack h pelessly Are there many mo e of you to

If I (he t the e emy) beg s popping t the bridge n w sa d th old sold er dismally to comr de 'y u ll f rg t to scratch y urself

That sold er p ssed on and fter h m came n ther tt g on a cart.

Wher the de l l the leg b nds b en sh ed t ? sa d n orderly ru n g behi d the cart nd fumbli g n th b ck of t.

And he also passed on w th th w on Then cam som m rry soldiers who h d e dently

soldier who e greatcoat w s well tucked up sa d ga ly w th w d w g of h s arm.

Yes, th ham w ju t d l ci us n swered another w th l ud l gh. And they

It s not true!

I ve seen him myself!

What? Saw the real Mack? With hands and feet?

Into action! Into action! Bring him a bottle for such news! But how did you come here?

I ve been sent back to the regiment all on account of that devil Mack An Austrian general complained of me I congratulated him on Mack s arrival What s the matter Rostov? You look as if you d just come out of a hot bath

Oh my dear fellow we re in such a stew here these last two days

The regimental adjutant came in and confirmed the news brought by Zherkóv They were under orders to advance next day

We re going into action gentlemen!

Well thank God! We ve been sitting here too long!

CHAPTER VI

KUTÚZOV FELL BACK toward Vienna destroying behind him the bridges over the rivers Inn (at Braunau) and Traun (near Linz) On October 23 the Russian troops were crossing the river Enns At midday the Russian baggage train the artillery and columns of troops were defiling through the town of Enns on both sides of the bridge

It was a warm rainy autumnal day The wide expanse that opened out before the heights on which the Russian batteries stood guarding the bridge was at times veiled by a diaphanous

be seen with its white red roofed houses its cathedral and its bridge on both sides of which streamed jostling masses of Russian troops At the bend of the Danube vessels an island and a castle with a park surrounded by the waters of the confluence of the Enns and the Danube became visible and the rocky left bank of the Danube covered with pine forests with a mystic background of green treetops and bluish gorges The turrets of a convent stood out beyond a wild virgin pine forest and far away on the other side of the Enns the enemy s horse patrols could be discerned

Among the field guns on the brow of the hill the general in command of the rearguard stood

mander in chief was sitting on the trail of a gun carriage A Cossack who accompanied him had handed him a knapsack and a flask and Nesvítski was treating some officers to pies and real *doppelkummel* The officers gladly gathered round him some on their knees some squatting Turkish fashion on the wet grass

Yes the Austrian prince who built that castle was no fool It s a fine place! Why are you not eating anything gentlemen? Nesvítski was saying

Thank you very much Prince answered one of the officers pleased to be talking to a staff officer of such importance It s a lovely place! We passed close to the park and saw two deer and what a splendid house!

Look Prince said another who would have dearly liked to take another pie but felt shy and therefore pretended to be examining the countryside— See our infantrymen have

I should like added he munching a pie in his moist lipped handsome mouth would be to slip in over there

He pointed with a smile to a turreted nunnery and his eyes narrowed and gleamed

That would be fine gentlemen!

pointed out something to the general who

crossing And why are they dawdling there?

On the opposite side the enemy could be seen by the naked eye and from their battery a milk white cloud arose Then came the distant report of a shot and our troops could be seen hurrying to the crossing

Nesvítski rose puffing and went up to the general smiling

Would not your excellency like a little refreshment? he said

It s a bad business said the general without answering him our men have been wasting time

The sold ers crowded ga n t one tl er
tl t n fied f ces a d De iso] ed Nes t
k

er d V k De iso Tl y k p uw g
g tl w g me t t d fwo ll d y If they
to f ght let fi ht. B t the de l knows
hat tl s

Wh t da dy y u are today! sa d Nes t
k looki at De iso s new cl k d saddle
cl th.

De iso m led, took o t of h s sabr tache a
ha dk rch f th t d ffused sm ll f p fume
d p t t to N itsk s ose

Of cours I g g to t n! I e
ha d b ushed my t eth d e t d my
self

Th mpo f g e f Nes itsk f ll ed
by h Cossa k a d tl e d t rm t on f Deni
so l fl u l d l s w rd a d h t d fran
t lly had cl eff t that tl ey ma g d to
sq eze th gl t tl e f the de of the
b dge a d t pp d th fantry Bes d the
b dg Nes tsk f d tl e colonel t wh m
he l d t d l th rde d h g d e
th h rod b ck

his sq dr draw Th n the l g f
hoofs as f everal h rses gallop g sou ded
th pl ks f th bridg d th qu d
fficers fro t d me f ur b e t p ead
cross tl b d d bega t m rge n h
de of t.

f d ffer t rms llye u te o e th
t tl e cl n ma t h ssars wh m d p t
l n gul d

Sm l ds O ly fit f f l ta d o

What good they? Th y led bo t

mud er some foot sold rs.

I d l k t j t y tw d y m rch

Tl re n w Zik tl ey ougl t to p it y u
n l rse Y u d look fine s d a corp ral
chaff ng thi l ttle sold er wl o be it u der
tl e ght of h s k psack

T ke st ck betwee y u legs that ll su t
you for a h rs t the hu ssar sl outed b ck.

CHAPTER VIII

THE LAST f tl e i f try hurriedly crossed tl e
br d e q e g t getl er s tl ey ppr ac ed
t as f pass g through f l At last tl e
b gga e v vons l d ll crossed the crush w s
l ss nd thel t b tt l n came onto tl e br dge
Only De iso s squ dr n of hussars rema ed
n tl farther s de of tl e b dge fac g tl e en
emy wl o could be s en from the l ll on the

the ris g gr u d ly half a m le aw y At tl e
foot of tl e l ll lay waste l nd o wh cl a few

ff cers d men of D niso s squadron th ugh
they t d to talk f other tl ngs d to l k n

w the l d cle r d ga s ce oon d tl e
u w s desc d g b ghtly upo tl D ube
and th d k h ll ound it It s calm a d
t t rv ls th b gle ll nd the sl uts of
th n my ld be heard f the h ll The e
e w b tw en the qu dr i d tl e
e emy e ept few scattered sk rm l rs An
mpty j of some e en l d cd y ds w s
ll that sep rat d tl m Tl e my e ed fir

O t p b yo id tl t bou d ry l ne wh ch
es ml les th l d d g tl e l g from tl
l d l u e tt ty uff g d de tl V d
wh t s tl er ? Wl o s th ?—tl er b y d tl at
fi ld tl t t ee that oof l t p by tl e u ? N
k ws b t o e w t t k w Y u f
d yet l g t cr ss that l e d k th t
soo er l ter t mu t b cr ed d y u w ll
h to fi d o t wl t tl e j t yo w ll
t bly h et l rn wl tl es tl e tl er l
f death B t y u e tr g l ld y ch f l
d eit d, d are urro ded by ther ch

too passed on so that Nesvítski did not learn who had been struck on the teeth or what the ham had to do with it

Bah! How they scurry He just sends a ball and they think they ll all be killed a sergeant was saying angrily and reproachfully

As it flies past me Daddy the ball I mean said a young soldier with an enormous mouth hardly refraining from laughing I felt like dying of fright I did pon my word I got that frightened! said he as if bragging of having been frightened

That one also passed Then followed a cart unlike any that had gone before It was a German cart with a pair of horses led by a German and seemed loaded with a whole houseful of effects A fine brindled cow with a large udder was attached to the cart behind A woman with an unweaned baby an old woman and a healthy German girl with bright red cheeks were sitting on some feather beds Evidently these fugitives were allowed to pass by special permission The eyes of all the soldiers turned toward the women and while the vehicle was passing at foot pace all the soldiers remarks related to the two young ones Every face bore almost the same smile expressing unseemly thoughts about the women

Just see the German sausage is making tracks too!

Sell me the missis said another soldier addressing the German who angry and frightened strode energetically along with downcast eyes

See how smart she s made herself! Oh the devils!

There Fedótov you should be quartered on them!

I have seen as much before now mate!

Where are you going? asked an infantry officer who was eating an apple also half smiling as he looked at the handsome girl

The German closed his eyes signifying that he did not understand

Take it if you like said the officer giving the girl an apple

The girl smiled and took it Nesvítski like the rest of the men on the bridge did not take his eyes off the women till they had passed When they had gone by the same stream of soldiers followed with the same kind of talk and at last all stopped As often happens the horses of a convoy wagon became restive at the end of the bridge and the whole crowd had to wait

And why are they stopping? There s no proper order! said the soldiers Where are you shoving to? Devil take you! Can t you wait? It ll be worse if he fires the bridge See here s an officer jammed in too —different voices were saying in the crowd as the men looked at one another and all pressed toward the exit from the bridge

Looking down at the waters of the Enns under the bridge Nesvítski suddenly heard a sound new to him of something swiftly approaching something big that splashed into the water

Just see where it carries to! a soldier near by said sternly looking round at the sound

Encouraging us to get along quicker said another uneasily

The crowd moved on again Nesvítski realized that it was a cannon ball

Hey Cossack my horse! he said Now then you there! get out of the way! Make way!

way for him but again pressed on him so that they jammed his leg and those nearest him were not to blame for they were themselves pressed still harder from behind

Nesvítski Nesvítski! you numskull! came a hoarse voice from behind him

Nesvítski looked round and saw some fifteen paces away but separated by the living mass of moving infantry Váska Denísov red and shaggy with his cap on the back of his black head and a cloak hanging jauntily over his shoulder

Tell these devils these fiends to let me pass! shouted Denísov evidently in a fit of rage his coal black eyes with their bloodshot whites glittering and rolling as he waved his sheathed saber in a small bare hand as red as his face

Ah Váska! joyfully replied Nesvítski What s up with you?

The squadron can t pass shouted Váska Denísov showing his white teeth fiercely and spurring his black thoroughbred Arab which twitched its ears as the bayonets touched it, and snorted spurting white foam from his bit

They re like sheep! Just like sheep! Out of the way! Let us pass! Stop there you devil with the cart! I ll hack you with my saber! he shouted actually drawing his saber from its scabbard and flourishing it

would magnanimously extend the hand of reco ciliation.

Th high-shouldered figure f Zherko fa miliar to the P lo~rads as he had but recently left their regim nt, rode up to the colonel. Aft er his dismissal from headquarters Zherkó had not remai ed n the re~iment, sa) g he was not uch a fool as to sl e t the front when he could get mo e rewards by do g n thing on th staff, and had ucceeded in ttachi himself as an orderl officer to Prince B grati n He now came to his f rmer chief w th an order from the commander of th rearguard.

"Colo el, he said, ddress g Rostó s enemy w th an air of gloomy gra ty and gl n in round t his comrades, there is an order to stop and fire th bridge.

An rder to who? asked the colonel morosely

I don t m self kn w to who, repl ed th cornet in serious to e but the p ince t ld me to go and tell the col nel that the hussars must return quickly and fire the brid~e.

Zherk was f ll wed by an officer of the

"H w this, Col el? he sho ted s h pproached. I t ld you to fire the brid~e, d now someo has gone d blundered they are all besid themsel es o there and o e can t mak an thi g t.

The colo l d liberately stopped the regi ment d turned t Nesvitsk

"I pok to m f flammabl material said he, b t ou sa d noth g bo t fin t.

B t, my dear ir said Nes tski as he drew p taki ff his cap and smoothi his hair et w th perspirati w th hi plump ha d, wasn t I t lling ou to fir th brid when n flammab e material had been p t pos ti n?"

I am not your dear M Staff Officer and ou did not t ll m to burn th b dge! I know th serv d t is m h b t rders strictl to obey Y sa d the brid would be burned, b who w uld t burn I could n t know b th hol pint

Ah, tha alw th way! said Nesv tski th wa of th hand. H w did you get her ta d h turn g Zherkó

O th sam bus ess. B t you dampl Let me w g yo o !

"You er sa g, M Staff Offi er continued the colo el ff ded t e.

Colonel, interrupted th officer of the

u.
b

the su ı u c —
kó a d he frowned.

I w ll the bridge fire, he sa d in a solemn tone as f to nn unce that n p te of ll the unpleasantness he had to endure he would still do the ri ht thi

Striking his h rse w th his lon muscular legs as if t were to blame for ev eryth ng, the col nel mo ed forward nd ordered the second squadron, that n which Rostó was servin un der Den so to return to the bridge.

"There, it s just as I thou ht, sa d Rostóv to himself. He wishes to test me! His heart contracted nd the blood rushed to his f ce. Let him see whether I am a coward! he tho ht.

Agai on all the bright f ces of the squadron the ser ous expressi n ppeared that they had worn when u der fire. Rosto watcl ed his en emy the col nel closely—to fi d n hi f ce confirmati n of hi own conj cture, but the col el did not once glance t Rostó ai d looked as he always d d when t the fro t, sol emn nd tern. Th n came the word of command.

"Look sharp! Look sharp! s. eral o es re-

not kn w ng what they were to do. The men were cross themsel es. Rostó no lo ger looked t the col nel h had no tim He was afra d of falling behi d th hussars, so much fraid that his heart tood till H ha d trem bled as h ga e his h rse t n orderly s char~e, and he felt th blood rush to his l eart w th a thud. D n so rode past him lean

Rost d d not thi k what th call fo tret hers mea t h ran o trs only t be ahead of the thers b t just t th brid~e n t looki t th ground, he cam on som ucky trodden m d, tumbled, and fell on his hands. Th others utstripped him.

At boss rides, Captai he h rd th o ce of the col el who h g dden al d, had pulled up his horse near the b d e w th a tr umpha t, cheerful face.

Rostó w p g hi muddy ha ds n hi breeches looked t his enemy nd was bout to

excitedly animated and healthy men So thinks or at any rate feels anyone who comes in sight of the enemy and that feeling gives a particular glamour and glad keenness of impression to everything that takes place at such moments

On the high ground where the enemy was the smoke of a cannon rose and a ball flew whistling over the heads of the hussar squadron The officers who had been standing together rode off to their places The hussars began carefully aligning their horses Silence fell on the whole squadron All were looking at the enemy in front and at the squadron commander awaiting the word of command A second and a third cannon ball flew past Evidently they were firing at the hussars but the balls with rapid rhythmic whistle flew over the heads of the horsemen and fell somewhere beyond them The hussars did not look round but at the sound of each shot as at the word of command the whole squadron with its rows of faces so alike yet so different holding its breath while the ball flew past rose in the stirrups and sank back again The soldiers without turning their heads glanced at one another curious to see their comrades impression Every face from Denisov s to that of the bugler showed one common expression of conflict irritation and excitement around chin and mouth The quartermaster frowned *looking at the soldiers* as if threatening to punish them Cadet Mironov ducked every t me a ball flew past Rostóv on the left flank mounted on his Rook—a handsome horse despite its game leg—had the happy air of a schoolboy called up before a large audience *for an exam nation in which he feels sure* he will d stingu sh himself He was glanc ng at everyone with a clear br ght express on as if asking them to notice how calmly he sat under fire But despite h mself on his face too that same ind cation of something new and stern sho ed round the mouth

Who s that curtseying there? Cadet Miwó nov! That s not wight! Look at me cried Denisov who unable to keep still on one spot kept turning his horse in front of the squadron

The black ha ry snub-nosed face of Váska Denisov and h s whole short sturdy figure with the sinewy hairy hand and stumpy finger in which he held the hilt of h s naked saber looked just as it usually did esp ecially toward evening when he had emptied his second bottle he was only redder than usual W th his shaggy head *thrown* back like birds when they drink pressing his spurs mercilessly into the sides of his good horse Bedouin and sitting as though falling backwards in the saddle he galloped to the other flank of the squadron and shouted in a hoarse voice to the men to look to their pistols He rode up to Kirsten The staff captain on his broad backed steady mare came at a walk to meet him His face with its long mustache was serious as always only his eyes were brighter than usual

Well what about it? said he to Denisov It won t come to a fight You ll see—we shall retire

The devil only knows what they re about! muttered Denisov Ah Wostóv he cried noticing the cadet s bright face you ve got it at last

And he smiled approvingly evidently pleased with the cadet Rostóv felt perfectly happy Just then the commander appeared on the bridge Denisov galloped up to him

Your excellency! Let us attack them! I ll dwive them off

Attack indeed! said the colonel in a bored voice puckering up his face as if driving off a troublesome fly And why are you stoppin here? Don t you see the skirmishers are retreating? Lead the squadron back

The squadron crossed the bridge and drew out of range of fire without having lost a sin le man The second squadron *that had been in* the front line followed them across and the last Cossacks quitted the farther side of the river

The two Pavlograd squadrons having crossed the bridge retired up the hill one after the other Their colonel Karl Bo dánich Schubert came up to *Denisov s squadron and rode at a* footpace not far from Rostov without takin any notice of him although they were now meet ng for the first time s nce their encounter concerning Telyanin Rostov feeling that he was at the front and in the power of a man toward whom he now admitted that he had been to blame d d not lift h s eyes from the colonel s

and that h s whole a m now was to test the cadet s courage so he drew h mself up and looked around him merr ly tl en t seemed to h m that Bogdanich rode so near in order to show him his courage Next he thought that his enemy would send the squ dron on a desperate att ck just to pun sh him—Rostóv Then he imag ned how after the attack Bogdán ch would come up to him as he lay wounded and

would magnanimously extend the hand of reconciliation.

The high-shouldered figure of Zherkov, familiar to the Pavlograds as he had but recently left their regiment, rode up to the colonel. After his dismissal from headquarters Zherkov had not remained in the regiment, saying he was not such a fool as to slave at the front when he could get more rewards by doing nothing on the staff, and had succeeded in attaching himself as an orderly officer to Prince Bagration. He now came to his former chief with an order from the commander of the rearguard.

"Colonel," he said, addressing Rostov's enemy with an air of gloomy gravity and glancing round at his comrades, "there is an order to stop and fire the bridge."

"An order to who?" asked the colonel morosely.

"I don't myself know to who," replied the cornet in a serious tone, "but the prince told me to go and tell the colonel that the hussars must return quickly and fire the bridge."

Zherkov was followed by an officer of the suite who rode up to the colonel of hussars with the same order. After him the stout Nesvitski came galloping up on a Cossack horse that could scarcely carry his weight.

"How's this, Colonel?" he shouted as he approached. "I told you to fire the bridge, and now someone has gone and blundered; they are all beside themselves over there and one can't make anything out."

The colonel deliberately stopped the regiment and turned to Nesvitski.

"You spoke to me of inflammable material," said he, "but you said nothing about firing it."

"But, my dear sir," said Nesvitski as he drew up, taking off his cap and smoothing his hair wet with perspiration with his plump hand, "wasn't I telling you to fire the bridge, when inflammable material had been put in position?"

"I am not your dear sir, Mr. Staff Officer, and you did not tell me to burn the bridge! I know the service, and it is my habit orders strictly to obey. You said the bridge would be burned, but who would it burn, I could not know by the holy spirit!"

"Ah, that's always the way!" said Nesvitski with a wave of the hand. "How did you get here?" said he, turning to Zherkov.

"On the same business. But you are damp! Let me wring you out!"

"You were saying, Mr. Staff Officer," continued the colonel in an offended tone...

"Colonel," interrupted the officer of the suite, "you must be quick or the enemy will bring up his guns to use grapeshot."

The colonel looked silently at the officer of the suite, at the stout staff officer, and at Zherkov, and he frowned.

"I will the bridge fire," he said in a solemn tone as if to announce that in spite of all the unpleasantness he had to endure he would still

[illegible]

[illegible] colonel moved forward and ordered the second squadron, that in which Rostov was serving under Denisov, to return to the bridge.

"There, it's just as I thought," said Rostov to himself. "He wishes to test me!" His heart contracted and the blood rushed to his face. "Let him see whether I am a coward!" he thought.

Again on all the bright faces of the squadron the serious expression appeared that they had worn when under fire. Rostov watched his enemy, the colonel, closely—to find in his face confirmation of his own conjecture, but the colonel did not once glance at Rostov, and looked as he always did when at the front, solemn and stern. Then came the word of command.

"Look sharp! Look sharp!" several voices repeated around him.

Their sabers catching in the bridles and their spurs jingling, the hussars hastily dismounted, not knowing what they were to do. The men were crossing themselves. Rostov no longer looked at the colonel, he had no time. He was afraid of falling behind the hussars, so much afraid that his heart stood still. His hand trembled as he gave his horse into an orderly's charge, and he felt the blood rush to his heart with a thud. Denisov rode past him, leaning back and shouting something. Rostov saw nothing but the hussars running all around him, their spurs catching and their sabers clattering.

"Stretchers!" shouted someone behind him.

Rostov did not think what this call for stretchers meant; he ran on, trying only to be ahead of the others; but just at the bridge, not looking at the ground, he came on some sticky trodden mud, stumbled, and fell on his hands. The others outstripped him.

"At both sides, Captain," he heard the voice of the colonel, who, having ridden ahead, had pulled up his horse near the bridge, with a triumphant, cheerful face.

Rostov wiping his muddy hands on his breeches looked at his enemy and was about to

run on thinking that the farther he went to the front the better But Bogdánich without look ing at or recognizing Rostóv shouted to him

Who s that running on the middle of the bridge? To the right! Come back Cadet! he cried angrily and turning to Denísov who showing off his courage had ridden on to the planks of the bridge

Why run risks Captain? You should dis mount he said

Oh every bullet has its billet answered Váska Denísov turning in his saddle

Meanwhile Nesvítski Zherkóv and the of ficer of the suite were standing together out of range of the shots watching now the small group of men with yellow shakos dark green jackets braided with cord and blue riding breeches who were swarming near the bridge and then at what was approaching in the dis tance from the opposite side—the blue uni forms and groups with horses easily recogniz able as artillery

Will they burn the bridge or not? Who ll get there first? Will they get there and fire the bridge or will the French get within grapeshot range and wipe them out? These were the questions each man of the troops on the high ground above the bridge involuntarily asked himself with a sinking heart—watching the

vítski they are within grapeshot range now

He shouldn t have taken so many men said the officer of the suite

True enough answered Nesvítski two smart fellows could have done the job just as well

Ah your excellency put in Zherkóv his eyes fixed on the hussars but still with that naive air that made it impossible to know wheth er he was speaking in jest or in earnest Ah your excellency! How you look at things! Send two men? And who then would give us the Vladímir medal and ribbon? But now even if they do get peppered the squadron may be recommended for honors and he may get a rib bon Our Bogdánich knows how things are done

There now! said the officer of the suite that s grapeshot

He pointed to the French guns the limbers of which were being detached and hurriedly removed

the moment when the first report was heard a fourth was seen Then two reports one after another and a third

Oh! Oh! groaned Nesvítski as if in fierce pain seizing the officer of the suite by the arm Look! A man has fallen! Fallen fallen!

Two I think

If I were Tsar I would never go to war said Nesvítski turning away

The French guns were hastily reloaded The infantry in their blue uniforms advanced to ward the bridge at a run Smoke appeared again but at irregular intervals and grapeshot cracked and rattled onto the bridge But this time Nesvítski could not see what was happen ing there as a dense cloud of smoke arose from it The hussars had succeeded in setting it on fire and the French batteries were now firing at them no longer to hinder them but because the guns were trained and there was someone to fire at

The French had time to fire three rounds of grapeshot before the hussars got back to their horses Two were misdirected and the shot went too high but the last round fell in the midst of a group of hussars and knocked three of them over

Rostov absorbed by his relations with Bog dánich had paused on the bridge not knowing what to do There was no one to hew down (as

as if nuts were being spilt and the hussar near est to him fell against the rails with a groan Rostov ran up to him with the others Again someone shouted Stretchers! Four men seized the hussar and began lifting him

Oooh! For Christ s sake let me alone! cried the wounded man but still he was lifted and laid on the stretcher

Nicholas Rostov turned away and as if searching for something gazed into the dis tance at the waters of the Danube at the sky and at the sun How beautiful the sky looked how blue how calm and how deep! How bright and glorious was the setting sun! With what soft glitter the waters of the distant Dan ube shone And fairer still were the faraway blue mountains beyond the river the nunnery the mysterious gorges and the pine forests

BOOK TWO

ered in mist to their summits There was peace and happiness "I should wish for nothing else, nothing, if only I were there," thought Rosto In myself alone and in that sunshine there is so much happiness; but here ...groans, suffering, fear and this uncertainty and hurry There—they are shouting again, and again are all running back somewhere, and I shall run with them, and it, death, is here above me and around Another instant and I shall never again see the sun, this water that gorge"

At that instant the sun began to hide behind the clouds, and other stretchers came into view before Rosto And the fear of death and of the stretchers, and love of the sun and of life, all merged into one feeling of sickening agitation.

O Lord God! Thou who art in that heaven, save, forgive, and protect me!" Rostov whispered.

The hussars ran back to the men who held their horses; their voices sounded louder and calmer the stretchers disappeared from sight.

"Well, friend. So you ve smelt powdah!" shouted Vaska Denisov just bo his ear

"It all ver but I am a coward—yes, cow ard!" thought Rostov and sighing deeply he took Rook, his horse, which stood resting one foot, from the orderly and began to mount.

"Was that grapeshot?" he asked Denisov

"Yes and no mistake. cried Denisov "You worked like wegular bwicks and it nasty work! An attack pleasant work. Hacking wa t the dogs. But this sort of thing is the very devil, with them shooting at you like target.

And Deniso rode up to group tha had stopped near Rost composed of the colonel, Nesvitski, Zherko and the officer from the suite.

"Well, it seems that no one has noticed, thought Rostó And this was true. No one had taken an notice, for everyone knew the sensation which the cadet under fire for the first time had experienced.

Here something for you to report, said Zherkov "See if I don get promoted to sub-lieutenancy

Inform the prince that I the bridge fired!" said the colonel triumphantly and gaily

"And if he asks bout the losses?"

A trifle said the colonel in his bass voice: two hussars wounded, and on knocked out, he added, unable to restrain happy smile, and pronouncin the phrase "knocked out ringing distinctness.

CHAPTER IX

Pursued by the French army of a hundred thousand men under the command of Bonaparte, encountering a population that was unfriendly to it, losing confidence in its allies, suffering from shortness of supplies, and compelled to act under conditions of war unlike anything that had been foreseen, the Russian army of thirty-five thousand men commanded by Kutuzov was hurriedly retreating along the Danube, stopping where overtaken by the enemy and fighting rearguard actions only as far as necessary to enable it to retreat without losing its heavy equipment. There had been actions at Lambach, Amstetten, and Melk, but despite the courage and endurance—acknowledged even by the enemy—with which the Russians fought, the only consequence of these actions was a yet more rapid retreat. Austrian troops that had escaped capture at Ulm and had joined Kutuzov at Braunau now separated from the Russian army and Kutuzov was left with only his own weak and exhausted forces. The defense of Vienna was no longer to be thought of. Instead of an offensive, the plan of which, carefully prepared in accord with the modern science of strategics, had been handed to Kutuzov when he was in Vienna by the Austrian Hofkriegsrath, the sole and almost unattainable aim remaining for him was to effect a junction with the forces that were advancing from Russia, without losing his army as Mack had done at Ulm.

On the twenty-eighth of October Kutuzov with his army crossed to the left bank of the Danube and took up position for the first time with the river between himself and the main body of the French. On the thirtieth he attacked Mortier division, which was on the left bank, and broke it up. In this action for the first time trophies were taken, banners, cannon, and two enemy generals. For the first time, after a fortnight retreat, the Russian troops had halted and after a fight had not only held the field but had repulsed the French. Though the troops were ill-clad, exhausted, and had lost third of their number in killed, wounded, sick, and stragglers, though a number of sick and wounded had been abandoned on the other side of the Danube with a letter in which Kutuzo entrusted them to the humanity of the enemy and though the big hospitals and the houses in Krems con erted into military hospitals could no longer accommodate all the sick and wounded, yet the stand made at Krems and the victory over Mortier

run on thinking that the farther he went to the front the better But Bogdánich without looking at or recognizing Rostóv shouted to him

Who s that running on the middle of the bridge? To the right! Come back Cadet! he cried angrily and turning to Denísov who showing off his courage had ridden on to the planks of the bridge

Why run risks Captain? You should dismount he said

Oh every bullet has its billet answered Váska Denísov turning in his saddle

Meanwhile Nesvítski Zherkóv and the officer of the suite were standing together out of range of the shots watching now the small group of m n ith ellow shakos dark green jackets b

breeches

and then

tance from the opposite side—the blue uniforms and groups with horses easily recognizable as artillery

Will they burn the bridge or not? Who ll get there first? Will they get there and fire the bridge or will the French get within grapeshot range and wipe them out? These were the questions each man of the troops on the high ground above the bridge involuntarily asked himself with a sinking heart—watching the

Ugh The hussars will get it hot! said Nesvítski they are within grapeshot range now

He shouldn t have taken so many men said the officer of the suite

True enough answered Nesvítski two smart fellows could have done the job just as well

Ah your excellency put in Zherkóv his eyes fixed on the hussars but still with that naive air that made it impossible to know whether he was speaking in jest or in earnest Ah your excellency! How you look at things! Send t o men? And who then ould give us the Vladimir medal and ribbon? But now even if they do get peppered the squadron may be recommended for honors and he may get a ribbon Our Bogdánich knows how things are done

There now! said the officer of the suite that s grapeshot

He pointed to the French guns the l mbers of which ere being detached and hurriedly removed

On the French side amid the groups with cannon a cloud of smoke appeared then a second and a third almost simultaneously and at the moment when the first report was heard a fourth was seen Then two reports one after another and a third

Oh! Oh! groaned Nesvítski as if in fierce pain seizing the officer of the suite by the arm Look! A man has fallen! Fallen fallen!

Two I think

If I were Tsar I would never go to war said Nesvítski turning away

The French guns were hastily reloaded The infantry in their blue uniforms advanced toward the bridge at a run Smoke appeared again but at irregular intervals and grapeshot cracked and rattled onto the bridge But this time Nesvítski could not see what was happening there as a dense cloud of smoke arose from it The hussars had succeeded in setting it on fire and the French batteries ere now firing at them no longer to hinder them but because the guns were trained and there was someone to fire at

The French had time to fire three rounds of grapeshot before the hussars got back to their horses Two were misdirected and the shot went too high but the last round fell in the midst of a group of hussars and knocked three of them over

Rostóv absorbed by his relations with Bogdánich had paused on the bridge not knowing what to do There was no one to hew do n (as he had always imagined battles to himself) nor could he help to fire the bridge because he had not brought any burning straw with him like the other soldiers He stood looking about him when suddenly he heard a rattle on the bridge as if nuts were being spilt and the hussar nearest to him fell against the ra ls with a groan Rostóv ran up to him with the others Again someone shouted Stretchers! Four men seized the hussar and began lifting him

Oooh! For Christ s sake let me alone! cried the wounded man but still he was lifted and laid on the stretcher

Nicholas Rostov turned away and as if searchi

tance

ube shone And fa rer still were the faraway blue mountains beyond the river the nunnery the mysterious gorges and the pine forests

ppeared to wish to ward off any ttempt t familiarity n th part of th Russian messe r ger

er

the m iste oom

out his n ucing t the fe l ng f ff se m medi tely turned nto ne f disdain wh ch as quite u called f His fert le mind in ees ed t him po t f ew which

hey pro y u

e tho gl t. His eyes narrowed disdainfully he ntered th room f th M nister of War w th eculiarly d l berat t ps. This fe ling f dis la n was h ght ed wh n he saw the minister eated t large table eadi som p pers and maki g pe cil otes o them d f r the first t o thre mi tes taki g o ot e of his arr al A wa ca dle tood t ach d f th m er be t b ld he d w th ts gray temples. H w t n eadi g o th er d, w th ut rais g his eyes t the pe g f th doo and the sound f footst p

"T ke this d del er t, said h to his d j ta t, ha di g him the p pers and till tak ing no f tl e pecial messe ge

Pri ce A drew f lt that either the cti f k tuzo s army ested th M nist r of War less tha any f th ther m tters he was con erned w th, h wa ted to gi th Russian pecial messe ger tha mp ess n, B t that is a mat er f perfect d ffer ce to me, he tho ght. Th m is e dr w the remai g p pers to ther rranged them nly nd the aised his h d. H had n ntellectual

l berat d hab ual t h m His face took o the st p d artificial sm le (which does t e temp t h d ts artificial y) of ma wh is to t ually rec g ma y petiti ners o ft er nother

From G eral F eld Marshal Ku uzo he asked. I hope t is good n ws? Tl ere h be an enco ter w th M rtier? A ctory? It was high time!

H took the disp ch which wa ddressed to him d bega to read t w th mournful ex pression.

Oh, my God My God! Schmidt! h ex claimed German. What calamity! What calamity

H g gl ed thro gh tl dispatch l e l d t on the table and looked at Pr nce A d e dently con ders g som thing

e l m t x l Y u say the ffair is

c

l

l

you

morrow after the parade. H wever I w ll let you kn w

The stup d smile, wh ch had left his face while he was pe king re ppeared.

Au evo Thank you ery much. His Maj esty will probably desire to see y u he dded, bow g *hi head.*

When Pri ce Andr w left the pala e l e felt that all the nterest and happ ness the ctory *had afforded him had be n now left in tl e t* differe t hands of the Min ter of War d the polite djutant. The wh le ten of l is thou l ts nstantaneously cha ged the battle se m d the memory of a emot e e t l n past.

CHAPTER X

PRI CE A DREW tayed t Brunn w th B l b n Russ an cqu nta c f his n the d plom t c serv ce.

Ah, my dear prin e! I could not ha m welcom isitor sa d B l b n he came out to meet Princ Andrew Franz, p t the p ce s h es my bedroom sa d l e to the serv nt

him settled down comf rtably b d the fire

Afte his j urn y d tl e campa n du g wh ch he had been depri ed of all the omfo t of clea l ness and ll th refi eme ts of l f Pri ce A drew felt pleasa t se of pose mo g l uri us surrou d gs uch l l d been customed t from childl ood. Bes des t was pl asant, ft r his cept n by th A tri to peak f n t n Russ n (f tl ey

particularly tro g

B l b n was man of thirty fi b ch l d f th sam orcl Pr And ew Tl y h d kn n h tl er p e usly n l e ers b g b t h d becom m re m t h n Pri And ew w A n th Kut

raised the spirits of the army considerably Throughout the whole army and at headquarters most joyful though erroneous rumors were rife of the imaginary approach of columns from Russia of some victory gained by the Austrians and of the retreat of the frightened Bonaparte

Prince Andrew during the battle had been in attendance on the Austrian General Schmidt who was killed in the action His horse had been wounded under him and his own arm slightly grazed by a bullet. As a mark of the commander in chief s special favor he was sent with the news of this victory to the Austrian court now no longer at Vienna (which was threatened by the French) but at Brunn Despite his apparently delicate build Prince Andrew could endure physical fatigue far better than many very muscular men and on the night of the battle having arrived at Krems excited but not weary with dispatches from Dokhturov to Kutuzov he was sent immediately with a special dispatch to Brunn To be so sent meant not only a reward but an important step toward promotion

The night was dark but starry the road showed black in the snow that had fallen the previous day—the day of the battle Reviewing his impressions of the recent battle picturing pleasantly to himself the impression his news of a victory would create or recalling the send off given him by the commander in chief and his fellow officers Prince Andrew was galloping along in a post chaise enjoying the feelings of a man who has at length begun to attain a long desired happiness As soon as he closed his eyes his ears seemed filled with the rattle of the wheels and the sensation of victory Then he began to imagine that the Russians were running away and that he himself was killed but he quickly roused himself with a feeling of joy as if learning afresh that this was not so but that on the contrary the French had run away He again recalled all the details of the

ing tl

off

a brig

ing in the sunshine the horses galloped quickly and on both sides of the road were forests of different kinds fields and villages

At one of the post stations he overtook a convoy of Russian wounded The Russian officer in charge of the transport lolled back in the front cart shouting and scolding a soldier with coarse abuse In each of the long German carts six or more pale dirty bandaged men were being jolted over the stony road Some of them were talking (he heard Russian words), others were eating bread the more severely wounded looked silently with the languid interest of sick children at the envoy hurrying past them

ube answered the soldier Prince Andrew took out his purse and gave the soldier three gold pieces

That s for them all he said to the officer who came up

Get well soon lads! he continued, turning to the soldiers. There s plenty to do still

What news sir? asked the officer evidently anxious to start a conversation

Good news! Go on! he shouted to the driver and they galloped on

It was already quite dark when Prince Andrew rattled over the paved streets of Brunn and found himself surrounded by high buildings the lights of shops houses and street lamps fine carriages and all that atmosphere of a large and active town which is always so attractive to a soldier after camp life Despite his rapid journey and sleepless night Prince Andrew when he drove up to the palace felt even more vigorous and alert than he had done the day before Only his eyes gleamed feverish ly and his thoughts followed one another with

casual questions that might be put to him and the answers he would give He expected to be at once presented to the Emperor At the chief entrance to the palace however an official came running out to meet him and learning that he was a special messenger led him to another entrance

To the right from the corridor Euer Hochgeboren There you will find the adjutant on duty said the official He will conduct you to the Minister of War

The adjutant on duty meeting Prince An to the

Prince Andrew before him along a corr the cabinet where the Minister of War was at work. The adjutant by his elaborate courtesy

ppeared t w h to w rd off ny tte npt t
famili rity on th p rt f tl e Russ mes en

ge
P
er b
the
t
m
as q t u call d for H i rt u
d h m po t f ew wh d

ud
se t d t bl ead g m p pers u
m k
t
arr
A1 dw th t gr y te np es.

l

e d w th he w t d t g e th Kus
p ci l mes e ge that mp ess on B t th t s
matt f perf t d ff ence to m h
th ght Th m er d ew the rema n g
p pers tog ther rr ged them ly d
th ed his he d. He h d n t ll tual
dd t cu e h d but th t nt he tur d
to Pri A d ew th firm n ll g nt pr s-
o o his f ch ged w y ev de tly d
l ber te d hab tual t h m. H f took n
the t p d art fi l m l (wh ch d es n t en
ttempt t h d ts rt fi l ty) of m wh
t ually e g many pet t oners ft
er th

high t m l
He took the d p tch wh ch w ddres ed t
him d beg to d t w th m rnful ex
pr n.
Oh, my G d! My God! Scl m d tl h ex
d m d G rm Wh t calam ty! Wh t
cal m ty!
H ggl d th gl th d p tch l e l d

t on tl e t ble a d look d t l r ce A dr v
so etl ng

goo
p
no
you
morrow fter tl e p rad H we er w
you k w
The t p d sm le wl ch had left his face
wh le he wa pe k ng reappear d
Au rev Th k you ery mu h. H M j
esty w ll prob bly des re t see y u l e added,
bow ng h l e d
When l ce And ew left the p l ce l e felt
th t ll tl e t ter st and happ ess th ct ry
had ff d d h had be n n wl ft n tl e n
d ff e t l a ds of tl e M n ter of W r a d tl e
pol t djuta t. Tl e wh le t n r f his tl u l ts
nst ta cou ly cha ged the battle seemed tl e
m mory f a re te e cent l ng past.

CHAPTER X

PRINCE A D E Y stayed t Brunn w tl B l l n
Rus cqu ntance of his n the d p l m t

w
t
th ngs n my bea or
who was ushe g B lkónsk in So u e
messe ge of ctory el? Sple d d! A d I m
h e ll as y u e

wh ch u
f l nl ess d ll the efi ements of l fe
Pr e A d w f lt pl a t f rej
m g l ous surr und gs su h l e l d
been a cu t m d to f m cl ldl ood. B l s
t w pl as t, aft r h s ccept n by the A s-
t n t p k f t n Rus n (f tl cy

p rt l ly tr g
B lib n was m f th rty fi b l l
d f tl me cl s Pr nce A d w Tl cy
l d k wn h otl er p e ly n l et rs
b g but l d b c me m e t m t wl e
l ce And ew w V nn tl l ut v

raised the spirits of the army considerably Throughout the whole army and at headquarters most joyful though erroneous rumors were rife of the imaginary approach of columns from Russia of some victory gained by the Austrians and of the retreat of the frightened Bonaparte

Prince Andrew during the battle had been in attendance on the Austrian General Schmidt who was killed in the action His horse had been wounded under him and his own arm slightly grazed by a bullet. As a mark of the commander in chief s special favor he was sent with the news of this victory to the Austrian court now no longer at Vienna (which was threatened by the French) but at Brunn Despite his apparently delicate build Prince Andrew could endure physical fatigue far better than many very muscular men and on the night of the battle having arrived at Krems excited but not weary with dispatches from Dokhturov to Kutuzov he was sent immediately with a special dispatch to Brunn To be so sent meant not only a reward but an important step toward promotion

The night was dark but starry the road showed black in the snow that had fallen the previous day—the day of the battle Reviewing his impressions of the recent battle picturing pleasantly to himself the impression his news of a victory would create or recalling the send off given him by the commander in chief and his fellow officers Prince Andrew was galloping along in a post chaise enjoying the feelings of a man who has at length begun to attain a long desired happiness As soon as he closed his eyes his ears seemed filled with the rattle of the wheels and the sensation of victory Then he began to imagine that the Russians were running away and that he himself was killed but he quickly roused himself with a feeling of joy as if learning afresh that this was not so but that on the contrary the French had run away He again recalled all the details of the victory and his own calm courage during the battle and feeling reassured he dozed off The dark starry night was followed by a bright cheerful morning The snow was thawing in the sunshine the horses galloped quickly and on both sides of the road were forests of different kinds fields and villages

At one of the post stations he overtook a convoy of Russian wounded The Russian officer in charge of the transport lolled back in the front cart shouting and scolding a soldier with coarse abuse In each of the long German

others were eating bread the more severely wounded looked silently with the languid interest of sick children at the envoy hurrying past them

Prince Andrew told his driver to stop and asked a soldier in what action they had been wounded Day before yesterday on the Danube answered the soldier Prince Andrew took out his purse and gave the soldier three gold pieces

That s for them all he said to the officer who came up

Get well soon lads! he continued turning to the soldiers. There s plenty to do still

What news sir? asked the officer evidently anxious to start a conversation

Good news! Go on! he shouted to the driver and they galloped on

It was already quite dark when Prince Andrew rattled over the paved streets of Brunn and found himself surrounded by high buildings the lights of shops houses and street lamps fine carriages and all that atmosphere of a large and active town which is always so attractive to a soldier after camp life Despite his rapid journey and sleepless night Prince Andrew when he drove up to the palace felt

vividly recalled the details of the battle, no longer dim but definite and in the concise form in which he imagined himself stating them to the Emperor Francis He vividly imagined the casual questions that might be put to him and the answers he would give He expected to be at once presented to the Emperor At the chief entrance to the palace however an official came running out to meet him and learning that he was a special messenger led him to another entrance

To the right from the corridor *Euer Hochgeboren!* There you will find the adjutant on duty said the official He will conduct you to the Minister of War

The adjutant on duty meeting Prince Andrew asked him to wait and went in to the Minister of War Five minutes later he returned and bowing with particular courtesy ushered Prince Andrew before him along a corridor to the cabinet where the Minister of War was at work The adjutant by his elaborate courtesy

appeared to w h to ward off y attempt t familiarity n the part of th Russia messen ger

Pri ce Andrew s joyous feel g was cons d erably w akened as h pproached the door f th mi ister oom. H felt ffe ded, d w th t his notici g t the feel g f offense m mediately turned nto ne f d sda n wl ch as quit uncalled f His ferl le mi d n sta tly ggested t h m po t f ew wh ch ga e him right to desp se tl djuta t and the minister Away from the smell f powder they probably thi k t easy to gain t ries! e tho l t. His eyes narrowed disdainfully he entered th room of tl e M ister f War w th peculiarly del berat t ps. This feel g of dis dai was h ght ed when he saw the m nister seated t large tabl eadi g some papers d makin n tl em, and for the first two t k e arri a mi ter d1 He t di g to th d, w th ut rais g h eyes t tl e pe g of tl e door nd the so

less than any f th other matters he was co cerned w th, h wan ed to gi th Russian pecial messe ger tha imp ess n. B that is a ma ter f perfect differ ce to me, h thought. Th minis er drew th remain g p pers together arra ed them ev ly d then raised his l ead. H had n t llectual dd rt head, but th nstant h turned

attemp ni to unually ece g ma y petiti ners n ft er her

as

hi h time

H took th dispatch which was ddressed to him and began to ead it w th mournful ex pression.

Oh, my God M God Schmidt! h ex cla med in German. What calamity! What calami y

Ha gglan ed thr u h th dispatch he la d t on tl e table d looked at Prince A drew ev dently cons der g something

Ah, what calam ty! Y u say the ff r w s decisi e? But M rt er is not captu ed. Aga he pondered. I am ery gl d u ha e b u l t good news, tl o gh Schm dt s death is l y price to pay f r the tory H M jest w ll o doubt wish to see y u, but not today I tha k yo ! Y u must ha e rest. Be t the levee t morrow after the p rade. H we er I w ll l t you kn w

The stup d sm le, wh ch had l ft his f ce while he was pe k reappeared.

Au revo Thank y u ery much. H s M j esty w ll prob bly des r to see you, l e dded, bow g his head.

Wh n Pr nce Andrew left the palace l e felt that ll the terest nd happ ess the ct ry had afforded h m had been now left n tl e d ff rent hands f the Minister of War a d the pol t djuta t. Tl e wh le ten r of l is thou l ts nsta taneously cha ed the b ttle seem d tl e memory f emote event lo past.

CHAPTER X

PRI CE A REW tayed t Bru n w tl B l l Russian cqua ntan e of his n the d plomat c serv ce.

Ah my dear prin e! I could n t ha e mo e w lcom t r sa d B l b n l e cam t to meet Pr c A drew Franz, put the p e thi gs n m bedroom, sa d l e to the serv t who was usheri Bolk nski n. So e messe ger f ctory h? Splendid A d I m tt g here ll as y u see.

Afte washi g d d ess ng Pr A d w cam to the d pl mat s luxuri us tud d sat d wn to the d n r prep red f r h m. B l b n settled down comf rtably beside th fire.

After his journey d tl e campa n d wh ch he had bee depri ed f ll the comf rts f cleanl ess and all the r fi ements f l f Prince A drew felt pleasa t se se f repose amo g l uri us surroundi s uch a l e had been ccus med to fr m childhood. Bes d t was pleasant, fter his receptio by the Aus trians, to peak f t n Russ n (f r tl ey were peaki Fr ch) at least w th a Rus who w uld, he supposed, share the general Rus ia up thy t the Austrians which was tl en part cularly stro

B lib was man f thirty fi e ba hel and of tl same circle as Pr e A drew Tl ey had kn each other p ev usly n l ters burg, b t had become more t mat wl en Pri ce A drew was n V e na th k t

Just as Prince Andrew was a young man who gave promise of rising high in the military profession so to an even greater extent Bilibin gave promise of rising in his diplomatic career He was still a young man but no longer a young diplomat as he had entered the service at the age of sixteen had been in Paris and Copenhagen and now held a rather important post in Vienna Both the foreign minister and our ambassador in Vienna knew him and valued him He was not one of those many diplomats who are esteemed because they have certain negative qualities avoid doing certain things and speak French He was one of those who liking work knew how to do it and despite his indolence would sometimes spend a whole night at his writing table He worked equally well whatever the import of his work It was not the question What for? but the question How? that interested him What the diplomatic matter might be he did not care but it gave him great pleasure to prepare a circular memorandum or report skillfully pointedly and elegantly Bilibin s services were valued not only for what he wrote but also for his skill in dealing and conversing with those in the highest spheres

Bilibin liked conversation as he liked work only when it could be made elegantly witty In society he always awaited an opportunity to say something striking and took part in a conversation only when that was possible His conversation was always sprinkled with wittily original finished phrases of general interest These sayings were prepared in the inner laboratory of his mind in a portable form as if intentionally so that insignificant society people might carry them from drawing room to drawing room And in fact Bilibin s witticisms were hawked about in the Viennese drawing rooms and often had an influence on matters considered important

His thin worn sallow face was covered with

ol u p r

face Now his forehead would pucker into deep folds and his eyebrows were lifted then his eyebrows would descend and deep wrinkles would crease his cheeks His small deep set eyes always twinkled and looked out straight.

Well now tell me about your exploits said he

Bolkónski very modestly without once mentioning himself described the engagement and his reception by the Minister of War

They received me and my news as one receives a dog in a game of skittles said he in conclusion

Bilibin smiled and the wrinkles on his face disappeared

Cependant mon cher he remarked examining his nails from a distance and puckering the skin above his left eye *malgré la haute estime que je professe pour* the Orthodox Russian army *j avoue que votre victoire n est pas des plus victorieuses*

He went on talking in this way in French, uttering only those words in Russian on which he wished to put a contemptuous emphasis.

Come now! You with all your forces fall on the unfortunate Mortier and his one division and even then Mortier slips through your fingers! Where s the victory?

But seriously said Prince Andrew we can at any rate say without boasting that it was a little better than at Ulm

Why didn t you capture one just one marshal for us?

Because not everything happens as one expects or with the smoothness of a parade We had expected as I told you to get at their rear by seven in the morning but had not reached it by five in the afternoon

And why didn t you do it at seven in the

s

in the morning

Why did you not succeed in impressing on Bonaparte by diplomatic methods that he had better leave Genoa alone? retorted Prince Andrew in the same tone

I know interrupted Bilibin you re thinking it s very easy to take marshals sittin on a sofa by the fire! That is true but still why didn t you capture him? So don t be surprised if not only the Min ster of War but also hi Most August Majesty the Emperor and Ki g Francis is not much delighted by your victory Even I a poor secretary of the Russ an E bassy do not feel any need n token of my joy to give my Franz a thaler or let hi n g with his *Liebel en* to the Prater True we have no Prater here

He looked stra ght at Prince Andrew and suddenly unwrinkled his forehead

It s now my turn to ask you why? mo

But y de r fello tl ll y respect f r tl e O tl od R a I u t say that your v to y s r ot pa t ularly ct ous.

the
de
te
ca
t k F d ı d nd tl A cno
l

the Fr n n, u — t
e e ca t hear the d t ls.
"Th ts j t t, my d a f ll w Y u see ts
f f l Tsa f Russ f r th Ortho-

as good as et j
ıs ly e fi e b gad of B n p tes tl t
ll b a ther t ry nd w ll f off some
an l B t thus so t f thı g e ms do e on
p rpo t ex us. The A chd ke Karl does
th r the A chd ke F d d d gra es
l
i

—

ctory wh t ffect w uld tl t h e on the

A t ly cup ed b t Bo p rt t
Sch bru n d th o t, ou d ar Count

the f ll gn fica e f the w ds l heard
Co t Lichtenf ls was he e th m rn g
B l bin co u ed nd h w d me lett
which th p rade f th F e ch V wa
fully described P Murat t t t l t m
bl m t Y se that y ur tory ıs ot
matter f r gr t j ca g d th t j u ca t
be e ed as sa
"Really I d t car bout th t I d n t ca
t all d Pr ce A dr w begı g to u
d rsta d th t h w f the b ttl b f e
Krems was t ally f mall mp t w
f uch e ıs as th f ll f Austri cap tal.
H w ıs t Venn was take ? Wh t f the

b dgea d tscel brated bridgel ead and I nce
Auersperg? We hea d reports that Prince Au
erspe g was defe d ng V en ar l e a d
Pr ı ce Auerspe s on th s, on our le f
t d s defend g us—d ng t very
l

bl w t p Others ıse we sl uld ı n gr
been n tl e m unta s of Bohemia and you
nd y u arm y w ul ll e p nt a bad quart r
of n l ur betwee ı two f res.
B t t ll tl doe n t m ı that tl e cam
pa gn ıs
Wel
so too
sa d t the beg n g of the campa g t w t
be your k rm l g at D rre st ı r gu
powder t all that w ll decide tl e matte b t
tl o e who de sed t, sa d B lib ı quot g ne
of h wn mc t releas g the wr nkles on l s
f el e d, d p us g "Il e o ly q est n s
what w ll c me of the meeti g between tl e En
pe r Al nde d th K g of Pruss
B l ? If Prus j tl e All es Aust s
l d w ll be f c d d tl re w ll b wa lf
t t ıs n rely a quest ı f etıl g wl c etl e
p el m a es of tl e w Ca po F m o re to
be dra n up
What extra id n ry ge ıusl P ce An
dre v suddenly xcl med cle ch g h s sm ll
l nd d str k g the t bl w tl t, d wl t
l ck them l as!
Bu p rt ? sa d B llb n ınqu r ngly
pucker g up l s f rel ead to d cate that l e
w bo t to say someth g tty Buo
parte? h repe ted cce tuatı g th u I
th k, h we ow th the l ys down laws f r
Austr t Sch nbru Il f t l f e g e
de l'u. I sh ll c t nly d pt n ın t n
nd call l m mply Bo p tel
B t j k g p t sa d P A drew do
y u really th k the can p gn o er?
Th s wh t l th k A tr a has b n m de
fool f d she ıs ı tus d to t. Sl e w ll r tal
te A d l e h b n fooled the first pl ce
becau h p ces h e be ı p ll ged—
tl y say th H ly Russ n army loots terr bly—
l rmy s dest yed l e cap tal taken nd
ll th f tl b ye of H s Sard
M jesty A d ther f e—th s s between ur
sel es—I un t ely feel th t we re be ng de
ce d my t ct t ll me of negot ations w th
W must l t h m ff th u.
F j

Just as Prince Andrew was a young man who gave promise of rising high in the military profession so to an even greater extent Bilibin gave promise of rising in his diplomatic career He was still a young man but no longer a young diplomat as he had entered the service at the age of sixteen had been in Paris and Copenhagen and now held a rather important post in Vienna Both the foreign minister and our ambassador in Vienna knew him and valued him He was not one of those many diplomats who are esteemed because they have certain negative qualities avoid doing certain things and speak French He was one of those who liking work knew how to do it and despite his indolence would sometimes spend a whole night at his writing table He worked equally well whatever the import of his work It was not the question What for? but the question How? that interested him What the diplomatic matter might be he did not care but it gave him great pleasure to prepare a circular memorandum or report skillfully pointedly and elegantly Bilibin s services were valued not only for what he wrote but also for his skill in dealing and conversing with those in the highest spheres

Bilibin liked conversation as he liked work only when it could be made elegantly witty In society he always awaited an opportunity to say something striking and took part in a conversation only when that was possible His conversation was always sprinkled with wittily original finished phrases of general interest These sayings were prepared in the inner laboratory of his mind in a portable form as if intentionally so that insignificant society people might carry them from drawing room to drawing room And in fact Bilibin s witticisms were hawked about in the Viennese drawing rooms and often had an influence on matters considered important

His thin worn sallow face was covered with deep wrinkles which always looked as clean and well washed as the tips of one s fingers after a Russian bath The movement of these wrinkles formed the principal play of expression on his face Now his forehead would pucker into deep folds and his eyebrows were lifted then his eyebrows would descend and deep wrinkles would crease his cheeks His small deep set eyes always twinkled and looked out straight.

Well now tell me about your exploits said he

Bolkónski very modestly without once mentioning himself described the engagement and his reception by the Minister of War

They received me and my news as one receives a dog in a game of skittles said he in conclusion

Bilibin smiled and the wrinkles on his face disappeared

Cependant mon cher he remarked examining his nails from a distance and puckering the skin above his left eye *malgré la haute estime que je professe pour* the Orthodox Russian army *j avoue que votre victoire n est pas des plus victorieuses*

He went on talking in this way in French, uttering only those words in Russian on which he wished to put a contemptuous emphasis.

Come now! You with all your forces fall on the unfortunate Mortier and his one division and even then Mortier slips through your fingers! Where s the victory?

But seriously said Prince Andrew we can at any rate say without boasting that it was a little better than at Ulm

Why didn t you capture one just one marshal for us?

Because not everything happens as one expects or with the smoothness of a parade. We had expected as I told you to get at their rear by seven in the morning but had not reached it by five in the afternoon

And why didn t you do it at seven in the morning

Why did you not succeed in impressing on Bonaparte by diplomatic methods that he had better leave Genoa alone? retorted Prince Andrew in the same tone

I know interrupted Bilibin you re thinking it s very easy to take marshals sitting on a sofa by the fire! That is true but still why didn t you capture him? So don t be surprised if not only the Minister of War but also his Most August Majesty the Emperor and King Francis is not much delighted by your victory Even I a poor secretary of the Russian Embassy do not feel any need in token of my joy to give my Franz a thaler or let him go with his *Liebchen* to the Prater True we have no Prater here

He looked straight at Prince Andrew and suddenly unwrinkled his forehead

It is now my turn to ask you why? *mon*

But my d r f ll tl all my espect f r tl e O tl l R ly I t say that your v t y i s not particularly ct r o s.

France and projects for peace a secret peace concluded separately

Impossible! cried Prince Andrew That would be too base

If we live we shall see replied Bilíbin his face again becoming smooth as a sign that the conversation was at an end

When Prince Andrew reached the room prepared for him and lay down in a clean shirt on the feather bed with its warmed and fragrant pillows he felt that the battle of which he had brought tidings was far far away from him The alliance with Prussia Austria s treachery Bonaparte s new triumph tomorrow s levee and parade and the audience with the Emper

now again drawn out in a thin line the musketeers were descending the hill the French

He woke up

Yes that all happened! he said and smiling happily to himself like a child he fell into a deep youthful slumber

CHAPTER XI

NEXT DAY he woke late Recalling his recent impressions the first thought that came into his mind was that today he had to be presented to the Emperor Francis he remembered the Minister of War the polite Austrian adjutant Bilíbin and last night s conversation Having dressed for his attendance at court in full parade uniform which he had not worn for a long time he went into Bilíbin s study fresh animated and handsome with his hand bandaged In the study were four gentlemen of the diplomatic corps With Prince Hippolyte Kurágin who was a secretary to the embassy Bolkónski was already acquainted Bilíbin introduced him to the others

The gentlemen assembled at Bilíbin s were young wealthy gay society men who here as in Vienna formed a special set which Bilíbin their leader called *les nôtres* This set consisting almost exclusively of diplomats evidently had its own interests which had nothing to do with war or politics but related to high society to certain women and to the official side of the

Ours

service These gentlemen received Prince Andrew as one of themselves an honor they did not extend to many From politeness and to start conversation they asked him a few questions about the army and the battle and then

Chancellor told him flatly that his appointment to London was a promotion and that he was so to regard it Can you fancy the figure he cut?

But the worst of it gentlemen—I am giving Kurágin away to you—is that that man suffers and this Don Juan wicked fellow is taking advantage of it!

Prince Hippolyte was lolling in a lounge chair with his legs over its arm He began to laugh

Tell me about that! he said

Oh you Don Juan! You serpent! cried several voices

You Bolkónski don t know said Bilíbin turning to Prince Andrew that all the atrocities of the French army (I nearly said of the Russian army) are nothing compared to what this man has been doing among the women!

Bilíbin and the rest of ours burst out laughing in Hippolyte s face and Prince Andrew saw that Hippolyte of whom—he had to admit—he had almost been jealous on his wife s account was the butt of this set

ity!

He sat down beside Hippolyte and wrinkling his forehead began talking to him about politics Prince Andrew and the others gathered round these two

The Berlin cabinet cannot express a feeling of alliance began Hippolyte gazing round with importance at the others without expressing as in its last note you understand Besides unless His Majesty the Emperor derogates from the principle of our alliance

Wait I have not finished he said to

ly one cannot impute the nonreceipt of our dis-

Wom n s man s c mp ni n

p tch f No emb r 18 That s how t w ll
d A d he rele ed B lkó ki s arm to m

bble
l B ll
ed

th sati fact n.
E rybody l ghed nd H ppolyte l der

e f atures
"Well w ge tleme s d B llb n B l
kó ki is my guest n th s ho nd n Bru n
ts lf I wa t t te t n h m a f s l c n
th ll th pleasu es of l fe here If we we e n
V t w uld be asy but her n th s
tched M ra n h le t s m re d ff cult
d I beg you ll t help me Brunn ttrac
n must be hown him. Y u ca u dert ke

y ho p t l ty ge tlem t s fr dy t e
f m t go pl ed Pr nce Andrew look ng
t his watch.
"Whe t ?
"T th Emper r
Oh! Oh! Oh!
"Well ev Bolkó k l *Au evo*
Pr l Com b k arly to d n r cr d ev
eral es. W ll t k y u n h d

k mil g
W ll talk *much as y u can yway He*
has pass f g d e es but h d es
t l k talk g h m elf d ca t d t as y u
w ll ee

CHAPTER XII

ATT LE P And w tood m g the
Austr ffi ers l h d b t ld t d th
Emp Fra m lylook d fi edly nt l is
f d j t odd d t h m w th h l g head
B t fter t w th d j tant h h d n
the p us day m usly f rmed Bol
kó ki th t th Emp des ed t g h m

an a d en e The Emperor Fran s rec ed
h m ta d g i i the m ddle f the room B
f re the con ers t n be n P nce Andrew
w tru k by the f ct that the Empe o seemed
co fu ed and blushed s f n t know i g hat
to say
"Tell me hen d d the battle beg ? he
a ked hurr edly
P e Andrew repl ed The f ll wed otl

e

t rest h m
At what o clock d d the b ttle be n a ked
the Emper r
I ca n t f rm Your Majesty t wh t
o cl k the battle began at the f t b t t
D r n te n v lere I w s ou att ck began ft
er fi e t the after oon repl ed Bolkón ki
gr w g mo e m t d de pect g th the
wo ll has a ch nce t g e a rel ble accou t
wh h he h d re dy n h s m nd of ll he knew
d had see B t the Empero sm led and n
t rrupted h m
How m ny m les

"The F en h l e b d ed the left bank?
A c rd g t the scouts the l t of them
cro ed n rafts du g the n gl t
Is the s fficie t forage i Krems?
F rag h not been uppl ed to the ex
t nt
The Emperor terrupted h m
At h t o cl ck was Ge er l Schm dt
k ll d?
At en lock I b l e e.
At e e o cl k? It rys d ry d!
The Empe th ked Pr e Andrew a d
bowed Pr e A d w w thd ew d wa m
med t ly urro ded by co t e s on ll des
E erywhe e h w f endly looks and heard
f dly w ds Y t days d j t t re
P hed h m f t l g stayed t the p l
e nd ff d h m h own l ue The M
t f W came p d c ngratul ted h m
n th M Th esa O de of the third grad
wh ch th Empe w f rri g on him The
E p es ch mbe l ted h m to see He
M j ty The l d h ss lso w h d t e
h m. H d d n t kn w wh m to an we and for
few e nd lle ted h th ghts Th n the
Russ n amb d took h m by th sh lder

France and projects for peace a secret peace concluded separately

Impossible! cried Prince Andrew That would be too base

If we live we shall see replied Bilibin his face again becoming smooth as a sign that the conversation was at an end

When Prince Andrew reached the room prepared for him and lay down in a clean shirt on the feather bed with its warmed and fragrant pillows he felt that the battle of which he had brought tidings was far far away from him The alliance with Prussia Austria s treachery Bonaparte s new triumph tomorrow s levee

now again drawn out in a thin line the musketeers were descending the hill the French were firing and he felt his heart palpitating as he rode forward beside Schmidt with the bullets merrily whistling all around and he experienced tenfold the joy of living as he had not done since childhood

He woke up

Yes that all happened! he said and smiling happily to himself like a child he fell into a deep youthful slumber

CHAITER XI

NEXT DAY he woke late Recalling his recent impressions the first thought that came into his mind was that today he had to be presented to the Emperor Francis he remembered the Minister of War the polite Austrian adjutant Bilibin and last night s conversation Having dressed for his attendance at court in full parade uniform which he had not worn for a long time he went into Bilibin s study fresh animated and handsome with his hand band

duced him to the others

The gentlemen assembled at Bilibin s were young wealthy gay society men who here as in Vienna formed a special set which Bilibin their leader called *les not es* This set consisting almost exclus vely of diplomats evidently

service These gentlemen received Prince Andrew as one of themselves an honor they did not extend to many From politeness and to start conversation they asked him a few ques-

Chancellor told him flatly that his appo nt ment to London was a promotion and that he was so to regard it Can you fancy the fi ure he cut?

But the worst of it gentlemen—I am giving Kurágin away to you—is that that man suffers and this Don Juan wicked fellow is taking advantage of it!

Prince Hippolyte was lolling in a lounge chair with his legs over its arm He began to laugh

Tell me about that! he said

Oh you Don Juan! You serpent! cried several voices

You Bolkónski don t know said Bilibin turning to Prince Andrew that all the atrocities of the French army (I nearly sa d of the Russian army) are nothing compared to what

Bilibin and the rest of ours burst out laugh

count was the butt of this set

Oh I must give you a treat Bilib n wh spered to Bolkónski Kurágin is exquisite when he discusses politics—you should see his gravity!

He sat down beside Hippolyte and wrinkling his forehead began talking to him about politics Prince Andrew and the others gathered round these two

The Berlin cabinet cannot express a feeling of alliance began Hippolyte gazing round with importance at the others without expressing as in its last note you understand Bes des unless His Majesty the Emperor derogates from the pr nciple of our alliance

Wait I have not finished he said to Prince Andrew se z ng him by the arm I believe that intervent on will be stronger than nonintervention And he paused Finally one cannot impute the nonrecec pt of our dis-

Wom n i ma mp n on

Ours

t mak Pri ce A ersperg acquainta ce In a rd those gentleme Gascons deed so be ildered him w th fi w rds d he is so flat tered by his rap dly establ hed t macy w th th Fre ch marshals, d so dazzled by the gl t f Murat ma tle d ostrich pl mes q l y *o t q d feu t bl e el q l dera t f e f su Pen em* I p te of th a im tt n f hi peech, Bil'b d d t f r ret t p use fter this m t t g e t me f ts d pp ea u n. Th F ch b ttal n rushes t the b dgehead, pikes the gu nd the bridge is taken! B t what is best of all h went his

A ersperg d sa Pri y u are b g de ei ed, here a the F ch! Murat ee g that all is l st f the serge a t is all wed t peak, turn to A ersperg w th f gned ast hm t (he is tru Gasco) and says I d t eco nize th w rld fam us Austri n d scipl e f yo all w subord t t ddress y u I k that It was trok f g h us. Prin Auersperg feels h s dign ty t take d rd rs the serge t to be arrested. Com you must wn that this affair f th Thabo B d is d l ht ful It is t exa tly t p d ty rascal ty

"It may be treachery sa d Prince A drew ri dly imagi g th gray er o ts, wo ds th sm k f g

bac

no

is —h eemed be tryin to fi d the ri ht express *C t c t d M k N us somm ma k* (It is t is b t f M ck. We ar M k d) h co cl ded, f li g that h had p od ed good p ogram, fresh that ould be epea ed. H hithert puckered brow became smooth as gn of pleasur a d w th light mil h began to exam e his nails.

Where ar y ff h sa d dd ly to Prince A drew who had isen and was go toward his room.

I am go way

"Where to

Tha th fir gets into his eyes and h f rgets that h u h to be fir t th enemy

"To the rmy

B t you meant to st y ther two d ys

But now I am off at once.

And Pri ce A drew fter gi ng d rect ons bo t I is dep t e went to h room

Do y u know m cher sa d B lib n f l l w g h m I ha e been th nk abo t you. Why are y u go g

And p oof f the co clus e ess of h s op ll the wr kles an hed from h f ce

P ce A d w looked qu r ly at h m d ga e o eply

Why e you go g I k w you th nk t your d ty to gall p back to the army now that it s d er I u dersta d th t M he t is hero sm!

N t t ll sa d P ce A drew

B t as y are ph ilosopher be con t ent one look at th e ther s de of th e quest on d y u w ll see that y r d ty on the co trary is to take care f y urself Lea e it to th e wh e l ger fit fo nyth ng el e

Y u h e n t been ordered to return a d h n t been dism ssed from here theref re you can stay nd go w th us wherever o ill l ck takes us. They say we are go t Olm tz,

erl Wher a d why ar y go n when you m ght ema he e? Y u e f ced by one of tw things d th k n o er his left temple pucke ed, ther you w ll n t reach your reg ment bef re pea e co luded or yo w ll l are defeat and disgrace w th Kutuzo wh l army

A d B l b u wri kled his temple feel ng that th dilemma wa nsol bl

I can t rgue bo t t, repl ed Pri ce Andrew coldly but h thought I am go g to sa the army

My dear fell w you e a herol sa d Bili b n.

CHAPTER XIII

Th t sa ie tr ha ng taken lea e of th

In Bru n everybody tt hed to th court wa p k g up d the hea y baggag was l ready be g disp tched t Olm tz Near Het lsd f Pri Andrew tru k th high d al g which the Russ n army was m i g

led him to the window and began to talk to him

Contrary to Bilibin s forecast the news he had brought was joyfully received A thanks giving service was arranged Kutuzov was a warded the Grand Cross of Maria Theresa and the whole army received rewards Bolkónski

ernoon having made all his calls he was re turning to Bilibin s house thinking out a let ter to his father about the battle and his visit to Brunn At the door he found a vehicle half full of luggage Franz Bilibin s man was drag ging a portmanteau with some difficulty out of the front door

Before returning to Bilibin s Prince Andrew had gone to a bookshop to provide himself with some books for the campaign and had spent some time in the shop

What is it? he asked

is again at our heels!

Eh? What? asked Prince Andrew

Bilibin came out to meet him His usually calm face showed excitement

There now! Confess that this is delightful said he This affair of the Thabor Bridge at Vienna They have crossed without striking a blow!

Prince Andrew could not understand

But where do you come from not to know what every coachman in the town knows?

I come from the archduchess I heard noth ing there

And you didn t see that everybody is pack ing up?

I did not What is it all about? inquired Prince Andrew impatiently

What s it all about? Why the French have crossed the bridge that Auersperg was defend ing and the bridge was not blown up so Murat is now rushing along the road to Brunn and will be here in a day or two

Bonaparte knows why

Bolkónski shrugged his shoulders

The French entered Vienna as I told you Very well Next day which was yesterday those gen tlemen *messieurs les maréchaux* Murat Lan nes and Belliard mount and ride to the bridge. (Observe that all three are Gascons) Gentle men says one of them you know the Thabor Bridge is mined and doubly mined and that there are menacing fortifications at its head and an army of fifteen thousand men has been or dered to blow up the bridge and not let us cross? But it will please our sovereign the Em peror Napoleon if we take this bridge so let us three go and take it! Yes let s! say the oth ers And off they go and take the bridge cross it and now with their whole army are on this side of the Danube marching on us you and your lines of communication

Stop jesting said Prince Andrew sadly and seriously This news grieved him and yet he was pleased

As soon as he learned that the Russian army was in such a hopeless situation it occurred to him that it was he who was destined to lead it out of this position that here was the Toulon that would lift him from the ranks of obscure officers and offer him the first step to fame! Lis tening to Bilibin he was already imagining how on reaching the army he would give an opin ion at the war council which would be the only one that could save the army and how he alone would be entrusted with the executing of the plan

Stop this jesting he said

I am not jesting Bilibin went on Noth ing is truer or sadder These gentlemen ride onto the bridge alone and wave white hand kerchiefs they assure the officer on duty that they the marshals are on their way to negoti ate with Prince Auersperg He lets them enter the *tête de pont* They spin him a thousand gasconades saying that the war is over that the Emperor Francis is arranging a meeting with Bonaparte that they desire to see Prince Auers perg and so on The officer sends for Auers perg these gentlemen embrace the officers crack jokes sit on the cannon and meanwhile a French battalion gets to the bridge un observed flings the bags of incendiary material into the water and approaches the *tête de pont* At length appears the lieutenant gener al our dear Prince Auersperg von Mautern himself Dearest foe! Flower of the Austrian army hero of the Turkish wars! Hostilities are ended we can shake one another s hand The Emperor Napoleon burns with impatience

The marshals

Bridgehead.

mak Pr ce Auersperg s equ tance In a "To tl e army an her two days?
ad g he

t The F ch b ttal n ru t es t e
Ye h m d the bridge s

A ersperg d says Pri ce y u re be g de-

(he is tru G co) d s ys I d t
e th w ld f mous Au t d pl e if
yo all w bord le t ddress y I'k
that It a trok of gen Pr n e Auers-
perg feel h d gn ty t take d orders the
sergea t t be rrested Com you mu t wn
that this ff l th Th bo B dge d l ht
ful It is t ex tly t p d ty n ra cal ty
"It m y be tre chery s d Pri Andrew
w dly m gi th gray o erco ts wou ds
th sm ke f gu powd th sou ds f fi
a d th gl ry th t w ted h m.
N t that e tl Tl t puts th cou t n too
bad l ht, repl ed B lib It n t treachery
rascal ty t p d ty t j t t Ulm
t is —he eem d t be try t fi d the
lte p es C e t c' t d M k. N us
mm m ké [It is t is b t of M k. We
M k d] he co cl ded, feel th t he
had p od ed good p gram f esh o e that
ould be epeated. H hitherto puck ed
brow became mooth gn f ple u nd
th l ght smile he began to xam ne hi
ails.
"Where e y ff t ? l sa d udde ly to
Pri A d w wh had se d was go g
to ard h oom.
I m go way
"Wh to
Th th fi gets his eyes d h f rgets
that h gl t be fi g t th my

Why re you go g?
And p oof of the co clus eness of h s
op n o all the wr kles an shed from h s f ce
Prince A d ew looked inqu r gly at h m
nd ga e n reply
"Wl y re y i go ng? I kn w you th nk t
y ur d ty to gallop back to the army now that
t d ge I underst nd th t. M n cher it
s hero m!
N t at ll sa d P ce And ew
But as y u re pl losopl e be a c n t
ent one look at tl e tl s de of the quest on
d you will see that yo r d ty on the co
trary i t take care of yours lf Lea e it t

n l l

l are d fe t a d d ra ew th kut whole
army
And B l b n w kled h s temple feel ng
that the d l mm wa soluble
I ca t rgue about t, repl ed Pri ce
Andrew coldly b t l e th ght I m go g to
sa e th rmy
My dear fello you are a hero! sa d B li
b n.

CHAPTER XIII

T T SA IE IT h t k l e f the
M t f War B lkó k et off t r y n the
rmy not kn w g whe l w ld f d t and
f ri g t be capt ed by th F nch on the
way to K ems.
I Bru rybody tt hed t th cou t
wa p k g up d th l ea y baggage was l
dy be g d p tch d to Olm tz. Near H t
z lsd f Pri e A d w str k tl e h gh o d
l g which th Russ n rmy wa m g

led him to the window and began to talk to him

Contrary to Bilibin s forecast the news he had brought was joyfully received A thanksgiving service was arranged Kutuzov was awarded the Grand Cross of Maria Theresa and the whole army received rewards Bolkónski was invited everywhere and had to spend the whole morning calling on the principal Austrian dignitaries Between four and five in the afternoon having made all his calls he was returning to Bilibin s house thinking out a letter to his father about the battle and his visit to Brunn At the door he found a vehicle half

Before returning to Bilibin s Prince Andrew had gone to a bookshop to provide himself with some books for the campaign and had spent some time in the shop

What is it? he asked

Oh your excellency! said Franz with diffi

Eh? What? asked Prince Andrew

Bilibin came out to meet him His usually calm face showed excitement

said

Vier

a blow!

Prince Andrew could not understand

But where do you come from not to know what every coachman in the town knows?

I come from the archduchess I heard nothing there

And you didn t see that everybody is packing up?

I did not What is it all about? inquired Prince Andrew impatiently

s now rushing along the road to Brunn and will be here in a day or two

What? Here? But why did they not blow up the bridge if it was mined?

That is what I ask you No one not even Bonaparte knows why

That s just it answered Bilibin Listen! The French entered Vienna as I told you Very well Next day which was yesterday those gentlemen *messieurs les maréchaux* Murat Lannes and Belliard mount and ride to the bridge (Observe that all three are Gascons) Gentlemen says one of them you know the Thabor Bridge is mined and doubly mined and that there are menacing fortifications at its head and an army of fifteen thousand men has been ordered to blow up the bridge and not let us

ers And off they go and take the bridge cross it and now with their whole army are on this

pleased

As soon as he learned that the Russian army was in such a hopeless situation it occurred to him that it was he who was destined to lead it out of this position that here was the Toulon that would lift him from the ranks of obscure officers and offer him the first step to fame! Lis

one that could save the army and how he alone would be entrusted with the executing of the plan

Stop this jesting he said

I am not jesting Bilibin went on Nothing is truer or sadder These gentlemen ride onto the bridge alone and wave white handkerchiefs they assure the officer on duty that they the marshals are on their way to negotiate with Prince Auersperg He lets them enter the *tête de pont* They spin him a thousand gasconades saying that the war is over that the Emperor Francis is arranging a meeting with Bonaparte that they desire to see Prince Auersperg and so on The officer sends for Auersperg these gentlemen embrace the officers crack jokes sit on the cannon and meanwhile a French battalion gets to the bridge unobserved flings the bags of incendiary material into the water and approaches the *tête de pont* At length appears the lieutenant general our dear Prince Auersperg von Mautern himself Dearest foe! Flower of the Austrian army Hero of the Turkish wars! Hostilities are ended we can shake one another s hand The Emperor Napoleon burns with impatience

The marshals

Bridgehead.

m ke P ince Auersp rg s acqua ntan e In rd those gentlemen G cons ndeed so be- ilde ed h m w th f n w ds a d he s ff c er d by his rap dly establ hed nt m cy w th m rsl ls d so dazzled by tl e gl t u l n y

t

e

u e

bnd eh d p kes th gu s d t e is taken! B t wh t best f ll h went o his e t bs d g u de th del hif l in meant in

t

La es tayed his na u. s

es d dy w se tha his general goes up to A ersp rg d say P ce y u e be g d ce d, here are th F ch Murat e ng th t all lost f the rgea t ll wed t pe k turns to A rsperg w th f gn d ast nishment (h u tru G sco) d ys I d t e ize th w rld fam u Au t an disc pl ne f y ll w s bo d t t dd ess y u l ke that! I was trok f gh n u Pr nc Auers- perg feels his d gn ty t tak nd ders the sergeant to be rrested. Come y u mu t own that this aff f th Thabo B dge s d l ht ful It is t exa tly t p d ty n ra cal ty

"It may be t each rv sa d Pr Andrew en d) magi g th gray erco ts w u ds

g.

too

hery

Ulm

b d p od ed good ep gram, t es would be epea ed. H hithert puckered brow becam mooth as gn f plea ure d h l gh m le h began to exam e his na ls.

"Wher y u ff t h sa d dde ly t Pri A drew wh had isen and was go g toward his oom.

I am go way

"Wher to

Tha th ir fi gets into his eyes and h f rgets tha h g t to be fi th enemy

To the army

But y u meant to stay an ther two days?

But n w I am ff at once

And Pri ce An lrew after gi g d rections about l lep rt e we t to h s room

D you know m che sa d B lib n f l f w ng f im *I h e been d k n about you* Why re y u go ng?

An l n proof of the c nclus eness f h s op n nall the wrinkles an hed from l s f ce

Pr nc Andrew looked nqu ngly at h m and ga e no r ply

Why e y go ng? I kn w you th nk t your duty t g llop ba k to the army n w that it s in d e I understand that. *Mon cl* t is heroism!

N t at all sa d Pr nce Andrew

But a you are a pl l sopher be *con* t ent one look at tl e oth r s de of the q est n and y u w ll see th t y ur d ty *on the con trary* is t take care of yo rself Leave it to n l nger fit f anyth n else

d

re

all

litz,

id I

ki

n id

er! Where and why e y g you m ght rema n he e? Y u are faced by o e of *f m le*

army

A d B l'b n unwr kled h *temple feel ng* that the d lemma wa i sol ble

I ca n t argue bout t repl ed P nce A drew coldly b t l tho ght I am go ng to sa e th rmy

My d ar fellow you a e a hero! sa d B li b n

CHAPTER XIII

y to k t us.

I Bru e erybody att cl ed t the co t wa p ki g p and the l e vy b ggage was l dy be g d p tched t Olmutz Ne Het lsd rf Pri e A d ew struck tl e h *ghro d* l g wh ch the R ss army was movi g

with great haste and in the greatest disorder The road was so obstructed with carts that it was impossible to get by in a carriage Prince Andrew took a horse and a Cossack from a Cossack commander and hungry and weary making his way past the baggage wagons rode in search of the commander in chief and of his own luggage Very sinister reports of the position of the army reached him as he went along and the appearance of the troops in their disorderly flight confirmed these rumors

Cette armee russe que l or de l Angleterre a transportee des extrémités de l univers nous allons lui faire éprouver le meme sort—(le sort de l armee d Ul n) He remembered these words in Bonaparte s address to his army at the beginning of the campaign and they awoke in him astonishment at the genius of I h ~ ı

\ ʊ ɩɩs

He looked with disdain at the endless confused mass of detachments carts guns artillery and again baggage wagons and vehicles of all kinds overtaking one another and blocking the muddy road three and sometimes four abreast From all sides behind and before as far as ear could reach there were the rattle of wheels the creaking of carts and gun carriages the tramp of horses the crack of whips shouts the urging of horses and the swearing of soldiers orderlies and officers All along the sides of the road fallen horses were to be seen some flayed some not and broken down carts beside which solitary soldiers sat waiting for something and aga n soldiers straggling from their companies crowds of whom set off to the neighboring villages or returned from them dragging sheep fowls hay and bulging sacks At each ascent or descent of the road the crowds were yet denser and the din of shouting more incessant. Soldiers floundering knee-deep in mud pushed the guns and wagons themselves Whips cracked hoofs slipped traces broke and lungs were strained with shouting The officers directing the march rode backward and forward between the carts Their voices were but feebly heard amid the uproar and one saw by their faces that they despaired of the possibility of checking this disorder

Here is our dear Orthodox Russian army

thoug! ɒ

Wı

chief ɔuɩ ɩ p to a convoy Directly opposite to him came a strange one horse vehicle evidently rigged up by soldiers out of any available materials and looking like something between a cart a cabriolet and a *calèche* A soldier was driving and a woman enveloped in shawls sat behind the apron under the leather hood of the vehicle Prince Andrew rode up and w –

when I

ate shr ı in the vehicle An officer in charge of transport was beating the soldier who was driving the woman s vehicle for trying to get ahead of others and th

a ɓ ı er thin arms from under the woolen shawl cried

Mr Aide de camp! Mr Aide-de camp! For heaven s sake Protect me! What will become of us? I am the wife of the doctor of the S n ~

Mr Aide de camp! Help me! What does it all mean? screamed the doctor s wife

Kindly let this cart pass Don t you see it s a woman? said Prince Andrew riding up to the officer

The officer glanced at him and without replying turned again to the soldier *I ll teach* you to push on! Back!

Let them pass I tell you! repeated Prince Andrew compressing his l ps

And who are you? cried the officer turn n on him with tipsy rage who are *you?* Are you in command here? Eh? I am commander here not you! Go back or I ll flatten you into a pancake repeated he This expression evidently pleased him

That was a nice snub for the little aide de camp came a voice from behind

Prince Andrew saw that the officer was in that state of senseless tipsy rage when a man does not know what he is say ng He saw that his championship of the doctor s wife in her queer trap m ght expose him to what he dreaded more than anything n the world—to ridicule but I s nstinct urged h m on Before the officer f nished h s sentence I rince Andre v I is face d storted with fury rode up to him and

That Russ an army h ɪ h s be n I r ght fro ı the ends of th ea th I y E gl I g II e sh II ca e to hare the same fate—(the fate of the army at Ulm)

ra ed h d g wh p

k d ly let—them—pass!

The offi er flour hed his rm and hast ly rode y

It all the f lt f these fell ws n the st ff that there this disorder he muttered. Do as y l ke

k es rode was th s hu

se e l dismustu u u mil u cene h galloped on t the ll e here he was t ld that the ommander n ch ef as.

O reach g the vill ge h d mou ted and t t the eare t h se t nd ng t rest f d try to

sco dr ls nd ot an army h as g as he w t up to the w d w of the f rst hous whe f m l ar o e called h m by ame

Eh Come qu k he shouted Pri A d ew w Nes

g t

Where is th comma d ch f? a ked Bolkó ki.

Her that h w red th dju ta t.

"Well t tru th t t s p c nd cap tul u ked Nesvitsk

I was go g t k y u I know n th g except th t t was ll I could do t get h e

A d w my dear boy! It terribl ! I wa wro g t l gh t M k w e gett g t t ll worse sa d N itski. B t t d wn d h som th g t t.

N w n t b bl t fi de th y u b g gag yll g els n w Pri c And God ly k whe e y ur m P ter d th other d; tant.

"Wher e headquarters?

"W t pend the ght n Zn m.

"W ll I ha got ll I eed to p cks f tw horses d N itsk They made up spl d d p cks f me—fit to cross th B he-

m m unt n with It s a bad looko t old fell ! But what s the matter w th you You mu t be ill t shi er l ke that he ad led no- ti g that Prince Andrew winced a at an elec t c sh ck

Pr ce A drew

c r

"What is the comma der n ch ef do here? he a ked

I can t make out at all sa d Nes itsk

h ted d lle r s r Cossacks who we e talk ng l udly tog tl e Prince A d ew ntered the p sage Kut z h m elf le wa told was n the h use wi l Pr nce B grat ón and Weyrotl er Weyrother w the Austr a general who had ucceeded Schm dt. In the passage l ttle Ko ló k was qu tt g on h s l eel n fro t of cle k The lerk w th cuff tu ed up wa hast l wr t g t t b t rned bott m upwa ds. Ko l k fa looked w rn—he too had e dently t sl pt ll n ht. H gl nced t Prin e A d ew a d d d n t en nod to h m

Seco d l e h ey uwritten t? h co t nued d ct t ng t th clerk "The K ev Gren ad rs Pod l n

O e ca t w te so f t you l n sa l the clerk gl nc ng gr ly nd dis espe tfully t Ko ló k

Th gh the doo c me the sou d of K tu s c excited d d ssatisfi d terrupted by th a unf m l c From the d of thes ces th natt t e wa Ko ló k looked t h m th d esp tful m ne f the exh ted le k th f t th t the clerk nd K ló k we e sq tu g on th floo by b so to th mm d r l f d from tl n y l ght f the Cossacks hold th h rses n a th w nd w Pri And e f lt th t m th g mporta t d dis st wa bo t to happ n

He turned to K lóvsk w th ur e t q es- t s.

Immedi tely Pr nce s d K zl k D s- po t o f Bagrat ón

Wh t bout cap tul t n?

N th g of th sort O ders e issued f b ttl

Pr e A d ew m d t w d tl e doo f m

with great haste and in the greatest disorder The road was so obstructed with carts that it was impossible to get by in a carriage Prince Andrew took a horse and a Cossack from a Cossack commander and hungry and weary making his way past the baggage wagons rode in search of the commander in chief and of his own luggage Very sinister reports of the position of the army reached him as he went along and the appearance of the troops in their disorderly flight confirmed these rumors

Cette armee russe que l or de l Angleterre a transportee des extrémités de l univers nous allons lui faire éprouver le meme sort—(le sort de l arm e d Ulm) He remembered these words in Bonaparte s address to his army at the beginning of the campaign and they awoke in

he thought Well if need be I shall do it no worse than others

He looked with disdain at the endless confused mass of detachments carts guns artillery and again baggage wagons and vehicles of all kinds overtaking one another and blocking the muddy road three and sometimes four abreast From all sides behind and before as far as ear could reach there were the rattle of wheels the creaking of carts and gun carriages the tramp of horses the crack of whips shouts

flayed some not and broken down carts beside which solitary soldiers sat waiting for some

ging sheep fowls hay and bulging sacks At each ascent or descent of the road the crowds were yet denser and the din of shouting more incessant Soldiers floundering knee deep in

cers directing the march rode backward and forward between the carts Their voices were but feebly heard amid the uproar and one saw by their faces that they despaired of the possibility of checking this disorder

Here is our dear Orthodox Russian army

That Rı ss n a my l l ha l en l ought f m the ends f tl e rtl l y L gl l g ld sl all cai e to hare th same f t —(the fate of the army at Ulm)

thought Bolkónski recalling Bilibin s words.

Wishing to find out where the commander in chief was he rode up to a convoy Directly opposite to him came a strange one horse vehicle evidently rigged up by soldiers out of any available materials and looking like something between a cart a cabriolet and a *calèche* A soldier was driving and a woman enveloped in shawls sat behind the apron under the leather hood of the vehicle Prince Andrew rode up and was just putting his question to a soldier when his attention was diverted by the desperate shrieks of the woman in the vehicle An officer in charge of transport was beating the soldier who was driving the woman s vehicle for trying to get ahead of others and the strokes of his whip fell on the apron of the equipage The woman screamed piercingly Seeing Prince Andrew she leaned out from behind the apron and waving her thin arms from under the woolen shawl cried

Mr Aide de camp! Mr Aide de camp! For heaven s sake Protect me! What will become of us? I am the wife of the doctor of the Seventh Chasseurs They won t let us pass we are left behind and have lost our people

I ll flatten you into a pancake! shouted the angry officer to the soldier Turn back with your slut!

Mr Aide de camp! Help me! What does it all mean? screamed the doctor s wife

Kindly let this cart pass Don t you see it s a woman? said Prince Andrew riding up to the officer

Let them pass I tell you! repeated Prince Andrew compressing his lips

And who are you? cried the officer turn n on him with tipsy rage who are *you?* Are you in command here? Eh? I am commander here not you! Go back or I ll flatten you into a pancake repeated he This expression evidently pleased him

That was a nice snub for the little aide de camp came a voice from behind

Prince Andrew saw that the officer was in that state of senseless tipsy rage when a man does not know what he is saying He saw tl at h s champ onship of the doctor s wife in her queer trap might expose him to what he dreaded more than a ything in tl e world—to ri li cule but his i stinct urged him on Before the officer f nished his sentence Pr nce Andrew l i face distorted with fury rode u to him and

t Z m was horter nd better than the ro d f tle Russ from Krems to Z a m.
The n ht he ece ed the news Kutuzo
r ora S a gu rd four thousa d

his rear a d f h s e eu u
Fre ch h wa t d l y them as l as poss ble
Kutuz h ms lf w th ll h s transport took the road t Znaim.
M rch th rty m les th t rmy n ght
II hod

I t mad th poss po
f th tr k that h d pl ed the V en b dge
th ha ds f the F h w th ut fight led
S o n milar

tra g raloccup g th d a ed po t be l eved M rat em ssary d r t red, lea g B gratió di exposed A ther em s-sary rode to th Russian l ne to u ce the

report th ff h had rece ed.
A tru was Ku sol chance of ga n g tim g B grat ón exh usted troop some rest, d l tt th tran port nd h vy
y (wh se m em nts were co cealed from the Fre h) d a f b t o tage eare Znaim. Th ffer f tru ga th n
l d q u pected chance of sa ng

tl e army On rece g tl e news he immed ate-ly d p tched Adj t nt Ge eral Wintz nger od wh was n attend nce on h m to the en emy camp Wi tz gerode was not merely t agree t the truce but also to offer t rms of ca
d
y
e
e
h usted and hu gry ne au e
co red tl is mo eme t of the transport a d of the whole army h d to rema n st t n ry n face of an enemy e ght times a stro g as t self

Kut o se pect t o s that the proposal of cap tulat on (wh ch were n no way b nd ng) m ght g e time f r p rt of the tran port to p ss d lso that Murat s mistak w ul l ery soon be disco ered pro ed correct. As soon as Bon p rte (who was at S h nbru n s teen
l bn e ece ed Murat s d s-
t
l

Schö bru th Bruma re 8o
t ht o clock the m rn

To Pr ce M r
I ca t find w d t pres t you m d s-plea S comm d ly m dva ce gu rd d h gh t rra ge rm t ce w thout my rder You ca g m t lose th fru ts f ca p gn. Break the rm tice immed tely

Th R ssia Empero de-d camp m post Officers re n h g when they h no po ers this h d Th t let themsel es be tr cked t th cross g f th V enna bridge y re l g yo rself be tr ked by d -d -camp f h Empe

NAPOLEO

Bon part dj tant ode f ll gallop with

d ed d warmed tl ems l es cooked the porr dge f tl first time f three d y nd n t of them k ew o mag ed what was in tore f him.

whence voices were heard Just as he was going to open it the sounds ceased the door opened and Kutuzov with his eagle nose and puffy face appeared in the doorway Prince Andrew stood right in front of Kutuzov but the expres

out recognizing him

Well have you finished? said he to Kozlóvski

One moment your excellency

Bagratión a gaunt middle aged man of medium height with a firm impassive face of Oriental type came out after the commander in chief

I have the honor to present myself repeated Prince Andrew rather loudly handing Kutuzov an envelope

Ah from Vienna? Very good Later later!

Kutuzov went out into the porch with Bagratión

Well good by Prince said he to Bagratión My blessing and may Christ be with you in your great endeavor!

His face suddenly softened and tears came into his eyes With his left hand he drew Bagratión toward him and with his right on which

s

I

him on the neck instead

Christ be with you! Kutuzov repeated and went toward his carriage Get in with me said he to Bolkonski

Your excellency I should like to be of use here Allow me to remain with Prince Bagratión s detachment

Get in said Kutuzov and noticing that Bolkónski still delayed he added I need good officers myself need them myself!

They got into the carriage and drove for a few minutes in silence

There is still much much before us he said as if with an old man s penetration he understood all that was passing in Bolkónski s mind If a tenth part of his detachment returns I shall thank God he added as if speaking to himself

Prince Andrew glanced at Kutuzov s face only a foot distant from him and involuntarily noticed the carefully washed seams of the scar near his temple where an Ismail bullet had pierced his skull and the empty eye socket Yes he has a right to speak so calmly of those men s death thought Bolkonski

That is why I beg to be sent to that detachment he said

Kutuzov did not reply He seemed to have forgotten what he had been sayin and sat plunged in thought Five minutes later gently swaying on the soft springs of the carriage he turned to Prince Andrew There was not a trace of agitation on his face With delicate irony he questioned Prince Andrew about the details of his interview with the Emperor about the remarks he had heard at court concerning the Krems affair and about some ladies they both knew

CHAPTER XIV

On November 1 Kutuzov had received through a spy news that the army he commanded was in an almost hopeless position The spy reported that the French after crossing the bridge at Vienna were advancing in immense force upon Kutuzov s line of communication with the troops that were arriving from Russia If Kutuzov decided to remain at Krems Napoleon s army of one hundred and fifty thousand men would cut him off completely and surround his exhausted army of forty thousand and he would find himself in the position of Mack at Ulm If Kutuzov decided to abandon the road connecting him with the troops arriving from Russia he would have to march with no road into unknown parts of the Bohemian mountains defending himself against superior forces of the enemy and abandoning all hope of a junction with Buxhowden If Kutuzov decided to retreat along the road from Krems to Olmutz to unite with the troops arriving from Russia he risked being forestalled on that road by the French who had crossed the Vienna bridge and encumbered by his baggage and transport having to accept battle on the march against an enemy three times as strong who would hem him in from two sides

Kutuzov chose this latter course

The French the spy reported having crossed the Vienna bridge were advancing by forced marches toward Znaim which lay sixty six miles off on the line of Kutuzov s retreat If he reached Znaim before the French there would be great hope of saving the army to let the French forestall him at Znaim meant the exposure of his whole army to a disgrace such as that of Ulm or to utter destruction But to forestall the French with his whole army was impossible The road for the French from Vi

a d p t the r horses t a trot to escape from th poiso ed atm ph re f th se l tri es

l là l crême t de c mps mo eu le p s d th taff offc r

They rode p th ppo te h ll From there the F ch c uld alr dy be s e P ce A drew st pped a d began exam ng th pos t

'That s r b ttery sa d th st ff ffice n

Pr e

bley rs lf f th r

The st ff ffice m n d b h nd a d Pr nce At drew od l e

Th f the f rw rd d e er the enemy he w t, th m d rly nd che f l we

p he u ai u u

e P e A d ew cam t the F enchl es th m e fide t was th pp ra ce of our troop Th sold rs n th greatc ts wer ra ged l es the s rgea t majo d com p y ffi ers we e t g th me p k g th l tm ch t the bs d t ll g h m t h ld h s h d up Sold rs catte ed o er the h l pl e w dragg g lo s and bru hwood d w e bu ld ng h lt rs w th merry ch tter d l ghter u d th fires sat th rs dres ed d d es ed dry g th r shirts d leg b d me di g boot o o e ts d cr wd g d th b lers d po r d cookers I e mp ny d ner w s eady d th sold rs w ga g e gerly t th te m bo l w t g t ll th mple h ch q *t rm ter rgea t w carry g n* ood bowl t ffi wl t n a l g be f h helter h d be tasted

A ther comp y lucky f t ll th comp h d odk cr wded d pock m ked b d h ld d g t m j wh t'lt g keg filled e f e th th can tee l d l ld t h m Th sold ers l fted th ca t l ds t th l p w th e e t l f es empt ed them roll g th dk n tl m hs d walked w y f m h erg t m j w th l ght d e p es l k g th l p d w p g them n th l es f

'Th pl gets camp P

the greatcoats. All the r faces were as serene as f ll th s were h ppen ng at home awa t ng pe cef l encampme t nd n t w thin s gl t of the enemy b f re n ct o t wl cl t least h lf f them would be left o tl e field. After p ss a chasseur reg ment a d i tl e l e of the k e grenad ers—f e fell ws b y w tl s m ilar pea ef l affa rs—ne r tl shelter f the reg ime tal comm de h gher th d d ff rent from tl e tl ers Pr nc A d ew ca e t in fro t f a pl toon of gren l ers before whom

So th sw h ng so d of the trokes a d tl e desperate but un t ral cream c t ued

Go go nl d the m j

A yo goff ce w th bew ld red nd p ned e p e n on h f ce tepped aw y fr m tl e n n nd looked rou d q gly t the d j tant a he rode by

Pr nce Andrew h g reached tl e fro t l e rode lo g t O fro t l e and th t of tl enemy were f p t the r l t and left fl nks b t the ter where the m w tl flag f tru h d p ed th t m rn g th l es we so near t th r that th men could ee o the s f es and speak t one ther Bes des the ld rs who f rm d th p ck t l e n e th d there we e m y cu ou o look rs wh jest g a d l ugh g tared at the

Look! Look the el o sold was say t ther po t to a Ru m keteer wh h d go up t th p ket l w tl n of f e d was rap dly d ex t dly talk g t F h gre d H k t h m j bber gl F e n t t? It ll th F nchy ca d t ke p up w th h m Th n w Sid l

'W t a b t d l st It fi l w ed Sid wh was cons d ed an dept t F ench

CHAPTER XV

BETWEEN three and four o clock in the after noon Prince Andrew who had persisted in his request to Kutuzov arrived at Grunth and reported himself to Bagratión Bonaparte s adjutant had not yet reached Murat s detachment and the battle had not yet begun In Bagratión s detachment no one knew anything of the general position of affairs They talked of peace but did not believe in its possibility others talked of a battle but also disbelieved in the nearness of an engagement Bagratión knowing Bolkónski to be a favorite and trusted adjutant received him with distinction and special marks of favor explaining to him that there would probably be an engagement that day or the next and giving him full liberty to remain with him during the battle or to join the rearguard and have an eye on the order of retreat which is also very important

However there will hardly be an engagement today said Bagration as if to reassure Prince Andrew

If he is one of the ordinary little staff dandies sent to earn a medal he can get his reward just as well in the rearguard but if he wishes to stay with me let him he ll be of use here if he s a brave officer thought Bagratión Prince Andrew without replying asked the prince s permission to ride round the position to see the disposition of the forces so as to know his bearings should he be sent to execute an order The officer on duty a handsome elegantly dressed man with a diamond ring on his forefinger who was fond of speaking French though he spoke it badly offered to conduct Prince Andrew

On all sides they saw rain soaked officers with

lows said the staff officer pointing to the soldiers The officers don t keep them in hand And there he pointed to a sutler s tent they crowd in and sit This morning I turned them all out and now look it s full again I must go there Prince and scare them a bit It won t take a moment

Yes let s go in and I will get myself a roll and some cheese said Prince Andrew who had not yet had time to eat anything

Why d dn t you mention it Prince? I would have offered you something

They dismounted and entered the tent Several officers with flushed and weary faces were sitting at the table eating and drinking

Now what does this mean gentlemen? said the staff officer in the reproachful tone of a man who has repeated the same thing more than once You know it won t do to leave your posts like this. The prince gave orders that no one should leave his post Now you Captain and he turned to a thin dirty little artillery officer who without his boots (he had given them to the canteen keeper to dry) in only his stockings rose when they entered smiling not altogether comfortably

Well aren t you ashamed of yourself Captain Tushin? he continued One would think that as an artillery officer you would set a good example yet here you are without your boots! The alarm will be sounded and you ll be in a pretty position without your boots! (The staff officer smiled) Kindly return to your posts gentlemen all of you all! he added in a tone of command

Prince Andrew smiled involuntarily as he looked at the artillery officer Túshin who silent and smiling shifting from one stockinged foot to the other glanced inquiringly with his large intelligent kindly eyes from Prince Andrew to the staff officer

The soldiers say it feels easier without boots said Captain Tushin smiling shyly in his uncomfortable position evidently wishing to adopt a jocular tone But before he had finished he felt that his jest was unacceptable and had not come off He grew confused

Kindly return to your posts said the staff officer trying to preserve his gravity

[illegible]

but extremely attractive

The staff officer and Prince Andrew mounted their horses and rode on

Having ridden beyond the village continually meeting and overtaking soldiers and officers of various regiments they saw on their

despite the cold wind swarmed in these earthworks like a host of white ants spadefuls of red clay were continually being thrown up from behind the bank by unseen hands Prince Andrew and the officer rode up looked at the entrenchment and went on again Just behind it they came upon some dozens of soldiers continually replaced by others who ran from the entrenchment. They had to hold their noses

and p t the h rses t a trot to escape from th poiso ed atm phere f these l t nes.

F la l' même t des c mp mons eu le p ce said th staff fficer

They rode up the ppos t h ll From there th French could al eady be n Pr n An drew t pped and began exam n ng th pos tion

"That s ur b ttery sa d the st ff ffice n dicat th h ghest po nt It s n charge f th q ee fell w we saw w th ut h boots. You ca see rythin from the e l t s go there Pri e.

"Tha k you ery much I w ll go n al ne sa d Pri ce Andrew w h t d h ms lf of this staff ffice s c mp ny please don t trou ble rself further

Th taff fficer r m ned b h d nd Prince . d ew rod n l e

Th f rther f rwa d nd ne r the enemy re ent, th m derly d cheerful were the troop Th gre test d sorder d dep es su had bee the b ggage tra n h had p ss d that morn ng n th Z m ro d e en m les a ay from th F ch. At Gru th lso som p prehens d l rm could be f lt, but th e earer Pri e A drew cam to h F enchl es the more fid t was th ppearan of ou troops. Th sold ers n th ir greatcoats w r he sergea ts m j d com

th r greatco ts. All the r faces were as serene s f ll th s were h ppen ng t home wa t n pe eful e campment, and not w th n s ht of the nemy bef e n ction in wh h at least half of them would be left the field. After pass n chasseur egime t and n the l es of the K e grenad ers—f e fell ws bu y w th s m l r peaceful aff rs—near the shelter of the reg imental commander h her than nd d ffer nt from th otl ers Prince An lrew came out in fro t f platoon f gren d ers bef re whom l y n ked man Two sold ers held h m wh le tw others were fl u l n th e r sw tches and st k g h m regul ly n h bare b ck Th e st t major wa man sh eked u turally A tout major wa p c p and d wn the l ne and regardles of th screams kept repeat n

It s ham f r sold er to steal sold er must be honest, h n rable d bra e but if he robs his fell ws there s no h r n h m he scoundr l Go on Go on

So the sw sh g so d f the strokes nd th e desperate but unnatural screams co t nued.

Go go n sa d the majo

d na ned m the the ad

e front th t f

l rode along t. O the enemy w f part on the r ht and left fl ks but n the c ter where the men w th a fl g f tru e h d p ssed that m rn n the l nes were so near tog ther that th m n could see others f ces a d peak to one an ther

over th h l pl wer ur oo brushwood d were bu ldi g shelt rs w th merry cha t d l u hter ro d th fires sat thers, dressed d u dressed dryi g th shirts and leg b nds m d boots r e coats d crowd rou d th boilers nd por ridg cookers. I e mp n d r was read and th sold rs w ga g eagerly t th eam g boiler wa t ll th sampl hich quart rmas er sergea t was carry n n wooden bo l an ffi er wh sa n low be fore his sh lter had bee tas ed.

Another comp y lucky f t ll th comp es had odka, cr wded round pock marked, broad hould ed sergea t major who tiltin keg, filled f er n ther th ca teen lids h ld t h m Th soldiers lifted t can een lids to th l ps w th revere tial fa es, empt ed th em, roll th odka their mouths, d walked a from th sergeant major w th brightened p ess ns l ck g their lips and w p g them n th leeves of

"This is pleasu on gets in camp Prince.

Bes des the sold ers wh f rmed the p ket l ne n e ther de there were many curi u onlook rs who jestu and l ugh sta ed t the tra ge f n nem es.

S n earl m rn —desp te n njunct n not to pproach th p ket l e—th ff ers had been u ble t keep ht-seers way The sold ers f rm the p cket l ne l ke sh wmen exhib t g curios ty n l nger looked t the F e ch b t pa d tt ntio t th s ht seers d grew weary wa ting t be rel e ed. Prin e An drew halted to ha e look t the French.

Look Look there o e sold er was say n

F isn t t. It all the F nchy can do t keep up w th him. There n w S d ro !

W t b t d listen It fi el wered S doro who was cons dered dept at F ench

The soldier to whom the laughers referred was Dolokhov Prince Andrew recognized him and stopped to listen to what he was saying Dolokhov had come from the left flank where their regiment was stationed with his captain

Now then go on go on! incited the officer bending forward and trying not to lose a word of the speech which was incomprehensible to him More please more! What s he saying?

Dólokhov did not answer the captain he had been drawn into a hot dispute with the French grenadier They were naturally talking about the campaign The Frenchman confusing the Austrians with the Russians was trying to prove that the Russians had surrendered and had fled all the way from Ulm while Dólokhov maintained that the Russians had not surrendered but had beaten the French

We have orders to drive you off here and we shall drive you off said Dólokhov

Only take care you and your Cossacks are ne

vórov said Dólokhov

Qu est ce qu il chante? asked a Frenchman

It s ancient history said another guessing that it referred to a former war The Emperor will teach your Suvara as he has taught the others

Bonaparte began Dolokhov but the Frenchman interrupted him

Not Bonaparte He is the Emperor! *Sacré nom* cried he angrily

The devil skin your Emperor

And Dolokhov swore at him in coarse soldier s Russian and shouldering his musket walked away

Let us go Iván Lukích he said to the captain

Ah that s the way to talk French said the picket soldiers Now Sidorov you have a try!

Sídorov turning to the French winked and began to jabber meaningless sounds very fast *Kari mala tafa safi muter Kaská* he said trying to give an expressive intonation to his voice

Ho! ho! ho! Ha! ha! ha! ha! Ouh! ouh!

thing left to do seemed to be to unload their muskets explode the ammunition and all return

O i us f a d ser

What s he s g ng bout?

home as quickly as possible

But the guns remained loaded the loopholes in blockhouses and entrenchments looked out just as menacingly and the unlimbered cannon confronted one another as before

CHAPTER XVI

HAVING RIDDEN round the whole line from right flank to left Prince Andrew made his way up to the battery from which the staff officer had told him the whole field could be seen Here

at a sign resumed his measured monotonous pacing Behind the guns were their limbers and still farther back picket ropes and artillerymen s bonfires To the left not far from the farthest cannon was a small newly constructed wattle shed from which came the sound of officers voices in eager conversation

It was true that a view over nearly the whole Russian position and the greater part of the enemy s opened out from this battery Just facing it on the crest of the opposite hill the village of Schon Grabern could be seen and in

self and behind the hill To the left from that village amid the smoke was something resembling a battery but it was impossible to see it clearly with the naked eye Our right flank was posted on a rather steep incline which dominated the French position Our infantry were stationed there and at the farthest point the dragoons In the center where Tushin s battery stood and from which Prince Andrew was surveying the position was the easiest and most direct descent and ascent to the brook separating us from Schon Grabern On the left our troops were close to a copse in which smoked the bonfires of our infantry who were felling wood The French line was wider than ours and it was plain that they could easily outflank us on both sides Behind our position was a steep and deep dip making it difficult for artillery and cavalry to retire Prince Andrew took out his notebook and leaning on the cannon sketched a plan of the position He made some notes on two points intending to mention them to Bagration His idea was first to concentrate all the artillery in the center and secondly to withdraw the cavalry to the other side of the dip Prince Andrew being always

ear the commande n cl ef clo ely f llow the mass m eme ts nd general orders nd co ta tly tudy g h st r cal ccounts of battles. lu t rnly p ctured to h ms lf the co rse f ev ts n tle forthcom n ct n n broad tl e He m g ed only mporta t poss b l t es If the e emy atta ks the r l t fl k h sa d to h mself the K gre ad ers d the Pod3l k chasseurs m t h ld the r po u till eserves from the ente c me up I that case the dragoo co ld successfully m k a fla k c u teratt ck If they tta k our cente ha the c t batt ry thu h h gro d h ll w thdraw the left fl nk unde ts co er a d t eat to the d p by echel ns. So he easo ed. All th t m he h d been be s d th gu h l d he d th ces of tl e offi ers d u tly b t s ften h pp ns l d n t understood w rd of wh t they we e say S ddenly h w er l wa tru k by a ce

t seemed to P e A d w f m l o e wh t I say s th t f t were poss ble to k w wh t bey d death n f us w uld be afra d l t That so f end.

A ther y ge nterrupted h m Afra d t y u can t escape t yh w

All the sam fr d Oh y u clev peopl sa d a th d m ly ce nt rrupt m them both Of co rse y u t ll ry men ar ery w e b cause u can t ke everyth g l w th y — odka nd cks.

A d the ner f th m nly e d tly f try ff l gh d.

Yes is fra d conti ued the first speak er h of the f m l o ce O e is fra d of th k w tl t wh t t s. Wh t er w may say bo t th soul go g to th ky we kn w th n ky b t nly n tm phe

Th m ly ga n terrupted th a tillery ffi e

"W ll sta d us s me of y ur herb odk Tush t sa d

"Why th ht Pr ce Andrew th t the capta wh ood p th utler hut w th b t h boots H ecog d the or eable ph losophizin w th pleas e.

"Som herb odk ? Certa ly! sa d Tush B t till t e f t l fe

H did ot fi h. Just then th was a whis- d th air ear r d nea er f ter nd lo der l der d f te ca n b ll as f t had t fi ished say wh was essary th dded t the gr d ear the hed w th superhum n f rce throwi g up a mass of e rth. The grou d seemed to gro n t the terr ble im pact.

And mmed ately T shin with short pipe n the corner of h s m uth and l s k nd intel l gent face rather pale ru l ed out of the shed f ll wed by tl e own r of the manly vo ce a dash g i f try ff c who hurried ff to his comp y butt n g up h coat s l e ran.

CHAPTER XVII

Mounti g is ho se ga n Pr ce And ew l h ry look g at the puff f m yes ran ly saw of the Fr nch now way d nd that there really was a b tt ry t the left The sm ke bo e it h d not y t d spersed. Two m u ted F en hmen prob bly djutants were gall p n up th h ll. gr w g l uder nd m re f equent E de tly o gun h d begun t reply F om the bott m of the sl pe here th parley had t k n place came th repo t of m ketry

Lemarr had ju t arri ed t gallop with Bo part s stern letter a d M rat, hum l ted d xious to expiate l f ult had t ce m ed his f est tt k th center a d outfl nk both th Russ n w gs h p g be- f even d bef re the rri al of the Em- p ror to crush the contemptibl d tachment th t tood bef e h m.

It ha begun He t is thou ht Prince And w f l the blood ru h to h heart But where nd h w will my T ul n prese t ts lf?

P ss between the comp es th t had been eat porridg nd dri k odk a quarter of h bef he saw rywhere the same rap d m eme t of sold rs f rm ranks nd ge th mus ts eady d on all the f es he cognized th ame e erness th t filled his h rt. It has begun! Here t s d d f l but nj yabl ! was wh t tl f e of each sold d ch offi e se med t say

B f e he had reach d the emba km nts that wer be g thrown up h saw in the l ght of th dull utumn even g m u ted men com

ing toward him The foremost wearing a Cossack cloak and lambskin cap and riding a white horse was Prince Bagratión Prince Andrew stopped waiting for him to come up Prince Bagratión reined in his horse and recognizing Prince Andrew nodded to him He still looked ahead while Prince Andrew told him what he had seen

The feeling It has begun! Here it is! was seen even on Prince Bagratión s hard brown face with its half closed dull sleepy eyes Prince Andrew gazed with anxious curiosity at that

himself as he looked Prince Bagratión bent his head in sign of agreement with what Prince Andrew told him and said Very good! in a tone that seemed to imply that everything that took place and was reported to him was exactly what he had foreseen Prince Andrew out of breath with his rapid ride spoke quickly Prince Bagration uttering his words with an Oriental accent spoke particularly slowly as if to impress the fact that there was no need to hurry However he put his horse to a trot in the direction of Tushin s battery Prince Andrew followed with the suite Behind Prince Bagratión rode an officer of the suite the prince s personal adjutant Zherkóv an orderly officer the staff officer on duty riding a fine bobtailed horse and a civilian—an accountant who had asked permission to be present at the battle out of curiosity The accountant a stout full faced man looked around him with a naive smile of satisfaction and presented a strange appearance among the hussars Cossacks and adjutants in his camlet coat as he jolted on his horse with a convoy officer s saddle

He wants to see a battle said Zherkóv to Bolkónski pointing to the accountant but he feels a pain in the pit of his stomach already

Oh leave off! said the accountant with a beaming but rather cunning smile as if flattered at being made the subject of Zherkóv s joke and purposely trying to appear stupider than he really was

It is very strange *mon Monsieur Prince* said the staff officer (He remembered that in French there is some peculiar way of addressing a prince but could not get it quite right)

By this time they were all approaching Tushin s battery and a ball struck the ground in front of them

What s that that has fallen? asked the accountant with a naive smile

A French pancake answered Zherkóv

So that s what they hit with? asked the accountant How awful!

He seemed to swell with satisfaction He had hardly finished speaking when they again heard an unexpectedly violent whistling which suddenly ended with a thud into something soft

f f flop! and a Cossack riding a little to their right and behind the accountant crashed to earth with his horse Zherkóv and the staff officer bent over their saddles and turned their horses away The accountant stopped facing the Cossack and examined him with attentive curiosity The Cossack was dead but the horse still struggled

Prince Bagratión screwed up his eyes looked round and seeing the cause of the confusion turned away with indifference as if to say Is it worth while noticing trifles? He reined in his horse with the ease of a skillful rider and slightly bending over disengaged his saber which had caught in his cloak It was an old fashioned saber of a kind no longer in general use Prince Andrew remembered the story of Suvórov giving his saber to Bagratión in Italy and the recollection was particularly pleasant at that moment They had reached the battery at which Prince Andrew had been when he examined the battlefield

Whose company? asked Prince Bagratión of an artilleryman standing by the ammunition wagon

He asked Whose company? but he really meant Are you frightened here? and the artilleryman understood him

Captain Tushin s your excellency! shouted the red haired freckled gunner in a merry voice standing to attention

Yes yes muttered Bagratión as if considering something and he rode past the limbers to the farthest cannon

see the gunners who had seized it straining to roll it quickly back to its former position

hand placed a charge in the cannon s mouth The short round shouldered Captain Tushin stumbling over the tail of the gun carriage moved forward and not noticing the general looked out shading his eyes with his small hand.

"Lift t two lines m e nd t w ll b just n ht, cried h n a feeble o ce t wh h he tried t mpart da h n n te ll s ted t h weak figur Number Tw he sq eaked. F're Med édev!

m d Tu h ra n

tended to ca n n d the vall y i cendiary ball t the ll ge f Sch n Gra bern is ble just ppos te fro t f which large masses of Fre ch were d ancin

a d

ood said B grat

s report, d bega del berat ly to examine th hol b ttlefi ld e tended bef re h m. The French had d a ed earest n our ht. B low the height which the K ev regim nt was ta ed, the h ll w where th ri ulet fl ed, the soul-stirri g roll g and crackl g f musk try was heard, d much f rther t th right beyond th dragoon th offi er of th ui e po nted t B grat ón French column that was utfl k g us. T th l ft th horizo was bou ded by the dj ce t wood. Pri ce B gratión rd ed tw battal o from the ce ter to be ent t re f rc the right flank. Th fficer of th uit tured t re mark to the pri ce that f these battali n went ay th guns w uld ema n w th ut upport. Pri B ratión urned to th officer nd w th his dull eyes looked t him n len e. It eemed to Prince A drew that th fficer' emark was jus d that eally n swer uld be made to B t t that m ment n djutant gall ped p w th message from th commander of th egimen n the holl w d news that immense masses f the Fre ch w re mi d wn upon them d that his eg men wa disorder

g a u se a j u to u ut uous w th rders to ttack th F ench. But this d j ta t returned half n h ur later with th ews that th comma der of th dragoons had ready retreated beyo d th dip n th ground, as heavy fire had been pe ed on him d h was los g men useles l d so had hast ed t throw som sharpshooters into th wood.

Very good said B grat ón

As h was lea g the b ttery firing wa heard o the left also nd s t was too f r to th left fl nk f h m to l a e t me to go there h mself Pr ce Bagrat ón se t Zl rk v t tell the gen eral n comm d (the o e who h d p raded h reg ment bef re Kutu t Braunau) that m ret e t as qu ckly as poss ble behi d

tent ly to B grat ón s colloqu es e comma di g fficers nd th orders he gi e them and t his surprise found th t no rders were re lly gi en, but that Pri ce B grat n tr ed t make it ppear that veryth ng d e by necess ty by cident, o by the will of ub rd n te comma ders was d n f n t by h d ect comm d, t least acco d w th his i te t ns. Princ A drew n t ced, h wever that tho h what happened wa due to chance a d wa ndependent of the commander w ll ow t the tact Bagrat ón howed h s p es nce was ery aluable Officers who pproached him w th d turbed counten nces becam calm sol d ers nd offi ers greeted h m ga ly grew mo cheerful n his p esence nd we e ev dently nxious to displ y the r courag bef re him.

CHAPTER XVIII

PRINCE B GRATIÓN h g reached the h h est po nt of ur right flank, began ridi g d wn h ll to where the roll of musketry was heard b t wh on cco t f th moke n th g could be seen The nea er they got to the hol l w th less they could see but th more they f lt the nearness f th ctual battl field. They began t meet wou ded men O e w th bleed g head nd no cap was b n dragged l g by tw sold ers who upported h m un d the arms. Ther was gurgle h thro t nd h wa p tt ng blood. A b llet had ev dently hit him n th throat mouth. Another was walk g turdily by himself b t w th ut his musket, groa g al ud nd sw ging his arm which had just been hurt, while blood from t was treamin o er his greatcoat s from bottle. H had that moment been wounded d h f sh wed fear rathe than sufferin Cross road they desc nded a teep cl d saw several m n ly n the gro nd they lso m t crowd of sold ers som of whom wer unwounded. Th soldiers were ascending th hill breathing hea ily nd de

ing toward him The foremost wearing a Cossack cloak and lambskin cap and riding a white horse was Prince Bagratión Prince Andrew stopped waiting for him to come up Prince Bagratión reined in his horse and recognizing Prince Andrew nodded to him He still looked ahead while Prince Andrew told him what he had seen

The feeling It has begun! Here it is! was seen even on Prince Bagratión s hard brown face with its half-closed dull sleepy eyes Prince Andrew gazed with anxious curiosity at that impassive face and wished he could tell what if anything this man was thinking and feeling at that moment Is there anything at all behind that impassive face? Prince Andrew asked himself as he looked Prince Bagratión bent his head in sign of agreement with what Prince Andrew told him and said Very good! in a tone that seemed to imply that everything that took place and was reported to him was exact

*accent spoke particularly slowly as if to im*press the fact that there was no need to hurry However he put his horse to a trot in the direction of Tushin s battery Prince Andrew followed with the suite Behind Prince Bagratión rode an officer of the suite the prince s personal adjutant Zherkóv an orderly officer the staff officer on duty riding a fine bobtailed horse and a civilian—an accountant who had asked permission to be present at the battle out of curiosity The accountant a stout full *faced man looked around him with a naive* smile of satisfaction and presented a strange

Cossacks and

h s

He wants to see a battle said Zherkóv to Bolkónski pointing to the accountant but he feels a pain in the pit of h s stomach already

Oh leave off! said the accountant with a beaming but rather cunning smile as if flattered at being made the subject of Zherkóv s joke and purposely trying to appear stupider *than he really was*

It is very strange *mon Monsieur Prince* said the staff officer *(He remembered that in* French there is some peculiar way of addressing a prince but could *not get it quite right)*

By this time they were all approaching Tushin s battery and a ball struck *the ground in* front of them

What s that that has fallen? asked the accountant with a naive smile

A French pancake answered Zherkov

So that s what they hit with? asked the accountant How awful!

He seemed to swell with satisfaction He had *hardly finished speaking when they again heard* an unexpectedly violent whistling which suddenly ended with a thud into something soft

f f flop! and a Cossack riding a little to

still struggled

Prince Bagratión screwed up his eyes looked

his horse with the ease of a skillful rider and slightly bending over disengaged his saber which had caught in his cloak It was an old *fashioned saber of a kind no longer in general* use Prince Andrew remembered the story of Suvórov giving his saber to *Bagratión in Italy* and the recollection was particularly pleasant at that moment They had reached the battery at which Prince Andrew had been when he examined the battlefield

Whose company? asked Prince Bagratión of an artilleryman standing by the ammunition wagon

He asked Whose company? but he really *meant Are you frightened here?* and the artilleryman understood him

Captain Tushin s your excellency! shouted the red haired freckled gunner in a merry voice standing to attention

Yes yes muttered Bagratión as if considering something and he rode past the limbers to the farthest cannon

As he approached a ringing shot issued from it deafening him and his suite and in the smoke that suddenly surrounded the gun they could see the gunners who had seized it straining to roll it quickly back to its former position

hand placed a charge in the cannon s mouth

ra e, be tepped l htly w th his muscular legs

F rward w th God sa d Bagrat ón in a

looked now at the peri offi ers nd now back t th men w th t los n step h s wh le p erful body turn flexibly It was f all the powers f his soul were co centrated on passi g th comma der in the best possible

sacks d muskets marched in tep d each f these hundreds of soldiers eemed to be repeatin t himself t each alternate tep "Lef left l ft A f t majo kirted bush, puffin and fall out of step a sol dier who had fallen behind, his face showin arm t his defection, ran t trot, pa t t

beat th gro d unison eemed to hear *left left l ft*

"Well do e, lads said Prince Bagratió

Glad to do ur best, y ur ex'l n lency cam co fused bo t from th ranks. A mo rose soldier march on th l f turned his eyes B eratió he sh ed w th n ex press on that seemed say "W kn w that oursel es Another without looki g rou d, as though feari g t elax, sho ted w th his mouth wid pen d passed n.

Th der was gi en to halt d d wn knap sa ks.

Bagratio rode rou d th ranks that had ma ched pas h m and di mounted. He ga e t reins to Cossack took ff d ha ded over his fel coat, stret hed his legs, d set his cap stra ht. The head f th French column w h ts fficers leading, ppeared from bel w the hill.

happ ess.

Th French were lready near Prince Andrew walk bes de Bagration could clearly dist gu h the r ba dol ers red epaulets, nd ev n th fa es. (He dist ctly saw an old Fre ch officer who w th ga tered legs and turned-out toes limbed the h ll w th d fficul

the u even ranks, and mu ket shots sou ded. Several l o men fell, amo g them th ro d faced off cer who had marched so ga ly nd compla tly B t t the moment the first report was heard, B gratión looked round a d sho ted. Hurrah

Hurrah—ah —ah ra lo g-drawn bo t from our ra ks d pass g B grati n nd rac ing one ther they rushed n an irregular but joyous d eager crowd down the h ll t th disordered foe.

CHAPTER XIX

The att ck f the S th Chasseurs secured the

u te. The French were putt out the fi e wh ch the wi d was spreadi g d thus ga e us t me to retreat. The reti ement f th ce ter to the other d of the dip n the grou d t th rear wa hurried d o sy b t th different ompa es d d n t get m ed. B t o l ft—wh ch co ted of the A v d Podólsk fantry and the Pá lograd hussars—wa multaneously ttacked d o tflanked by su per r French forces u der La es nd was thrown to confus n. Bagrati n had sent Zherkó to th general comma din that left flank with rders t retreat immedi tely

Zherkó n t remo g his hand from his cap turned his horse bo t nd gall ped off. B t no soo er had he left Bagratión than hi courage f iled him. He was seized by panic a d could not go where t was da gerous.

H g reached th left flank, nstead f going to th front where the fir was, h began to look f r the general and his staff wher they

spite the general s presence were talking loud ly and gesticulating In front of them rows of gray cloaks were already visible through the smoke and an officer catching sight of Bagratión rushed shouting after the crowd of retreating soldiers ordering them back Bagratión rode up to the ranks along which shots crackled

soldiers were blackened with it Some were using their ramrods others putting powder on the touchpans or taking charges from their pouches while others were firing though who they were firing at could not be seen for the smoke which there was no wind to carry away A pleasant humming and whistling of bullets were often heard What is this? thought Prince Andrew approaching the crowd of soldiers It can t be an attack for they are not moving it can t be a square—for they are not drawn up for that

The commander of the regiment a thin feeble looking old man with a pleasant smile—his eyelids drooping more than half over his old eyes giving him a mild expression rode up to Bagratión and welcomed him as a host welcomes an honored guest He reported that his regiment had been attacked by French cavalry and that though the attack had been repulsed he had lost more than half his men He said

hour to the troops entrusted to him and could not say with certainty whether the attack had been repulsed or his regiment had been broken up All he knew was that at the commence

ry! and our men had begun f ring They were still f ring not at the cavalry which had disappeared but at French infantry who had come into the hollow and were firing at our men Prince Bagration bowed his head as a sign that this was exactly what he had desired and expected Turning to his adjutant he ordered him to bring down the two battalions of the Sixth Chasseurs whom they had just passed

p resolut on you see on the face o a on a hot day takes a final run before plung ng into the water The dull sleepy express on was no longer there nor the affectation of profound thought The round steady hawk s eyes

The commander of the regiment turned to Prince Bagratión entreating him to go back as it was too dangerous to remain where they were Please your excellency for God s sake! he kept saying glancing for support at an officer of the suite who turned away from him There you see! and he drew attention to the bullets whistling singing and hissing continually around them He spoke in the tone of entreaty and reproach that a carpenter uses to a gentleman who has picked up an ax We are used to it but you sir will blister your hands He spoke as if those bullets could not kill him

ply he only gave an order to cease firing and re form so as to give room for the two approaching battalions While he was speakin the curtain of smoke that had concealed the

moving about on it opened out before them All eyes fastened involuntarily on this French column advancing against them and winding down over the uneven ground One could already see the soldiers shaggy caps distinguish the officers from the men and see the standard flapping against its staff

They march splendidly remarked some one in Bagratión s suite

The head of the column had already descended into the hollow The clash would take place on th s side of it

The remains of our regiment which had been

est to Bagratio n arched a company commander a fine round faced man with a stupid and happy expression—the s me man who had

the commander

With the self sat sfaction of a man on pa

"If only they would be qu ck thought Ros- t feel ng that t last the time had come to experien e the joy f n attack of which he had so of heard from his f ll w hussars.

"F ward, w th God, lads ra g out Deni so s ro ce. At two t f ward

The horses cro ps bega t sway n the fro t l e. Rook pulled t the reins d started f his own ccord.

Bef re him, o the right, Rostó saw th front lines of his hussars d till farther head dark line wh ch he could not see d tincti but took to be th e emy Shots could be heard, b t som way off.

Faster! came th w rd of comma d, and Rostó f lt Rook flanks droop n as he broke into gall p

Ros ov anticipated his horse m ements and becam more nd mo e elated. He had noticed a sol tary tree head f him. Thi tree had been n th m ddle of th l e that had seemed so terribl —and now he had crossed tha line and not only wa ther thi ter rib e, but everythin was becomi g more nd more happy and nimated. Oh, how I will slash t him thought Ros ó gripp the hil f his saber

Hur ah came roa of o ces. Let come my way now thought Rost driving his spurs to Rook and lettin him go t full gallop so that h utstripped th others. Ahead, th enemy was already is ble. Suddenly somethin l ke birch broom seemed to sweep er the squadr n. Ros raised his saber ready to trik but t that nstant the trooper N kite k who was gallop g ahead, shot way from him, d Rost felt as n dream tha he co ti ued to be carried forward with unnatural speed but yet stayed on th same spot. From behind him Bondarchuk, n hussar he k ew jol ed gainst him nd looked angrily t him. Bondarchuk horse swerved and galloped past.

How is I am not mo I ha e fallen, I am killed. Rostó asked d nswered t th sam nsta H was lo e in th middl of fi ld. Instead f th movi g horses d hussars backs, he saw nothi bef re him but th motionless earth and the ubbl around him. There was warm blood under his arm. "No I am wounded nd th horse is killed. Rook tried to rise on his f relegs but f ll back, p n- ng his rider le Blood was flowi from his head h struggled b t could n t rise Ros also tried to rise but f ll ba k, his sabretache having become entangled n the saddle. Where our men were, a d where the French, he d d not kn w There was no one near

H n disentan led his leg he rose. "Where on which s de, was now the l ne that had so sharply divided the two armies he asked h mself and could not nswer Can someth h h happened to me? he wondered as he

exam neu us u

find blood on t. Ah, here are people coming, h thou ht joyfully seeing some men running t ward him. "They will help me In front cam a man wearin trange shako d a bl e cloak swarthy sunburned, nd with a hooked nose Then came two more and many more run n behi d. O of them sa d something tran e not n Russian. In m ng the hi dmost of these men weari g milar hakos was a Rus n hussar He was be ng held b the rms d his horse was bein led beh nd him.

It must be of ours prisoner Yes. Can t be that they will take me too Who re these men?" thou ht Rost scarcel belie h s eyes. Can they be F ench H looked at th pproachi Frenchmen, and though but a moment bef re h had been gall p n t get t

n g Can they be comin t m And wh lo kill me Me whom everyone is so f nd of He remembered his m ther lo f him, nd his

realizin the tuation. Th f remost French man the on with th hooked nose wa l ready so close that the express n of his f ce could be seen And th excited, l en f ce of that man his bayonet hangi down holdi g his b eath, nd running so lightly frightened

show t catchplay now and th n turning his

could not possibly be and so did not deliver the order

The command of the left flank belonged by seniority to the commander of the regiment Kutuzov had reviewed at Braunau and in which Dólokhov was serving as a private But the command of the extreme left flank had been assigned to the commander of the Pávlograd regiment in which Rostóv was serving and a m s understanding arose The two commanders were much exasperated with one another and long after the action had begun on the right flank and the French were already advancing were engaged in discussion with the sole object of offending one another But the regiments both cavalry and infantry were by no means ready for the impending action From privates to general they were not expecting a battle and were engaged in peaceful occupations the cavalry feeding the horses and the infantry collecting wood

He higher iss dan I in rank said the German colonel of the hussars flushing and addressing an adjutant who had ridden up so let him do what he vill but I cannot sacrifice my hussars Bugler sount ze retreat!

But haste was becoming imperative Cannon and musketry mingling together thundered on the right and in the center while the capotes of Lannes sharpshooters were already seen crossing the milldam and forming up within twice the range of a musket shot The general in command of the infantry went toward his horse with jerky steps and having mounted drew himself up very straight and tall and rode to the Pávlograd commander The commanders met with polite bows but with secret malevolence in their hearts

I peg of you yourself not to m x in vot is not your pus ness! suddenly replied the irate colonel If you vere in the cavalry

I am not in the cavalry Colonel but I am a Russian general and if you are not aware of the fact

Quite avare your excellency suddenly shouted the colonel touch ng his horse and turning purple n the face Vill you be so goot to come to ze front a d see dat zis position iss no goot? I don t vish to desstroy my men for your pleasure!

You forget yourself Colonel I am not considering my own pleasure and I won t allow it to be said!

Taking the colonel s outburst as a challen e to his courage the general expanded his chest and rode frowning beside him to the front line as if their differences would be settled there amongst the bullets They reached the front several bullets sped over them and they halted in silence There was nothing fresh to be seen from the line for from where they had been before it had been evident that it was impossible for cavalry to act among the bushes and broken ground as well as that the French

tle each vainly trying to detect signs of cow ard ice in the other Both passed the examination successfully As there was nothing to be said and neither wished to give occasion for it to be alleged that he had been the first to leave the range of fire they would have remained there for a long time testing each other s courage had it not been that just then they heard the rattle of musketry and a muffled shout almost behind them in the wood The French had attacked the men collecting wood in the copse It was no longer possible for the hussars to retreat with the infantry They were cut off from the line of retreat on the left by the French However inconvenient the position it was now necessary to attack in order to cut away throu h for themselves

The squadron in which Rostóv was servin had scarcely time to mount before it was halted facing the enemy Again as at the Enns brid e there

the er

line o

l ne separating the living from the dead—lay between them All were conscious of this unseen line and the question whether they would cross it or not and how they would cross it, ag tated them all

The colonel rode to the front angrily gave some reply to questions put to him by the officers and like a man desperately insisting on having his own way gave an order No one said anything defin te but the rumor of an attack spread through the squadron The command to form up rang out and the sabers wh zzed as they were drawn from their scabbards Still no one moved The troops of the left flank nfantry and hussars alike felt that the commander did not himself know what to do and this irresolut on communicated itself to the men

"If only they would be quick!" thought Rostov, feeling that at last the time had come to experience the joy of an attack of which he had so often heard from his fellow hussars.

"Forward, with God, lads!" rang out Denisov's voice. "At a trot, forward!"

The horses' croups began to sway in the front line. Rook pulled at the reins and started of his own accord.

Before him, on the right, Rostov saw the front lines of his hussars and still farther ahead a dark line which he could not see distinctly but took to be the enemy. Shots could be heard, but some way off.

"Faster!" came the word of command, and Rostov felt Rook's flanks drooping as he broke into a gallop.

Rostov anticipated his horse's movements and became more and more elated. He had noticed a solitary tree ahead of him. This tree had been in the middle of the line that had seemed so terrible—and now he had crossed that line and not only was there nothing terrible, but everything was becoming more and more happy and animated. "Oh, how I will slash at him!" thought Rostov, gripping the hilt of his saber.

"Hurrah!" came a roar of voices. "Let anyone come my way now," thought Rostov driving his spurs into Rook and letting him go at a full gallop so that he outstripped the others. Ahead, the enemy was already visible. Suddenly something like a birch broom seemed to sweep over the squadron. Rostov raised his saber, ready to strike, but at that instant the trooper Nikitenko, who was galloping ahead, shot away from him, and Rostov felt as in a dream that he continued to be carried forward with unnatural speed but yet stayed on the same spot. From behind him Bondarchuk, an hussar he knew, jolted against him and looked angrily at him. Bondarchuk's horse swerved and galloped past.

"How is it I am not moving? I have fallen, I am killed!" Rostov asked and answered at the same instant. He was alone in the middle of a field. Instead of the moving horses and hussars' backs, he saw nothing before him but the motionless earth and the stubble around him. There was warm blood under his arm. "No, I am wounded and the horse is killed." Rook tried to rise on his forelegs but fell back, pinning his rider's leg. Blood was flowing from his head; he struggled but could not rise. Rostov also tried to rise but fell back, his sabretache having become entangled with the saddle. Where our men were, and where the French, he did not know. There was no one near.

Having disentangled his leg, he rose. "Where, on which side, was now the line that had so sharply divided the two armies?" he asked himself and could not answer. "Can something bad have happened to me?" he wondered as he got up: and at that moment he felt that something superfluous was hanging on his benumbed left arm. The wrist felt as if it were not his. He examined his hand carefully, vainly trying to find blood on it. "Ah, here are people coming," he thought joyfully, seeing some men running toward him. "They will help me!" In front came a man wearing a strange shako and a blue cloak, swarthy, sunburned, and with a hooked nose. Then came two more, and many more running behind. One of them said something strange, not in Russian. In among the hindmost of these men wearing similar shakos was a Russian hussar. He was being held by the arms and his horse was being led behind him.

"It must be one of ours, a prisoner. Yes. Can it be that they will take me too? Who are these men?" thought Rostov, scarcely believing his eyes. "Can they be French?" He looked at the approaching Frenchmen, and though but a

...ing? Can they be coming at me? And why? To kill me? Me whom everyone is so fond of?" He remembered his mother's love for him, and his family's, and his friends', and the enemy's intention to kill him seemed impossible. "But perhaps they may do it!" For more than ten seconds he stood not moving from the spot or realizing the situation. The foremost Frenchman, the one with the hooked nose, was already so close that the expression of his face could be seen. And the excited, alien face of that man, his bayonet hanging down, holding his breath, and running so lightly, frightened Rostov. He seized his pistol and, instead of firing it, flung it at the Frenchman and ran with all his might toward the bushes. He did not now run with the feeling of doubt and conflict with which he had trodden the Enns bridge, but with the feeling of a hare fleeing from the hounds. One single sentiment, that of fear for his young and happy life, possessed his whole being. Rapidly leaping the furrows, he fled across the field with the impetuosity he used to show at catchplay, now and then turning his

good natured pale young face to look back A shudder of terror went through him No bet

round the first man changed his run to a walk and turning shouted something loudly to a comrade farther back Rostov paused No there s some mistake thought he They can t have wanted to kill me But at the same time his left arm felt as heavy as if a seventy pound weight were tied to it He could run no more The Frenchman also stopped and took aim Rostóv closed his eyes and stooped down One bullet and then another whistled past him He mustered his last remaining strength took hold of his left hand with his right and reached the bushes Behind these were some Russian sharp shooters

CHAPTER XX

THE INFANTRY regiments that had been caught unawares in the outskirts of the wood ran out of it the different companies getting mixed and retreated as a disorderly crowd One sol dier *in his fear uttered the senseless* cry Cut off! that is so terrible in battle and that word infected the whole crowd with a feeling of panic

Surrounded! Cut off! We re lost! shouted the fugitives

The moment he heard the firing and the cry from behind the general realized that some thing dreadful had happened to his regiment and the thought that he an exemplary officer of many years service who had never been to blame might be held respons ble at headquar ters for negl gence or ineff ciency so staggered him that forgetting the recalcitrant cavalry colonel his own dignity as a general and above all quite forgetting the danger and all regard for self preservation he clutched the crupper of his saddle and spurring h s horse galloped to the regiment under a *hail* of bullets which fell around but fortunately missed h m His o ie desire was to know what was happ ening and at any cost correct or remedy the mistake if he had made one so that he an exemplary officer of twenty two years service who had never been censured *should not be held to* blame

tles had arrived Would this disorderly crowd of soldiers attend to the voice of their commander

his furious purple countenance distorted out of all likeness to his former self and the fl

fate of battles was evidently culminating in a panic

The general had a fit of coughing as a result of shouting and of the powder smoke and stopped in despair Everything seemed lost But at that moment the French who were attack

selves in the copse It was Timókhin s com pany which alone had maintained its order in the wood and having lain in ambush in a ditch now attacked the French unexpectedly Tim khin armed only with a sword had rushed at the enemy with such a desperate cry and such *mad drunken determination that taken* by surprise the French had thrown down their muskets and run Dolokhov running beside Timókhin killed a Frenchman at close quar ters and was the first to seize the surrendering French officer by his collar Our fugitives re *turned the battalions re formed and the* French who had nearly cut our left flank in half were for the moment repulsed Our re serve units were able to join up and the fight was at an end The regimental commander and Major Ekon mov had stopped beside a *bridge letting the retreating companies* pass by them when a soldier came up and took hold of the commander s st rrup almost leaning against him The man was wearing a bluish coat of broadcl th he had no knapsack or cap his head was bandaged and over his shoulder a *French munition pouch* was slung *He had* an officer s sword in h s hand The soldier was pale his blue eyes looked impudently into the commander s face and his lips were sm ling

said Dolokhov po nting to the French sword and pouch I have taken an off cer prisoner I stopped the company Dólokhov breathed heavily from weariness and spoke in abrupt sentences The whole company can bear wit

ess I beg y u w ll rememb th y ur xc l l n!

—

h r

A b y t d I rem ned t tl e f o t Remembe y r celle cyl

Tù h s b ttery had bee forgotten d o ly t the rye d of tl e ct o d d Pr ce B grati still hear g the ca o de n tl e en t r s d his o derly t ff ffic r d l ter Pri A d es lso to rde the b tt ry to e t s q kly poss ble Wl en the pp rts ttached to T h n b ttery h d bee m ed ay the m ddl f the act n by someo e

d

f q t undef ded gu s O the contrary th e erget c t n f tl t b ttery led tl e F ch to ppo e th t h e—n the ent — the ma R f ces ere co e trat d. T th y h d tt mpted t tt ck th po nt, b to e ch ca t n h d been d e b k by grapesh t f m tl e f l t d guns on tl e h ll k.

Soo fter Pri e B grat ó h d left h m T h h d eded tt fi e t Sch n Grab rn

Look t them scurry g! It b r g! Just see the m k ! F ! Gra d! Look t tl e m k the sm ke excl imed the t ll rymen bright g p

All th gu with t w t f r orders

rap dly p e d g Th F h lum that had d ed b y d the ill ge w t back b t as th gh e e ge f th f l e th enemy pl ed te gu t th ght f the ll d bega fir g tl em t Tush n b t tery

In their childl'ke gl e ed by the fi e d th ir l ck essfully ca d g th Fre ch art ll ryme o ly oticed th b t t ry when tw b ll a d then f u m fell mo g gu k k g t h rs d therte g ff m t w go dr er' leg Th p ts o ou ed were h w

e er n t d m t h d l ut only ch nged cl r a ter Tl l rses were epl ced by tl ers from a e erve gun carria e tl e woun led w re car r d y a d tle f u gun re turne l

f the fo ty men of the gu s crews t u dis bled but the a tllerymen were st ll merry nd l ly s e er Tw ce they n t ed the Fre ch ppe g bel w them a d tl en they f red grape h t t them

L ttle T sl n m ng feebly and awkw r l ly kept tell n *his orde ly to refill my pipe for*

—

h mself

gu t gun now m g no co nt ng tl e *charges now g g orders bo t repl c g*

w u d d d d l e f w and tu n w y from th s ght h t g r ly at the m wh as lw y the ca hes tated about l ft g the nj ed de d. Th sold ers f r them tp rt h ds me fell ws nd lw ys the ca e in n t llery mp y h d d houlders t lle nd tw s broad th off er—all looked t th r comma d r l ke cl ld e n an emb rra ngs tu t on and the p n h f ew s ri bly refle ted th rs

Ow g t th t rrible p o r d the es- ty f r conce trat d t ty T sh n d d *n t expe e ce the sl ghtest u pl sa t sense* f f nd th th ught th t l e m ght b killed or b dly wou ded neve o curred t h m On the trary h became m d m el ted It m d t h m th t t w s ery lo g t me go lm st d y he h d first n the e my n l fi d the first sh t nd th t the co e of th fi ld h stood on w well k d f m l gr und. Th gh he th ught of ev rytl g c d ed ryth g d l d e eryth g tl best of ff ers co ld do h s p t he w n t t ki to fe rish de- l u dru ken ess.

F m th de f g so ds of h own gu s arou d h m the wh tle nd thud of the

—

enemy s cannon balls from the flushed and

from the sight of all these t gs a

world of his own had taken possession of his brain and at that moment afforded him pleasure The enemy s guns were in his fancy not guns but pipes from which occasional puffs were blown by an invisible smoker

There he s puffing again muttered Tushin to himself as a small cloud rose from the hill and was borne in a streak to the left by the wind

Now look out for the ball we ll throw it back

What do you want your honor? asked an artilleryman standing close by who heard him muttering

Nothing only a shell he answered

Come along our Matvévna he said to himself Matvevna was the name his fancy gave to the farthest gun of the battery which was large and of an old pattern The French swarming *round their guns seemed to him like ants* In that world the handsome drunkard Number One of the second gun s crew was uncle Tushin looked at him more often than at any one else and took delight in his every movement The sound of musketry at the foot of the hill now diminishing now increasing seemed *like someone s breathing He listened intently* to the ebb and flow of these sounds

Ah! Breathing again breathing! he muttered to himself

He imagined himself as an enormously tall

let me down! he was saying as he moved from the gun when a strange unfamiliar voice called above his head Captain Tushin! Captain!

voice

Are you mad? You have twice been ordered to retreat and you

Why are they down on me? thought Tushin looking in alarm at his superior

I don t he muttered holding up two fingers to his cap I

But the staff officer did not finish what he wanted to say A cannon ball flying close to him caused him to duck and bend over his

distance

The *soldiers laughed A moment later an* adjutant arrived with the same order

It was Prince Andrew The first thing he saw on riding up to the space where Tushin s guns were stationed was an unharnessed horse with

other passed over as he approached and he felt a nervous shudder run down his spine But the mere thought of being afraid roused him again I cannot be afraid thought he and dismounted slowly among the guns He delivered the order and did not leave the battery He decided to have the guns removed from their positions and withdrawn in his presence Together with Tushin stepping across the bodies and under a terrible fire from the French he attended to the removal of the guns

A staff officer was here a minute ago but skipped off said an artilleryman to Prince Andrew Not like your honor!

Prince Andrew said nothing to Tushin They were both so busy as to seem not to notice one another When having limbered up the only *two cannon that remained uninjured* out of the four they began moving down the hill (one shattered gun and one unicorn were left behind) Prince Andrew rode up to Tushin

Well till we meet again he said holding out his hand to Tushin

Good by my dear fellow said Túshin *Dear soul! Good by my dear fellow!* and for some unknown reason tears suddenly filled his eyes

CHAPTER XXI

THE WIND had fallen and black clouds merging with the powder smoke hung low over the *field of battle on the horizon It was growing* dark and the glow of two conflagrations was the more conspicuous The cannonade was dying *down but the rattle of musketry behind* and on the right sounded oftener and nearer As soon as Tushin with his guns continually driving round or coming upon wounded men was out of range of fire and had descended into the dip he was met by some of the staff

Daughter of Mathew

m th m the taff fficer nd Zherkóv ho had been tw ce ent to T shin s battery but had ever reached t. Interrupt ng one anoth r they ll ga e, d tra m tted rders as t h to proceed, reprimand nd reproach

n rd rs nd l tly

f try ffi er wh just bef e the battle 1 u

pl 1us

t

It wa pl th t this cad t had lready repeatedly asked f l ft d be n fused He

f nte soldie A d where is th w u ded ffi er?

H has been t d wn H died repl ed someo e.

H lp h m up S t d wn dear f ll w t d wn Spread t th cloak A tó o

The cad t wa Rostó W th e h nd he supported th other h was p le d h j w trembled shi erin f erishly H w pl ed o M t évna, the gun f m wh ch they h d removed th dead fficer Th cloak they p ead der h m was w t w th blood which t ned hi b eeches d rm.

"What, are y w u ded my lad sa d Tú sh pp oach the gu n which Rostó sat.

pra n

Then what th blood n the gun ca riag inqu ed T hin

I was th offi er y h ta ed t an ered th artill ryman w p g way the

I had grown so dark that co ld not dis t u h th u f rms t pa es ff d th firi had be u t ubs de. S ddenly n ar by the ight, sho t ng d firi g were ga n

leamed n tl e da kness.

lery

l nt gl nces as they w ted the r fate The fir t g d ed down a d sold ers, talk g e gerly streamed out of s de treet.

N t hurt Pet ó ? ked o e

"We e g en it em hot m te! They w n t make nother push n w sa d a other

"You could t see a th n H w they hot at the own fellows! Noth ng could be seen P tch-da k, brother! I n t the someth ng to dr k?

The F ch had be n repul ed for the l t t me. And ga n a d ga n n the complete darkness Tu h s gun m ed f rward s r rou ded by th h mmi g fantry as by frame

In the dark ess t seemed s thou h a gloomy un een er was fl wi g lways in one d re ti humm g w th whispers d talk and tl e so d f hoofs and wheels. Am d th general rumbl the groa d vo ces f the wounded w e m re d st ctly heard th n ny other sound n th darkness of the n ght. Th gloom that en el ped th army w s filled with the groa s, which seemed to melt nto ne with the dark ess f the n ght. After a wh le the m

g mass became gitated, someo e rode p t n wh t h rse f llowed by his s te and sa d somethi pass What d d h say? Where to now? H lt, is t? D d he th nk u cam eager quest s f m ll des. The wh le m g m ss began press g close t gether a d report spread th t they were o dered to halt e dently th se fro t had halted All em ed whe e they were n th m ddle of the m ddy ro d.

F es were l hted nd the talk becam mo e ud bl Capta n Tushin ha g gi en orders t his c mp ny se t sold to fi d d ess tatu n doct f th cad t nd sat d wn by bo fir th sold ers h d k ndled n the oad. Rostó too dragged himself to the fi From p n cold nd damp f er h h er g hook his wh le body Drows ess was esistibly mastern him but he was kept wake

enemy s cannon balls from the flushed and

emy s side (always followed by a ball flying past and striking the earth a man a gun a horse) from the sight of all these things a fantastic world of his own had taken possession of his brain and at that moment afforded him pleasure The enemy s guns were in his fancy not guns but pipes from which occasional puffs were blown by an invisible smoker

There he s puffing again muttered Tushin to himself as a small cloud rose from the hill and was borne in a streak to the left by the wind

Now look out for the ball we ll throw it back

What do you want your honor? asked an artilleryman standing close by who heard him muttering

Nothing only a shell he answered

Come along our Matvévna! he said to himself Matvévna was the name his fancy gave to the farthest gun of the battery which was large and of an old pattern The French swarming round their guns seemed to him like ants In that world the handsome drunkard Number One of the second gun s crew was uncle Tushin looked at him more often than at any one else and took delight in his every move

tered to himself

He imagined himself as an enormously tall powerful man who was throwing cannon balls at the French with both hands

Now then Matvévna dear old lady don t let me down! he was saying as he moved from the gun when a strange unfamiliar voice called above his head Captain Tushin! Captain!

Tushin turned round in dismay It was the staff officer who had turned him out of the booth at Grunth He was shouting in a gasping voice

Are you mad? You have twice been ordered to retreat and you

Why are they down on me? thought Tu

wanted to say A cannon ball flying close to him caused him to duck and bend over his horse He paused and just as he was about to

distance

The soldiers laughed A moment later an adjutant arrived with the same order

It was Prince Andrew The first thing he saw on riding up to the space where Tushin s guns were stationed was an unharnessed horse with a broken leg that lay screaming piteously beside the harnessed horses Blood was gushin from its leg as from a spring Among the limbers lay several dead men One ball after another passed over as he approached and he felt a nervous shudder run down his spine But the mere thought of being afraid roused him again I cannot be afraid thought he and dismounted slowly among the guns He delivered the order and did not leave the battery He decided to have the guns removed from their positions and withdrawn in his presence Together with Tushin stepping across the bodies and under a terrible fire from the French he attended to the removal of the guns

A staff officer was here a minute ago but skipped off said an artilleryman to Prince Andrew Not like your honor!

Prince Andrew said nothing to Tushin They were both so busy as to seem not to notice one another When having limbered up the only two cannon that remained uninjured out of the four they began moving down the hill (one shattered gun and one unicorn were left behind) Prince Andrew rode up to Tushin

Well till we meet again he said holding out his hand to Tushin

Good by my dear fellow said Tushin Dear soul! Good by my dear fellow! and for some unknown reason tears suddenly filled his eyes

CHAPTER XXI

The wind had fallen and black clouds merging with the powder smoke hung low over the field of battle on the horizon It was growing dark and the glow of two conflagrations was the more conspicuous The cannonade was dying down but the rattle of musketry behind and on the right sounded oftener and nearer As soon as Tushin with his guns continually

D ughter f Mathe v

a French fficer priso e my p ese ce and particul ly d t gu hed h ms lf

I saw th Pá lograd hussars att k the e ur excell cy ch med n Zhe k lookin eas ly aro d He had t ee tl e hussars ll that da b t had hea d bout them from n inf try fficer They b ke p two squares, excelle cy

Sev ral f those p es t m led at Zh k s ords exp cti g e of his usual j kes but tici g that what he wa say red ded to th gl ry f ur arms d of the d y w tk, they assumed serious e p es th u h m y f them k ew that what he was say g

ror He had been so excited tl at he had not th ht bout it unt l that m me t. The off cers l ghterco f ed h mst ll m re He stood bef re B grat n w th h lower jaw trembl ng a d was hardly able to mutter I don t k ow your ex ellency I had no m n you excell cy

Y u might h e taken some from tl e co r troop

Tush d d n t say that there were n co er g troops th u h that was perfectly true He wa fra d f gett g some other off cer i to trouble d sil ntly fixed h eyes on B grat ón as choolboy who has blundered looks t n ex m ner

Th lenc la ted some t me Prince B gra ti app re tly not wish g to be severe fo d

u d n task bo t the gu n the l ft flank he k ew that all the gu there had bee b doned t th ery begi ni g of the cti n) I th k I ent you? he dded tu g t the taff fficer d ty

O was damaged, ns red the staff offi er d th ther I ca t u dersta d. I was there ll th time g g rders d had only just l ft. It is true that t w h t there he dded modestly

Someo e m nt ed that Capta n T h a b uack g close to th ll g and had al eady been sent f

Oh b t y er ther ? said Pr e Bagra ti ddress P And ei

n

sa

Pri A drew coldly d bruptly

All w re il nt. T h pp d t th thresh ld d mad h way t m dly f m be h d th b cks f th g ral A l e t pped p t th ge eral th cr wd d hut feel g embarrassed as h al ay was by tl e ght f his peri rs h d d t the t ff of th ba er d mbled er t. Se ral f those p esent l ghed.

H w a t gu was b d ed asked Bagrat ó f g so m h t th cap ta as t thos h were l h m

hom

O

ner

f ha

p es

n r usly

Your cellency! Pr nce Andrew broke the le cew th h s brupt ce y u were pleased to send me t Capta n T h s b ttery I we t th e d f u d two th rds of the men and h rses k cked t, tw gu sm shed, nd no s pports t ll

Pri e B grat ó a d Tush n looked w th eq al nte t ess at Bolkó ki who spoke w th supp essed g tat n

And f you e llency will allow me to e p ess my op o h co ti ed w o e today s c ess ch fly to the ct n f th t b t tery d th hero e d ra ce f Capta n Tu shi d h s mp ny d w th t w ti g r ply Pri ce A d ewr e nd I ft th t ble

Prin B grat ón looked at Tushi dent ly el ctant t how distrust n Bolkó ki em ph ti p o yet n t feel g ble fully to credit t, be t h head a d told Tu h n th t l e c uld go Pr ce Andrew we t ut w th l m.

Thank you y u sa ed me my dear fell wl sa d Tush n

Pri Andrew ga e h m a look but sa d noth g nd we t way He f lt d d de p essed. It was all so trange so unlike what he had h ped.

Wl ar they? Why are they here? What do they want. A d whe will ll this e d th l Ro t looki g at the cha gi g had w bef h m. The p n l arm became mo d m e tense Irres tible drows ess o erpowered h m red ri gs da ced bef re his eyes d th mp ess of those es d fa es and a ense f lon l ess m rged w th the

beside him Tushin s large kind intelligent eyes were fixed with sympathy and commiseration on Rostov who saw that Tushin with his whole heart wished to help him but could not

From all sides were heard the footsteps and talk of the infantry who were walking driving past and settling down all around The sound of voices the tramping feet the horses hoofs moving in mud the crackling of wood fires near and afar merged into one tremulous rumble

It was no longer as before a dark unseen river flowing through the gloom but a dark sea swelling and gradually subsiding after a storm Rostov looked at and listened listlessly to what passed before and around him An infantryman came to the fire squatted on his heels held his hands to the blaze and turned away his face

You don t mind your honor? he asked Tushin I ve lost my company your honor I don t know where such bad luck!

With the soldier an infantry officer with a bandaged cheek came up to the bonfire and addressing Tushin asked him to have the guns moved a trifle to let a wagon go past After he had gone two soldiers rushed to the campfire They were quarreling and fighting desperately each trying to snatch from the other a boot they were both holding on to

You picked it up? I dare say! You re very smart! one of them shouted hoarsely

Then a thin pale soldier his neck bandaged with a bloodstained leg band came up and in angry tones asked the artillerymen for water

Must one die like a dog? said he

Tushin told them to give the man some water Then a cheerful soldier ran up begging a little fire for the infantry

A nice little hot torch for the infantry! Good luck to you fellow countrymen Thanks for the fire—we ll return it with interest said he carrying away into the darkness a glowing stick

Who the devil has put the logs on the road? snarled he

He s dead—why carry him? said another

Shut up!

And they disappeared into the darkness with their load

Still aching? Tushin asked Rostóv in a whisper

Yes

Your honor you re wanted by the general He is in the hut here said a gunner coming up to Tushin

Coming friend

Tushin rose and buttoning his greatcoat and pulling it straight walked away from the fire

Not far from the artillery campfire in a hut that had been prepared for him Prince Bagratión sat at dinner talking with some commanding officers who had gathered at his quarters The little old man with the half closed eyes was there greedily gnawing a mutton bone and the general who had served blamelessly for

them all and Prince Andrew pa pressed lips and feverishly glittering eyes

In a corner of the hut stood a standard captured from the French and the accountant with the naive face was feeling its texture shaking his head in perplexity—perhaps because the banner really interested him perhaps because it was hard for him hungry as he was to look on at a dinner where there was no place for him In the next hut there was a French colonel who had been taken prisoner by our dragoons Our officers were flocking in to look at him Prince Bagratión was thanking the individual commanders and inquiring into details of the action and our losses The general whose regiment had been inspected at Braunau was informing the prince that as soon as the action began he had withdrawn from the wood mustered the men who were woodcutting and allowing the French to pass him had made a bayonet charge with two battalions and had broken up the French troops

When I saw your excellency that their first battalion was disorganized I stopped in the road and thought I ll let them come on and will meet them with the fire of the whole battalion —and that s what I did

The general had so wished to do this and

Dólokhov who was reduced to the ranks took

French officer prisoner in my presence and particularly distinguished himself.

I saw the Pavlograd hussars attack there your excellency," chimed in Zherkov, looking uneasily around. He had not seen the hussars all that day, but had heard about them from an infantry officer. "They broke up two squares, your excellency."

Several of those present smiled at Zherkov's words, expecting one of his usual jokes, but noticing that what he was saying redounded to the glory of our arms and of the day's work, they assumed a serious expression, though many of them knew that what he was saying was a lie devoid of any foundation. Prince Bagration turned to the old colonel.

"Gentlemen, I thank you all; all arms have behaved heroically: infantry, cavalry, and artillery. How was it that two guns were abandoned in the center?" he inquired, searching with his eyes for someone. (Prince Bagration did not ask about the guns on the left flank; he knew that all the guns there had been abandoned at the very beginning of the action.) "I think I sent you?" he added, turning to the staff officer on duty.

"One was damaged," answered the staff officer, "and the other I can't understand. I was there all the time giving orders and had only just left.... It is true that it was hot there," he added modestly.

Someone mentioned that Captain Tushin was bivouacking close to the village and had already been sent for.

"Oh, but you were there," said Prince Bagration, addressing Prince Andrew.

"Of course, we only just missed one another," said the staff officer, with a smile to Bolkónski.

"I had not the pleasure of seeing you," said Prince Andrew, coldly and abruptly.

All were silent. Tushin appeared at the threshold and made his way timidly from behind the backs of the generals. As he stepped past the generals in the crowded hut, feeling embarrassed as he always was by the sight of his superiors, he did not notice the staff of the banner and stumbled over it. Several of those present laughed.

"How was it a gun was abandoned?" asked Bagration, frowning, not so much at the captain as at those who were laughing, among whom Zherkov laughed loudest.

Only now, when he was confronted by the stern authorities, did his guilt and the disgrace of having lost two guns and yet remaining alive present themselves to Tushin in all their horror. He had been so excited that he had not thought about it until that moment. The officers' laughter confused him still more. He stood before Bagration with his lower jaw trembling and was hardly able to mutter: "I don't know... your excellency... I had no men... your excellency."

"You might have taken some from the covering troops."

Tushin did not say that there were no covering troops, though that was perfectly true. He was afraid of getting some other officer into trouble, and silently fixed his eyes on Bagration as a schoolboy who has blundered looks at an examiner.

The silence lasted some time. Prince Bagration, apparently not wishing to be severe, found nothing to say; the others did not venture to intervene. Prince Andrew looked at Tushin from under his brows and his fingers twitched nervously.

"Your excellency!" Prince Andrew broke the silence with his abrupt voice, "you were pleased to send me to Captain Tushin's battery. I went there and found two thirds of the men and horses knocked out, two guns smashed, and no supports at all."

Prince Bagration and Tushin looked with equal intentness at Bolkónski, who spoke with suppressed agitation.

"And, if your excellency will allow me to express my opinion," he continued, "we owe today's success chiefly to the action of that battery and the heroic endurance of Captain Tushin and his company," and without awaiting a reply, Prince Andrew rose and left the table.

"Thank you, you saved me, my dear fellow!" said Tushin.

Prince Andrew gave him a look, but said nothing and went away. He felt sad and depressed. It was all so strange, so unlike what he had hoped.

"Who are they? Why are they here? What do they want? And when will all this end?" thought Rostov, looking at the changing shadows before him. The pain in his arm became more and more intense. Irresistible drowsiness overpowered him, red rings danced before his eyes, and the impression of those voices and faces and a sense of loneliness merged with the

physical pain It was they these soldiers—wounded and unwounded—it was they who were crushing weighing down and twisting the sinews and scorching the flesh of his sprained arm and shoulder To rid himself of them he closed his eyes

--

and Telyanin and t

and Bogdánich That affair was the same thing as this soldier with the harsh voice and it was that affair and this soldier that were so agonizingly incessantly pulling and pressing his arm and always dragging it in one direction He tried to get away from them but they would

ir s
ll—
ble

to get rid of them

He opened his eyes and looked up The black canopy of night hung less than a yard above the glow of the charcoal Flakes of falling snow were fluttering in that light Túshin had not returned the doctor had not come He was alone now except for a soldier who was sitting naked at the other side of the fire warming his thin yellow body

Nobody wants me! thought Rostóv There is no one to help me or pity me Yet I was once at home strong happy and loved. He sighed and doing so groaned involuntarily

Eh is anything hurting you? asked the soldier shaking his shirt out over the fire and not waiting for an answer he gave a grunt and added What a lot of men have been crippled today—frightful!

Rostov did not listen to the soldier He looked at the snowflakes fluttering above the fire and remembered a Russian winter at his warm bright home his fluffy fur coat his quickly gliding sleigh his healthy body and all the affection and care of his family And why did I come here? he wondered

Next day the French army did not renew their attack and the remnant of Bagratión s detachment was reunited to Kutuzov s army

Book Three 1805

*

CHAPTER I

— had l berat ly

l

Schemes d d es f wh ch h er ght

circumsta ces and perso he m u u pl ns h had t m ely r two n h s head but d e som o ly be nn g t f rm themsel es som pp hi g ch evem nt and some n urs f d tegrat H did n t f ta ce s y t h ms lf 'This man ow h fl c I must ga h s confid nc d fri dsh p d thr u h h m bt n special gra t. N d d h say o himself P erre rich m I m t e t h m to m rry my da h e d l d m tl f ty th u d ru bles I ed B t whe he came cross man f pos t h t ct mm d t ly t ld h m th t th m ld be u f l d w thout any p med t t n Pr e V sil took the first oppo ty t ga h co fiden flatte h m be com t m t w tl him and fi lly make h req est.

He h d P rr t h d n Mo c w d procu ed f h m ppo tm nt s G tlem n f th Bedel mbe which t th t t m co ferred h ta us f Cou c l f St t nd t d th y u man mp y h m to P tersb rg d tay g t h h u e W th pp t b nt m d d ess yet w th

h b n so tu l nd sl wn ch un affec ed f m l ar ty tercours w th ev ry body both bo nd bel w f m n social ta d g Som h g l y d w h m t wa d tho ch d m p w f l th h mself and he had rare sk ll in g tl most p

p rtun moment f r m king u e of people P rre onun xpe tedly be om g Count Be

h d he ch sen n t to see them ll ese d tte nt peopl —b essmen rel t s d ac q tances l ke—w all d po d t tr t th yo n he n the m st f e dly nd fl tte m nn they were ll e de tly f rmly co ced of P rre n ble qual t es. He as lw y he r ucl w ds W th yo r e mark ble kind ess or 'W tl you e cellent he rt Y u are y urself so h rable, Count

k d nd intell ge t. E en pe pl who h d f rm ly bee p teful t w d him nde d nt

de ta di es a d d d n t n f l he h d a n l t to ask h m f yth ex pt only f r perm n fte the bl w he l d ed to ma n f few w k l g n the hou he so l ed nd wh e h h d cr ficed so m h Sh could not efr fr m weep t these w ds T ch d th t th statu qu p ncess could so ch e P rr to k h h d d begged her f rg e es w tl ut k wh t f F m tl t d y the eld t p cess quit ch g d t ward P erre and

respected. His whole time was taken up with dinners a d balls and as spent chiefly t Prince Vasili s house in th comp ny of the st t princess, his wife and his beautiful d ugh ter Hélè e.

Like the others A Pá lovn Schérer showed P erre the change of attitude t ward him that had take pl ce n society

Formerly An Pá l na s presence, P erre had always felt th t what h was say as t of pl ce tactless d un u t ble that rema ks wh ch seemed to h m cle er wh'l they f rmed h mi d becam fool h a soo as h tt ed them while n the co trary H ppolyte t p dest rem ks came out clev er d pt. Now e eryth g P err said was harm t E en f A n Pá lo n did n t say so he could see that h wished t d only refrai ed t f reward f r his modesty

I the begi n f th wint r of 805-6 P erre ece ed e of An Pá l s usual pink tes w th vit t n to which wa dded "Y will fi d th bea t ful Hélène here, whom t is lways d l ghtful t se

When h read that sente c P err felt f

um which e coul al u p as u him an terta n g ppos t

A Pá l vna At H m was l ke the fo mer nly th lty h ffered her guests this um as t M rtemart b t d pl m tust fresh from Berl n w th th ery l test details f th Empero Alexa der vi t to P tsd m and f how the tw ust fri ds had pledged themsel es an d ssol ble all ce t uphold th cause f just ce a nst th enemy of th h ma race. A Pá l vna rece ed P err with had f mel ch ly ev d tly rela g t th vo ma rec t loss by th death f Coun Bez kho (everyo e co st t ly cons dered d ty to assure P erre that h was greatly afflicted by th death f th father h had hardly kn wn) d her mela ch ly was just l k th gust m l choly h h wed t

till. Th large gr p n which wer Prince Vasili and th general had th ben fit of th d plomat. A ther gro p wa t th tea table. P erre wished to join th f rmer but A n Pá lovn — ho was in the exci ed co dit n of a commande on a battlefield to whom th usands of new a d br lliant deas occur wh ch there is hardly t me to put in ct on—see P erre touched h sleeve w th her fi ger say

let P erre go

P erre reply s ncerely agreed w th her as to Hélè e perf ct on f ma ner If he e er th ht f Hélène t wa just of her bea ty and her remark ble skill n ppeari sile tly d g nified n soc ty

The old nt rec ed the two you people in her corner but eemed des rous of l di g her dorat for Hélène and ncl ned rather t how her fear of Ann Pá lo na Sh looked t her n ece as f nquiri g what h was to do with these people O lea g them A na Pá lovn ga n touched P erre s slee e sa ng I h p y u won t say that t is d ll n my house a nd h gl n ed at Hélène

Hélè m led, w th look mply n that he d d not admit the poss b'l ty of nyone ee g her w thout bei e chanted. Th t co hed, swall wed, nd sa d n French that he wa ery pleased t see Hélèn th n he turned to P err w th th same words f w l com d th same look. In the middle of dull nd halti g con ersat n Hélène turned to P erre w th th beaut ful bright smil that she ga e to everyo e. P erre was so used t th t mile nd t had so l ttle mean f r l im, that h p d o tt t n to t. The unt was just peaki of collecti n of uffboxes that had bel ged t P erre father Count Bezukho d showed them her own box. Princess Helè asked t ee th portrait f the unt hu b nd o the box l d

"Tha is p bably th w k of Vinesse said

began knitting a striped scarf for him

Do this for my sake *mon cher* after all she had to put up with a great deal from the deceased said Prince Vasili to him handing him a deed to sign for the princess benefit

Prince Vasili had come to the conclusion that it was necessary to throw this bone—a bill for thirty thousand rubles—to the poor princess that it might not occur to her to speak of his share in the affair of the inlaid portfolio Pierre signed the deed and after that the princess grew still kinder The younger sisters also became affectionate to him especially the youngest the pretty one with the mole who often made him feel confused by her smiles and her own confusion when meeting him

could not but believe in the sincerity of those around him Besides he had no time to ask himself whether these people were sincere or not He was always busy and always felt in a state of mild and cheerful intoxication He felt as though he were the center of some im

but still that happy result always remained in the future

More than anyone else Prince Vasili took possession of Pierre s affairs and of Pierre himself in those early days From the death of Count Bezukhov he did not let go his hold of the lad He had the air of a man oppressed by business weary and suffering who yet would not for pity s sake leave this helpless youth who after all was the son of his old friend and the possessor of such enormous wealth to the caprice of fate and the designs of rogues During the few days he spent in Moscow after the death of Count Bezukhov he would call Pierre or go to him himself and tell him what ought to be done in a tone of weariness and assurance as if he were adding every time You know I

ff

s

eyes and fingering Pierre s elbow speaking as if he were saying something which had long since been agreed upon and could not now be altered We start tomorrow and I m giving you a place in my carriage I am very glad All

asked him for you and you have been entered in the diplomatic corps and made a Gentleman of the Bedchamber The diplomatic career now lies open before you

Notwithstanding the tone of wearied assurance with which these words were pronounced, Pierre who had so long been considering his career wished to make some suggestion But Prince Vasili interrupted him in the special deep cooing tone precluding the possibility of interrupting his speech which he used in extreme cases when special persuasion was needed

Mais mon cher I did this for my own sake to satisfy my conscience and there is nothing to thank me for No one has ever complained

besides you

Vasili sighed Yes yes my boy And my valet can go in your carriage Ah! I was nearly forgetting he added You know *mon cher* your father and I had some accounts to settle so I have received what was due from the Ryazán estate and will keep it you won t require it We ll go into the accounts later

By what was due from the Ryazán estate Prince Vasili meant several thousand rubles quitrent received from Pierre s peasants which the prince had retained for himself

In Petersburg as in Moscow Pierre found the same atmosphere of gentleness and affection He could not refuse the post or rather the rank (for he did nothing) that Prince Vasili had procured for him and acquaintances invitations and social occupations were so numerous that even more than in Moscow he felt a sense of bewilderment bustle and continual expectation of some good always in front of him but never attained

Of his former bachelor acquaintances many

The Guards had

here in the provinces Prince Andrew was

respected. His whole time was taken up with dinners and balls and was spent chiefly at Prince Vasili h use in the company of the stout princess, his wife, and his beautiful daughter Hélène.

Like the others, Ann Pá l vna Schérer showed Pierre the change of titude toward him that had taken pl ce n society

F rmerly in Anna Pá lo n s presence, P erre had always felt th t wh t he was say m as t f pl ce tactless d un u table that remarks which seemed to him clever wh le they formed n his m nd became foolish s soo as he ut ered them, while on th co trary H ppolyt stup dest remarks cam ut clev er d pt. Now everythi g P err said was *harm* t E n if Anna Pá l vna did not say so he could see that h wished to nd nly refrai ed t f revard f hi modesty

I the beginni f the w nter of 8o -6 P erre recei ed n f Ann Pá l vn usual p k otes with nvitati n to wh ch was dded. "Y u will fi d th beaut ful Helène here, whom t is always d l ghtful to see.

When he read that sentence, P erre f lt f th first time that some l k which other peo pl recognized had grown up between himself and Hélè e, nd that th ht both alarmed him, as if som bligati n were be n mposed on him which h could t fulfill d pleased him as an enterta ni ppos t n.

A na Pá l vna At H me was like the fo mer o ly th elty she ffered her guests

commander on a battlefi ld to whom thousands of new a d br ll nt deas occur which there is hardly time to put n act on—see g P erre touched his leeve w th he finger say

"W t a b t, I ha e something n ew f r you this even ng" (She glanced t Hélène nd miled at her) My dear Hélène be charitable nt who ado es you Go and keep ll ll iv to

"I n c she exq re po nt n to the tately beauty as she l ded a way And how she carries herself! For so young gi l uch tact such masterly perfecti n of manner! It comes from her heart. H pp the man who w n her! W th her the least wo ldly of men would occupy most brilliant pos tion n society Don t you think so I only wa ted t know your op nio nd Ann Pá lo n l t P erre go

Pierre n reply ncerely agreed w th her as to Hélène perfect on of manner If he ever thou ht f Hélène t was just of her beauty nd her remark ble sk ll in appearing silently d n fied in soci ty

Th old unt rece ved the two young people n her corne but eemed des rous of h din her d rat on f r Hélèn and clined rather to h w her fea of Anna Pá lovna. She looked wh t he was to do

th huma race. Anna Pá l vna rece ed P erre with had f melanch ly ev d ntly relati g th you ma recent loss by th death f Cou Bezukho (every n con tant ly cons ered d ty to assure P err that he was greatl afflicted by th death f the father he had hardl kn n) nd her melancholy was just l k th ous m lancholy h howed t th men ion f her mos ugust M jesty the Emp ess Marya Fëd ro na. P err fel fla ered by this. Ann Pá l vna arra ged the different gro ps in her drawi room with her hab tual kil Th large gr p n which wer Pri ce Vasil and th generals, had th be fit of th diplomat. Another group wa t the ea table. P erre wished to join th f rmer b A n Pá lovna—who was in th excited condition f a

aga n d h glanced at Hélène.

Hélè smiled, w th look mply ng that she did not dmit th poss bil ty f anyone ee ing her with ut bein enchanted. Th unt co hed, swallowed, and said n Fr nch that he was ery pleased to see Hélèn then he turned t P erre with the same w rds of wel com nd the same look. In th middl of dull nd haltı con ersat Hélène turned t P erre w th th beautiful bright smile that sh ga to e ry ne. P erre was so used to that mil nd t had so l ttl mean ng for him, that h p d n tenti n t t. Th unt was just peaki f collecti n f nuffboxes that had bel ged t P erre father Count Be zukh d sh wed them her own box. Prin ess Hélè asked to ee the portrait of the u t husband on the box lid

"Tha is probably the wo k f V nesse" sa d

began knitting a striped scarf for him

Do this for my sake *mon cher* after all she had to put up with a great deal from the de ceased said Prince Vasili to him handing him a deed to sign for the princess benefit

Prince Vasili had come to the conclusion that it was necessary to throw this bone—a bill for thirty thousand rubles—to the poor prin cess that it might not occur to her to speak of his share in the affair of the inlaid portfolio Pierre signed the deed and after that the prin cess grew still kinder The younger sisters also became affectionate to him especially the youngest the pretty one with the mole who often made him feel confused by her smiles and her own confusion when meeting him

It seemed so natural to Pierre that everyone should like him and it would have seemed so unnatural had anyone disliked him that he could not but believe in the sincerity of those around him Besides he had no time to ask himself whether these people were sincere or not He was always busy and always felt in a state of mild and cheerful intoxication He felt as though he were the center of some im portant and general movement that something was constantly expected of him that if he did not do it he would grieve and disappoint many people but if he did this and that all would be well and he did what was demanded of him but still that happy result always remained in the future

More than anyone else Prince Vasili took possession of Pierre s affairs and of Pierre him self in those early days From the death of Count Bezukhov he did not let go his hold of the lad He had the air of a man oppressed by business weary and suffering who yet would not for pity s sake leave this helpless youth who after all was the son of his old friend and the possessor of such enormous wealth to the [illegible]

or go to him himself and tell him what ought to be done in a tone of weariness and assurance as if he were adding every time You know I am overwhelmed with business and it is purely out of charity that I trouble myself about you and you also know quite well that what I pro pose is the only thing possible

'Well my dear fellow tomorrow we are off altered We start tomorrow and I m givin you a place in my carriage I am very glad All our important business here is now settled and I ought to have been off long ago Here is some thing I have received from the chancellor I asked him for you and you have been entered in the diplomatic corps and made a Gentleman of the Bedchamber The diplomatic career now lies open before you

Notwithstanding the tone of wearied assur ance with which these words were pronounced, Pierre who had so long been considerin his career wished to make some suggestion But Prince Vasili interrupted him in the spec al deep cooing tone precluding the possibility of interrupting his speech which he used in ex treme cases when special persuasion was need ed

Mais mon cher I did this for my own sake to satisfy my conscience and there is nothin to thank me for No one has ever complained yet of being too much loved and besides you are free you could throw it up tomorrow But you will see everything for yourself when you get to Petersburg It is high time for you to get away from these terrible recollections Prince Vasili sighed Yes yes my boy And my valet can go in your carriage Ah! I was nearly for getting he added You know *mon cher* your father and I had some accounts to settle so I have received what was due from the Ryazán estate and will keep it you won t require it. We ll go into the accounts later

By what was due from the Ryazán estate Prince Vasili meant several thousand rubles quitrent received from Pierre s peasants which the prince had retained for himself

In Petersburg as in Moscow Pierre found the same atmosphere of gentleness and affec tion He could not refuse the post or rather the rank (for he did nothing) that Prince Va sili had procured for him and acquaintances invitations and social occupations were so num erous that even more than in Moscow he felt a sense of bewilderment bustle and continual expectation of some good always in front of him but never attained

Of his former bachelor acquaintances many were no longer in Petersburg The Guards had gone to the front Dolokhov had been reduced to the ranks Anatole was in the army some where in the provinces Prince Andrew was abroad so Pierre had not the opportunity to spend his nights as he used to like to spend them or to open his mind by intimate talks with a friend older than himself and whom he

and looks and the words and looks of those who had seen them together. He recalled Anna P words and looks when she spoke to him about his house, recalled thousands of such hints from Prince Vasili and others, and was seized by terror lest he had already in some way bound himself to do something that was evidently wrong and that he ought not to do. But at the very time he was expressing this conviction to himself, in another part of his mind her image rose in all its womanly beauty.

CHAPTER II

...his neglected estates at the same time and pick up his son Anatole where his regiment was stationed, and take him to visit Prince Nicholas Bolkonski in order to arrange a match for him with the daughter of that rich old man. But before leaving home and undertaking these new affairs, Prince Vasili had to settle matters with Pierre, who, it is true, had lately spent whole days at home, that is, in Prince Vasili's house where he was staying, and had been absurd, excited, and foolish in Hélène's presence (as a lover should be), but had not yet proposed to her.

"This is all very fine, but things must be settled," said Prince Vasili to himself, with sorrowful sigh, one morning, feeling that Pierre who was under such obligations to him ("But never mind that") was not behaving very well in this matter. "Youth, frivolity... well, God be with him," thought he, relishing his own goodness of heart, "but it must be brought to a head. The day after tomorrow will be Lelya's name day. I will invite two or three people, and if he does not understand what he ought to do then it will be my affair—yes, my affair. I am her father."

Six weeks after Anna Pávlovna's "At Home" and after the sleepless night when he had decided that to marry Hélène would be a calamity and that he ought to avoid her and go away, Pierre, despite that decision, had not left Prince Vasili's and felt with terror that in people's eyes he was every day more and more connected with her, that it was impossible for him to return to his former conception of her, that he could not break away from her, and that though it would be a terrible thing he would have to unite his fate with hers. He might perhaps have been able to free himself but that Prince Vasili (who had rarely before given receptions) now hardly let a day go by without having an evening party at which Pierre had to be present unless he wished to spoil the general pleasure and disappoint everyone's expectation. Prince Vasili, in the rare moments when he was at home, would take Pierre's hand in passing and draw it downwards, or absent-mindedly hold out his wrinkled, clean-shaven cheek for Pierre to kiss and would say: "Till tomorrow," or, "Be in to dinner or I shall not see you," or, "I am staying in for your sake," and so on. And though Prince Vasili, when he stayed in (as he said) for Pierre's sake, hardly exchanged a couple of words with him, Pierre felt unable to disappoint him. Every day he said to himself one and the same thing: "It is time I understood her and made up my mind what she really is. Was I mistaken before, or am I mistaken now? No, she is not stupid; she is an excellent girl," he sometimes said to himself. "She never makes a mistake, never says anything stupid. She says little, but what she does say is always clear and simple, so she is not stupid. She never was ...

Pierre her superiority. She was right in regarding all arguments as nonsense in comparison with that smile.

She always addressed him with a radiantly confiding smile meant for him alone, in which there was something more significant than in the general smile that usually brightened her face. Pierre knew that everyone was waiting for him to say a word and cross a certain line, and he knew that sooner or later he would step across it, but an incomprehensible terror seized him at the thought of that dreadful step. A thousand times during that month and a half while he felt himself drawn nearer and nearer to that dreadful abyss, Pierre said to himself: "What am I doing? I need resolution. Can it be that I have none?"

He wished to take a decision, but felt with dismay that in this matter he lacked that strength of will which he had known in himself and really possessed. Pierre was one of those who are only strong when they feel themselves quite innocent, and since that day when he was overpowered by a feeling of desire while stooping over the snuffbox at Anna Pávlovna's, an unacknowledged sense of the

Pierre mentioning a celebrated miniaturist and he leaned over the table to take the snuff box while trying to hear what was being said at the other table

He half rose meaning to go round but the aunt handed him the snuffbox passing it across Hélène s back Hélène stooped forward to make room and looked round with a smile She was as always at evening parties wearing a dress such as was then fashionable cut very low at front and back Her bust which had always seemed like marble to Pierre was so close to him that his shortsighted eyes could not but perceive the living charm of her neck and shoulders so near to his lips that he need only have bent his head a little to have touched them He was consc ous of the warmth of her body the scent of perfume and the creaking of her corset as she moved He did not see her marble beauty forming a complete whole with her dress but all the charm of her body only covered by her garments And having once seen this he could not help being aware of it just as we cannot renew an illusion we have once seen through

So you have never noticed before how beautiful I am? Hélène seemed to say You had not noticed that I am a woman? Yes I am a woman who may belong to anyone—to you too said her glance And at that moment Pierre felt that Hélène not only could but must be his wife and that it could not be otherwise

He knew this at that moment as surely as if he had been standing at the altar with her How and when this would be he did not know he did not even know if it would be a good thing (he even felt he knew not why that it would be a bad thing) but he knew it would happen

I ierre dropped his eyes lifted them again and wished once more to see her as a distant

who has been looking at a tuft of steppe grass through the m st and taking it for a tree can again take it for a tree after he has once recognized it to be a tuft of grass She was terribly close to him She already had power over him and between them there was no longer any barrier except the barrier of h s own will

Well I will leave you in your little corner came Anna Pávlovna s voice I see you are all right there

And Pierre anxiously trying to remember whether he had done anything reprehensible looked round with a blush It seemed to him that everyone knew what had happened to him as he knew it himself

A little later when he went up to the large circle Anna Pávlovna said to him I hear you are refitting your Petersburg house?

This was true The architect had told him that it was necessary and Pierre without knowing why was having his enormous Petersburg house done up

I know something about that Don t I? And you are still so young You need advice Don t be angry with me for exercising an old woman s privilege

She paused as women always do expecting something after they have mentioned their age

If you marry it will be a different thing she continued uniting them both in one glance Pierre did not look at Hélène nor she at h m. But she was just as terribly close to him. He muttered something and colored

understood that the woman he had known as a

might belong to him

But she s stup d I have myself said she is stupid he thought There is something nasty something wrong in the feeling she excites in me I have been told that her brother Anatole was in love with her and she with him, that there was quite a scandal and that that s why he was sent away Hippolyte is her brother Prince Vasili is her father It s bad he reflected but while he was think

she would love l im and become quite different

whole body only veiled by its gray dress But nol Why d d th s tl ought never occur to me

h ts f m Pr V l nu u t u s e ed by t rr r lest l e h d l e dy n some ay bo nd h m elf t d methun th t wa es d tl g a d th the ght not t d

h rdly l t d y go by witl th n an e e pa ty at l ch P erre h d to be present ut les hew h d to spo l the ge eral ple s re and d pp te ery ne e pe t t n Prin e Va sil in the rare moment l en he s tl me ld t ke P err s h nd n p g n l lraw t d n a ds ab ent m ndedly l old out h wr kled clean l en check f r P erre to k ss and uld say T ll tomorr w or Be t d nner r I hall n t see y u or I am t y g nfo y u s ke nd so on And th ugl P ce V sil whe h tayed n (s he sa d) f P erre sake h rdly ex l n ed c upl of rd th h m P rr felt u l le t d p po nt h m E eryd y he a d t l n elfone n l tl e s m th g It t me I u d rstood l er d m d up my m d what sl re lly W m I m t ken n w? No

CHAPTER II

Bolkó k d t rra m tch l r h m th the d ht f that ch ld m n B t be- f e le h me d u dert k g these n w ffa rs Pr Vasfl h d t ttl m tters w th P rre wh t true h d l t erly pent wh le

s mple so he s not st p d She i

l h uld be) b t h d t y t p posed to her

"This ll ry fi b t th gs must be s t tled sa d Pri e V l t h mself w th s ro ful gh, e m rn g feel th t P rre h was u d ch bl gatu h m (But ever m d that') was t b ha g ry w ll th m t er Y uth fri lity w ll God be th h m th ght h el h n h wn goodnes of he t, b t t must be b u ht to head. Th day f er t m rrow w ll b Lelya me da l ll two o three peopl d l h does t u d rstand what he ht t d th t w ll b my affair—yes my ffa I m h father

S eeks lt A Pá l vn At H me d l th l epless n ht whe h h d de- ded that t marry Hélè w ld be calam d th th gh to d her and go way P rr desp e tha decis had n tl ft Pri ce V l d f lt w th erro that peopl eyes h w e erv d mo and m co ected th her tha was mposs bl fo h m to e m h f rmer con eptu of her that h

w h th t m le.

She lw y dd ess d h m w th rad ntly co fid g smil m nt f r h m l e n wh cl tl e was someth m e gn fica t than

across t b t n n omp h s bl terr r e d h m t th th ht of tl t d adful t p V h lf

(h had ra l bef re g en eceptu ns) now

He wished to t ke d ci n b t f lt th d smay th t n th matter he l k d that tr th f w ll wh ch he had k wn n h m self d eally possess d. P err wa on of those who ar o ly tron wh they f el themsel es qu t n oc nt, d nce that day wh n h was o rpowered b f l g of d re whil toon er the uffbox t Ann Pá l n un kn wled d en of the

guilt of that desire paralyzed his will

On Hélène s name day a small party of just their own people—as his wife said—met for supper at Prince Vasili s All these friends and relations had been given to understand that the fate of the young girl would be decided that evening The visitors were seated at supper Princess Kurágina a portly imposing woman who had once been handsome was sitting at the head of the table On either side of her sat the more important guests—an old general and his wife and Anna Pávlovna Schérer At the other end sat the younger and less important guests and there too sat the members of the family and Pierre and Hélène side by side Prince Vasili was not having any supper he went round the table in a merry mood sitting down now by one now by another of the guests To each of them he made some careless and agreeable remark except to Pierre and Hélène whose presence he seemed not to notice He enlivened the whole party The wax candles burned brightly the silver and crystal gleamed so did the ladies toilets and the gold and silver of the men s epaulets servants in scarlet liveries moved round the table and the clatter of plates knives and glasses m

her passionately at which she laughed at the other could be heard the story of the misfortunes of some Mary Viktoro

received and read the then famous rescript of the Emperor Alexander from the army to Sergéy Kuzmich in which the Emperor said that he was receiving from all sides declarations of the people s loyalty that the declaration from Petersburg gave him particular pleasure and that he was proud to be at the head of such a nation and would endeavor to be worthy of it This rescript began with the words Sergéy Kuzmich From all sides reports reach me etc

Well and so he never got farther than Sergéy Kuzmich ? asked one of the ladies

Exactly not a hair s breadth farther answered Prince Vasili laughing Sergéy Kuzmich From all sides From all sides Sergéy Kuzmich Poor Vyazmítinov could not get any farther He began the rescript again and again but as soon as he uttered *Sergéy* he sobbed *Kuzmich* tears and *From all sides* was smo

ther A

Serg

till at

Ku

tears

Don t be unkind cried Anna Pávlovna from her end of the table holding up a threatening finger He is such a worthy and excellent man our dear Vyazmítinov

Everybody laughed a great deal At the head of the table where the honored guests sat everyone seemed to be in high spirits and under the influence of a variety of exciting sensations. Only Pierre and Hélène sat silently side by side almost at the bottom of the table a suppressed smile brightening both their faces, a smile that

mich—

ings B

and joked much as they enjoyed their Rhine wine *sauté* and ices and however they avoided looking at the young couple and heedless and unobservant as they seemed of them one could feel

gave that

laughter

that the whole attention of that company was directed to—Pierre and Hélène Prince Vasili mimicked the sobbing of Sergéy Kuzmich and at the same time his eyes glanced toward his daughter and while he laughed the expression on his face clearly said Yes it s getting on it will all be settled today Anna Pávlovna threatened him on behalf of our dear Vyazmítinov and in her eyes which for an instant glanced at Pierre Prince Vasili read a congratulation on his future son in law and on his daughter s happiness The old princess sighed sadly as she offered some wine to the old lady next to her and glanced angrily at her daughter and her sigh seemed to say Yes, there s nothing left for you and me but to sip sweet wine my dear now that the time has come for these young

provo

this is

tist gl

Th

the attraction of a healthy and handsome young man and woman for one another And this human feeling dominated

everything else nd soared bo e all their f fected cha ter Jests fell flat news wa not in teresti d the a imati n wa es dently f rted N t nly the guests but e n the foot men waiti at table eemed to feel this, and they f rgot th ir d ties s they looked t the t face and at

lo e.

P erre felt that h was the cent of t all and this both pleased d embarrassed him. He was like man urely bso bed n som occupa tion. H did t see hear u derstand any thi clearly Only now d then d tached ideas and mp essions from the wo ld f real ty shot unexpectedly through his m d.

"So t is all finished he thought. And how has t all happe ed. H w quickly! N w I kn w tuat t because f her al n n r of myself a. e, b t because f every e t must neve tabl come bo They are all expect t they are so ure that t will happen that I can not, I ca t, disappo t them. B t h w w ll it be? I d t know b t t will certa nly happen! thought P erre glancin t those dazzl h ul ders close t his eyes.

O he w uld dd ly feel ashamed f he knew not what. H felt t wkward t attract everyo e ttent n nd t be con de ed l ck ma and, with his pl n f ce to be looked as sort I Paris possessed f Helen. But no doubt t always is and must be so he con soled himself A d bes des what ha e I done t bri t bout? H w did t begi I tra eled from Mosc w w th Prince Vasil Then there as noth g So why hould I n t tay t his house Then I pl yed cards with her and p cked p her reticul d dro out w th her H w did t begin, when did t all com bou ?" A d here h was tti by her d her betrothed see g hear feel he nearness, her breath her mo em ts, her beauty Then t would uddenly seem t him that t was n t h b t h who wa so u usually bea tiful nd that that was wh they all looked so t him, nd fla tered by this general dmiration he ould expa d his chest, raise his head, nd re p hi good f rtun S ddenly h heard f m lia ce epeati g someth t him sec nd t m B t P err was so bso bed that he d d not dersta d what wa sa d.

I m aski g yo when you last heard from Bolk k repea ed Pri ce Vasil third time. II bsen mi ded y u re my dear f ll w

Prince V il sm led nd P erre not ced t t e eryo as sm l g at h m nd Hélène. ll know it thought m- Hél

rom end

ed to want to know thus in o u t o se d dispute

H can one talk or th nk of uch trifles th l t P erre

Yes from Olm tz he answered w th a gh.

After upper P erre w tl his partner fol lowed th others nto the draw g room. The guests began to disperse some w thout takin lea e of Hélène. Some if unw ll to d s tra t h from n mportant occup tion came up t her f r moment d made haste t go way refus to let her see them off. The d plomati t preserved m urnful s lence he l ft the draw room. He p ctured the a ty f h s d pl m tic career n comparison w th P erre s happ ess. The old general grumbled t his w fe when sh ked how his leg was. Oh th old fool he th u ht. "That Pr ess Hélè e will be beaut ful till h n sh fifty

I thi k I may congratul te you, whi pe ed Anna P l vn t the ld p cess, kiss n h soundly If I h dn t this headache I d ha e stayed lo er

Th old pri cess d d not reply she was t mented by jealousy of her da ghte h pp ess.

While th guests wer taki g their lea e, P err rema ed f I n tum l ne w th Hélè e n the l ttl draw g room wl ere they were ttin He had oft n bef re durin the la t s x weeks ma ned alo e w th he but had ever poke to h of l e Now he felt that t was nev t ble but he could n t make p hi mind t take the fin l st p H f lt shamed h f lt that he was occupy someo e els pl ce here bes d Hélène. "Th happ ess is not f you, some n er o whispered to him. "This happ ess is f r thos who ha e n t in them wh t there is n you

B t, as h had t say something, he began by aski g her wh ther she was satisfied w th the party Sh repl ed her usual mpl manner that this n m day of hers had been *one of the* pleasantest h had ever had.

Some f he nearest latı es had not yet l ft. They w re tti g the large draw room. Pri V l came p o P erre w th langu d foots ps. P err rose d sa d t was getti g

late Prince Vasíli gave him a look of stern inquiry as though what Pierre had just said was so strange that one could not take it in But then the expression of severity changed and

to his daughter and addressing her with the careless tone of habitual tenderness natural to parents who have petted their children from babyhood but which Prince Vasíli had only acquired by imitating other parents

And he again turned to Pierre

Sergey Kuzmích—From all sides— he said unbuttoning the top button of his waistcoat

Pierre smiled but his smile showed that he knew it was not the story about Sergéy Kuzmích that interested Prince Vasíli just then and Prince Vasíli saw that Pierre knew this He suddenly muttered something and went away It seemed to Pierre that even the prince was disconcerted The sight of the discomposure of that old man of the world touched Pierre he looked at Hélène and she too seemed disconcerted and her look seemed to say Well it is your own fault

Kuzmích asking what the point of the story was as he had not heard it properly Hélène answered with a smile that she too had missed it

When Prince Vasíli returned to the drawing room the princess his wife was talking in low tones to the elderly lady about Pierre

Of course it is a very brilliant match but happiness my dear

Marriages are made in heaven replied the elderly lady

Prince Vasíli passed by seeming not to hear the ladies and sat down on a sofa in a far corner of the room He closed his eyes and seemed to be dozing His head sank forward and then he roused himself

Aline he said to his wife go and see what they are about

The princess went up to the door passed by it with a dignified and indifferent air and glanced into the little drawing room Pierre and Hélène still sat talking just as before

Still the same she said to her husband

Prince Vasíli frowned twisting his mouth and with resolute steps went past the ladies into the little drawing room With quick steps he went joyfully up to Pierre His face was so unusually triumphant that Pierre rose in alarm on seeing it

Thank God! said Prince Vasíli My wife has told me everything! —(He put one arm around Pierre and the other around his daughter)— My dear boy Lelya I am very pleased (His voice trembled) I loved your father and she will make you a good wife God bless you!

He embraced his daughter and then again Pierre and kissed him with his malodorous mouth Tears actually moistened his cheeks

Princess come here! he shouted

The old princess came in and also wept The elderly lady was using her handkerchief too Pierre was kissed and he kissed the beautiful Hélène s hand several times After a while they were left alone again

All this had to be and could not be otherwise thought Pierre so it is useless to ask whether it is good or bad It is good because it s definite and one is rid of the old tormenting doubt Pierre held the hand of his betrothed in silence looking at her beautiful bosom as it rose and fell

Hélène! he said aloud and paused

Something special is always said in such cases he thought but could not remember what it was that people say He looked at her face She drew nearer to him Her face flushed

Oh take those off those she said pointing to his spectacles

Pierre took them off and his eyes besides the strange look eyes have from which spectacles have just been removed had also a frightened and inquiring look He was about to stoop over her hand and kiss it but with a rapid almost brutal movement of her head she intercepted his lips and met them with her own Her face struck Pierre by its altered unpleasantly excited expression

It is too late now it s done besides I love her thought Pierre

Je vous aime he said remembering what has to be said at such moments but his words sounded so weak that he felt ashamed of himself

Six weeks later he was married and settled

of millions of money

CHAPTER III

nd Prince N cholas Bolkónski recei ed a etter from Prince Vasili n No ember S nnouncing that h d his son would be p y- g him a visit. I am tartin on journey of

deep respect that, emulatin his father he feels for you.

It seems that there will be no need t bring Mary out, suitors are comi t us f th ir own ccord, incau usl remarked th little prin cess hearn th ews.

Prince N cholas frowned, but sa d nothi

A f rtn t after th l er Prince Vasil s serva ts cam o even n d ance of him, and he d hi so arri ed t da

O d Bolkón ki had lways had poo opin ion f Prin Vasili character but mo so recentl ce th ew n of Paul d Alexander Pri ce Vasil had risen t h h po- sition d honors. A d now from th hints co tai ed h. let er d i en by th l ttle princess, he saw wh h wa the w nd was bl w in, and h. low p n n cha ed nt feel o f co emptuous ll w ll. H sn rted whenev er h mentio ed him. O th da f Pri ce V s a arri al Pri ce Bolk k was particul l disco en ed d o l t mper Wh ther he as in bad emper because Pri ce Vasili was comir or whether h be n n bad temper ma him speciall oved t Pri ce V l vis t, he wa bad temper nd n th morn ing Tikho had alread d sed th archi ect not to o th p e w th his report.

Do yo hear how he walk said T k hon, drawin th archi ect s t tion to th sound f th prince footsteps. "Stepp flat on hi heels—w know what that means.

H wever in o clock th pr ce hi vel et oa w th sabl ollar nd cap went ou f his usual walk. It had nowed th da bef re nd th p th t th hothouse l n which the pri ce was n th hab t of walking, had been wep th ma ks f th broom were still vibl th w nd sho el had been lef ucki g n f the soft nowbanks that bordered bo h des f th path. Th prince en through th conservat ries, th serf quarters, and t outbu dings, frown g and silent.

Ca e b pass h asked his overseer a venerable man resembl g his master in man ners nd looks, who was c ompan n h m back to the house.

"Th w is deep. I am ha ng the enue swept, your hono "

The prince bowed h head and went up to the porch. God be thanked, thou ht the o erseer the s orm has blown o er!

It would ha e been hard to dr e up o ho he dded. "I heard, your hono that m ter com to visit your hono "

The pri ce turned round to the overseer and fixed his eyes on him, frown

"What A min ste What min ster Who ga orders h sa d n his shrill harsh vo ce "Th road is not swept f r the pri cess m dau h e but f a minister! F m there ar n m nisters

"Y ur h nor I thou ht

"Y u thought sh ted the prince his words comin mo and m e rap dly a d distinctly "Y u thou ht Rascal Bl ck guards I'll teach you t thi k and I fu h s t k h swun t and would ha e h t Al pátych, th erseer had n t tl l tter n t t el o ded th bl w "Th u ht Black guards h uted h pri ce rap dly

him r perhaps f th t ery reason th pr n thou h h continued to hout Bl ckguard

Throw the snow back o the road did not l ft h st ck gain but hurried nto the h use

Bef re d ner Princess Mary nd M demo sell Bourn nn who knew that the prince wa bad humo tood wa tin him M dem selle Bourienne w th a r diant face that sa d I kn w nothin I am the same as usual d Prin ess Mary pal frightened, nd w th down cast eyes. What she f und hardest to bea wa t know that on uch occas n h ou ht t be ha lik M demo sell Bour but could not. Sh tho ght "If I eem n t to o ce h will think that I d n t symp thize w th h m f I seem sad nd o t of spirits myself he will sa (as he has d ne before) that I m n th dumps.

Th pri ce looked t his dau hter fri ht ened face and rted.

Fool o dummy! he muttered.

sell Bourienne w th bri ht smile, so sh

won t come down It is natural in her state

Hm! Hm! muttered the prince sitting down

His plate seemed to him not quite clean and pointing to a spot he flung it away Tikhon caught it and handed it to a footman The little princess was not unwell but had such an overpowering fear of the prince that hearing he was in a bad humor she had decided not to appear

I am afraid for the baby she said to Mademoiselle Bourienne Heaven knows what a fright might do

In general at Bald Hills the little princess lived in constant fear and with a sense of antipathy to the old prince which she did not realize because the fear was so much the stronger feeling The prince reciprocated this antipathy but it was overpowered by his contempt for her When the little princess had grown accustomed to life at Bald Hills she took a special fancy to Mademoiselle Bourienne spent whole days with her asked her to sleep in her room and often talked with her about the old prince and criticized him

re-

mar ding

her His

Excellency Prince Vasili Kurágin and h s son

t

and Princess Mary know I don t want him (He looked at his blushing daughter) Are you unwell today? Eh? Afraid of the minister as that idiot Alpátych called him this morning?

No mon père

Though Mademoiselle Bourienne had been so unsuccessful in her choice of a subject she did not stop talking but chattered about the conservatories and the beauty of a flower that had just opened and after the soup the prince became more genial

After dinner he went to see his daughter in law The little princess was sitting at a small table chattering with Másha her maid She grew pale on seeing her father in law

She was much altered She was now plain rather than pretty Her cheeks had sunk her lip was drawn up and her eyes drawn down

Yes I feel a kind of oppression she said in reply to the prince s question as to how she felt

Do you want anything?

No merci mon père

Well all right all right

He left the room and went to the waiting room where Alpátych stood with bowed head

Has the snow been shoveled back?

Yes your excellency Forgive me for heaven s sake It was only my stupidity

All right all right interrupted the prince and laughing in his unnatural way he stretched out his hand for Alpátych to kiss and then proceeded to his study

Prince Vasili arrived that evenin He was met in the avenue by coachmen and footmen who with loud shouts dragged his sle hs up *to one of the lodges over the road purposely* laden with snow

Prince Vasili and Anatole had separate rooms assigned to them

Anatole having taken off his overcoat sat with arms akimbo before a table on a corner of

which someone for some reason had to provide

her if she really has so much money? That never does any harm thought Anatole

He shaved and scented himself with the care and elegance which had become habitual to

two valets were busy dressing him and he

I say Father joking apart is she very hideous? Anatole asked as if continuing a conversation the subject of which had often been mentioned during the journey

Enough! What nonsense! Above all try to be respectful and cautious with the old prince

If he starts a row I ll go away said Prince Anatole I can t bear those old men! Eh?

Remember for you everything depends on this

In the meantime not only was it known in the maidservants rooms that the minister and his son had arrived but the appearance of both had been minutely described Princess Mary was sitting alone in her room vainly trying to master her agitation

"Why d d they writ why d d Lise tell m n ent she s d look

Y know they e ome M r y sa u me l ttle p ess, w ddl n nd nk g h ly t rm h

She w s l n th loo e gown she generally w e th m n g but had n one of h r best dresses. H ha w ca efully done d he f was n m ted wh h h we er did t co l ts unk n nd f d d o tl n s D essed h d t b n P tersbu g so ty t was st ll m t ce ble h w m ch pl e h had b me S me u btru t h h d be dd d t M demo elle B e es t let hich de ed her fresh d pretty f y t m e ttra t

Wh t Ar y g g t ema n as y u are d p ? sh began 'They ll be an th t the g tlemen th draw room d w sh ll h t g d wn nd y h t m t ed y rs lf p t lll

The l ttl p ss got p ra g f rth m d a d h rr edly d merr ly b gan t de d carry t pl n f h w Pri ces Mary hould be dressed. P ess M ry s lf-esteem was und d by th f t th t the rn al f u t g ated h d t ll mo e so by both h om p ha g th least co pt n that t ld b th rw e T t ll them th t he f lt hamed f h rs lf d f them w uld b t betray h g tat wh le t d cl e their of f rs t d ess h w ld p l g th b te d t She fl hed her bea t f l yes grew d m ed bl tches cam h f e nd t took th tra t e m tyrl k p ess t so ft s he bm tted h rs lf t M demo ll Bou d L e. Both thes omen q t er ly tr ed to m ke h look p etty Sh as so pl n that e ther f them ld th k f l er l so they began d ess he w th pe fect e ty nd w th

tl e nai e nd firm conv ct on women h e m t f c pretty

N retty M ry ma oon to the fate of your hol l le m y be a t But tl o e is too l ght it not becom ng h f e d whole ty he t the h r comb d up a d the blue sca t ged lo e on the l t m roon dr s nd so on all ould be well They f rgot tl at the fri hten d f ce and the f ut c ld n t be alte ed and th t h we e they m ht change the etting and

first n s de a d th n on the other

N t w ll n t d h a d dec d dly clasping her h nd N Mary re lly th s dress d es n t s t you I p efer y u n y u l ttle gray

sell B u en h w I hall rrange t he dded mil g tl f tat of rt t c pleasur

But when K t e b ought the req ed dress Pri cess M ry em d tt g m t onless be f re th gl ss look ng t h f ce d saw in th m rr h y f ll f tears nd h r mouth qu eri ready t burst nt bs

Com d pri ess d M demo selle B u enn ju t e m e l ttle eff rt.

Th l ttle pri cess t k ng the dress f om the m d cam p t P ess Mary

'W ll n w we ll rra ge someth g qu te mpl d b com sh sa d

The th ee ces hers M demo selle Bour d K t wh w l u hing t some th g m gl d n m rry sound l ke th ch rping f b ds

N le me l aid P n e Mary

He e so d d so ser u d o sad that th ch rp g f th b rd was l n e l to ce.

won t come down It is natural in her state

Hm! Hm! muttered the prince sitting down

His plate seemed to him not quite clean and pointing to a spot he flung it away Tikhon caugl ... tle pr ... overp ... he wa in a bad humor she had decided not to appear

I am afraid for the baby she said to Mademoiselle Bourienne Heaven knows what a fright might do

In general at Bald Hills the little princess lived in constant fear and with a sense of antipathy to the old prince which she did not realize because the fear was so much the stronger feeling The prince reciprocated this antipathy but it was overpowered by his contempt for her When the little princess had grown accustomed to life at Bald Hills she took a special fancy to Mademoiselle Bourienne spent whole days with her asked her to sleep in her room and often talked with her about the old prince and criticized him

So we are to have visitors *mon prince?* remarked Mademoiselle Bourienne unfolding her white napkin with her rosy fingers His Excellency Prince Vasili Kurágin and his son I understand? she said inquiringly

Hm!—his excellency is a puppy I got him his appointment in the service said the prince disdainfully Why his son is coming I don t understand Perhaps Princess Elizabeth and Princess Mary know I don t want him (He looked at his blushing daughter) Are you unwell today? Eh? Afraid of the minister as that idiot Alpátych called him this morning?

No *mon père*

Though ... so unsucc ... did not s ... conservato ... and the beauty of a flower that had just opened and after the soup the prince became more genial

After dinner he went to see his daughter in law The little princess was sitting at a small table chattering with Másha her maid She grew pale on seeing her father in law

She was much altered She was now plain rather than pretty Her cheeks had sunk her

... felt

Do you want anything?

No *merci mon père*

Well all right all right

He left the room and went to the waiting room

Ha

Ye

en s ...

... to his study

Prince Vasili arrived that evenin He was met in the avenue by coachmen and footmen who with loud shouts dragged his sleighs up to one of the lodges over the road purposely laden with snow

Prince Vasili and Anatole had separate rooms assigned to them

Anatole having taken off his overcoat sat with arms akimbo before a table on a corner of which he smilingly and absent mindedly fixed his large and handsome eyes He regarded his whole life as a continual round of amusement which someone for some reason had to provide for him And he looked on this visit to a churlish old man and a rich and ugly heiress in the same way All this might he thought turn out very well and amusingly And why not marry her if she reall ... er

I

anc ... him and his handsome head held high entered his father s room with the good humored and victorious air natural to him Prince Vasili s two valets were busy dressing him and he looked round with much animation and cheerfully nodded to his son as the latter entered as if to say Yes that s how I want you to look

I say Father joking apart is she very h ... eous? Anatole asked as if continuing a conversation the subject of which had often been mentioned during the journey

Enough! What nonsense! Above all try to be respectful and cautious with the old prince

If he starts a row I ll go away said Prince Anatole I can t bear those old men! Eh?

Remember for you everything depends on this

In the meantime not only was it known in the maidservants rooms that the minister and his son had arrived but the appearance of both had been minutely described Princess Mary was sitting alone in her room vainly trying to master her agitation

foot, and w th hus he d a l ttl bent,

eady eloque t n co ers uo l
he f culty so aluable n oc ty of compo-
ure d mpert b bl elf po ess n If
nan lackin elf-confid e em ns dumb
first introd u n a d betrays con cious-
ess f the imp p ety f s ch le c a d n
ty t fi d som th g t say the effect is
bad B t A t le wa d mb swu h foot a d
smil gly xami ed th p cess ha r It wa
ev dent th t he could be l nt n th way f r
ery l t m If y ne finds th lenc
in e e t, l t him talk, but I don t w nt
to h eemed t say Bes des this n h s be-
ha t m n A t l h d m nn wl ch
part cularly nsp res n tl m cur o ty awe
d ev l — percil us co ci us ess of
his ms per ty It was as f he a d t them
I k ow y I kn w y u, but why h uld I
bothe bo t y Y u d be ly too gl d of
course P hap h d d n t really think th s
h h m t w me —e n prob bly h d d
t, f ge eral h th ught ery little—but
h looks d ma e g a th t mp ess n.
The pri cess f lt this, nd as f w h n t how
him that l d d t e n da e e pect to
terest l m, he turn d t hi f ther Tl n
ersati n w g eral nd n mated, thanks to
Pri cess Li s d l ttl d wny l p th t
l f ed er h wh t t eth. Sh met Pri V
l th th t playful m nn ft n empl yed
by l ly hatty people d co t n the
ss mpt th t be w n th pers n they so
ddress d thems l es there ar som semi
pri t l g-established jokes d mus g
em sc es, th u h o such emin en es
eally exist—j t e ex ted n thi case
Pri e V asil ead ly d pted her t d th
l ttle p cess lso drew A tol wh m h
hardly k ew t thes amus g collecti ns
l th s th t h d n occurred. M dem
selle Bo ri lso hared them d e
Pr ess M ry f lt hers lf pleasa tly mad t
ha thes merry em sc es

Her least w hall ha h b fit of
comp y ll t oursel es, dea p ce
sa d th l ttle pri ess (f cours French)
Pri V l It n t A n t r
ep wher lways ran way y u e-
member *tt he 4 tt*

Ah, b t y w n t talk pol tics to me like
A ett

A Pa l vna.

And our l ttle te table?

Oh yes!

Why is t y u were ne er at Annette s? the
l ttle pr n ess sked Anat le. Ah I kn w I
kn w h sa d th a sly glance yo r broth
r H ppolyte t ld m bout yo r go ngs on
Oh nd she hook l e fi g r t h m I h e
e e hea d f y ur d gs n P s

And d dn t H ppolyte tell you ked
Prin e V l t rn ng to h son d seiz g
th l ttl p ess arm f l uld l ve ru

P ces u u

t s

She took the l berty f i qu ng whether t
h d l ft P nd h w

th t l ttl c mp n l l h p sl e w ll b
he l n w th he when we re marr ed *I
p t te t gent lle*

The ld p dress d leisu ly his tudy

to h ms lf. What a ered h m w s th t the
comi g f these is tors re ed n h m nd n
uns ttled quest on he lw y tr d t fl o e
bout which h lways dec ed h mself The
questi was whether h could ev r b g h m
elf t p rt f m h d ughte nd g he t
l usb nd. Th prince ever directly ked
himself th t questi n kn w bef ha d
th t h w uld ha t nswer t justly d jus-
ti e cl hed n t nly w th his feel gs bu w th
th ry poss b l ty f l f L f w th ut Pr
cess M ry l ttl as he eemed to al he wa
untha kable to him. A d why h uld he
marry? h th ght. T b u h ppy f c
ta Ther Li m rr ed to Andrew— bet
ter hu b d ne w uld thi k ould h rdly be
f u d ow d ys—but is he co te ted th

Th li tl on is charm g

They looked at the beautiful large thoughtful eyes full of tears and of thoughts gazing shiningly and imploringly at them and understood that it was useless and even cruel to insist

At least change your coiffure said the little princess Didn t I tell you she went on turning reproachfully to Mademoiselle Bourienne Mary s is a face which such a coiffure does not suit in the least Not in the least! Please change it

Leave me alone please leave me alone! It is all quite the same to me answered a voice struggling with tears

Mademoiselle Bourienne and the little princess had to own to themselves that Princess Mary in this guise looked very plain worse than usual but it was too late She was looking at them with an expression they both knew an expression thoughtful and sad This expression in Princess Mary did not frighten them (she never inspired fear in anyone) but they knew that when it appeared on her face she became mute and was not to be shaken in her determination

You will change it won t you? said Lise And as Princess Mary gave no answer she left the room

Princess Mary was left alone She did not comply with Lise s request she not only left her hair as it was but did not even look in her glass Letting her arms fall helplessly she sat with downcast eyes and pondered A husband a man a strong dominant and strangely attractive being rose in her imagination and carried her into a totally different happy world of his own She fancied a child *her own*—such as she had seen the day before in the arms of her nurse s daughter—at her own breast the husband standing by and gazing tenderly at her and the child But no it is impossible I am too ugly she thought

Please come to tea The prince will be out in a moment came the maid s voice at the door

She roused herself and felt appalled at what she had been thinking and before going down she went into the room where the icons hung and her eyes fixed on the dark face of a large icon of the Saviour lit by a lamp she stood before it with folded hands for a few moments A painful doubt filled her soul Could the joy of love of earthly love for a man be for her? In her thoughts of marriage Princess Mary dreamed of happiness and of children but her strongest most deeply hidden longing was for earthly love The more she tried to hide this feeling from others and even from herself the stronger it grew O God she said how am I to stifle in my heart these temptations of the devil? How am I to renounce forever these vile fancies so as peacefully to fulfill Thy will And scarcely had she put that question than God gave her the answer in her own heart. Desire nothing for thyself seek nothin be not anxious or envious Man s future and thy own fate must remain hidden from thee but live so that thou mayest be ready for anythin If it be God s will to prove thee in the duties

longing) Princess Mary sighed and havin crossed herself went down thinking neither of her gown and coiffure nor of how she would go in nor of what she would say What could all that matter in comparison with the will of God without Whose care not a hair of man s head can fall?

CHAPTER IV

When Princess Mary came down Prince Vasili and his son were already in the drawing room talking to the little princess and Mademoiselle Bourienne When she entered with her heavy step treading on her heels the gentlemen and Mademoiselle Bourienne rose and the little princess indicating her to the gentlemen said *Voilà Marie* Princess Mary saw them all and saw them in detail She saw Prince Vasili s face serious for an instant at the sight of her but immediately smiling again and the little princess curiously noting the impression Marie produced on the visitors And she saw Mademoiselle Bourienne with her ribbon and pretty face and her unusually animated look which was fixed on *him* but *him* she could not see she only saw something large brilliant and handsome moving toward her as she entered the room Prince Vasili approached first and she kissed the bold forehead that bent over her hand and answered his question by saying that on the contrary she remembered him quite well Then Anatole came up to her She still could not see him She only felt a soft hand taking hers firmly and she touched with her lips a white forehead over which was beautiful light brown hair smelling of pomade When she looked up at him she was struck by his beauty Anatole stood with his right thumb under a button of his uniform his chest expanded and his back drawn in slightly swing

ing one foot and w th h s head a littl bent looked th be m g f c at the p inc s w th ut pe king nde d ntly n t th nk ng about her at ll An tole w n t qu ck tted nor ready reloq e t n n ers t n but h h d the f culty so n luabl n s ety of compo- sure nd imp tu b ble s lf p s s on If a lf onfid n e rem ns dumb

co e e t l t h m t to he eem d t y B d th s n h s be havi r to w men A t leh d m nn r wl ch n cul ly p n them ur o ty we of

bothe bo t y u? Y u d be ly too g u to rse Pe l p he d d t e lly th nk th s h he met w m — e p b bly h d d f e l h th ght ery l ttl —but

ral nd n m u

A d ur l ttle t a table?

Oh yes!

Why s t you were n er at Annette s? the l ttle pr ncess ked Anatole Ah I kn w I kn w shes d ith a sly glance y ur broth

Hipp lyte t ld me bout your g ngs on Oh! d l e shook her finger t l m I have even he d f your d ngs n Par s

And d dn t H pp lyte tell you asked Pr nce V fl tu n g t h s s n n l se ng th l ttle pr nc s arm a f l e w ul l l e run h h d tu t m n ged t catch l er

P n ess he added

Wh n P r s wa ment o ed M dem elle Bou nne f r h r p rt e z d tle ppo t ty f jo n g n th gen ral curre t of recollec t ons

She took the l berty of nqu r ng wh ther it w l ngs Anat l had left Pa s and h he h d l ked th t c ty Anat le answered the Fr ch wom n very ead ly nd looki at her h m l talk d to her bo t her n t e

th t l ttle c mp n o l l hope t e w ul her lo g w th he whe we re married, *la pet te e t g t ll*

The ld p ed e cd l ely i his study f d o de g what he was to d The c m g of tl e v tors an oyed h m V fl d tl t so f h t

eally t—j t n n x t d n Pri V l d ly d p d l e t d th l ttl p ess lso d w An t l wh m sh

sha th m rry m

Her t least we h ll h e th be fit f y comp y ll rs l dea p ce sa d h l t l p es (f rs F e ch) to Pr V il It t t A tt cepti wh y u lw y ra w y yo re- membe *tt hè A tt*

Ah, b t y u w t t lk pol t cs to me like A et e!

A Pâ l ma.

self t p t f m h s d ghter d g e her to a h b d Th pri ce never d e tly asked himself th t q st k ow ng befo eha d th t he v uld have to a s er t j stly a d jus- t e d hed not only w th his feel gs bu w th the ery po s b l ty f l fe Life w thout Prin- es M ry l ttl h e med to val her was th k ble t l m. And why should she m rry? h th ht. To be u happy for e t The e L married to And — Be- ter h b d e w uld think could hardly be f d n wadays—but is he contented w Th li tl one is charming.

her lot? And who would marry Marie for love? Plain and awkward! They'll take her for her connections and wealth Are there no women living unmarried and even the happier for it? So thought Prince Bolkónski while dressing and yet the question he was always putting off demanded an immediate answer Prince Vasíli had brought his son with the evident intention of proposing and today or tomorrow he would probably ask for an answer His birth and position in society were not bad Well I've nothing against it the prince said to himself but he must be worthy of her And that is what we shall see

That is what we shall see! That is what we shall see! he added aloud

He entered the drawing room with his usual alert step glancing rapidly round the company He noticed the change in the little princess dress Mademoiselle Bourienne s ribbon Princess Mary s unbecoming coiffure Mademoiselle Bourienne s and Anatole s smiles and the loneliness of his daughter amid the general conversation Got herself up like a fool! he thought looking irritably at her She is shameless and he ignores her!

He went straight up to Prince Vasíli

Well! How d ye do? How d ye do? Glad to see you!

Friendship laughs at distance began Prince Vasíli in his usual rapid self confident familiar tone Here is my second son please love and befriend him

Prince Bolkónski surveyed Anatole

Fine young fellow! Fine young fellow! he said Well come and kiss me and he offered his cheek

Anatole kissed the old man and looked at him with curiosity and perfect composure waiting for a display of the eccentricities his father had told him to expect

Prince Bolkónski sat down in his usual place in the corner of the sofa and drawing up an armchair for Prince Vasíli pointed to it and began questioning him about political affairs and news He seemed to listen attentively to what Prince Vasíli said but kept glancing at Princess Mary

And so they are writing from Potsdam already? he said repeating Prince Vasíli s last words Then rising he suddenly went up to his daughter

Is it for visitors you ve got yourself up like that eh? said he Fine very fine! You have done up your hair in this new way for the visitors, and before the visitors I tell you that in future you are never to dare to change your way of dress without my consent

It was my fault *mon père* interceded the little princess with a blush

You must do as you please said Prince Bolkónski bowing to his daughter in law but she need not make a fool of herself she s plain enough as it is

And he sat down again paying no more attention to his daughter who was reduced to tears

On the contrary that coiffure suits the princess very well said Prince Vasíli

Now you young prince what s your name? said Prince Bolkónski turning to Anatole come here let us talk and get acquainted

Now the fun begins thought Anatole sitting down with a smile beside the old prince

Well my dear boy I hear you ve been educated abroad not taught to read and write by the deacon like your father and me Now tell me my dear boy are you serving in the Horse Guards? asked the old man scrutinizing Anatole closely and intently

No I have been transferred to the line said Anatole hardly able to restrain his laughter

Ah! That s a good thing So my dear boy you wish to serve the Tsar and the country? It is wartime Such a fine fellow must serve Well are you off to the front?

No Prince our regiment has gone to the front but I am attached what is it I am attached to Papa? said Anatole turning to his father with a laugh

A splendid soldier splendid! What am I attached to! Ha ha ha! laughed Prince Bolkónski and Anatole laughed still louder Suddenly Prince Bolkónski frowned

You may go he said to Anatole

Anatole returned smiling to the ladies

And so you ve had him educated abroad Prince Vasíli haven t you? said the old prince to Prince Vasíli

I have done my best for him and I can assure you the education there is much better than ours

Yes everything is different nowadays everything is changed The lad s a fine fellow a fine fellow! Well come with me now He took Prince Vasíli s arm and led him to his study As soon as they were alone together Prince Vasíli announced his hopes and wishes to the old prince

Well do you think I shall prevent her that I can t part from her? said the old prince an

gnly "What an dea I m ready f r t t m r row O ly let me t ll you I nt t kn w my so law better Y u kn my p nc ples— everyth g bo bo rd I w ll k he t mo row your p es e f h w ll g th n he ca t y n. H ca t y a d I ll ee The old pri s orted. "Let her m rry t ll the same t m he scream d n the sam p ercin tone he p rti g from his son.

I will tell you frankly d Pr ce V asil th t e f crafty man co n ed of the

m

All right, all right, we ll e

A l ays happens wh n w men lead l nely l es f y l gth f t me witho t male soc ty o A t le ppeara all th tl ee w m f Pri ce Bolk k s h u eh ld f lt th t th ir l f had n t been e l t ll th n Th ir po ers f easo g f l d observ g

m fica e

Pri ess M ry grew qu t u ns us f h r f d co ff e. Th ha dsome pen f c of th ma wh m l t p haps be her husba d bso bed ll her t nt n H seemed t h k d bra determ ed ma ly nd m n n mous. She f lt co ed f that. Th us nd f d eams f f ture f m ly l fe cont ually rose her imag t n. Sh dro tl em way d t ed co eal them.

B t m I t too cold w th h m? tho ght th p ess. I try t be es rved beca n th d pth f my so l I feel too nea to h m I ead b the h ca k w what I th k f h m d say ma that I d n t l k him

A d Pri es M ry tried b ld t m n be d l t h ew gues Poo girl sh s des l h ly th ht A t le

M dem sell Bou n lso roused t great ex teme by A t l rri l th l t nothe w y Of co rs l handsom y ma w th t y d fi t pos n tho t l n u try d d t tend t der t her l f to rs g Pr Bol k nsk t ead l d t h m d be f end w h Pri ess M ry M dem iselle Bo en had l g be wa t f Rus p wh bl t pp ca t t gl her pe ty t th pl b dly d essed un ga ly Russia p esses wo ld fall n l

tl her a d carry her off and here at l st wa Russ n pr nce Mademoiselle Bourienne knew a st ry heard from her aunt but finished n h r own way which she l ked to repeat to herself It wa the tory f g rl wl o h d been seduced a d to whom her poor mothe (*s p u re mè*) *ppe red and repro ched* h r f y eld g to a m n w thout be m rr ed M dem lle Bour enne was *often* t u l ed to tears as n ma t he told th st ry t *I m* he sed ce And t w *l e* real Rus n p nce had appea ed. He would carry l er way d the *p re mè e* w uld ppear d h would marry her So l er f ture shaped tself n M demo ell Bourien e s head t the ry t me she wa t lki g t An tole bout

w hed d t ed to pleas him s much s pos s ble

Th l ttle pri cess, l ke n ld war horse that hears th trumpet, unco sciously nd qu te f r tt h c nd tion p epa ed fo the f m l a gall p f coquetry w tl out ny ulteri m t e o ny truggle but w th nai and

pectacle f h power o er thes three w me feel f th

ctions.

Aft r tea tl e comp ny went t the tt n room nd Princess M ry wa ked to pl y n th l ch rd An t l l u h g and in l h p nts, cam d le ed on hu lbows, l c g h d bes d M dem ll B ur en e Prin ess M ry f lt h look w tl pa nfully joy us em t H f t so ta bore he n t most nt m tely poet c w rld nd the look he f lt upo l m de that w rld still m e poet c. B t Anat l exp ess on tl o gh his eyes were fi ed on her ef rred t t t h b t t th m ements f M dem elle Bour e e l ttl foot hicl h wa then t h g w th h own under the l ch d M demo selle B uri e was also look g t *Pr* ess M ry nd n her l ly eyes th w a look of fearf l j y nd h pe

her lot? And who would marry Marie for love? Plain and awkward! They'll take her for her connections and wealth. Are there no women living unmarried and even the happier for it? So thought Prince Bolkónski while dressing and yet the question he was always putting off demanded an immediate answer. Prince Vasíli had brought his son with the evident intention of proposing and today or tomorrow he would probably ask for an answer. His birth and position in society were not bad. Well I've nothing against it the prince said to himself but he must be worthy of her. And that is what we shall see

That is what we shall see! That is what we shall see! he added aloud

He entered the drawing room with his usual alert step glancing rapidly round the company. He noticed the change in the little princess dress Mademoiselle Bourienne's ribbon Princess Mary's unbecoming coiffure Made

shame

Well! How d'ye do? How d'ye do? Glad to see you!

befriend him

Prince Bolkonski surveyed Anatole

Fine young fellow! Fine young fellow! he said. Well come and kiss me and he offered his cheek

Anatole kissed the old man and looked at him with curiosity and perfect composure waiting for a display of the eccentricities his father had told him to expect

Prince Bolkónski sat down in his usual place in the corner of the sofa and drawing up an armchair for Prince Vasíli pointed to it and began questioning him about political affairs and news. He seemed to listen attentively to what Prince Vasíli said but kept glancing at Princess Mary

And so they are writing from Potsdam already? he said repeating Prince Vasíli's last word. Then rising he suddenly went up to his daughter

Is it for visitors you've got yourself up like that eh? said he. Fine very fine! You have done up your hair in this new way for the visitors, and before the visitors I tell you that in future you are never to dare to change your way of dress without my consent

It was my fault *mon père* interceded the little princess with a blush

You must do as you please said Prince Bolkónski bowing to his daughter in law but she need not make a fool of herself she's plain enough as it is

And he sat down again paying no more attention to his daughter who was reduced to tears

On the contrary that coiffure suits the princess very well said Prince Vasíli

Now you young prince what's your name? said Prince Bolkónski turning to Anatole,

Well my dear boy I hear you've been educated abroad not taught to read and write by the deacon like your father and me. Now tell me my dear boy are you serving in the Horse Guards? asked the old man scrutinizing Anatole closely and intently

No I have been transferred to the line said Anatole hardly able to restrain his laughter

Ah! That's a good thing. So my dear boy you wish to serve the Tsar and the country? It is wartime. Such a fine fellow must serve. Well, are you off to the front?

No Prince our regiment has gone to the front but I am attached what is it I am attached to Papa? said Anatole turning to his father with a laugh

A splendid soldier splendid! What am I

You may go he said to Anatole

Anatole returned smiling to the ladies

And so you've had him educated abroad, Prince Vasíli haven't you? said the old prince to Prince Vasíli

I have done my best for him and I can assure you the education there is much better than ours

Yes everything is different nowadays every thing is changed. The lad's a fine fellow a fine fellow! Well come with me now. He took Prince Vasíli's arm and led him to his study

As soon as they were alone together Prince Vasíli announced his hopes and wishes to the old prince

Well do you think I shall prevent her that I can't part from her? said the old prince an

"Gone to bed?" asked the prince.

Tikhon, like all good valets, instinctively knew the direction of his master's thoughts. He guessed that the question referred to Prince Vasili and his son.

"They have gone to bed and put out their lights, your excellency."

"No good ... no good ..." said the prince rapidly, and thrusting his feet into his slippers and his arms into the sleeves of his dressing gown, he went to the couch on which he slept.

Though no words had passed between Anatole and Mademoiselle Bourienne, they quite understood one another as to the first part of their romance up to the appearance of the pauvre mère; they understood that they had much to say to one another in private and so they had been seeking an opportunity since morning to meet one another alone. When Princess Mary went to her father's room at the usual hour Mademoiselle Bourienne and Anatole met in the conservatory.

Princess Mary went to the door of the study with special trepidation. It seemed to her that not only did everybody know that her fate would be decided that day, but that they also knew what she thought about it. She read this in Tikhon's face and in that of Prince Vasili's valet, who made her a low bow when she met him in the corridor carrying hot water.

The old prince was very affectionate and careful in his treatment of his daughter that morning. Princess Mary well knew this painstaking expression of her father's. His face wore that expression when his dry hands clenched with vexation at her not understanding a sum in arithmetic, when rising from his chair he would walk away from her repeating in a low voice the same words several times over.

He came to the point at once, treating her ceremoniously.

"I have had a proposition made me concerning you," he said with an unnatural smile. "I expect you have guessed that Prince Vasili has not come and brought his pupil with him" (for some reason Prince Bolkonski referred to Anatole as a "pupil") "for the sake of my beautiful eyes. Last night a proposition was made me on your account and, as you know my principles, I refer it to you."

"How am I to understand you, mon père?" said the princess, growing pale and then blushing.

"How understand me!" cried her father angrily. "Prince Vasili finds you to his taste as a daughter-in-law and makes a proposal to you on his pupil's behalf. That's how it's to be understood! 'How understand it'! ... And I ask you!"

"I do not know what you think, Father," whispered the princess.

"I? I? What of me? Leave me out of the question. I'm not going to get married. What [illegible] ded [illegible] moment the thought occurred to her that her fate would be decided now or never. She lowered her eyes so as not to see the gaze under which she felt that she could not think, but would only be able to submit from habit, and she said: "I wish only to do your will, but if I had to express my own desire ..." She had no time to finish. The old prince interrupted her:

"That's admirable!" he shouted. "He will take you with your dowry and take Mademoiselle Bourienne into the bargain. She'll be the wife, while you ..."

The prince stopped. He saw the effect these words had produced on his daughter. She lowered her head and was ready to burst into tears.

"Now then, now then, I'm only joking!" he said. "Remember this, Princess, I hold to the principle that a maiden has a full right to choose. I give you freedom. Only remember that your life's happiness depends on your decision. Never mind me!"

"But I do not know, Father!"

"There's no need to talk! He receives his orders and will marry you or anybody; but you are free to choose.... Go to your room, think it over, and come back in an hour and tell me in his presence: yes or no. I know you will pray over it. Well, pray if you like, but you had better think it over. Go! Yes or no, yes or no, yes or no!" he still shouted when the princess, as if lost in a fog, had already staggered out of the study.

Her fate was decided and happily decided. But what her father had said about Mademoiselle Bourienne was dreadful. It was untrue to be sure, but still it was terrible, and she could not help thinking of it. She was going straight on through the conservatory, neither seeing nor hearing anything, when suddenly the well-known whispering of Mademoiselle Bourienne aroused her. She raised her eyes, and two steps away saw Anatole embracing the Frenchwoman and whispering something to her. With a horrified expression on his handsome face, Anatole looked at Princess Mary, but did not at once take his arm from the waist of Mademoiselle

that was also new to the princess

Howshe loves me! thought Princess Mary How happy I am now and how happy I may be with such a friend and such a husband! Husband? Can it be possible? she thought not daring to look at his face but still feeling his eyes gazing at her

In the evening after supper when all were about to retire Anatole kissed Princess Mary s hand She did not know how she found the courage but she looked straight into his hand some face as it came near to her shortsighted eyes Turning from Princess Mary he went up and kissed Mademoiselle Bourienne s hand (This was not etiquette but then he did every thing so simply and with such assurance!) Mademoiselle Bourienne flushed and gave the princess a frightened look

What delicacy! thought the princess Is it possible that Amélie (Mademoiselle Bourienne) thinks I could be jealous of her and not value her pure affection and devotion to me? She went up to her and kissed her warmly Anatole went up to kiss the little princess hand

No! No! No! When your father writes to tell me that you are behaving well I will give you my hand to kiss Not till then! she said And smilingly raising a finger at him she left the room

CHAPTER V

They all separated but except Anatole who fell asleep as soon as he got into bed all kept

thing thought Princess Mary and fear which she had seldom experienced came upon her

—the devil—and he was also this man with the white forehead black eyebrows and red lips

She rang for her maid and asked her to sleep in her room

Mademoiselle Bourienne walked up and down the conservatory for a long time that eve

rebuking her for her fall

The little princess grumbled to her maid that her bed was badly made She could not lie either on her face or on her side Every position was awkward and uncomfortable and her burden oppressed her now more than ever because Anatole s presence had vividly recalled to her the time when she was not like that and when everything was light and gay She sat in an armchair in her dressing jacket and night cap and Katie sleepy and disheveled beat and turned the heavy feather bed for the third time muttering to herself

I told you it was all lumps and holes! the little princess repeated I should be glad enough to fall asleep so it s not my fault! and her voice quivered like that of a child about to cry

The old prince did not sleep either Tikhon half asleep heard him pacing angrily about and snorting The old prince felt as though he had been insulted through his daughter The insult was the more pointed because it concerned not himself but another his daughter whom he loved more than himself He kept telling himself that he would consider the whole matter and decide what was right and how he should act but instead of that he only excited himself more and more

The first man that turns up—she forgets her father and everything else runs upstairs and does up her hair and wags her tail and is unlike herself! Glad to throw her father over And she knew I should notice it Fr fr fr ! And don t I see that that idiot had eyes only for Bourienne—I shall have to get rid of her And how is it she has not pride enough to see it? If she has no pride for herself she might at least have some for my sake! She must be shown that the blockhead thinks nothing of

she has

old his daughter she was making a mistake and that Anatole meant to flirt with Mademoiselle Bourienne Princess Mary s self esteem would be wounded and his point (not to be parted from her) would be gained so pacifying himself with this thought he called Tikhon and began to undress

What devil brought them here? thought he while Tikhon was putting the nightshirt over his dried up old body and gray haired chest I never invited them They came to disturb my life—and there is not much of it left.

Devil take em! he muttered while his head was still covered by the shirt

Tikhon knew his master s habit of sometimes thinking aloud and therefore met with unaltered looks the angrily inquisitive expression of the face that emerged from the shirt.

Go e t bed? ked the p nce

Tikh n, l ke all good valets inst nct ely k ew th di ect n of his m ter s thoughts He guess d that the quest on referred to Prince Vasil d hi son.

"They h e gone t bed nd put out th ir l hts y ur ex ellency

n good s d the pr n rs

Th hn w as

t l and M d m is lle B u enne they qu te derstood n the t the first part of th ir rom ce up t th ppe ran e f the p in e mè e th y und rst od th t they h d much t s y to n n the p vate nd o they h d b en e k g n pportun ty nc m rn ng t me t ne n ther l ne Wh n Pr n ess M ry w nt t l er f the s room t the usual h r M d m ll Bo enn nd An tole met n th con ervatory

Pri es M ry went to th door of the study th spec l trep dat on It emed t h r th t not ly d d rybody kn w that her f t ld be decided th t d y but th t th y also k w wh t he th ht bout t She d thus Tikh s f d n th t f Princ Vas l l t, who made h l w bow wh n he met him the corr d carry g h i w ter

The ld p e w ry ff cu nate nd carel l n h t tment of his d u hter that m rn g Pri ess M ry w ll kn w th p ns uk g express of h f th s. His f w e th t exp ess wh n h s dry hands clenched w h at thern t derstand g um ar thm tic, wh n is l m his ch ir he ld w lk way from l er ep t ng n a l w e th m w rds ral t mes o er

He came t th po t treati g her em usly

Iha h d propos t n m d me con ern g y h sa d w th nn tural m le I exp tt y ha guessed th t P c V il has t me d bro ht h pup l w th h m (I some easo Prin B lk k i r f rr d to A t l as p p l) f th k of my be u tiful eyes. Last n ght p pos ti n was made m y ur co t d as y u kn w my prin ples l fer t t y u.

H w m l t u dersta d you m pè e? said the pri cess gr w p le nd then blush ng

H w dersta d me! cr ed he f ther an grily Pr Vasil fi d y u t his taste as daughter law d m kes proposal t you on his pup l s behalf. That s how t s to be un derstood! How understand it ! And I a k y u!

I do not kn w what you th nk, Father wh spe ed the prin es

I? I? What f me? Lea e me out of the quest n I m not go ng to get m rr ed. What about you? Th t s what I want to know

The p incess saw th t her f ther regarded w th d sappro al but at that mo h r f te

only be able to subm t s e said I wish nly to do your w ll but if I h d to exp ess my own desire She h d n t me t fin sh. The old prince nterrupted her

'Th t s dm rable! he houted He w ll t ke you w th y ur do ry nd take M demo s lle B uri nne into the b rga n She ll be the w fe wh l y u

rr w the ffect these

choose. I gi e y u l eeu u r that y u l f h pp ness depends on your de ci n Never m nd me!

But I do n t kn w F ther!

Tl e es n need t talk! He rece es h s rd rs a d w ll marry y u o anybody but y u ar fr t choo Go to y ur room think t o r nd m back n n h ur nd tell me n h p es n e yes n I kn you w ll pray o er t. Well pray I you l k b t you had bet ter th k t e Go! Yes r no yes or no yes n I he till h uted when the pri ess as if l t n fog h d already taggered ut f the tudy

Her f t was decided nd happ ly d cided.

o ce take his arm from th waist of M demoi-

selle Bourienne who had not yet seen her

Who s that? Why? Wait a moment! Ana

then shrugging his shoulders went to the door that led to his own apartments

An hour later Tíkhon came to call Princess Mary to the old prince he added that Prince Vasíli was also there When Tíkhon came to her Princess Mary was sitting on the sofa in her room holding the weeping Mademoiselle Bourienne in her arms and gently stroking her hair The princess beautiful eyes with all their former calm radiance were looking with tender affection and pity at Mademoiselle Bourienne s pretty face

No Princess I have lost your affection for ever!

aid Princess

can for your happiness

But you despise me You who are so pure can never understand being so carried away by passion Oh only my poor mother

I quite understand answered Princess Mary with a sad smile Calm yourself my dear I will go to my father she said and went out

Prince Vasíli with one leg thrown high over the other and a snuffbox in his hand was sit

when Princess Mary entered He hurriedly took a pinch of snuff

Ah my dear my dear! he began rising and taking her by both hands Then sighing he added My son s fate is in your hands Decide my dear good gentle Marie whom I have always loved as a daughter!

He drew back and a real tear appeared in his eye

Fr fr snorted Prince Bolkónski The prince is making a proposition to you in his pupil s—I mean his son s—name Do you wish or not to be Prince Anatole Kurágin s wife? Reply yes or no he shouted and then I shall reserve the right to state my opinion also Yes my opinion and only my opinion added Prince Bolkónski turning to Prince Vasíli and answering his imploring look Yes or no?

My desire is never to leave you Father never to separate my life from yours I don t wish to marry she answered positively glancing at Prince Vasíli and at her father with her beautiful eyes

Humbug! Nonsense! Humbug humbug humbug! cried Prince Bolkónski frowning and taking his daughter s hand he did not kiss her but only bending his forehead to hers just touched it and pressed her hand so that she winced and uttered a cry

Prince Vasíli rose

My dear I must tell you that this is a moment I shall never never forget But my dear will you not give us a little hope of touching this heart so kind and generous Say perhaps The future is so long Say perhaps

Prince what I have said is all there is in my heart I thank you for the honor but I shall never be your son s wife

Well so that s finished my dear fellow! I am very glad to have seen you Very glad! Go back to your rooms Princess Go! said the old prince Very very glad to have seen you repeated he embracing Prince Vasíli

My vocation is a different one thought Princess Mary My vocation is to be happy with another kind of happiness the happiness of love and self sacrifice And cost what it may I will arrange poor Amélie s happiness she loves him so passionately and so passionately

shall be so happy when she is his wife She is so unfortunate a stranger alone helpless! And oh God how passionately she must love him if she could so far forget herself! Perhaps I might have done the same! thought Princess Mary

CHAPTER VI

It was long since the Rostóvs had news of Nicholas Not till midwinter was the count at last handed a letter addressed in his son s hand writing On receiving it he ran on tiptoe to his study in alarm and haste trying to escape notice closed the door and began to read the letter

Anna Mikháylovna who always knew everything that passed in the house on hearing of the arrival of the letter went softly into the

ta ces had mpro ed, was till I i g w th the Rostóvs.

My dear frie d s d she in t ne of p theuc nqu ry prep red to ymp thize in any y

Th count sobbed yet more

"Nikóle ka lette va a

h count

hol time abo t the wa news nd bo I k h l r letter h d

Each time that these h nts began to ma e co tess a xi us and h gl ed unea ily at th co t d t Ann M khàyl na the l t ter ery dr tly turned the co ersati n to n

press pri ked up her rs f m the begin f the meal d was c rta n th t there wa som secret between her f ther nd An M khàyl vn that t h d som th g to do w th he b the nd th t An M khàylovn wa p ep n g them f t. B ld sh wa N tá h h k ew h w t e he m ther w t y thi rel t g to N kól nka d d n t ven t e t ask y q est t d but he k n wri

h fl g herself n her eck as soon as h

p—I k w y u kn w som thi g

A M khàyl hook h head.

Y ar l tl lyboots l sa d.

A letter from N kól k I m ure of tl exd med N tásha ead g co firmati n n A M khàyl n f ce.

B t f God sake be ca f l y u kn w how t may ffec y ur mamma.

I w ll I w ll only tell me! You w n t Tl en I w ll go t d tell at once

few words told l er th t

N tá a d

she ran off t once to Sónya.

N kólenka w unded a letter she ann u ced n gleeful triumph.

N h las was all S ya sa d instantly turn n wh te

N tá h eing the imp ess on the news of he brother s wound prod ced on Sónya felt fo the first t me the sorro ful de of the news

She rushed t Sónya hugged her and began t cry

A l ttle w und but he h s been m de n offi r he s well n w he wrote h mself sa d he th ugh her tears

Th re now It true that all o r wome re cryb b es emarked Pétya p ci g the room w th large esolute st des. N w I m

N tásha miled thro gh her tears.

k d So ya

But perh p sh dece ed y u. Let us go to M mma

Pétya p ed the room n lence for a t me

If I d been n N kólenka s pl ce I w uld ha e k lled e n m f th e F ench men he sa d. What nasty brutes they are! I d ha e killed so many th t the d ha e been heap f them

H ld your t ngue Pétya what a goo e you

I m n t goo but they are who cry bout trifles, sa d Pétya

Do y u rem mbe him? N tásh dd nly k d after m ment l nce.

Só ya sm led.

D I remember N holas?

No So ya but do y u remember so th t y u remember h m p f ctly remember ery th g? sa d N tásh w th n exp ess e gesture, ev d ntly wish t g her w rds ery d fin te me n g I em mbe N kól nka too I em mber him well she sa d. B t I d n t remembe Boris. I d n t remember h m b t.

"What! You d n t emember Bori ? ked Só ya n urpri e.

It s not that I don t remember—I know what he is like but not as I remember Nikólenka Him—I just shut my eyes and remember but Borís No! (She shut her eyes) No! there s nothing at all

Oh Natásha! said Sónya looking ecstatically and earnestly at her friend as if she did not consider her worthy to hear what she meant to say and as if she were saying it to someone else with whom joking was out of the question I am in love with your brother once for all and whatever may happen to him or to me shall never cease to love him as long as I live

Natásha looked at Sónya with wondering and inquisitive eyes and said nothing She felt that Sónya was speaking the truth that there was such love as Sónya was speaking of But Natásha had not yet felt anything like it She believed it could be but did not understand it

Shall you write to him? she asked

Sónya became thoughtful The question of how to write to *Nicholas* and whether she ought to write tormented her Now that he was already an officer and a wounded hero would it be right to remind him of herself and as it might seem of the obligations to her he had taken on himself?

I don t know I think if he writes I will write too she said blushing

And you won t feel ashamed to write to h m?

Sonya smiled

No

And I should be ashamed to write to Borís I m not going to

Why should you be ashamed?

Well I don t know It s awkward and would make me ashamed

And I know why she d be ashamed said Pétya offended by Natásha s previous remark "It s because she was n love with that fat one in spectacles (that was how Pétya described his namesake the new Count Bezukhov) and now she s in love with that singer (he meant Natásha s Italian singing master) that s why she s ashamed!

Petya you re a stupid! sa d Natásha

Not more stupid than you madam said the nine year old Pétya with the air of an old brigadier

The countess had been prepared by Anna Mikháylovna s hints at dinner On ret ring to her own room she sat in an armcha r her eyes fixed on a miniature portrait of her son on the lid of a snuffbox while the tears kept com ng into her eyes Anna Mikháylovna with the letter came on tiptoe to the countess door and paused

Don t come in she said to the old count who was following her Come later And she went in closing the door behind her

The count put his ear to the keyhole and listened

At first he heard the sound of indifferent voices then Anna Mikháylovna s voice alone in a long speech then a cry then silence then both voices together with glad intonations and then footsteps Anna Mikháylovna opened the door Her face wore the proud expression of a surgeon who has just performed a difficult operation and admits the public to appreciate his skill

It is done! she said to the count pointing triumphantly to the countess who sat holdin in one hand the snuffbox with its portrait and in the other the letter and pressing them alternately to her lips

When she saw the count she stretched out her arms to him embraced his bald head over which she again looked at the letter and the portrait and in order to press them again to her lips she slightly pushed away the bald head Véra Natásha Sónya and Pétya now entered the room and the reading of the letter began After a brief description of the campaign and the two battles in which he had taken part and his promotion Nicholas said that he kissed his father s and mother s hands ask

h m dear Sónya whom he loved and thought of just the same as ever When she heard this S nya blushed so that tears came into her eyes and unable to bear the looks turned upon her ran away into the dancing hall whirled round t at full speed with her dress puffed out like a balloon and flushed and smiling plumped down on the floor The countess was crying

Why are you crying Mamma? asked Véra From all he says one should be glad and not cry

This was quite true but the count the countess and Natásha looked at her reproachfully And who is it she takes after thought the countess

Nicholas letter was read over hundreds of times and those who were considered worthy to hear t l a l to come to the countess for she d d not let it out of her h nd The tutors came and the nurses and Dmítri and several ac

quaintances, nd t.. countess reread th letter each tim with fresh p easure nd each tim discovered in t fresh proofs of Nikólenka vir tues. H w strange, how extraordinary how joy ful t seemed, that her son, the scarcely per ceptible motion of whose tiny limbs she had felt twenty ears go within her that son bout whom ..e used to ha quarrels with th too-indulgent cou..t, that son who had first learned to sa pear and then grann that this son shou. now be wa n a fore gn land amid strange surroundings, manl warrio d ng some k..d f man wo k of his own, without help or guida e. Th u versal experience of ages, showing that children do grow impercep-tib.. from t.. crad. to manhood, did not exist for t..e countess. Her son growth toward man hood, each f its stages, had seemed as extra ordinary to her as if there had never existed the millions f human beings who grew up in the sam wa As twe ty years bef re, t seemed impossib e that t..e li tl creature who lived somewhere under her heart would ever cry suck her breast, d begin speak, so now sh could not be..ev that that littl crea ure could be this stro bra man, this mod l son and officer hat, judging by this l tter h now was.

"Wha sty! H w charming h describes said she reading the descripti part of th let er A d h soul N t word bout him-self. Not ord Abou some Den so or other though h himself I dare sa is bra er tha an f them. H says nothing bout his sufferings. What heart. How lik him t is And how he ha remembered everybod Not forgetting vo I always said when he was only so h gh—I lways sa d

For more tha week preparations were be-gun ma.. rough drafts of letters to N cholas from all the household were written and copied out, w..l under th upervision of the count ess nd t.. sol ci ud f the count, money and all t..i gs ecessary f th unif rm and equip-men f he ew l commissioned officer were collected. A na Mikhá lovna, practical wom-that h wa had even managed b favor w th arm thorities o secure dvantageous means f commun catio for herself and her son. Sh had opportun ties f sending her letters to th Grand Duk Constantin Pá lovich, who commanded t..e Guards. Th Ros óvs supposed t..a *Th Russ n G ds Ab oa* was qui e d fi t dress, and that f letter reached t..e Gra d Duk comma d of the Guards there was no reaso why t should not reach the Pá lograd regiment, which was p esuma bly somewhere n the same nei hbo hood. And so t was decided to send the letters and money b th Grand Duk s courier to Bori and Boris was to f rward them to N cholas. The letters were from the old count, the countess, Pétya, Véra, N tasha, nd Sonya, and fin ll there were six thousand rubles f r his outfit and vari-ous other things the o d count sent to his son.

CHAPTER VII

ON THE twelfth of November Kutuzov's ctive arm n camp before *Olmutz*, was preparing to be reviewed next day by the two Emperors —the Russian and th Austrian. The Guards, just arrived from Russia, spent the n ght ten miles from Olm tz nd next morn ng were to come stra ht to the review reaching the field t Olmutz by ten o clock.

That da N cholas Rostóv received a letter from Boris, telling him that the Ismáylov regi ment was quartered f r the n ht ten miles from Olm tz d that he wanted to see him as he had letter and money fo him. Rostov was particularly in need of money now that the troops, fter their ctive service were tationed near Olm tz nd the camp swarmed with well provis oned sutlers and Austrian Jews offering all sorts f temptin wares. The Pá lovgrads h ld feast fter feast, cel brat ng wards they had rece ved f the campaign and made ex peditions to Olmutz to visit certain Carolin the Hungarian who had recently opened res-taurant there with girl as waitresses. Rost v

f llow officer o Olm tz di ed there, drank bottle of w e and th n set off alon to th Guards camp to find his old pl ym te. Rosto had not yet had tim to get his un f rm. H had on shabb cadet jacket, decorated with soldier cross, equally shabby cadet riding breeches l ed with worn leather and an of fi er saber with sword knot. The Don horse h was riding was one h had bought from a Cossack during the *campaign*, and he wore crumpled hussar cap tuck jauntily back on o s d of his head. As he rod up to the camp h thought how he would mpress Boris and all his comrades f th Guards by his ppearance —that of fighting hussar who had been under fire.

The Guards had made their whole march as if on pleasure trip parading th ir cleanli ness and discipline. They had com by easy

It s not that I don t remember—I know what he is like but not as I remember Nikólenka Him—I just shut my eyes and remember but Boris No! (She shut her eyes) No! there s nothing at all

Oh Natásha! said Sónya looking ecstatically and earnestly at her friend as if she did not consider her worthy to hear what she meant to say and as if she were saying it to someone else with whom joking was out of the question I am in love with your brother once for all and whatever may happen to him or to me shall never cease to love him as long as I live

Natásha looked at Sónya with wondering and inquisitive eyes and said nothing She felt that Sónya was speaking the truth that there was such love as Sónya was speaking of But Natásha had not yet felt anything like it She believed it could be but did not understand it

Shall you write to him? she asked

Sónya became thoughtful The question of how to write to *Nicholas* and whether she ought to write tormented her Now that he was already an officer and a wounded hero would it be right to remind him of herself and as it might seem of the obligations to her he had taken on himself?

I don t know I think if he writes I will write too she said blushing

And you won t feel ashamed to write to him?

Sónya smiled

No

And I should be ashamed to write to Boris I m not going to

Why should you be ashamed?

Well I don t know It s awkward and would make me ashamed

And I know why she d be ashamed said Pé a

1

l (

r c s e s in love with that singer (he meant Natásha s Italian singing master) that s why she s ashamed!

Pétya you re a stupid! said Natásha

Not more stupid than you madam said the nine year-old Pétya with the air of an old brigadier

The countess had been prepared by Anna Mikháylovna s hints at dinner On retiring to her own room she sat in an armchair her eyes fixed on a miniature portrait of her son on the lid of a snuffbox while the tears kept coming into her eyes Anna Mikháylovna with the letter came on tiptoe to the countess door a paused

Don t come in she said to the old cou who was following her Come later And s went in closing the door behind her

The count put his ear to the keyhole and l tened

At first he heard the sound of indifferent voices then Anna Mikháylovna s vo ce alo in a long speech then a cry then silence the both voices together with glad intonation and then footsteps Anna Mikháylovna opene the door Her face wore the proud expressio of a surgeon who has just performed a difficul operation and admits the public to apprecia his skill

It is done! she said to the count pointing triumphantly to the countess who sat holdin in one hand the snuffbox with its portrait and in the other the letter and pressing them alternately to her lips

When she saw the count she stretched out her arms to him embraced his bald head over which she again looked at the letter and the portrait and in order to press them again to her lips she slightly pushed away the bald head Véra Natásha Sónya and Pétya now entered the room and the reading of the letter began After a brief description of the campaign and the two battles in which he had taken part and his promotion Nicholas said that he k ssed his father s and mother s hands asking for their blessing and that he kissed Véra Natásha and P tya Besides that he sent greetings to Monsieur Schelling Madame Schoss nd

a y blushed so that tears came into her eyes and unable to bear the looks turned upon her ran away into the dancing hall whirled round it at full speed with her dress puffed out like a balloon and flushed and smiling plumped down on the floor The countess was crying

Why are you crying Mamma? asked Véra From all he says one should be glad and not cry

This was quite true but the count the countess and Natásha looked at her reproachfully And who is it she takes after? thought the countess

Nicholas letter was read over hundreds of times and tho e w o were considered worthy to hear it had to come to the countess for she did not let it out of her hands The tutors came and the nurses and D nit and several ac

eyes, h d h f ce beh nd th letter

"Well, they e sent you a tidy sum, sa d Berg er the heavy purse th t sank into the sof A f us, Count, w get lon on our p I can tell you f r myself

I say Berg my dea f ll said Ro tó the ou get letter from h me nd meet e f your wn people wh m ou want to talk everyth er w th, d I happen t be th re I ll go at nce to be ut of you way! Do go somewhere yu l e e to the devil!

low yo know I speak from my u a n ld equa ta ce

"Oh, d t me u n t Count I quite understand, sa d Berg gettu up nd peaks muffled nd guttural o ce

Go cross t ur hosts they nvited you added Boris.

Berg p t th cleanest f co ts w th ut po peck f dust, tood bef r lookin glass d brushed th hai on h s temples up a d th way affected b the Emperor Alexa der d havi ssured h mself f m way Rost looked t t that hi coat had bee noticed l ft the room wit pleasant m le.

Oh dear what beast I am! muttered Ros t h read the lett r

"Why

Oh, what p I am not to ha written d ha gi en them ch fright! Oh what pi, I m h repeated, flushi g suddenly W ll ha you sent G b l f som w e? All n h l t ha som

I th l er from his parents was enclosed l tter f ecommendati n to Bagratión which th ld cou ess Anna M khdyl vna s dvice had bta ed through equa ta ce nd her so k him to tak t ts des d mak use f t.

Wha nse se! Mu h I eed t sa d Rostóv throw th l t er nder th table.

Wh ha you thrown that way asked Boris

It som letter f ecomm datu n ha h dev l d I wa t t f

Wh "What th dev l? sa d Boris p cking p d eadi g th ddress. "This l tter wo ld be f great use y u.

I wa nothi g, d I wo be anyone adj ta t.

Why no qu red Boris.

It lackey s job!

You a e t ll the same dreamer I see remarked B ri sl king h head

And you re st ll the same d plomat t! But that s n t th point Com h w are you asked Rost

W ll as you see. So f r everyth s all right, but I co fess I sh uld much l ke to be djut t nd n t em n t the front.

"Why

Becau e wh n o c man st rts on m l tary serv ce h hould try to make as successful car er of t as poss ble

Oh that it! sa d Rostóv ev dently think n of someth lse.

H looked t tly and inqu ri ly nto h s fri nd eyes d ntly try g in vain to f nd th n w t some quest on

Old G b l bro ght n th w ne

Sh uldn t we n w send f Berg asked Ro H w uld dr nk w th you. I can t.

H ery ry n ce honest, a u p easa fellow n wered Boris.

Aga n Rostó looked tently to Boris eyes d gl ed. Berg returned and o er the bottl f w e con ersat on between th e three

They poke of th say es d do ngs ot u ur

himself but n connection w th th to es o th Gra d Duke s qu k tempe he l ted with gus o how n G l ci he h d man ged t deal w th the Gra d Duke when the l tter m de tour of th egiments nd wa nn yed t the irregul rity f m em nt. W th a pleasant smile Berg el ted h w th Grand Duk h d dden p him olent p ss on h ut g Arn ts (Arn uts wa th Tsaré ch f onte expression when he w s n a rage) and called f the compa y comma de

"Would y u bel e t, Count, I wa not t ll l rmed because I kn w I was ght. W ll

Arna T kish n m for th Alb n. who suppl ed th Turks w th irregula ca alry —Tr.

stages their knapsacks conveyed on carts and the Austrian authorities had provided excel lent dinners for the officers at every halting place The regiments had entered and left the town with their bands playing and by the Grand Duke s orders the men had marched all the way in step (a practice on which the Guards prided themselves) the officers on foot and at their proper posts Borís had been quartered and had marched all the way with Berg who was already in command of a company Berg who had obtained his captaincy during the campaign had gained the confidence of his superiors by his promptitude and accuracy and had arranged his money matters very satisfac torily Borís during the campaign had made the acquaintance of many persons who might prove useful to him and by a letter of recom mendation he had brought from Pierre had be come acquainted with Prince Andrew Bolkón ski through whom he hoped to obtain a post on the commander in chief s staff Berg and Borís having rested after yesterday s march were sitting clean and neatly dressed at a round table in the clean quarters allotted to them playing chess Berg held a smoking pipe between his knees Borís in the accurate way

ing this Borís embraced him in a quiet, friend ly way and kissed him three times

They had not met for nearly half a year and, being at the age when young men take their first steps on life s road each saw immense changes in the other quite a new reflection of the society in which they had taken those first steps Both had changed greatly since they h t met and both were in a hurry to show the changes that had taken place in them

Oh you damned dandies! Clean and fresh as if you d been to a fete not like us sinners of the line cried Rostóv with martial swagger and with baritone notes in his voice new to Borís pointing to his own mud bespattered breeches The German landlady hearing Ro t ov s loud voice popped her head in at the door

Eh is she pretty? he asked with a wink

Why do you shout so? You ll frighten them said Borís I did not expect you today he added I only sent you the note yesterday by Bolkónski—an adjutant of Kutuzov s who s a friend of mine I did not think he would get it to you so quickly Well how are you? Been under fire already? asked Borís

Without answering Rostóv shook the sol

game as he always thought only of whatever he was engaged on

Well how are you going to get out of that? he remarked

We ll try to replied Berg touching a pawn and then removing his hand

At that moment the door opened

Here he is at last! shouted Rostóv And Berg too! Oh you *petisenfans allay cushay dormir'* he exclaimed imitating his Russian nurse s French at which he and Borís used to laugh long ago

Dear me how you have changed!

Borís rose to meet Rostóv but in do ng so did not omit to steady and replace some chess men that were falling He was about to em brace his friend but Nicholas avo ded him With that peculiar feel ng of youth that dread of beaten tracks and wish to express itself in a manner different from that of its elders which is often insincere Nicholas wished to do some th ng spec al on meeting his fr end He wanted to pinch him push him do anything but kiss him—a thing everybody did But notwithstand

L ttle ch ldre go to bed and leep —Tr.

Indeed? Yes yes! said Borís with a smile And we too have had a splendid march You know of course that His Imperial Highness rode with our regiment all the time so that we had every comfort and every advantage What receptions we had in Poland! What dinners and balls! I can t tell you And the Tsarévich was very gracious to all our officers

And the two friends told each other of their doings the one of his hussar revels and life in the fighting line the other of the pleasures and advantages of service under members of the Imperial family

Oh you Guards! said Rostóv I say send for some wine

Borís made a grimace

If you really want it said he

He went to his bed drew a purse from un der the clean pillow and sent for wine

Yes and I have some money and a letter to give you he added

Rostóv took the letter and throwing the money on the sofa put both arms on the table and began to read After reading a few lines he glanced angrily at Berg then meeting his

eyes h d h f e beh d the letter

Well they ent you t dy um sa d Ber ey the l ea v p rs tl t sank nto tl e sof A f r us Cou t w et l ng on our p l ca tell you f r m elf

I say Berg my dear fell sa d R tóv t y get a lette from l me and meet e f y ur wn people wl m you want to talk e ryth er w th nd I happ n t be th re I ll go t n to b o t f you way! Do go somew h ywhe e to the dev ll

low kn w l peak from my hea t to ld cq ta ce

Oh d t me t t Co nt! I quite un dersta d, sa d Berg g tt g p nd peak g muffled nd guttural o e

Go cross to ur h ts th y invited y u dded Bo is.

Alexa der d ha ssured h ms lf from he way R t look d t t that h s co t had be u ed, l ft the room w tl pleasa t m l

Oh dea wh t beast l m! mutt red Ros t as l ead th lett r

Why

written

All b l t ha som !

I th l tter from his p nts was enclosed l t f mm d t t B ratió wh h h ld co tess t An M khájl vn d ha l bta ed thr gh qu t d t f er so k h m t tak t t ts des d m k us f t.

Wha sel M h l ed tl sa d Ros throw th l t er u der th table.

Why h you throw that way? asked Bo

It som l tter f ecomm d tion ha h d ld I wa t t f

Why What th d l? sa d Boris p cki g p d ead g th dd ess. Th s l tter w ld be f great use to y u.

I wa t thi g d I won t b any dj ta t.

Why t q ed Boris.

It l key s job!

You are st ll tl e me d eamer I see re marked Bori sl k g h s head

And you e t ll the s me d plom t t! But that n t the po t. Come how are yo a ked Rost v

Well as you see So far everyth n all ght but I confess I sl ould mu h l ke to be djutant n d n t em n t the front.

Wl y

Becau e whe on e man starts n m l tary s rv ce he h uld try t make as successful a career of t as po ble

Oh th t tl sa d Ro tó ev dently th k ng f som th ng el e

He looked ntently nd i qu r gly nto l s fr ds yes ev de tly try ng in a n t find tl n wer to me questi n

Old G b el bro ght n the w e

Sh uldn t we now s nd f Berg? asked Bo is. H would d nk w th y u. I can t.

W ll d f r h m nd ho do you get on th th t G rm n? a ked Rostóv w th a cont mpt us n l

H is ery ery n e honest and pleasant f ll w n we d B ris.

Aga n Ro tó looked ntently nto Bo is eyes nd s ghed. B rg turned and o er the bottle of e ersat on between th tl ee

tl Gra d D k qu ck temp r he rel ted w th gu t how n G l he h d m ed t de l w th th Grand D ke wl n th l tt m de a

ch s f o te e p ess wh n he w n a rag) d called f the c mp ny comm nder

W uld y u bel eve t, Cou t I wa not t ll I rmed becaus I knew I w gl t. W th o t bo t y u kn w I m y say that I k w th Army O ders by heart d kn w th Regu l t well I d th Lo d s Pray So Cou t tl er ne r s ny egl gence n my

Arn t T k h nam f th Alb h ppl ed th Turks w h rregula ca alry —Tr.

company and so my conscience was at ease I came forward (Berg stood up and showed how he presented himself with his hand to his cap and really it would have been difficult for a face to express greater respect and self complacency than his did) Well he stormed at me as the saying is stormed and stormed and stormed! It was not a matter of life but rather of death as the saying is Albanians! and devils! and To Siberia! said Berg with a sagacious smile I knew I was in the right so I kept silent was not that best Count? Hey are you dumb? he shouted Still I
A

one s head means
That s the way Count said Berg his pipe

B e was preparing to make fun of Berg and skillfully changed the subject He asked him to tell them how and where he got his wound This pleased Rostóv and he began talking about it and as he went on became more and more animated He told them of his Schon Grabern affair just as those who have taken part in a battle generally do describe it that is as they would like it to have been as they have heard it described by others and as sounds well but not at all as it really was Rostóv was a truthful young man and would on no account have told a deliberate lie He began his story meaning to tell everything just as it happened but imperceptibly involuntarily and inevitably he lapsed into falsehood If he had told the truth to his hearers—who like himself had often heard stories of attacks and had formed a definite idea of what an attack was and were expecting to hear just such a story—they would either not have believed him or still worse would have thought that Rostóv was himself to blame since what generally happens to the narrators of cavalry attacks had not happened to him He could not tell them simply that everyone went at a trot and that he fell off his horse and sprained his arm and then ran as hard as he could from a Frenchman into the wood Besides
even
bec

how his saber

had tasted flesh and he had fallen exhausted, and so on And so he told them all that

In the middle of his story just as he was saying You cannot imagine what a strange frenzy one experiences during an attack Prince Andrew whom Boris was expecting entered the room Prince Andrew who liked to help young men was flattered by being asked for his assistance and being well disposed toward Boris who had managed to please him the day before he wished to do what the young man wanted Having been sent with papers from Kutuzov to the Tsarévich he l
Bori
in ar
milit ince Andrew could not endure that sort of man) he gave Borís a pleasant smile frowned as with half closed eyes he looked at Rostóv bowed slightly and wearily and sat down languidly on the sofa he felt it unpleasant to have dropped in on bad company Rostóv flushed up on noticing this but he did not care this was a mere stranger Glancing however at Borís he saw that he too seemed ashamed of the hussar of the line

In spite of Prince Andrew s disagreeable ironical tone in spite of the con
w

blushed and became silent Borís inquired what news there might be on the staff and what without indiscretion one might ask about our plans

We shall probably advance replied Bolkónski evidently reluctant to say more in the presence of a stranger

Berg took the opportunity to ask with great politeness whether as was rumored the allowance of forage money to captains of companies would be doubled To this Prince Andrew answered with a smile that he could give no opinion on such an important government order and Berg laughed gaily

As to your business Prince Andrew continued addressing Borís we will talk of it later (and he looked round at Rostóv) Come to me after the review and we will do what is possible

And having glanced round the room Prince Andrew turned to Rostóv whose state of unconquerable childish embarrassment now changing to anger he did not condescend to notice and said I think you were talking of the Schon Grabern affair? Were you there?

I w s the e d R tó anory ly as if n lt the de de camp

l w the st ff wh g t tw g yth l

Of h m y u m gi e me t be o e? d P e A d ew w tl q et d part c l ly m ble m le

A tr g fe l g f perat d yet of espe t f th m n s s lf e n m gled at th t mom t R t so l

I m n t t lk g b t y u he d I

th t m d pl ry b dly ch n ln l y r tw w h ll all l e t t kep t n d m d l d bes d s Drubetskóy who y h old f e d of

t fi d m b t d t f rget tl t l d n t g d tl mys lf u l g b n at ll lted d m lder th n y u my d e l t the m tte d p Well tl e n F d y f tl es I h ll p t y u Drub tskóy A l m d P An l w d w th bow t them b th he w t

O ly wh Pr A d w w s go d d Ros th k f wl t l ht to ha sa d d h w t ll m gry tl g t d t y t H d d h l rse t d ldly k gl f B od l m Sl uld h go h dq t rs d v d h ll e tl ll ed d t call l t tl m tt l p l e q es tl rr d l m ll tl w y H ho ght gr ly f h pl he ld h t g th f gl t f th t m ll d fra l b p d m whe co ed by h p l d h h f l w tl p e th t of ll h m h k w th was e he w uld

so mu h l ke to h e for a friend as th t very adjutant wh m he so h ted.

CHAPTER VIII

B rl

the A chd k n pe ted tl u t e ghty th u a d me

Fr m e ly mo n g the sm rt cle n troop e e n the mo e form g up on the f eld be f r the f rtress Now thou nds of f et nd

gl g of sh y ca lry n bl e eu a u

the d n ks qu ed to the t ff off rs d wea carves d ll th decorat n n t nly the eleg nt p m d d ffi ers but e ry ld w th h f eshly w hed nd h en f e nd l s we p cle n nd pol h d t th utm t nd ery hors gro med t ll ts c t ho l ke t n d e ry h of ts w tt d m l y mo th—felt th t n sm ll

f b g but d p n tl t c n of me d y t ttl met m w n c u f h sst e gth as p rt f tl t rm wl l

I m ly m r g t u u ct it es d ff ts h d begun d by ten cl k ll l d b n b ht nt d e de Th ra k w re d wn up n th t fi ld Th wh le army w s e d d n tl ee l es the ca lry n f t b h d t th t llery d b l d that ga n th f try

A p l k t e t w s left b tw n cl tw l es f troop The th p ts f th t rmy w e sh rply d t gu h d Kutu s fight rmy (w th tl Pá l gr ds on the ght

company and so my conscience was at ease I came forward (Berg stood up and showed how he presented himself with his hand to his cap and really it would have been difficult for a face to express greater respect and self complacency than his did) Well h

a
st
of
alsi a
cious
silent est Cou

i oned in the Orders of the Day That s what keeping one s head means That s the way Count said Berg lighting his pipe and emitting rings of smoke

Yes that was fine said Rostóv smiling

But Boris noticed that he was preparing to make fun of Berg and skillfully changed the subject He asked him to tell them how and where he got his wound This pleased Rostóv and he began talking about it and as he went on became more and more animated He tol them of

who
descr
been
and is it really was Rostóv was a truthful young man and would on no account have told a deliberate lie He began his story meaning to tell everything just

unt
hoo

e expecting to hear just such a story—they would either not have be lieved him or still worse would have thought that Rostov was himself to blame since what generally happens to the narrators of cavalry attacks had not happened to h m He could not tell them simply that everyone went at a trot and that he fell off his horse and sprained his arm and then ran as hard as he could from a Frenchman into the wood Besides to tell everything as it r

sue himself and all aflame with excitement he had flown like a storm at the square cut his way in slashed right and left how his saber had tasted flesh and he had fallen exhausted, and so on And so he told them all that.

In the middle of his story just as he was saying You cannot imagine what a strange frenzy one experiences during an attack Prince Andrew whom Boris was expecting entered the room Prince Andrew who liked to help young men was flattered by being asked f r his assistance and being well disposed toward Boris who had managed to please him the day before he wished to do what the young man wanted Having been sent with papers from Kutuzov to the Tsarévich he looked in on Bor

in a
mili nce Andrew could not endure that sort of man) he gave Boris a pleasant smile frowned as with half closed eyes he looked at Rostóv bowed slightly and wearily and sat down languidly on the sofa he felt it unpleasant to have dropped in on bad company Rostóv flushed up on noticing this, but he did not care this was a mere stranger Glancing however at Boris he saw that he too seemed ashamed of the hussar of the line

In spite of Prince Andrew s disagreeable ironical tone in spite of the contempt with which Rostóv from his *fighting* army point of view regarded all these little adjutants on the staff of whom the newcomer was evidently one Rostóv felt confused blushed and became silent Boris inquired what news there might be on the staff and what without indiscretion one might ask about our plans

We shall probably advance replied Bolkónski evidently reluctant to say more in the presence of a stranger

Berg took the opportunity to ask with great politeness whether as was rumored the allowance of forage money to captains of companies would be doubled To this Prince Andrew answered with a smile that he could give no opinion on such an important government order and Berg laughed gaily

As to your business Prince Andrew continued addressing Boris we will talk of it later (and he looked round at Rostóv) Come to me after the review and we will do what is possible

And having glanced round the room Prince Andrew turned to Rostov whose state of unconquerable childish embarrassment now changing to anger he did not condescend to notice and said I think you were talking of the Schon Grabern affair? Were you there?

f

tho ht R tó b t the even u u t ppeared t him majestic a d *enchanting* l ke everyth else th Tsar did.

Th t hes tation lasted nly n st t. The Tsar foot, n th arrow po ted boot th n fashi ble t uched the groin of the bobt iled wh l e

r

n ed fficers nd also Kutuzo s, *collected* n groups nd began t talk bout the awards bout the Austr ans nd *their* uniforms about the r l nes, bout Bon parte, and h w badly the l tter would fare now especially f th Essen corps arr ed and Prussia took our s de

But the talk n every group was ch efly about the Empero Alexand r H s every w d nd m ement was described w th ecstasy

They ll h d but one wish to d an e as soon as poss ble ga n t th enemy under the Empero s comm nd Commanded by the Emperor himself they could n t fa l to anqu sh Bo

topp g t other emme ts till t u ny h s h te plumes were is ble t Rost from amid the uites that urrou d d the Emperors.

Amo th gentlem f the su te Rostó not ced Bolkónsk s tu g hi h rse nd l ntly d car lessly Rost recalled th quarrel f esterday d the questi prese ted tself h ther he ught ought t to challe ge Bolk k Of cours t! he now th u ht l t w rth th nki g o peak g of t t uch mom t At a t me f ch l uch rapture, and ch lf-sacrifice what d y f our quarrels a d affronts matter I lo d f r gi e everybody w

Wh th Emp ror had p ssed ea ly all th egiments, the troops began cerem n l march p t h m d *Rostó n Pedoum* recently p hased from Deniso rod past too t th rear f h squadron—that is l d f ll view f th Empero

Bef re he ea hed him Rostó who was a plend d horsem purred Bed u n tw nd su essf lly p t him to th h wy u t n wh ch the mal w t when ed. Be d his foam muzzl to his chest, his tail extended. Bed u as f lso co sci us f the Empero eye upo him, passed ple didly lifu g his fee with hi h and gra eful ct n as f fl g through th w tho t to ch g he gr d.

Ros h mself, his legs w ll ba k and his tomach drawn d feel g himself ew th his horse rod past th Empero w th frown g but blissful fa e lik ew y d il De iso expressed t.

F f llows, the Pá lo rads remarked th Empero

My God, how happy I sho ld be *I he o dered* me t leap into the fire this nstantl thought Rostóv

When the rev ew was over the newly ar

the w nn of two battles would ha e mau them.

CHAPTER IX

THE DAY AFTER the rev ew Boris, in his best un form nd w th hi comrade Berg best wishes fo success rod to Olm tz t see Bolkónski wishi g to profit by his f ndl nes d obta n fo himself the best post he could—p ef erably that of djutant to some mport t person ge, pos tion n th army wh ch seemed t h m most attracti e It s ll ery w ll f R tó whose f ther nds him t n thousa d rubles t time t talk bout n t wish n to cri ge to nybody d n t be nyo e s l ckey but I who h e n thing but my bra ns ha e to mak a career nd must not miss pportun t es, but must ail myself f them! he reflected.

H d d n t fi d Prin e Andrew n Olmutz that day but th ppearance of the town whe e th headquarters and the dipl matic corps were tat ed nd th t o Emperors w re li with their su tes househ lds nd courts only trengthened hi desire t bel n to that h her wo ld.

He knew no one and desp te h mart Guardsman u f rm, ll these exalted pe son ges pass g n the treets their elegant carriages w th their plumes ribbons nd medals both courti rs d m l tary m eemed so immeasurably abo e h m an n gn fica t officer f the Guards that they *n t o ly d d* not wish t but s mply could n t, be war of his existe ce. At the quarters of th comma d er chief, Kutuz where he quired f Bolkónski ll the dj tant d en the o derl es looked t him as if they wished to m press n h m that great many officers l'ke him wer always comi g there nd that everybody was heartily s ck f them. In p te of this,

flank of the front) those recently arrived from Russia both Guards and regiments of the line and the Austrian troops But they all stood in the same lines under one command and in a like order

Like wind over leaves ran an excited whisper They re coming! They re coming! Alarmed voices were heard and a stir of final preparation swept over all the troops

From the direction of Olmutz in front of them a group was seen approaching And at that moment though the day was still a light gust of wind blowing over the army slightly stirred the streamers on the lances and the unfolded standards fluttered *against their staffs* It looked as if by that slight motion the army itself was expressing its joy at the approach of the Emperors One voice was heard shouting Eyes front! Then like the crowing of cocks at sunrise this was repeated by others from various sides and all became silent

In the deathlike stillness only the tramp of horses was heard This was the Emperors suites The Emperors rode up to the flank and the trumpets of the first cavalry regiment played the general march It seemed as though not the *trumpeters were playing* but as if *the army itself* rejoicing at the Emperors approach had naturally burst into music Amid these sounds only the youthful kindly voice of the Emperor

fully that the men themselves were awed by their multitude and the immensity of the power they constituted.

Rostóv standing in the front lines of Kutu

*proud consciousness of might and a passion*ate attraction to him who was the cause of this tr umph

He felt that at a single word from that man all th s vast mass (and he h mself an insignificant atom in it) would go through f re and water commit crime die or perform deeds of highest *heroism and so he could not but trem*ble and his heart stand still at the imm nence of that word

Hurrah! Hurrah! Hurrah! thundered from all sides one regiment after another greet in, tl

then

and

*stronger and fuller and merging into a deafen*ing roar

Till the Tsar reached it each regiment in its silence and immobility seemed like a lifeless body but as soon as he came up it became alive its thunder joining the roar of the wh le line along which he had already passed. Through the terrible and deafenin roar of those voices amid the square masses of troops standing motionless as if turned to stone hundreds of riders composing the suites moved

ate attention of that whole mass of men was *concentrated*

The handsome young Emperor Alexander in the uniform of the Horse Guards wear n a cocked hat with its peaks front and back with his pleasant face and resonant thou h not loud voice attracted everyone s attention

Rostóv was not far from the trumpeters and

distinguish every detail of his handsome happy young face he experienced a feeling of tenderness and ecstasy such as he had never before known Every trait and every movement of the Tsar s seemed to him enchanting

Tsar

Seeing that smile Rostóv involuntarily smiled *himself and felt a still stronger flo v* of love for his sovereign He longed to show that love in some way and kno ng that this w as impossible was ready to cry The Tsar called the colonel of the regiment and said a few words to him

Oh God what would happen to me if the *Emperor spoke to me? thought* Rostóv I should die of happ ness!

The Tsar addressed the officers also I thank you all gentlemen I thank you w th my w hole heart To Rost v every word sounded l ke a voice from heave n H w gladly would he l ave d ed at once for l I sar!

You have earned the St Geor e s standar ls and will be w orthy of them

Oh to die to die for him! thought Rost v

The Tsar said son ething more w hich Rostov did not hear d tl e soldiers strain n

Pr..ce Andrew always became speciall keen when h had to guide a youn man and help ...er of obtain-

kept in t uch with th circl ... cess and which ttracted him. H very readily took up Boris cause and went with him to Dolgor..kov

It was late in t.. evenin when they entered t..e palace at Olm tz occup ed by th Emper rs and their retinues.

That same da a council of war had been held in which all the members of the H f kriegsrath and both Emperors took part. At that council, co trary to th views of th old general Kutuzo d Prince Schwartzenberg, it had been decided to dvance imm diat ly and give battl to Bonaparte. The council of war was just ver when Prince Andrew ccompa..ied by Boris arrived t the palace to find Do orukov Everyon t headquarters was still under t..e spell of th day council, t which the party f the young had triumphed. The voices of those who counseled delay and d vised waitin f som thin else before advan ng had been so complet ly silenced and their arguments confuted by such conclusi e evidence f th dvanta es of ttacking that what had been discussed the council—th comin battl and the victory that would certainl re sult from t—no lon er seemed to be in t.. f ture but in th past. All th dvanta es were on our side. Our enormous forces, undoubtedly uperior to N poleon s, were concentrated in on place, the troops inspired by th Emperors presence were eager for ction. Th stra egic pos tion where the operati ns would take place was fami..iar in all ts details to th Austria General Weyrother luck cident had orda ed tha the Austrian army should ma..euver the previous year n the very fields where the French had now to be fought the adjacent local ty was known and hown in every detail o the maps, and Bonaparte, evidentl weak ned, was undertak..ng not..in

Do..gorukov on of the warmes dvocates of ttack, had just returned from the council, tired and exhaus ed bu eager and proud f t..e victory that had been gai ed. Pri ce Andrew troduced his protégé but Prince Dol or kov pol t ly nd firml pressin his hand said noth g to Boris nd, evidently unbl to suppress the thoughts which wer ppermost his mind t..at moment, addressed Princ Andrew in French.

Ah, my dear fellow what battle we ha e gained God grant that the one that w ll result from t will be as victorious H wever m dear fellow h sa d brupt and eagerl "I must confess to havin been unjust t the Austrians ... The exactitude, ...

"So th ttack is defin tely reso ... n?" asked Bolkónski.

... seems ...

smiled s nificantly

"Is that so And what did he say?" inquired Bolkónski.

"What can he say? Tra-di-ri-di-ra and so on ...

tured laugh, "was that we could not think how to ddress the reply! If not as Consul and of course not as Emperor t seemed to me t should be to 'General Bonap rte.

But between not reco nizing him as Emperor and calling him General Bonaparte, there is a difference, remarked Bolkónski.

"That just t, interrupted Do orukov quickly laughing "You know Bil bin—he a very clever fellow H suggested ddress ng him as 'Usurper and Enemy of Mankind.

Do orúkov lau hed merrily

"Only that?" said Bolkónski.

All the same, t was Bil b n who found a suitabl form f th ddress. He is a wise and clever fellow

"What was t?"

"To th Head of th French Government *A hef du gouvernement fr ç is*" said Dol oruk with grave satisfaction. Good, wasn t.

"Yes, but h will dislike t extremely said Bolkónski.

Oh yes, very much My brother knows him, he di ed with him—the present Empero — more t..an o ce n Paris, and tells me h never met more cunnin or ubtl diplomatist—you know combination f French adro tness and Italian pla ... Do you know th tal bout him and Count Markóv Coun Markó

or rather because of it next day November 15 after dinner he again went to Olmutz and entering the house occupied by Kutuzov asked for Bolkónski Prince Andrew was in and Borís was shown into a large hall probably formerly used for dancing but in which five beds now stood and furniture of various kinds a table chairs and a clavichord One adjutant nearest the door was sitting at the table in a Persian dressing gown writing Another the red stout Nesvítski lay on a bed with his arms under his head laughing with an officer who had sat down beside him A third was playing a Viennese waltz on the clavichord while a fourth lying on the clavichord sang the tune Bolkónski was not there None of these gentlemen changed his position on seeing Borís The one who was writing and whom Borís addressed turned round crossly and told him Bolkónski was on duty and that he should go through the door on the left into the reception room if he wished to see him Borís thanked him and went to the reception room where he found some ten officers and generals

When he entered Prince Andrew his eyes drooping contemptuously (with that peculiar expression of polite weariness which plainly says If it were not my duty I would not talk to you for a moment) was listening to an old Russian general with decorations who stood very erect almost on tiptoe with a soldier s obsequious expression on his purple face reporting something

'Very well then be so good as to wait said Prince Andrew to the general in Russian speaking with the French intonation he affected when he wished to speak contemptuously and noticing Borís Prince Andrew paying no more heed to the general who ran after him imploring him to hear something more nodded and turned to him with a cheerful smile

At that moment Borís clearly realized what he had before surmised that in the army besides the subordination and discipline prescribed in the military code which he and the others knew in the regiment there was another more important subordination which made this tight laced purple faced general wait respectfully while Captain Prince Andrew for his own pleasure chose to chat with Lieutenant Drubetskóy More than ever was Borís resolved to serve in future not according to the written code but under this unwritten law He felt now that merely by having been recommended to Prince Andrew he had already risen above the general who at the front had the power to annihilate him a lieutenant of the Guards Prince Andrew came up to him and took his hand

I am very sorry you did not find me in yesterday I was fussing about with Germans all day We went with Weyrother to survey the dispositions When Germans start bein accurate there s no end to it!

Borís smiled as if he understood what Prince Andrew was alluding to as somethin generally known But it was the first time he had heard Weyrother s name or even the term d spositions

Well my dear fellow so you still want to be an adjutant? I have been thinkin about you

Yes I was thinking —for some reason Borís could not help blushing— of asking the commander in chief He has had a letter from Prince Kurágin about me I only wanted to ask because I fear the Guards won t be in ac

gentleman s business and I shall be at your disposal

While Prince Andrew went to report about the purple faced general that gentleman—evidently not sharing Borís conception of the advantages of the unwritten code of subordination—looked so fixedly at the presumptuous lieutenant who had prevented his finishing what he had to say to the adjutant that Borís felt uncomfortable He turned away and waited impatiently for Prince Andrew s return from the commander in chief s room

You see my dear fellow I have been thinking about you said Prince Andrew when they had gone into the large room where the clavichord was It s no use your going to the commander in chief He would say a lot of pleasant things ask you to dinner (That would not be bad as regards the unwritten code thought Borís) but nothing more would come of it There will soon be a battalion of us aides de camp and adjutants! But this is what we ll do I have a good friend an adjutant general and an excellent fellow Prince Dolgorukov and though you may not know it the fact is that now Kutuzov with his staff and all of us count for nothing Everything is now centered round the Emperor So we will go to Dolgorukov I have to go there anyhow and I have already spoken to him about you We shall see whether he cannot attach you to himself or find a place for you somewhere nearer the sun

dragoo who was be ng brought n on foot by tw Cossacks.

O e f them was le d g by the b dle a fine large F e ch h rs he had taken from the pris-

Sell us that h rsel D n so called out t the Coss cks.

If y l k y u h n r!

Th fficers got up d stood ro d the Cos- ... prisa Th F e ch dragoon

F nch spok he t bega pea g tl e fficers, dd ess n first on th n n the He sa d he w ld n t ha e been taken t was

rd n eu u u

h rs l d str ked the mal It wa pl n th t he d d t qu te gra p whe h was. N w h e cused h ms lf f r h g b e taken pr s- d n w m gi g h mself bef hi n ffi ers sisted h sold e ly d s pl e d cal th ers e He bro ht w th h m t reargua d ll th f eshness f atmos- ph e f the F nch rmy wl ch wa so al en to us.

Th Cossack sold th h rs f tw gold p eces d Rostó be g th *r chest of the f* fi rs ow th t he had e ed h m n y bo ght t.

B t d t hurt my l ttl h rsel sa d th Al t good t edly t Rostó wl en th m l wa h d d e t *the hussar*

Rost m l ly eass ed th dragoon and ga e h m m ey

Alley Alley! sa d the Co sack t uchu th p so rm t m k h m go n

Th Emperor! Tl Empe was ud d l h rd m the h sars

All bega t ru d b tl d Rostó saw com g p th d beh d h m ral ders w tl wh e pl mes th hats. In m m nt every wa l pl w u g

Rostó d d ot k w em mber l w he ra t h pl d m ted. l t tly h re gr t t h g bee ct d h d jec ed mood m d people of wl m he wa rv h d go t tly ry th ght f h mself h d a f ed. H wa filled w th h p- p es t h earness th Empe He f lt tha h ea ess b ts lf made up t h m l r th da l h d lost H was happy as l e wh th l ged f m ment of m t

Not dar g to look rou d and w tl out

and m e fest e rou d l Ne t er to Rostó came that un shedd ng beam of mild nd majest c l ght around and already he f lt himself enveloped in those beams, he *heard h o ce* that k dly calm and m jest c o c that was y t so s mple! And as if n ac cord w th Rost s feel g there was a de thly stillness m d wh ch was heard the Emperor s o ce

The Pávl grad hussars? he nqu ed.

The reserves rel epl ed o ce a very hum ne compared to that wh ch h d s d The Pá l grad hussars?

The Empero drew level w th Rostóv n l halted. *Alexand r s face was even m re be u t ful th n t h d been three d ys bef* at the e w It sh e w th uch ga ety nd youtl uch n oce t youth, th t it uggested the l e l ness of fourteen yea -old boy nd yet t was *the f ce of the m jestu Emperor Ca u lly* wh l *surveyi g the squ dr n tl e Empero s* eyes met Rostó s d rested n them for n t m th n two seco ds. Whether r n the Empero understood wh t was go g on n *Ro tó s soul (t eemed to Rostó that l e un*

gall p d on

The you ger Empe could n t restrain h s wish to be p ese t t the b ttle d n p te of th rem n tran es f h court ers t tw l e clock l ft tl th d *column* w th wh cl he had been nd gall ped towa d th gu rd. B f h came up w th th huss rs ral djut ts m t h m w th news f th u cessful esult f the ct n

Th b ttle wh ch c ns ted *n the capture* f F e ch qu dron was presented brill t ry o e the Fre ch nd so the Emp d th wh l army especially wh l the m ke hu er the b ttl field bel e ed that th French h d been d feated a d w retre t g ga t the will A few minutes fter th Emp had passed the Pá l grad d n w rd ed e d a ce l W s hau ts lf petty German t wn R tóv w the Empero ga n In th mark t pl where

was the only man who knew how to handle him You know the story of the handkerchief? It is delightful!

And the talkative Dolgorukov turning now to Boris now to Prince Andrew told ...

I ... s f p ... ng Markóv to pick it up for him and how Markóv immediately dropped his own beside it and picked it up without touching Bonaparte s

Delightful! said Bolkónski But I have come to you Prince as a petitioner on behalf of this young man You see but before Prince Andrew could finish an aide de camp came in to summon Dolgorukov to the Emperor

Oh what a nuisance said Dolgorukov getting up hurriedly and pressing the hands of Prince Andrew and Boris You know I should be very glad to do all in my power both for you and for this dear young man Again he pressed the hand of the latter with an ... f

... official He was conscious that here he was in contact with the springs that set in motion the enormous movements of the mass of which in his regiment he felt himself a tiny obedient and insignificant atom They followed Prince Dolgorukov out into the corridor and met—coming out of the door of the Emperor s room by which Dolgorukov had entered—a short man in civilian clothes with a clever face and sharply projecting jaw which without spoiling his face gave him a peculiar vivacity and shiftiness of expression This short man nodded to Dolgorukov as to an intimate friend and stared at Prince Andrew with cool intensity walking straight toward him and evidently expecting him to bow or to step out of his way Prince Andrew d d neither a look of animosity appeared on his face and the other turned away and went down the side of the corridor

Who was that? asked Boris

He is one of the most remarkable but to me most unpleasant of men—the Minister of Foreign Affairs Prince Adam Czartoryski It is such men as he who decide the fate of nations added Bolkónski with a sigh he could not suppress as they passed out of the palace

Next day the army began its campaign and up to the very battle of Austerlitz Boris was unable to see either Prince Andrew or Dolgorukov again and remained for a while with the Ismáylov regiment

CHAPTER X

AT DAWN ... sov s squa ... and which ... ment moved from the place where it had spent the night advancing into action as arranged and after going behind other columns for about two thirds of a mile was stopped on the highroad Rostóv saw the Cossacks and then the first and second squadrons of hussars and infantry battalions and artillery pass by and go forward and then Generals Bagratión and Dolgorukov ride past with their adjutants. All the fear before action which he had experienced as previously all the inner struggle to conquer that fear all his dreams of distinguishing himself as a true hussar in this battle had been wasted Their squadron remained in reserve and Nicholas Rostóv spent that day in a dull and wretched mood At nine in the morning he heard firing in front and shouts of *hurrah* and saw wounded being brought back (there were not many of them) and at last he saw how a whole detachment of French cavalry was brought in convoyed by a *sótnya* of Cossacks Evidently the affair was over and though not big had been a successful engagement The men and officers returning spoke of a brilliant victory of the occupation of the town of Wischau and the capture of a whole French squadron The day was bright and sunny after a sharp night frost and the cheerful glitter of that autumn day was in keeping with the news of victory which was conveyed not only by the tales of those who had taken part in it but also by the joyful expression on the faces of soldiers officers generals and adjutants as they passed Rostóv going or coming And Nicholas who had vainly suffered all the dread that precedes a battle and had spent that happy day in inactivity was all the more depressed

Come here Wostóv Let s dwink to dwown our gwief! shouted Denísov who had settled down by the roadside with a flask and some food

The officers gathered round Denísov s can

post. This officer was Savary. The Emperor had only just fallen asleep and so Savary had to wait. At midday he was admitted to the Emperor, and an hour later he rode off with Prince Dolgorukov to the advanced post of the French army.

It was rumored that Savary had been sent to propose to Alexander a meeting with Napoleon. To the joy and pride of the whole army, a personal interview was refused, and instead of the Sovereign, Prince Dolgorukov, the victor at Wischau, was sent with Savary to negotiate with Napoleon if, contrary to expectations, these negotiations were actuated by a real desire for peace.

Toward evening Dolgorukov came back, went straight to the Tsar, and remained alone with him for a long time.

On the eighteenth and nineteenth of November, the army advanced two days' march and the enemy's outposts after a brief interchange of shots retreated. In the highest army circles from midday on the nineteenth, a great excitedly bustling activity began which lasted till the morning of the twentieth, when the memorable battle of Austerlitz was fought.

Till midday on the nineteenth, the activity—the eager talk, running to and fro, and dispatching of adjutants—was confined to the Emperor's headquarters. But on the afternoon of that day this activity reached Kutuzov's headquarters and the staffs of the commanders of columns. By evening, the adjutants had spread it to all ends and parts of the army, and in the night from the nineteenth to the twentieth, the whole eighty thousand allied troops rose from their bivouacs to the hum of voices, and the army swayed and started in one enormous mass six miles long.

The concentrated activity which had begun at the Emperor's headquarters in the morning and had started the whole movement that followed was like the first movement of the main wheel of a large tower clock. One wheel slowly moved, another was set in motion, and a third, and wheels began to revolve faster and faster, levers and cogwheels to work, chimes to play, figures to pop out, and the hands to advance with regular motion as a result of all that activity.

Just as in the mechanism of a clock, so in the mechanism of the military machine, an impulse once given leads to the final result; and just as indifferently quiescent till the moment when motion is transmitted to them are the parts of the mechanism which the impulse has not yet reached. Wheels creak on their axles as the cogs engage one another and the revolving pulleys whirr with the rapidity of their movement, but a neighboring wheel is as quiet and motionless as though it were prepared to remain so for a hundred years; but the moment comes when the lever catches it and obeying the impulse that wheel begins to creak and joins in the common motion the result and aim of which are beyond its ken.

Just as in a clock, the result of the complicated motion of innumerable wheels and pulleys is merely a slow and regular movement of the hands which show the time, so the result of all the complicated human activities of 160,000 Russians and French—all their passions, desires, remorse, humiliations, sufferings, outbursts of pride, fear, and enthusiasm—was only the loss of the battle of Austerlitz, the so-called battle of the three Emperors—that is to say, a slow movement of the hand on the dial of human history.

Prince Andrew was on duty that day and in constant attendance on the commander in chief.

At six in the evening, Kutuzov went to the Emperor's headquarters and after staying but a short time with the Tsar went to see the grand marshal of the court, Count Tolstoy.

Bolkonski took the opportunity to go in to get some details of the coming action from Dolgorukov. He felt that Kutuzov was upset and dissatisfied about something and that at headquarters they were dissatisfied with him, and also that at the Emperor's headquarters everyone adopted toward him the tone of men who know something others do not know: he therefore wished to speak to Dolgorukov.

"Well, how d'you do, my dear fellow?" said Dolgorukov, who was sitting at tea with Bilibin. "The fete is for tomorrow. How is your old fellow? Out of sorts?"

"I won't say he is out of sorts, but I fancy he would like to be heard."

"But they heard him at the council of war and will hear him when he talks sense, but to temporize and wait for something now when Bonaparte fears nothing so much as a general battle is impossible."

"Yes, you have seen him?" said Prince Andrew. "Well, what is Bonaparte like? How did he impress you?"

"Yes, I saw him, and am convinced that he fears nothing so much as a general engagement," repeated Dolgorukov, evidently prizing this general conclusion which he had ar-

there had been some rather heavy firing before the Emperor s arrival lay several killed and wounded soldiers whom there had not been time to move The Emperor surrounded by his suite of officers and courtiers w
bob
that
benc
lorgi nu looked at a soldier who lay prone with blood on his uncovered head The wounded soldier was so dirty coarse and revolting that his proximity to the Emperor shocked Rostóv Rostóv saw how the Emperor s rather round shoulders shuddered as if a cold shiver had run down them
left fo
side w
horse unconcerned and did not stir An adjutant dismounting lifted the soldier under the arms to place him on a stretcher that had been brought The soldier groaned

Gently gently! Can t you do it more gently? said the Emperor apparently suffering more than the dying soldier and he rode away

Rostóv saw tears filling the Emperor s eyes and heard him as he was riding away say to Czartoryski What a terrible thing war is what a terrible thing! *Quelle terrible chose que la guerre!*

The troops of the vanguard were stationed before Wischau within sight of the enemy s lines which all day long had yielded ground to us at the least firing The Emperor s gratitude was announced to the vanguard rewards were promised and the men received a double ration of vodka The campfires crackled and the soldiers songs resounded even more merrily than on the previous night Denísov celebrated his promotion to the rank of major and Rostóv who had already drunk enough at the end of the feast proposed the Emperor s health

Not our Sovereign the Emperor as they say at official dinners said he but the health of our Sovereign that good enchanting and great man! Let us drink to his health and to the certain defeat of the French!

If we fought before he said not letting the French pass as at Schon Grabern what shall we not do now when *he* s at the front? We will all die for him gladly! Is it not so gentlemen? Perhaps I am not saying it right I have drunk a good deal—but that s how I feel and so do you too! To the health of Alexander the First! Hurrah!

Hurrah! rang the enthusiastic voices of the officers.

And the old cavalry captain Kirsten shouted enthusiastically and no less sincerely than the twenty year old Rostóv

W
the
slee tunes went glass in hand to the soldiers bonfires and with his long gray mustache his white chest showing under his open shirt he stood in a majestic pose in the light of the campfire

Lads! h
or and vict
exclaimed in his dashing old hussar s baritone

The hussars crowded round and responded heartily with loud shouts

Late that night when all had separated Denísov with his short hand patted his favorite Rostóv on the shoulder

As there s no one to fall in love with on campaign he s fallen in love with the Tsar he said

Denísov don t make fun of it! cried Rostóv It is such a lofty beautiful feeling such a

I believe it I believe it fwiend and I share and appwove

No you don t understand!

And Rostóv got up and went wandering among the campfires dreaming of what happiness it would be to die—not in saving the Emperor s life (he did not even dare to dream of that) but simply to die before his eyes He really was in love with the Tsar and the glory of the Russian arms and the hope of future triumph And he was not the only man to experience that feeling during those memorable days preceding the battle of Austerlitz nine tenths of the men in the Russian army were then in love though less ecstatically with their Tsar and the glory of the Russian arms

CHAPTER XI

THE NEXT DAY the Emperor stopped at Wischau and Villier his physician was repeatedly summoned to see him At he la

night those around him reported The cause of this indisposition was the strong impression made on his sensitive mind by the sight of the killed and wounded

At daybreak on the seventeenth a French officer who had come with a flag of truce demanding an audience with the Russian Emperor was brought into Wischau from our out

posts This ffi er was S vary The Empero h d o ly just f llen asleep and so Sa ary had t a t. At m dday h was admitted to the Em pero d h ur late he rode off w th Pri ce Dolgorukov t th advanced post of the F ench army

It was rum ed that S ary had been e t to propose to Alexa der a meeti g w th N po leo To the joy a d p de of the wh le army perso al nterv ew was r fused and instead of the So re gn Prince Dolgorúk the c t t Wischau was ent with S ary t negoti ate w th N poleon f ontrary t expect t ns thes negot t s we e actu ted by eal de ire fo pea e.

T ard even ng D lgorukov came b ck ent stra ght to the T ar and rem ed alo e w th him fo a l ng time.

O the ght e th and ninetee th of No ember the army d anced tw days march a d th e emy outposts fter bri f ter ch ge f sh ts etreated. In the highest army ci cles from midd y on the net e th a great, excitedly bustl g cti ty bega which lasted till the m rn g f the tw nt eth wh n the mem rabl b ttl f Auste l tz was f ught.

Till m dd y o the n teenth the ct ty —the ger talk runn ng t d fro nd dis p tchi g f dj ta ts—was confi ed t th Em

t to all e ds a d parts of the rmy nd n the h twen th

m ss m les l g

The co trated ct ty wh ch had begun at the Empero he dqu rters n th m g and had tarted th wh le m em nt that f l lowed as l k tl first mo ement f th m n wheel f large t wer clock. O wh l l w ly mo ed, anoth was et n m t d th rd, d wheels bega t ev l e f t r nd faster levers d ogwh els to w k ch mes to pl y figu es t pop out d h h nds t d va w h egul m t as es lt of ll that cti ty

Just the mech m f cl k so in th mecha ism f th m l tary m ch m p lse ce gi l ds t the f l result d just as d ff re tly q esc t t ll the m ment wh mo tr m tted to tl em the parts f th m cha m wh ch the mpulse has n t yet eached Wheels cre k on their axles as the cogs engage one an ther nd the revolvi g wh rr w th the rap d ty of the r move

the mpulse that wheel beg

J s n the common mot on the result a d a m of which are beyond ts ken

Just s n l ck the result of the compli cated moti n of nnumerable wheels and pul leys s me ely slow nd regular m vement of th hands wh ch sh w the t m so the result f all the c mpl cated hum n act it es of

man h st ry

Pri e Andrew was on d ty th t day and n co ta t atte da e on the commander in ch f.

At x n the even g Kutúzov we t t the Empero headquarters nd fter t ying but sho t t me with the T a we t t se the grand marsh l of th court Cou t Tolstóy

B lkón k took the opp rtun ty t go in t

th ef re w hed to peak to Dolgorukov

"W ll h w d you do my dear f llow? s d D lg ruko who was tti g at tea w th B li b n "The f te f t m rrow H w is y ur old fell w? Out of sorts

I w nt say h s ut of rts but I f ncy he w uld l ke to be h rd.

But th y h d h m t th council of war a d w ll hear h m when he talks en e but to temporize d wa t f som thi g n w when B p rt fe rs th g much as g eral battle is mposs ble.

"Yes y u h e en him? sa d P nce An drew "Well wh t is B nap rte l k ? How did he mp ess y u?

"Yes I saw h m d m n ned th t h fears n th g so much as a ge ral gage m t repeat d D lgoruk de tly priz ing this general conclus n which he had ar

rived at from his interview with Napoleon If he weren t afraid of a battle why did he ask for that interview? Why negotiate and above all why retreat when to retreat is so contrary to his method of conducting war? Believe me he is afraid afraid of a general battle His hour has come! Mark my words!

But tell me what is he like eh? said Prince Andrew again

He is a man in a gray overcoat very anxious that I should call him Your Majesty but who to his chagrin got no title from me! That s

Despite my great respect for old Kutuzov he continued we should be a nice set of fellows if we were to wait about and so give him a chance to escape or to trick us now that we certainly have him in our hands! No we mustn t forget Suvórov and his rule—not to put yourself in a position to be attacked but yourself to attack Believe me in war the energy of young men often shows the way better than all the experience of old Cunctators

But in what position are we going to attack him? I have been at the outposts today and it is impossible to say where his chief forces are situated said Prince Andrew

He wished to explain to Dolgorukov a plan of attack he had himself formed

Oh that is all the same Dolgorukov said quickly and getting up he spread a map on the table All eventualities have been foreseen If he is standing before Brunn

And Prince Dolgorukov rapidly but indistinctly explained Weyrother s plan of a flanking movement

Prince Andrew began to reply and to state his own plan which might have been as good as Weyrother s but for the disadvantage that Weyrother s had already been approved As soon as Prince Andrew began to demonstrate the defects of the latter and the merits of his own plan Prince Dolgorukov ceased to listen to him and gazed absent mindedly not at the map but at Prince Andrew s face

There will be a council of war at Kutuzov s tonight though you can say all this there remarked Dolgorukov

I will do so said Prince Andrew moving away from the map

Whether tomorrow brings victory or defeat, the glory of our Russian arms is secure Except your Kutuzov there is not a single Russian in command of a column! The commanders are Herr General Wimpfen le Comte de Lanɢer on le Prince de Lichtenstein le Prince de Hohenlohe and finally Prishprish and so on like all those Polish names.

Be quiet backbiter! said Dolgorukov It is not true there are now two Russians Milorádovich and Dokhturov and there would be a third Count Arakchéev if his nerves were not too weak

However I think General Kutúzov has come out said Prince Andrew I wish you good luck and success gentlemen! he added and went out after shaking hands with Dolgorukov and Bilíbin

On the way home Prince Andrew could not refrain from asking Kutúzov who was sitting silently beside him what he thought of tomorrow s battle

Kutuzov looked sternly at his adjutant and after a pause replied I think the battle will be lost and so I told Count Tolstóy and asked him to tell the Emperor What do you think he replied? But my dear general I am engaged with rice and cutlets look after military matters yourself! Yes That was the answer I got!

CHAPTER XII

Shortly after nine o clock that evening Weyrother drove with his plans to Kutúzov s quarters where the council of war was to be held All the commanders of columns were summoned to the commander in chief s and with the exception of Prince Bagratión who declined to come were all there at the appointed time

Weyrother who was in full control of the proposed battle by his eagerness and briskness presented a marked contrast to the dissatisfied and drowsy Kutuzov who reluctantly played the part of chairman and president of the council of war Weyrother evidently felt himself to be at the head of a movement that had already become unrestrainable He was like a horse running downhill harnessed to a heavy cart. Whether he was pulling it or being pushed by it he did not know but rushed along at headlong speed with no time to consider what this movement might lead to Weyrother had been twice that evening to the enemy s picket line to reconnoiter personally and twice to the

and now was evidently ready with a joke

General Przebyszéwski.—T

Emperors R ss n a d Austr to repo t d expla d to h headquarters wh r he had d ctated th d spos t o s i Germ nd m he xh usted h arr ed t Kut zo s.

He was de tly so busy that he even f r got t be pol te to th comma de n ch f He terrupted h m talked rap dly a d d t nct ly w th t looki g t the man he was dd ess est n t to h m.

K t wa occupyi g a oblem n s castle f modest dimens n near Ostral tz. I the l rge dra g oom wh ch had become the comma der ch ef ffi we gath red Ku

i th room.

S Pri B gratión is t com g we may beg sa d Weyrother hurriedly r g rom h t d go g up t the tabl on h ch en rmous m p of the en rons of Bru p d t.

K tú w th his n f rm u butt ned so that his f t eck b lged o e his collar as f es cap g was tt g almost leep n l w ch ir w th h podgy ld h ds est g ymmetr cally ts rms. At th sou d f W yr ther s

as p u g eep u so ds h ose m tted d ri g the e d g that I ll wed p ed th t the comm der n ch f t th t m m t was bso bed by a f r more serio m tter tha desire to h w h co tempt f th d po t yth g el h was e gaged sa fy g the rres t bl human eed f leep H eally was leep Weyrother w th th gest e f man too busy to lose moment, gl ed t K t ov d, ha ed h m lf that he was asleep took p a p per d n l d, m t us vo ce bega t ead t the d pos t ons f the mpe d g bat le u der a h d g wh ch he lso ead t

D spos tio s for an att k on the enemy po t n bel nd Kob l tz and Sokoln tz No embe 3 180

The dispo t ons w re very complicated and d fficult. They began s f llows

As the enemy s left wi g rests on wooded hills and his r ght exte ds long Kobeln tz and Sok l tz beh nd the ponds th t are there wh l w on the the ha d with our left w ng by f outfl k h s right, t s d anta eous to

that Th first column m hes The se o d column ma cl es The third column marches a d so on read Weyrother

The g eral eemed to l st reluct ntly to the d fficult d po t on The tall fai h red G neral B xh wden stood lean g his b ck ga n t th wall h s eye fi ed on a burn g candle nd seemed n t to l t n or ev n to w sh to be thou ht to l ten Exactly opp te Weyroth w th h gl ten g w de-open yes fi ed pon h m d h s mu tach twisted up wa ds sat the ruddy M lorád ch n a m l tary pose hi lbows t rned outwards h s ha ds on h k es d l is h ulders ra ed He rem ed t bbornly s lent gaz g t Wey rother s f d o ly t rned away his eyes wh n the Austri n h ef of taff f n hed read

La g ron wh w th ubtle sm le tl t l ft h typ cally so thern F e ch f r durr the whole t m f the re d g gaz d t his d l cat fi gers wh ch rap dly tw led by its cor ners gold s uffbox wh ch was po tra t In the m ddl of one of the lon est ente ces

B t th Austri ge eral co tinu g to read frowned or ly nd jerked his lbow f t say: You can tell m y ur ews lat but n w b so good s t look t tl e m p and l sten La ge n l fted h s y w th an express n of perpl ty tur ed u d t M l rád vich as if s k g n expl tı but me u g th l t

rived at from his interview with Napoleon If he weren t afraid of a battle why did he ask for that interview? Why negotiate and above all why retreat when to retreat is so contrary to his method of conducting war? Believe me he is afraid afraid of a general battle His hour has come! Mark my words!

But tell me what is he like eh? said Prince Andrew again

He is a man in a gray overcoat very anxious that I should call him Your Majesty but who to his chagrin got no title from me! That s the sort of man he is and nothing more replied Dolgorukov looking round at Bilíbin with a smile

Despite my great respect for old Kutuzov he continued we should be a nice set of fellows if we were to wait about and so give him a chance to escape or to trick us now that we certainly have him in our hands! No we mustn t forget Suvórov and his rule—not to put yourself in a position to be attacked but yourself to attack Believe me in war the energy of young men often shows the way better than all the experience of old Cunctators

But in what position are we going to attack him? I have been at the outposts today and it is impossible to say where his chief forces are situated said Prince Andrew

quickly and getting up he spread a map on the table All eventualities have been foreseen If he is standing before Brunn

And Prince Dolgorukov rapidly but indistinctly explained Weyrother s plan of a flanking movement

Prince Andrew began to reply and to state his own plan which might have been as good as Weyrother s but for the disadvantage that Weyrother s had already been approved As soon as Prince Andrew began to demonstrate the defects of the latter and the merits of his own plan Prince Dolgorukov ceased to listen to him and gazed absent mindedly not at the map but at Prince Andrew s face

There will be a council of war at Kutuzov s

away from the map

Whatever are you bothering about gentlemen? said Bilíbin who till then had listened with an amused smile to their conversation and now was evidently ready with a joke

Whether tomorrow brings victory or defeat,

Herr General Wimpfen le Comte de Langeron le Prince de Lichtenstein le Prince de Hohenlohe and finally Prishprish and so on like all those Polish names

Be quiet backbiter! said Dolgorukov It is not true there are now two Russians Milorádovich and Dokhturov and there would be a third Count Arakchéev if his nerves were not too weak

However I think General Kutuzov has come out said Prince Andrew I wish you good luck and success gentlemen! he added and went out after shaking hands with Dolgorukov and Bilíbin

On the way home Prince Andrew could not refrain from asking Kutuzov who was sitting silently beside him what he thought of tomorrow s battle

Kutuzov looked sternly at his adjutant and after a pause replied I think the battle will be lost and so I told Count Tolstóy and asked him to tell the Emperor What do you think he replied? But my dear general I am engaged with rice and cutlets look after military matters yourself! Yes That was the answer I got!

CHAPTER XII

SHORTLY AFTER nine o clock that evening Weyrother drove with his plans to Kutuzov s quarters where the council of war was to be held All the commanders of columns were summoned to the commander in chief s and with the exception of Prince Bagratión who declined to come were all there at the appointed time

Weyrother who was in full control of the proposed battle by his eagerness and briskness presented a marked contrast to the dissatisfied and drowsy Kutuzov who reluctantly played the part of chairman and president of the council of war Weyrother evidently felt himself to be at the head of a movement that had already become unrestrainable He was like a horse running downhill harnessed to a heavy cart Whether he was pulling it or being pushed by it he did not know but rushed along at headlong speed with no time to consider what this movement might lead to Weyrother had been twice that evening to the enemy s picket line to reconnoiter personally and twice to the

General Przebyszéwski —Tr

Emperors Russ d Austr to r port and expla d t h s headquarters whe e he had dictated the d pos ti s n Germa d ow m h exh ted, h rri ed t Kutuzo s.

He was ev dently so busy that he even f got to be pol te to the commander n chi f. He interrupted him, talked rap dly nd dist nct ly without looking t the man he was address ing, d d d t reply t quest ns put to him. He was besp ttered w th mud nd had a p ti ful, eary and d tra ted air though at th sam time he was ha hty nd self-confident.

K tuzo was occupyi n bleman castle f modest dimens ns near Ostral tz. In the large drawing room wh ch had become the commander chief's ffice were gathered Ku tuzo himself Weyrother d the members of he council f war. They were drinki g tea,

tend. Prince Andrew cam in to nt in the commander in chi f f this and, vail n him self f permissio previousl given him by Ku tuzov to be present t the council, h remained in the room.

"Since Prince Bagratión is not coming, we may begin, said Weyrother hurriedly rising from his seat and going up to th tabl on which an enormous map f the environs of B un was spread out

K tuzov with his uniform unbuttoned so that his fat neck bu ged over his collar as if es caping was sitting almost asleep in low chair w th his podgy old hands resting symmetri ca on s arms. A the sound Weyrother voice he opened his one ey with an effort.

"Yes, yes, if you please. It is alread late, said he, nd nodding his head he let it droop and again closed his ey

If t first the members of the council thought that Kutuzov was pretending t sleep, th sounds his nose emitted during the reading that followed proved that the commander in chief t that moment was absorbed by far more serious matter th desire show his contempt for the dispositions or anything else —he was engaged in satisfying the irresistible human need for sleep. He really was asleep. Weyrother with the gesture of man too busy to lose moment, glanced at Kutuzov d, having convinced himself that he was asleep took up paper and in loud monotonous voice began to read out the dispositions for the impending battle under heading which he also read out:

Dispositions for an attack on the enemy position behind Kobelnitz and Sokolnitz, No vember 30, 1805

The dispositions were very complicated and difficult. They began as follows

As the enemy's left wing rests on wooded hills d h ght extends along Kobeln tz and Sokoln tz b h nd the ponds that are there wh le we, the ther hand w th our left w ng by f r o tflank h right, it s ad nta eous to ttack the enemy's latter w ng especially f we occupy the ll ges of Sokoln tz a d Kobeln tz whereby we can both fall on his flank d pu sue him o er the pl n between Schl pp n tz and the Thuerassa f est, a d g *the def les of Schlapp n tz nd Bell w tz which cover the enemy's fr t.* Fo this object t is necessary that The first column marches The second column ma ches Th third column marches and so on read Weyrother

The generals seemed to list n relucta tly to th difficult dispos tions. The tall fair haired General Buxhowden stood, lean his back a nst th wall his eyes fixed on a burn ng en o even to

tary pose his elb hands on his knees, d his houlders raised.

left his typ cal y so un the whol tim of the reading, gazed t his d li cat fingers wh ch rap dly twirled by ts cor ners a gold n ffbox on which was portrait. In the middle of on of the l ngest senten es h st pped th rotary motion of the snuffbox, raised his head, d w th inimical pol teness lurki n th corners of his thin lips i ter rupted Weyrother wishin to say somethin

for an explanation, but meeting the lat

ter s impressive but meaningless gaze drooped his eyes sadly and again took to twirling his snuffbox

A geography lesson! he muttered as if to himself but loud enough to be heard

ı ɩ au ot a man absorbed in attention Dohkturov a little man sat opposite Weyrother with an assiduous and modest mien and stooping over the outspread map conscientiously studied the dispositions and the unfamiliar locality He asked Weyrother several times to repeat words he had not clear ly heard and the difficult names of villages Weyrother complied and Dohkturov noted them down

When the reading which lasted more than an hour was over Langeron again brought his snuffbox to rest and without looking at Wey rother or at anyone in particular began to say how difficult it was to carry out such a plan in which the enemy s position was assumed to be known whereas it was perhaps not known since the enemy was in movement Langeron s objections were valid but it was obvious that their

er—

self

chılu —that he had to do not with fools but with men who could teach him something in military matters

When the monotonous sound of Weyroth er s voice ceased Kutuzov opened his eye as a miller wakes up when the soporific drone of the m ıı stened to

So you

ᴋly closed his eye again and let his head sink still lower

Langeron trying as virulently as possible to sting Weyrother s vanity as author of the mili

t

a

t

V yrother met all objections with a firm and contemptuous smile evidently prepared be forehand to meet all objections be they what they might.

If he could attack us he would have done so today said he

So you think he is powerless? said Langer on

He has forty thousand men at most re plied Weyrother with the sm le of a doctor to whom an old wife wishes to explain the treat ment of a case

In that case he is inviting his doom by awaiting our attack said Langeron with a subtly ironical smile again glancing round for support to Milorádovich who was near him

But Milorádovich was at that moment evidently thinking of anything rather than of what the generals were disputing about.

Ma foi' said he tomorrow we shall see all that on the battlefield

Weyrother again gave that smile which seemed to say that to him it was strange and ridiculous to meet objections from Russian generals and to have to prove to them what he had not merely convinced himself of but had also convinced the sovereign Emperors of

The enemy has quenched his fires and a continual noise is heard from his camp said he What does that mean? Either he is retreat ing which is the only thing we need fear or he is changing his position. (He smiled ironically) But even if he also took up a position in the Thuerassa he merely saves us a great deal of trouble and all our arrangements to the minutest detail remain the same

How is that? began Prince Andrew who had for long been waiting an opportunity to express his doubts

Kutuzov here woke up coughed heavily and looked round at the generals

Gentlemen the dispositions for tomorrow —or rather for today for it is past midnight— cannot now be altered said he You have heard them and we shall all do our duty But before a battle there is nothing more impor tant he paused than to have a good sleep

He moved as if to rise The generals bowed and retired It was past midnight Prince An drew went out

The council of war at which Prince Andrew had not been able to express his opinion as he had hoped to left on him a vague and uneasy impression Whether Dolgorukov and Wey rother or Kutuzov Langeron and the others who did not approve of the plan of attack were right—he did not know But was it really not possible for Kutuzov to state his views pla nly to the Emperor? Is it possible that on account of court and personal considerations tens of thousands of lives and my l fe *my life* he thought must be risked?

Yes it is very l kely that I shall be killed tomorrow he thought And suddenly at th s thought of death a wl ole series of most d s tant most intimate memories rose in h s im

am tio he rememb red hisl st p rti fr m h f ther a d his w fe h emembered the d ys hen he first l ed her He thou ht of her pregn cy a d felt sorry f her and f r himself d in ners usly em t n l and sof tened mood h w nt ut of the hut in which h wa bill ted w th Nes itski nd began to lk pa d d wn befo e t.

The n ghtwas f ggy nd through the fog the moonl ght gleamed myst riously "Yes t m r row tom rrow he tho ght. "T m rrow ev eryth g may be o er fo me! All these mem es will be o m e n f them w ll h e a y mea g f r me T morr w pe haps e en certa ly I ha e a p ese t ment that fo th first t m I hall h e to sh w all I can d

A d his f cy p ctu ed the b ttl ts l ss the co e trat f fight ng t n po nt nd the hes tati f ll the comma ders And then that happy m me t that To lon fo wh ch he had so l g w ted p ese ts tself to h m at last. H firmly d clea ly exp es es h s op t K tuz t Weyr ther nd to th Em perors. All are tru k by th just ess f his ews but dertakes t carry them t, so h takes egime t a d is n—stupu t rfer w th his ar e ath n e

A drew h wever d d n t n wer that o ce d w t d eam g f his triumphs. The d pos t f r th ext b ttle re pl n ed by him al e. N m lly he is o ly n djuta t K tzo s taff but he does everyth g l The ext b ttl is won by h m al ne. K uzo em ed d he is ppo ted "W ll a d th ?" ked the ther ce If bef that y n t ten t mes w u ded k lled be ra ed well wh t th n?

"W ll th Pri ce A drew answered h m elf I d t k w wh t w ll happ n d don t

noth g b t f m d men est em D th, w ds, th loss f f m ly—I fea thi g A d p ec us d dea ma y perso are t m— f her er w f —those dea est t m —yet dreadf l d tural t seems, I wo ld gi e them ll t f mom nt f gl ry f tri mph er m n f l e f m men I d n t k w d ever hall k ow f th l f

these men here he thought as he l stened to ces Kutu o courtyard. The vo ces v ere those of the d rl es who were p cking up one o ce p ob bly a co chm n s w s tea Kut s old cook wh m Pr nce Andrew knew and who was called Tit. He was saying Tit I say T t!

Well? returned th old m n

Go Tit, thresh a b tl sa d th wag

Oh go to the dev ll called out a vo ce drowned by th laughter of the rd rl es and serva ts.

All the same I lo e and value oth n but triumph o er them all I value thi myst c pow e and glory that is fl ting here bo e me in th s mi t!

CHAPTER XIII

THAT SA NI IT Rostó was w th a pl toon fro t of B grat ó s e t h

c m g e h m. An en rm s p the fo our rmy s campfi es dimly gl w n

wh re the e emy ought t be n w i e u h own e es. H eyes

eyes and w clos befo h m the he u u

say Go nd find ut what s ther I h e a many st ries f h gett ng to know n off er n

d ot n to th so ereign R tó p ctured to h ms lf n nemy dec tful German wl m he w ld t nly k ll w th pleasu but wh m h w uld sl p n the f b f e th Emper S dd ly a dista t h ut aroused him. He tarted a d pened his ey

ter s impressive but meaningless gaze drooped his eyes sadly and again took to twirling his snuffbox

A geography lesson! he muttered as if to himself but loud enough to be heard

Przebyszéwski with respectful but dignified politeness held his hand to his ear toward Weyrother with the air of a man absorbed in attention Dohkturov a little man sat opposite Weyrother with an assiduous and modest mien and stooping over the outspread map conscientiously studied the dispositions and the unfamiliar locality He asked Weyrother several times to repeat words he had not clearly heard and the difficult names of villages Weyrother complied and Dohkturov noted them down

When the reading which lasted more than an hour was over Langeron again brought his snuffbox to rest and without looking at Weyrother or at anyone in particular began to say how difficult it was to carry out such a plan in which the enemy s position was assumed to be known whereas it was perhaps not known since the enemy was in movement Langeron s objections were valid but it was obvious that th ...

... that he had to do not with fools but with men who could teach him something in military matters

When the monotonous sound of Weyrother s voice ceased Kutuzov opened his eye as a miller wakes up when the soporific drone of the m ... tened to ... So you ... ly closed his eye again and let his head sink still lower

Langeron trying as virulently as possible to sting Weyrother s vanity as author of the mili ...

... contemptuous smile evidently prepared beforehand to meet all objections be they what they might.

If he could attack us he would have done so today said he

So you think he is powerless? said Langeron

He has forty thousand men at most replied Weyrother with the smile of a doctor to whom an old wife wishes to explain the treatment of a case

In that case he is inviting his doom by awaiting our attack said Langeron with a subtly ironical smile again glancing round for support to Milorádovich who was near him

But Milorádovich was at that moment evidently thinking of anything rather than of what the generals were disputing about.

Ma foi! said he tomorrow we shall see all that on the battlefield

Weyrother again gave that smile which seemed to say that to him it was strange and ridiculous to meet objections from Russian generals and to have to prove to them what he had not merely convinced himself of but had also convinced the sovereign Emperors of

The enemy has quenched his fires and a continual noise is heard from his camp said he What does that mean? Either he is retreating which is the only thing we need fear or he is changing his position (He smiled ironically) ... in the ... deal of ... the minutest detail remain the same

How is that? began Prince Andrew who had for long been waiting an opportunity to express his doubts

Kutuzov here woke up coughed heavily and looked round at the generals.

Gentlemen the dispositions for tomorrow —or rather for today for it is past midnight— cannot now be altered said he You have heard them and we shall all do our duty But before a battle there is nothing more important he paused than to have a good sleep

He moved as if to rise The generals bowed and retired It was past midnight. Prince Andrew went out

The council of war at which Prince Andrew had not been able to express his opinion as he had hoped to left on him a vague and uneasy impression Whether Dolgorukov and Weyrother or Kutuzov Langeron and the others who did not approve of the plan of attack were right—he did not know But was it really not possible for Kutuzov to state his views plainly to the Emperor? Is it possible that on account of court and personal considerations tens of thousands of lives and my life my life he thought must be risked?

Yes it is ... that I shall be killed tomorrow he ... denly at this thought of de... most d... tant most int... his im-

even g o that kn ll if they had etreated they w ld ha e w thdrawn from th t too

Offi e l sa d B grat ó t Ro tó the en emy s sk rmishers st ll ther ?

"They w re th re th s e en g b e n I d n t k w y e cellency Sh ll I go w th som f my hussars to e? epl ed R tó

B grat ó n st pped a d bef eply g tr ed to s R tó f e n them t.

"W ll go d see he sa d after a pause

"Yes s r

t f m wh ch th sh ut came He felt both l ght ed d pl as d t ber d ng l ne

the hill t t go bey nd the tream but Rostó p e ded n t to h a h m nd d d n t st p b t ode o d c t llym stak g bushes f r trees nd gull es fo me a d con ti ually d sco r h s m tak s Ha g d sc ded th h ll t tr t he no l er saw e ther wn the e emy fires b t heard the h t f the F h m l udly nd d t ctly I the alley h w bef e h m som th l k e b t h l e ched t he l d t was a r d. H g e m out o to th d h e d h h rs hes tati g wh ther t de l g t or cros t d rid r th bl k f ld p tl e h ll d To keep to th ro d wh ch gleamed wh t th m st wo ld h bee fer b cause t w uld be ea er to ee people com g l g t. F ll w m I sa d he cro ed the d d bega r d g p th h ll t gall p tow d the po nt here the F e ch p ckets had be n st d g that eve g

"Y h tl r he l er d o e of the hussars beh d h m A d b f e R tó had t me t m k t wh t th bl k th g w

mused fire b t fl shed the p R tóv turned h h rse d gall ped b ck F m re report f ll wed t terval d th bull ts p sed somewhere th fog g g n d ff ent t es. Rostó r ed h h rse whos p t had sen l k h own t th fi g a d w t ba k t footp e Well some m re! Some mo m rry o ce wa say g n his soul. B t mo e h ts came.

O I wl appro ch g Bagratión d d R

dec e u

"What d es that pr e? I e was ay ng as Rostó rode up Th y m ght retre t a d le e the p ckets

"Very good ery good s d B grat n

"Thank you offic

"Y ur xc lle cy s d Rost m y I k a fa ?

"What s t?

"Tom rrow ur squ d on to be n esers M y I k t be tt cl ed t th f rst qu l n?

"What s you me

Cou t Ro tó

Oh ery well y u m y ta tt nd on me

Cou t Ilyá R t s so ? a ked D lgor ko

B t R tó d d n t reply

Then I m y e k non t y ll ncy?

I w ll g th o der

T m rr w ery l kely I m y b t w th som mess g t the Empe tl ht Rostó Th k God!

Th fi es d sh t g tl my army w cea d by tl f ct th t w l l N pol sp l nat n wa be g d to th t oop the Empe l mself ode ro d l b u cs. Th sold ers o e g h m l t p f str w a d ran ft h m sh ut g, I l'Emper N p leo s p oclam t n w f ll s

Sold rs! Th R ss army is l a ga t y t enge th A t my f Ulm Th y th sam battal ns y b k H ll b d h p rs ed e th pl Th pos occupy t g d h l h y m h g t go d m th ht they w ll expose fl k me. Sold rs I ll lf d ect y b ttal I ll keep t f f y h h l t l l carr d so der d co f on th my k l t h ll ct ry be d l en f m t y ll se y Em-

Where am I? Oh yes in the skirmishing line pass and watchword—*shaft Olmutz* What a nuisance that our squadron will be in reserve tomorrow he thought I'll ask leave to go to the front this may be my only chance of seeing the Emperor It won't be long now before I am off duty I'll take another turn and when I get back I'll go to the general and ask him He readjusted himself in the saddle and touched up his horse to ride once more round his hussars It seemed to him that it was getting lighter To the left he saw a sloping descent lit up and facing it a black knoll that seemed as steep as a wall On this knoll there was a white patch that Rostov could not at all make out was it a glade in the wood lit up by the moon or some unmelted snow or some white houses? He even thought something moved on that white spot I expect it's snow that spot a spot—*une tache* he thought There now it's not a *tache* Natásha sister black eyes Na tásha (Won't she be surprised when I tell her how I've seen the Emperor?) Natásha take my sabretache — Keep to the right your honor there are bushes here came the voice of an hussar past whom Rostóv was riding in the act of falling asleep Rostóv lifted his head that had sunk almost to his horse's mane and pulled up beside the hussar He was succumbing to irresistible youthful childish drowsiness But what was I thinking? I mustn't forget How shall I speak to the Emperor? No that's not it—that's tomorrow Oh yes! Natásha sabretache saber them Whom? The hussars Ah the hussars with mustaches Along the Tverskáya Street rode the hussar with mustaches I thought about him too just opposite Guryev's house Old Guryev Oh but Denísov's a fine fellow But that's all nonsense The chief thing is that the Emperor is here How he looked at me and wished to say something but dared not No it was I who dared not But that's nonsense the chief thing is not to forget the important thing I was thinking of Yes Na tásha sabretache oh yes yes! That's right! And his head once more sank to his horse's neck All at once it seemed to him that he was being fired at What? What? What? Cut them down! What? said Rostóv waking up At the moment he opened his eyes he heard in front of him where the enemy was the long-drawn shouts of thousands of voices His horse and the horse of the hussar near him pricked their ears at these shouts Over there where the shouting came from a fire flared up and went out again then another and all along the French line on the hill fires flared up and the shouting grew louder and louder Rostov could hear the sound of French words but could not distinguish them The din of many voices was too great all he could hear was ahahah! and rrrr!

What's that? What do you make of it said Rostov to the hussar beside him That must be the enemy's camp!

The hussar did not reply

Why don't you hear it? Rostóv asked again after waiting for a reply

Who can tell your honor? replied the hussar reluctantly

From the direction it must be the enemy repeated Rostóv

It may be he or it may be nothing muttered the hussar It's dark Steady! he cried to his fidgeting horse

Rostov's horse was also getting restive it

roar that only an army of several thousand men could produce The lights spread farther and farther probably along the line of the French camp Rostóv no longer wanted to sleep The gay triumphant shouting of the enemy army had a stimulating effect on him *Vive l'Empereur! l'Empereur!* he now heard distinctly

They can't be far off probably just beyond the stream he said to the hussar beside him

The hussar only sighed without replying and coughed angrily The sound of horse's hoofs approaching at a trot along the line of hussars was heard and out of the foggy darkness the figure of a sergeant of hussars suddenly appeared looming huge as an elephant

Your honor the generals! said the sergeant riding up to Rostov

Rostov still looking round toward the fires and the shouts rode with the sergeant to meet some mounted men who were riding along the line One was on a white horse Prince Bagration and Prince Dolgorukov with their adjutants had come to witness the curious phenomenon of the lights and shouts in the enemy's camp Rostov rode up to Bagration reported to him and then joined the adjutants listening to what the generals were saying

Believe me said Prince Dolgorukov addressing Bagratión it is nothing but a trick! He has retreated and ordered the rearguard to kindle fires and make a noise to deceive us

Hardly said Bagratión I saw them this

even g that kn ll if they h d ret e ted they o ld ha e w thdrawn from th t too
~ v \ the en

ow I
do t kn w y ur exce } w th some I my hussars t ee? repl ed Rostó

Bagratió st pped nd bef e reply tried t se Rostó s f ce them t.

"W ll go d ee h sa d after a p use.

"Yes,

Rostó purred h h rse called t Sergeant Fédche k d tw other hu sars, t ld them to f ll w h m nd trotted downh'll n the d ec u from wh ch th shout cam He felt both fri htened d plea ed t be rid g lo e *w th three h sars t that myst r u* and dangerous m ty d ta ce wl ere n had been bef e him. Bagrat called t h m from *th hill t t* go beyo d the tream b t Rostó p ete ded t t h r h m d d d not t p b t rode n d co t nually m tak g bushes f r trees a d gull es fo men d con t uall d co en h m takes. H g desce ded th hill t trot he n l ger sa e ther ur n th e emy fires but heard the h t of the F ch more l dly and distı ctly I the alley he saw bef h m som thı g l ke ri er b h he ched t h f d t was ro d. H g com ut o t the road he ed his h rse hes tatı g hether t rid l g t o cro t d ride ov the bl ck fi ld up tl h lls de To keep to the ro d wh ch gleamed wh t n th m t would ha bee saf beca se t w uld be eas er t ee peopl com g l g t. F ll w m sa d be crossed th ro d, d bega rid ing p th h ll t gall p toward the po t where th Fre ch p ckets had been tand g tha even

"Y h ther he t cr ed o f the hussars behi d h m. A d bef e R tó h d tım mak t wh t th bl k th wa that h d dd ly pp ar d the fog there was flash, f ll wed by r port, d bull t hizz g h gh up th mist w th pl t e so d passed t of hea A ther musket missed fir b t fl hed n th p Rostó *t rned h h rs* d gall p d b ck F u m re ports f ll wed t erval d the b ll ts passed somewher th fog gi g n d ff e to es. Rostó re ed h h rs whose p rits h d rise l k h own t th fi g d went back foo p W ll som m Some mo l merry o ce was say g n h soul. B t no m h ts cam

O t wl pproach n Bagrati n d I Rostó

dece e us.

"What does that pro e? I e wa saying as R tó rod up They m g t retreat nd lea e the p kets.

It s pl that they ha e n t ll go e yet Pr ce sa d B grat ón. W t t ll tom rr w morr g we ll fi l out everyth tomorrow

"Tl e p cket s t ll n the h ll your excel
~ no t

"Very good ery good s d B grat t "Th k you off er

"Your xcellency sa d Rost ma I k f o?

"What s it?

"T m rrow ou quadro t t be n reserv M y I k to be atta hed t the f rst squ d

What s y ur n me?"

Co t Ro t

Oh ery well u m ta tt da o me.

Cou t Ilyá Rost s so ? ked Dolgoru k

B t Rostó d d t reply

Then I may eck t your e ll cy

I w ll g e th o der

"T m rr w ery l kely I m y be se t w th som messag t the Emperor tl o ht Rostó "Tha k God!

Th fi es d sl ut n tl e e emy rmy w e occa ed by th f ct th t wl l N pole on p ocla nat n wa be g d t tl troop th Empero h ms lf rode ro d l l ou es. The sold rs n ee h m l t w ps f traw d ra fte h m h utı l e *l'Emper e* N poleon s p ocl m t on as as f ll s

Sold ers Th R ss rmy is l ci ga t } venge h A tria my f Ulm They th sam ba tal ns } brok t H ll bru n d h p ed ce t th pl Th pos w occupy tro g d wh l l ey m h g t go ro d m th l t th y ll expose fl k t me. Sold ers l dl self d ect } b ttal I ll keep f f y w th } h l l al tarr d so d d co f on h m k b t sh ld ct ry be d l f m Y w'll se Em-

Wheream I? Oh yes in the skirmishing line pass and watchword—*shaft Olmutz* What a nuisance that our squadron will be in reserve tomorrow he thought I ll ask leave to go to the front this may be my only chance of seeing the Emperor It won t be long now before I am off duty I ll take another turn and when I get back I ll go to the general and ask him He readjusted himself in the saddle and touched up his horse to ride once more round his hussars It seemed to him that it was getting lighter To the left he saw a sloping descent lit up

glade in the wood lit up by the moon or some unmelted snow or some white houses? He even thought something moved on that white spot I expect it s snow that spot a spot—*une tache* he thought There now it s not a *tache* Natásha sister black eyes Natásha (Won t she be surprised when I tell her how I ve seen the Emperor?) Natásha take my sabretache — Keep to the right your honor there are bushes here came the voice of an hussar past whom Rostóv was riding in the act of falling asleep Rostóv lifted his head that had sunk almost to his horse s mane and pulled up beside the hussar He was succumbing to irresistible youthful childish drowsiness But what was I thinking? I mustn t forget How shall I speak to the Emperor? No that s not it—that s tomorrow Oh yes! Natásha sabretache saber them Whom? The hussars Ah the hussars with mustaches Along the Tverskáya Street rode the hussar with mustaches I thought about him too just opposite Guryev s house Old Guryev Oh but Denísov s a fine fellow But that s all nonsense The chief thing is that the Em

sank to his horse s neck All at once it seemed to him that he was being fired at What? What? What? Cut them down! What? said Rostóv waking up At the moment he opened his eyes he heard in front of him where the enemy was the long drawn shouts of thousands of voices His horse and the horse of the hussar near him pricked their ears at these shouts Over there where the shouting came from a fire flared up and went out again then another and all along the French line on the hill fires flared up and the shouting grew louder and louder Rostóv could hear the sound of French words but could not distinguish them. The din of many voices was too great all he could hear was ahahah! and rrr!

What s that? What do you make of it? said Rostóv to the hussar beside him That must be the enemy s camp!

The hussar did not reply

Why don t you hear it? Rostóv asked again after waiting for a reply

Who can tell your honor? replied the hussar reluctantly

From the direction it must be the enemy repeated Rostóv

It may be *he* or it may be nothin muttered the hussar It s dark Steady! he cried to his fidgeting horse

Rostóv s horse was also getting restive it

men could produce The lights spread farther and farther probably along the line of the French camp Rostóv no longer wanted to sleep The gay triumphant shouting of the enemy army had a stimulating effect on him *Vive l Empereur! l Empereur!* he now heard distinctly

They can t be far off probably just beyond the stream he said to the hussar beside him

The hussar only sighed without replying and coughed angrily The sound of horse s hoofs approaching at a trot along the line of hussars was heard and out of the foggy darkness the figure of a sergeant of hussars suddenly appeared looming huge as an elephant

Your honor the generals! said the sergeant, riding up to Rostóv

Rostóv still looking round toward the fires and the shouts rode with the sergeant to meet some mounted men who were riding along the line One was on a white horse Prince Bagration and Prince Dolgorúkov with their adjutants had come to w ... s plen m enon of the lights ... camp Rostóv rode u[p] to him and then join[ed] ... ing to what the gene[rals] ...

Bel[i]eve me s[a]id D[olgorúkov] ... dress[i]ng Bagratión it s ... He has retreated and ... kindle fires and make a no[ise] ...

Hardly said Bagratión

m cated s very d fficult to defi e b t t cer t ly s mmu cated s rys ly a d fl s ra dl mp c pt bly a d rr p es bly as

f m ma gem t became ge er t b t s t n the d so d r w e d ly a d t rally ttr buted to the t p d German d er e w co ed th t a d nge us m ddl h d been o ca ned by the s e t rs

'Why h e we topped? I the w y bl ked? O h e we al dy c m up ga n t the Fre ch?

N e can t hear them They d be fir g f we h d.

'They were n hurry en h t start us d whe we ta d n the m ddle of f ld w th t rhyme r It ll those d m ed G rma m ddl gl What t p d de ls!

Yes I d d them n f nt b t n fe they cr d g up b h nd. And ow he w sta d h gry

I y h ll e soo be le ? Th y s y th ca lry bl k ng the way d an off r

Ah, th e d mn d G rmans! Th y d n t k w th w tryl d ther

Wh t d is on ar y u? h ut d an dju ta t, r d g p

'Th E ght e th

The why ar y u here? Y u hould ha e go e l g go w y u wo t get tl e t ll eve g

Wh t t p d ders! They d t tl msel es k w wh t they ar d g l d th ff c nd rod ff

The ge ral r dep t hout g m th g gr ly t Russ n

T l l f l B t wh th s j bb g no o e ca *mak t, d sold* m m k g the gen ral wh h d dd n w y I d hoot tl m the sco dr l !

W w d ed t be t tl pl e b f e b t w h e t got h lf w y F o ders! w be g pe ted n d ff ent d

A d th f l g f ergy w th wh ch the troop h d ta ted began t turn e t n d ge t the t p d rra g me ts a d t th Germa

The f the f n was th t wh le

cro sed n fr nt of the i f ntry wl o had t wa t.

At the fro t a ltercat on occurred l tween a Austr n gu de a d Rus an ge eral Tl e ge eral sh uted a dem nd that tl e cavalry sl o ld be halted the A st an argued that n t he but the h gl er c mm d was to blame The troop me wh le stood gr wing l tles a d d sp r ted. Afte an l ur delay tl ey at last m d on desce dl g the h ll Tl e fo th t was d p rs ng on the h ll l y st ll t re den ely bel w wh re they were descend n In fro t the f g a l ot wa he d nd ther a th r t f rst rregul rly t ryi g t ters l trata t t d then more a d more r g lar ly d rap dly nd the ct at the Goldbach Stre m bega

N t expect g to come on the e emy d w by tl e st eam a d h ng tumbled l m i the f g hea ng o nc urag g w l l m

R xch ged sh ts w th the enemy l z ly d d ed a d aga l lted rece g no t mely rd rs fr m the fficers o adj t ts

umn w w N ood o t Prat en H ghts

was qu te l ght. Abo e h m wa clear bl ky d the ns t b q d l ke a h ge h l l w cr mson fl t on the su f e of th t m lky f m t The wh le F ch rmy d e

b ck to the ght Several tl d c alry

peror exposing himself to the first blows of the enemy for there must be no doubt of victory especially on this day when what is at stake is the honor of the French infantry so necessary to the honor of our nation

Do not break your ranks on the plea of removing the wounded! Let every man be fully imbued with the thought that we must defeat these hirelings of England inspired by such hatred of our nation! This victory will conclude our campaign and we can return to winter quarters where fresh French troops who are being raised in France will join us and the peace I shall conclude will be worthy of my people of you and of myself

NAPOLEON

CHAPTER XIV

AT FIVE in the morning it was still quite dark The troops of the center the reserves and Bagratión s right flank had not yet moved but on the left flank the columns of infantry cavalry and artillery which were to be the first to descend the heights to attack the French right flank and drive it into the Bohemian mountains according to plan were already up and astir The smoke of the campfires into which they were throwing everything superfluous made the eyes smart It was cold and dark The officers were hurriedly drinking tea and breakfast no the soldiers munching biscuit and beating a tattoo with their feet to warm themselves gathering round the fires throwing into the flames the remains of sheds chairs tables wheels tubs and everything that they did not want or could not carry away with them Austrian column guides were moving in and out among the Russian troops and served as heralds of the advance As soon as an Austrian officer showed himself near a commanding officer s quarters the regiment began to move the soldiers ran from the fires thrust their pipes into their boots their bags into the carts got their muskets ready and formed rank The officers buttoned up their coats buckled on their swords and pouches and moved along the ranks shouting The train drivers and orderlies harnessed and packed the wagons and tied on the loads The adjutants and battalion and regimental commanders mounted crossed themselves gave final instructions orders and commissions to the baggage men who remained behind and the monotonous tramp of thousands of feet resounded The column moved forward without knowing where and unable from the masses around them the smoke and the increasing fog to see either the place they were leaving or that to which they were going

A soldier on the march is hemmed in and borne along by his regiment as much as a sailor is by his ship However far he has walked whatever strange unknown and dangerous places he reaches just as a sailor is always surrounded by the same decks masts and rigging of his ship so the soldier always has around him the same comrades the same ranks, the same sergeant major Iván Mítrich the same company dog Jack and the same commanders. The sailor rarely cares to know the latitude in which his ship is sailing but on the day of battle—heaven knows how and whence—a stern note of which all are conscious sounds in the moral atmosphere of an army announcing the approach of something decisive and solemn and awakening in the men an unusual curiosity On the day of battle the soldiers excitedly try to get beyond the interests of their regiment they listen intently look about and eagerly ask concerning what is going on around them

The fog had grown so dense that though it was growing light they could not see ten paces ahead Bushes looked like gigantic trees and level ground like cliffs and slopes Anywhere on any side one might encounter an enemy invisible ten paces off But the columns advanced for a long time always in the same fog descending and ascending hills avoiding gardens and enclosures going over new and unknown ground and nowhere encountering the enemy On the contrary the soldiers became aware that in front behind and on all sides other Russian columns were moving in the same direction Every soldier felt glad to know that to the unknown place where he was going many more of our men were going too

There now the Kurskies have also gone past was being said in the ranks

It s wonderful what a lot of our troops have gathered lads! Last night I looked at the campfires and there was no end of them A regular Moscow!

Though none of the column commanders rode up to the ranks or talked to the men (the commanders as we saw at the council of war were out of humor and dissatisfied with the affair and so did not exert themselves to cheer the men but merely carried out the orders) yet the troops marched gaily as they always do when going into action especially to an attack But when they had marched for about an hour in the dense fog the greater part of the men had to halt and an unpleasant consciousness of some dislocation and blunder spread through the ranks How such a consciousness is com

mun cated is very difficult t defin but t cer tainly is comm cated ery urely nd flows n dl imperceptibly nd rrepress bly as

f mismanagement became genera tio but was, the disorder was read ly and turall ttrib ted to the t p d Germans, and everyo was convi ced that a da gerous muddl had been occas oned by the sausage eaters.

"Why ha w st pped? Is the way blocked? Or ha e we already come up ga nst the French.

No, o can t hear them. They d be firing if we had.

"They were in hurry en u h t start us, and now here w ta d in th middl f fi ld witho t hyme reason. It all those damned Germans muddl g! What t p d de ls

"Yes, I d send them n in front, but no fear they re crowdi p beh nd. And now her we stand hungry

"I say shall we soo be clear? They say the cavalry ar block g th way sa d n officer

Ah, those damned Germans! They don t know their wn country said an ther

"What division are you. shouted an adjutant, ridin p.

"The Eigh ee th.

"Then wh are yo here? You should have gon lo go now you won t get th re t ll evening

"What stup d rders They d n t themsel es know what they are d in said th offi er and rod ff.

The general rode past shouti g somethin angrily *not in Russian.*

"T fa laf B wha h jabbers o o can make t, sa d soldier mim ki th general h had ridden way "I d hoot them, th sc undrels

"W were rdered to be t the pl ce bef nin but w ha got halfway F rders was ber g repea ed different des.

And th feelin f ergy w th which th troops had tarted began to turn exation and anger t th tupid arrangem nts and t the Germans.

Th cause f the confusion was that while the Austrian cavalry was movi g ward ur lef flank, the higher command f d that our cen er was too far separated from our right flank and th cavalry er all rd ed to turn back to the ri h Several thousa d ca alry crossed in front of the infantry who had to wa t.

At the front a lterca n occurred between a Austri n gu de a d a Rus an general Th e ge eral houted a dema d that the cavalry should be halted the Austrian rgued th t not he but the higher command was to bl me. The troops mea wh le stood growi g l tles nd disp rited. After n hour s delay they at l st mo ed o descendin the h ll. The fog that was dispers on the h ll lay t ll more densely below where they were desce d In front n the fog a shot was heard nd then a other at first irregul rly at vary g i tervals—trata tat—a d then more a d more regul r l d rap dly and the ction t the Goldb ch Stream began.

N t expect to come on the enem d w by the stream a d ha ng tumbled on h m n the fog heari g no enco ragi g word from the comma ders, d w th a consc ou nes of be too late spreadi thro h th ra ks, nd bo e ll be g unable t see n th m t front r round them n the thick fog the Russ ns exchanged shots w th the emy l zily nd advanced nd a n halted, rece o tm ly orders from th officers o adjuta ts who wandered bo t n th fog n those un known surrou d gs un ble to fi d their own regim nts. In th way the ct on began f r the first, seco d, d third col mns, wh ch had gon d wn to the valley The f urth col um with wh ch Kutúzo was, stood on the Pratzen H ghts.

Bel w where the fi ht was begi ning ther

whether they were ear by n that sea of mist, no n knew till fter ght o clock

was qu te light. Abo e him was clear bl k and the sun vast o b qu ered like huge hol low crimson fl t on th surf e of that milk sea f mi t. The whol F ench rmy and ev n N poleon himself w th his taff were not on th far de of th t eams nd holl ws of Sok lnitz and Schlappanitz beyo d which w

peror exposing himself to the first blows of the enemy for there must be no doubt of victory especially on this day when what is at stake is the honor of the French infantry so necessary to the honor of our nation

Do not break your ranks on the plea of removing the wounded! Let every man be fully imbued with the thought that we must defeat these hirelings of England inspired by such hatred of our nation! This victory will conclude our campaign and we can return to winter quarters where fresh French troops who are being raised in France will join us and the peace I shall conclude will be worthy of my people of you and of myself

NAPOLEON

CHAPTER XIV

AT FIVE in the morning it was still quite dark The troops of the center the reserves and Bagration's right flank had not yet moved but on the left flank the columns of infantry cavalry and artillery which were to be the first to descend the heights to attack the French right flank and drive it into the Bohemian mountains according to plan were already up and astir The smoke of the campfires into which they were throwing everything superfluous made the eyes smart It was cold and dark The officers were hurriedly drinking tea and breakfasting the soldiers munching biscuit and beating a tattoo with their feet to warm themselves gathering round the fires throwing into the flames the remains of sheds chairs tables wheels tubs and everything that they did not want or could not carry away with them Austrian column guides were moving in and out among the Russian troops and served as heralds of the advance As soon as an Austrian officer showed himself near a commanding officer's quarters the regiment began to move the soldiers ran from the fires thrust their pipes into their boots their bags into the carts got their muskets ready and formed r nk Th

s ... drivers and orderlies harnessed and packed the wagons and tied on the loads The adjutants and battalion and regimental commanders mounted crossed themselves gave final instructions order

... the place they were leaving or that to which they were going

A soldier on the march is hemmed in and borne along by his regiment as much as a sailor is by his ship However far he has walked, whatever strange unknown and dangerous places he reaches just as a sa lo

... comrades the same ranks the same sergeant major Iván Mítrich the same company dog Jack and the same commanders. The sailor rarely cares to kno

... an are conscious sounds in the moral atmosphere of an army announcing the approach of something decisive and solemn and awakening in the men an unusual curiosity On the day of battle the soldiers excitedly try to get beyond the interests of their regiment they listen intently look about and eagerly ask concerning what is going on around them

The fog had grown so dense that though it was growing light they could not see ten paces ahead Bushes looked like gigan

... the columns advanced for a long time always in the same fog descending and ascending hills avoiding gardens and enclosures going over new and unknown ground and nowhere encountering the enemy On the contrary the soldiers became aware that in front behind and on all sides other Russian columns were moving in the same direction Every soldier felt glad to know that to the unknown place where he was going many more of our men were going too

There now the Kurskies have also gone past was being said in the ranks

It's wonderful what a lot of our troops have gathered lads! Last night I looked at the campfires and there was no end of them A regular Moscow!

Though none of the column commanders rode up to the ranks or talked to the men (the commanders as we saw at the council of war were out of humor and dissatisfied with the affair and so did not exert themselves to cheer the men but merely carried out the orders) yet the troops marched gaily as they always do when going into action especially to an attack But when they had marched for about an hour in the dense fog the great

m t some oode l h lls were d cern l le and t w th r the enemy p ob bly as fo some th g c uld b desc ed On tl e r ght the c d er e te g tl e m ty reg on v th

m d t l try c c t d at th d f the ll g lett g th tro p p by h m Tl t m n ng Kut o s med w rn d rr t ble Tl f try p s g b f e l m c me t a halt w th ut a y comm d be g g e pp re tly obstructed by s meth g n f t

h t l n c l

my?

I te d d t f rm them b y d th v l er d th e r l

e de ed.

Y

My de f ll w Nes it k wh pe ed t Pr ce And ew th old m is su ly d g

A A tr n ffi er wl t un f rm w th gr pl mes h h t gall ped up t Kutu zo d k d th Emper r' n m had the f th col m d ed t t

K t t rn d d w th ut n wer g d h y h ppen d t f ll up n Pr ce An d ew wh be de h m. S e g h m Kutu zov's m le l t d ca t exp es n f t ed f dm tt g that wh t w b g d ne w t l dj ta t f ult a d t ll n t we g the Austri n dj t nt he dd e ed Bolkó k

Go my dea fellow a d wl the the third d is has pas d the ll g T ll t t t p d t my ders

H dly h d Pr c A dr w t ted th n he topped h m

A d k whethe h rp hoot rs h e been po t d he dded. 'Wh t th y d g? What they d g? h m rm d t h m

s lf t ll not rej lyi g t tl e Au trian

P ce Andrew galloped off to e ecute the rder

O e taki g tl e l att l o s tl at continued to

t the mma le n th e l s order to t rowe sk rm l ers He l d felt pe fectly sure tl t tl ere were otl e troops in front of h m a d m les away

cl f s n me to rect fy tl s m n Prince

d ew nd tu ed to general wh w tel l d w ay g it w s t me tl ey sta ted all th l ft fl nk c lum s h d alre dy desce led

Plenty f t me y re elle cy m tte ed Kut v in the m d t of a yawn Plenty f t me he repeated.

Ju t then t a d tan beh d Kutú ov was h rd the u d of reg ments luti g and thi sound r p dly came nearer alo g the wl ole exte ded l ne f tl e d ancing Russ an c l

Tw of th m d s de by s de in front at f ll g ll p O n a bl k u f rm w th whi te plumes h s h t de bobt l d che t ut h the th who w s n a white un form de a bl k e These we e the two Emper rs f ll w d by the u t Kut ov affect g tl m ers of old ld e at the f o t g e tl e comm nd Attent nl nd de p t th Emper w th a s lute H s wl l p pe n e d m er w suddenly t ns f rmed He put on the a r of s bord ate wh b y w th t e n g W th n ffecta t o of respect wh ch ev d tly stru k Al x a de u pl antly he d up nds l t d

Th unpl nt mpre n me ely fl tted o er the you g d h ppy f ce of tl e Emp r

foot Napoleon in the blue cloak which he had

rise out of the sea of mist and on which the Russian troops were moving in the distance and he listened to the sounds of firing in the valley Not a single muscle of his face—which in those days was still thin—moved His gleaming eye were fixed intently on one spot His predictions were being justified Part of the Russian force had already descended into the valley toward the ponds and lakes and part were leaving these Pratzen Heights which he intended to attack and regarded as the key to the position He saw over the mist that in a hollow between two hills near the village of Pratzen the Russ an columns their bayonets glittering were moving continuously in one direction toward the valley and disappearing one after another into the mist From information he had received the evening before from the sound of wheels and footsteps heard by the outposts during the night by the disorderly movement of the Russian columns and from all indications he saw clearly that the allies believed him to be far away in front of them and that the columns moving near Pratzen constituted the center of the Russian army and that that center was already sufficiently weakened to be successfully attacked But still he did not begin the engagement

Today was a great day for him—the anniversary of his coronation Before dawn he had slept for a few hours and refreshed vigorous

heights visible above the mist and his cold face wore that special look of confident self com

tion He looked now at the Pratzen He ghts now at the sun floating up out of the mist

When the sun had entirely emerged from the fog and fields and mist were aglow with dazzling light—as if he had only awaited this to begin the act on—he drew the glove from his

were being more and more denuded by Russian troops moving down the valley to their left

CHAPTER XV

At eight o clock Kutuzov rode to Pratzen at the head of the fourth column Milorádovich s, the one that was to take the place of Przebyszéwski s and Langeron s columns which had already gone down into the valley He greeted the men of the foremost regiment and gave them the order to march thereby indicatin that he intended to lead that column himself When he had reached the village of Pratzen he halted Prince Andrew was behind amon the immense number forming the commander in chief s suite He was in a state of suppressed excitement and irritation though controlledly calm as a man is at the approach of a lon awaited moment He was firmly convinced that this was the day of his Toulon or his bridge of Arcola How it would come about he did not know but he felt sure it would do so The locality and the position of our troops were known to him as far as they could be known to anyone in our army His own strategic plan which obviously could not now be carried out was forgotten Now entering into Weyrother s plan Prince Andrew considered possible contingencies and formed new projects such as might call for his rapidity of perception and decision

To the left down below in the mist the musketry fire of unseen forces could be heard It was there Prince Andrew thought the fi ht would concentrate There we shall encounter difficulties and there thought he I sl all be

He could not look calmly at the standards of the passing battalions Seeing them he kept thinking That may be the very standard with which I shall lead the army

In the morn ng all that was left of the n ght mist on the heights was a hoar frost now turning to dew but in the valleys it still lay like a milk wh te sea Nothing was visible in the valley to the left into which our troops had descended and from whence came tl e sounds of firing Above the heights was the dark clear sky and to the right the vast orb of the sun In front far off on the farther shore of that sea of

The sce e of Napoleo l ll t v ct ry in tl e p of Ver a o r g atly super or Austr an forces in 1 96 — Tr

n t some ooded h'll were d ern ble and t was th re the enemy probably wa for some- thin could be descried. On the rigl t the Guards were enteri th misty regi n w th a so d of hoof a d wheel and now and th n gl m of bayo ts t the l ft bey nd the l l e mil m s es f ca alry came up and lis ppeared th se f m t. In front nd beh d mo ed infantry Th commander n h f wa din t the d of the ll ge lett ng the troops pass by h m. That m rn n Kut o seemed worn d irritable The nf ntry pass bef re l im came to h lt w thout ny comma d be ng gi en pp rently bstructed by someth g n front.

"Do rder them to form nt b tt l on col umn d g rou d th ll gel he s. d angri ly t ge eral wh had ridden up D n t y u understa d. u exc ll cy m dear ir that yo m d fil throu h n rrow llage treets h w march t the e e- my

I te ded t e f rm them bey nd the l lage your ex llency n wered h g eral.

hed b tt ly

"Th di po ti n exc terly "Wh ld you tha? Kindly d as y u are dered.

"Yes.

My dear f ll w Nes itsk whispe ed t Prince A drew th old man is as su ly

d h ev happened to f ll upou dr wh wa bes d h m. See him Kutú rov mal l nt d cau t exp ess n sof

Bolk nski

Go m dear fell w nd ee whe her the third di is n has passed th llage. T ll t to t op d wa t my ders.

Hardly h d Princ Andrew tarted than he stopped him.

And k wh th h rp hoot rs h e bee posted, h dded. "What are they d g? Wha ar they d g h murmured t him- self st'll not reply ng to the Austr n

Prince And ew gall ped off to execute the order

O ertak n tl e b ttal n that cont nued to advance he t pped the th rd d s on and con nced h mself that there really were no sharp- shooters n front of our columns. The colonel at the head of the regime t was much surprised at the commander n h ef's order to throw out sk rm hers. He had felt perfectly sure tl at there were other troop in front of h m and that the enemy must be t l ts x m'les away There was really n tl ng t be seen in front except b rren descent h dden by dense m t. H g g en ord rs n tl e commander n cl f nam t rect f this om n Pr nce A drew gall ped back Kutu t ll in tl e same pl e h st ut body rest g hea ly n the saddle w th the l tude of a e sat yawn ing wearily w th closed eyes. The troops were n l ger mo ng but tood w th the b tts of the mu k ts on tl e ground

All right, ll r ghtl he sa d to Prince An drew and turned to general who wat h in hand wa say n t was t me they st rted a ll th left fl nk column had al eady desce ded.

Plenty of t me your excellency muttered Kutú n the m d t of a yawn Plenty of t me he repeated.

Just then t d stan e beh d Kutúz wa hea d the sound of regiments salut a d th sound rap dly came earer along the who e t nded l e of the adva ci g Russ n c l umns. E dentl the person they were greet wa rid g qu ckly When the sold ers of the reg m t n front of wh ch Kutúzo was t d g began to h ut, he rode l ttle t one e d looked ro d w th frown Al the road from Pratzen gall ped what looked l'ke a

f rmed. H p t on the air f a subord nate who obeys witho t reasonin W th ffecta t of respect which evidently struck Alex der unpleasa tly he rode up nd sal ted.

This unpleasa t impress on merely fl tted o er the young a d h ppy face of the Emperor

like a cloud of haze across a clear sky and van ished After his illness he looked rather thin ner that day than on the field of Olmutz where Bolkónski had seen him for the first time abroad but there was still th m

o n

/ b expression and the same prevalent appearance of goodhearted innocent youth

At the Olmutz review he had seemed more majestic here he seemed brighter and more energetic. He was slightly flushed after gallop ing two miles and reining in his horse he sighed restfully and looked round at the faces of his suite young and animated as his own Czartoryski Novosiltsev Prince Volkónsky Strogonov and the others all richly dressed gay young men on splendid v ll gro m fresl on

ren s

Em

face

b u sat very erect on his hand b some black horse looking about h m n

st r lv nd

y he is asking at what o clock they started thought Prince Andrew watching his old acquaintance with a smile he could not repress as he recalled his reception at Brunn In the Emperors suite were the picked young orderly off cers of the Guard and line regiments Russian and Austrian Among them were grooms leading the Tsar s beautiful relay horses covered with embroidered cloths

As when a window is opened a whiff of fresh air from the f elds enters a stuffy room so a whiff of youthfulness energy and confidence of success reached Kutuzov s cheerless staff with the galloping advent of all these brilliant young men

Wh

b ig courteously at the same time at the Emperor Francis

I am waiting Your Majesty answered Ku tuzov bend ng forward respectfully

The Emperor frov ning slightly bent his ear forward as if he had not quite heard

Waiting Your Majesty repeated Kutuzov (Prince Andrew noted that Kutuzov s upper lip tv itched unnaturally as he sa d the word v a ting) Not all the columns have formed up yet Your Majesty

The Tsar heard but ob v ously d d not l ke the reply he shrugged his rather round shoul der d

him

on t

begi troops are assembled sa d the Tsar with another glance at the Emperor Francis as if inviting him if not to join in at least to listen to what he was saying Put the Emperor Francis continued to look about him and did not listen

That is just why I do not begin sire sa d Kutuzov in a resounding voice apparently to preclude the possibility of not being heard, and again something in his face twitched— That is just why I do not begin sire because we are not on parade and not on the Empress Field said he clearly and distinctly

In the Emperor s suite all exchan ed rapid looks that expressed dissatisfaction and re proach Old though he may be he should not he certainly should not speak like that their glances seemed to say

The Tsar looked intently and observantly into Kutuzov s eye waiting to hear whether he would say anything more But Kutuzov with respectfully bowed head seemed also to be v aiting The silence lasted for about a m n ute

However if you command it Your Majes ty said Kutuzov lifting his head and again assuming his former tone of a dull unreason ing but submissive general

He touched his horse and having called Mil orádovich the commander of the column gave him the order to advance

The troops again began to move and two battalions of the Nóvgorod and one of the Ápsheron regiment went forward past the Emper or

As this Ápsheron battalion marched by the red faced Milorádovich without his greatcoat, with his Orders on his breast and an enorm tuft of plumes in his cocked hat worn on or side v ith its corners front and back gallope strenuously forward and with a dashing salut re ned in h s l orse before the Emperor

God be with you general! said the Em peror

Ma fo sire nous ferons ce qui se a dans not e possibil té s e he answered gaily raising nevertheless ironic smiles among the gentlemen of the Tsar s suite by l is poor Frencl

M lorádov ch wheeled h s horse sl arply and

Ind ed S e shall do everyth ng th t it is poss ble to do S

stationed himself a little behind the Emperor. The Apsheron men, excited by the Tsar's presence, passed in step before the Emperors and their suites at a bold, brisk pace.

"Lads!" shouted Miloradovich in a loud, self confident, and cheery voice, obviously so elated by the sound of firing, by the prospect of battle, and by the sight of the gallant Apsherons, his comrades in Suvórov's time, now passing so gallantly before the Emperors, that he forgot the sovereigns' presence. "Lads, it's not the first village you've had to take," cried he.

"Glad to do our best," shouted the soldiers.

The Emperor's horse started at the sudden cry. This horse that had carried the sovereign at reviews in Russia bore him also here on the field of Austerlitz, enduring the heedless blows of his left foot and pricking its ears at the sound of shots just as it had done on the Empress' Field, not understanding the significance of the firing, nor of the nearness of the Emperor Francis' black cob, nor of all that was being said, thought, and felt that day by its rider.

The Emperor turned with a smile to one of his followers and made a remark to him, pointing to the gallant Apsherons.

CHAPTER XVI

Kutuzov accompanied by his adjutants rode at a walking pace behind the carabineers.

When he had gone less than half a mile in the rear of the column he stopped at a solitary deserted house that had probably once been an inn, where two roads parted. Both of them led downhill and troops were marching along both.

The fog had begun to clear and enemy troops were already dimly visible about a mile and a half off on the opposite heights. Down below on the left the firing became more distinct. Kutuzov had stopped and was speaking to an Austrian general. Prince Andrew, who was a little behind and looking at them, turned to an adjutant to ask him for a field glass.

"Look, look!" said this adjutant, looking not at the troops in the distance, but down the hill before him. "It's the French!"

The two generals and the adjutant took hold of the field glass, trying to snatch it from one another. The expression on all their faces suddenly changed to one of horror. The French were supposed to be a mile and a half away, but had suddenly and unexpectedly appeared just in front of us.

"It's the enemy?... No!... Yes, see it is!... for certain.... But how is that?" said different voices.

With the naked eye Prince Andrew saw below them to the right, not more than five hundred paces from where Kutuzov was standing, a dense French column coming up to meet the Apsherons.

"Here it is! The decisive moment has arrived. My turn has come," thought Prince Andrew, and striking his horse he rode up to Kutuzov.

"The Apsherons must be stopped, your excellency," cried he. But at that very instant a cloud of smoke spread all round, firing was heard quite close at hand, and a voice of naïve terror barely two steps from Prince Andrew shouted, "Brothers! All's lost!" And at this voice as if at a command, everyone began to run.

Confused and ever-increasing crowds were running back to where five minutes before the troops had passed the Emperors. Not only

his cheek. Prince Andrew forced his way to him.

"You are wounded?" he asked, hardly able to master the trembling of his lower jaw.

"The wound is not here, it is there!" said Kutuzov, pressing the handkerchief to his wounded cheek and pointing to the fleeing soldiers. "Stop them!" he shouted, and at the same moment, probably realizing that it was impossible to stop them, spurred his horse and rode to the right.

A fresh wave of the flying mob caught him and bore him back with it.

The troops were running in such a dense mass that once surrounded by them it was difficult to get out again. One was shouting, "Get on! Why are you hindering us?" Another in the same place turned round and fired in the air; a third was striking the horse Kutuzov himself rode. Having by a great effort got away to the left from that flood of men, Kutuzov, with his suite diminished by more than half, rode toward a sound of artillery fire near by. Having forced his way out of the crowd of fugitives,

like a cloud of haze across a clear sky and van ished After his illness he looked rather thin ner that day than on the field of Olmutz where Bolkonski had seen him for the firs abroad b combina fine gray u on his delicate lips the same capacity for varying expression and the same prevalent appearance of goodhearted innocent youth

At the Olmutz review he had seemed more majestic here he seemed brighter and more energetic. He was slightly flushed after gallop ing two miles and reining in his horse he sighed restfully and looked round at the faces of his suite young and animated as his own Czartoryski Novosiltsev Prince Volkónsky Strogonov and the others all richly dressed gay young men on splendid well groomed fresh only slightly heated horses exchanging remarks and smiling had stopped behind the Emperor The Emperor Francis a rosy long faced young man sat very erect on his hand some black horse looking about him surely and to one question

o clock they started thought Prince Andrew watching his old acquaintance with a smile he could not repress as he recalled his reception at Brunn In the Emperors suite were the picked young orderly officers of the Guard and line regiments Russian and Austrian Among them were grooms leading the Tsar s beautiful relay horses covered with embroidered cloths

As when a window is opened a whiff of fresh air from the fields enters a stuffy room so a whiff of youthfulness energy and confidence of success reached Kutuzov s cheerless staff with the galloping advent of all these brilliant young men

Wh

courteously at the same time at the Emperor Franc s

I am waiting Your Majesty answered Ku tuzov bend ng forward respectfully

The Emperor frowning slightly bent his ear forward as if he had not quite heard

Waiting Your Majesty repeated Kutuzov (Prince Andrew noted that Kutuzov s upper lip twitched unnaturally as he sa d the word waiting) Not all the columns have formed up yet Your Majesty

The Tsar heard but obviously did not like the reply he shrugged his rather round shoul

d
I
o
b
th another glance at the Emperor Francis as if inviting him if not to join in at least to listen to what he was sayin But the Emperor Francis continued to look about him and did not listen

That is just why I do not begin sire sa d Kutuzov in a resounding voice apparently to preclude the possibility of not being heard and again something in his face twitched

That is just why I do not begin sire because we are not on parade and not on the Empress Field said he clearly and distinctly

In the Emperor s suite all exchanged rapid looks that expressed dissatisfaction and re proach Old though he may be he should not, he certainly should not speak like that their glances seemed to say

The Tsar looked intently and observantly into Kutuzov s eye waiting to hear whether he would say anything more But Kutuzov with respectfully bowed head seemed also to be waiting The silence lasted for about a min ute

However ty sai assumin ing but submissive general

He touched his horse and having c oródovich the commander of the colu him the order to advance

The troops again began to move battalions of the Nóvgorod and one of sheron regiment went forward past the or

As this An red fa with h tuft of plumes in his cocked hat worn on one s de with its corners front and back galloped strenuously forward and with a dashing salute re ned n his horse before the Emperor

God be with you general said the Em peror

Ma foi sire nous ferons ce qui sera dans not e po ib lité si e he answered gaily ra sing nevertheless ironic smiles among the gentlemen of the Tsar s suite by his poor French

Milorá lov ch wheeled his horse sharply and

In leed S re we l all do everyth g that is poss bl to d S

CHAPTER XVII

that som t es s veral f them were t ot sep- rated fr m one another but merged int a ge eral ro r

He c uld see p ffs f musketry smoke that seemed to h se o another down the l ll s des and cl uds of can n smoke roll n p ead ng a d m gl g w th o e another He uld lso by tl e gleam of bay nets v sible thro h the sm ke m ke o t mo ng m sses of inf ntry nd n rrow l es of art ll ry w tl green ca sons

be) d f nd the comma de n ch f (wt cn n ld be ery d fficult) he w uld not be able t get ba k bef e n g

B rat ó cast his l rge p ess nless leepy eyes round h te d tl e boy h f ce of Ros- t b eathless w th cit m t d h p a the first t catch his eye He t h m.

h e ergy nd determ nat n

Goo ! Goo G e t them l e me tally

grat ó

O be l e ed from p ket duty Rostó had ma ged to g t few h urs sle p bef re m rn d f lt cheerf l, bold d resolute w th lasticity f m eme t f th n h good f rt d g erally that t te of m d which makes e eryth em poss bl pl t d easy

All his wishes were be f lfilled that morn

was lre dy n act on

H t w ll be there I d n t know b t ll w ll be ell! tl ht Rostó

Afte p ss g some Austr n troops he o- t ced th t the next p rt f the l ne (the Guards) wa lready n ct on

So much th better! I sh ll ee t cl se l e th ght.

He was rid g lm t al the front l e A l d f l of men cam gallop ng t ward h m Th y w Ul l s who w tl d sordered

wh h had t y t d a ed t ct n but were ta d g m t less then he cam to th g occup ed by U ár ca alry d h r he t ed ur d gn f p p ratu n f b ttle havi g passed U ar ca alry he clea ly heard th so d f can n d mu k try ahead of him. Th fir g grew l ud d l ud er

In th fresh m rn g ir wer now heard, not two o three musket h ts t irregular n tervals as bef f ll wed by o o two can h ts b t ll of lleys f mu ketry f m the l pes f the h ll bef Pratzen n t rrupted by ch freq ent reports f cann

th t b f he saw t h l ft cross th l l w dth of the f ld e rm us m ss of ca al ry b ll nt wl te u f rms m ted on

th same p ed b t tl ey kept crea th r pa e so th t some of the h rses e lre dy gall p g R t heard the thud of tl hoof d the j le of th we pons d saw tl e r h rses their f gu es a d e n tl e fa es m and m d t ctly They were our H rse Guards d a ci g t tt ck the Fre ch

Prince Andrew trying to keep near Kutuzov saw on the slope of the hill amid the smoke a Russian battery that was still firing and French men running toward it Higher up stood some Russian infantry neither moving forward to protect the battery nor backward with the fleeing crowd A mounted general separated himself from the infantry and approached Kutuzov Of Kutuzov s suite only four remained They were all pale and exchanged looks in silence

Stop those wretches! gasped Kutuzov to the regimental commander pointing to the flying soldiers but at that instant as if to punish him for those words bullets flew hissing across the regiment and across Kutuzov s suite like a flock of little birds

The French had attacked the battery and seeing Kutuzov were firing at him After this volley the regimental commander clutched at his leg several soldiers fell and a second lieutenant who was holding the flag let it fall from his hands It swayed and fell but caught on the muskets of the nearest soldiers The soldiers started firing without orders

Oh! Oh! Oh! groaned Kutuzov despairingly and looked around Bolkónski! he whispered his voice trembling from a consciousness of the feebleness of age Bolkónski! he whispered pointing to the disordered battalion and at the enemy what s that?

But before he had finished speaking Prince Andrew feeling tears of shame and anger choking him had already leapt from his horse and run to the standard

Forward lads! he shouted in a voice piercing as a child s

Here it is! thought he seizing the staff of the standard and hearing with pleasure the whistle of bullets evidently aimed at him Several soldiers fell

Hurrah! shouted Prince Andrew and scarcely able to hold up the heavy standard he ran forward with full confidence that the whole battalion would follow him

And really he only ran a few steps alone One soldier moved and then another and soon the whole battalion ran forward shouting Hurrah! and overtook him A sergeant of the battalion ran up and took the flag that was swaying from its weight in Prince Andrew s hands but he was immediately killed Prince Andrew again seized the standard and dragging it by the staff ran on with the battalion In front he saw our artillerymen some of whom were fighting while others having abandoned their guns were running toward him He also saw French infantry soldiers who were seizing the artillery horses and turning the guns round Prince Andrew and the battalion were already within twenty paces of the cannon He heard the whistle of bullets above him unceasingly and to right and left of him soldiers continuall

ly the figure of a red haired gunner with his shako knocked awry pulling one end of a mop while a French soldier tugged at the other He could distinctly see the distraught yet angry expression on the faces of these two men who evidently did not realize what they were doing

What are they about? thought Prince Andrew as he gazed at them Why doesn t the red haired gunner run away as he is unarmed Why doesn t the Frenchman stab him? He will not get away before the Frenchman remembers his bayonet and stabs him

And really another French soldier trailing his musket ran up to the struggling men and the fate of the red haired gunner who had triumphantly secured the mop and still did not realize what awaited him was about to be decided But Prince Andrew did not see how it ended It seemed to him as though one of the soldiers near him hit him on the head with the full swing of a bludgeon It hurt a little but the worst of it was that the pain distracted him and prevented his seeing what he had been looking at

What s this? Am I falling? My legs are giving way thought he and fell on his back He opened his eyes hoping to see how the struggle of the Frenchmen with the gunners ended whether the red haired gunner had been killed or not and whether the cannon had been captured or saved But he saw nothing Above him there was now nothing but the sky—the lofty sky not clear yet still immeasurably lofty with gray clouds gliding slowly across it How quiet peaceful and solemn not at all as I ran thought Prince Andrew— not as we ran shouting and fighting not at all as the gunner and the Frenchman with frightened and angry

And how happy I am to have found it at last! Yes! All is vanity all falsehood except that infinite sky There is nothing nothing but that. But even it does not exist there is nothing but quiet and peace Thank God

BOOK THREE

CHAPTER XVII

that s met mes se eral of them were not separated from one an tl er but merged int a ge ral ar

He c uld se p ffs of mu ketry sm ke tl t em d to ha an ther down the h ll des a d l l of cannon smoke rollin l ng w tl ne an tl er He uld lso by tl e gleam f bayonets k m ke ut m vin ma es tl r gh tl w l nes of art llery w tl gree ca so s.

Ros t pl lt h rs f r a mo ent on h ll k t wl t w go but tra n h h wo ld he ouldn t understand f wh t vas happen n m k ut h f some sort were mo tl m ke f ro t d bel nd m ed l es g bout d but why wh ther nd who ther were w mpo l le t make t. These s f tsa d ds h d n d p es ng nt m cat n ef f t h m n th ntrary they t mul ed h rgy d d t rm t n.

Go C C e t them he ment llv l m d thes so ds d aga n proceed d gall p l g h l penetratin farther d f rth t the eg where tl e arm l dy n

H w t w ll be h r I d t know but all h w ll l lt Rost

H r d ng lmost l g the fm t l ne A l dl l f m came gall p toward h m. Th y ere Uhl n who th d sordered ra k w e turn fr m the atta k Rost

th t bef he sa t h left, across tl e w e dth f the fi ld en rm us m ss f ca l ry brill nt h te u f rms, mo t ted n bl k h rses trott ng tra ght t ard h m an l cr ss h p th. R t put h h rse to f ll gall p t g t u f the way of these men nd h uld h e got clea h d they c nt ed at the same peed, but th y kept ncre the r p e so th t some f the h rses we e alre dy gall p Ro t he rd the thud f the r hoofs d the j l f the weapo s d saw tl e r h rses th ir f gu es d es thei faces mo e nd mo e d t ctly They were our Horse Guards d g to tt k the French

CHAPTER XVII ... mm nded by B grat ón ... d k tle b ttl h d n t y t l egu ... h g t gre D lgo k d m nd ... mm h t nd l t e t B grat n ... po b l f m h ms lf P ... P pr d t D lg k t d t q re f ... ch f B g t k w tl t ... th d t b tw h fl k w ... m th m les e en f l n ge ... er k lled (wh h l rv l k l w l l ... bel d f d h mm d n h f (wl l ... ld b rv d fh l l e w ld t b bl ... g b k b f g l ess les l p ... B gra h l g l l b h f f R ... es d h t l l p ... b l l w l H h m ... l firs h h ... A d f l l ld t H M j b f l ... m h m d h f ll ... sa d R w th h l d l P H M j ... ca g h m ... d D l k h rr dl rr p g B ... gra ... O b g l l f p k d R ... h l m g d h f w l rs l l b f ... d f l h f l b ld ... h l f n t f l h g l ... d g ll l m j os l l pl ... l l m k ry h ... d ... All l w h b g f lfill d h t m ... ther w t l k l ... th h th h ... h l g h lf Th ... l l p l l rs d ... m g l h l l ... l h pp ... O l d l g h l At firs ... l l l l l f B g ops ... lry d h ... lrs h l ... d m k try ... d l d ... w h rd ... rr gular ... ca ... f m k try ... Pratz ... p d b l l f q ports f ca

cavalry that was coming to meet them

The Horse Guards were galloping but still holding in their horses Rostóv could already see their faces and heard the command Charge! shouted by an officer who was urging his thoroughbred to full speed Rostóv fearing to be crushed or swept into the attack on the French galloped along the front as hard as his horse could go but still was not in time to avoid them

The last of the Horse Guards a huge pock marked fellow frowned angrily on seeing Rostóv before him with whom he would inevitably collide This Guardsman would certainly have bowled Rostóv and his Bedouin over (Rostóv felt himself quite tiny

I

I

[illegible] teen hands high shied throwing back its ears but the pockmarked Guardsman drove his huge spurs in violently and the horse flourishing its tail and extending its neck galloped on yet faster Hardly had the Horse Guards passed Rostóv before he heard them shout Hurrah! and looking back saw that their foremost ranks were mixed up with some foreign cavalry with red epaulets probably French He could see nothing more for immediately afterwards cannon began firing from somewhere and smoke enveloped everything

At that moment as the Horse Guards having passed him disappeared in the smoke Rostóv hesitated whether to gallop after them or to go where he was sent This was the brilliant charge of the Horse Guards that amazed the French themselves Rostóv was horrified to hear later that of all that mass of huge and handsome men of all those brill [illegible]

[illegible] the charge

Why should I envy them? My chance is not lost and maybe I shall see the Emperor immediately! thought Rostov and galloped on

When he came level with the Foot Guards he noticed that about them and around them cannon balls were flying of which he was [illegible] are not so much because he heard their [illegible] ound as because he saw uneasiness on the soldiers faces and unnatural warlike solemnity on those of the officers

Passing behind one of the lines of a regiment of Foot Guards he heard a voice calling him by name

Rostóv!

What? he answered not recognizing Boris

I say we ve been in the front line! Our regiment attacked! said Boris with the happy smile seen on the faces of young men who have been under fire for the first time

Rostóv stopped

Have you? he said Well how did it go?

We drove them back! said Boris with animation growing talkative Can you imagine it? and he began describing how the Guards, having taken up their position [illegible]

[illegible] ostov without hearing Boris to the end spurred his horse

Where are you off to? asked Boris.

With a message to His Majesty

There he is! said Boris thinking Rostóv had said His Highness and pointing to the Grand Duke who with his high shoulders and frowning brows stood a hundred paces away from them in his helmet and Horse Guards jacket shouting something to a pale white uniformed Austrian officer

But that s the Grand Duke and I want the commander in chief or the Emperor said Rostóv and was about to spur his horse

Count! Count! shouted Berg who ran up from the other side as eager as Boris Count! I am wounded in my right hand (and he showed his bleeding hand with a handkerchief tied round it) and I remained at the front I held my sword in my left hand Count All our family—the von Bergs—have been knights!

He said something more but Rostóv did not [illegible]

[illegible] ne as he had done when the Horse Guards charged followed the line of reserves going far round the place where the hottest musket fire and cannonade were heard Suddenly he heard musket fire quite close in front of him and behind our troops where he could never have expected the enemy to be

What can it be? he thought The enemy in the rear of our army? Impossible! And suddenly he was seized by a panic of fear for himself and for the issue of the whole battle But be that what it may he refle [illegible]

[illegible] rest.

Th foreboding of evil that had sud nly come over Rost was more nd more confirmed t farther h rod in o the region behind t village of Pratzen which was full of troops of all kinds.

"What does t mean. What is t Whom are ... Rostov kept ask

path.

"The devil knows They've killed everybody l all up now!" he was told in Russian, German, and Czech by th crowd of fugitives who understood what was happening as little as he d

Kill the Germans shouted one.

M the devil tak them—th traitors

Z n Henker d ese Russen!" muttered a German.

Several wounded men passed along th road, nd words of buse screams, and groans mingled in general hubbub, then the firing died d wn. Rostó learned l ter that Russian and Austrian so diers had been firing t on anoth er

"M God What does t all mean. thought he. And here where t an moment th Emperor ma see them. But no these must be on handful f scoundrels. I will soon be over it can t be th t t can t be Onl to get past them quicker quicker

Th idea f defea and flight could not enter Rostov head. Though h saw French cannon and French troops on the Pratzen Heights just where he had been ordered to look f the commander in chief, he could not, did not wish to, believe that

CHAPTER XVIII

Rost had been rdered to look for Kutuzov and the Emperor near the village of Pratzen. B neither they no single commanding f ficer were there, only disorganized crowds of troops f various kinds. H urged on his already weary horse to get quickly past these crowds, but t farther h went the more disorganized they were. Th highroad on which h had come out was thronged with ... her carriages f all sorts, and Russian and Austri soldiers f all arms, some wounded and ome not. This whol mass droned and jostled in common under the dismal influence of cannon balls flying from the French batteries stationed on the Pratzen H ights.

"Where is the Emperor Where is K tuzov?" Ha these Russians.

Rostov kept asking everyo e he could stop but got no answer from anyone.

At last seizin a so dier by his collar he forced him o answer

Eh, brother They've all bolted long ago said the so dier laughing for some reason and shaking himself free.

H ving l ft that soldier who was evidently drunk, Rostó topped the horse of a batman o groom of som important personage and began to question him. The man announced that the Tsar had been dri en in carriage at full speed bout n hour bef re along that very road and that he was dangerously wounded.

"It can t be said Ros o "It must have been someone else."

I saw him myself, repl ed the man with a self-confident smile of derision. I ought to know the Emperor b now fter the times I e seen him in Petersburg I saw him just as I see you. There he sat n the carri e as pale as anything How they mad the four black horses fl ! Gracious me they did rattl past It time I knew the Imperial horses and Ilya Iványch. I don t think Ilyá drives anyo except the Tsar

Rostó let go of the horse nd was bout to rid on, when wounded officer passing by addressed him.

"Who is t you want." h asked. "The commander n chi f? H was killed by a cannon ball—struck in th breast bef re our regiment."

"Not killed—wounded. another officer corrected him.

"Who Kutuzo ?" asked Rostóv

"Not Kutuzo but what s his name—well, never mind there are not many left alive. Go that way to that village, all the commanders are there, said the officer pointing to the village of Hosjeradek, and h walked on.

Rostóv rod on at footpace not knowing wh o to whom h was now going The Emperor was wounded, th battl lost. It was imposs b e t doubt t now Ros v rode in the directi n pointed out to him, in which h saw turrets and church. What need to hurry What was h now to say to the Tsar or to Ku tuzo even if they were alive and unwounded?

"Tak this road, your hono that way you will be killed at once so dier shouted to him. "They d kill you there

"Oh, what are you talking bout!" said another "Where is he to go That way is nearer"

Rost considered, and then went in the direction where they said h would be killed.

"It's all th same now If the Empero is

wounded am I to try to save myself? he thought He rode on to the region where the greatest number of men had perished in fleeing from Pratzen The French had not yet occupied that region and the Russians—the uninjured and slightly wounded—had left it long ago All about the field like heaps of manure on well kept plowland lay from ten to fifteen dead and wounded to each couple of acres The wounded crept together in twos and threes and one could hear their distressing screams and groans sometimes feigned—or so it seemed to Ro[illegible]

the sight of these unfortunates

The French who had ceased firing at this field strewn with dead and wounded where there was no one left to fire at on seeing an adjutant riding over it trained a gun on him and fired several shots The sensation of those terrible whistling sounds and of the corpses around him merged in Rostóv s mind into a single feeling of terror and pity for himself He remembered his mother s last letter What would she feel thought he if she saw me here now on this field with the cannon aimed at me?

In the village of Hosjeradek there were Russian troops retiring from the field of battle who though still in some confusion were less disordered The French cannon did not reach there and the musketry fire sounded far away Here everyone clearly saw and said that the battle was lost No one whom Rostóv asked could tell him where the Emperor or Kutuzov was Some said the report that the Emperor was wounded was correct others that it was not and explained the false rumor that had spread by the fact that the Emperor s carriage had really galloped from the field of battle with the pale and terrified Ober Hofmarschal Count Tolstóy who had ridden out to the battlefield with others in the Emperor s suite One officer told Rostóv that he had seen someone from headquarters behind the village to the left and thither Rostóv rode not hoping to find anyone but merely to ease his conscience When he had ridden about two miles and had passed the last of the Russian troops he saw near a kitchen garden with a ditch round it two men on horseback facing the ditch One with a white plume in his hat seemed familiar to Rostóv the other on a beautiful chestnut horse (which Rostóv fancied he had seen before) rode up to the ditch struck his horse with his spurs and giving it the rein leaped lightly over Only a little earth crumbled from the bank under the horse s hind hoofs. Turning the horse sharply he again jumped the ditch and deferentially addressed the horseman with the white plumes evidently suggesting that he should do the same The rider whose figure seemed familiar to Rostóv and involuntarily riveted his attention made a gesture of refusal with his head and hand and by that gesture Rostóv instantly recognized his lamented and adored monarch

But it can t be he alone in the midst of this empty field! thought Rostóv At that moment Alexander turned his head and Rostóv saw the beloved features that were so deeply engraved on his memory The Emperor was pale his cheeks sunken and his eyes hollow but the charm the mildness of his features was all the greater Rostóv was happy in the assurance that the rumors about the Emperor being wounded were false He was happy to be seeing him He knew that he might and even ought to go straight to him and give the message Dolgorukov had ordered him to deliver

But as a youth in love trembles is unnerved and dares not utter the thoughts he has dreamed of for nights but looks around for help or a chance of delay and flight when the longed for moment comes and he is alone with *her* so Rostóv now that he had attained what he had longed for more than anything else in the world did not know how to approach the Emperor and a thousand reasons occurred to him why it would be inconvenient unseemly and impossible to do so

What! It is as if I were glad of a chance to take advantage of his being alone and despondent! A strange face may seem unpleasant or painful to him at this moment of sorrow besides what can I say to him now when my heart fails me and my mouth feels dry at the mere sight of him? Not one of the innumerable speeches addressed to the Emperor that he had composed in his imagination could he now recall Those speeches were intended for quite other conditions they were for the most part to be spoken at a moment of victory and triumph generally when he was dying of wounds and the sovereign had thanked him for heroic deeds and while dying he expressed the love his actions had proved

Besides how can I ask the Emperor for his instructions for the right flank now that it is nearly four o clock and the battle is lost? No

certainly I must not pproach him, I must not intrude n hi reflect ns. B tter d thou
~~ unkind look

f indecision.

While Rostó was thus argu ng with h m self a d run sadly way Captain von Toll chanced t ride to the sam pot, a d seein the Empero t o ce rod up to h m, offered h services, and ssis ed him to cross th d ch on foot. Th Empero wish n t rest nd feel ing unwell, sat d wn u der an pple tree d on T ll remained besid him. Rostó from distance saw with en y d remorse how on T ll spoke l a d warmly to the Empero and how t.. Emperor evid tly weep ng, co ered hi eyes with his hand nd pressed von T l. hand.

And I might have been n his place! though Rostó d hardly restra nin his tears I p ty f th Emperor h rod on n utter despair not knowin where to o why h wa now riding

His despair wa all th greater from feeli g t.a h wn weakness was th cause of hi grief

H might n t only might but should, ha go up to th sovere gn. It wa un qu chanc t show his devotion t th Empero nd h had ot made use of t. "What ha e I do though he. And he turned round nd galloped back to the pla where he had seen the Emperro but there wa no on beond the d ch now O l som carts nd ca rriages were passi by From o of th dri ers h learned that Kuturo taff were n t far off, the village th ehicles were go ng to Ros- f llowed them. I fron of him walked Ku uro groom leadin horses n horsecl ths. Then cam cart, nd behind that walked n d, band legged domestı erf n peaked cap and sheepski coat.

"T t I sa T t said th groom.

"What. nswered th old ma bsent mind ed

"Go T Thresh b t

"Oh, ou fool said th old man sp ttin angril Some m passed n silence, and then th same joke was repeated.

Before fi n the evening th. battle had been lost t all po ts. M re than hundred canno were alread in th hands of th French.

Przebyszewsk nd his corps had laid down their arms. Other column after los n half th ir men were retreat in disorderly con fused masses.

The rema ns of Langeron s and Dokht ro s m n led forces were crowd n rou d the dam nd banks of the po d near the vill ge of Augesd.

After fi e o clock t was onl at the Augesd Dam th t a hot cannonade (del ered by th French alone) was st ll to be heard from nu merous batteries ranged on the slopes of the Pratzen Hei hts, directed t our retreat g forces.

In the rearguard, Dokhtúro and others ral l in some battal n kept up musketry fire t the Fre ch cavalry that was pursu our troops. It was grow g dusk. On the narrow Augesd Dam where f so m n years the old miller had been ccust med t sit n his tasseled cap peacefully a gl wh le his grandson w th shirt sleeves rolled up handled the fl undern silvery fish in th waterin can on that dam over which fo so many years M ra ian n shaggy caps and bl jackets had peacef lly dri en thei two-horse carts loaded w th wheat d had returned dusty w th flour wh ten n the carts—on that n rrow dam amid the wa on d th cannon u der the horses hoof d between the wagon wheels, men di figured by fea of death now crowded together crushing o nother dri g, stepp g o er the dy g and kill n o e another onl t mo e on few steps nd be killed themsel es n the sam wa

E ery ten seconds cannon ball flew compress g the round, o shell burst n the m dst of that dense throng, killi some d splashi with blood those ear them.

Dól kho —now n officer—wounded n th arm, nd on foot, with the regimental commander on horseback nd some ten men of his company epresented ll that wa l ft of that wh l regiment. Impelled by th crowd they had got wedged t the pproa h to the dam and, jammed in on all des, had pped because horse n front had fallen u der cannon d the crowd were draggi t o t. A ca n n ball killed someo behind them, an ther f ll in fro t and plashed Do kho with blood. The crowd, pushi g f rward desperately squeezed together mo ed f w eps, d ga n pped.

M re on hu dred yards nd we are certainly sa ed, remain here n ther two mi utes nd is certai death, thought each on

Dol khov who wa n the m dst of the crowd

forced his way to the edge of the dam throw [illegible]

[illegible] creaked under him turn this way! he shouted to those with the gun It bears!

The ice bore him but it swayed and creaked and it was plain that it would give way not only under a cannon or a crowd but very soon even under his weight alone The men looked at him and pressed to the bank hesitating to step onto the ice The general on horseback at the entrance to the dam raised his hand and opened his mouth to address Dólokhov Suddenly a cannon ball hissed so low above the

[illegible]

look or thought of raising him

Get onto the ice over the ice! Go on! Turn! Don t you hear? Go on! innumerable voices suddenly shouted after the ball had struck the general the men themselves not knowing what or why they were shouting

One of the hindmost guns that was going onto the dam turned off onto the ice Crowds of soldiers from the dam began running onto the frozen pond The ice gave way under one of the foremost soldiers and one leg slipped into the water He tried to right himself but fell in up to his waist The nearest soldiers shrank back the gun driver stopped his horse but from behind still came the shouts Onto the ice why do you stop? Go on! Go on! And cries of horror were heard in the crowd The soldiers near the gun waved their arms and beat the horses to make them turn and move on The horses moved off the bank The ice that had held under those on foot collapsed in a great mass and some forty men who were on it dashed some forward and some back drowning one another

Still the cannon balls continued regularly to whistle and flop onto the ice and into the water and oftenest of all among the crowd that covered the dam the pond and the bank

CHAPTER XIX

On the Pratzen Heights where he had fallen with the flagstaff in his hand lay Prince Andrew Bolkónski bleeding profusely and unconsciously uttering a gentle piteous and childlike moan

Toward evening he ceased moaning and became quite still He did not know how long

[illegible] that lofty sky that I did not know till now but saw today? was his first thought And I did not know this suffering either he thought Yes I did not know anything anything at all till now But where am I?

He listened and heard the sound of approaching horses and voices speaking French He opened his eyes Above him again was the same lofty sky with clouds that had risen and were floating still higher and between them gleamed blue infinity He did not turn his head and did not see those who judging by the sound of hoofs and voices had ridden up and stopped near him

It was Napoleon accompanied by two aides-de-camp Bonaparte riding over the battlefield had given final orders to strengthen the bat[illegible]

[illegible]

at a dead Russian grenadier who with his face buried in the ground and a blackened nape lay on his stomach with an already stiffened arm flung wide

The ammunition for the guns in position is exhausted Your Majesty said an adjutant who had come from the batteries that were firing at Augesd

[illegible]

by the French as a trophy)

That s a fine death! said Napoleon as he gazed at Bolkónski

Prince Andrew understood that this was said of him and that it was Napoleon who said it He heard the speaker addressed as *Sire* But he heard the words as he might have heard the buzzing of a fly Not only did they not interest him but he took no notice of them and at once forgot them His head was burning he felt himself bleeding to death and he saw above him the remote lofty and everlasting sky He knew it was Napoleon—his hero—but at that moment Napoleon seemed to him such a small insignificant creature compared with what was passing now between himself and that lofty in

he was onl glac that people were standin near him anc nly wished that they would h lp him and brin him back to life, which seemed to h.m so beautiful n w that he had today learned to understand t so differently He col lected all his strength, to stir nd utter sound. H feebly moved his le nd uttered weak, sickl groan which aroused his own p ty

Ah. H is alive said N poleon. Lift this youn man up and carry him to the dressin station.

H ving said this, N poleon rod on to meet Mars.al Lannes, who, hat in hand, rode up smilin to t.. Emperor to co ratulat him on t.. vict ry

Prin Andrew remembered nothin more h lost consciousness from the terribl pain of being lif ed ont t.e tretcher t.. jolting whil bein moved, and the prob f his ound t t.. dressin tation. H did not re gai consciousness till lat n the day wh n with ot.er w unded and captured Russian of ficers h was carried to the hosp tal. Durin t.is transfer he felt littl tron er and was b to look bout him and even speak.

The first words h heard n comin to his senses were those f French convoy fficer ho said rap dly "W must halt here th Em peror will pass here immediately t will please him to see these gentlemen priso ers.

"There are so man prisoners toda nearly t.. whol Russian army that he is probably tired f them. said another officer

All the sam They sa this n is th com mander f all th Empero Alexander Guards, said t.. first one, indicatin Rus sian officer in the whi e uniform of the H rse Guards.

Bo'konski recognized Prince Repnin whom h had met in Petersbur society Bes d him stood lad f nineteen, also wounded officer t.. Horse Guards.

Bonaparte, havin come up t gall p, stopped his horse.

"Which is t.e senio " he asked, on seein t.. priso ers.

They named t.e co.onel, Prin e Rep in.

"You are the commander f the Empero A.exander regiment of H rse Guards. asked N poleon.

I commanded squadron. replied Repnin.

"Your regiment fulfilled ts duty honorably said N po.eon.

"The praise f great comma der is a sol dier hi.hest reward, said Repnin.

"I bestow t with p easure, sa d N po eon.

"And who is that youn ma beside you.

Prince Repnin named Lieutenant Sukhte len.

After lookin t him N poleon smiled.

H s very youn to come to meddle with us.

"Y uth is no hindrance to courage mut tered Sukhtelen n a fail n voice.

A pl nd d reply! sa d Napoleon. "Youn man, you will go far!

Pri ce Andrew who had also been brought f rward bef re the Emperor eyes to complet th show of prisoners, could not f l to ttract his ttention. N poleon pparentl remem bered see him on the battlefield nd, d dressin h m, again used the ep thet youn man that was connected n his memory w th Prince Andrew

"Well, nd you, youn man, said he. "H w do you feel, mon brave?"

Though fi minutes before, Prince Andrew had been ble t sa a few words to the sol diers who were carrying him, now w th his eyes fixed stra ht on N poleon he was ilent. So insi nificant at that moment seemed to h m all the interests that engrossed N poleon, so mean did his hero himself with his paltry van ty nd joy n victory ppear compared to th lofty equ tabl and kindly sky which he had seen and understood, that he could not answer him.

E erythin seemed so futile nd n gnifica t in comparison with th tern nd solemn tra n of thought that weakness from loss of blood, suffering, nd the nearness of death aroused n him. Looking into N poleon eyes Pri ce Andrew thought of th ins gnificance of great ness, the unimportanc of lif which no o could understand, and t.e till greater unim portance of death, the mean n f which no on alive could understand o explain.

The Empero without waitin fo an an swer turned wa and said to on of th officers as he went "H ve these gentlemen attended to and taken to my b vouac let my docto Lar rey examine th ir wounds. A evo Prince Repnin and h spurred his horse and gal loped way

His face shone with self-satisfaction and pleasure.

Th soldiers who had carried Prince An drew had noticed and taken th li tle gold con Princess Mary had hung round her brother neck, but seein th favor th Empero showed th prisoners, they now hastened t return th. hol image.

Prince Andrew did not see how and by whom it was replaced but the little icon with its thin gold chain suddenly appeared upon his chest outside his uniform

I ~

glar

s ry How good it would be to know where to seek for help in this life and what to expect after it beyond the grave! How happy and calm I should be if I could now say Lord have mercy on me! But to whom should I say that? Either to a I o defi al le ~

cann

press Great All or Nothing—said he to himself or to that God who has been sewn into this amulet by Mary! There is nothing certain nothing at all except the unimportance of everything I understand and the greatness of something incomprehensible but all important

The stretchers moved on At every jolt he again felt unendurable pain his feverishness increased and he grew delirious Visions of his father wife sister and future son and the tenderness he had felt the night before the battle the figure of the insignificant little Napoleon and above all this the lofty sky formed the chief subjects of his delirious fancies

The quiet home life and peaceful happiness of Bald Hills presented it II ~ s

al ~

tl

ui

I

cor

ion , was much

mo ty to end in death than in convalescence

He is a nervous bilious subject said Larrey and will not recover

And Prince Andrew with others fatally wounded was left to the care of the inhabitants of the district

Book Four 1806

*

CHAPTER I

E L N THE YEAR 806 N cl l R tóv re t ed l me on le e De wisg ng h me t V ó ezh a d Rost pers ded h m t tra l w th h m as f s Mos w d to st y w tl l m the e. M t comrad t tl e l st po t stat b t e b f e Mosc w De íso h d dru k three bottles f w ne w th h m a d d p t the j lt g ruts cro s the c er d d d d to ke up o the w y t M sc w b t l y t the bott m of the sl gh bes de Ro tóv wh gr w m re d more im p t e t the nearer they g t t M ow

H w m ch lo ger? H w much l nger? Oh, these ff rable t eets h ps b kers s gn bo d street l mp d sle l th ght Rost he th lea p rm t l d been p ss d t the t wn gat d tl ey had tered M w

D so We h ! He s sleep he dd ed lea g f rw d w th h wh l body s f d t po t h l ped t ha t tl e speed f tl l gh

D so ga we

Th tl corn t th er d wh th cabm Z khár h hi st d nd there 7 kl

the dr e Do wake up Váska! l e wc t o

the old f mil ar corn ce w th b t of pl ster broken off the po ch d the post by tl e s de of the p me t. He sprang o t bef re the sleigh stopped d ran nto tl l ll The h u e stood cold d s lent as f q te regard less f wl l ad come t it. Tl ere was no o e

u ci i ys gered the countess wh n t as n t p operly clea ed tu ed as loo ly es r A sol tary tall w candle burned in tl teroom.

Old M cl ael vas l ep o the chest. Prokó fy the footm who was so stro tl t he ld l ft tl e b k f the carr g f m beh d sat pl t g l pi ers t of l th sel ed es He looked n h n

Why th t ht t tl d th b

D t y u e? Tl t h e d Ros ov Of rse t h us De t v D so ! W lm t th el

D íso ra d h s h d l d nd m de er

Dmit sa d R tó t l s ale t o th bo those l ghts ar o h u aren t they

Yes d the l gl t y ur f th r's !

"Th tl ey e t go t bed y t? Wh t do yo th k? M d w d t f rg t t put out my ew co t dd d R tó fi g ri h ew mustache. N w th get l sh ted t

er d ecogn g his y u g m ter C n t be? My tr sur ! d Prokófy trem bl w th citement ru hed t va d the draw g oom door p b bly in ord t a n un h m but ch g his m d, came back d tooped t k ss the y u g ma s h ulde

All ell? a k d R tó draw g w y l rm

Yes G d b thanked! Yes! Tl ey e just fi l ed pper Let me hav look t y u y e ell ncy

I e rytl q te ll ght?

Th Lo d be thanked yes!

R tó who had compl tely forgotte D l

Prince Andrew did not see how and by whom it was replaced but the little icon with its thin gold chain suddenly appeared upon his chest outside his uniform

It would be good thought Prince Andrew glancing at the icon his sister had hung round his neck with such emotion and reverence it would be good if everything were as clear and simple as it seems to Mary How good it would be to know where to seek for help in this life and what to expect after it beyond the grave! How happy and calm I should be if I could now say Lord have mercy on me!

... ot even express in words—the Great All or Nothing— said he to himself or to that God who has been sewn into this amulet by Mary! There is nothing certain nothing at all except the unimportance of everything I understand and the greatness of something incomprehensible but all important.

The stretchers moved on At every jolt he again felt unendurable pain his feverishness increased and he grew delirious Visions of his father wife sister and future son and the tenderness he had felt the night before the battle the figure of the insignificant little Napoleon and above all this the lofty sky formed the chief subjects of his delirious fancies

The quiet home life and peaceful happiness of Bald Hills presented itself to him ...

t

I

pe

an

co

roi

mo ... y to end in death than in convalescence

He is a nervous bilious subject said Larrey *and will not recover*

And Prince Andrew with others fatally wounded was left to the care of the inhabitants of the district.

pened crack and there wa a gl mpse of something blu f ribbons. bl ck hair nd merry f ces. It was ✓ tásha S ya a d P tya, who had com t see whether they were get tin p.

✓ cholas Get up ✓ tásha vo ce was agai heard t the door

"Directl

er d f rgettin that t wa unbecomi g f th girls t see m n u dressed. pened the bed room doo

I this your saber he sho ted.

✓ cholas Com t ny ur dress gown said ✓ tasha o

I this y saber asked Pétya. Or is t yours. he sa d, ddress the black mustached Deniso with servil d fere ce

Ros hurriedl p t somethi on his feet, drew his dress gown, d w t o t. ✓ tasha had p t n o e purred boot d was just g tt her foot to th ther Sónya when he cam n was twirl ro nd nd was bout to exp d her dresses to balloon nd t down. They wer dressed l ke in new pale-bl frocks, d were both fresh, rosy d bri ht. So ya ran way but ✓ tásha, taki her br ther arm, led him into th tt room, where they began talking They hardl ga e ther t m t ask quest ns nd

wer savi as mus b t because sh f It happ d was unabl t co trol her joy wh ch exp essed tself by l hter

"Oh, how nice how spl did sh said to everythi

Rostó f l that, u der the infl ence of th arm rays f l tha childlike smile which had not ppea ed his f c ce h left hom w f h first tim fter hteen months gain brightened hi soul d his face.

✓ b listen h sa d w you are qu man, aren ou. I m wfully gl d y u re m brother Sh t ched his mustache. "I wa t to kn w what yo men are lik Are you the sam as w ✓

"Why did Sonya run away? a ked Rost

Ah, yes That a whole lo st ry How are you go g to speak to her—*thou* or *you*?"

As may happe said Rost

"No call her *you* please I'll tell you all bout t some other time. No, I'll tell you now Y u know Sónya s my dearest friend. Such a fri d that I burned my rm for her sake Look here!

She pulled up her musl n sleeve nd howed him red sca n her lo slender del cate arm, hi h abo e the elbow on that part that is co ered even by a ball dress.

"I burned th s to pro e my lo e f her I just heated a ruler in the fire d pressed t ther

S tti on the sofa with the l ttle cush ons on ts arms, what used to be his old school-room, d looki to ✓ tásha s wildly bri ht eyes, Rostó re-entered that world of hom d childhood which had no mean n f nyo e else but ga e h m som of the best joys of his life nd the burn n f n arm w th ruler as a proof of lo did not seem to him senseless, he understood and was not urprised t t.

"W ll nd is that all he asked.

"We are such friends, such friends All that ruler bus ness was just nonsense but w are fri nds f rever Sh f she lo es anyone does t f lif b t I don t understand that, I f rget quickly

"W ll, what then?"

"Well she lo es me nd you l'k that."

N tásha suddenly flushed.

"Why y u remember bef e you went wa

Well, h says you are to forget all that. Sh says I hall love him always, b t let him be free I n t that I vely nd oble! Yes, very nobl ? I n t t?" asked N tásha, so seriousl and excitedly that t was ev dent that what she was now sayi she had talked of bef e, w th tears.

Rostóv became thoughtful.

"I never go back n my word, he said. Be-des, Só ya is so charmi that only fool w uld renounce such happiness.

"No, o cried ✓ tásha sh and I ha e al-ready talked t er We knew y u d sa so. But t won t d because you see, if you sa that— f you cons der yourself bound b your promis — t will seem as if he had n t meant t seriously It makes t as if you were marry her because you must, and that wouldn t do t all.

Rost saw that t had been well con dered b them. Só ya had lread truck him by her beauty on th p eced da Today when h

sov not wishing anyone to forestall him threw off his fur coat and ran on tiptoe through the large dark ballroom All was the same there were the same old card tables and the same chandelier with a cover over it but someone had already seen the young master and be fore he had reached the drawing room some thing flew out from a side door like a tornado and began hugging and kissing him Another and yet another creature of the same kind sprang from a second door and a third more hugging more kissing more outcries and tears of joy He could not distinguish which was Papa which Natásha and which Pétya Every one shouted talked and kissed him at the same time Only his mother was not there he noticed that

And I did not know Nicholas My darling!

Here he is our own Kólya dear fel low How he has changed! Where are the candles? Tea!

And me kiss me!

Dearest and me!

Sónya Natásha Pétya Anna Mikháylovna Véra and the old count were all hugging him and the serfs men and maids flocked into the r —

iting

Natásha after she had pulled h m down to ward her and covered his face w th kisses hold ing him tight by the skirt of his coat sprang away and pranced up and down in one place like a goat and shrieked pierc ngly

All around were loving eyes glistening with tears of joy and all around were lips seeking a kiss

Sónya too all rosy red clung to h s arm and radiant with bliss looked eagerly toward his eyes waiting for the look for which she longed Sónya now was sixteen and she was very pretty espec ally at this moment of happy rapturous exc tement She gazed at him not taking her eyes off him and smiling and hold ng her breath He gave her a grateful look but was still expectant and looking for someone The old countess had not yet come But now steps were heard at the door steps so rap d that they could hardly be his mother s

Yet it was she dressed in a new gown w l ch he did not know made since he h d left All the others let him go and he ran to her When they met she fell on his breast sobb ng She could not lift her face but only pressed it to the cold braiding of his hussar s jacket Deni sov who had come into the room unnoticed by anyone stood there and wiped his eyes at the sight

Vasili Denisov your son s friend he said introducing himself to the count who was looking inquiringly at him

You are most welcome! I know I know said the count kissing and embracing Denisov Nicholas wrote us Natásha Véra look! Here is Denísov!

The same happy rapturous faces turned to the shaggy figure of Denísov

Darling Denísov! screamed Natásha be side herself with rapture sprin ing to him putting her arms round him and kissing him This escapade made everybody feel confused Denísov blushed too but smiled and tak Natásha s hand kissed it

Denísov was shown to the room prepared for him and the Rostóvs all gathered round

the rest crowding round him watched every movement word or look of his never takin their blissfully adoring eyes off him His broth er and s sters struggled for the places nearest to him and disputed with one another who should bring him his tea handkerchief and p pe

Rostóv was very happy in the love they showed him but the f rst moment of meeting had been so beatific that h s present joy seemed insufficient and he kept expecting something more more and yet more

Next morning after the fatigues of their journey the travelers slept till ten o clock

In the room next their bedroom there was a confusion of sabers satchels sabretaches open portmanteaus and dirty boots Two freshly cleaned pairs with spurs had just been placed by the wall The servants were bring ng in jugs and basins hot water for shaving and their well brushed clothes There was a mascu line odor and a smell of tobacco

Hallo Gwiska—my pipe! came Vasili Denísov s husky vo ce Rost v get up!

Rostóv rubb ng his eyes that seemed glued together raised h s dishevelled head from the hot pillow

Wh y is t late?

Late! It s nearly ten o clock answered Na tásha s vo ce A rustle of starched pett coats and the wh sper ng and laughter of girls voices came from the adjoin ng room The door was

Nicholas.

pe ed a cra k and there was a gl p e of someth g bl e f r bbo s bl ck h r nd merry f ces It w N tá l S/ ya d Pétya who h d come t ee wl etl r tl ey we e get t up

N h l ! Get up N tásl a o ce was ara he rd t the doo

D ectly

Mea h l Pétya h ng f u d a d se zed th sabers th uter room w th the d l ght bo fe l ttle ght f a m l t ry elde br th er d f rg tt ng that t w u becom g f r th gi ls t eeme und es ed pened the bed room doo

I this y s ber? he h uted —

N ch l Come t y u d ess ggowi sa d N tásh c

I th y sab r? ked Pétya O is t rs? he sa d dd ess g tl e bl k mu t hed Deniso w tl ers le d f

Ros ó h rr dly put someth g n h s feet d ew h s d es gow d w nt ut N tásha h d p t e p rr d boot nd wa just g tt g he foot t the ther Sónya hen h cam w tw l u d d was bo t t exp d he d es es t b lloon d td Th y w d ess d l k n ew p l bl f ock d we both fresh ro y d b ght. Só y b t N tásha tak g her brother rm led h m to th tt g oom h th y bega t lk g They h rdly ga e her t m t k q est o d g pl es m g th sa d l ttl m t ers h h ld t erest but them sel es. N tá h l hed t ery w d he sa d tha h sa d h rs lf because what they — — —

p uu e u

eryth

Ros ó felt that, u der the fl e ce of the arm ray f l th t ch ldl k m l wh ch h d

q ma are ty l m f llygl dy re m brother She t h d h mustache I wa t kn w h t y m e l ke. A e you th same we N ?

Why d d Sónya r n away? asked R st

Ah yes! That s a wh le lo story! H w ar you go ng to spe k to her—*th u* or *you?*

As may h ppen sa d Rost

N call her y u ple e I ll tell y u all h re!

She pulled up l e mu l n slee e a d h we l h m a red scar n her lo g slender del cate arm h gh abo e the elbow on that p t that i co e ed e en by a b ll dress

I burned th to pro e my l e for her I j t heated a ruler the fire a d pressed it there

S tt g n th sofa with the l ttle cusl s on its arms i what u ed to be l s ld chool room d look ng int N tá ha w ldly b ght eyes P o tó e-ente ed th t w ld f hom a d ch ldhood wh ch had n mean g f r any ne else but ga e h m some of the best joys of l s l fe nd the burn g of n rm w th a ruler a — m en les

ruler bu ess was just nonse se b t we re fr ds f e er She if he l res a y ne does t f r l fe b t I do t u dersta d that I forget qu ckly

"Well wh t th n?

"Well she lo es me and y u l ke that.

N tásha ddenly flushed.

Why yo remember bef e y u went away?

W ll she says yo are to f rget all that. She say I shall lo e h m lw ys b t let h m be free I n t that lovely and noble! Yes very noble? I t t? ked N tá h so seri ly a d excitedly tl t it w s ev dent that what she was n w say g she had talked of bef re w tl tears.

R tó became thoughtf l.

I never go b ck o my word he said. Be des Só ya s so ch rm n th t nly a fool w uld re ces ch happ ess

No l cried Natásl he and I have al re dy t lked t over We k ew y u d say so B t it w n t d because you see f you say tl t— f you con der y rself bou d by y u p mis — t w ll seem f he h d t m t t eri ly It m kes it s f y u wer m rry g her because you m t nd that wouldn t do t all

R tó saw th t th d b n w ll e n de ed by th m. Só ya h d l dy tru k h m by her b ty n th p eced ng day Today wh n h

sov not wishing anyone to forestall him threw off his fur coat and ran on tiptoe through the large dark ballroom All was the same there were the same old card tables and the same chandelier with a cover over it but someone had already seen the young master and before he had reached the drawing room something flew out from a side door like a tornado and began hugging and kissing him Another and yet another creature of the same kind sprang from a second door and a third more hugging more kissing more outcries and tears of joy He could not distinguish which was Papa which Natásha and which Pétya Everyone shouted talked and kissed him at the same time Only his mother was not there he noticed that

And I did not know Nicholas My darling!

Here he is our own Kólya dear fellow How he has changed! Where are the candles? Tea!

And me kiss me!

Dear

[illegible] maids flocked into the room exclaiming and oh ing and ah ing

Pétya clinging to his legs kept shouting And me too!

Natásha after she had pulled him down toward her and covered his face with kisses holding him tight by the skirt of his coat sprang away and pranced up and down in one place like a goat and shrieked piercingly

All around were loving eyes glistening with tears of joy and all around were lips seeking a kiss

Sónya too all rosy red clung to his arm and radiant with bliss looked eagerly toward his eyes waiting for the look for which she longed Sónya now was sixteen and she was very pretty especially at this moment of happy rapturous excitement She gazed at him not taking her eyes off him and smiling and holding her breath He gave her a grateful look but w s

Yet it was she dressed in a new gown which he did not know made since he had left. All the others let him go and he ran to her When they met she fell on his breast sobbing She could not lift her face but only pressed it to

Nicholas

the cold braiding of his hussar s jacket Denisov who had come into the room unnoticed by anyone stood there and wiped his eyes at the sight

Vasili Denisov your son s friend he said, introducing himself to the count who was looking inquiringly at him

You are most welcome! I know I know said the count kissing and embracing Denisov Nicholas wrote us Natásha Véra look! Here is Denisov!

The s m h

[illegible]

putting her arms round him and kissing him This escapade made everybody feel confused Denisov blushed too but smiled and taking Natásha s hand kissed it

Denisov was shown to the room prepared for him and the Rostovs all gathered round Nicholas in the sitting room

The old countess not letting go of his hand and kissing it every moment sat beside him the rest crowding round him watched every movement word or look of his never taking their blissfully adoring eyes off him His brother and sisters struggled for the places nearest to him and disputed with one another who should bring him his tea handkerchief and pipe

Rostóv was very happy in the love they h d

[illegible] ore and yet more

Next morning after the fatigues of their journey the travelers slept till ten o clock

In the room next their bedroom there was a confusion of sabers satchels sabretaches open portmanteaus and dirty boots Two freshly cleaned pairs with spurs had just been placed by the wall The servants were bringing in jugs and basins hot water for shaving and their well brushed clothes There was a masculine odor and a smell of tobacco

Hallo Gwiska—my pipe! came Vasili Deniso s husky voice Wostóv get up!

Rosto rubbing his eyes that seemed glued together raised his disheveled head from the hot pillow

Why s t late?

Late It s nearly ten o clock answered Natásha s voice A rustle of starched petticoats and the whispering and laughter of girls voices came from the adjoining room The door was

d sm ll sil r purs passed h t me very

h borrow g m ey from Ga ril t p y a l gh dri er his k ss So ya on the sly—he w recalled all th ch ld hness he h d left mmeasurably beh d. N w h wa a l e te t f hussars j ket l ced w th l er and wea g the Cross of St. George warded t soldiers f r bra ery n act and n th com p y f well k wn elderly nd respected rac men wa tra g trotter f his own for race He k ew lady on o f the boulevards whom h vis ted f n eve He led the mazurka t the A kháro s ball talked bo t th war with F ld M rshal Kám k v ted th English Cl b d wa n t m te terms with col l of f rty to whom Deniso had trod ced him.

H pass n f th Empero had cooled somewhat Mosco But till he d d n t see him d had no pportu ty of see g h m, he often spoke abo t h m d bout his l e f him, lettı g t be u derstood th t he had t told all d that th re was someth g n his feelings f th Emperor ot e eryo co ld derst d, d w th his wh le soul h hared th dorat n then comm Moscow f the Empero who wa pok of as th ngel in carnate.

Dun Rostó h rt tay n Mosc w b f e rejo g th rmy h d d t draw loser t So ya b t rather dr fted way from h She wa ery pret d weet, d ev d tly deep l lo w th him but h wa t th period f th when there eems so much t d th t there is t m f th t sort of th g a d a ou g ma fears t b nd hims lf d pri es hi freed m wh ch he eed f so ma y oth th gs. Wl en h th ht of Só ya d ri thi ta Moscow h sa d to h mself Ah the ll be, and there re m y m re ch g l somewhere whom I d n t y t k w Ther ll be time en gh th nk bt t l e when I tt b t w l h t me. Bes des seemed him that th societ f women was rather derogat ry t h ma hood He w t to ball d t lad es society w th ffectat n f do g so ga nst h s w ll Th races th E l h Cl b prees I D iso d is t certa h —tl t was th matter and q t th th g f dash ng yo g hussa !

At the beg nn ng of M rch old Cou t Ilyá Rost was ery busy arrang g a d nner in hon r f Prince B grat ón t the En l h Club

The co t walked up nd d wn the hall i his dress g gown g ng rders to the cl b tew rd nd to th f mou Feokti t the Cl b s

fest al I o o n gr k ew so well how to rra ge a fea t o n open ha ded hosp t ble cale, a d st ll fewe men would be so well able d will to m ke p out of the r own resources what m ht be need ed f r the success of the fete. The l b cook nd the teward liste ed to the count s orders w tl

the turtl so p you kn w!

Sh ll w ha e th ee cold dishes then? ked the cook

Th cou t con d ed.

"W ca t h e less—yes three th m y o se that s o e sa d he bend g d w finger

"Tl n m I to order those large sterl t ked tl steward.

"Yes, t can t be helped f tl ey won t take less. Ah dear me! I wa f rgett g We mu t h e n ther ent é Ah, good ess grac u h cl tched t h head Wh go g to get m th flowers? Dmitr ! Eh, Dmitr ! G llop off to ur M scow estat he sa d to the f ct tum wh appea ed t his call Hurry off d t l M ksim the gard to et the erfs t k S y th t eryth g o t of the h th uses m t be brought here well wrapped up n felt. I must l two hu dred pots here on Friday

H g en se ral m e ord rs, he wa bo t t go t his "l ttle cou tess t h e a est, b t emembe g som thi l e f m portan he eturned a called b k the cook nd th club tewa d d aga n began g orders. A l ht footst p d th cl nk g f p rs wer heard t the doo a d th you cou t ha dsome rosy w th dark l ttl mus tach d tly rested d m d leeker by his easy l fe n Moscow tered the room.

Ah my boy my head s n wh l sa d the old man with mil as f h f lt a l ttl o fused bef e his so "N w if you w uld nly

had caught a glimpse of her she seemed still more lovely She was a charming girl of six teen evidently passionately in love with him (he did not doubt that for an instant) Why should he not love her now and even marry her Rostóv thought but just now there were so many other pleasures and interests before him! Yes they have taken a wise decision he thought I must remain free

Well then that s excellent said he We ll talk it over later on Oh how glad I am to have you!

Well and are you still true to Borís? he continued

Oh what nonsense! cried Natásha laugh ing I don t think about him or anyone else and I don t want anything of the kind

Dear me! Then what are you up to now?

Now? repeated Natásha and a happy smile lit up her face Have you seen Duport?

No

Not seen Duport—the famous dancer? Well then you won t understand That s what I m up to

Curving her arms Natásha held out her skirts as dancers do ran back a few steps turned cut a caper brought her little feet sharply together and made some steps on the very tips of her toes

See I m standing! See! she said but could not maintain herself on her toes any longer So that s what I m up to! I ll never marry any one but will be a dancer Only don t tell any one

Rostóv laughed so loud and merrily that Denisov in his bedroom felt envious and Na tásha could not help joining in

No but don t you think it s nice? she kept repeating

Nice! And so you no longer wish to marry Borís?

Natásha flared up I don t want to marry n on ...

d

(

Oh well then good by go and dress Is he very terrible Denísov?

Why terrible? asked Nicholas No Váska is a splendid fellow

You call him Váska? That s funny! And is he very nice?

Very

Well then be quick We ll all have break fast together

And Natásha rose and went out of the room on tiptoe like a ballet dancer but smilin as only happy girls of fifteen can smile When Rostóv met Sonya in the drawing room he red dened He did not know how to behave with her The evening before in the first happy mo ment of meeting they had kissed each other but today they felt it could not be done he felt that everybody including his mother and sis ters ...

ing to

kissed

but as *you*—*Sonya* But their eyes met and said *thou* and exchanged tender kisses Her looks asked h...

Natá

prom

His lo... s thanked her for offering him his free dom and told her that one way or another h would never cease to love her for that would be impossible

How strange it is said Véra selectin a moment when all were silent that Sónya and Nicholas now say *you* to one another and meet like strangers

Véra s remark was correct as her remarks al ways were but like most of her observation it made everyone feel uncomfortable not only Sónya Nicholas and Natásha but even the old countess who—dreading this love affair which might hinder Nicholas from makin a brilliant match—blushed like a girl

Denisov to Rostov s surprise appeared in the drawing room with pomaded hair per fumed and in a new uniform looking just as smart as he made himself when going into bat tle and he was more amiable to the ladies and gentlemen than Rostov had ever expected to see him

CHAPTER II

On his return to Moscow from the army Nicholas Rostov was welcomed by his home cir cle as the best of ...

Nikólenka

tractive a d

ances as a handsome lieutenant of hussars a good dancer and one of the best matches in the city

The Rost vs kne everybody n Moscow The old count had money enough that year as all his estates had been remortgaged n l so Nicholas acquiring a trotter of his own very stylish riding breeches of the latest cut such as no one else yet had in Moscow and boots of the latest f... hion with extremely pointed toes

d sm ll s I sp rs p d h s t me ry ga! Afte a sl rt pe od f l pt g h mself t th ld c d u n of l fe N ch la found it ers pleasa t to be at l m aga n He felt th t he h d gr wn up d mat ed ry mu h H s desp r at f l g in a Scr ptur ex m n t n h borrow g money from G ril t p y h k g S ya on th ly—he

we ng the C soldi rs f b ery n t d n th e m p y f w ll k wn elde ly and e pe t d rac g me wa tra g t tte f h s ow for a ra e H k ew l dy n on f the boulevard h m h t d f n es ng H led the m zu ka t the A khá o s b ll talked bout the a w th F ld M rsh l Káme ki s ted th E gl h Cl b a d wa n t m te terms th l l f f rty t wh m Deniso had trod ed him.

H pass n f the Emp h d cooled somewhat n Mosco But t ll h d d n t se him d had pport ty I e g h m h fte pok bout him d bo t h s lo e f him, l tting t be understood th t he had t told all d that the w someth g n h feel ss f the Emper t ry nec uld derst d, d w th h wh l s ul h sl red th ad rati the comm n M sc w f r the Empero wh was poke of th ngel carn te.

D r g Rostó h rt t y Mosc w bef e jo g th army h d d t draw l er t S ya b t rathe dr ft d w y f m he Sh wa ery p ett y d w t, nd de tly deep l l w th h m but h w t th pe d of th wh th e em mu h t d that tl t m f that so t of th g d g ma fears b d h m lf d p es h f eed m h ch he eds f so m y ther things. Wh h tl ht f Só ya d r g th u Moscow h d t h mself Ah the e ll be, d ther ma y m e ch g ls s m here h m l d n t t k w There ll be tim gh to th k bo l e when I wa t b t w l h o t m Bes des seemed to him that the soc et f w m was ra her de ogatory t h m hood. H we t to ball d t l d es so y w th ff ctat n I do g so ga ns h w ll Tl races the Engl h Cl b p es w tl D fso d ts certa h us —th t was oth mat er d q t th th g f a dashing you g hussa !

h nor of Pr n e B g
The c t walked up and down the h ll in h s d ess ng gown g g orders to the club t w rd nd to the f m us Feokti t th Club s he d cook bout sparagus fresh cucumbers strawberries eal and fi h for th d nner The cou t l d been member and n tl e comm t tee of the Cl b fr m tl e d y it was f unded. To h m the Club entru ted the arrangement of th h r of Bagratión f r few men

out f the r wn resour es d f thes ccess of the fete The club cook nd the tew d liste ed t the cou t s orders w tl pl a ed f ces fo they knew that u der n tl er m nagem nt ould they so e ly extract h m el es from a d nne cost

Sh ll we ha e th eee ld u t e asked the cook
The cou t c ns de ed
We can t l e less—yes th ee tl e m y n e th t s one sa d he bend g d wn a fi g r
Th n am I to rder those large ste let a ked tl e teward.
'Yes t can t be l elp d if tl ey won t take less. Ah dea me! I was f rgett ng We must

wh appea ed t h call Hurry M ksim the gardener t set the fs t wo k S y th t e eryth out f the hoth s m t b b gl t here well rapped up felt. I m t ha e tw hundred pots here n Frid y
H g g en several mo e o ders, he as abo t t go to his l ttle c tess to ha e a rest b t membe someth else of im porta h returned ga n called ba k the cook d the club st w rd d ga n began g g ders. A l ht footstep a d the cl k g of sp rs ere heard t the door a d the y g co t h ndsome rosy w th d rk l ttle mus tach es de tly ested a d m de sleeker by h s ea y l f M scow e tered the room.
Al my boy my head n a wh l sa d the ld ma w th m le as f he felt a l ttl co fused befo e his son Now f you w uld only

help a bit! I must have singers too I shall have my own orchestra but shouldn t we get the gypsy singers as well? You military men like that sort of thing

Really Papa I believe Prince Bagratión worried himself less before the battle of Schon Grabern than you do now said his son with a smile

The old count pretended to be angry

Yes you talk but try it yourself!

And the count turned to the cook who with a shrewd and respectful expression looked ob servantly and sympathetically at the father and son

What have the young people come to now adays eh Feoktist? said he Laughing at us old fellows!

That s so your excellency all they have to do is to eat a good dinner but providing it and serving it all up that s not their business!

That s it that s it! exclaimed the count and gaily seizing his son by both hands he cried Now I ve got you so take the sleigh and pair at once and go to Bezukhob s and tell him Count Ilyá has sent you to ask for strawberries and fresh pineapples We can t get them from anyone else He s not there him self so you ll have to go in and ask the prin cesses and from there go on to the Rasgulyáy —the coachman Ipátka knows—and look up the gypsy Ilyushka the one who danced at Count Orlóv s you remember in a white Cos sack coat and bring him along to me

And am I to bring the gypsy girls along with him? asked Nicholas laughing Dear dear!

At that moment with noiseless footsteps and with the bus nesslike preoccupied yet meekly Christian look which never left her face Anna Mikháylovna entered the hall Though she came upon the count in his dressing gown every day he invariably became confused and begged her to excuse his costume

No matter at all my dear count she said meekly closing her eyes But I ll go to Bezuk hov s myself Pierre has arrived and now we shall get anything we want from his hothouses I have to see him in any case He has forward ed me a letter from Borís Thank God Borís is now on the staff

The count was delighted at Anna Mikháy lovna s taking upon herself one of h s com missions and ordered the small closed carriage for her

Tell Bezukhov to come I ll put his name down Is his wife with him? he asked

Anna Mikháylovna turned up her eyes and profound sadness was depicted on her face

Ah my dear friend he is very unfortunate she said If what we hear is true it is dreadful. How little we dreamed of such a thin when

him what consolation I can

Wh what is the matter? asked both the young and old Rostóv

Anna Mikháylovna sighed deeply

Dólokhov Mary Ivánovna s son she said in a mysterious whisper has compromised her completely they say Pierre took him up in vited him to his house in Petersburg and now

she has come here and that daredevil after her! said Anna Mikháylovna wishin to show her sympathy for Pierre but by involuntary intonations and a half smile betrayin her sympathy for the daredevil as she called Dólokhov They say Pierre is quite broken by his misfortune

Dear dear! But still tell him to come to the Club—it will all blow over It will be a tre mendous banquet

Next day the third of March soon after one o clock two hundred and fifty members of the English Club and fifty guests were awaitin the guest of honor and hero of the Austrian cam paign Prince Bagratión to dinner

On the first arrival of the new s of the battle of Austerlitz Moscow had been bewildered At that time the Russians were so used to victories that on receiving news of the defeat some would simply not believe it while others sou ht some extraordinary explanation of so stran e an event In the English Club where all who were distingu shed important and well in formed forgathered when the news began to arrive in December nothing was said about the war and the last battle as though all were in a conspiracy of s lence The men who set the tone in conversation—Count Rostopchín Prince Yuri Dolgorukov Valuev Count Márkov and Prince Vyázemsk —did not show themselves at the Club but met in private houses in inti mate circles and the Moscovites who took the r opinions from others—Ilyá Rostóv am ng them—remained for a wh le without any defi nite opinion on the subject of the war and without leaders The Moscovites felt that some thing was wrong and that to discuss the bad news was d ffcult and so it was best to be si lent But after a while just as a jury comes out of its room the b gwigs who guided the Club s

opinion reappeared, and everybody began speakin- clearl and definitely Reasons were f und for th incredibl unheard-of, and impossibl event of Russian defeat, everything became clear and in all corners of Moscow the same tings began t be said. These reasons were the treachery of the Austrians, a defective commissariat, the treachery f the Pol Przeby szewski and f the Frenchman Langeron Kutuzov incapacity and (t was whispered) the youth and inexperience of the sovereign, who had trusted worthless nd insignificant people. But the army th Russian arm everyone declared, was extraordinary and had achieved miracles f valor Th soldiers, officers, and generals were heroes. But the hero of heroes was Prince Bagratión, distinguished b his Schon Grabern affair and by the retreat from Austerlitz, where he alo e had withdrawn his column unbroken and had all da beaten back an enemy force twice as numerous a his own. What also conduced to Bagration s being selected as Moscow hero was th fact that he had no connections in t city d was tranger there. In his person, hono was shown to simpl fig tin Russian soldier without connections and intrigues, and to n who was associated by memories of the Italian campaign with the nam of Suv rov M reover paying

wit Shinshin, parodying the words of V ltaire. Kutuzov no o spoke of, except som who abused him in whispers, calling him a court weathercock and an old satyr

All Moscow repeated Prince Dolgorukov' saying "If you go n modeling and modeling you must get meared with cla suggesting consolation f our defeat by the memory f former victories: nd th words of Rostopchin, that French soldiers have to be incited to battle by highfalutin words, and Germans by logical arguments to show them that t is more dangerous run way than to dvance, but that Russian soldiers only need o be restrained and held back. On all sides, new and fresh anecdotes were heard of ndividual examples of heroism shown by our officers and men t Austerlitz. One had sa ed standard, another had killed fiv Frenchmen, third had loaded fi cannon single handed. Berg was mentio ed, b those who did not know him, as having, when wounded in the rig t hand, tak n his sword in the left, and gon f rward. Of Bolkónski noth-

t was sa d, and only those who knew him intimately regretted that he had died so young leaving a pregnant wife with his eccentric father

CHAPTER III

On that third of March, all the rooms n the English Club were filled with a hum of conversation, like the hum of bees swarming in spring time. Th members and guests of the Club wandered hither and thither sat, stood, met, and separated, some in un form and some n evenin dress, a d a few here and there with powdered hai and in Russian *kaft ns*. Powdered footmen, in livery with buckled shoes and smart stockings, stood at every door anxiously noting vis tors every mo ement in order *to offer* their services. Most of those present were elderly respected men with broad, self confident faces, fat fingers, and resolute gestures and vo ces. This class f guests and members sat in certain hab tual places and met in certain hab tual groups. A minority of those present were casual guests—chiefly young men, among whom were Denisov Rostóv and Dólokho —who was n w gain n officer in the Sem n regiment. The faces of these young people, especially those who were mil tary men, *bore that expression of condescending respect* fo their elders wh ch seems to say t the older generation, "W are prepared to respect nd hono you, but all the same remember that the future belongs to us.

Nesvitski was there as an old member of the Club. P erre, who at his wif command had let his hair grow and abandoned his spectacles, went about the rooms fashionably dressed but looking sad and dull. Here, as elsewhere, he was urrounded by an tmosphere of subservience *to his wealth, and being in the hab t* of l rding t over these people, he treated them with bsent-minded contempt.

B his ge h should have belonged to the younger men, but by his wealth and connec ti n h belonged to the groups f old and honored guests, and so he went from one group to another Som f th most important old men were the center f groups which even strangers pproached respectfully to hear th vo ces of well known men. Th largest circles formed round Count Rost pchin, Valuev and Naryshkin. Rostopchin was describ n how the Russians had been overwhelmed b flying Austrians nd had had to force their way through them with bayonets.

Val ev was confidentially telling that Uvárov

help a bit! I must have singers too I shall have my own orchestra but shouldn t we get the gypsy singers as well? You military men like that sort of thing

Really Papa I believe Prince Bagratión worried himself less before the battle of Schon Grabern than you do now said his son with a smile

The old count pretended to be angry

Yes you talk but try it yourself!

And the count turned to the cook who with a shrewd and respectful expression looked observantly and sympathetically at the father and son

What have the young people come to nowadays eh Feoktíst? said he Laughing at us old fellows!

That s so your excellency all they have to do is to eat a good dinner but providing it and serving it all up that s not their business!

That s it that s it! exclaimed the count and gaily seizing his son by both hands he cried Now I ve got you so take the sleigh and pair at once and go to Bezukhob s and tell him Count Ilyá has sent you to ask for strawberries and fresh pineapples We can t get them from anyone else He s not there himself so you ll have to go in and ask the princesses and from there go on to the Rasgulyáy —the coachman Ipátka knows—and look up the gypsy Ilyushka the one who danced at Count Orlóv s you remember in a white Cossack coat and bring him along to me

And am I to bring the gypsy girls along with him? asked Nicholas laughing Dear dear!

At that moment with noiseless footsteps and with the businesslike preoccupied yet meekly Christian look which never left her face Anna Mikháylovna entered the hall Though she came upon the count in his dressing gown every day he invariably became confused and begged her to excuse his costume

No matter at all my dear count she said meekly closing her eyes But I ll go to Bezukhov s myself Pierre h —

s

I

e e to it Boris Thank God Boris

missions and ordered the small closed carriage for her

Tell Bezukhov to come I ll put his name down Is his wife with him? he asked

Anna Mikháylovna turned up her eyes and profound sadness was depicted on her face

Ah my dear friend he is very unfortunate she said If what we hear is true it is dreadful How little we dreamed of such a thin when we were rejoicing at his happiness! And such a lofty angelic soul as young Bezukhov! Yes I pity him from my heart and shall try to g e him what consolation I can

Wh what is the matter? asked both the young and old Rostóv

Anna Mikháylovna sighed deeply

Dólokhov M

in a m

compl

I

I y for Pierre but by involuntary intonations and a half smile betraying her sympathy for the daredevil as she called Dólokhov They say Pierre is quite broken by his misfortune

Dear dear! But still tell him to come to the Club—it will all blow over It will be a tremendous banquet

Next d

o

E

g

P

On the first arrival of the news of the battle of Austerlitz Moscow had been bewildered At that time the Russians were so used to victories that on receiving news of the defeat some

distinguished important and well informed forgathered when the news began to arrive in December nothing was said about the war and the last battle as though all were in a conspiracy of silence The men who set the tone

I

t but met in private houses in intimate circles and the Moscovites who took their opinions from others—Ilyá Rostóv among them—remained for a while without any definite opinion on the subject of the war and without leaders The Moscovites felt that something was wrong and that to discuss the bad news was difficult and so it was best to be silent But after a while just as a jury comes out of its room the bigwigs who guided th

B ı b f reh h d f hed re d g a st nto maj d mo ced th t d ner w dy! The door ope d nd fr m the d n room came the reso d strai s f the polo e

C q t j yf l tl d ken
T mpl l t Rus w

d Co t R tó gl gr ly t th u

t Alex ders—Bekl he d Nary hki — h ch w gn fica t llus on to the n me f tl s v e g Three h dred pers took the eats the d g room, a d g to th r r k a d mp rt the m mpor ta t nea er t th h ed guest a n t lly te fl de pest whe e the la d l es low est.

Just b fo d Co t Ilyá R tó pre t d h so t B grató wl o r gn ed h m d sa d few w ds t hım d j nted d kw rd as e ll the w ds h poke th t d y d Co t Ilyá looked j yfully d p dly ar d wh l B grat p ke t h s son.

ıs ıa ıya Ko to w th th ther memb s f the mm tt e sat f g B gratıó d, as the ery person ficat of M cow h p t l ty d d the h rs t the p

H eff rts h d ot be n The d both th Lente d the ther f re wa ple d d y t he co ld t f l q te t ea e t ll th e d of th meal H ı k d t the b tle wl ıs pered d ect t th footm d wa t d e l expect d d h w th some ty E ery th g e lle t. W tl the d rse g ga t t l t (t s ht f wh ch Ilyá R t bl hed h elf us pl as) tl f t me b ga popp g ks d fill g th ch m p gne gla es Aft the fish ı h cl made c ta n e sat the co t h g d gl ces th h

entl us m The band ımmed ately struck up Conquest s joyf l tl under w ken All o nd cr ed H rr hl Bagrat ón also rose and sh ted Hurrah! ın ex ctly the s me vo ce ın wh ch he l d st ted t on the feld t S l n Grabern You g Ro tóv s ecstat c o ce c uld be l e rd bo tl e tl ree hu dred tl e s He nearly wept. To the health of our So gn the Emper l hero ed Hurral l d emptyı g l s gl at one gulp he d sl ed ıt to the floor Many followed h example nd the loud l ut g co t ued for a long tıme Whe th ces sub ded the footmen cleare l w y the broken glass d e erybody sat down ga sm l ng at the no se they h d m de nd excha g g r m rks The old count ro e once more gl n d at a note lyı g bes de h s pl te a d p posed a to st To the he lth of tl e her of l st camp gn P nce P ter l á o- ı h B gratıó l d ga n hıs bl e eyes g ew mo t. Hurrahl cr d the three l u dred es aga b t tead of the b d a d r began s g g a ca t ta compo ed by Paul l á o ch k t

Rus O ll b rr
C g q t g t
Hav t B t ó ?
H bri g f m t tl k et

As soo as the s g g w s o er other a d oth toast was p op ed and Cou t Ilyá R tó became m e d more mo ed m

CHAPTER IV

P ERR SA O O ITE Dólokh v a d N ch l D

u w u he noth g of wh t wa g n d h m d t be b bed by s m d p d uns l ed problem
Th

had been sent from Petersburg to ascertain what Moscow was thinking about Austerlitz

In the third circle Naryshkin was speaking of the meeting of the Austrian Council of War at which Suvorov crowed like a cock in reply to the nonsense talked by the Austrian generals Shinshin standing close by tried to make a joke saying that Kutuzov had evidently failed to learn from Suvórov even so simple a thing as the art of crowing like a cock but the elder members glanced severely at the wit making him feel that in that place and on that day it was improper to speak so of Kutuzov

Count Ilyá Rostóv hurried and preoccupied went about in his soft boots between the dining and drawing rooms hastily greeting the important and unimportant all of whom he knew as if they were all equals while his eyes occasionally sought out his fine well-set up young son resting on him and winking joyfully at him Young Rostóv stood at a window with Dólokhov whose acquaintance he had lately made and highly valued The old count came up to them and pressed Dólokhov s hand

Please come and visit us you know my [illegible]

an old man who was passing but before he had finished his greeting there was a general stir and a footman who had run in announced with a frightened face He s arrived!

[illegible]

ent rooms came together and crowded in the large drawing room by the door of the ballroom.

Bagratión appeared in the doorway of the anteroom without hat or sword which in accord with the Club custom he had given up to the hall porter He had no lambskin cap on his head nor had he a loaded whip over his shoulder as when Rostóv had seen him on the eve of the battle of Austerlitz but wore a tight new uniform with Russian and foreign Orders and the Star of St George on his left breast Evidently just before coming to the dinner he had had his hair and whiskers trimmed which [illegible]

[illegible] shev and Theodore Uvárov who had arrived with him paused at the doorway to allow him as the guest of honor to enter first Bagratión was embarrassed not wishing to avail himself of their courtesy and this caused some delay at the doors but after all he did at last enter first He walked shyly and awkwardly over the parquet floor of the reception room not knowing what to do with his hands he was more accustomed to walk over a plowed field under fire as he had done at the head of the Kursk regiment at Schon Grabern—and he would have found that easier The committeemen met him at the first door and expressing their delight at seeing such a highly honored guest took possession of him as it were without waiting for his reply surrounded him and led him to the drawing room It was at first impossible to enter the drawing room door for the

rare animal Count Ilyá Rostóv laughing and repeating the words Make way dear boy! Make way make way! pushed through the crowd more energetically than anyone led the guests into the drawing room and seated them on the center sofa The bigwigs the most respected members of the Club beset the new arrivals Count Ilyá again thrusting his way through the crowd went out of the drawing room and reappeared a minute later with another committeeman carrying a large silver salver which he presented to Prince Bagratión On the salver lay some verses composed and printed in the hero s honor Bagratión on seeing the salver glanced around in dismay as though seeking help But all eyes demanded that he should submit Feeling himself in their power he resolutely took the salver with both hands and looked sternly and reproachfully at the count who had presented it to him Someone obligingly took the dish from Bagratión (or he would it seemed have held it till evening and have gone in to dinner with it) and drew his attention to the verses

Well I will read them then! Bagratión seemed to say and fixing his weary eyes on the paper began to read them with a fixed and serious expression But the author himself took the verses and began reading them aloud Bagratión bowed his head and listened

B ing glory tl en to tle der' re gn
t d o tl e tl o o T tus sl i ld
A d e d d f be tl u k dl t d as a n
A Rl ipheus at home a C r in tl f ld
I n fo t te A p l n
K by e p er e nou B g l
A dd en t Here l n R a t ble

t b fore he had fi hed e d ng st ntor majo d mo annou ced that d nne w s eady The doo opened and fr m the d room came the resounding tra ns of the pol e

C q t joyf l tl der ken
Tri mpl l t Rus

d Co t Ro tóv gl ci g gr ly at the au th r ho went on re d ng h erses bowed to B grat ó E ry ne rose feel g th t d ner asm importanttl nv rses d B grat ó ga pre ed g all the rest ent n t d nner H a s ted n the pl ce of hon between t Alexand rs—B kl sh nd N ryshk n— h ch was a n ficant allus on to the n me of tl e so e gn Thr e h dred pers s took he ts the d n ng room accord ng t th ra k nd mport n e the m re mpor tu t ea t tl l ed guest as n turally ater fl deepe t wh r the l nd l es l w est.

J t befo e d er Cou t Ilyá R tó p e ted his so t B grat ó wl e n ed h m d sa d few w rds t h m d j nted d kward a we e ll the w ds he spoke th t d y nd Co t Ilyá looked j yfully and pro dly r d h l B grat ón sp ke t hi son.

d his n w d de

P ce Nes tski Co t Ilyá R w the th r members f the comm tt e sat f c ng Ba grat d as the ery p rso ficat on of Moscow hosp tal ty did th ho rs to the pri e.

H ll rts had b e The d n both th Le t d th other f e w spl n did, yet h uld t f el q t t ea e t ll the d f ll meal H w k d t th b tl wl is per d d t t th footme d w t d ea h exp ct d d h w th som n ety E ry thi g e ll W tl th second o rs a g ga t le (t ht f which Ilyá R t bl shed th elf-consci plea) tl foot m bega popp g ks d fill ng the cl m pa n gl ses. Aft the fi h wh ch mad c ta se sa th cou t h g d gl es th th ther comm tt m The e will be m t ts t me to b g h whi p red d uk g ph gl ss he All w lent g f wh tl w uld y

T th h lth f So e g the Em pere h cr ed d t th me m m t h s k dly eyes grew m t w tl t rs of j y d

ntl us asm Tl b nd mmed ately struck up Conquest s joyful tl under waken All ros and cr ed Hurrah! Bagrat ón also rose and sh uted Hurral l n exactly the same o ce n wl h he l d shouted t on tl e fel l at Sch Grabern You g Ro t s ecstatic o ce c uld be l e rd bo e tl e tl ree hundred otl rs He nearly wept To the he lth of our her ared Hurral l e l n l me red

When tl e cessu u u way tl e b oken gl ss and everybody sat down aga n sm l ng at the n se tl ey had m de an l exchang n remarks Tl e old count rose once more glan d at a n te l ng bes de h s plate and p po ed a toa t To the health of tl e her of ur l t campa gn Pr nce Peter I áno ch P grat ón and again h s l lue eyes grew m t Hurral l cr ed the three l un lred o ces aga but stead of th b nd a l r beg n s ng ng a cant ta composed by Paul I á ch Kutuz

Russ O ll b rriers on
C g q t g t
Have n t B r t ó ?
H bri g f ment tl k s t

As soon as the s g n was o er nother an l noth t st was p oposed a d Cou t Ilyá R stó became mo e a d more mo ed m e gl was m l ed nd the sh ut g grew l ud r They dra k t Beklesh N ry hk n U Dolg rukov Apráks n V l ev to tl e com C members l t all tl e

CHAPTER IV

PIERRE SAT OP OSITE Dólokh v and N chola Ro t A u u l he ate nd dra k much nd

w th fi ed eyes and a look of complete b e m ded ess k pt rubb ng the b d of h s

some d p e d u sol ed pr blem

Th u l ed p blem that t rm ted h m was caus d by l ts gi n by tl e pr ess h cous t Mos w concern g Dól kho

intimacy with his wife and by an anonymous letter he had received that morning which in the mean jocular way common to anonymous letters said that he saw badly through his spectacles but that his wife s connection with Dólokhov was a secret to no one but himself Pierre absolutely disbelieved both the princess hints and the letter but he feared now to look at Dólokhov who was sitting opposite him Every time he chanced to meet Dólokhov s

his wife s past and her relations with Dólokhov Pierre saw clearly that what was said in the letter might be true or might at least seem to be true had it not referred to *his wife* He involuntarily remembered how Dólokhov who had fully recovered his former position after the campaign had returned to Petersburg and come to him Availing himself of his friendly relations with Pierre as a boon companion Dólokhov had come straight to his house and Pierre had put him up and lent him money Pierre recalled how Hélène had smilingly expressed disapproval of Dólokhov s living at their house and how cynically Dólokhov had praised his wife s beauty to him and from that time till they came to Moscow had not left them for a day

Yes he is very handsome thought Pierre and I know him It would be particularly pleasant to him to dishonor my name and ridicule me just because I have exerted myself on his behalf befriended him and helped him I know and understand what a spice that would add to the pleasure of deceiving me if it really were true Yes if it were true but I do not believe it I have no right to and can t believe it He remembered the expression Dolokhov s face assumed in his moments of cruelty as when tying the policeman to the bear and dropping them into the water or when he challenged a man to a duel without any reason or shot a post boy s horse with a pistol That expression was often on Dólokhov s face when looking at him Yes he is a bully thought Pierre to kill a man means nothing to him It must seem to him that everyone is afraid of him and that must please him He must think that I too am afraid of him—and in fact I am

Rostov was talking merrily to his two friends one of whom was a dashing hussar and the other a notorious duelist and rake and every now and then he glanced ironically at Pierre whose preoccupied absent minded and massive figure was a very noticeable one at the dinner Rostóv looked inimically at Pierre first because Pierre appeared to his hussar eyes as a rich civilian the husband of a beauty and in a word—an old woman and secondly because Pierre in his preoccupation and absent mindedness had not recognized Rostóv and had not responded to his greeting When the Emperor s health was drunk Pierre lost in thought did not rise or lift his glass

What are you about? shouted Rostóv looking at him in an ecstacy of exasperation Don t you hear it s His Majesty the Emperor s health?

Pierre sighed rose submissively emptied his glass and waiting till all were seated again turned with his kindly smile to Rostóv

Why I didn t recognize you! he said But Rostóv was otherwise engaged he was shouting Hurrah!

Why don t you renew the acquaintance? said Dólokhov to Rostóv

Confound him he s a fool! said Rostóv

One should make up to the husbands of pretty women said Denísov

Pierre did not catch what they were saying but knew they were talking about him He reddened and turned away

Well now to the health of handsome women! said Dólokhov and with a serious expression but with a smile lurking at the corners of his mouth he turned with his glass to Pierre

Here s to the health of lovely women Peterkin—and their lovers! he added

Pierre with downcast eyes drank out of his glass without looking at Dólokhov or answering him The footman who was distributing leaflets with Kutuzov s cantata laid one before Pierre as one of the principal guests He was just going to take it when Dólokhov leaning across snatched it from his hand and began reading it Pierre looked at Dólokhov and his eyes dropped the something terrible and monstrous that had tormented him all dinnertime rose and took possession of him He leaned his whole massive body across the table

How dare you take it? he shouted

pered their frightened voices

Dólokhov looked at Pierre with clear mirth-

ful, cruel eyes, and that sm le of his wh ch eemed to say Ah! Th s is what I l kel

"Y u han t h v tl he sa d d st nctly

Pale w th q ering l ps P rres atched the copy

You I you scoundrel! I ch ll nge yo ! he ej cul t d a d push ng b ck his chair he ro from tl e t bl

At th very n t t he d d th s d uttered

P err e t h m but R tó w th Dól kh v d De iso tayed t the Cl b t ll l te l e to th gyp es d ther ngers

"W ll the t ll t m rrow t Sokól k sa d Dól kho as he took lea e of R tó n the Cl b po ch.

A d do y u feel qu te calm? R stó asked.

Dól kho p us d.

"Well y see I ll tell y u th wh le secr t f d el g tw w rd If y u ar go g to fight a d el d you m ke will d wr t af fect t I tt rs to y ur par ts and f you th k y may be k lled y u fool d e

e fears bea h say b t wh y u see o yo fea ll g d y ly th ught s t to let h m get way A d th t h w t s w th m *A d m m h*

Next day t e ght n th m rn g P erre d Nes itsk dro t the Sokól k f est d f d Dól kh D so nd R tó lready

h eyes f dazzl d by th H wa e t ly bso bed by tw co derat his w fe gu lt of h ch f er h sleepl ss ght h h d t th l ghtest do bt d th gu ltless ess f D l kh ho had easo t preserv th bo f ma wh wa n th g t h m. I th ld perh p h ed e the sam thing h place, th ght P erre It en c rta th t

"T ll m rrow my dea f ll w

I hould have done the s me then why th duel *th murder?* E ther I shall kill h m or he w ll h t me n th he d o elbow or knee Can t I go way from here run away bury my elf som whe ? passed through h s m nd But j st t mom nts when such th ughts occurred t h m he w uld sk n p rt cularly calm and absent m nded way wh ch nsp red the respect f the onlookers W ll t be long? Are th ngs re dy?

When all was ready the sabers stuck n the d

he fy y u co f d nce a d the ho r y u h ve done me n choos g me f r y ur eco d if t th

n the r ght you were mp tu u

Oh yes t s h rribly stup d sa d P erre

Th n ll w m to e p ess yo r regrets a d I m ure y ur oppon nt w ll cc pt them sa d Nes itsk (wh l ke th others conce ned n the ff nd l ke very e m lar ca es d d n t yet b l e e that th ffa had com to n t l d l) Y u kn w Cou t t s much

h dd d Only tell me wh ere to go and where t hoot he sa d w th an unn t rally gentle m le

H took th p t l nh s h d nd began k g bout th w k ng of the t gger h h d t bef h ld a p tol h h d—a f ct *th t h d d not w h t o fess*

Oh yes l ke th t I kn w I only f rgot d he

N polog s one wh t e sa d Dólo kh to Den so (who on h s s d h d be n t tempt g co l t n) and h l we t up to th pp nted pl

The pot h n f th du l was som ghty p es from th d wh the l gh h d

farther edge of th l n g Th s co d m un the p es left tracks th d ep t now between th pl ce where th y had b en

intimacy with his wife and by an anonymous letter he had received that morning which in the mean jocular way common to anonymous letters said that he saw badly through his spectacles but that his wife s connection with Dólokhov was a secret to no one but himself Pierre absolutely disbelieved both the princess hints and the letter but he feared now to look at Dólokhov who was sitting opposite him Every time he chanced to meet Dólokhov s handsome insolent eyes Pierre felt something terrible and monstrous rising in his soul and turned quickly away Involuntarily recalling his wife s past and her relations with Dólokhov Pierre saw clearly that what was said in the letter might be true or might at l
true had
untarily
fully reco ed his former position after the campaign had returned to Petersburg and come to him Availing himself of his friendly relations with Pierre as a boon companion Dólokhov had come
Pier
erre
pres
their
prais his wife s beauty to him and from that time till they came to Moscow had not left them for a day

Yes he is very handsome thought Pierre and I know him It would be particularly pleasant to him to dishonor my name and ridicule me just because I have exerted myself on his behalf befriended him and helped him I know and understand what a spice that would add to the pleasure of deceiving me if it really were true Yes if it were true but I do not believe it I l
it I
face
when ying the policeman to the bear and dropping them into the water or when he challenged a man to a duel without any reason or shot a post boy s horse with a pistol That expression was often on Dólokhov s face when looking at him Yes he s a bully thought Pierre to kill a man means nothing to him It must seem to him that everyone is afraid of him and that must please him He must think that I too am afraid of him—and in fact I am afraid of him he thought and again he felt something terrible and monstrous rising in his soul Dólokhov Denísov and Rostóv were now sitting opposite Pierre and seemed very gay Rostóv was talking merrily to his two friends one of whom was a dashing hussar and the other a notorious duelist and rake and every now and then he glanced ironically at Pierre whose preoccupied absent minded and massive figure was a very noticeable one at the dinner Rostóv looked inimically at Pierre first because Pierre appeared to his hussar eyes as a rich civilian the husband of a beauty and in a word—an old woman and secondly because Pierre in his preoccupation and absent mindedness had not recognized Rostóv and had not responded to his greeting When the Emperor s health was drunk Pierre lost in thought did not rise or lift his glass

What are you about? shouted Rostóv looking at him in an ecstacy of exasperation Don t you hear it s His Majesty the Emperor s health?

Pierre sighed rose submissively emptied his glass and waiting till all were seated again, turned with his kindly smile to Rostóv

Why I didn t recognize you! he said But Rostóv was otherwise engaged he was shouting Hurrah!

Why don t you renew the acquaintance? said Dólokhov to Rostóv

Confound him he s a fool! said Rostóv

One should make up to the husbands of pretty women said Denísov

Pierre did not catch what they were saying but knew they were talking about him He reddened and turned away

Well now to the health of handsome women! said Dólokhov and with a serious expression h
his

terkin—and their lovers! he added

Pierre with downcast eyes drank out of his glass without looking at Dólokhov or answering him The footman who was distributin leaflets with Kutuzov s cantata laid one before Pierre as one of the principal guests He was just going to take it when Dólokhov leaning across snatched it from his hand and began reading it Pierre looked at Dólokhov and his eyes dropped the something terrible and monstrous that had tormented him all dinnertime rose and took possession of him He leaned his whole massive body across the table

How dare you take it? he shouted

Hearing that cry and seeing to whom it was add
his

pe eir frightened voices

Dólokhov looked at Pierre with clear mirth-

"Wh ?' asked Rostóv
My m ther! My m ther my gel my
ad ed l m tn r d Dólokl v pressed
Rostó h d d burst t t r
d h ome l ttle qu et r he ex
l
er ked
l
broth rs.

CHAPTER VI

th bar ho lders d l gu d p ss
look he f d th n mmedi ely he w
bes d her Dól kh ha dsome sol t
hard, d mock g f e as he had t t th
b q d th th sam f p le q
d fferi had been wh n he e l d
d k th w

Wh ha happe ed h ked hims lf I
ha k lled her *lover* es killed my w f l r
Yes, tha wa t And why? H w d d I m t
do t. – Because y u marr ed her nswe ed
er e.

B hat was I to blam h asked. In
marry g her w thout l her n d c
y rself d l er And he dly ecalled th t
mom fter pper Pri Vas l wh n
h pok those w ds h had f und so difficult
to er I l y u. I all mes fr m that
I then I f lt t, h thought. I f l then
tha as no so that I had o right to do t.
A d so urn ou

H remembered his ho eymoon d blushed
th ecollection. Particularly id, humil
t ng, nd shameful was th ecoll ctio f
how on day soon fter his marriage he came
ut of the bedroom into h s study a l ttle be
f e noon n h s s lk d essing gown and found
d the e who bow ng respect

p ess

But how often I h e felt proud of her
p oud of her m j st c be uty nd social tact
th u ht he b en p oud of my house n
wl h he re ei ed all Petersburg pr ud of
h pp achab l ty nd beauty So th s s
th t I d d

t
t bl me fo not u u
h t n t nt composur a d

poken th t terr ble w u o
come clear

An t le used to come to borr w money
f m h d used t k ss her naked h ulders
Sh d d n t g e h m the m ney but let her
lf be k ssed. Her f ther in jest tried to rouse
l er jeal u y nd h r pl d w th calm mile
hat sh w n t so st p d to be jealous Let
sed to say of me
t ms
ya d
ch l
d en nd th t he was not g to e ny
hildr n by *me*

Then he ecalled the co rse ess and bl nt
ness f her th ughts d the vulgarity of th
exp ess that wer natural to her tl o h
sh had been br ght p in the most isto
cr ti circles

I knew h wa d pra ed w ma I I
pe ted b t dared n t dm t to mys lf And
now tl er Dól kh tti g n th s w w th
f ed m l d perh ps dy g wh l meet
g my em rs w th some f ced bra d
P err wa n of those peopl who n p te
of n ppearanc of what is called weak char
cter do n t se k co fidant n their tr ubles
H d est d his uffer gs al e.

It is all all her fault, h sa d to himself
y clea f this.

standing and Nesvítski s and Dolokhov s sabers which were stuck into the ground ten paces apart to mark the barrier It was thawing and misty at forty paces distance nothing could be seen For three minutes all had been ready but they still delayed and all were silent

CHAPTER V

WELL BEGIN! said Dolokhov

All right said Pierre still smiling in the same way A feeling of dread was in the air It was evident that the affair so lightly begun could no longer be averted but was taking its course independently of men s will

Denísov first went to the barrier and announced As the adve sawies have wefused a weconciliation please pwoceed Take your pistols and at the word *thwee* begin to advance

O ne! T wo! Thwee! he shouted angrily and stepped aside

The combatants advanced along the trodden tracks nearer and nearer to one another beginning to see one another through the mist They had the right to fire when they liked as they approached the barrier Dólokhov walked slowly without raising his pistol looking in

So I can fire when I like! said Pierre and at the word three he went quickly forward — –

ly back because he wished to support his right hand with it and knew he must not do so Having advanced six paces and strayed off the track into the snow Pierre looked down at his feet then quickly glanced at Dolokhov and bending his finger as he had been shown fired Not at all expecting so loud a report Pierre shuddered at the sound and then smiling at his own sensations stood still The smoke rendered denser by the mist prevented him from seeing anything for an instant but there was no second report as he had expected He only heard D lokhov s hurried steps and his figure came in view through the smoke He was pressing one hand to his left side while the other clutched – – Rostov

I s

teeth no it s not over And after stumbling a few staggering steps right up to the saber he sank on the snow beside it His left hand was bloody he wiped it on his coat and supported himself with it His frowning face was pall d and quivered

Plea began Dólokhov but could not at first pronounce the word

Please he uttered with an effort.

Pierre hardly restraining his sobs began running toward Dólokhov and was about to cross the space between the barriers when Dólokhov cried

To your barrier! and Pierre graspin what was meant stopped by his saber Only ten paces divided them Dolokhov lowered his head to the snow greedily bit at it again raised his head adjusted himself drew in his legs and sat up seeking a firm center of gravity He sucked and swallowed the cold snow his lips quivered, but his eyes still smiling glittered with effort and exasperation as he mustered his remainin strength He raised his pistol and aimed

Sideways! Cover yourself with your pistol! ejaculated Nesvítski

Cover yourself! even Denísov cried to his adversary

Pierre with a gentle smile of pity and remorse his arms and legs helplessly spread out, stood with his broad chest directly facing Dólokhov and looked sorrowfully at him Denísov Rost v and Nesvítski closed their eyes At the same instant they heard a report and D lokhov s angry cry

Missed! shouted Dólokhov and he lay helplessly face downwards on the snow

Pierre clutched his temples and turnin round went into the forest trampling through the deep snow and muttering incoherent words

Folly Folly! Death lies he re

re

the

wounded Dolokhov

The latter lay silent in the sleigh with closed eyes and did not answer a word to the questions addressed to him But on entering Moscow he suddenly came to and lifting his head with an effort took Rost v who was sitting beside him by the hand Rostóv was struck by the totally altered and unexpectedly rapturous and tender expression on D lokhov s face

Well? How do you feel? he asked

B d! But it s not that my friend— said Dólokhov with a gasping voice Where are we? In Moscow I know I don t matter but I have killed her killed She won t get over it! She won t survive

not understand. d lay d wn aga n. H was ... phys cally t that mom nt, there was ... ight his chest and h could n t breathe. He knew t. t he must d someth g t put n end to this sufferin but what h wanted to do was too terrible.

"W had better eparate he muttered n a broken ce.

"Separate. Very well but onl f you give me f rtu e, said H lè e. "Separate That s thin t fri hten m w th!

Pierre leaped p from th sofa and rushed st... t ward her

I'll kill you he shou ed. d seizing the marbl p f tabl with trength he had never before felt, h made tep toward her brandishi the sl b.

Hel n f ce became terrible, she shrieked nd spran de. His f thers n ture sh wed itself Pierre H fel the fascination nd de li t f frenzy H fl n d wn the slab broke it, and swoopin down on her w th utstretched hands shou ed. Get out n uch errible vo that th whol house heard with ho ror God kn ws what h would ha don t tha moment had H lène not fled from the room.

A week la er P erre ga his wife full power t co trol ll his estates n Grea Russia, which formed th larger part f his property and l ft for Petersburg al e.

CHAPTER VII

Two m nths had lapsed since the news of the ba tl f Austerlitz d th loss f Prince Andrew had reached Bald Hills, and n p e of t let ers sen through he embassy and all searches mad his bod had not been found or was h n th list f prisoners. What was ors f all f his rel tions was th fact tha there was till possibility f his having been p cked p th ba tl fi ld b th peo p f th place d tha h mi ht now be ly ... recoveri dying, lo mo stran ... nd bl to se d ew of himself. Th gazet es from wh ch th old prince first heard f h d fea Aus erl tz tated usual ery b... d ... f er brillia t en... men th Russians had had retreat d had ma th ir withdrawal perfect order The ... underst...d from this official report tha ur arm had been d fea ed. A week f er the gazet report f th battl of Austerl tz came l er from K uzo nformin th pri f the la tha had befallen his son.

... ... Kutúzo f ll bef e my ... ther nd h f u ... myself nd of the whol rmy t s t ll uncer ta n whether he is li e o n t. I comfort my elf nd you w th th hope that our son s al e f therwise he would ha e been men t o ed mon the officers f und on the field of battle list of whom has been ent me under fla of truce.

After recei ng this news l te in the even n when he was al ne n his tud the old prince ... but

...

unn tural vo c throw... ... ...

(The wheel co tinued to revol e by its own mpetus, and Pri cess Mary l n emembered the dyin creak f that wheel, wh ch merged in her memory w th what foll wed.)

Sh pproached him, saw his f ce nd some thi ga wa w th n her Her eyes grew dim. By the expression of her father face not sad, not crushed but angry nd wo kin unnatural l she saw that hangin o er her nd bout to crush her wa som terribl misfortu e the worst in lif o e sh had not yet experienced, irreparable d compreh n bl —the death f o she lo ed.

F ther A drew —sa d the u graceful wkward princess with uch n ndescribable charm of sorrow d self f rgetfulnes that her father could n t bear her look but turned wa w th sob.

Bad news He n t amon the priso ers n amo g th k lled Ku uzo writes and h screamed p ercingly as if h wished to dri th princess way by that scream Killed

The princess did not fall down faint. She ... ...

...

this world—o erflowed th great grief w thin her Sh f rgo ll fear of her f ther wen up t him, took his ha d, and draw ng him down put her arm round h thin scraggy neck.

F ther sh said, do n t turn way from me, let us weep together

but what of that? Why did I bind myself to her? Why did I say *Je vous aime* to her which was a lie and worse than a lie? I am guilty and must endure what? A slur on my name? A misfortune for life? Oh that s nonsense he thought The slur on my name and honor—that s all apart from myself

Louis XVI was executed because they said he was dishonorable and a criminal came in to Pierre s head and from their point of view they were right as were those too who canonized him and died a martyr s death for his sake Then Robespierre was beheaded for being a despot Who is right and who is wrong? No one! But if you are alive—live tomorrow you ll die as I might have died an hour ago And is it worth tormenting oneself when one has only a moment of life in comparison with eternity?

But at the moment when he imagined himself calmed by such reflections *she* suddenly came into his mind as she was at the moments when he had most strongly expressed his insincere love for her and he felt the blood rush to his heart and had again to get up and move about and break and tear whatever came to his hand Why did I tell her that *Je vous aime?* he kept repeating to himself And when he had said it for the tenth time Molière s words *Mais que diable allait il faire dans cette galere?* occurred to him and he began to laugh at himself

informing her of his intention to part from her forever

Next morning when the valet came into the room with his coffee Pierre was lying asleep on the ottoman with an open book in his hand

He woke up and looked round for a while with a startled expression unable to realize where he was

The countess told me to inquire whether your excellency was at home said the valet

But before Pierre could decide what answer he would send the countess herself in a white satin dressing gown embroidered with silver and with simply dressed hair (two immense plaits twice round her lovely head like a coronet) entered the room calm and majestic except that there was a wrathful wrinkle on her rather prominent marble brow With her imperturbable calm she did not begin to speak in front of the valet She knew of the duel and had come to speak about it She waited till the valet had set down the coffee things and left the room Pierre looked at her timidly over his spectacles and like a hare surrounded by hounds who lays back her ears and continues to crouch motionless before her enemies he tried to continue reading But feeling this to be senseless and impossible he again glanced timidly at her She did not sit down but looked at him with a contemptuous smile waiting for the valet to go

Well what s this now? What have you been up to now I should like to know? she asked sternly

I? What have I ? stammered Pierre

So it seems you re a hero eh? Come now what was this duel about? What is it meant to prove? What? I ask you

Pierre turned over heavily on the ottoman and opened his mouth but could not reply

If you won t answer I ll tell you Hélène went on You believe everything you re told. You were told Hélène laughed that *Dolokhov was my lover* she said in French with her coarse plainness of speech uttering the word *amant* as casually as any other word and you believed it! Well what have you proved? What does this duel prove? That you re a fool *que vous êtes un sot* but everybody knew that. What will be the result? That I shall be the laughingstock of all Moscow that everyone will say that you drunk and not knowing what you were about challenged a man you are jealous of without cause Hélène raised her voice and became more and more excited A man who s a better man than you in every way

Hm Hm ! growled Pierre frowning without looking at her and not moving a muscle

And how could you believe he was my lover? Why? Because I like his company? If you were cleverer and more agreeable I should prefer yours

Don t speak to me I beg you muttered Pierre hoarsely

Why shouldn t I speak? I can speak as I like and I tell you plainly that there are not many wives with husbands such as you who would not have taken lovers (*des amants*) but I have not done so said she

Pierre wished to say something looked at her with eyes whose strange expression she did

---

I love you

What the dickens did he get himself to that mess for? or more literally What the devil was he going to do in that galley? —Tr

wif from the neighboring town who had been at Bald Hills for the last fortnight.)

"Oh yes," assented Princess Mary, "perhaps that's it. I'll go. Courage, my angel." She kissed Lise and was about to leave the room.

"Oh, no, no!" And besides the pallor and the physical suffering on the little princess' face, an expression of childish fear of inevitable pain showed itself.

"No, it's only indigestion! ... Say it's only indigestion, say so, Mary! Say ..." And the little princess began to cry capriciously like a suffering child and to wring her little hands even with some affectation. Princess Mary ran out of the room to fetch Mary Bogdánovna.

"*Mon Dieu! Mon Dieu!* Oh!" she heard as she left the room.

The midwife was already on her way to meet her, rubbing her small, plump white hands with an air of calm importance.

"Mary Bogdánovna, I think it's beginning!" said Princess Mary looking at the midwife with wide-open eyes of alarm.

"Well, the Lord be thanked, Princess," said Mary Bogdánovna, not hastening her steps. "You young ladies should not know anything about it."

"But how is it the doctor from Moscow is not here yet?" said the princess. (In accordance with Lise's and Prince Andrew's wishes they had sent in good time to Moscow for a doctor and were expecting him at any moment.)

"No matter, Princess, don't be alarmed," said Mary Bogdánovna. "We'll manage very well without a doctor."

Five minutes later Princess Mary from her room heard something heavy being carried by. She looked out. The menservants were carrying the large leather sofa from Prince Andrew's study to the bedroom. On their faces was a quiet and solemn look.

Princess Mary sat alone in her room listening to the sounds in the house, now and then opening her door when someone passed and watching what was going on in the passage. Some women passed with quiet steps in and out of the bedroom, glanced at the princess and turned away. She did not venture to ask any questions, and shut the door again, now sitting down in her easy chair, now taking her prayer book, now kneeling before the icon stand. To her surprise and distress she found that her prayers did not calm her excitement. Suddenly her door opened softly and her old nurse, Praskóvya Sávishna, who hardly ever came to that room as the old prince had forbidden it, appeared on the threshold with a shawl round her head.

"I've come to sit with you a bit, Másha," said the nurse, "and here I've brought the prince's wedding candles to light before his saint, my angel," she said with a sigh.

"Oh, nurse, I'm so glad!"

"God is merciful, birdie."

The nurse lit the gilt candles before the icons and sat down by the door with her knitting. Princess Mary took a book and began to read. Only when footsteps or voices were heard did they look at one another, the princess anxious and inquiring, the nurse encouraging. Everyone in the house was dominated by the same feeling that Princess Mary experienced as she sat in her room. But owing to the superstition that the fewer the people who know of it the less a woman in travail suffers, everyone tried to pretend not to know; no one spoke of it, but apart from the ordinary staid and respectful good manners habitual in the prince's household, a common anxiety, a softening of the heart, and a consciousness that something great and mysterious was being accomplished at that moment made itself felt.

There was no laughter in the maids' large hall. In the menservants' hall all sat waiting, silently and alert. In the outlying serfs' quarters torches and candles were burning and no one slept. The old prince, stepping on his heels, paced up and down his study and sent Tikhon to ask Mary Bogdánovna what news.—"Say only that the prince told me to ask, and come and tell me her answer."

"Inform the prince that labor has begun," said Mary Bogdánovna, giving the messenger a significant look.

Tikhon went and told the prince.

"Very good!" said the prince closing the door behind him, and Tikhon did not hear the slightest sound from the study after that.

After a while he re-entered it as if to snuff the candles, and, seeing the prince was lying on the sofa, looked at him, noticed his perturbed face, shook his head, and going up to him silently kissed him on the shoulder and left the room without snuffing the candles or saying why he had entered. The most solemn mystery in the world continued its course. Evening passed, night came, and the feeling of suspense and softening of heart in the presence of the unfathomable did not lessen but increased. No one slept.

Scoundrels! Blackguards shrieked the old man turning his face away from her Destroying the army destroying the men! And why? Go go and tell Lise

The princess sank helplessly into an armchair beside her father and wept She saw her brother now as he had been at the moment when he took leave of her and of Lise his look tender yet proud She saw him tender and amused as he was when he put on the little icon Did he believe? Had he repented of his unbelief? Was he now there? There in the realms of eternal peace and blessedness? she thought

Father tell me how it happened she asked through her tears

Go! Go! Killed in battle where the best of Russian men and Russia s glory were led to destruction Go Princess Mary Go and tell Lise I will follow

When Princess Mary returned from her father the little princess sat working and looked up with that curious expression of inner happy calm peculiar to pregnant women It was evident that her eyes did not see Princess Mary but were looking within into herself at something joyful and mysterious taking place within her

Mary she said moving away from the embroidery frame and lying back give me your hand She took her sister in law s hand and held it below her waist

Her eyes were smiling expectantly her downy lip rose and remained lifted in childlike happiness

Princess Mary knelt down before her and hid her face in the folds of her sister in law s dress

There there! Do you feel it? I feel so strange And do you know Mary I am going to love him very much said Lise looking with bright and happy eyes at her sister in law

Princess Mary could not lift her head she was weeping

What is the matter Mary?

Nothing only I feel sad sad about Andrew she said wiping away her tears on her sister in law s knee

Several times in the course of the morning Princess Mary began trying to prepare her sister in law and every time began to cry Unobservant as was the little princess these tears the cause of which she did not understand agitated her She said nothing but looked about uneasily as if in search of something Before dinner the old prince of whom she was always afraid came into her room with a peculiarly restless and malign expression and went out again without saying a word She looked at Princess Mary then sat thinking for a while with that expression of attention to something within her that is only seen in pregnant women and suddenly began to cry

Has anything come from Andrew? she asked

No you know it s too soon for news But my father is anxious and I feel afraid

So there s nothing?

Nothing answered Princess Mary looking firmly with her radiant eyes at her sister in law

She had determined not to tell her and persuaded her father to hide the terrible news from her till after her confinement which was expected within a few days Princess Mary and the old prince each bore and hid their grief in their own way The old prince would not cherish any hope he made up his mind that Prince Andrew had been killed and though he sent an official to Austria to seek for traces of his son he ordered a monument from Moscow which he intended to erect in his own garden to his memory and he told everybody that his son had been killed He tried not to change his former way of life but his strength failed him He walked less ate less slept less and became weaker every day Princess Mary hoped She prayed for her brother as living and was always awaiting news of his return

CHAPTER VIII

DEAREST said the little princess after breakfast on the morning of the nineteenth of March and her downy little lip rose from old habit but as sorrow was manifest in every smile the sound of every word and even every footstep in that house since the terrible news had come so now the smile of the little princess—influenced by the general mood though without knowing its cause—was such as to remind one

with me

What is the matter with you my darling? You look pale Oh you are very pale! said Princess Mary in alarm running with her soft ponderous steps up to her sister in law

Your excellency should not Mary Bogdánovna be sent for? said one of the maids who was present (Mary Bogdánovna was a midwife

Fr l t ck b eakf st

It was one of those March nights when winter seems to wish to resume its sway and scatters its last snows and storms with desperate fury A relay of horses had been sent up the highroad to meet the German doctor from Moscow who was expected every moment and men on horseback with lanterns were sent to the crossroads to guide him over the country road with its hollows and snow covered pools of water

Princess Mary had long since put aside her book she sat silent her luminous eyes fixed on her nurse s wrinkled face (every line of which she knew so well) on the lock of gray hair that escaped from under the kerchief and the loose skin that hung under her chin

Nurse Sávishna knitting in hand was telling in low tones scarcely hearing or understanding her own words what she had told hundreds of times before how the late princess had given birth to Princess Mary in Kishenev with only a Moldavian peasant woman to help instead of a midwife

God is merciful doctors are never needed she said

Suddenly a gust of wind beat violently against the casement of the window from which the double frame had been removed (by order of the prince one window frame was removed in each room as soon as the larks returned)

shuddered her nurse putting down the stocking she was knitting went to the window and

the doctor

Oh my God! thank God! said Princess Mary I must go and meet him he does not know Russian

Princess Mary threw a shawl over her head and ran to meet the newcomer As she was crossing the anteroom she saw through the window a carriage with lanterns standing at the entrance She went out on the stairs On a

holding another candle Still lower beyond the turn of the staircase one could hear the footstep of someone in thick felt boots and a voice that seemed familiar to Princess Mary was saying something

Thank God! said the voice And Father

Gone to bed replied the voice of Demyán the house steward who was downstairs

Then the voice said something more Demyán replied and the steps in the felt boots approached the unseen bend of the staircase more rapidly

It s Andrew! thought Princess Mary No it can t be that would be too extraordinary and at the very moment she thought this the face and figure of Prince Andrew in a fur cloak the deep collar of which was covered with snow appeared on the landing where the footman stood with the candle Yes it was he pale

You did not get my letter? he asked and not waiting for a reply—which he would not have received for the princess was unable to speak—he turned back rapidly mounted the stairs again with the doctor who had entered the hall after him (they had met at the last

went to the little princess apartment

CHAPTER IX

The little princess lay supported by pillows, with a white cap on her head (the pains had just left her) Strands of her black hair lay round her inflamed and perspiring cheeks her charming rosy mouth with its downy lip was open and she was smiling joyfully Prince Andrew entered and paused facing her at the foot of the sofa on which she was lying Her glittering eyes filled with childlike fear and excitement rested on him without changing their expression I love you all and have done no harm to anyone why must I suffer so? Help

She looked at him inquiringly and with childlike reproach

I expected help from you and I get none none from you either! said her eyes She was not surprised at his having come she did not realize that he had come His coming had nothing to do with her sufferings or with their re

hel The p rs began ga n nd Mary Bogdá no na ad ised Prince Andrew to lea e the oom.

Th doctor e tered. Prince Andrew went o t d, meeting Prin ess Mary ga n j ined her They began talkin n whisp rs but th ir talk broke off t every m ment. They waited d l tened.

Go dear sa d Pri cess Mary

Pri ce A drew went a to hi w f d sat ait g the room next to hers A w man oom w h fri ht ed f ce

Pr ce A d ew got up we t t u uool a d

He began p ci g the room. The crea g ceased, d few m re seconds went by Th n

fa t.

"What ha they taken a baby n there fo ? tho ht Pri ce And ew th first econd. A bab ? What b by ? Why is there a b by ther ? O the baby born?"

Th dd ly he real ed the joyful gnif ica f that wail tears ch ked h m a d lea his elbow n th w ndow sill be began to cry sobb g l k child. Th door opened. Th docto w th his hirt l eves tu ked p w tho t coat, p l d w th t embl g j w came f th oom. Princ A drew turned to h m, b t the docto ga h m bewildered look d p sed by w th t w d. A w man rushed t d see g Pr A drew t pped he tat th thresh ld. H w nt to his w fe s oom. She was ly g dead, n th sam pos tio h had ee her n fi m utes be fo d, desp te th fi ed eyes nd th p ll f th cheeks the s m expres was o her harmi g ch ldl ke f ce w th its upper l p co ered w th t y bl k ha r

I l y all d ha e d e no harm to d what ha e y d t m ? — sa d her charm g p thet c, dead fa

I a corner f th oom som th g red nd u ga gru t d sq ealed Mary Bo dánovna trembl g wh t hands.

Two ho rs later Pri ce Andrew stepp

softly went to h s father's room Th e old man al eady knew everything He was stand l t the door nd s soon as t pened

l ke ti u.

Three days l ter the l ttle pr ncess was bu ed nd Pr ce Andrew went up the steps t wh re the coffin tood, to g e her the f rewell k s And there n the coffin was the same f ce tho gh w th closed eyes Ah what ha e y u d e to me? it st ll eemed to say and Prince Andrew f lt that somethi g ga e way in h s

the ther on her b east and to u oo face seem d t say Ah what ha e you done to me nd why? And t the ght the old man turned ngrily aw y

An ther fi days p ssed, nd then the you g Prince N ch las Andréev ch was b pt ed. The wet nurse upported the co erlet with her ch n wh le the priest w th goose feather n nted th boy l ttle red nd wr kled soles a d p lms.

odf her t em

Pr ce And ew sat n n ther room fa nt w th

th b by s ha r had not u k in the font but had flo ted.

CHAPTER X

Rosto hare Dólokho duel w th Be

t nd l nd old M ry I á o wh had gr wn f nd f Rostó f his fr dsh p to her

It was one of those March nights when winter seems to wish to resume its sway and scatters its last snows and storms with desperate fury A relay of horses had been sent up the highroad to meet the German doctor from Moscow who was expected every moment and men on horseback with lanterns were sent to the crossroads to guide him over the country road with its hollows and snow covered pools of water

Princess Mary had long since put aside her book she sat silent her luminous eyes fixed on her nurse s wrinkled face (every line of which she knew so well) on the lock of gray hair that escaped from under the kerchief and the loose skin that hung under her chin

Nurse Sávishna knitting in hand was telling in low tones scarcely hearing or understanding her own words what she had told hundreds of times before how the late princess had given birth to Princess Mary in Kishenev with only a Moldavian peasant woman to help instead of a midwife

God is merciful doctors are never needed she said

Suddenly a gust of wind beat violently against the casement of the window from which the double frame had been removed (by order of the prince one window frame was removed in each room as soon as the larks returned)

shuddered her nurse putting down the stocking she was knitting went to the window and leaning out tried to catch the open casement The cold wind flapped the ends of her kerchief and her loose locks of gray hair

Princess my dear there s someone driving up the avenue! she said holding the casement and not closing it With lanterns Most likely the doctor

Oh my God! thank God! said Princess Mary I must go and meet him he does not know Russian

Princess Mary threw a shawl over her head and ran to meet the newcomer As she was crossing the anteroom she saw through the window a carriage with lanterns standing at

Philip the footman stood looking scared and holding another candle Still lower beyond the turn of the staircase one could hear the footstep of someone in thick felt boots and a voice that seemed familiar to Princess Mary was saying something

Thank God! said the voice And Father?

Gone to bed replied the voice of Demyán the house steward who was downstairs

Then the voice said something more Demyán replied and the steps in the felt boots approached the unseen bend of the staircase more rapidly

It s Andrew! thought Princess Mary No it can t be that would be too extraordinary and at the very moment she thought this the face and figure of Prince Andrew in a fur cloak the deep collar of which was covered with snow appeared on the landing where the footman stood with the candle Yes it was he pale thin with a changed and strangely softened but agitated expression on his face He came up the stairs and embraced his sister

You did not get my letter? he asked and not waiting for a reply—which he would not have received for the princess was unable to speak—he turned back rapidly mounted the stairs again with the doctor who had entered the hall after him (they had met at the last

went to the little princess apartment

CHAPTER IX

The little princess lay supported by pillows with a white cap on her head (the pains had just left her) Strands of her black hair lay round her inflamed and perspiring cheeks, her charming rosy mouth with its downy lip was open and she was smiling joyfully Prince Andrew entered and paused facing her at the foot of the sofa on which she was lying Her glittering eyes filled with childlike fear and excitement rested on him without changing their expression I love you all and have done no harm to anyone why must I suffer so? Help me! her look seemed to say She saw her husband but did not realize the significance of his appearance before her now Prince Andrew head

She looked at him inquiringly and with childlike reproach

I expected help from you and I get none none from you either! said her eyes She was not

h l. The p gs began ga n and M ry Bogdá novna dvised Pri ce Andrew to le e the room.

The doct entered. Pr ce Andrew went t a d, meet ng Pri cess M ry jo ned her. They began talk n n whi pers, but th r talk broke ff t every moment. They wa ted a d l tened.

Go dea sa d Pri cess M ry

Pri ce Andrew went a n t h s w fe and sat wait in th room next t hers. A woman came from the bedroom w th a frightened f ce and becam co fused when he saw Pri ce Andrew. He co ed h l c with h hands a d rema ed so f r some m utes. P teous, helpless, a imal moans came thro h the doo Pri A drew got up we t t the doo a d Someo e was h ld g t shut.

g n s, e he n

fa t.

"What ha they taken b by n there f ?" tho h Pri A drew n the first seco d. A baby Wha b by ? Why is there baby there O the baby born

Th uddenly h realized th joyful m f ica f tha wail tears choked h m d lea g his lbow th w d w ll be began cry sobb l ke ch ld. The doo ope ed. Th doct w th his hirt sleeves tu ked p witho coat, pal nd w th trembl g j w cam f th room. Princ A drew rned to h m b h doct ga h m a bewildered look d p ssed by w th t word. A woman rushed d see ng Pri Andrew t pped, hes ta th thresh ld. H went o his wif room. Sh was l g dead, n the sam pos n h had een her n fi m utes be f re d desp t the fixed eyes d the p ll r f th cheeks, th sam express was her charmi childlik f with ts upper l p co ered w th t y bla k hair

I l all d ha d n harm to yo d what ha you don me?" sa d her ch rmi p th t c, dead f e

I corner f th room som th g red d u ga grun d squealed M ry Bogdan trembl g whi ha ds.

Two h urs l t Pri A drew t pp n softl went to l s father room. The ol l man al eady knew e eryth He w s stand in close to the doo d a soon as t pened h rou l ol l arm losed l ke se rou l l son eck d w thout word he began to b l ke a ch ld.

Three da l ter th l ttle princess wa l ur ed and Pr n e Andrew went up the steps t where th coff tood, to g e her the f ew ll k s. And there n the coff n wa the me face tho h w th losed eyes. Ah what ha e you done t m ? t st ll eemed to say and Pr e Andrew felt tl t someth n ga w r i h soul and that he was gu lty of n he c uld ne ther remedy r f rget. He could not weep. The old man too cam p d k ssed the w n l ttle ha d th t l y qu etly crossed on on th other on her b ea t and to h m, too, her f e seemed t say Ah what have u d e t *me and wh And at the ght the old man* turned grily way

Another fi e days passed, and then the you Pri ce N hol s Andrée ch was bapt ed. The w t nurse s pported the co erlet w tl her ch wh le the priest w th goose feather no ted the boy l ttle ed d wr kled soles d p lms.

H gra df ther who was h godf ther trem bl g nd fra d f dropp h m carr ed tl e s f t round the battered t n f t nd ha ded h m o er t the godmother Pri ces M ry Pri ce A drew sat nother room, f nt w th fea lest the baby hould be drowned the f t, and wa ted th term n tion of the cere m n He looked up joyf ll at the baby wl n the nurse bro ht t to h m nd nodded pprov al wh n h t ld h m that the wa w th the baby ha had not sunk in the font but had floated.

CHAPTER X

the est f the f m ly b t wa kept it u n Moscow by his ew dut es. Dól kho eco red d Ros ó became ery friendly w th h m *duri his con alescen e* Dól kh l ll t his m ther who lo ed l m pass nat ly d tenderl d ld M ry I a n who had grown f nd f Rostó f his friend h p to her

It was one of those March nights when winter seems to wish to resume its sway and scatters its last snows and storms with desperate fury A relay of horses had been sent up the highroad to meet the German doctor from Moscow who was expected every moment and men on horseback with lanterns were sent to the crossroads to guide him over the country road with its hollows and snow covered pools of water

Princess Mary had long since put aside her book she sat silent her luminous eyes fixed on her nurse s wrinkled face (every line of which she knew so well) on the lock of gray hair that escaped from under the kerchief and the loose skin that hung under her chin

Nurse Sávishna knitting in hand was telling in low tones scarcely hearing or understanding her own words what she had told hundreds of times before how the late princess had given birth to Princess Mary in Kishenev with only a Moldavian peasant woman to help instead of a midwife

God is merciful doctors are never needed she said

Suddenly a gust of wind beat violently against the casement of the window from which the double frame had been removed (by order of the prince one window frame was removed in each room as soon as the larks returned) and forcing open a loosely closed latch set the damask curtain flapping and blew out the candle with its chill snowy draft Princess Mary shuddered her nurse putting down the stocking she was knitting went to the window and

Princess my dear there s someone driving up the avenue! she said holding the casement and not closing it With lanterns Most likely the doctor

Oh my God! thank God! said Princess Mary I must go and meet him he does not know Russian

Princess Mary threw a shawl over her head and ran to meet the newcomer As she was crossing the anteroom she saw through the

Philip the footman stood looking s ared and holding another candle Still lower beyond the turn of the staircase one could hear the footstep of someone in thick felt boots and a voice that seemed familiar to Princess Mary was saying something

Thank God! said the voice And Father

Gone to bed replied the voice of Demyán the house steward who was downstairs

Then the voice said something more Demyán replied and the steps in the felt boots approached the unseen bend of the staircase more rapidly

It s Andrew! thought Princess Mary No it can t be that would be too extraordinary and at the very moment she thou ht this the face and figure of Prince Andrew in a fur cloak the deep collar of which was covered with snow appeared on the landing where the footman stood with the candle Yes it was he pale thin with a changed and strangely softened but agitated expression on his face He came up the stairs and embraced his sister

You did not get my letter? he asked and not waiting for a reply—which he would not have received for the princess was unable to speak—he turned back rapidly mounted the stairs again with the doctor who had entered the hall after him (they had met at the last post station) and again embraced his sister

What a strange fate Másha darling! And having taken off his cloak and felt boots he went to the little princess apartment

CHAPTER IX

THE LITTLE PRINCESS lay supported by pillows with a white cap on her head (the pains had just left her) Strands of her black hair lay round her inflamed and perspiring cheeks her charming rosy mouth with its downy lip was

ment rested on him without changing their expression I love you all and have done no harm to anyone why must I suffer so? Help me! her look seemed to say She saw her husband but did not realize the significance of his appearance before her now Prince Andrew

She looked at him inquiringly and with childlike reproach

I expected help from you and I get none none from you either! said her eyes She was not surprised at his having come she did not realize that he had come His coming had nothing to do with her sufferings or with their re

h f The pa ns be an again an hour The e norn dused Prince Andrew to leave the room.

The doct r e ed. Prince Andrew went t d meeting Princess Mary ... her Th y be talking in whispers, but ... talk broke ff at every moment. They waited and l te ed.

"Go dea sa d Princess Mary.

Pri ce A drew went ... his wife ... sat ... n the room next to her. A woman came from the bedroom ... d became co fused when she saw ... drew. He co red his face with his hands and ema ed so for some minutes. Piteous, ... less, an mal moans came through the door. Pri e A drew got up, went to the door and ... ried t pen t Someo e was holding it ... Y ca t come You ca ... said ... fied ... from w th n.

H bega p ci g the room. The screaming ceased, d a few m re seconds went by ... suddenly terrible shriek—it could not be ... th co ld not scream l k that—came from the bedroom. Pri A drew ra to the ... scream ceased d h heard the wa ... fa t.

"What ha e they take ... b by ... there for?" tho ht Pri ce A drew the first second. A baby Wh t baby ? Why is there ... baby th e? O is the baby born?

Th sud enl h eal ed the joy ... ca e f that wa l tears choked him ... lea g h lbows the ... d w uld be been to cry sobbin l k ... h ld Th door opened. Th doc with his sh rt slee es tucked ... tho t oat, pal d th a trembling jaw came f th room. P A drew turned to h m b t the doct ga e h m ... look d p ssed by w th t ... d. A woman rushed t d seei g Pr ce A drew stopped, hes t g the th esh ld He went ... f oom. Sh wa ly g dead, th same pos ti h had seen her fi e m tes be fore d desp e the fi ed eyes d he p ... f the ch ks, th same exp es was n her ...

) d hat h yo do to m ? — sa d her charm g p thet c, dead f ... corn f th oom somet! g ... u ga gru t d squeaked M y l g dinovna trembl g wh ...

Two hours later P ... A drew ... went ... f ther room The ... ea knew e eryt ... He w ... t ... the door and a soon a it pe ed ... mouth ... m ... kissed l ke a ... r d ... neck a d w thout a word l e began t ... like a ch...

Three days la er the l ttle pr ... was ... ed ... Prince A drew went up the steps t wh re ... in state ... to g ... her th f ... e ... Ah what ha e you ... t ... I seemed t sa ... Prince ... felt t ... at ... ne wa g ... he co l ... fo ... He ould not ... kissed the ... ose ...

... t ... Andrew ... h was ha ... e ...

... chose ... r ...

C ... X

Rostov ... D ... [redacted]
... was ... by the [redacted]
... of being [redacted]
ra k as he expected he was [redacted]
t t to the governor general of [redacted]
esult he co ld not go t [redacted]
the ... est f the f m ly but was [redacted]
M sc w by ... new d tes. [redacted]
ed an l Rost ... became very f md r gl ... nvalescen e ... t ... m th ... wl ... d h m ... t ... ly an l ... M ry I ... vna who ... for h s fri d ...

Fédya often talked to him about her son

Yes Count she would say he is too no ble and pure souled for our present depraved world No one now loves virtue it seems like a reproach to everyone Now tell me Count was it right was it honorable of Bezukhov? And Fedya with his noble spirit loved him and even now never says a word against him Those pranks in Petersburg when they played some tricks on a policeman didn t they do it together? And there! Bezukhov got off scot free while Fédya had to bear the whole bur den on his shoulders Fancy what he had to go through! It s true he has been reinstated but how could they fail to do that? I think there were not many such gallant sons of the father land out there as he And now—this duel! Have these people no feeling or honor? Know ing him to be an only son to challenge him and shoot so straight! It s well God had mercy on us And what was it for? Who doesn t have intrigues nowadays? Why if he was so jealous as I see things he should have shown it sooner but he lets it go on for months And then to call him out reckoning on Fedya not fighting because he owed him money! What baseness! What meanness! I know you understand I d ya my dear count that believe me is why I am so fond of you Few people do understand him He is such a lofty heavenly soul!

D lokhov himself dur ng his convalescence spoke to Rostóv in a way no one would have expected of him

I know people consider me a bad man! he said Let them! I don t care a straw about any

an adored a priceless mother and two or three friends—you among them—and as for the rest I only care about them in so far as they are harmful or useful And most of them are harm ful especially the women Yes dear boy he continued I have met loving noble high minded men but I have not yet met any wom en—countesses or cooks—who were not venal I have not yet met that divine purity and devo tion I look for in women If I found such a one

hope to meet such a divine creature who will regenerate purify and elevate me But you don t understand it

Oh yes I quite understand answered Ros tóv who was under hi ew Iriend s influence

In the autumn the Rostóvs returned to Mos cow Early in the winter Denisov also came back and stayed with them The first half of the winter of 1806 which Nicholas Rost v spent in Moscow was one of the happiest mer riest times for him and the whole family Nich olas brought many young men to his parents house V ra was a handsome girl of twenty

girlishly enchanting

At that time in the Rostóvs house there pre vailed an amorous atmosphere characteristic

him and hearing the fitful bursts of son and music and the inconsequent but friendly prat tle of young girls ready for anything and full of hope—experienced the same feeling shar ing with the young folk of the Rostovs house hold a readiness to fall in love and an expecta tion of happiness

Among the young men introduced by Rostó one of the first was D lokhov whom everyone in the house liked except Natásha She alm st quarreled with her brother about him She in sisted that he was a bad man and that in the duel with Bezukhov Pierre was ri ht and D lokhov wrong and further that he was d sa greeable and unnatural

There s nothing for me to understand she cried out with resolute self will he is wicked and heartless There now I like your Denisov though he is a rake and all that still I like him so you see I do understand I don t know how to put it with this one everything is calcu lated and I don t like that But Denisov

Oh Denisov is qu te different replied N cholas implying that even Denisov was noth ing compared to Dólokhov— you must under stand what a soul there is in Dólokhov you should see him with his mother What a heart!

Well I don t know bout that but I am

I m certain of it you ll see

Natásha s prediction proved true Dólokhov who did not usually care for the society of la dies began to come often to the house and the quest on f r whose sake he came (though no one spoke of it) was soon settled He came be

cause of Só y A d Sö ya th gl she w uld
nes rha ed ed t says o k wit an l blu l ed
sca let e ery t me D ll kh v appe ed.
i ıl Rostó s n er

h s looks

m

rel t w th So ya b tl d d t pl t t
h mself hat these ew l t swere Tl ey e
l vs l e w th someo e he tl ght
f Só y d N tá h B t l wa t h
te se th Só y a d D l kh bef d
less freq tly t h me

l th t m f 806 ev rybody l d ga n
begu talk g f the w w th N pcleo w th
e greater w rmth th the y r bef e Or
d rs ere g e t ra se recru ts t n me in
every th us d f th regul arm y r l be-
des th m ne ery tl sa d f tle
m l tia E erywher Bo p te w s tl
t ed d t Mosc w tl g b t tle m g
ar t lk d f F the Rost f m ly tle
hol terest f thes p ep rat n l w
l y th f t that N h l w ld n t h f

CHAPTER XI

O THE TH RD fter Ch tma N cl l
d ed t h m th g h h d ly d f
l c It w gra d f rew ll d n l e d
D iso w l g t j th eg ne t
af er Ep pl y Abo t twe ty p ple w e
p es t l d Dól kh d D so

N had l e been so mu l the d
h d th m tmosph m d ts ll
so gly f lt th R ó l us t tl
h l d y t m S u th m m t f h pp
l d bel d l Tl t tl nly eal ty
in the ld ll el f lly It h tl
e ested he d th p t f
th pl

N cholas l avi g as t su l exhau ted two
pa rs f h rses w tl t t ng all the pl ces
l e m t t go t an l wl ere he had been in
m i t bef re d i ner As
en
lso
me

f tl ose p esent S nya D l kl a d t ol l
c u tes were especi lly d sturbed and to a
les e degr e N tá ha N cl l derstood th t
som tl g mu t ha e h ppened betwee S
ya t d D l kh bef re f er n l w tl the
k dly sen t enes n t ral to l m wa ry
g ntl nd wary w tl tl em both t d n ter On
th t same eve g tl ere was t be one of tl e
f ll tl t lovel (tl e d c mu ter) ga e l r
l s p p l l gs tl e l l d ys.
onel ? Please

m d l sa d De iso who at tl e Rost na l

l

he l d ked tl e q est n he n t ced that t
l o ld t ha e been j t

Perhap c l lly d gr ly req l ed D
l kl gl c g t S ya a d w wl g l
ga e N lol j t u h look l el d g v n
l err at the Cl l l er

There is s m tl g p tl gl t N chol

h r wh t w the n tter

A d I was look g f r you sa d N tá l
ru g out to l m I t ld y u b t y u w ld
t b l e e t sl e sa d tr umpha tl y He l
proposed t Só ya

Littl s N h l l d occup ed h m elf w th
S y l l te som tl g eemed t g e w y
w tl l m t th new D l kl was t
able d some esp ts br ll t t l f r
tl e d w les o pl ng l F m tl e po t f
w f tl e ld o t s d of soc ty it w s
t f the q est f r h r t efuse h n And

b t h f e l e l d t me t say t N tásl a began
ga n

Deniso

And fancy! she refused him quite definitely! adding after a pause she told him she loved another

Yes my Sónya could not have done otherwise! thought Nicholas

Much as Mamma pressed her she refused and I know she won t change once she has said

And Mamma pressed her! said Nicholas reproachfully

Yes said Natásha Do you know Nicholas—don t be angry—but I know you will not marry her I know heaven knows how but I know for certain that you won t marry her

Now you don t know that at all! said Nicholas But I must talk to her What a darling Sonya is! he added with a smile

Ah she is indeed a darling! I ll send her to you

And Natásha kissed her brother and ran away

A minute later Sónya came in with a frightened guilty and scared look Nicholas went up to her and kissed her hand This was the first time since his return that they had talked alone and about their love

Sophie he began timidly at first and then more and more boldly if you wish to refuse one who is not only a brilliant and advantageous match but a splendid noble fellow he is my friend

Sónya interrupted him

I have already refused she said hurriedly

If you are refusing for my sake I am afraid that I

Sónya again interrupted She gave him an imploring frightened look

Nicholas don t tell me that! she said

No but I must It may be arrogant of me but still it is best to say it If you refuse him on my account I must tell you the whole truth I love you and I think I love you more than anyone else

That is enough for me said Sonya blushing

No but I have been in love a thousand times and shall fall in love again though for no one have I such a feeling of friendship confidence and love as I have for o T I am yo ng

I mak

D lok u articulating his friend s name w th d fficulty

Don t say that to me I want nothing I love you as a brother and always shall and I want nothing more

You are an angel I am not worthy of you, but I am afraid of misleading you

And Nicholas again kissed her hand

CHAPTER XII

IOGEL S WERE the most enjoyable balls in Moscow So said the mothers as they watched their young people executing their newly learned steps and so said the youths and maidens themselves as they danced till they were ready to drop and so said the grown up young men and women who came to these balls with an air of condescension and found them most enjoyable That year two marriages had come of these balls The two pretty young Princesses G r chakóv met suitors there and were married and so further increased the fame of these dances What distinguished them from others was the absence of host or hostess and the presence of the good natured Iogel flying about like a feather and bowing according to the rules of his art as he collected the tickets from all his visitors There was the fact that only those came who wished to dance and selves

are we

scarcely

p ot s they all were or seemed to be pretty—so rapturous were their smiles and so sparkling their eyes Sometimes the best of the pupils of whom Natásha who was exceptionally graceful was first even danced the *pas de châle* but at this last ball only the *écossaise* the *anglaise* and the mazurka which was just coming into fashion were danced Iogel had taken a ballroom in Bezukhov s house and the ball as everyone said was a great success. There were many pretty girls and the Rostóv girls were among the prettiest They were both particularly happy and

t home so that the maid could hardly get her hair pla ted and she was transparently radiant w th mpulsive joy

Natásha no less proud of her first long dress and of being at a real ball was even happier They were both dressed in white muslin with p nk ribbons

Natásha fell in love the very moment she entered the ballroom Sl e a not in love w th anyone in particular but w th everyone Wl at ever person she l appened to lo k at she was in love w ul for tl at n ment

Oh l ow delightful it is she kept saying run n ng up to Sónya

N cl olas and Denisov were walking up and

down look g w th k ndly p tron ge at the dancers.

H w sweet she is—she w ll be a weal beau ty sa d De isov

"Who?

Co tess N tásha, an wered Denlso

A d how sh da ces! What gwace! he sa d ga lter a p use.

"Who re y u talk g abo t?

Abo t y s ter j culated De isov tes- t ly

Rostó m led.

"My dear co t you were o e f my best pu p ls—yo must da ce sa d L ttle Iogel com g p t N h las. Look h w m y charm ng y lad es— He turned w th the sam re- q est t De iso who was lso f rm p p l f his.

"N m dea fell w I'll be wallfl wer sa d D so Do t y wec llect what b d use I mad f your lesson

Oh no! sa d Iogel, ha ten g t reassure him. "I were ly tt t e b t you had tal t—oh yes, yo had tale t!

The ba d stru k up the ewly trod ed maru ka. N cholas co ld n t refuse Iogel d asked Só ya t da ce. De iso sat down by the her d beat

N l ol s saw that De isov was t fus n tho gl he m led d l l tedly He ran up to them.

Please V ili Dmitrich Natásha w s say ing l com !

Oh n let me off Countess" Denisov re pl ed.

a

tá ha

Oh the f wy Sl e ca do anyth ng w tl me! sa d Deniso d he unhooked h saber He came o t from beh d the cha rs, l ped h p rtner s h nd firmly threw ba k h head nd d a ced his foot, wa ting for the beat. O ly h rse back and n tl maruzka wa Deniso s short tat re n t n t eal le d l e looked tl e f e fell w l felt h mself to be At tl e r ght beat of the mus c he looked sideways t h s p rtner w th a merry a d triumphant a r suddenly st mped w th o e foot, bou ded from the floor l ke b ll nd flew rou d th room tak h partner w th h m. He gl led lently on o foot h lf across th room a d seem g t to n t e tl e ha rs wa d h g

l l

ed

ed

dly

l s

ha

hall th N tásha wh th gh hy w t on caref lly executi g her t ps. De iso d d n t take his eyes ff her d beat t m w th his saber in w y that clea ly d cated that f he was t da g t was becaus he w ld n t and t because h ld t. I th middle f figure h beck ed t Ro tó who w passing.

"Th t tall th thi g he sa d. What sort f P l h mazuwk is hi ? B t he does da e pl didly

Kn g that D iso had reputat n even P la d f th ma erly way wh ch h da ced th maru ka N ch las ra up t N tásha

Go d hoose D iso H l da cer d l h said.

Wh t cam t N tásha turn to choose partner h ose nd, tripp g rap dly cross in her little hoes t mmed w th bow ra t m idly to th rner where Den so t. Sh saw that everybody was looking her d wa g

f rward that t eemed s l l wo ld ru h

d d t cogn e l m.

"What does this mea ? she bro gl t ut.

Altho h Iogel d d n t k wledge tl to be th real ma u ka everyo e was d l ghted w th D niso sk ll l was asked ga n a d ga t a partner d the old men bega sm l gly t talk bout P l d d the good old days. De iso flushed f er the mazurk a d m pp g hims lf w th his ha dkerchi f t

And fancy! she refused him quite definitely! adding after a pause she told him she loved another

Yes my Sonya could not have done otherwise! thought Nicholas

Much as Mamma pressed her she refused and I know she won t change once she has said

And Mamma pressed her! said Nicholas reproachfully

Yes said Natásha Do you know Nicholas—don t be angry—but I know you will not marry her I know heaven knows how but I know for certain that you won t marry her

Now you don t know that at all! said Nicholas But I must talk to her What a darling Sonya is! he added with a smile

Ah, she is indeed a darling! I ll send her to you

And Natásha kissed her brother and ran away

A minute later Sónya came in with a frightened guilty and scared look Nicholas went up to her and kissed her hand This was the first time since his return that they had talked alone and about their love

Sophie he began timidly at first and then more and more boldly if you wish to refuse one who is not only a brilliant and advantageous match but a splendid noble fellow he is my friend

Sónya interrupted him

I have already refused she said hurriedly

If you are refusing for my sake I am afraid that I

Sónya again nterrupted She gave him an imploring fr ghtened look

Nicholas don t tell me that! she said

No but I must It may be arrogant of me but still it is best to say it If you refuse him on my account I must tell you the whole truth I love you and I think I love you more than anyone else

That is enough for me said Sónya blushing

No but I have been in love a thousand times and shall fall in love again though for no one have I such a feeling of friendship confidence and love as I have for you Th
am
I m
Dól
frier ty

Don t say that to me I want nothing I love you as a brother and always shall and I want nothing more

You are an angel I am not worthy of you, but I am afraid of misleading you

And Nicholas again kissed her hand.

CHAPTER XII

IOGEL S WERE the most enjoyable balls in Moscow So said the mothers as they watched their young people executing their newly learned steps and so said the youths and maidens themselves as they danced till they were ready to drop and so said the grown up youn men and women who came to these balls with an air of condescension and found them most enjoyable That year two marriages had come of these balls. The two pretty young Princesses C r chakóv met suitors there and were married a d so further increased the fame of these dances. What distingu shed them from others was the absence of host or hostess and the presence of the good natured Iogel flying about like a feather and bowing according to the rules of his art as he collected the tickets from all his visitors There was the fact that only those came who wished to dance a d m
sel
a
sc , ex ceptions they all were or seemed to be pretty—so rapturous were their smiles and so sparkling their eyes Sometimes the best of the pupils of whom Natásha who was exceptionally graceful was first even danced the *pas de chale* but at this last ball only the *écossaise* the *anglaise* and the mazurka which was just coming into fashion were danced Iogel had taken a ballroom in Bezukhov s house and the ball as everyone said was a great success. There were many pretty girls and the Rostóv girls were among the prettiest They were both particularly happy and

e at home so that the maid could hardly get her hair plaited and she was transparently radiant with impulsive joy

Natásha no less proud of her first long dress and of being at a real ball was even happier They were both dressed in white muslin with pink ribbons

Natásha fell in love the very moment she entered the ballroom She was not in love with anyone in particular but with everyone Whatever person she happened to look at she was in love with for that moment

Oh how delightful it

him ha e till M nd a ked h m to be more economical this time N cholas had repl ed that t would be mo e than enough f l m nd that he ga h word of ho n t to take ythi more t ll the pri g N w only twel e

so th t

thought. Now then mak ha e have th card d I'll tak my cap and d ve home t pper w th De iso N tásha nd S va d will certa ly never touch card aga n. At that moment his home l fe jokes with Petya talk with S ya d ets w th N tá sha, piq t w th his father d even h com fortabl bed th house on the Povarskáya rose before him w th uch d es learness, and charm that t seemed as f t were all a lost nd unappreciated bliss, l g past. He could not co that t p d chance lett the seven be dealt to the ri h rather tha o the

wa ted w th k heart th mo em n of Dolokho ha d Those broad redd sh ha ds, th hairy wrists is bl from u der th sl ri cu laid d wn the pa k nd took p glass d p pe that wer ha ded h m.

"So you are not fra d t play with m re peated Dolokho and as f bo t to tell good s ry h p d wn th ca ds, lea ed ba k his chair nd bera del bera ly w th smile

"Yes ge lem n I been told there s ru mor goin bo Moscow ha I m sharper so I ise ou be car ful.

Com now deal excla med Rostóv

Oh those Moscow gos ps sa d Dól kho d h ook p the cards with mil

A Rost almost screamed l fu g both hands to his head. Th sev he needed was ly ppermost, th firs card in the pack. He ha l lost more than h could pay

"Sa l do t ruin yourself said Do kho w th d gl ce t Rostóv as h continued to deal.

CHAPTER XIV

A ho x d half later most of the players ere bu little eres ed n the own play

Th hol erest wa co cen rated n Ros tov I stead f ix een hundred rubles h had long column f figures sco ed n t him,

wh h he had reck ed up to ten thousand but that now s h va uely supposed mu t ha e r sen to f fteen thousand I real ty it al ready ex ceded twenty thous d rubles. D lokho was n lo ger listen ng t s r es o tell g them, but f llowed every movement of Rost s hand and occa on lly ran h eyes o er the sc re ga n t h m. He had dec ded to pl y u t l that score reached f rty thre t ou sand. H h d fi ed on that number bec use f rt three was the sum f h and Sonya s y t ages. Rost lean ng his head on both hands, sat t the t ble wh h was scrawled over w h figures wet w th p lled w e nd l ttered w th cards. O et rment mpres d d not l e h m that those broad boned reddish hand w th ha ry wr ts is ble from u der the sl t leeves, those ha d wh h h loved and hated held h m n the power

"S hu d ed rubles, ace corner a n e wi t ha k s mpos ble Oh, how pleasa t t wa t hom The kn e, d uble o qu ts it can t be And why s h do n th to m Rost po ered. Somet mes l taked l rge um b t D l kho refused to h mself N hol

the card th t came first t hand l m the su pled heap under th table wo d sa e h m.

what wa pas g n his m d.

He know f course what this loss means t me. H ca t wa t my ru n. Wasn t he my

came t thi table w th the thought of w nn ng hu dred rubles to buy that casket for M m ma m day d then go g home I wa so

down by Natasha and did not leave her for the rest of the evening

CHAPTER XIII

FOR TWO DAYS after that Rostóv did not see Dolokhov at his own or at Dólokhov s home on the third day he received a note from him

As I do not intend to be at your house again for reasons you know of and am going to rejoin my regiment I am giving a farewell supper tonight to my friends—come to the English Hotel

About ten o clock Rostóv went to the English Hotel straight from the theater where he had been with his family and Denísov He was at once shown to the best room wh

I n two candles On the table was a pile of gold and paper money and he was keeping the bank Rostóv had not seen him since his proposal and Sónya s refusal and felt uncomfortable at the thought of how they would meet

Dolokhov s clear cold glance met Rostóv as soon as he entered the door as though he had long expected him

It s a long time since we met he said Thanks for coming I ll just finish dealing and then Ilyushka will come with his chorus

I called once or twice at your house said Rostóv reddening

Dolokhov made no reply

You may punt he said

Rostov recalled at that momen

I

Or are you afraid to play with me? Dólokhov now asked as if guessing Rostóv s thought

Beneath his smile Rostov saw in him the mood he had shown at the Club dinner and at other times when as if tired of everyday life he had felt a need to escape from it by some strange and usually cruel action

Rostov felt ill at ease He tried but failed to find some joke with which to reply to Dólokhov s words But before he had thought of any thing Dólokhov looking straight in his face said slowly and deliberately so that everyone could hear

Do you remember we had a talk about cards

He s a fool who trusts to luck one should make certain and I want to try

To try his luck or the certainty? Rostóv asked himself

Well you d better not play Dólokhov added and springing a new pack of cards said Bank gentlemen!

Moving the money forward he prepared to deal Rostóv sat down by his side and at first did not play Dólokhov kept glancing at him

Why don t you play? he asked

And strange to say Nicholas felt that he could not help taking up a card putting a small stake on it and beginning to play

I have no money with me he said

I ll trust you

Rostóv staked five rubles on a card and lost staked ag

that is I

Gent

dealt for one time Please place your money on the cards or I may get muddled in the reckoning

One of the players said he hoped he might be trusted

Yes you might but I am afraid of getting the accounts mixed So I ask you to put the money on your cards replied Dólokhov Don t stint yourself we ll settle afterwards he added turning to Rostóv

The game continued a waiter kept handing round champagne

All Rostóv s cards were beaten and he had eight hundred rubles scored up against him He wrote 800 rubles on a card but while the waiter filled his glass he changed his mind and altered it to his usual stake of twenty rubles

Leave it said Dólokhov though he did not seem to be even looking at Rostóv you ll win it back all the sooner I lose to the others but win from you Or are you afraid of me? he asked again

Rostóv submitted He let the eight hundred remain and laid down a seven of hearts with a torn corner which he had picked up from the floor He well remembered that seven after wards He laid down the seven of hearts on which with a broken bit of chalk he had written 800 rubles in clear upright figures he emptied the glass of warm champagne that was handed him smiled at Dólokhov s words and with a sinking heart waiting for a seven to turn up gazed at Dólokhov s hands which held the pack Much depended on Rostóv s winning or losing on that seven of hearts On the previous Sunday the old Count had given his son two thousand rubles and though he always disliked speaking of money difficulties had told Nicholas that this was all he could let

him have till M y and a ked h m to be mo e economical th t me N h las had repl ed ... n ld be mo e tha nough f r h m ... ke

though Now then mak ha te a d have this card d I'll tak my cap d d e bom to supper w th D isov N tásha d S va, and will certa ly never t uch a card again. At that moment h home l fe, jokes with P tya, talks with Só a d ets w h N tá ... com

left m h depn him f ll this happ ss newl pprec ed nd ewl ll m ned d pl nge him t the dep hs of u known d undef ed misery That co ld no be set he waited th k heart th mo em nt f Dolokhov ha d Those broad ed ish ha ds th ha y wrists ts bl from u der th h rt cuffs, laid down th pack d ook up glass d p pe that were ha ded him.

"So ou fra d play w th me?" e peat D lokho d as f bo t t ll good story he p t d wn th ca ds, lea ed back n his cha nd bega del berat l w th m le

"Yes ge tleme I been t ld there ru mor go ng bout Moscow that I m sharper l ad se ou be car ful."

"Come now deal" excla med Rostó

"O those Mosc w goss p sa d Dól kho d h ook p th cards with mile.

"Aa Ros almost screamed l fti g both ha ds his head. Th sev n h eeded was ly uppermost, h first card th pa k. He had lost mo than h ould pay

"Still, do ruin yourself" sa d Do khov th glance t Ros as he contin ed to deal.

CHAPTER XIV

A our a nd half la er most f th players were b t littl teres ed th ow play

Th bol terest was co en rated Ros. Instead f ixtee h dred rubles h had long column f figures scored ga t him, which he had reckoned up t ten thousa l but that now as he vague l pposed must ha e sen to fifteen thousa d I rea ty t al ready exceeded twent thousand ru les. D l kho was no lo ger l ten ng to s or es or tell n them, but fol wed every movement of r t nd occa onally ran h eyes ... t ... h ... h ... e

cards ... e h m th t those broad bo ed red sh han w th ha ry wr ts sible f om der t e s. t leeves those ha d wh h h lov nd ha e held h m n th power

"S hu d ed ru les, a e, a corner a n w n t ba k mpos ble Oh, how pleasa t t wa t hom ! The k a e, dou r qu ts t can t be And wh s he doing this to me Rost pondered. Sometimes he staked a large m but D l khov refused t ccept t d fi ed the tak h mse f N chola bm tted to h m, d t one moment pra ed t God he had on o the battl field at t bri ge o er the F s, and then guessed t at th card that came first t hand from t e crum pled heap nder the table would sa e h m, w ou ted the c rd n his coat d took card w th that umber nd tried staki th t tal f his losses o t, then h looked rou d for d from the other pla ers, or peered at the now cold f e of Dolokhov and tr ed to read what wa pass n n his m nd.

He knows f ourse what this loss means t me. He ca t wa t my ru n. Wasn t he m friend? Wasn t I fond f him. B t s not h f ult. What he to d f h has uch luck? And t not my f t t er he thought t himself I ha e do e nothing wro H I k lled yone sulted or wished harm t anyo Why such a terrible misfortune? And when did it be Such a l ttle while ago I came to this table w th the thought of w n hu dred rubles to buy that casket for M ... w ... begin What ma ked the cha ge? I sat all t t m th same pl e t th tabl chose nd placed cards, nd watched those broad boned and hands in th sam wa When did t hap-

pen and what has happened? I am well and strong and still the same and in the same place No it can t be! Surely it will all end in nothing!

He was flushed and bathed in perspiration though the room was not hot His face was terrible and piteous to see especially from its helpless efforts to seem calm

The score against him reached the fateful sum of forty three thousand Rostóv had just prepared a card by bending the corner of which he meant to double the three thousand just put down to his score when Dólokhov slamming down the pack of cards put it aside and began rapidly adding up the total of Rostov s debt breaking the chalk as he marked the figures in his clear bold hand

Supper it s time for supper! And here are the gypsies!

Some swarthy men and women were really entering from the cold outside and saying something in their gypsy accents Nicholas understood that it was all over but he said in an indifferent tone

Well won t you go on? I had a splendid card all ready as if it were the fun of the game which interested him most

It s all up! I m lost! thought he Now a bullet through my brain—that s all that s left me! And at the same time he said in a cheerful voice

Come now just this one more little card!

All right! said Dólokhov having finished the addition All right! Twenty-one rubles he said pointing to the figure twenty-one by which the total exceeded the round sum of forty three thousand and taking up a pack he prepared to deal Rostóv submissively unbent the corner of his card and instead of the six thousand he had intended carefully wrote twenty-one

It s all the same to me he said I only want to see whether you will let me win this ten or beat it

Dolokhov began to deal seriously Oh how Rostov detested at that moment those hands with their short reddish fingers and hairy wrists which held him in their power The ten fell to him

You ow fo h k ~ l

E

tl

he uu u

Yes I m tired too said Rostóv

Dólokhov cut him short as if to remind him that it was not for him to jest

When am I to receive the money Count?

Rostóv flushing drew Dolokhov into the next room

I cannot pay it all immediately Will you take an I O U? he said

I say Rostóv said Dólokhov clearly smiling and looking Nicholas straight in the eyes you know the saying Lucky in love unlucky at cards Your cousin is in love with you I know

Oh it s terrible to feel oneself so in this man s power thought Rostóv He knew what a shock he would inflict on his father and mother by the news of this loss he knew what a relief it would be to escape it all and felt that Dólokhov knew that he could save him from all this shame and sorrow but wanted now to play with him as a cat does with a mouse

Your co n r

but

it s ot necessary to mention her! he exclaimed fiercely

Then when am I to have it?

Tomorrow replied Rostóv and left the room

CHAPTER XV

To say tomorrow and keep up a dignified tone was not difficult but to go home alone

s

f

g is terrible

At home they had not yet gone to bed The young people after returning from the theater had had supper and were grouped round the clavichord As soon as Nicholas entered he was enfolded in that poetic atmosphere of love which pervaded the Rostov household that winter and now after Dólokhov s proposal and Iogel s ball seemed to have grown thicker round Sónya and Natásha as the air does before a thunderstorm Sónya and Natásha in the light blue dresses they had worn at the theater looking pretty and conscious of it, were standing by the clavichord happy and smiling Véra was playing chess with Shinshin in the drawing room The old countess waiting for the return of her husband and son sat playing patience with the old gentlewoman who lived in their house Denisov with sparkling eyes and ruffled hair sat at the clavichord striking chords with his short fingers his legs thrown back and his eyes rolling as he sang with his small husky but true voice some

erses called 'Enchantress,' wh ch he had com posed, and t whu h he wa try ng t fit mus c.

E hantr ss say t my forsaken l e
Wh t magi power is th ll m t ll?
Wh t park has t my mm t so l on fi
Wh t is th bliss th t makes my fi gers thrill?

H as g n pass n t t es, ga g w th his pa kl bl k gate eyes t the fr ghte ed d happy Natásha

"Splendid! Excelle t! ex l med N tá ha A ther erse she sa d w tho t not ci N ch las.

E eryth st ll th sam with them, th ht N h las, gla c t the draw g room, where he saw Véra a d his mother w th the ld lady

Ah d here s N chol s cr ed Natásha ru p to h m

I Pap t h m ? he ked.

s d N tá ha

N P p is n t ba k yet, sa d Só ya

N h las ha e you com ? Come here dea called th old cou tess from the draw room.

N ch las we t t her kissed her ha d nd in d wn le tly t he tabl began t ch her ha ds rra gi g th cards. From the da ci room they t ll heard the l hter d merry es try g t pers de Natásha t in

All wi ht All w ht! sh ted Deniso It good mak g excuses wi lt your turn to th ba caw ll —I ntreat you!

Th co tess gla ced t her s l t son.

"What is th matt ? he ked.

Oh thi, sa d h as f weary of be g co tinually ked th same quest n W ll P p be b ck soo ?

I pect so.

E eryth th same w th them. They k w thi bo t t Where m I t go? tho ht N ch l d w nt ga t the danci room wh e the cl hord stood

S ya was sitt g t th cl hord, pl yi g th prel d t D lso fa rit b caroll N tásha was p pari g to g Den so was look g t her w th raptu ed eyes.

N cholas be an p ci g p d d wn the room.

"Why do they wa t to m ke h g? H w ca h g? Ther n th to be h ppy bo t th ht he.

Són a truck the first chord of the prelude

My God I m a ru ned and d l n red man!

gloom ly at Deniso nd the gi l a the r eyes.

N kólenka what is the matter? Sónya eyes fi ed on l m seemed t k. She not ced t o ce th t someth had happened t h m.

N holas turned way from her N tá ha too w th her qu ck i t nct, had t tly not ed her brother s co d t on B t al ou h he no t ced t he was herself n uch l h sp rits at that m ment so f r from sorrow sad ess, or self reproa h that he purposely dece ed her self s yo g people ften do. No I am too h p py n w t po l my enj yment by sympathy w th yone s sorrow he f lt, a d he sa d to her elf No I must be m t ke he mu t be feel g h ppy just a I am.

Now S ya he sa d, go to the ery m ddl of the room, where she con dered the resona ce wa best.

H g l fted her head and let her arms droop l f les ly ball t d ncers do N tá ha, ris en rget call from her l eels t her toes, epped to the m ddle of the room d stood st ll.

Yes, th t s me! h seemed t say a wer g the rapt ga w th wh ch D lso f ll wed her

A d wh t is she so pleased bo t? thou ht N holas look t l is s ter Why isn t she d ll d a hamed

N tásha took th f rst ote her throat swelled her chest rose her eyes became ser us. At that m m t sh wa obl us of her s ro d gs, d from her m l g l ps fl wed so d wh h yo e may prod ce t t! same terval d h ld f t! same t me b t wh cl lea y u cold th usa d t mes d the th sa d d first t me thr ll y u a d make you weep

N tásha that w ter had f the first t me

g w ll all the conn isseurs who heard her sa d It is n t tra ed, b t t is a be t f l that must be tra ned. O ly th y gener lly sa d this some t m fter she h d fi l ed g g Wh le that u tra ed c w th its correct b eath g and l bo ed trans t ns,

pen and what has happened? I am well and strong and still the same and in the same place No it can t be! Surely it will all end in nothing!

He was flushed and bathed in perspiration though the room was not hot His face was terrible and piteous to see especially from its helpless efforts to seem calm

The score against him reached the fateful sum of forty three thousand Rostóv had just prepared a card by bending the corner of which he meant to double the three thousand just put down to his score when Dólokhov

t

Some swarthy men and women were really entering from the cold outside and saying something in their gypsy accents Nicholas understood that it was all over but he said in an indifferent tone

Well won t you go on? I had a splendid card all ready as if it were the fun of the game which interested him most.

It s all up! I m lost! thought he Now a bullet through my brain—that s all that s left me! And at the same time he said in a cheerful voice

Come now just this one more little card!

All right! said Dólokhov having finished the addition All right! Twenty-one rubles he said pointing to the figure twenty-one by which the total exceeded the round sum of forty three thousand and taking up a pack he prepared to deal Rostóv submissively unbent the corner of his card and instead of the six thousand he had intended carefully wrote twenty one

It s all the same to me he said I only want to see whether you will let me win this ten or beat it

Dolokhov began to deal seriously Oh how Rostov detested at that moment those hands with their short reddish fingers and hairy wrists which held him in their power The ten fell to him

You owe forty three thousand Count said Dólokhov and stretching himself he rose from the table One does get tired sitting so long he added

Yes I m tired too said Rostóv

Dólokhov cut him short as if to remind him that it was not for him to jest

When am I to receive the money Count?

Rostóv flushing drew Dólokhov into the next room

I cannot pay it all immediately Will you take an I O U? he said

I say Rostóv said Dólokhov clearly smiling and looking Nicholas straight in the eyes, you know the saying Lucky in love unlucky at cards Your cousin is in love with you I know

Oh it s terrible to feel oneself so in this man s power thought Rostóv He knew what a shock he would inflict on his father and mother by the news of this loss he knew what a relief it would be to escape it all and felt that Dólokhov knew that he could save him from all this shame and sorrow but wanted now to play with him as a cat does with a mouse

Your cousin Dólokhov started to say but Nicholas interrupted him

My cousin has nothing to do with this and it s not necessary to mention her! he exclaimed fiercely

Then when am I to have it?

Tomorrow replied Rostóv and left the room

CHAPTER XV

To SAY tomorrow and keep up a dignified tone was not difficult but to go home alone see his sisters brother mother and father confess and ask for money he had no right to after giving his word of honor was terrible

At home they had not yet gone to bed The young people after returning from the theater had had supper and were grouped round the clavichord As soon as Nicholas entered he was enfolded in that poetic atmosphere of love which pervaded the Rostóv household that winter and now after Dólokhov s proposal and Iogel s ball seemed to have grown thicker round Sónya and Natásha as the air does before a thunderstorm Sónya and Natásha in the light blue dresses they had worn at the theater looking pretty and conscious of it were standing by the clavichord happy and smiling Véra was playing chess with Shinshin in the drawing room The old countess waiting for the return of her husband and son sat playing patience with the old gentlewoman who lived in their house Denísov with sparkling eyes and ruffled hair sat at the clavichord striking chords with his short fingers his legs thrown back and his eyes rolling as he sang with his small husky but true voice some

erses called En ha t ess wh ch I e had com osed, d t wh ch he was try l fit mu c

E hant es sav t my f rsaken ly
What magic pow er th ll m st ll?
Wh t spark has t my m t l on fi
Wh t th bliss th t mak my fi gers thrill?

He was g g p ss n te t es ga ng w th his parkl bl ck gate eyes at the f ghte ed d happy N tásha

Spl d d! Excelle tl l med N tá ha A ther erse she sa d w th t t

N cholas.

E eryth s st ll the same w th tl em tho ht N cholas gl nc ng nt th draw oom, here he saw Véra d I is m ther w tl the old lad

Ah, and h re s N chol s er ed Natá ha run. p t h m.

Is Papa t h m he ked.

m s d N tá ha

r

"N P p is t b k yet sa d Só ya

N ch las, ha e y u c me? Come here dear called th ld cou tess from th draw m room.

N cholas we t t her k ssed her ha d d tun down s lently t her tabl began t wa ch her ha ds arra gi th card From the da cin, room, they t ll heard th l hter d merry ces try g persuad N tásha t s n,.

All w ht All w ght h uted Deniso I good mak g e cuses n w! It y ur turn to in th ba caw ll —I ntweat you!

Th countess gla ced t her l nt son.

"What is th m t er? he ked.

Oh, oth ,, sa d he f weary of be g co unually asked the same questi n. W ll P pa be back soo ?

I expect so

E eryth the same w th them. They kno noth bo t t Wher m I to go? thought N cholas, d w t ga n the dan n room her th cl ch d ood

S a as u g t th cl h d, pl y g t pr lude to D iso s fa rit b ca lle N tasha was p parı g to g D so was lo king t her w th rapt ed eyes.

Nicholas be an pac g up nd d wn th room.

"Why do they wa t t make h g? H w can th Ther th g t be h ppy about" tho ght he.

Sonya struck the f rst chord of tl e prelu le

My God I m a ru ned a d d hon red man A bullet th ugh my bra n s the only th l ft me—not s g gl h tl u h is ra n o C away? But wl ere t It s ll ne—let them s

He co t nued t p ce the room look gloom ly t Deniso d tl e g rls an l l tl e eyes.

N kóle k wl t s the matter? Sónya s eyes f ed l m eemed t a k. She not ced at

t ced t she was I ersel t s h l t th t mome t so f r fr m sorrow sa l es or elf repro h th t she p rpos ly dece ed her self s y u g people oft n do N l m too h p py now t po I my nj yment by symp thy w th a y ne s sorrow l e felt, nd sl e sa d to I er self No I mu t be m t ken he mu t be feel g happy ju t I m.

N w S ya! sl e sa d go g to the m ddle of th room wl ere sl e n dered reso ce was best.

H g l lted I r l e d a d let he rms droop l feles ly b llet d n ers do, N tá ha, n g erg t cally f m her l eel t her toes, tepped t th m ddle of the room and stood t ll

Yes th t me! sh seemed to say swer n tl rapt ga w tl wh I Deniso f llowed I er

A d wl t sl so pleased bo t? th u ht N chol look g t I ıs s ter "Why isn t she d ll d h med?

N tásh took the first n te her throat sw lled her I est rose her eyes becam ser s. At h t mom t she wa bl us of her sur rou d gs. d fr m her sm l l ps fl wed o m mel th same

weep

N tásha that w nter had f r the first t me begu to s g ser usly m nly because Den

g w ll as all the co o sse rs who heard her sa d It t tra ed b t t a bea t f l ce that m t be tra ed. O ly they ge er ally sa d this some t me fter she had f l ed g g Wh le that u tra ned o ce w th ts rrect breath g and I bored tran t ns,

was sounding even the connoisseurs said nothing but only delighted in it and wished to hear it again In her voice there was a virginal freshness an unconsciousness of her own powers and an as yet untrained velvety softness which so mingled with her lack of art in singing that it seemed as if nothing in that voice could be altered without spoiling it.

What is this? thought Nicholas listening to her with widely opened eyes What has happened to her? How she is singing today! And suddenly the whole world centered for him on anticipation of the next note the next phrase and everything in the world was divided into three beats *Oh mio crudele affetto* One two three one two three One *Oh mio crudele affetto* One two three One Oh this senseless life of ours! thought Nicholas All this misery and money and Dólokhov and anger and honor —it s all nonsense but this is real Now then Natásha now then dearest! Now then darling! How will she take that *si*? She s taken it! Thank God! And without noticing that he [illegible] nging to strengthen the *si* he sung a second a third below the high note Ah God! How fine! Did I really take it? How fortunate! he thought

Oh how that chord vibrated and how moved was something that was finest in Rostóv s soul! And this something was apart from everything else in the world and above everything in the world What were losses and Dólokhov and words of honor? All nonsense! One might kill and rob and yet be happy

CHAPTER XVI

IT WAS LONG since Rostóv had felt such enjoyment from music as he did that day But no sooner had Natásha finished her barcarolle than reality again presented itself He got up without saying a word and went downstairs to his own room A quarter of an hour later the

Well—had a good time? said the old count smiling gaily and proudly at his son

Nicholas tried to say Yes but could not and he nearly burst into sobs The count was lighting his pipe and did not notice his son s condition

Ah it can [illegible] ought Nicholas for the fi[illegible] iddenly in the [illegible] n feel ashamed [illegible] ly sking his father to let him have the carriage to drive to town

Papa I have come on a matter of business. I [illegible]

ci[illegible]

enough How much?

Very much said Nicholas flushing and with a stupid careless smile for which he was long unable to forgive himself I have lost a little I mean a good deal a great deal—forty three thousand

What! To whom? Nonsense! cried the count suddenly reddening with an apoplectic flush over neck and nape as old people do

I promised to pay tomorrow said Nicholas

Well! said the old count spreading out his arms and sinking helplessly on the sofa

It can t be helped! It happens to everyone! said the son with a bold free and easy tone while in his soul he regarded himself as a worthless scoundrel whose whole life could not atone for his crime He longed to kiss his father s hands and kneel to beg his forgiveness but said in a careless and even rude voice that it happens to everyone!

The old count cast down his eyes on hearing his son s words and began bustling ly searching for something

Yes yes he muttered it will be difficult I fear difficult to raise happens to everybody! Yes who has not done it?

And with a furtive glance at his son s face the count went out of the room Nicholas had been prepared for resistance but had not at all expected this

Papa! Papa! he called after him sobbing forgive me! And seizing his father s hand he pressed it to his lips and burst into tears

While father and son were having their explanation the mother and daughter were having one not less important Natásha came running to her mother quite excited

Mamma! Mamma! He has made me

Made what?

Made made me an offer Mamma! Mamma! she exclaimed

The countess did not believe her ears Denísov had proposed To whom? To this chit of a girl Natásha who not so long ago was playing with dolls and who was still having lessons

Don t Natásha What nonsense! she said hoping it was a joke

Nonsense indeed! I am telling you the fact

sa d N tásha nd gn ntly I c me t ask you h tt d d yo call t n nse se!

The co tess hrugged he sh lders n h m de

tly d ser ously

'W ll the what d y u want Y re all in lo e adays. W ll f you re t l e mar ry h m said the c u tes th a l ugh of an ya Good l k t yo

No Mamma I m not lo e w th hum I suppose I m t l w th h m.

Well the tell h m so

M mma re you cross Do t be cross, dearl I t my fa lt?"

"N b t what is t my dea ? Do you wa t me t go d tell him? sa d the cou tess m l g

N I w ll d t myself ly tell me what to say It all ery w ll f you sa d N tásha tha respo e m le. You ho ld ha e een how h sa d t I k w he d d n t mea t say t, b t cam t ccide tly

Well all th sam yo must fuse h m.

N I mustn t. I m so sorry f r h m He s so e

"W ll th ept h ffer It s h gh t me for yo t be married n wered the co tess sharply d sarca t cally

N M mma b t I m so sorry f r him. I d t k w how I m t say t.

A d there s n h f y u t say I hall peak t h m myself sa d the co tess, d g na t that they sh uld ha e d ed t treat this little N tásha as gr w p

N t y cco t! I w ll t ll h m my self, d yo ll e t t le door d N tásha ra cross th dra room t tl d g hall her De iso was t g n the same cha by the cl ch rd w tl l f his ha ds.

He j mped p t th so d [l l ght t p N taly h sa d, m g w th rap d tep t ard her decid myl t It is y h ds.

"Vasil Dm trich, I m so sorry f y u! N b t y so but t w n t d t that b as fne d I sh ll lways l y u.

D iso bent over l er l an l and sl e l eard stra ge so nds l d d not u d rsta l She k ed h s rougl cu ly black l ead At th stant they l eard tl e q ck rt tle of the c t es dress Sl e came t p t tl em.

"V sil Dmitr ch, I tl nk you f r the h nor he sa d w th emb rrassed v e the l t so ded se ere to De iso —"I t my lau l ter s so you g and I tho gl t that a my w t f er d yo t wo ll h ve a ldressed y rself f rst t me In that case you wculd n t l e bl ged me to g e th refusal

Co ntess sa d Deniso w tl d wnca t eyes nd a gu lty f ce H tr ed to say more but f lt ed.

N tá h co ld not rema n calm, see ng h m s h pl gl t. Sl e bega to sob al d.

Cou tess, I h d w g Denisov went o n nu teady ce b t bel eve me I so ad re your da ghter nd all your f m ly th t I wo ld g e my l fe tw c o er He looked t the co tess n l ee her se er f ce sa d "W ll good by Co tess a d k s g l er h nd l e l ft th room w th qu ck reso lute tr des w tl t looks g at Natá ha

N t d y Rost saw Deniso off H d d not w h t t y otl er day n M sc w All Deni so s Moscow f e d ga h m f rewell e

his t m the g l ro m.

Sonya w mo e te d a d devoted t h m th er It wa f l wa ted t l ow l m that l losses we cl e m nt that ma le her l e h m ll th mo but N l ol n w co s dered h uself u w rthy f l e

He filled the g l lb ms w th erses d m nd h g t l t nt D l kh the wh le f rty th tl ousa d rubles a d rece ed his rece pt, h l ft at th d of No embe w tl t t k g le e of ny of his acqu t es to o t ke l emment wh ch wa al ready n P l d

... voice there was a virginal freshness an unconsciousness of her own powers and an as yet untrained velvety softness which so mingled with her lack of art in singing that it seemed as if nothing in that voice could be altered without spoiling it

What is this? thought Nicholas listening to her with widely opened eyes What has happened to her? How she is singing today! And suddenly the whole world centered for him on anticipation of the next note the next phrase and everything in the world was divided into three beats *Oh mio crudele affetto* One two three one two three One *Oh mio crudele affetto* One two three One Oh this senseless life of ours! thought Nicholas All this misery and money and Dolokhov and anger and honor—it s all nonsense but this is real Now then Natásha now then dearest! Now then darling! How will she take that *si?* She s taken it! Thank God! And without noticing that he was singing to strengthen the *si* he sung a second a third below the high note Ah God! How fine! Did I really take it? How fortunate! he thought

Oh how that chord vibrated and how moved was something that was finest in Rostóv s soul! And this something was apart from everything else in the world and above everything in the world What were losses and Dolokhov and words of honor? All nonsense! One might kill and rob and yet be happy

CHAPTER XVI

IT WAS LONG since Rostóv had felt such enjoyment from music as he did that day But no sooner had Natásha finished her barcarolle than reality again presented itself He got up without saying a word and went downstairs to his own room A quarter of an hour later the old count came in from his Club cheerful and contented Nicholas hearing him drive up went to meet him

Well—had a good time? said the old count smiling gaily and proudly at his son

Nicholas tried to say Yes but could not and he nearly burst into sobs The count was lighting his pipe and did not notice his son s condition

Ah it can t be avoided! thought Nicholas for the first and last time And suddenly in the most casual tone which made him feel ashamed of himself he said as if merely asking his father to let him have the carriage to drive to town

Papa I have come on a matter of business I was nearly forgetting I need some money

Dear me! said his father who was in a specially good humor I told you it would not be enough How much?

Very much said Nicholas flushing and with a stupid careless smile for which he was long unable to forgive himself I have lost a little I mean a good deal a great deal—forty three thousand

What! To whom? Nonsense! cried the count suddenly reddening with an apoplectic flush over neck and nape as old people do

I promised to pay tomorrow said Nicholas

Well! said the old count spreading out his arms and sinking helplessly on the sofa

It can t be helped It happens to everyone said the son with a bold free and easy tone while in his soul he regarded himself as a worthless scoundrel whose whole life could not atone for his crime He longed to kiss his father s hands and kneel to beg his forgiveness but said in a careless and even rude voice that it happens to everyone!

The old count cast down his eyes on hearing his son s words and began bustlingly searching for something

Yes yes he muttered it will be difficult I fear difficult to raise happens to everybody! Yes who has not done it?

And with a furtive glance at his son s face the count went out of the room Nicholas had been prepared for resistance but had not at all expected this

Papa! Papa! he called after him sobbing forgive me! And seizing his father s hand he pressed it to his lips and burst into tears

While father and son were having their explanation the mother and daughter were having one not less important Natásha came running to her mother quite excited

Mamma! Mamma! He has made me

Made what?

Made made me an offer Mamma! Mamma! she exclaimed

The countess did not believe her ears Denísov had proposed To whom To this chit of a girl Natásha ... not ... long ... was ... playing ...

... and

Nonsense indeed I am telling you the fact"

I come t a k y u

ra c Good

No, M mma I m not l e w th him I suppose I m t l e w th h m.

W ll then tell h m so.

M mma re you cross Do t be cross, dear! I t my f ult

N b t what is t my dea ? Do you wa t me to go nd t ll h m sa d th cou tess m l

— I ll m what to

"Well ll th same you must refuse h m.

"N I mustn t. I am so sorry f h m He s so

"W ll then ept h ffer It s h gh t me for y to be married, wered th countess sh rply d sarcast cally

N M mma b t I m so sorry for him. I d t know how I m t say t

A d there thi f u to sa I hall speak to him mys lf sa d th ou tess, d ma t tha they sh ld ha e da ed to trea thus l ttl N tash gro p

N t y unt I w ll t ll I m my self d yo ll l e t th doo d N tasha ra cross th dra room t the danci g hall her D iso as o th sam cha by th cla ch rd w th his face his ha ds.

H jumped p t the sound f her light ep.

N taly he sa d movi with rap d teps toward h decid my fate. It is y r ha ds.

"Vasil Dm trich I m so sorry f y u

N b y ar so b t won do t that but as friend. I hall always love y u.

De isov bent o er her hand and she I ea d stra soun ls sl e d d n t u d rst d. Sh k ssed h rough cu ly bl k I ead. At th in cr u t

hono

ngh t

hter

so ded se ere t D t —

so y u g d I thought that a m s n friend you would h e a I ressed ourself First t me In that case you would not ha bl ed me to g e th refusal

Co tes sa d Deniso with downca t eyes and a g lty face H tried t say mo e but faltered.

Nata ha could not rema calm, see ng h m n such a pl ght. She began t sob aloud.

Countess, I ha e do e wrong, Denisov went on n n unsteady o ce "but bel eve me I so d e your daught er d ll you f m ly that I would g e my l fe twi e o er " He looked t the countess, and seei her severe f ce sa d "W ll, good by Countess, nd k ss g her h nd, he left th room with quick reso l te t ides, w thout look t Natasha.

Next day Rost saw Denisov off. H d d not w h to ta nother day Moscow All Den so Moscow friends ga e h m f rewell en erta ment t th gyps es w th the resu t that he had no recollection f how he wa put the l h or of the first th ee tages of his journey

After Den so departure Rostov pent n other f rt t n Moscow w thout goi out f the house wa for th mo ey his fat er could not onc raise d he pent most of his t m n the gi l oom.

Sonya was more tender nd devoted t h m than ever It wa f s wa ed to show h m that his losses wer n ch evement that made her lo h m all the more, but N chola now cons dered h mself nworthy f her

H filled th girls lbums w th erses and mus d ha t last se t D lokhov the whol f rt three thousand rubles d rece ed his rec pt, he l ft t the end f N ember w tho t k ng lea e of y of h acqua nt an es, to ert ke his regiment which was al read in P la d.

Book Five · 1806-07

*

CHAPTER I

After his interview with his wife Pierre left for Petersburg At the Torzhók post station either there were no horses or the postmaster would not supply them Pierre was obliged to wait Without undressing he lay down on the leather sofa in front of a round table put his big feet in their overboots on the table and began to reflect

Will you have the portmanteaus brought in? And a bed got ready and tea? asked his valet

Pierre gave no answer for he neither heard nor saw anything He had begun to think of the last station and was still pondering on the same question—one so important that he took no notice of what went on around him Not only was he indifferent as to whether he got to Petersburg earlier or later or whether he secured accommodation at this station but compared to the thoughts that now occupied him it was a matter of indifference whether he remained there for a few hours or for the rest of his life

The postmaster his wife the valet and a peasant woman selling Torzhók embroidery came into the room offering their services Without changing his careless attitude Pierre looked at them over his spectacles unable to understand what they wanted o h y

u om Sokólniki after the duel and had spent that first agonizing sleepless night But now in the solitude of the journey they seized him with special force No m tt r

i mself It was as if the thread of the chief screw which held his life together were stripped so that the screw could not get in or out but went on turning uselessly in the same place

The postmaster came in and began obsequiously to beg his excellency to wait only two hours when come what might he would let his excellency have the courier horses It was plain that he was lying and only wanted to get more money from the traveler

Is this good or bad? Pierre asked himself It is good for me bad for another traveler and for himself it s unavoidable h n

ve the courier horses But the officer thrashed him because he had to get on as quickly as possible And I continued Pierre shot Dólokhov because I considered myself injured and Louis XVI was executed because they considered him a criminal and a year later they executed those who executed him—also for some reason W

u what is death? What power governs all?

There was no answer to any of these questions except one and that not a logical answer and not at all a reply to them The answer was You ll die and all w ll end You ll die and know all or cease asking But dying was also dreadful

The Torzhók peddler woman in a whining voice

pair f

rubles

stands i ci tattered cloak looking timidly at me he thought And what does she want the money for? As if that money could add a hair s breadth to her happiness or peace of mind Can anything in the world make her or me less a prey to evil and death?—death which ends all and must come today or t n rrow—at any rate n an instant as compared w th eternity And gain he twisted the screw w th the stripped thread and again it turned uselessly in the same place

His servant handed h m a h lf-

ous trumles f a cert n Em l e de M n feld A d hy d d he res t her sedu er wl en sl e l ed him? h th u ht. God could ot h e p t t her heart a impul e that was ra t H s ill. My w fe—as she on e wa —d d n t truggle d pe hap l e was rigl t. Notl ng ha been f d o t noth ng d sco ered P err ear sa d t h msell All we can know h I t

ed

— l s

Tl e ervant brou l t back l stumbler turned ps de d wn with an unfin sl ed b t of n l bled rar and asked if anyth ng more w uld be wa ted.

No G ve me tl e book sa d tl e stranger

The servant handed l m a book wh l P erre took t be devot al wo k an l tl e tra ler became bso bed in t. P erre looked at l m All at once tl e stra ger closed tl e book putt g n a marker a l ag n lea g w tl h s arms on the ba k of tl e sof sat n l P erre looked

l

t

l

res t bly

t gray sh col

P erre took h feet off the t ble stood up d l y do n n a bed that had been got ready f h m,gla g n w nd then t th ewc m er who w th gloomy d tured f ce was earily tak off his wraps w th the d of his serva t, and t look g t P erre W th pa r f f lt boots his th bo y legs, nd keep- orn kee -co ered sheepsk coat, the tra ler sat d wn n the sof lea ed ba k his b head w th its bro d temples d lose-cropped hair a d looked at Bez kho Th *tern shrewd*, nd p etrat g exp es n f that look stru k P err H f lt a w h t pe k t th tranee but by th time h had rad up his mi d to ask h m q estu n bo t h roads, the tra eler had closed h eyes. H hri eled ld ha ds w re f lded nd on tl e fi rer f one f them P erre n ticed large ca t ro n w th seal ep ese ting death s- head. Th stra ger sat w thou t rri g e ther restu as t seemed t P erre unk pro- f d and calm med tat n. His serv t wa lso y ll wri kled old ma w thout beard mustach ev d ntly t because he was ha b t because they had ever grown Thus ld servant wa u p ck g the tra ler's ca teen d p ep n tea. H b gh bo l sam var Wh everythi g was eady th tranger pe ed his eyes m ed to the table, filled tumbler with tea f h mself d f th beardless ld ma to wh m h pas ed t. P erre beea t feel se of u ea ess d th eed, ev n th e tab lity f en ering to co ersa w th this tra ger

CHAPTER II

I1 E TI E PLEASURE of dd es n Cou t Be- z kh f l m t m t ken f the tr n ger a del berat a d l ud c

P erre looked s lently nd nqu ngly t h m o er his pecta les.

I ha heard of you my dear r co t nued the tra ger a d of your m f rtu e He seemed to empha ize the l t word f to say —"Yes misf rtu e Call t what you please I kn w that what happened t y u t Moscow was m f rtune. — I regret t ery mu h, my dear s r

P erre flu l ed d, hurriedly p tt g h legs d *wn from the bed* bent f rward t ward tl e ld man w th f ced d t m d sm le.

I ha e n t r ferred t th o t of curios ty my dea s but f r gre ter reasons.

He paused h ga e t ll n P erre a d mo ed as d on the sof by way of t g tl e other t take seat bes d h m P erre f lt r luct t to ter nto co ersat on w th th old man b t s bm tt g t h m n lu t ly cam up d sat d w bes d h m

"You unhappy my dea th tra ger co ti ued. "Y u y u g d I m old. I sho ld l k to h lp you f r as l es in my powe

Oh yes s d P erre w tl a f rced sm le I m ery grat ful to you. Where re y tra el g from?"

The tra er fa e was n t g l t was e ld d ere b t p t of th both th f d w d f h ew qua ta ce were rres t bly ttract t I rr

B t f f y eason vo d n t feel l ed T d ca h d d m ea

Book Five · 1806-07

*

CHAPTER I

After his interview with his wife Pierre left for Petersburg At the Torzhók post station either there were no horses or the postmaster would not supply them Pierre was obl g d o wait

leathe

big fe able and

began to reflect

Will you have the portmanteaus brought in? And a bed got ready and tea? asked his valet

Pierre gave no answer for he neither heard nor saw anything He had begun to think of the last station and was still pondering on the same question—one so important that he took no notice of what went on around him Not only was he indifferent as to whether he got to Petersburg earlier or later or whether he secured accommodation at this station but compared to the thoughts that now occupied him it was a matter of indifference whether he remained there for a few hours or for the rest of his life

The postmaster his wife the valet and a peasant woman selling Torzhók embroidery came into the room offering their services Without changing his careless attitude Pierre looked at them over his spectacles unable to understand what they wanted or how h y

s t t at first agonizing sleepless night But now in the solitude of the journey they seized him with special force No matter what he thought about he always returned to these same questions which he could not solve and yet could not cease to ask himself It was as if the thread of the chief screw which held his life together were stripped so that the screw could not get in or out but went on turning uselessly in the same place

The postmaster came in and began obsequiously to beg his excellency to wait only two hours when come what might he would let his excellency have the courier horses It was plain that he was lying and only wanted to get more money from the traveler

Is this good or bad? Pierre asked himself. It is good for me bad for another traveler and for himself it s unavoidable needs money for food the man had once given him a thrashin private traveler have the courie the officer thrashed him because I on as quickly as possible And I Pierre shot Dólokhov because I myself injured and Louis XVI wa because they considered him a crimi year later they executed those who him—also for some reason What is b

i

a

There was no answer to any of these tions except one d — and n

You l know all or cease asking But dying dreadful

The Torzhók peddler woman in a vo ce w ent on offering her wares espe pair of goatskin slippers I have hund rubles I don t know what to do with ara

I

u make her or me les prey to evil and death?—death which ends an

gr

thre turned uselessly in th same pla e

th e

beg

th l le so l h t the stra ger sa d Wl ther l e ccepted tl w e re so i g co t ed th M sons w rd r bel e ed s a h ld bel eves the peak t e of co t o dearn t ss, tl e t emo f th speak er ce— h l so et es lm t broke—or those brill t red eyes gr ld th n ct or th calm frm nes a l ce t ty of h s ocatio wh h rad ted fro tl us wl le be (d h ch s ruck P erre esp c lly by con tra t th h wn deject and l peles ess) —t rate P erre l ed tl l l le se l t bel eve d l ed d bel e e d f lt a joyf l se se f c mf t, ege rat a d r t to l fe

He t t be pp el e ded by eason b t b l fe sa d th M so

I d t dersta d s. l P err feel th d m d bts re w ke He w s fra d f wa t f l rnes y eak es th M so s rsume t l e l ea led t t be bl t bel e e an h m. I l t u ler ta d he sa d l w t tl t th m d of m ca atta the k ledge f wh h peak

The M so m led w h l ge tl f therly m le.

"Th h hest d m d truth l ke tl e purest l q d w m y t t mb be h sa d. Ca l ece e that p el j l nt mp e essel d j d f ts p rity? O ly by the er p ficat n f mys lf ca I t some degree f p rity th l q d l ece

Yes es th t is s d l rre j yfully

"Tl h hes w d m

e —th e of tl wl le—th sc en expla the wl l creat d m pl t. T rec e th t cie t neces-

ch, ecle er y u r well ed cated. A d wl t l e y u d w th ll thes good g fts? A y u co t t w th y urs lf and th yo lf ?

N I hate my l fe P rre muttered w nc ng

Th u l ate st it Then change t, pur fy tl y self l as tl ou art p rif ed tho w lt ga n w s d m Look t so r l fe my lear s r H w l e yo spe t t? In r t orges a l d b l ery rece v g e eryth g from soc ety d g tl g ret n Yo ha e be co e the pos essor of wealth. H w h u ed it? Wl t l ve y d e f r y ne h bo ? H ve y u ver th u l t of y r t f tl sa l f l es? Ha e y u h lped then phy lly l m rall ? N Y u l ep ft l l y th r t l to lead a p fl g te l fe That wl t y u ha e d e H e you cl sen post wl l you m gl t be f serv ce t yo ne gl bo ? No Yo h e spent yo l f llenes Tl en you m rr ed my lear s r—took o y elf respo l l ty f r tl e gu la ce of yo w ma d what l e y u d ne? Y t l e ot h lped l er t f d the w y of trutl m dear l t l ave tl ru ther to a aby f de ce t a l m ery A m n offen led yo d yo sh t h m and you say y u t ot k ow God d h t y l r l fe The e s n th tra ge i tl t my le rs l

Afte tl ese w l tl e M son f t ed by l s l d co rse n lea ed h rm on tl e b k of tl sof d losed l yes. Pierre looked at tl t ged tern motio les lmost l f less f c d m ed h l p w tl o t utter g so nd He w hed to say Yes, a v le idl u l f l l d

look g at l erre

"Tl e ex l g h rses h e just come an sw ed tl servant. W ll y u n t rest l er ?

N

e t o tt of t b t I have led a c temptible l p fl gate l fe th l l d d n t l k t d d l n t wa t to th l t l rr B t th m

to talk to me said the old man say so my dear sir And he suddenly smiled in an unexpected and tenderly paternal way

Oh no not at all! On the contrary I am very glad to make your acquaintance said Pierre And again glancing at the stranger s

son?

Yes I belong to the Brotherhood of the Freemasons said the stranger looking deeper and deeper into Pierre s eyes And in their name and my own I hold out a brotherly hand to you

I am afraid said Pierre smiling and wavering between the confidence the personality of the Freemason inspired in him and his own

at the world is so opposed to yours that we shall not understand one another

I know your outlook said the Mason and the view of life you mention and which you think is the result of your own mental efforts is the one held by the majority of people and is the invariable fruit of pride indolence and ignorance Forgive me my dear sir but if I had not known it I should not have addressed

I should never dare to say that I know the truth said the Mason whose words struck Pierre more and more by their precision and firmness No one can attain to truth by himself Only by laying stone on stone with the cooperation of all by the millions of generations from our forefather Adam to our own times is that temple reared which is to be a worthy dwelling place of the Great God he added and closed his eyes

I ought to tell you that I do not believe do not believe in God said Pierre regretfully and with an effort feeling it essential to speak the whole truth

The Mason looked intently at Pierre and smiled as a rich man with millions in hand might smile at a poor fellow who told him that he poor man had not the five rubles that would make him happy

Yes you do not know Him my dear sir said the Mason You cannot know Him You do not know Him and that is why you are unhappy

Yes yes I am unhappy assented Pierre. But what am I to do?

You know Him not my dear sir and so you are very unhappy You do not know Him but He is here He is in me He is in my words He is in thee and even in those blasphemous words thou hast just uttered! pronounced the Mason in a stern and tremulous voice

He paused and sighed evidently trying to calm himself

If He were not he said quietly you and

ulting austerity and authority in his voice Who invented Him if He did not exist? Whence came thy conception of the existence of such an incomprehensible Being? Why didst thou and why did the whole world conceive the idea of the existence of such an incomprehensible Being a Being all powerful eternal and infinite in all His attributes?

He stopped and remained silent for a lon time

Pierre could not and did not wish to break this silence

He exi ts but to understand Him is hard the Mason began again looking not at Pierre but straight before him and turning the leaves of his book with his old hands which from excitement he could not keep still If it were a man whose existence thou didst doubt I could bring him to thee could take him by the hand and show him to thee But how can I an insignificant mortal show His omnipotence His infinity and all His mercy to one who is blind or who shuts his eyes that he may not see or understand Him and may not see or understand his own vileness and sinfulness He paused again Who art thou? Thou dreamest that thou art wise because thou couldst utter those blasphemous words he went on with a somber and scornful smile And thou art more foolish and unreasonable than a little child who playing with the parts of a skillfully made watch dares to say that as he does not understand its use he does not believe in the master who made it To know Him is hard For ages from our forefather Adam to our own day we labor to attain that knowledge and are still infinitely far from our aim but in our

hand led him forward. The ha rs t ed n the knot hurt P erre nd there were l es of pa n on his face nd shamefaced sm le H s huge figure, w th rms ha n down a d w th a puckered, though sm l ng f ce mo ed fter Willarski w h u certa n, timid steps.

H led h m bo t ten paces. W llarski pped.

Wha ever happen to you, he sa d, you must bear t all ma full f you ha e firmly re ed t jo n ur Brotherhood. (P erre nod ded affirmati ely.) "When you hea knock at the door you will unco er our eyes, added Willarski. I w sh you courage d success, and pres P erre s ha d, he went out.

Left al P erre wen n smil g n the ... shoul

The E mi es pe t w th l e ... d seemed h m n hour H rms felt numb his legs almos ga e wa t seemed t him that he was tired ut. H experienced var ety of most omp ex sensations. He felt fraid of hat would happen o h m d t ll mo e afraid of ho g his fear He felt cu ious to know ha was go ng to happen d what would be revea ed t h m b most of ll he felt joyful th t the moment had com when he would t last start o that path of rege eration and th cu l virtuous l f f which h had been dreaming s e h met Joseph Alexé evich. Loud knocks were heard t th doo P erre took t ba dage ff his eyes nd gl ed around him. The room wa n black dark ess, only small lamp was burn ns d som thing white. P erre wen ea er and saw that the lamp stood black table on wh ch la open book. Th book was th Gospel, d the h thing w th the lamp ns d was hu man skull with ts cavities nd teeth. Af er reading the firs words of the Gospel In the beg n ng was th W rd and th W rd was with God, P erre wen round th tabl nd saw large pen box filled w th somethi It coffin w th bo es ns d He was not t al surpr sed by what h saw H pin t en er o an entirel ew lif quit unlik th old n h expected everythi g o be unusual, even more unusual than wha h was see A skull, coffin, th Gospel— seemed him that h had expected ll this and even more. Trying to stimula his emotions h loo ed around. God, death, lo the brotherhood f man h kep sa ng t himself, associat ing these words w th vagu jo ful deas.

Th door opened nd someone came in

B the d m l ht t wh h P erre had al eady become a cust med, he saw a rather short man. H ev dently come from the l ht nto the da knes the man paused, then mo ed w th ... table and placed on

... ron ... he ... se a ... l

f e wh ch wa l t up from bel

F what ha e you come h ther? a ked th newcomer turn n n P erre s d rection t a sl ht rustle made by the l tter Wh ha e you, who do not bel ev n the truth of the l ght d who ha e n t seen the l ght, come here? What d you seek from us? W sdom, v rtue en l ht nment

At th moment the door opened and th tranger came P erre f lt sense f we a d venerat n s h he had exper enced n h ... h mself n the

brother who prep red a seeker f r ent t to the Brotherhood was known). Draw ea er he recognized n the Rhetor ma he knew Smolya f o a d it mort fied h m to th nk that the newcomer was n cqua ta ce—he w shed h m mpl brother d rtuous truct For lon t me he could not utter word, so that the Rhetor had t repeat his question.

"Yes I I desire regenerat on P erre uttered w th d fficulty

"Very well, sa d Smolya nov nd w t on t once H e you y dea of the mea b which our holy Order w ll h lp you to rea h your aim sa d he qu etly d qu kl

I hope f guidance h lp n regenerat on, sa d P erre w th trembl o ce nd some difficulty n utterance due t his exciteme t d t bei u ccust med to peak of bstract matters n Ru n.

"Wh t is your con ept n of Freemasonry

I imag e that Freemasonry th fratern ty d equal y of men who ha rtuous ms, sa d P erre feel shamed of th dequacy of his words for the solem ty of the moment, as h poke. I imag e

Good sa d th Rhet qu ckl pparent l sa fied with thi nswer H e you sought for means of ta ng your m n rel gio

Where are you going to now my dear sir?

I? I m going to I etersburg answered Pierre in a childlike hesitating voice I thank you I agree with all you have said But do not suppose me to be so bad With my whole soul I wish to be what you would have me be but I have never had help from anyone But it is I above all who am to blame for everything Help me teach me and perhaps I may

Pierre could not go on He gulped and turned away

The Mason remained silent for a long time evidently considering

Help comes from God alone he said but such measure of help as our Order can bestow it will render you my dear sir You are going to Petersburg Hand this to Count Willarski (he took out his notebook and wrote a few words

to solitude and self examination and do not resume your former way of life And now I wish you a good journey my dear sir he added seeing that his servant had entered and success

The traveler was Joseph Alexéevich Bazdéev as Pierre saw from the postmaster s book Bazdéev had been one of the best known Freemasons and Martinists even in Novíkov s time For a long while after he had gone Pierre did not go to bed or order horses but paced up and down the room pondering over his vicious past and with a rapturous sense of beginning anew pictured to himself the blissful irreproachable virtuous future that seemed to him so easy It seemed to him that he had been vicious only because he had somehow forgotten how good it is to be virtuous Not a trace of his former doubts remained in his soul He firmly believed in the possibility of the brotherhood of men united in the aim of supporting one another in the path of virtue and that is how Freemasonry presented itself to him

CHAPTER III

On reaching Petersburg Pierre did not let anyone know of his arrival he went nowhere and spent whole days in reading Thomas à Kempis whose book had been sent him by

ity of active brotherly love among men which Joseph Alexéevich had revealed to him A

week after his arrival the young Polish count, Willarski whom Pierre had known slightly in Petersburg society came into his room one evening in the official and ceremonious manner in which Dólokhov s second had called on him and having closed the door behind him and satisfied himself that there was nobody else in the room addressed Pierre

I have come to you with a message and an offer Count he said without sitting down A person

hood h

ceived

and has proposed to me to be your sponsor I consider it a sacred duty to fulfill that person s wishes Do you wish to enter the Brotherhood of Freemasons under my sponsorship?

The cold austere tone of this man whom he had almost always before met at balls amiably smiling in the society of the most brilliant women surprised Pierre

Yes I do wish it said he

Willarski bowed his head

One more question Count he said which I beg you to answer in all sincerity—not as a future Mason but as an honest man have you renounced your former convictions—do you believe in God?

Pierre considered

Yes yes I believe in God he said

In that case began Willarski but Pierre interrupted him

Yes I do believe in God he repeated

In that case we can go said Willarski My carriage is at your service

Willarski was silent throughout the drive To Pierre s inquiries as to what he must do and how he should answer Willarski only replied that brothers more worthy than he would test him and that Pierre had only to tell the truth

Having entered the courtyard of a large house where the Lodge had its headquarters and having ascended a dark staircase they entered a small well lit anteroom where they took off their cloaks without the aid of a servant From there they passed into another room A man in strange attire appeared at the door Willarski stepping toward him said something to him in French in an undertone and then went up to a small wardrobe in which

it and tied it in a knot behind catching some hairs painfully in the knot Then he drew his face down kissed him and taking him by the

h ordeal was bo t t beg n

If yo a e resol ed I m t beg your i u t sa d the Rhet r m ng closer to P erre I toke f gene s ty I k you to g e me all your v lu bles

B t I h e n th ng here repl ed P erre s ppos g that he wa ked t g e up ll he possessed.

What y ha e w th y u wat h mo ey n es.

P erre qu kly took out h s purse d watch m me t e t the l

It

Th M so d w the l rt b k l m i e s l ft brea t, d stoop d w p lled up the l f leg of l trousers t bo e the k ee P erre h rr edly bega t k g ff h r ght

sary a d ga hum l ppe fo l left foot W th h ld l k m l f emb rrassment doubt, a d self-de wh l app red on h f e ga t his w ll P erre tood w t h rms h g d wn a d legs p t, bef e hi b other Rh t d wa ted h s f rthe c mma ds.

A d ow t ken f ca lo I a k y u to eal t m your ch ef p s d the l t ter

My p s l I h had so ma y epl ed P erre

"That p ss wh l m e tha all thers ca sed y t wa er n tl p tl f rt d th Maso

P err p used k g eply

"W ? Gl tto y? Idl ess? La ess? Irri tab l ty? A ger? W me ? He w t o er h es his m d, t k w g to wh ch of them to g th p em e ce

W me h sa d n l w scarcely dible

ttent upo y urs lf p t b dle n your se es d k blessed ss t p ss but y own h rt. Th so e f blessed ss is th t b t w th n

P err h d alr dy l g been feel in hum

elf tl at refresl ng source of bles l es wl cl now flooded l s l e rt w tl gl d emot n

CHAPTER IV

SOON AFTER THIS there came int tl e da k ch m P erre not tl e Rl et r l ut P erre s

d chest u m ered tepp ng u e e ly and t m l ly t o e l ppe ed a l one l w ted foot l e l van ed wh l W llarski held a sw rd to l s b e cl est. He w s lu ted fro n that room l g pa sages that turned l ckward a l f r n l bors of w red d oors h l m A h ce tl er wa

f ld nd s tl ey we t long he w s t t l ne-

endu e t lsa d dang rs. Dur g tl ese wander i gs P erre not ced tl t he wa poken of n w a the Seeker n w as the S ffe er a d now a the P t l t to the comp me t of ar o k ock gs w tl m llet and wo ds. As h wa be g led p t some object l e n t ced l es tat n a d u ert ty mo g l on

th t they took h r ght h nd pl ed t on someth g a d t ld h m to h ld p of com p sses to h l ft bre t w th tl tl er ha d d t epe t lter someone wl ead al d tl

ba d g was t ken ff l s eyes d by tl e f t

blood. O g th P erre mo ed f rward w th l s b east t ward the sw rds mean ng them t p t. B t the w ds w e drawn b k f m l m d he was t o ce bl dfold ed ga n

Now th u ha t seen the lesser l ght, ut

No I considered it erroneous and did not follow it said Pierre so softly that the Rhetor did not hear him and asked him what he was saying I have been an atheist answered Pierre

You are seeking for truth in order to follow its laws in your life therefore you seek wisdom and virtue Is that not so? said the Rhetor after a moment s pause

Yes yes assented Pierre

The Rhetor cleared his throat crossed his

with yours you may enter our Brotherhood with profit The first and chief object of our *Order the foundation on which it rests and* which no human power can destroy is the preservation and handing on to posterity of a certain important mystery which has come down to us from the remotest ages even from the first man—a mystery on which perhaps the fate of mankind depends But since this mystery is of such a nature that nobody can know or use it unless he be prepared by long and diligent self purification not everyone can hope *to attain it quickly Hence we have a secondary* aim that of preparing our members as much as possible to reform their hearts to purify and enlighten their minds by means handed on to us by tradition from those who have striven to *attain this mystery and thereby to render them* capable of receiving it

By purifying and regenerating our members we try thirdly to improve the whole human race offering it in our members an example of *piety and virtue and thereby try with all our* might to combat the evil which sways the world Think this over and I will come to you again

To combat the evil which sways the world Pierre repeated and a mental image of his *future activity in this direction* rose in his mind He imagined men such as he had himself been a fortnight ago and he addressed an edifying exhortation to them He imagined to himself vicious and unfortunate people whom he would assist by word and deed imagined oppressors whose victims he would rescue Of the three objects *mentioned* by the Rhetor this

second aim that of purifying a ... himself did not much interest him because at that moment he felt with delight that he was

already perfectly cured of his former faults and was ready for all that was good

Half an hour later the Rhetor returned to inform the seeker of the seven virtues corresponding to the seven steps of Solomon s temple which every Freemason should cultivate in *himself These virtues were 1 Discretion the* keeping of the secrets of the Order *Obedience* to those of higher ranks in the Order *3 Morality 4 Love of mankind 5 Courage 6 Generosity 7 The love of death*

In the seventh place try by the frequent thought of death the Rhetor said to bring yourself to regard it not as a dreaded foe but as a friend that frees the soul grown weary in the labors of virtue from this distressful life and leads it to its place of *recompense and* peace

Yes that must be so thought Pierre when after these words the Rhetor went away leaving him to solitary meditation It must be so but I am still so weak that I love my life the meaning of which is only now gradually opening before me But five of the other virtues which Pierre recalled counting them on his fingers he felt already in his soul *courage*

be free from his own lawlessness and to submit his will to those who knew the indubitable *truth) He forgot what the seventh virtue was* and could not recall it

The third time the Rhetor came back more quickly and asked Pierre whether he was still firm in his intention and determined to sub*mit to all that would be required of him*

I am ready for everything said Pierre

I must also inform you said the *Rhetor* that our Order delivers its teaching not in words only but also by other means which may perhaps have a stronger effect on the sincere seeker after wisdom and virtue than mere words This chamber with what you see therein should already have suggested to your heart if it is sincere more than words could do You will perhaps also see in your further initiation a like method of enlightenment Our Order *imitates* the ancient societies that explained their teaching by hieroglyphics A hieroglyph said the Rhetor is an emblem of something not cognizable by the senses but which possesses qualities resembling those of the symbol

Pierre knew very well what a hieroglyph was but dared not speak He listened to the Rhetor in silence feeling from all he said that

these men o ly brothers nd burned w th im p t ence to set to wo k w th them.

The Grand Master rapped w th h s mallet, All the Maso sat d wn n th r pl ces, and of them read n exhortat n the neces s ty of humil ty

The Gra d Master proposed th t the last du ty h ld be perf rmed, nd the d t gu hed d gn tary who bore the t tle of Coll t of Alms we t ro d to all the brothers. P erre o ld ha e l ked to subscr be ll he had but fearing that t m ght look l ke pride subscr bed th same amou t as th thers.

The meeti g was t n e d, and n reach ng home P err f lt s I he had returned from a lo g journey n wh ch h e had spent d n f years, had become completely cha ged nd had q te l ft beh d his f rmer hab ts nd way f l fe.

CHAPTER V

T HE AFTER h had been rece ed nto the Lodge P err was tt g at h me read g book d tryn g t f th m the gn fica of the Square e de f wh h ymbol ed God nother moral th gs, th rd phy cal th ngs d th f rth comb nat of these N w and then his tt nt wandered from the book d the Square d he formed magi t on ew plan f l fe. O th p ev us even t the Lodge, he had heard that rum r of his d el had reached th Emper nd th t t w uld be wiser f him to lea e P tersburg P erre p posed g g t h estates n the so th d ther tte di g to the w lfa of his serfs. H was joyf lly plan g thi new l fe he Pri e V il suddenly en ered the room.

My dear fell w what ha e y u been up to in Moscow? Why h y u quarr l d with Hélè m her Y u are under d lus n sa d Pri e Vasil as he ntered. I k w ll bo t, and I can t ll y u pos t ely that Hé l e as ocent bef y u as Christ was be f the Jews.

P erre was bout to eply but Pri Vasil in errup ed him.

A d why didn y u mply com tra ght to m as to fr d? I kn w all bout t d un derstand t all h sa d. Y u beha ed as be mes man who alues his h perhap too hastily b t w w n t g to that. B t co d er th pos ti n n which y u ar placi g her d m n th eyes f soci ty d even f th court, h dded lower his ce. 'Sh is li ing Moscow d y u ar her Remembe dear boy d h drew P err arm down wards it is s mply m sunderstand g I ex pect you feel it so yo rself Let u write her a letter t once and he ll come here and all w ll be expla ned or else my dear boy let me tell you t s qu te l kely you ll h e to uffer for t.

Prince V sil gave P erre a s gn f ca t look.

I know from rel ble so rces that the D w ager Empress is tak g a keen terest n the whole affa r You know she is very gracious t Hélène.

P erre tried several t mes to speak but on one hand Pr nce V asili d d n t let h m a d on the other P erre h mself fe red t be n to peak in the t ne f d cided refusal nd dis greement n wh ch he had f rmly resol ed to

got up nd sat down ga struggl w h msel to do wh t wa fo h m the most d ffi cult th g n l fe—to say an u pleasant th n to man s f ce to say what the other whoever he m ght be d d n t expect. He wa so used to subm tt g t Pr e V a il s tone of careles self assura e that he f lt he wo ld be u ble to w thstand t now but he lso felt that on what he sa d n w his f tu depended—wheth er h wo ld foll w the same old ro d, or that new path so ttract ely hown h m by the Ma so o wh ch he firmly bel eved he would be reborn t a ew l fe

N w dear boy sa d Pr nce V asil pl y f l ly say yes and I ll wr te to her myself a d w w ll k ll the f tted calf.

B t bef re Pr V asil h d fi hed his playf l peech, P erre w thout look g at h m, d w th a k nd of fury that made h m l k his father m ttered n a whisper

Prince I d d n t ask you her Go please go! And he jumped up and opened th door f him.

Go! h repeated, ama ed at h msel nd gl d t see the look of confus n d fe r that showed ts lf on Pr n Vasil f ce

"What the matt w th y u Are y u ll?"

Go! the qu er ng ce repeated. And Pri ce V asili had to go w thout ng y expl n tion.

A week later P erre, ha g taken lea of his new friends th Maso and lea g l rge sums f m ney with them f lms went way t his estates. His ew brethren ga e him let ters to the K iev d Odessa Masons d prom ised t write to him nd gu de him n his new ctı ty

tered a voice Then the candles were relit and he was told that he would see the full light the bandage was again removed and more than ten voices said together *Sic transit gloria mundi*

Pierre gradually began to recover himself and looked about at the room and at the people in it Round a long table covered with black sat some twelve men in garments like those he had already seen Some of them Pierre had met in Petersburg society In the President s chair sat a young man he did not know with a peculiar cross hanging from his neck On his right sat the Italian abbé whom Pierre had met at Anna Pávlovna s two years before There were also present a very distinguished dignitary and a Swiss who had formerly been tutor at the Kurágins All maintained a solemn silence listening to the words of the President who held a mallet in his hand Let into the wall was a star shaped light At one side of the table was a small carpet with various figures worked upon it at the other was something resembling an altar on which lay a Testament and a skull Round it stood seven large candlesticks like those used in
T

must prostrate himself at the Gates of the Temple

He must first receive the trowel whispered one of the brothers

Oh hush please! said another

Pierre perplexed looked round with his shortsighted eyes without ob

y asted a moment Pierre glanced at the serious faces of those around remembered all he had already gone through and realized that he could not stop halfway He was aghast at his hesitation and trying to arouse his former devotional feeling prostrated himself before the Gates of the Temple And reall
him even
had lain t
and a whi pron such as the others wore was put on him he was given a trowel and three pairs of gloves and then the Grand Master addressed him He told him that he should try to do nothing to stain the whiteness of that apron which symbolized strength and purity then of the unexplained trowel he told him to toil with it to cleanse his own heart from vice and indulgently to smooth with it the heart of his neighbor As to the first pair of gloves a man s he said that Pierre could not know their meaning but must keep them The second pair of man s gloves he was to wear at the meetings and finally of the third a pair of women s gloves he said Dear brother these woman s gloves are intended for you too Give them to the woman whom you shall honor most of all This gift will be a pledge of your purity of heart to her whom you select to be your worthy helpmeet in Masonry And after a pause he added But beware dear brother that these gloves do not deck hands that are unclean While the Grand Master said these last words it seemed to Pierre that he grew embarrassed Pierre himself grew still more confused blushed like a child till tears came to his eyes began looking about him uneasily and an awkward pause followed

This silence was broken by one of the brethren who led Pierre up to the rug and began reading to him from a manuscript book an explanation of all the figures on it the sun the moon a hammer a plumb line a trowel a rough stone and a squared stone a pillar three windows and so on Then a place was assigned to Pierre he was shown the signs of the Lodge told the password and at last was permitted to sit down The Grand Master began reading the statutes They were very long and Pierre from joy agitation and embarrassment was not in a state to understand what was being read He managed to follow only the last words of the statutes and these remained in his mind

In our temples we recognize no other distinctions read the Grand Master but those between virtue and vice Beware of making any distinctions which may infringe equality Fly to a brother s aid whoever he may be exhort him who goeth astray raise him that falleth never bear malice or enmity toward thy brother Be kindly and courteous Kindle in all hearts the flame of virtue Share thy happiness with thy neighbor and may envy never dim the purity of that bliss Forgive th e m lo

He finished and getting up embraced and kissed Pierre who with tears of joy in his eyes looked round him not knowing how to answer the congratulations and greetings from acquaintances that met him on all sides He acknowledged no acquaintances but saw in all

these men only brothers and bu ned w th m
P t e ce to set to w rk w th tl em
The Gra d Master rapped w th h s m llet All the Maso s sat down n the r places nd f them read an exl t t on n tl e neces-

d

s

Alms went rou u to o ld ha e l ked to subscribe ll he had but fear g th t it m ght look l ke p de subscr bed the me mo t s the others.
Th meeti g was at an end nd on reacl ng h me P err felt as f he had returned from a l g j urney on which he had spent d ens f years had become completely ch nged and h d qu te left beh nd his f rmer hab t and y l l fe.

CHAPTER V

T E Y AFTER he h d been rece ed nto the Lodge P erre wa tt ng t h m re d ng a book d tryi g t f thom th s gn ficanc e f d f wh ch symbol ed God

d l had reached the E p uld be wi er f h m t le e Pet rsburg P rr p posed go g t h tates the so th d there tt d g t the w lf e of h s new l f

sa d Pr ce Vasil as h er d bo t t and I ca tell y u po t ly that Hé l as ocent b f y u as Ch ist was be- f th Jews.
P rr was bo t t eply but P nc Vasil interrupt d h m.
A d why d d t y u mply c m t ght to me to fr d? I k w ll b ut t d un d rsta d t all he d. Y u b h d be mes m n who alues h h o p h ps t hastily b t we w t g nt h t. B t s d er the pos t wh h y u pl c g her d m the y f soc y d e n f the court h dd d, l w ng h e Sh is l ing M cow d y u he Rememb r d boy d h dr w P erre s arm d wn

war Is it is s mply a m su derstan l ng I ex pect you feel t so yourself Let us wr te her a letter at once and sl e ll come here and all w ll be expl ined or else my dear boy let me tell y u it s qu te l kely you ll l e to suffer for it.
Pr nce Vasil gave P erre a s gnif cant look
I know from rel able sources that the D w ager Emp ess s taking a keen interest in the wl le affa r You know she is very graci us to Hélène
P erre tried several t mes t speak, but on one h nd Prince Va ili d d not let l m and on the other P erre l m elf fea ed t beg n t the tone of decided refusal nd dis- sol ed to w rds ourte- nt red, ous recurred to l got up and sat d wn aga n truggl g w th h mself to do what was f r h m the most d ffi- cult th g l fe—to say an unpleasa t th n to a m n face t say what tl e otl er whoever h m ght be d d not expe t. He w s so used to bm tt ng t Pr n e Va ll s t ne of ca eless lf assurance th t he felt he would be un ble t w thstand it n w but he lso felt that on what he sa d n wl f t re lepended—wheth er h w uld f ll w tl e same old road or that new p th so attract ly sh wn h m by the Ma so on wl ch he f rmly bel eved he would be eborn to a new l fe
N w dea boy s d Pr ce Va il pl yf l ly say yes and I ll wr te to l er myself and we w ll k ll the f tted calf
But bef re Pri ce Vasili had f n hed his pl yful spe ch P erre w thout look g t l m nd w tl a k d f fury that made h m l ke his

to h m.
Gol he repeated m ed at h mself a d gl d t see the look of c fu on d fear that

expl at o
A week l ter P erre has g t ken leave of his new frie ds the M so s and lea g large s ms f mo ey w th them f r lms went away t h estates H new brethren ga e l m let t rs t the K e d Odessa Maso s and prom ed to wr te to him a d gu de him in h s new activ ty

CHAPTER VI

THE DUEL bett een Pierre and Dólokhov was hushed up and in spite of the Emperor s se verity regarding duels at that time neither the principals nor their seconds suffered for it But the story of the duel confirmed by Pierre s rupture with his wife was the talk of society Pierre who h ~ ing cond son and best matc u s t had sunk greatly in the esteem of society after his marriage— h ~ ~ ~

I i u uid not wish to court so ciety s favor Now he alone was blamed for what had happened he was said to be insanely jealous and subject like his father to fits of bloodthirsty rage And when after Pierre s de parture Hélène returned to Petersburg she was received by all her acquaintances not only cordially but even with a shade of deference due to her misfortune When conversation turned on her husband Hélène assumed a dig nified expression which with characteristic tact she had acquired though she did not un derstand its significance This expression sug gested that she had resolved to endure her troubles uncomplainingly and that her h is ban l ~

v as men tioned and pointing to his forehead remarked

A bit touched—I always said so

I said from the first declared Anna Pávlovna referring to Pierre I said at the time and before anyone else (she insisted on her priority) that that senseless young m n

 t h m when he had just re turned from abroad and when if you remem ber he posed as a sort of Marat at one of my soirees And how has it ended? I was against this marriage even then and foretold all that has happened

Anna Pávlovna continued to give on free eve nings the same kind of soirees as before—such as she alone had the gift of arranging—at wh ch was to be found the cream of really good so ciety the bloom of the intellectual essence of Petersburg as she herself put it Besides this refined selection of society Anna Pávlovna s receptions were also distingu sl ed by the fact that she always presented some new and inter esting person to the visitors and that nowhere else was the state of the political thermometer of legitimate Petersburg court society so clear ly and distinctly indicated

Toward the end of 1806 when all the sad details of Napoleon s destruction of the Prus sian army at Jena and Auerstadt and the sur render of most of the Prussian fortresses had been received when our troops had already entered Prussia and our second war with Na poleon was beginning Anna Pávlovna gave one of her soirees The cream of really good soci ety consisted of the fascinating Hélène f r saken by her husband Mortemart the deli ht ful Prince Hippolyte who had just returned from Vienna two diplomatists the old aunt a young man referred to in that drawing room as a man of great merit (*un homme de beau coup de mérite*) a newly appointed maid of honor and her mother and several other less noteworthy persons

The novelty Anna Pávlovna was setting be fore her guests that evening was Borís Drubet skóy who had just arrived as a special mes senger from the Prussian army and was aide de camp to a very important personage

The temperature shown by the political thermometer to the company that evening was this

Whatever the European sovereigns and com manders may do to countenance Bo aparte ~

s t iews on that subject and can only say to the King of Prussia and others So much the worse for you *Tu l as voulu George Dandin* that s all we have to say about it!

When Borís who was to be served up to the guests entered the drawing room almost all the company had assembled and the conversa tion guided by Anna Pávlovna was about our diplomatic relations with Austria and the hope of an alliance w th her

Borís grown more manly and looking fresh rosy and self possessed entered the draw n room elegantly dressed n the uniform of an aide de camp and was duly conducted to p y h s respects to the aunt and then brought back to the general circle

Anna Pávlovna gave him her shriveled han l to k ss and introduced him to several persons whom he d d not know giv ng him a whispered description of each

Prince Hippolyte Kurágin —— charmin

You w l l e it so G g D nd n a comedy by Mol è e —Tr

you fellow M Kro q—cl arg d ff es from Cope hagen— pr f nd nt llect a d m pl M Shft —a man f great mer t —tl s — hed

tu B ri h d m n ged d r g n s s e pl e h mself ery d nt eo ly He was d -de-camp t ery mpo ta t perso ge had bee se t n a very mport t m ss on t Pruss d had j t returned from ther as a pec al messe er He h d becom th ro ghly

e a t ff t w k or courage o perse era b t ly th kn wledge of how t get with those wh ca gra t eward d he as himself oft urprised t th rap d ty of *h success d t the b l ty of others t u*

rich, b t would spend h l t groat to be bet ter dressed than thers and would rather de p hims lf f ma y pleas res tha allow himself to be see habby equ p ge o p- pea th treets f Petersb rg n old u f rm. H mad friends w th d so ht the quaintance f nly those bo e h m n pos io and h co ld theref e be of use to h m. H liked Petersburg d despised Moscow Tl remembra ce f th Rostó house d f his childish lo e f N tásh was u pleasant to him and h had t o ce been t ee th Rostóvs ce th day f his dep rture f the army T be Ann Pá lo na draw room h considered an importa t tep up theserv ce, and h t e understood his le, lettı g h hostess mak use f whatever terest h had to ffer H himself carefully *sca ned each* face, pprais ng th poss b l ties of establ h in intimacy w th each of those present, and th d a tages that mi h cru He took th sea indicated to him bes d th fair Hélène and liste ed to th general con ersati n

"Vie *na con* ders th bases f th p posed treaty so nattainabl tha not ev n con u- tv f most brilliant successes would secure them, nd h doubts th means w ha e of winning them. That is th ctual phrase used by the V enna cabinet, said th D nish charge d affaires.

t tl man of

enna sa d

t

M rtemart "The Emperor of Austr a can nev er ha e th ught of such a th ng t is only the cal net th t says t.

Ah my dea v comte put in Ann Pá l v na *I U p* (for some re so she called it *U pe* as if tl t were a pec ally r f ed French pro unc at n wl ch l e could all w herself when co vers g w th Frenchm n) *L U p ne se j m t e ll le è e*

After th t An Pá l n led up to the courage nd f rm ess of the K g of Pruss a in o der to draw Borl nto tl e con ersat o

Bo is l te ed tt nt ely t ea h of the speakers wa t g turn b t m n *red mean* wl le t look to d epeatedly at h ne gh- bo the beaut ful Hélène whose eyes several t mes met those of the handsome yo ng a de- d -camp w th sm le

Speak g of tl e pos t n of Pruss a, Ann Pá l n ery n t rally ked Borl to t ll them bout h jo rney to Glogau and t what stat he f u d the Pruss n rmy Boris, speak ng w th del berat t ld them pu e cor rect F nch m y i terest g deta l abo t the rm es a d the cou t, car fully l ta g from expres g an op n n of h own bout the f cts l e was eco t n For some t me he engros ed the ge eral attent n a d Anna Pá l n felt that the lty sl e had erved up was rec ed w tl pl u e by ll her t rs. The greatest atte t o of *ll to Borl n rrat e wa sh wn by Hélè e* She ked h m several quest n bout h j urney a d eemed greatly nterested n th tate of tl Pruss rmy As soon a he h d fin hed he turned to h m w th her usual sm le

You bsolutely must come nd see me sl e sa d to e that mpl ed that, f certa n con *derat o h could not know of this was b- sol tely necessary*

On Tuesd y between e ght and n e. It w ll gi m great pleasure.

Boris promised t f lfill her wish a d was bout to beg n a con ersati n w th her when A Pá lovn called h m way th p et t that h u t w hed t hear h m.

"Y u know her husband, of co rse sa d Anna P l n clos h eyes d d cat e Hélè w th sorr wf l gest e. Ah h is uch n unf rt na d charm w m

"Europe will never be ur in er lly

Don t mention him before her—please don t! It *is too painful for her!*

CHAPTER VII

WHEN BORIS and Anna Pávlovna returned to the others Prince Hippolyte had the ear of the company

Bending forward in his armchair he said *Le Roi de Prusse!* and having said this laughed Everyone turned toward him

Le Roi de Prusse? Hippolyte said interrogatively again laughing and then calmly and seriously sat back in his chair Anna Pávlovna waited for him to go on but as he seemed quite decided to say no more she began to tell of how at Potsdam the impious Bonaparte had stolen the sword of Frederick the Great

It is the sword of Frederick the Great which I she began but Hippolyte interrupted her with the words *Le Roi de Prusse* and again as soon as all turned toward him excused himself and said no more

Anna Pávlovna frowned Mortemart Hippolyte s friend addressed him firmly

Come now what about your *Roi de Prusse?*

Hippolyte laughed as if ashamed of laughing

Oh it s nothing I only wished to say *(he wanted to repeat a joke he had heard in* Vienna and which he had been trying all that evening to get in) I only wished to say that we are wrong to fight *pour le Roi de Prusse!*

Boris smiled circumspectly so that it might be taken as ironical or appreciative according to the way the joke was received Everybody laughed

Your joke is too bad it s witty but unjust said Anna Pávlovna shaking her little shriveled finger at him

We are not fighting pour le Roi de Prusse

and turned chiefly on the political news It became particularly animated toward the end of the evening when the rewards bestowed by the Emperor were mentioned

There are precedents I may mention Schwarzenberg

It s impossible replied another

Will you bet? The ribbon of the order is a different matter

When everybody rose to go Hélène who had spoken very little all the evening again turned to Boris asking him in a tone of caressing *significant command to come to her on* Tuesday

It is of great importance to me she said, turning with a smile toward Anna Pávlovna and Anna Pávlovna with the same sad smile with which she spoke of her exalted patroness supported Hélène s wish

It seemed as if from some words Boris had spoken that evening about the Prussian army *Hélène had suddenly found it necessary to see* him She seemed to promise to explain that necessity to him when he came on *Tuesday*

But on Tuesday evening having come to Hélène s splendid salon Boris received no clear explanation of why it had been necessary for him to come There were other guests and the countess talked little to him and only as he kissed her hand on taking leave said unexpect*edly and in a whisper* with a strangely unsmiling face Come to dinner tomorrow in the evening You must come *Come!*

During that stay in Petersburg Boris became an intimate in the countess house

CHAPTER VIII

THE WAR was flaming up and nearing the Russian frontier Everywhere one heard curses on Bonaparte the enemy of mankind Militia men and recruits were being enrolled in the villages and from the seat of war came contradictory news false as usual and therefore vari*ously interpreted The life of old* Prince Bolkónski Prince Andrew and Princess Mary had greatly changed since 1805

In 1806 the old prince was made one of the eight commanders in chief then appointed to supervise the enrollment decreed throughout Russia Despite the weakness of age which had become particularly noticeable since the time when he thought his son had been killed he did not think it right to refuse a duty to which he had been appointed by the Emperor himself and this fresh opportunity for action gave him new energy and strength He was continually traveling through the three provinces entrusted to him was pedantic in the fulfillment *of his duties severe to cruelty* with his subordinates and went into everything down to the

Pardon me! A snuffbox with the Emperor s portrait *is a reward* but not a distinction said the diplomatist— a gift rather

Fo the King of Pr ss —a phrase used in French to den te for a trifle of no value —TR.

n... ... M ry had

to her l ttl nephew s best she could. ... mo selle Bourien e, too seemed p ss nately f d f the boy d Princess M ry oft n deprived hers lf t gi e her friend the plea ure f da dli g the l ttle g l—as he called her nephew—a d playi g w th him.

Near the altar f th church t B ld H lls there was chapel o er the t mb of the l ttle pri cess, d in this chapel was a ma ble m nu ment b o ght from Italy representing gel th tspread w gs ready to fly upwards. Th ...el s pper l p was slightly raised s though bout t smile, a d once on com g t f th chapel Prince A drew and Pri cess Mary dmitted t o e n ther that the ngel s face reminded them tra gely of th l ttl prin cess. B t what wa till trange though of this Prince A drew said n thing to his s ter was that in th express n th sculpto had hap pe ed to gi e th ngel face Pri ce Andrew read th sam mild repro ch he had read on th face f his dead wife Ah, why h e you d e this t me?

Soo after Pri A drew' return th ld prin e mad er to h m large estate Bogu chárov bout twen y-fi e miles from Bald Hills. Partly because f the d press memories associa ed wi h B ld Hills partly because Pri ce A drew d d t always feel equal to bearing with his father' pecul arities, nd p rt ly because h eeded sol tud Pri e A drew mad use f Boguchárov began buildi g nd spe t most f his tim there.

After th Austerlitz camp gn Prince An drew had firmly esol ed not t cont ue his military er d when the war recom menced d erybody had to erv h took a post under his father the ecruitment so as to vo d cti ervice. The ld prince d his son seemed t ha e changed roles since the campaign f 8 5. Th ld man rous d by c tivity expected the best esults from th ew camp gn whil Pri ce A drew n the contrary taki g n part n th war nd ecretly egretting thi saw only th dark de.

O February 6 807 th ld pri ce et off f his circuits. Prince Andrew remained at Bald Hills as usual during h f ther s absence Little N chola had been unwell f r four days. The coa hman who had d en the old prince to t wn returned bri gi p pers and letters f r Pr nce And ew

Not fi d ng the you g prince n h study the valet went w th the letters to Princess M ry s apartments, but d d not find h m there He was t ld that the prin e had gone to the nursery

If you please your excellency Petrú ha h s bro ht some papers," sa d one of the nursemaids to Pri ce Andrew who was tting on ch ld s l ttle ch r wh le frown ng nd w th trembl ng h nd he pou ed drops from med cine bottle nto a wi eglass half full of water

"What is t? he sa d crossly and his ha d shak g un te tion lly he poured too m ny drop nto th gl ss. H threw the m ture on to the floor d ked f some mo e w ter The ma d brou ht t.

There were n the room a ch ld s cot, two bo es, two rm ha rs, a table a ch ld table a d the l ttle cha r on wh ch Prince Andrew wa s tt g The curta n were drawn d s gle candle wa burn g n the table screened by bo d mu c book so that the l ght d d not fall n the cot.

My dear sa d Pr ncess M ry addres ng her brother from bes de the cot where she was sta d ng better wa t a b t l ter

Oh lea e off you lway talk nonsense d keep p tt g th ngs off—and th s s what comes of t! sa d Pr c Andrew in n exa perated whispe ev dently mean ng to wou d h s s ter

My dear re lly t better n t to wake him he asleep sa d the p ces n a t of entreaty

Pr ce A d w got up d w nt on t ptoe up t th l ttle bed w egl s n h nd

Perh p w d re lly better n t wake h m" he sa d hes tat g

As you please really I th k so but as y u please sa d Pr cess M ry e d t ly um dated d co fused that her op f d preva led. She drew her brothe att tion t the ma d who was calling him n a wh s per

It was th eco d n ght th t ne ther of t em had l pt watchi g the boy wh wa n h gh fever Thes l t day m tru t g the ho e h ld doct d expect g ther f r wl om they had ent t t wn th y had be n tryi g first o rem dy d the nother W m ut by sl plessness and anx ety they threw th ir

Don t mention him before her—please don t! It is too painful for her!

CHAPTER VII

WHEN BORIS and Anna Pávlovna returned to the others Prince Hippolyte had the ear of the company

Bending forward in his armchair he said *Le Roi de Prusse!* and having said this laughed Everyone turned toward him

Le Roi de Prusse? Hippolyte said interrogatively again laughing and then calmly and seriously sat back in his chair Anna Pávlovna waited for him to go on but as he seemed quite decided to say no more she began to tell of how at Potsdam the impious Bonaparte had stolen the sword of Frederick the Great

It is the sword of Frederick the Great which I she began but Hippolyte interrupted her with the words *Le Roi de Prusse* and again as soon as all turned toward him excused himself and said no more

Anna Pávlovna frowned Mortemart Hippolyte s friend addressed him firmly

Come now what about your *Roi de Prusse?*

Hippolyte laughed as if ashamed of laughing

Oh it s nothing I only wished to say (he wanted to repeat a joke he had heard in Vienna and which he had been trying all that evening to get in) I only wished to say that we are wrong to fight *pour le Roi de Prusse!*

Boris smiled circumspectly so that it might be taken as ironical or appreciative according to the way the joke was received Everybody laughed

Your joke is too bad it s witty but unjust said Anna Pávlovna shaking her little shriveled finger at him

We are not fighting *pour le Roi de Prusse* but for right principles Oh that wicked Prince Hippolyte! she said.

The conversation did not flag all evening and turned chiefly on the political news It became particularly animated toward the end of the evening when the rewards bestowed by the Emperor were mentioned

You know N— N— received a snuffbox with the portrait last year? said the man of profound intellect Why shouldn t S— S— get —

There are precedents I may mention Schwarzenberg

It s impossible replied another

Will you bet? The ribbon of the order is a different matter

When everybody rose to go Hélène who had spoken very little all the evening again turned to Boris asking him in a tone of caressing significant command to come to her on Tuesday

It is of great importance to me she said, turning with a smile toward Anna Pávlovna and Anna Pávlovna with the same sad smile with which she spoke of her exalted patroness supported Hélène s wish

It seemed as if from some words Boris had spoken that evening about the Prussian army Hélène had suddenly found it necessary to see him She seemed to promise to explain that necessity to him when he came on Tuesday

But on Tuesday evening having come to Hélène s splendid salon Boris received no clear explanation of why it had been necessary for him to come There were other guests and th countess talked little to him and only as h kissed her hand on taking leave said unexpec edly and in a whisper with a strangely unsmil ing face Come to dinner tomorrow in th evening You must come Come!

During that stay in Petersburg Boris became an intimate in the countess house

CHAPTER VIII

THE WAR was flaming up and nearing the Russian frontier Everywhere one heard curses on Bonaparte the enemy of mankind Militia men and recruits were being enrolled in the villages and from the seat of war came contradictory news false as usual and therefore variously interpreted The life of old Prince Bolkónski Prince Andrew and Princess Mary had greatly changed since 1805

In 1806 the old prince was made one of the

e

s

F

L

[illegible] thought his son had been killed he did not think it right to refuse a duty to which he had been appointed by the Emperor him self and this fresh opportunity for action gave him new energy and strength He was continually traveling through the three provinces entrusted to him was pedantic in the fulfillment of his duties severe to cruelty with his subordinates and went into everything down to the

[illegible] diplomatist— a gift rather

For the King of P[illegible]a — phrase used in French to denote for a trifle of no value —TR.

cumsta ces allowed I have h ste ed t take all step t that e d M y I ha e cceeded! The Pruss general p de tl em el es on be i g pol te t the Fre h d lay d wn tl e r arm t th first dema d.

"The head f the garr so t Glogau w th ten th sand men asks the k g of Pru hat he is t d f he summ ed t s rre der All th s s bsolutely true

I h rt, h p to s ttle matt rs by t k g p l keatt t de t t r t tl t we ha e la ded rsel es n wa a d wh t m e n r wn fro t ers w th d f the k ng f Pruss We ha e eryth g in perfect or der ly e l ttle th g is l cki g nam ly a comma der n chi f A t wa on dered th t the Austerl tz success m l t h been m e dec e had tl e comm der n h f ot be n so yo ll oct g t n we e e ewed d f Proz ó k d Kámen k tl e latt wa

P tersb rg Th m l ar t ken to the field marshal room f h l kes t lo everyth g h mself I m called n t help so t tl e letters d take those mea t f u The field m rshal lo k n d wa ts f lett rs dd essed t l m We sea ch, b t e et bef u d Th field m rshal gro s mp t e t nd sets to w rk l m self d fi d letters from the Empero to Co t T Pri e V a d th rs. Tl en l e burst e f h w ld f es d raves t e ery one d everyth g e es the lett rs ope s them, d reads thos from th Empero d dressed t th rs. Ah! So that the way tl ey treat m ! N fid m

k m all y rid g h writes t th Em per r I l e got sa ldle so wh h m g f er ll my pres ou jo rneys q t p es ts my d g d mma d g so t rmy so l ha passed th comma d to th g n

W ld f sh ed ooden ea t h co ed top. Tr.

eral next in se or ty Count Buxhöw le I g sent h m my wh le st ff d ll tl at be lo gs to t, d ng h m if there is a lack f brea l to m ve f rther to tl e interi r of Pruss f r o ly e lays r t n of bre l re mai s a d n some reg me ts n ne at all as reported by tl e d v n comm lers O ter ma d Sedm rétzki a d all that tl e peas ants h d h been eaten up I myself w ll r ma n l osp tal t Ostrolenka t ll I reco er In regard to wl ch I humbly subm t my re port w th the i f rmat n that if the r v re ma in its p esent b ouac an tl er f rt gl t there w ll n t be a healtl y m n left in it b p

Grant leave t ret re t l s co try se t to an ol l m n wl o is l e dy n any ca e d h n o ed by be g unable t f lfill the g eat l gl ri u ta k f wl cl h w chos n. I sl ll wa t y most grac u perm here i h p t l tl t I m y n t ha e t pl y the p rt of a s cr t ry ratl r tl a comm d n the army My rem v l from the army does n t pro d

I

n t rally crea gly nterest g d ter ta g After tl field m rsh l s leparture it ppears tl t we e w th n s ght of the en my a d m t g e battl B l wde is comm nd

W t s y uk w h e ery b d w of d cid g whetl b ttle w s w r lost. Tl ose wl o et t fter a b ttl ha e lost t wh t w say d ccord g t tl tu we wh lost th b ttle f Pult k In h t we et eat ft the b ttl b t end c r er to P ters b rg w th n w of v t ry d Ge eral Ben gse l p g t re e from Pet rsb rg tl e po t f comm der n l ef r ward f l ct ry does t g e up tl e c ma l of tl rmy t G eral B h wd n D r g tl s terregn m w beg n ery g n l n inter est g ser es of m ers O r a m no

burden of sorrow on one another and reproached and disputed with each other

Petrusha has come with papers from your father whispered the maid

Prince Andrew went out

Devil take them! he muttered and after listening to the verbal instructions his father had sent and taking the correspondence and his father s letter he returned to the nursery

Well? he asked

Still the same Wait for heaven s sake Karl Ivanich always says that sleep is more important than anything whispered Princess Mary with a sigh

Prince Andrew went up to the child and felt him He was burning hot

Confound you and your Karl Ivanich! He took the glass with the drops and again went up to the cot

Andrew don t! said Princess Mary

But he scowled at her angrily though also with suffering in his eyes and stooped glass in hand over the infant

But I wish it he said I beg you—give it him!

Princess Mary shrugged her shoulders but took the glass submissively and calling the nurse began giving the medicine The child screamed hoarsely Prince Andrew winced and clutching his head went out and sat down on a sofa in the next room

He still had all the letters in his hand Open

per as follows

Ha e just th m ment rece ed by spe al messenger very joyful news—if it s not f l e Benn g e 1 seems to h ve ol tai e l a omplete vict y o e B o p rte at Eylau In P te burg e ryone s ejo g nd the e a ls s nt to the a my are i nu m rable Tho igh he is a German—I congrat

Ha e rece ed another letter about tl e I reu sel Eyl u battle f om Pétenka—l e t ok p rt in t—and it s all true When m sel f makers d n t med dle e en a German beats Buo p te He i sa l to be flee g n great d sor l r Mi d y u gall p off to Kórch vo without del y and carry o t i stru c t o s

Prince Andrew sighed and broke the seal of another envelope It was a closely written letter of two sheets from Bilibin He folded it up without reading it and reread his father s letter ending with the words Gallop off to Korchevo and carry out instructions!

No pardon me I won t go now till the child is better thought he going to the door and looking into the nursery

Princess Mary was still standing by the cot gently rocking the baby

Ah yes and what else did he say that s unpleasant? thought Prince Andrew recalling his father s letter Yes we have gained a victory over Bonaparte just when I m not serving Yes yes he s always poking fun at me Ah well! Let him! And he began reading Bilibin s letter which was written in French He read without understanding half of it read on

CHAPTER IX

Bilibin was now at army headquarters in a diplomatic capacity and though he wrote in French and used French jests and French id

was happy to have in Prince Andrew a reliable correspondent to whom he could pour out the bile he had accumulated at the sight of all that was being done in the army The letter was old having been written before the battle at Preussisch Eylau

Since the day of our brilliant success at Austerlitz wrote Bilibin as you know my dear prince I never leave headquarters I have certainly acquired a taste for war and it is just as well for me what I have seen during these last three months is incredible

I begin ab ovo The enemy of the human race as you know attacks the Prussians The Prussians are our faithful allies who have only betrayed us three times in three years We take up their cause but it turns out that the enemy of the human race pays no heed to our fine speeches and in his rude and savage way

to smithereens and installs himself in the palace at Potsdam

I most ardently desire writes the King of Prussia to Bonaparte that Your Majesty should be received and treated in my palace in a manner agreeable to yourself and in so far as cir

cumstances allowed, I ha e la te ed t take all steps to that e d. M y I ha e suc ceeded! The Prussian generals p de tl emsel e o be- i g pol te t the Fr ch a d lay d n th ir arms t the first dema d.

"The head f the garr so at Gl gau w th ten thousa d men a ks the k g f Pru hat h is to d f he s mm ed t s rren

commander n chief. A t wa n d red tl t th Austerl tz su cess m l t h e be m e decis e had th comm de n cl ef n t l een so y une all ur octobe s we e re ewed and f Prozoró sk d Kámen k the l tter was preferred. Th g eral me to us S ó- *ro lik tn k b tk* a d rece ed w th ac clamati ns f joy d t mpl

d tak those mea t f r Th field m rsh l looks d a ts f letters dd e ed t l m W sea ch, b t no e e t be f u l Tl e f ld marshal gro mp t t d e ts t w k l m se f and fi ds l tters f m the Emp t Count T Pri V d th rs Th l b rsts t on f h w ld f es d es t e ery and ev ryth g es the letters pe s them, and reads those f m the Emp d dressed t thers. Ah! So th t tl w y tl ey treat m N co fide c mel Ah rdered to keep ey m l V ry well th l C t l g with you So h wri es th f m us der of tl e da to Ge eral B gse

"I am w ded d ca t d d q ently ca t comm d tl e rmy Y l e brought y rmy corp t P lt k ted her t e posed d w th t f el f r b so somethi must be d d y y self eported to Co t B l w le yesterd y ou must th k f t g t f t — which d today

From all my rid g l w te t tl e F peror I ha got ddle so e wl l m g lter all my pre us j u y q t j t my di d mm d g so t n rmy so I ha passed th mm d t tl e ge

ld fa h ed ood ca l

eral next i se v ce ... sent h m ... to ... bread, t more far ... the ... at Pruss f on ... reported by the d ... man a d ... a ts fud ha been ... ma n hosp tal t ... I regard t which I ... port w th th t forma ... ma ns t ts present ... there will t be a ... spr

Cra t lea e to ... a ld m n who ... red by be g una le t f ... gl ri u t k f which he was ... w t your most gra ... l osp t l that I may ... of ... rather ... army My rem al from ... duce the sl gl test ... There r tl sa d ...

"The f ld marshal is ... a d h p n hes us ...

"Th tl e f rst a t. Three ... n t rally t crea ngly ter ... ta g After the fi ld mars ... departure ...

tl e enemy and he w l es t p f t by th ... port n ty t f gl t a l attl o h s own hand

Vec l t sy t know h ry bad w

So energetically do we pursue this aim that after crossing an unfordable river we burn the bridges to separate ourselves from our enemy who at the moment is not Bonaparte but Buxhowden General Buxhowden was all but attacked and captured by a superior enemy force as a result of one of these maneuvers that enabled us to escape him Buxhowden pursues us —we scuttle He hardly crosses the river to our side before we recross to the other At last our enemy Buxhowden catches us and attacks Both generals are angry and the result is a challenge on Buxhowden s part and an epileptic fit on Bennigsen s But at the critical moment the courier who carried the news of our victory at Pultusk to Petersburg returns bringing our appointment as commander in chief and our first foe Buxhowden is vanquished *we can now turn our thoughts to the second* Bonaparte But as it turns out just at that moment a third enemy rises before us—namely the *Orthodox Russian soldiers* loudly demanding bread meat biscuits fodder and whatnot! The stores are empty the roads impassable The Orthodox begin looting and in a way of which our last campaign can give you no idea Half the regiments form bands and scour the countryside and put everything to fire and sword The inhabitants are totally ruined the hospitals overflow with sick and famine is everywhere Twice the marauders even attack our headquarters and the commander in chief has to ask for a battalion to disperse them During one of these attacks they carried off my empty portmanteau and my dressing gown The Emperor proposes to give all commanders

I

At first Prince Andrew read with his eyes only but after a while in spite of himself (although he knew how far it was safe to trust Bilibin) what he had read began to interest him more and more When he had read thus far he crumpled the letter up and threw it away It was not what he had read that vexed him but the fact that the life out there in which he had now no part could perturb him He shut his eyes rubbed his forehead as if to rid himself of all interest in what he had read and listened to what was passing in the nursery Suddenly he thought he heard a strange noise through the door He was seized with alarm lest something should have happened to the child while he was reading the letter He went on tiptoe to the nursery door and opened it

Just as he went in he saw that the nurse was hiding something from him with a scared look and that Princess Mary was no longer by the cot

My dear he heard what seemed to him her despairing whisper behind him.

dead All that he saw and heard seemed to confirm this terror

All is over he thought and a cold sweat broke out on his forehead He went to the cot in confusion sure that he would find it empty and that the nurse had been hiding the dead baby He drew the curtain aside and for some

a

head lower than the pillow and was smacking his lips in his sleep and breathing evenly

Prince Andrew was as glad to find the boy like that as if he had already lost him He bent over him and as his sister had taught him, tried with his lips whether the child was still feverish The soft forehead was moist Prince Andrew touched the head with his hand even the hair was wet so profusely had the child perspired He was not dead but evidently the crisis was over and he was convalescent. Prince Andrew longed to snatch up to squeeze to hold to his heart this helpless little creature but dared not do so He stood over him gazing at his head and at the little arms and legs which showed under the blanket He heard a rustle behind him and a shadow appeared under the curtain of the cot. He did not look round but still gazing at the infant s face listened to his regular breathing The dark shadow was Princess Mary who had come up to the cot with noiseless steps lifted the curtain and dropped it again behind her Prince Andrew recognized her without looking and held out his hand to her She pressed it

He has perspired said Prince Andrew

I

dim shadow of the curtain her luminous eyes shone more brightly than usual from the tears of joy that were in them She leaned over to her brother and kissed him slightly catching the curtain of the cot Each made the other a warning gesture and stood still in the dim light beneath the curtain as if not wishing to

leave that eclus o where they three were shut ff from all the world. Pr n e A drew wa the first t move way ruffl n his hair aga t the muslin f th curta

"Yes, this is the one th g I ft me n w he sa d th gh.

CHAPTER X

Soo AFTER his admiss n to the M so c Brotherhood, P erre we t t th K ev pro ce ... mber of serfs, tak

stewards t th head ffice nd expl ed to them hi tenti ns and wishes. He t ld them that steps would be take immed t ly to free his serfs—and that till then they were n t t be erburd ed with labo women while nursing th ir bab es were n t to be sent to wo k assistance as t be given t the serfs, p ish me ts er t be dmon t ry a d not corporal and hosp tals, asyl ms, d schools wer t be established ll th estates. Some of the stewards (there were semil terate f remen m g them) listened w th l rm uppos g these words to mea that th you g count wa d spleased w th their ma geme t d embezzlem t of mo ey some fter th first fright ere amused by P err l p d th new words

could best handl the master f r th r wn ends.

The chi f teward expressed great sympathy w th P erre t ns, but ema ked that besides these cha ges t w uld be necessary t go to the general tate f affa rs which was far from satisf ct ry

Desp te Co t Bezukh v' en rmous wealth h had me t n ome wh ch was said to amount to fi hu dred thousand ru b es year P erre f l h mself fa poore than wh his father had mad h m n ll wa ce f ten thousand rubles. H had d m per ep tio f th f ll w g bud t

About 80 000 w t paym nts on all the esta es to th Land B k bout 3 000 w t for the pkeep f th esta ear Mosc w th town house d th ll wance t th three princesses bo 000 was g en pe ns nd the same m f asylums 5 000 al mony was sent t the cou tess bo 000

we t f t terest d bts. The bu ld n of a new church p ev usly begun had cost b t 0,000 n e h of the la t two ears, and he d d not know how th rest, bout 1 0 000 rubles, wa spent, d lmost every year he wa bl ged to borrow. Bes des th s the ch f st w ard wrote every y a tell g h m of fi es l bad harvests, o of the necess ty of rebu ld i g facto es a d w rk hops. So the first ta k P err had to f e wa one f r wh ch he had ery l ttle pt tude or ncl n t n—pract cal bus ess.

n t l k up w th them r make them m e U the ne ha d the h ef steward put th st t of

P erre dema ded th t eps should be t ken to l berat th serf wh h the steward met b how g the neces t of first p yin off the loa s from the Land B nk nd the consequent mposs b l ty of speedy emanc pation

The steward d d not say t wa qu te mpos ble but suggested sell g the f rest tl pro ce f Kostromá the l d l wer down the er d the Crimean estate orde to make t pos ble ll f wh h operatio ac cord ng to h m were nnected w th u h com pl cated measures—th remo al of j nct o pet t s, perm ts, d so on—that P erre became qu e bew ld red and only repl ed

"Yes yes, do so

P erre had o of the pract cal pers tence th t would ha e bled h m t tt d to the bu ess h mself d so he d sl ked t d only tried t pret nd to tl e steward th t h wa t t nd g to t. Th teward f his part t ed to p e e d to the co t that h cons d ed these o ulta on ry aluabl f r the p p t d troublesom t h mself.

I K ev P err f und some peopl l knew d tra ers h tened t m ke h qua t e d jo fully w l med th n h ew comer th largest l ndowner of th pro e Temptatio to P err s greatest w k es—tl e t wh h he had confessed when dm tted to the Lodge—were so tro g th t h e u d not re t them. Aga whol days weeks, d month f his l f p ssed n great rush nd w much occup ed w th e e g p rt es, d ers lunches nd balls, g him no tim f re-

So energetically do we pursue this aim that after crossing an unfordable river we burn the bridges to separate ourselves from our enemy who at the moment is not Bonaparte but Buxhowden General Buxhowden was all but attacked and captured by a superior enemy force as a result of one of these maneuvers that enabled us to escape him Buxhowden pursues us —we scuttle He hardly crosses the river to our side before we recross to the other At last our enemy Buxhowden catches us and attacks Both generals are angry and the result is a challenge on Buxhowden s part and an epileptic fit on Bennigsen s But at the critical moment the courier who carried the news of our victory at Pultusk to Petersburg returns bringing our appointment as commander in chief and our first foe Buxhowden is vanquished we can now turn our thoughts to the second Bonaparte But as it turns out just at that moment a third enemy rises before

[illegible]

ooting and in a way of which our last campaign can give you no idea Half the regiments form bands and scour the countryside and put everything to fire and sword The inhabitants are totally ruined the hospitals overflow with sick and famine is everywhere Twice the marauders even attack our headquarters and the commander in chief has to ask for a battalion to disperse them During one of these attacks they carried off my empty portmanteau and my dressing gown The Empero [illegible]
of divisions [illegible]
I much fear [illegible]
to shoot the [illegible]

At first Prince Andrew read with his eyes only but after a while in spite of himself (although he knew how far it was safe to trust Bilibin) what he had read began to interest him more and more When he had read thus far he crumpled the letter up and threw it away It was not what he had read that vexed him but the fact that the life out there in which he had now no part could perturb him He shut his eyes rubbed his forehead as if to rid himself of all interest in what he had read and listened to what was passing in the nursery Suddenly he thought he heard a strange noise through the door He was seized with alarm lest something should have happened to the child while he was reading the letter He went on tiptoe to the nursery door and opened it.

Just as he went in he saw that th [illegible]

[illegible]

My dear he heard what seemed to him her despairing whisper behind him

As often happens after long [illegible]

[illegible] at he saw and heard seemed to confirm this terror

All is over he thought and a cold sweat broke o[illegible]
in confu[illegible]
and that [illegible]
baby He [illegible]ew the curtain aside and for some time his frightened restless eyes could not find the baby At last he saw him the rosy boy had tossed about till he lay across the bed with his head lower than the pillow and was smacking his lips in his sleep and breathing evenly

Prince Andrew was as glad to find the boy like that as if he had already lost him. He bent over him and as his sister had taught him, tried with his lips whether the child was still feverish The soft forehead was moist Prince Andrew touched the head with his hand even the hair was wet so profusely had the child perspired He was not dead but evidently the crisis was over and he was convalescent. Prince Andrew longed to snatch up to squeeze to hold to his heart this helpless little creature but dared not do so He stood over him gazing at his head and at the little arms and legs which showed under the blanket He heard a rustle behind him and a shadow appeared under the curtain of the cot. He did not look round but still gazing at the infant s face l[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]pped it again behind her Prince Andrew recogni[illegible]ed her w[illegible]
his [illegible]

I [illegible]

I [illegible]ming to tell you so

The child moved slightly in his sleep smiled, and rubbed his forehead against the pillo[illegible]

Prince Andrew looked at his sister In the dim shadow of the curtain her luminous eyes shone more brightly than usual from the tears of joy that were in them She leaned over to her brother and kissed him slightly catching the curtain of the cot. Each made the other a warning gesture and stood still in the dim light beneath the curtain as if not wishing to

but he insisted, tho h rel ctantly on what he tho ght right. The steward prom ed to do all in his power to carry out th co ts w hes see clea ly th t o ly w uld the c u t ever be ble t fi d out whether all measures had been take f r the sale f the l d a d f rests d to release them from the Land B k, b t wo ld p b bly eve e en q re a d would ever k that the newly ected bu ld

CHAPTER XI

RETUR N FR t his journey throu h So th Russia the happ est t te of m d P erre carried o t te ti h h d l g had of vis g his f end Bolkó ki, wh m he h d n t seen I two ears.

Bogucháro lay in flat u terest g part f th country am g fields d fo ests of fir and b rch, hich wer partly cut d wn The house la beh d newly d po d filled w th water t th bri k d w th b ks t ll bare of grass I

was garden ewly l d t. Th f n es d gates ere ew and sol d t w fir pumps d water cart, pa ted gree tood sh d th paths were traight, the bridges were tro g and had ha drails. E erythi g bo an mp es of t diness d good management. Some domesti serfs P erre m t eply t q es as to where the prin e l ed, po ted t mall ewly built lodge lose to th po d. A tó man who h d looked fter Pri e A drew his boyhood, h lped P rr t f h carriage said that th pr wa t home, and flowed him int clean l ttl teroom.

Pierr wa truck by th modesty f th small though clea house after th b llia t surro d ings in which h had last m t h fri nd n Petersburg

H quickly en ered th small recept n room w th ts till unplastered wood n wall redolen f pine, d would ha e go farther but A t ran ahead tiptoe d knocked t door

"W ll, what is t?" came sharp unpleasant voice.

A v s t r a swe ed Antón.

Ask I m t t at l the sou d was heard of ha be p ed b ck

P erre w nt th r p l t ps to the door a d uddenly came f e to f ce with Pr n e A d ew who came t f wn g and look ng old P erre embraced I m an l l ft I pecta les k ed h f e d the cheek a l looked at h m closely

W ll I d d n t e pect u I am ery glad sa d Pri ce A d ew

P erre s d tl g he looked fi edl at h s friend w th surpri e He was t u k l the change in h m. H s word wer ki lly and there was m le on I l ps and f ce b t l e es were d ll nd l feless d p te of h lent wish to do so he could n t g e them a joyous d glad p kl Pr nce A d ew had grown th nner p ler d more ma l look g but wh t ama ed a d estra ged P err t ll he got u ed to t were h s ert d a w kle on his brow d cat prol ged ntrat n on some o e tho ght.

As u lly th e case w th people meet g fte prol ged sep rat o t was l g be f re th con rsat n ould settle on n tl g They p t q est nd ga e b ef e pl es bo t th gs they k ew h t be talk d er t length. At l st th con ersat o grad ll settled on some of the t p cs at first l l tly t ched o th ir p t l f plans f r th e f t e P erre s jo rney and occ p t s, the war d so o The preoccupat on d d po dency wh ch P erre h d ot ed n h fri ds look wa ow st ll mo e clea ly ex pressed the sm le w th wh ch he l te ed to P erre especi lly wh n h poke w th joyful m t n of the p t th f t re It was as f Pri ce A d ew w uld ha e l ked to symp th w th wh t P err wa sayi g b t u d not. The latter began t feel that t was bad ta te t peak of his thu ms, d eams, d hopes f happ ess good ess n Pri e A d ew p ese ce He wa hamed to expres his ew Maso views, wh ch had been part cul ly re ed d tre thened by his l t t r H hecked h m

tersu rg

I can t t ll you how much I ha l ed through s ce th n I hardly know myself gain.

"Yes, we ha altered much, very much, e then sa d Prince Andrew

flection ns in Petersburg Instead of the new

enjoined every Mason to set an example of moral life and that of the seven virtues he lacked two—morality and the love of death He consoled himself with the thought that he ful filled another of the precepts—that of reform ing the human race—and had other virtues—love of his neighbor and especially generosity

In the spring of 1807 he decided to return to Petersburg On the way he intended to visit all his estates and see for himself how far his orders had been carried out and in what state were the serfs whom God had entrusted to his care and whom he intended to benefit

The chief steward who considered the young count s attempts almost insane—unprofitable to himself to the count and to the serfs—made some concessions Continuing to represent the liberation of the serfs as impracticable he ar ranged for the erection of large buildings—schools hospitals and asylums—on all the es tates before the master arrived Everywhere preparations were made not for ceremonious welcomes (which he knew Pierre would not like) but for just such gratefully religious ones

Pierre The estates he had not before visited were each more picturesque than the other the serfs everywhere seemed thriving and touch ingly grateful for the benefits conferred on them Everywhere were receptions which though they embarrassed Pierre awakened a joyful feeling in the depth of his heart In one place the peasants presented him with bread and salt and an icon of Saint Peter and Saint Paul asking permission as a mark of their gratitude for the benefits he had conferred on them to build a new chantry to the church at their own expense in honor of Peter and Paul his patron saints In another place the women with infants in arms met him to thank him for releasing them from hard work On a third es tate the priest bearing a cross came to meet him surrounded by children whom by the

erected or in course of erection all on one plan for hospitals schools and almshouses which were soon to be opened Everywhere he saw the stewards accounts according to which the serfs manorial labor had been diminished, and heard the touching thanks of deputations of serfs in their full skirted blue coats.

What Pierre did not know was that the place where they presented him with bread and salt and wished to build a chantry in honor of Peter and Paul was a market village where a fair was held on St Peter s day and that the richest peasants (who formed the deputation) had begun the chantry long before but that nine tenth of the peasants in that village were in a state of the greatest poverty He did not know that since the nursing mothers were no longer sent to work on his land they did still harder work on their own land He did not know that the priest who met him with the cross oppressed the peasants by his exactions, and that the pupils parents wept at having to let him take their children and secured their release by heavy payments He did not know that the brick buildings built to plan were being built by serfs whose manorial labor was thus increased though lessened on paper He did not know that where the steward had shown him in the accounts that the serfs pay ments had been diminished by a third their obligatory manorial work had been increased by a half And so Pierre was delighted with his visit to his estates and quite recovered the phil anthropic mood in which he had left Peters burg and wrote enthusiastic letters to his brother instructor as he called the Grand Master

How easy it is how little effort it needs to do so much good thought Pierre and how little attention we pay to it!

for these simple kindly people

The chief steward a very stupid but cun

harder with proofs of the impossibility and above all the uselessness of freeing the serfs,

pier people said that God only knew what would happen to them when they were free

b th ns ted, th ugh relucta tly on what he tho ght rigl t. The steward prom ed t do ll h power to carry ut the co t w hes lea l that n t o ly would the u t

s

co c ed to gr n mo ey a u o t ther peopl serfs ga e—that is to say all that could be got out of *them*.

CHAPTER XI

Retur n r t his journey through South Russia tl e h pp est st te l m d P erre carried t t tu n l e l d long had of visiu g hi f end Bolkó ki wh m he h d n t see l tw years.

Boou háro lay n a flat un nterest ng p rt l the co try m fields a d l ests l fir and birch, which we p rtly cut d wn The house l y behi d ewly dug po d filled w th a er to th bri k d w th b ks t ll bar of grass. It as t th e d l ll e that t etched lo g the h hro d th m dst of you g copse wh ch few fi trees.

Th homestead co usted of thresh g floo thouses tables b thh use lodge d large brick house w th sem circular f çad still co rse f co truct R u d l h use was garde ewly l d t. Th f nces d gates ew d sol d tw fi e pumps d ater cart, p ted gree ood l ed the paths were tra ht, th bridges were trong d had ha dra l E ryth g bo e n mp ess l t di ess d good m gem t Som do mest c erf P rr me ply qu es as t her th pri l ed po ed t mall ewl b lt lodg los t th po d A tó ma wh h d looked lt Pr A drew n his boyhood h lped P rr ut f h carr ge sa d that the p ce wa t h m d h wed him (lea l tl t room.

P err a ruck b th modesty of th sm ll tho gh clea house f er th b ll urro d gs wh ch h had l t m t l l e d Petersburg

H quickly en red th sm ll pt n room w th ts ull u plas ered wood n wall redo lent f p e d w uld ha go l rther but A ra head t p oe d k ked t doo

"W ll what is ? cam harp u pleasant vo c.

A s t r answered Antón

W l l m to t n l tl e sou d was heard of a cl r be n p u l ed b ck

P erre w nt tl r p d st p to the do a d ldenly came fa e o l ce with Prince An drew who cam ut f w g a l look gold Pierre embraced l m an l l lt l specta les k s ed h f e d on th cl e k l l ooked at h m closely

Well I d d te pect you l a n ery gl d sa d Pr ce And ew

P erre s d otl g he l ooked f edly at h s frie d w th s rpri e He wa t uck l y the ch ge in h m. H word w re k n lly a d there was a sm le on h s l ps a d f c but h eyes were dull and l l less l n p te of h ev dent w h to lo so he could n t g e them a joyo s d gl d p kl Pr ce And w l d er n ler d more ma l look g

n some one tl ght.

As s usu lly th case w th people meet g after prol ged p rat t wa l be f e the r c n ersat n ould settle on ny tl g They put q est ons d ga e b el r pl es bout th gs they k ew ought t bet lk d er t l gth. At l t tl e co ersat o grad lly ettled some of the t p cs at first l tly cl ed on tl e p t l f pl ns f r tl e f tu e P erre s jo ney a l occup t n the ar d so o Tl e preoccup t n d de po de cy wh ch P re h d not ed n h friend look was w st ll m e clea ly ex pressed n tl l w tl wl ch h l tened t l err especi lly when h spoke w l joyf l m t f th p t th f ture It was as if Pr Andrew w ld ha e l ked t s mp tl e w th wh t P erre w s say g but o ld n t Th l tter began to f l that it wa bad ta te to peak f h s enthus ms dreams, d h pes f h pp ess o good ess n Pri A drew p es ce. He w hamed t express his w Mason c ews wh ch h d been part cul ly e ed d stre thened by l is l te t He l eck d h m elf fea ng t seem n yet he f lt n irresist ble des re to h w h l d as soon as poss bl th t f e was w q t d f l t, nd bett r P erre than he had been n Petersb rg

I ca t tell y u how much I ha e l ed through s nce the I hardly know myself ga n.

Yes w ha e ltered much, ery much, e then s d Pr ce A drew

Well and you? What are your plans?

Plans! repeated Prince Andrew ironically My plans? he said as if astonished at the word Well you see I m building I mean to settle here altogether next year

Pierre looked silently and searchingly into Prince Andrew s face which had grown much older

No I meant to ask Pierre began but Prince Andrew interrupted him

But why talk of me? Talk *to* me yes tell me about your travels and all you have been doing on your estates

Pierre began describing what he had done on his estates trying as far as possible to conceal his own part in the improvements that had been made Prince Andrew several times prompted Pierre s story of what he had been doing as though it were all an old time story and he listened not only without interest but even as if ashamed of what Pierre was telling him

Pierre felt uncomfortable and even depressed in his friend s company and at last became silent

I ll tell you what my dear fellow said Prince Andrew who evidently also felt depressed and constrained with his visitor I am only bivouacking here and have just come to look round I am going back to my s s I will n know entert whom he now found nothing in common We will go after dinner And would you now like to look round my place?

They went out and walked about till dinnertime talking of the political news and common acquaintances like people who do not know each other intimately Prince Andrew spoke with some animation and interest only of the new homestead he was constructing and its buildings but even here while on the scaffolding in the midst of a talk explaining the future arrangements of the house he interrupted himself

However this is not at all interesting Let us have dinner and then we ll set off

At dinner conversation turned on Pierre s marriage

I was very much surprised when I heard of it said Prince Andrew

Pierre blushed as he always did when it was mentioned and said hurriedly I will tell you some time how it all happened But you know it is all over and forever

Forever? said Prince Andrew Nothing is forever

But you know how it all ended don t you? You heard of the duel?

And so you had to go through that too!

One thing I thank God for is that I did not kill that man said Pierre

Why so? asked Prince And

ight and wrong

What does harm to another is wrong said Pierre feeling with pleasure that for the first time since his arrival Prince Andrew was roused had begun to talk and wanted to express what had brought him to his present state

And who has told you what is bad for another man? he asked

Bad! Bad! exclaimed Pierre

s

fl rince Andrew growing more and more animated and evidently wishing to express his new outlook to Pierre He spoke in French I only know two very real evils in life remorse and illness The only good is the absence of those evils To live for myself avoiding those two evils is my whole philosophy now

And love of one s neighbor and self sacrifice? began Pierre No I can t agree with you! To live only so as not to do evil and not to have to repent is not enough I lived like that I only n (Pierre to live ot ers only now have I understood all the happiness of life No I shall not agree with you and you do not really believe what you are saying Prince Andrew looked silently at Pierre with an ironic smile

When you see my sister Princess Mary you ll get on with her he said Perhaps you are right for yourself he added after a short pause but everyone lives in his own way You lived for yourself and you nearly ruined your life and only found happiness when you began living for others I experienced just the reverse I lived for glory — And after all what is glory? The same love of others desire to do something for them a desire for their approv

al—So I l ved for thers, nd not lmost, but qu.e.ru. ed my l fe. And I h e become calm-er since I be¬an to li e only fo mysell.

"But what do ou mean by l only f r yourself asked P erre grow g ex ted. "What bout your son your sister nd your fa..er"

"But that s just the same as myself—they are not thers explained Prince A drew "The ot.ers. e hbors, l p och as you nd Prin ess Mary call t, are the ch f source of al erro a d evil. Le p och — our Kiev peasants to whom u want to d good.

And h looked t P erre w th mocking, challenging expression. He ev d ntly wished to draw him n.

"Y are j kin.. repl ed P erre growing more and more excited. "What error o evil can there be in my w shi g to d good, nd even doin h tle—thou¬h I did ery l ttle nd did t ery badl Wha evil can there be n t if unfortunat people our serfs, peopl l ke ourselves, were grow ng up and dyi with no idea f God nd truth bero d ceremon es nd mea..ingless pra ers and are w n tructed n comf rtin beli f in future lif retrib tion recompense, and consolati n What evil and erro are there in t, if peopl were dyi g of disease tho t help whil ma erial assista ce could so easily be rendered, nd I supplied t..em with docto hospital, and n asylum fo t.. ved. And is n t palpabl unques-tio able good if peasant, woman with bab has no est da n ht d I gi e them rest and leisure sa d Pierre, hurryi g nd lispin And I ha don that though badly nd t small ex en but I ha d e some-thin¬ oward t nd you cannot persuad me t..at was no good ction, nd more than that, yo can mak me bel ev that ou do not think so yourself. And the main thing is, h co tin ed, tha I know and know f cer tain, that th enjoym t f do this good is t.. l sure happiness n l fe

"Yes. f you put t lik that s quit dif ferent ma er said Prin e Andrew I build house and lay out gard n and y u build hosp tals. Th and th other may serv as pastime. But what ri¬h and what good mu be jud¬ed by who knows all, but not by us. Well, you want an argument, h dded, com then.

They rose from th tabl and sat down in th entran porch which served as eranda.

Come, let argu then, said Prin An drew "Y talk f schools, he wen n, crook ng a finger ed cat on and so f rth that s, you wa t to ra se h m (po t g to a peasant who p ssed by them t k n off h s cap) from his a mal co d t n nd waken n h m sp r tual needs wh le t seems to me th t mal happ ess is tl e o ly happ ness poss ble a l th t is just what you wa t to depri e h m of I en y him, b t you want to make him what I am, w thout gi h m m means. Then ou sa "I h t n h t l. B t s I see t, phys cal l bor is as essent l to h m a much co d ti n of his exist nce a mental act vity to you r me. Y u can t h lp think g I go to bed lter two n the morn g, thou hts come a d I can t sleep but toss bout t ll dawn because I th k d can t help th kin¬ just as h can t help plow ng nd mowin¬ if he didn t h would go to th d k shop o fall ill. Ju t a I could not t nd h terrib e phys cal l bor

a tiu u gu

He has fit, he is d g and you come d bleed h m nd patch him up He w ll dra about as cripple burden to everybod for nother ten years. It would be f r eas er a d simpler f him t d e Others re be ¬ born nd there re p enty of them a t is. It would be different if you grud¬ed losing a laborer—that s how I regard him—but you wa t t cure him from lo e of h m. And he does not wa t that. And bes des, what not on that med e ever cured yone k lled them, yes said he frowni g an¬rily nd turn n¬ way from P erre

Pri ce A drew expressed his deas so clea l nd distinctly that t was ev dent he had e flected on this ubject more than nc nd he pok readily nd rap dl l k man who ha not talked f long tim H gla ce becam more anima ed as his conclu ons became more hopeless.

Oh, that is dreadful dreadful sa d P erre "I do t understa d how o can l e with uch deas. I had such moments myself not l ¬ a¬o, n Moscow nd when tra el ng but t such times I collapsed so that I d n t li e t all —everythi seems hateful to me myself most f all. Then I don t eat, don t wash and how is t w th ou.

"Wh not wash That is not cleanl said Prince Andrew n the contrary n must try to mak on lif pleasant as poss ble. I m ali that is not my fault, so I must li out my lif as bes I can w thout hurtin others.

Well and you? What are your plans?

Plans! repeated Prince Andrew ironically My plans? he said as if astonished at the word Well you see I m building I mean to settle here altogether next year

Pierre looked silently and searchingly into Prince Andrew s face which had grown much older

No I meant to ask Pierre began but Prince Andrew interrupted him

But why talk of me? Talk *to* me yes tell me about your travels and all you have been doing on your estates

Pierre began describing what he had done on his estates trying as far as possible to conceal his own part in the improvements that had been made Prince Andrew several times prompted Pierre s story of what he had been doing as though it were all an old time story and he listened not only without interest but even as if ashamed of what Pierre was telling him

Pierre felt uncomfortable and even depressed in his friend s company and at last became silent

I ll tell you what my dear fellow said Prince Andrew who evidently also felt depressed and constrained with his visitor I am only bivouacking here and have just come to look round I am going back to my sister today I will introduce you to her But of course you know her already he said evidently trying to entertain a visitor with whom he now found nothing in common We will go after dinner And would you now like to look round my place?

They went out and walked about till dinnertime talking of the political news and common acquaintances like people who do not know each other intimately Prince Andrew spoke with some animation and interest only of the new homestead he was constructing and its buildings but even here while on the scaffolding in the midst of a talk explaining th

[illegible]

[illegible] and then we ll set off

At dinner conversation turned on Pierre s marriage

I was very much surprised when I heard of it said Prince Andrew

Pierre blushed as he always [illegible] when it was [illegible] ill tell you [illegible] you know

Forever? said Prince Andrew Nothing is forever

But you know how it all ended don t you. You heard of the duel?

And so you had to go throu h that too

One thing I thank God for is that I did not kill that man said Pierre

Why so? asked Prince Andrew To kill a vicious dog is a very good thing really

No to kill a man is bad—wrong

Why is it wrong? urged Prince Andrew It is not given to man to know what is right and what is wrong Men always did and always will err and in nothing more than in what they consider right and wrong

What does harm to another is wrong said Pierre feeling with pleasure that for the first time since his arrival Prince Andrew was roused

[illegible] he asked

Bad! Bad! exclaimed Pierre We all know what is bad for ourselves

Yes we know that but the harm I am conscious of in myself is something I cannot inflict on others said Prince Andrew growing more and more animated and evidently wishing to express his new outlook to Pierre He spoke in French I only know two very real evils in life remorse and illness The only good is the absence of those evils To live for myself avoiding those two evils is my whole philosophy now

And love of one s neighbor and self sacrifice? began Pierre No I can t agree with you! To live only so as not to do evil and not to have to repent is not enough I lived like that I lived for myself and ruined my life And only now when I am living or at least trying (Pierre s modesty made him correct himself) to live for others only now have I understood all the happiness of life No I shall not agree with you and you do not really believe what you are saying Prince Andrew looked silently at Pierre with an ironic smile

When you see my sister Princess Mary you ll get on with her he said Perhaps you are right for yourself he added after a short pause but everyone lives in his own way You lived for yourself and say you nearly ruined your life and only found happiness when you began living for others I experienced just the reverse I lived for glory —And after all what is glory? The same love of others a desire to do something for them a desire for their approv

like bull bo t t harme wl y do th k so. Y ho ld not thi k so."

"Think Wha bou asked Prince A drew with surprise.

Abo t hi bout man dest It ca t be so. I myself thought l'ke that, a d do you know hat saved m Freemasonry! N d t sm'le. Freemasonry is ot rel gio ceremo ial sect I thought t was Freemaso ry is the best ex pressio f the best, the eternal pects of hu man ty

And he bega t e pl n Freemasonry as he understood t to Prince A drew H sa d that Freemaso ry is the teachi of Christia ty freed from the bo ds f State d Church a teachi f equal ty brotherhood, d l e.

Onl ur holy brotherhood has th real meaning f l f all the rest is dream sa d P erre Understa d, m dea f llow that o t s d t is union ll is filled w th dece t d falsehood and I gree w th yo that th is left fo an t lligent d good man but to live out his life, l k you, merel try not to harm others. B t make our f damental con

ginnin f which is hidden n hea n sa d Pierre.

Prince Andrew look tra ht n fro t of him, liste ed n silence P erre words. M re than ce wh th is f the wheels prevented his ca ch what P erre sa d, h a ked him t repeat t, d b th pecul a gl w that cam int Prince A drew eyes d by his silence, Pierre saw that his word were t n vain nd that Prin e Andrew would not interrupt him laugh t what h sa d

They reached ri er that had o erfl wed ts banks d which they had to cross b ferry Whil th carriage and h rses were be g placed on t, they lso tepped the raft.

Prince A drew lea his rms n th raft rail gazed sil tly t th flood waters glittering in the setti un.

"Well what do think bo t t P erre asked. "Why are y ile t.

"What do I think bo t I m list to you. I all ery well. Y u say jo n ur brotherhood and w w ll show you th im f l f th desti f ma d th laws wh h go ern th ld. B who ar w Men H w is t you kn w ev rything Why do I alo t see what you see Y u see re n f goodness d truth earth, b t I d n t see t

P erre i terrupted l m.

Do you bel eve a futu e l f he ked.

"A future l f Pr e Andrew repeated, but P erre, gi g l m no t me to r pl took the repet tion f r d nial the more read ly s he knew Pri ce A d ew s f rmer athe t c co ct ns.

truth, all f lse a d ev l but in the u erse in the whole u erse th ere is a k ngdom f truth, d we who are now the ch ld en of earth re—et rn lly—ch ldren f the whol u erse. Don t I feel n my soul that I m part of this va t harmo ous whole? Don t I feel that I form o e l k o step between the l wer d hi her be s, n this va t harmo iou mul t t de of be gs wh om the De ty—the S preme P wer f you prefer the term— ma fest? If I see clearly see that ladder lead from pl t to ma why sho ld I s ppose t breaks off at me nd does not go f rther nd farther? I feel that I cannot vanish s n e oth in va ishes n th wo ld, but that I hall l ways exist d l a ha e ex ted. I feel that beyond me nd abo m there re sp rits, and that n this wo ld there truth.

bled d h turned way) d udd ly that bein is se zed with pa suffers, d ceases to exist. Wh It cannot be that there is no nswer And I bel eve there is. That what convinces that is what has convi ced me sa d Pri ce Andrew

"Yes, yes, f course sa d P erre, isn t that what I m sa

"No. All I say that it is not argument that

"Well that t th Y u know that there is a *ther* d there is S m *Ther* is th f ture life. Th S *meo* e is—God.

Pri Andrew did not reply The carriage

But with such ideas what motive have you for living? One would sit without moving undertaking nothing

Life as it is leaves one no peace I should be thankful to do nothing but here on the one hand the local nobility have done me the honor to choose me to be their marshal it was all I could do to get out of it They could not understand that I have not the necessary qualifications for it—the kind of good natured fussy shallowness necessary for the position Then there s this house which must be built in order to have a nook of one s own in which to be quiet And now there s this recruiting

Why aren t you serving in the army?

After Austerlitz! said Prince Andrew gloomily No thank you very much! I have promised myself not to serve again in the active Russian army And I won t—not even if Bonaparte were here at Smolénsk threatening Bald Hills—even then I wouldn t serve in the Russian army! Well as I was saying he continued recovering his composure now there s this recruiting My father is chief in command of the Third District and my only way of avoiding active service is to serve under him

Then you are serving?

I am

He paused a little while

And why do you serve?

Why for this reason! My father is one of the most remarkable men of his time But he is growing old and though not exactly cruel he has too energetic a character He is so accustomed to unlimited power that he is terrible and now he has this authority of a commander in chief of the recruiting granted by the Emperor If I had been two hours late a fortnight ago he would have had a paymaster s clerk at Yukhnovna hanged said Prince Andrew with a smile So I am serving because I alone have any influence with my father and now and then can save him from actions which would torment him afterwards

Well there you see!

Yes but it not as you imagine Prince Andrew continued I did not and do not in the least care about that scoundrel of a clerk who had stolen some boots from the recruits I should even have been very glad to see him hanged but I was sorry for my father—that again is for myself

Prince Andrew grew more and more animated His eyes glittered feverishly while he tried to prove to Pierre that in his actions there was no desire to do good to his neighbor

There now you wish to liberate yourselfs he continued that is a very good thing but not for you—I don t suppose you ever had a one flogged or sent to Siberia—and still less for your serfs If they are beaten flogged or sent

— ... rse and

ple I pity and for their sake I should like to liberate the serfs You may not have seen but I

... in those

... me when

... cruel and

harsh are conscious of it but cannot restrain themselves and grow more and more miserable

Prince Andrew spoke so earnestly that Pierre could not help thinking that these thoughts had been suggested to Prince Andrew by his father s case

He did not reply

So that s what I m sorry for—human dignity peace of mind purity and not the serfs backs and foreheads which beat and shave as you may always remain the same backs and foreheads

No no! A thousand times no! I shall never agree with you said Pierre

CHAPTER XII

IN THE EVENING Andrew and Pierre got into the open carriage and drove to Bald Hills Prince Andrew glancing at Pierre broke the silence now and then with remarks which showed that he was in a good temper

Pointing to the fields he spoke of the improvements he was making in his husbandry

Pierre remained gloomily silent answering in monosyllables and apparently immersed in his own thoughts

He was thinking that Prince Andrew was unhappy had gone astray did not see the true light and that he Pierre ought to aid enlighten and raise him But as soon as he thought of what he should say he felt that Prince Andrew with one word one argument would upset all his teaching and he shrank from beginning afraid of exposing to possible ridicule what to him was precious and sacred

No but why do you think so? Pierre suddenly began lowering his head and looki

BOOK FIVE

ke a bull bout t h rg wl y d y u th nk
o Y u lo ld n t th k so

Th nk? What bout? ked Prince An l ew
h surprise

Abo t l fe b ut ma dest ny It can t be
so I myself th ht l ke that nd do y u kn w
h t sa ed me? F eem sonry! N d n t sm l
F maso ry t rel us c emo l sect
I tho ght t wa Freemasonry is the best ex
p ess f th best tl e etern l a pects of hu
m ty

A d h be an t pl n F eemasonry as h
d rstood t Pr n Andrew He sa d that
Freemaso ry the teach f Chr tian ty
f eed fr m th bonds of State nd Cl u ch
. ch g f equ l ty br therhood d l

Only ur h ly brotherhood h s tl e e l
m an f l fe all th rest s d eam sa d
Perr U d rsta d my d fell w that out
d th all filled w th dece t nd
f lsehood d I gree w th you tl t n th s
left f t ll g t nd good man but to
l t h lf l k y u merely try g n t to
harm thers. B t m ke ur fu d ment l con
ct yo w j n ur broth rhood g e
y rself p t us let y rself be gu ded nd
y w ll t f l y urself l l e felt my
self part f th t vat n bl ch n the be
g g f wh ch is hidd n h sa d
P

Pierre interrupted l m

Do y u b l e e i future l fe? l e asked

A futu e l f Pr nce Andrew repeated but
P erre g g l m i t me to reply took tl e
repet t n f r d l tl e m e read ly as l e
knew Prince And ew f rmer tl st c con
ct n

Y u say y u ca t see a re m of goodnes
and truth on earth N r could I and it can
n t be see if one looks on ou l fe l ere as tl e
end of everytl g On e rth l ere on th s ea th"
(P rre po ted to the fields) tl ere is no
truth all s f l e l e l b t in the u i erse
n the whole un erse tl ere is a k ngl f
truth and we wl o a e now the cl ld en of
earth a —etern lly—cl ld en of the wl le u
erse D n t l fe l in my soul th t I m p rt f
th a t l rm ou wh l ? Don t I feel th t
I f rm ne l nk e step between the l wer
dh he be ngs i th s ast h rm n ous mul
tit de f be ngs n wl m the De ty—the Su
p me P we f y u prefer the term—i man
fest H I ee learly ee that l dder lead g
f — n t t m n why sh uld I s p pose t
er d
tl
ll al
that
w ys ex t nd al ay
beyo d me nd abo e m there r sp r ts a d
that n th s wo ld there truth.

Yes that He der s theory sa d Pr n e
Andrew but t n t that wh ch can con ce
me dear f end—l fe d death are what con
ce be

ed hi ca h what P 1
him t pe t t d by th pecul r gl w that
came to Pr A d w eyes nd by his
l P erre saw that hi w ds wer n t
d th P Andrew w ul l t n
t rrupt him l gh t what h sa d

They eached th t had erfl wed ts
b ks d h ch they h d cr ss by ferry
Wh l th carr ge d h rses w ebe g pl ced
t, th y lso t pp d th raft.

Pr A d ew l g his rms n he raft
ra l gaz d len ly t th flood g waters
gl ttering the t g un

W ll hat d y u thi k bo t? P erre
asked. Why y u le ?

"Wha d I th nk bout t? I m liste to
you. I ll ry w ll Y u y jo ur
broth hood d w w ll h w y u the m f
l f th destu y f m d h l ws wh ch gov
ern th ld. B t wh ur Men H w is t
y k ow ry h g? Why d I lo not see
hat y se Y u se m f good ess d
trul rth, b l d n t ee t

bled d he t i eu u
be ng is ed w th p uffers, a d ceases t
exist. Wl y? It can t be that there no
nswe And I bel eve there s. That s what
con ces that wh t has con nced me sa d
Prin e A drew

"Yes yes f c urse sa d P erre sn t that
what I m say

"N All I y that it is n t argument that
co ces me f the necess ty f a f ture l fe
b t this whe y g ha d i h nd w th some
e nd ll at ce that perso van shes *th re*
t ouh e d y u y urself a e left f
that abyss, a d look n A d I ha e looked
n.

"W ll that t then! You kn w that there s
a *ther* d th is a *S m el There* is the
future l fe. The *S m o e* is—God

Pri ce And ew d d t reply The carr age

and horses had long since been taken off onto the farther bank, and reharnessed The sun had sunk half below the horizon and an evening frost was starring the puddles near the ferry but Pierre and Andrew to the astonishment of the footmen coachmen and ferrymen still stood on the raft and talked

If there is a God and future life there is truth and good and man s highest happiness consists in striving to attain them We must live we must love and we must believe that we live not only today on this scrap of e h h
h
W

stood leaning on the railing of the raft listening to Pierre and he gazed with his eyes fixed on the red reflection of the sun gleaming on the blue waters There was perfect stillness Pierre became silent The raft had long since stopped and only the waves of the current beat softly against it below Prince Andrew felt as if the sound of the waves kept up a refrain to Pierre s words whispering

It is true believe it

He sighed and glanced with a radiant child like tender look at Pierre s face flushed and rapturous but yet shy before his superior friend

Yes if it only were so! said Prince Andrew However it is time to get on he added and stepping off the raft he looked up at the sky to which Pierre had pointed and for the first time since A
sky he had s
and someth
something t
ly awoke joy u and youthful in his soul It vanished as soon as he returned to the customary conditions of his life but he knew that this feeling which he did not know how to develop existed within him His meeting w th Pierre formed an epoch in Prince Andrew s life Though outwardly he continued to live in the same old way inwardly he began a new life

CHAPTER XIII

It was gett ng dusk when Prince Andrew and Pierre drove up to the front entrance of the house at Bald Hills A tl v

woman bent with age w th a wallet n her back and a short long haired young an in a black garment had rushed back to the ate on seeing the carriage driving up T o omen ran out after them and all four looking round at the carriage ran in dismay up the steps of the back porch

Those are Mary s God s folk said Prince Andrew They have mistaken us for my father This is the one matter in which she disobeys him He orders these pilgrims to be driven away but she receives them

But what are God s folk? asked Pierre

Prince Andrew had no time to answer The servants came out to meet them and he asked where the old prince was and whether he was expected back soon

The old prince had gone to the town and was expected back any minute

Prince Andrew led Pierre to his own apartments which were always kept in perfect order and readiness for him in his father s house he himself went to the nursery

Let us go and see my sister he said to Pierre when he returned I have not found her yet she is hiding now sittin with her God s folk It will serve her right she will be confused but you will see her God s folk It s really very curious

What are God s folk? asked Pierre

Come and you ll see for yourself

Princess Mary really was disconcerted and red patches came on her face when they went in In her snug room with lamps burning before the icon stand a young lad with a long nose and long hair wearing a monk s cassock sat on the sofa beside her behind a samovar Near th m n

ens

Cha mée de vous voir Je su s très contente de vous voi she said to Pierre as he kissed her hand She had known him as a child and now his friendship with Andrew his m sf r tune with his w fe and above all h s kindly simple face disposed her favorably toward h m. She looked at him with her beautiful radiant eyes and seemed to say I like you very much, but please don t laugh at my people After exchang ng the f rst greetings they sat down

Ah and Iván shka is here too! sa d Prince Andrew glancing w th a smile at the youn pilgr m

Andrew! sa d Princess Mary imploringly *Il f ut que vous s ch que c'est une*

Del ght ed to see y I am very gla t see

femme," said Prince Andrew to Pierre.

"Andrew, au nom de Dieu!" Princess Mary repeated.

It was evident that Prince Andrew's ironical tone toward the pilgrims and Princess Mary's helpless attempts to protect them were their customary long-established relations on the matter.

"Mais, ma bonne amie," said Prince Andrew, "vous devriez au contraire m'être reconnaissante de ce que j'explique à Pierre votre intimité avec ce jeune homme."

"Really?" said Pierre, gazing over his spectacles with curiosity and seriousness (for which Princess Mary was specially grateful to him) into Ivánushka's face, who, seeing that she was being spoken about, looked round at them all with crafty eyes.

Princess Mary's embarrassment on *her people's* account was quite unnecessary. They were not in the least abashed. The old woman, lowering her eyes but casting side glances at the newcomers, had turned her cup upside down and placed a nibbled bit of sugar beside it, and sat quietly in her armchair, though hoping to be offered another cup of tea. Ivánushka, sipping out of her saucer, looked with sly womanish eyes from under her brows at the young men.

"Where have you been? To Kiev?" Prince Andrew asked the old woman.

"I have, good sir," she answered garrulously. "Just at Christmastime I was deemed worthy to partake of the holy and heavenly sacrament at the shrine of the saint. And now I'm from Kolyázin, master, where a great and wonderful blessing has been revealed."

"And was Ivánushka with you?"

"I go by myself, benefactor," said Ivánushka, trying to speak in a bass voice. "I only came across Pelagéya in Yukhnovo. . . ."

Pelagéya interrupted her companion; she evidently wished to tell what she had seen.

"In Kolyázin, master, a wonderful blessing has been revealed."

"What is it? Some new relics?" asked Prince Andrew.

"Andrew, do leave off," said Princess Mary. "Don't tell him, Pelagéya."

"No . . . why not, my dear, why shouldn't I? I like him. He is kind, he is one of God's chosen, he's a benefactor, he once gave me ten rubles, I remember. When I was in Kiev, Crazy Cyril says to me (he's one of God's own and goes barefoot summer and winter), he says, 'Why are you not going to the right place? Go to Kolyázin where a wonder-working icon of the Holy Mother of God has been revealed.' On hearing those words I said good-by to the holy folk and went."

All were silent, only the pilgrim woman went on in measured tones drawing in her breath.

"So I come, master, and the people say to me: 'A great blessing has been revealed, holy oil trickles from the cheeks of our blessed Mother, the Holy Virgin Mother of God.'"

"All right, all right, you can tell us afterwards," said Princess Mary, flushing.

"Let me ask her," said Pierre. "Did you see it yourselves?" he inquired.

"Oh, yes, master, I was found worthy. Such a brightness on the face like the light of heaven, and from the blessed Mother's cheek it drops and drops."

"But, dear me, that must be a fraud," said Pierre, naïvely, who had listened attentively to the pilgrim.

"Oh, master, what are you saying?" exclaimed the horrified Pelagéya, turning to Princess Mary for support.

"They impose on the people," he repeated.

"Lord Jesus Christ!" exclaimed the pilgrim woman, crossing herself. "Oh, don't speak so, master! There was a general who did not believe, and said, 'The monks cheat,' and as soon as he'd said it he went blind. And he dreamed that the Holy Virgin Mother of the Kiev catacombs came to him and said, 'Believe in me and I will make you whole.' So he begged: 'Take me to her, take me to her.' It's the real truth I'm telling you, I saw it myself. So he was brought, quite blind, straight to her, and he goes up to her and falls down and says, 'Make me whole,' says he, 'and I'll give thee what the Tsar bestowed on me.' I saw it myself, master—the star is fixed into the icon. Well, and what do you think? He received his sight! It's a sin to speak so. God will punish you," she said admonishingly, turning to Pierre.

"How did the star get into the icon?" Pierre asked.

"And was the Holy Mother promoted to the rank of general?" said Prince Andrew with a smile.

Pelagéya suddenly grew quite pale and clasped her hands.

"You must know that this is my woman.

"For heaven's sake.

"But, my dear, you ought on the contrary to be grateful to me for explaining to Pierre your intimacy with this young man.

and horses had long since been taken off onto the farther bank, and reharnessed The sun had sunk half below the horizon and an evening frost was starring the puddles near the ferry but Pierre and Andrew to the astonishment of the footmen coachmen and ferrymen still stood on the raft and talked

If there is a God and future life there is truth and good and man s highest happiness consists in striving to attain them We must live we must love and we must believe that we live not only today on this scrap of earth but have lived and shall live forever there in the Whole said Pierre and he pointed to the sky

Prince Andrew stood leaning on the railing of the raft listening to Pierre and he gazed with his eyes fixed on the red reflection of the sun gleaming on the blue waters There was perfect stillness Pierre became silent The raft had long since stopped and only the waves of the current beat softly against it below Prince Andrew felt as if the sound of the waves kept up a refrain to Pierre s words whispering

It is true believe it

He sighed and glanced with a radiant childlike tender look at Pierre s face flushed and rapturous but yet shy before his superior friend

Yes if it only were so! said Prince Andrew However it is time to get on he added and stepping off the raft he looked up at the sky to which Pierre had pointed and for the first time since A ı
sky
and
som
ly a k joyfu and youthful in his soul It vanished as soon as he returned to the customary conditions of his life but he knew that this feeling wh ch he did not know how to develop existed within him His meeting with Pierre formed an epoch in Prince Andrew s l fe Though outwardly he continued to live in the same old way inwardly he began a new life

CHAPTER XIII

It was getting dusk when Prince Andrew and Pierre drove up to the front entrance of the house at Bald Hills As they approached the house Prince Andrew with a smile drew Pierre s attention to a commotion going on at the back porch A woman bent with age w th a wallet on her back and a short long haired young man in a black garment had rushed back to the gate on seeing the carri ge driving up Two women ran out after them and all four looking round at the carriage ran in dismay up the steps of the back porch

Those are Mary s God s folk said Prince Andrew They have mistaken us for my father This is the one matter in which she disobeys him He orders these pilgrims to be dri en away but she receives them

But what are God s folk? asked Pierre

Prince Andrew had no time to answer The servants came out to meet them and he asked where the old prince was and whether he was expected back soon

The old prince had gone to the town and was expected back any minute

Prince Andrew led Pierre to his own apartments which were always kept in perfect order and readiness for him in his father s house he himself went to the nursery

Let us go and see my sister he said to Pierre when he returned I have not found her yet she is hiding now sitting with her God s folk It will serve her right she w ll be confused but you will see her God s folk It s really very curious

What are God s folk? asked Pierre

Come and you ll see for yourself

Princess Mary really was disconcerted and red patches came on her face when they went in In her snug room with lamps burnin before the icon stand a young lad with a long nose and long hair wearing a monk s cassock sat on the sofa beside her behind a samovar Near them in an armchair sat a thin shriveled, old woman with a meek express on on her childlike face

Andrew why d dn t you warn me? said the princess with mild reproach as she stood before her pilgrims like a hen before her chickens

Charmée de vous voir Je suis très contente de vous voi sl e said to Pierre as he kissed her hand She l ad known him as a child and now his friendship with Andrew h s m sf r tune with his w ife and above all h s kindly simple face disposed her favorably toward h m. She looked at him with her beautiful rad ant eyes and seemed to say I like you very much, but please don t laugh at my people After exchanging the f rst greetings they sat down

Ah and Ivanushka is here too! sa d Prince Andrew glancing w th a smile at the your pilgrim

Andrew! said Princess Mary imploringly *Il faut que vous sachiez que c'est une*

D l gl te l to see yo I m ery gla l to see yoı

P rre f lly re l e the strength a d charm of
n A d w Th t l rm

l k n them P erre t o e felt l ke old
frie d. They ere all f nd f h m l dy Not
ly Pri cess M ry wh had been won by h s
g tl essw th the p l r ms ga h m l ern t
rad t looks b te en the o e-year-old Pr ce
N h as (as h s gra df th called h m)
smiled t P rre a d l t h ms lf be t ke n h s
arms d M chael I á o ch d M demo
selle Bou e looked at h m w th pleasa t
sm les when h talked t th ld pr c

Th ld p ce came to pper th was
ev dently P erres a cou t. A d d r g the
t d s f the y g m n t he wa x
trem ly k d to h m d t ld h m t t them
ga n.

Wh P rr h d g e d the members of
the hous h ld met to th they began t ex
p ess th p m f h m people lways
d aft ew q t ce h s l ft but as
seld m happens n e sa d a yth g but
hat wa good f h.m.

CHAPTER XV

W E RETUR NG from his le e Rostó felt,
f th first t me, h w clos w th bo d that
un ted him t D iso d the wl l e m t.
O pp ch t R tó felt s he had
d when ppro ch h h me n M c w
Wh he saw th first h ssa w th th u b t
t ed f rm of h e me t h h re
o n ed ed ha ed Demé tyev nd s w th
p ket pes f th ro h rses wh La ru
hka gl f lly h uted t his master Th
co t l as com l d D íso who h d been
asle p his bed, ra all dish led ut f the
m d h t t embra e h m d th offi ers col
lected ro d gr et th ew r l R tó
experi ed th am f el wh n h m th
er his f th d h t h d mbra ed h m
nd t rs f joy ch k d him so that h uld
t pe k Th eg m nt wa lso h me nd
as lterably d ar d p ec us as h p ts
h use.

When h had port d h mself t the com
m d f th eg m t d h d be n eas-

he exp er enced tl e sam sen e of pe e f m
l pport d tl es mes nse f bei at l me
l ere i l s own pl e he l ad felt u der tl e
p re tal roof B t l ere w s no e of all tl t
turm l of tl e w ld at large where he d d n t
k w l s right pl e a l took m taken dec
s s l e e wa S l ya with wl m l e o gl t
or o ht t to l e an e pl t on l ere w s
no pos l lity of go g tl ere n t goi there
l e tl ere v ere n t twenty f t l urs in tl e
d y wh h co ld be spent such a ariety of
ways there a n t th t n um rable crowd f
people f wl m n t one wa nearer to h m or
f rtl er from l m th n a other there we
none of th e u cert n a d uncef ed mo ey
rel t on w th h s fatl e a d n th n to recall
th t terr ble loss t D l kl Here n tl e reg
m t all a lear and s mple. Tl e wl l
wo ld as d led to two unequal p rts one

ing that wa co s dered b d the Pávlograd
reg me t d when g en n der t do what
wa cle ly d t ctly nd d fin tely o dered—
d ll w ld be well

H g o e m re e tered t the defi te
co d t f th re me t l l fe Rostó felt

b pe fe tly f rst rate comra le d ffi er
— rd plend d m n ltog ther tl

va ces a d battles t P ltusk d Preuss sch
Eyl u was co c trated ea B rtenste It
wa wa t g th Empe arr l a d th be
gi g f n w camp gn

The Pá lograd e nt, bel to that

Oh master master what a sin! And you who have a son! she began her pallor suddenly turning to a vivid red Master what have you said? God forgive you! And she crossed herself Lord forgive him! My dear what does it mean? she asked turning to Princess Mary She got up and almost crying began to arrange her wallet She evidently felt frightened and ashamed to have accepted charity in a house where such things could be said and was at the same time sorry to have now to forgo the charity of this house

Now why need you do it? said Princess Mary Why did you come to me?

Come Pelagéya I was joking said Pierre *Princesse ma parole je n ai pas voulu l offenser* I did not mean anything I was only joking he said smiling shyly and trying to efface his offense It was all my fault and Andrew was only joking

Pelagéya stopped doubtfully but in Pierre s face there was such a look of sincere penitence and Prince Andrew glanced so meekly now at her and now at Pierre that she was gradually reassured

CHAPTER XIV

THE PILGRIM WOMAN was appeased and being encouraged to talk gave a long account of Father Amphilochus who led so holy a life that his hands smelled of incense and how on her last visit to Kiev some monks she knew let her have the keys of the catacombs and how she taking some dried bread with her had spent

and kiss the relics and there was such peace all around such blessedness that one don t want to come out even into the light of heaven again

room

You are very kind she said to him

Oh I really did not mean to hurt her feelings I understand them so well and have the greatest respect for them

Princess Mary looked at him silently and smiled affectionately

I have known you a long time you see and am as fond of you as of a brother she said

Princess on my or I I I not h to ff I her

How do you find Andrew? she added hurriedly not giving him time to reply to her affectionate words I am very anxious about him His health was better in the winter but last spring his wound reopened and the doctor said he ought to go away for a cure And I am also very much afraid for him spiritually He has not a character like us women who when we suffer can weep away our sorrows He keeps it all within him Today he is cheerful and in good spirits but that is the effect of your visit —he is not often like that If you could persuade him to go abroad He needs activity and this quiet regular life is very bad for him Others don t notice it but I see it

Toward ten o clock the menservants rushed to the front door hearing the bells of the old prince s carriage approaching Prince Andrew and Pierre also went out into the porch

Who s that? asked the old prince noticing Pierre as he got out of the carriage

Ah! Very glad! Kiss me he said having learned who the young stranger was

The old prince was in a good temper and very gracious to Pierre

Before supper Prince Andrew comin back to his father s study found him disputing hotly with his visitor Pierre was maintaining that a time would come when there would be no more wars The old prince disputed it chaffingly but without getting angry

Drain the blood from men s veins and put in water instead then there will be no more war! Old womens nonsense—old women s nonsense! he repeated but still he patted Pierre affectionately on the shoulder and then went up to the table where Prince Andrew evidently not wishing to join in the conversation was looking over the papers his father had brought from town The old prince went up to him and began to talk business

The marshal a Count Rostóv hasn t sent half his contingent He came to town and wanted to invite me to dinner—I gave him a pretty dinner! And there look at this Well my boy the old prince went on addressing his son and patting Pierre on the shoulder A fine fellow—your friend—I like him! He stirs me up Another says clever things an I one doesn t care to listen but this one talks rubbish yet stirs an old fellow up Well go! Get along! Perhaps I ll come and sit with you at supper We ll have another dispute Make friends with my little fool Princess Mary he shouted after Pierre through the door

Only now on his visit to Bald Hills did

Pierre fully realiz the trength and charm f his friendship with Pri ce Andrew Th t charm was not exp essed so m ch n h rel tions w th him as w th ll his family nd w th the ho se hold. W th the tern d pri ce and the ge tle, timid Pri cess Mary th ugh h had scarce- ly known them, P err t ce fel l ke an o d friend. They were all f nd of h m already N t only Princess M ry who had been won b his gentleness with th p lgrims, ga e him her most radiant looks, b t even the o e yea -old Pri ce Nichoas (as his gra dfather called him) smiled t Pierre a d let himself be taken n his arms, nd M chael Ivánovich and M demo sel Bourienne looked at him w th pleasant smiles when h talked t th old prince

The ld prince came n to supper this wa evident n P err s ccou t. And durin th two days f the o n man vi t he wa ex treme l kind t him nd told him to isi t them again.

When P erre had gon nd the members of t household met together they bega o ex press th ir opi ns f him as peopl lways d after new cquainta ce ha left, but as seldom happens, no on sa d anyth ng but what was good f him.

CHAPTER XV

WHEN RETURNING from his lea e Rostó f lt, for t e first tim, how clos wa the bo d that united him t Deniso and the whol egiment.

On pproaching t Rostó f lt he had don w en pproachin his hom Mosc w. When h saw the firs hussa w th th u but toned un orm f his regim nt, wh n he ec ognized red ha red Demé tye nd saw the picket ropes f th roan horses wh Lavru shka g eefull shouted t his mas er "Th count has com d Deniso who had been asleep his bed, ran ll di h led ou of th mud h to embr him, and th fficers col lected round to greet th n w rrival Rostó experien ed th sam feel as wh n his moth er his father d his ist had mbraced h m, and ears f jo hoked h m so that h uld not peak. Th regiment wa lso hom nd as unalterably dear nd prec us as his parents house

When h had reported himself to th com mander f th regiment nd had been reas signed to his f rmer squadro had been n d ty and had go ou f ragin when h had ag en ered all the l ttl int rests f the regiment nd fel himself d pri ed of l berty and bound ne narrow u cha gi fram he experienced the same sense f pea e f mo al upport, and th same sense f be n at hom here h s ow pl ce he had felt under th e pare tal roof. B t here wa none of all that turmo l of th e wo ld t l re where h d d not know his right pl ce a d took m staken deci-

ns here wa no So ya w th wh om he ou h o ou ht not t ha e n expl n t on here wa no poss l l ty of go g there or n t go n ther here t ere were not twenty four hours n th e day wh ch cou d be spent uch variety of ways there wa not that numera le crowd of people of whom n t one wa nearer to h m o er from h m than another there were

mo er

recall

e re-

ment, w whol

wo ld was d ded to two unequ l parts *one* our Pá lovrad re ment th oth er ll the rest. And the rest wa no con ern of his In the re ment, ev rythi g was d fin te who was l eu t n nt who capta n who wa a good f ll w who bad nd most of l who wa a com rade Th canteenkeeper ga e one cred t one pa cam every fou mo ths, t ere was noth to th k out o dec de you had onl to do noth n that wa co sidered bad in the Pá lovrad reg m nt nd when gi en n order to d what was lea l d t ctl nd de ni tely ordered— a d ll would be w ll.

H g on e more entered n o the defi e co d t ons of th re m ntal l e Rostóv f lt th jo nd el f t red man feel on ly down to rest. Lif n the re m nt, duri th campa gn was ll th e pleasanter fo h m, be cause fter his loss to Dól h (for which, p te f ll h f mily eff ts to console h m, he could not for h mself) he had made p his m d to t e l r his faul by erving n he h d do e bel bu really well nd b be r pe fectl first rate comr de nd officer — n w rd, plend d ma a together a th ng wh ch seemed so difficult o t *th world* b t so poss ble the egiment.

After his losses he had determ ed t pay ba k h debt to his parents five years. He re ce ed ten thousand rubles ear but now re sol ed to take onl two thousa d nd lea e th rest to rep y the d bt to his parents

Our arm er repeated retreats and d vances nd battles t Pultusk nd Preuss sch E lau, was concentr ed ea Bartenstein. It was wa ting the Empero arr al nd th be ginning f ew campaign.

The P ovrad egiment, be ngin to that

part of the army which had served in the 1805 campaign had been recruiting up to strength in Russia and arrived too late to take part in the first actions of the campaign It had been neither at Pultusk nor at Preussisch Eylau and when it joined the army in the field in the sec ond half of the campaign was attached to Plá tov s division

Plátov s division was acting independently of the main army Several times parts of the Pávlograd regiment had exchanged shots with the enemy had taken prisoners and once had even captured Marshal Oudinot s carriages In April the Pávlograds were stationed immova bly for some weeks near a totally ruined and deserted German village

A thaw had set in it was muddy and cold the ice on the river broke and the roads be came impassable For days neither provisions for the men nor fodder for the horses had been issued As no transports could arrive the men dispersed about the abandoned and deserted villages searching for potatoes but found few even of these

Everything had been eaten up and the in habitants had all fled—if any remained they were worse than beggars and nothing more could be taken from them even the soldiers usually pitiless enough instead of taking any thing from them often gave them the last of their rations

The Pávlograd regiment had had only two men wounded in action but had lost nearly half its m n f om h

F

bu iood preferred to remain on duty and hardly able to drag their legs went to the front rather than to the hospitals When spring came on the soldiers found a plant just showing out of the ground that looked like asparagus which for some reason they called Máshka s sweet root It was very bitter but they wandered about the fields seeking it and dug it out with their sabers and ate it though they were or dered not to do so as it was a noxious plant.

s the soldiers of Denisov s squadron fed chiefly on Máshka s sweet root because it was the second week that the last of the biscuits were being doled out at the rate of half a pound a man and the last potatoes re ceived had sprouted and frozen

The horses also had been fed for a fortnight on straw from the thatched roofs and had be come terribly thin though still covered with tufts of felty winter hair

Despite this destitution the soldiers and of ficers went on living just as usual Despite thei

ies polished their

joking about their nasty food and their hunger As usual in their spare time they lit bonfires, steamed themselves before them naked smoked picked out and baked sprouting rot

Mikólka

The offi

that food for the men The younger ones oc cupied themselves as before some playing cards (there was plenty of money though there was no food) some with more innocent games such as quoits and skittles The general trend of the campaign was rarely spoken of partly be cause nothing certain was known about it, partly because there was a vague feeling that in the main it was going badly

Rostóv lived as before with Denisov and since their furlough they had become more friendly than ever Denisov never spoke of Ros tóv s family but by the tender friendship his commander showed him Rostóv felt that the elder hussar s luckless love for Natásha played a part in strengthening their friendship Den isov evidently tried to expose Rostóv to dan ger as seldom as possible and after an action greeted his safe return with evident joy On one of his foraging expeditions in a deserted and ruined village to which he had come in search of provisions Rostóv found a family consisting of an old Pole and his daughter with an infant in arms They were half clad hungry too weak to get away on foot and had no means of obtaining a conveyance Rostóv brought them to his quarters placed them in his own lodging and kept them for some weeks while the old man was recovering One of his com rades talking of women began chaffing Ros tóv saying that he was more wily than any of them and that it would not be a bad thing if he introduced to them the pretty Polish girl he had saved. Rostóv took the joke as an insult,

fared p d sa d uch u pleasant th ngs to ... ll do to

becaus

Deniso patted h m n the shoulder d began rap dly pac the room w th ut look ng t Rostó as was his way t moments of deep feeling

Ah, what mad b eed you Wostóvs rel h m tered, d Rostó n ticed tears in his eyes.

CHAPTER XVI

I April the troops were enl ened by news f t Empero s arrival but Rostó had no chance of be present at the rev ew he held t Bartenst in as th Pá lograds were at the outposts far beyo d that place.

They were b vouack Denisov d Rostó were l vin an earth h t, d out f them by the sold ers d roofed w th branches d turf. Th h t was made n th foll wi g manner which had then com into vogu A trench was dug three d half feet w de f ur feet ei ht ches deep d e ght feet lo g At e end f the trench, teps were cut out nd these f rmed th entrance nd est bule The tre ch tself was the room, n wh ch the l ky ones, such as th squadron commander had a board, lyin o p les t the e d oppos te th entrance, t serv as a table. O each s d of t trench, th earth was cut out to a breadth f bo t two and half feet, nd thus d d duty for bedsteads d co ches. The roof was so constructed that e could sta d up in the m d d f the tre ch d could even t up on the beds f o drew close to th table. Deniso ho was l vin luxuri u ly becaus the sol diers f hi squadron l ked h m, had lso board the roof the farther nd, w th p ece f (broken b t mended) glass n t f a wi dow When t wa ery cold, embers from the soldiers campfire were pla ed on ben sheet f iron th teps n the recept n room —as Deniso called that part of the hut —a d t was th so warm that th officers, of whom there wer always som with D niso and Rostó sat in their hirt leeves.

In April, Rost was o rde ly d ty On morning, between seven and eight, returnin fter a sleepless n ght, he sent f r embers, cha ged h ra n soaked u derclothes, sa d his prayers, dra k tea got warm, then t d ed up the th ngs on the table and n his own corner nd, his face gl w ng from exposu e to the w nd and w th noth n on but h sh rt l d wn on h s back, putt g h rms under h head. He was pleasantly cons deri g the prob b lity of be g promoted in a few d ys f r h last recon o terin exped t n, nd was awa t ing Denisov who had gone ut somewhere a d with whom he wanted a talk.

Suddenly he heard Deniso shout t —

master Topchéenko.

I rdered you not to let them eat that Mish ka woot tuff! D níso was hout And I saw w th my own eyes how Lazarchúk bwo ht some fwom the fields.

I ha e g en the order aga n a d a n your hon b t they d n t obey nswered the quarterma ter

Rostó lay down a a n on h bed and thou ht compl ce tly Let him fuss nd bustl now my job s d ne nd I m ly g d wn—cap tally He could hear that Lavrushka—that ly bold orderly of Denisov —was talki g as w ll the quartermaster Lavrúshk wa sayi g someth bout loaded wagons, biscuits and x n he had seen when he had go o t fo pro ns.

Then Deniso o ce wa heard sho t n farther and farther way "Saddle Second pl toon!

Where are they off to now?" tho ght Rostó

F m n tes l ter Deniso came to the h t l mbed w th m ddy boots on the bed, l t h p pe furiously scattered his th gs bout, took his leaded whip bu kled on h saber d went out aga n In n wer to Rostó nqu ry where he was go g he nswered — —

lea e th hut till toward e en g Deniso had n yet returned. The weath had clea ed up and nea th next h t two officers d cad t were playi g ... they threw their missiles wh ch buried themsel es n tl

part of the army which had served in the 1805 campaign had been recruiting up to strength in Russia and arrived too late to take part in the first actions of the campaign It had been neither at Pultusk nor at Preussisch Eylau and when it joined the army in the field in the sec ond half of the campaign was attached to Plá tov s division

Plátov s division was acting independently of the main army Several times parts of the Pávlograd regiment had exchanged shots with the enemy had taken prisoners and once had even captured Marshal Oudinot s carriages In April the Pávlograds were stationed immova bly for some weeks near a totally ruined and deserted German village

A thaw had set in it was muddy and cold the ice on the river broke and the roads be came impassable For days neither provisions for the men nor fodder for the horses had been issued As no transports could arrive the men dispersed about the abandoned and deserted villages searching for potatoes but found few even of these

Everything had been eaten up and the in habitants had all fled—if any remained they were worse than beggars and nothing more could be taken from them even the soldiers usually pitiless enough instead of taking any thing from them often gave them the last of their rations

The Pávlograd regiment had had only two men wounded in action but had lost nearly half its men from hunger and sickness In the hos pitals death was so certain that soldiers suffer ing from fever or the swelling that came from bad food preferred to remain on duty and hardly able to drag their legs went to the front rather than to the hospitals When spring came on the soldiers found a plant just showing out of the ground that looked like asparagus which for some reason they called Máshka s sweet root It was very bitter but they wandered about the fields seeking it and dug it out with their sabers and ate it though they were or dered not to do so as it was a noxious plant T

the biscuits were being doled out at the rate of half a pound a man and the last potatoes re ceived had sprouted and frozen

The horses also had been fed for a fortnight on straw from the thatched roofs and had be come terribly thin though still covered with tufts of felty winter hair

Despite this destitution the soldiers and of ficers went on living just as usual Despite their pale oll n f

arms brought in straw from the thatched roofs in place of fodder and sat down to dine round the caldron f om l

steamed themselves before them naked smoked picked out and baked sprouting rot ten potatoes told and listened to stories of Po témkin s and Suvórov s campaigns or to leg ends of Alesha the Sly or the priest s laborer Mikólka

The officers as usual lived in twos and threes in the roofless half ruined houses The sen ors tried to collect straw and potatoes and in gen eral food for the men The younger ones oc cupied themselves as before some playing cards (there was plenty of money though there was no food) some with more innocent games such as quoits and skittles The general trend of the campaign was rarely spoken of partly be cause nothing certain was known about it, partly because there was a vague feeling that in the main it was going badly

Rostóv lived as before with Denísov and since their furlough they had become more friendly than ever Denísov never spoke of Ros tóv s family but by the tender friendship his commander showed him Rostóv felt that the elder hussar s luckless love for Natásha played a part in strengthening their friendship Den ísov evidently tried to expose Rostóv to dan ger as seldom as possible and after an action greeted his safe return with evident joy On one of his foraging expeditions in a deserted and ruined village to which he had come in search of provisions Rostóv found a family consisting of an old Pole and his daughter with an infant in arms They were half clad hungry too weak to get away on foot and had no means of obtaining a conveyance Rostóv brought tl m o

rades talking of women began chaffing Ros tóv saying that he was more wily than any of tl em an l tl at it v ould not be a bad thing if l e introduced to tl em tl e pretty Pol sh g rl l e had saved Rostóv took the joke as an insult,

teeth showing under his black mustache. "I'd have killed him if they hadn't taken him away."

"But what are you shouting for? Calm yourself," said Rostóv. "You've set your arm bleeding afresh. Wait, we must tie it up again."

Denísov was bandaged up again and put to bed. Next day he woke calm and cheerful.

But at noon the adjutant of the regiment came into Rostóv's and Denísov's dugout with a grave and serious face and regretfully showed them a paper addressed to Major Denísov from the regimental commander in which inquiries were made about yesterday's occurrence. The adjutant told them that the affair was likely to take a very bad turn: that a court-martial had been appointed, and that in view of the severity with which marauding and insubordination were now regarded, degradation to the ranks would be the best that could be hoped for.

The case, as represented by the offended parties, was that, after seizing the transports, Major Denísov, being drunk, went to the chief quartermaster and without any provocation called him a thief, threatened to strike him, and on being led out had rushed into the office and given two officials a thrashing, and dislocated the arm of one of them.

In answer to Rostóv's renewed questions, Denísov said, laughing, that he thought he remembered that some other fellow had got mixed up in it, but that it was all nonsense and rubbish, and he did not in the least fear any kind of trial, and that if those scoundrels dared attack him he would give them an answer that they would not easily forget.

Denísov spoke contemptuously of the whole matter, but Rostóv knew him too well not to detect that (while hiding it from others) at heart he feared a court-martial and was worried over the affair, which was evidently taking a bad turn. Every day, letters of inquiry and notices from the court arrived, and on the first of May Denísov was ordered to hand the squadron over to the next in seniority and appear before the staff of his division to explain his violence at the commissariat office. On the previous day Plátov reconnoitered with two Cossack regiments and two squadrons of hussars. Denísov, as was his wont, rode out in front of the outposts, parading his courage. A bullet fired by a French sharpshooter hit him in the fleshy part of his leg. Perhaps at another time Denísov would not have left the regiment for so slight a wound, but now he took advantage of it to excuse himself from appearing at the staff and went into hospital.

CHAPTER XVII

In June the battle of Friedland was fought, in which the Pávlograds did not take part, and after that an armistice was proclaimed. Rostóv, who felt his friend's absence very much, having no news of him since he left and feeling very anxious about his wound and the progress of his affairs, took advantage of the armistice to get leave to visit Denísov in hospital.

The hospital was in a small Prussian town that had been twice devastated by Russian and French troops. Because it was summer, when it is so beautiful out in the fields, the little town presented a particularly dismal appearance with its broken roofs and fences, its foul streets, tattered inhabitants, and the sick and drunken soldiers wandering about.

The hospital was in a brick building with some of the window frames and panes broken and a courtyard surrounded by the remains of a wooden fence that had been pulled to pieces. Several bandaged soldiers, with pale swollen faces, were sitting or walking about in the sunshine in the yard.

Directly Rostóv entered the door he was enveloped by a smell of putrefaction and hospital air. On the stairs he met a Russian army doctor smoking a cigar. The doctor was followed by a Russian assistant.

"I can't tear myself to pieces," the doctor was saying. "Come to Makár Alexéevich in the evening. I shall be there."

The assistant asked some further questions.

"Oh, do the best you can! Isn't it all the same?" The doctor noticed Rostóv coming upstairs.

"What do you want, sir?" said the doctor. "What do you want? The bullets having spared you, do you want to try typhus? This is a pesthouse, sir."

"How so?" asked Rostóv.

"Typhus, sir. It's death to go in. Only we two, Makéev and I" (he pointed to the assistant), "keep on here. Some five of us doctors have been invited here, but our allies don't like it at all.

Rostóv explained that he wanted to see Major Denísov of the hussars, who was wounded.

"I don't know. I can't tell you, sir. Only think, I am alone in charge of three hospitals

soft mud Rostóv joined them In the middle of the game the officers saw some wagons ap proaching with fifteen hussars on their skinny horses behind them The wagons escorted by the hussars drew up to the picket ropes and a crowd of hussars surrounded them

There now Denisov has been worrying said Rostóv and here are the provisions

So they are! said the officers Won t the soldiers be glad!

A little behind the hussars came Denisov accompanied by two infantry officers with whom he was talking

Rostóv went to meet them

I warn you Captain one of the officers a short thin man evidently very angry was say ing

Haven t I told you I won t give them up? replied Denisov

You will answer for it Captain It is mu tiny—seizing the transport of one s own army Our men have had nothing to eat for two days

And mine have had nothing for two weeks said Denisov

It is robbery! You ll answer for it s r! said the infantry officer raising his voice

Now what are you pestewing me for? cried Denisov suddenly losing his temper I shall answer for it and not you and you d bet ter not buzz about here till you get hurt Be off! Go! he shouted at the off cers

Very well then! shouted the little officer undaunted and not riding away If you are determined to rob I ll

Go to the devil! quick ma ch while you re safe and sound! and Denisov turned his horse on the off cer

Very well very well! muttered the officer

a fence! shouted Denisov after him (the most insulting expression a cavalryman can address to a mounted infantryman) and riding up to Rost v he burst out laughing

I ve taken transports from the infantwy by force! he said After all can t let our men starve

The wagons that had reached the hussars had been consigned to an infantry reg ment but learning from Lavrushka that the transport was unescorted Denisov with his hussars had se zed it by force The sold ers had biscuits dealt out to them freely and they even shared them with the other squadrons.

The next day the regimental com nander sent for Denisov and holding his fingers spread out before his eyes said

This is how I look at this affair I know noth ing about it and won t begin proceedings but I advise you to ride over to the staff and settle the business there in the commissariat dep rt ment and if possible sign a receipt for such and such stores received If not as the demand was booked against an infantry regiment there will be a row and the affair may end badly

From the regimental commander s Denis v rode straight to the staff with a sincere des re to act on this advice In the evening he ca e back to his dugout in a state such as Rost had never yet seen him in Denisov could n t speak and gasped for breath When Ro t v asked what was the matter he only uttered some incoherent oaths and threats in a hoarse feeble voice

Alarmed at Denisov s condition Rost v su gested that he should undress drink some wa ter and send for the doctor

Twy me for wobbery oh! Some m re water Let them twy me but I ll always thwash scoundwels and I ll tell the Empe wo Ice he muttered

The regimental doctor when he came sa d it was absolutely necessary to bleed De isov A deep saucer of black blood was taken from his hairy arm and only then was he able to relate

ed out Please to wait I ve widden t enty miles and have duties to attend to and no time to wait Announce me Vewy well so out comes their head chief—also took it into his head to lecture me It s wobbewy! —Wobbe wy I say is not done by a man who seizes pro visions to feed his sold ers but by him wh takes them to fill his own pockets! Will you please be silent? Vewy good! Then he says Go and give a receipt to the commiss er but your aff ir will be passed on to head qu r ters I go to the commissioner I enter and at the table who do you think? No but wait a bit! Who is it that s st rving us? sh uted Denisov h tting the table with the fist of h s newly bled arm so violently that the table near ly broke down and the tumblers on it jumped about Telyanin! What? So it s you wh s

cried Denisov gleeful and yet angry his whit

teeth sh w g unde l is black mu tache l d h v k lled h m f they h dn t taken h m a ay

B t what are you h ut ng f ? Caln y u self sa d R tóv Y u e et your arm bleed g f esh W t we must t e t up g a n

D so was band ged up aga n and put to bed. Next day he w ke calm and chee ful

But at oon the adju nt of the re ment came t Rostó s a d Deniso dugout w th gra d n s f ce nd regretfully h wed th m paper addressed t M j r D isov from the re me tal mma der n wh ch nqu ries e m de bout yesterd y s occurren e The dj ta t t ld them that the ffa was l kely t tak erv b d turn th t court mart l had bee appo nted and that n ew f the sever ty w th wh ch m raud g nd subord nat n were n w egarded degradat n t th ra ks wo ld be the best that could be h ped lo

Th case a rep esented by the ff nded p r ties as that, ft se g the tran port M jor Deniso be g drunk went to the ch f quartermaster d w th ut ny pro ocat n called him thief threate ed to trik h m and be led u had rushed nt the offic and g n two ffi ls thrash nd dislo ca ed the arm of f them.

In ans t Rost r ewed questions, Denisov said, l h g that h th ught he re membered th t som other f ll w h d got mixed p t, but that was ll nsens nd n bb sh. d he d d th least fea any red h t ole t

detect that (whil h d g t tro u) t heart h feared u t martial d wa w ned er th ff wh h was ev d ntly tak ng bad turn. E ery day l ers f inqu ry d c es from th court rr ed. nd n th first f M D isov was rd ed to ha d th squadro er t the next en ty nd p pea bef re th taff f his division to expla n his tolen t th commissaria office. On the pre ious day Plato rec n tered w th two Cossack regim ts nd tw squadrons of hus sars. Deniso as was his wont, rode ut n fro t f the outposts, p rad g his courage. A bullet fired by F ench sharpshooter hit him n the flesh part f his leg Perhaps t ther time Deniso would n t ha l ft the egiment f r so slight w und, but n w he took dva tage of t to xcuse h ms lf from appearing at the staff and went nto hosp tal.

CHAPTER XVII

In June the battle of Friedl d was f u ht in wl ch the Pá lograds d d not take pa t and after that n armi t ce was procla med. Rostó who f lt h f ends bsence ery much ha ng no news of h m s nc he left and feel n ery x ous bout h wound and the progress of h s aff rs took d antage of the arm t ce t f D nisov n hosp tal.

F ench troops. Because

so beaut ful out n the fi lds the l ttle town p esented a p rt cul rly d smal appearan e n th ts brok n roof nd fences, ts f ul treets, t tte ed inhab tants, d the s ck and drunken sold ers wandering about.

The hosp tal was n a brick bu ld g w th some of th w nd w frames nd p nes broken and courtyard surrounded by the rem n f wooden f ce that had been pulled to p eces. Several b ndaged soldiers with pale swollen f es, wer tt ng or walk g about n th un h e n the yard.

D rectly Rostó entered the door he wa en el ped by smell f p t ef ction nd hosp tal a. On the stairs he met a Ru ian army doc tor sm k g c gar Th doctor was f llowed by Russian assistant.

I can t tear myself to p eces the doctor w saying Come t M ká Alexéev ch n the eve ng I shall be there.

The assista t asked some further questions.

Oh. d the best you can Isn t t all the sam The doctor noticed Rostóv com n up tairs.

d th doctor

house

H w so sked Rostó

"Typhus s It s death t go n Only we two M kéev d I (he po ted t the a t

I t t all.

Rostó expl ed that he wa ted to see Ma jo Deniso of th hussars, who was wounded.

I do t know I can t tell you, s r Only think! I m al e in charge f three ho p tals

with more than four hundred patients! It s well that the charitable Pru ... n l d

two pou

or we sh

dred sir

ones Th ... re are four hundred? Eh? he asked turning to the assistant

The assistant looked fagged out He was evidently vexed and impatient for the talkative doctor to go

Major Denisov Rostóv said again He was wounded at Molliten

Dead I fancy Eh Makéev? queried the doctor in a tone of indifference

The assistant however did not confirm the doctor s words

Is he tall and with reddish hair? asked the doctor

Rostóv described Denísov s appearance

There was one like that said the doctor as if pleased That one is dead I fancy However I ll look up our list We had a list Have you got it Makéev?

Makár Alexéevich has the list answered the assistant But if you ll step into the officers wards you ll see for yourself he added turning to Rostóv

Ah you d better not go sir said the doctor or you may have to stay here yourself

But Rostóv bowed himself away from the doctor and asked the assistant to show him the way

Only don t blame me! the doctor shouted up after him

Rostóv and the assistant went into the dark corridor The smell was so strong there that Rostov held his nose and had to pause and collect his strength before he could go on A door opened to the right and an emaciated sallow man on crutches barefoot and in underclothing limped out and leaning against the doorpost looked with glittering envious eyes at those who were passing Glancing in at ...

What is there to see? said the assistant

But just because the assistant evidently did not want him to go in Rostóv entered the soldiers ward The foul air to which he had already begun to get used in the corridor was still stronger here It was a little different more pungent and one felt that this was where it originated

In the long room brightly lit up by the sun through the large windows the sick and wound...

t ... t ex comers Those who were conscious raised themselves or lifted their thin yellow faces and all looked intently at Rostóv with the same expression of hope of relief reproach and envy of another s health Rostóv went to the middle of the room and looking through the open doors into the two adjoining rooms saw the same thing there He stood still looking silently around He had not at all expected such a sight Just before him, almost across the middle of the passage on the bare floor lay a sick man probably a Cossack ...

so that only the whites were seen and on his bare legs and arms which were still red the veins stood out like cords He was knocking the back of his head against the floor hoarsely uttering some word which he kept repeating Rostóv listened and made out the word It was drink drink a drink! Rostóv glanced round, looking for someone who would put this man back in his place and bring him water

Who looks after the sick here? he asked the assistant

Just then a commissariat soldier a hospital orderly came in from the next room marching stiffly and drew up in front of Rostóv

Good day your honor! he shouted rolling his eyes at Rostóv and evidently mistaking him for one of the hospital authorities.

Get him to his place and give him some water said Rostóv pointing to the Cossack

Yes your honor the soldier replied complacently and rolling his eyes more than ever he drew himself up still straighter but did not move

No it s impossible to do anything here thought Rostóv lowering his eyes and he was going out but became aware of an intense look fixed on him on his right and he turned. Close to the corner on an overcoat sat an old unshaven gray bearded soldier as thin as a skeleton with a stern sallow face and eyes intently fixed on Rostóv The man s neighbor on one side whispered something to him pointing at Rostóv who noticed that the old man wanted to speak to him He drew nearer and saw that the old man had only one leg bent under him the other had been amputated above the knee His neighbor on the other side who lay mo-

— — h h head

h b ck.

"Wh this e seems he began t rn ng t the ass ta t.

And h w we e been begg your honor sa d the ld sold er h s j w qu er g He s bee dead since m rn ng After all w re me not dogs.

I'll se d someo e t o ce He shall be tak en wa —taken way to ce sa d the ssistant hurriedly Let us go your h

"Yes, yes, l t us go sa d Rostó hastily and lo en his yes nd shri k g he tr ed to pass un ticed between the rows of reproach f l envious eyes that were fi ed upon him and ent t f th room.

CHAPTER XVIII

Go ALONG th corrid the assista t led Rostov t the fficers wards co t of three rooms, th doors f which tood open. There were beds these rooms d the s ck and wounded fficers were ly s tt on them. Som were walki bo t the oom n hosp tal dressing go ns. Th first perso Rost m t in th officers ward was thin l ttl man w th arm, who was walking bout the first room in a nightcap and hosp tal dress own w th p pe between his teeth. Rost looked t him, trying to remember where he had seen him before.

"See where w met gain! sa d the l ttle man. "Tushin, Tushin, do you remember ho ga e you lift t Sch n Grabern? And

he heard who Rostóv wanted. Here, her nd Tushin led him into th next room, from whence came sounds of several laughing vo ces.

"How can they laugh, o even li e t all here?" thought Rostov till ware of that smell f decomposin flesh that had been so strong in the soldiers' ward, and still seeming to see fixed on him those envious looks which had followed him out from both des, and th face f that young so dier w th eyes rolled back.

Denisov la asleep on hi bed with hi head under th bla ket, though t was nearl noon.

Ah, Rostov How are you, how are you.

he called out st ll n the same o ce as tl e regiment but Rostó not ced sadly th t under tl s h b tu l ease nd im t n some new s n ter h dden feel g showed itself in the exp ess o of Denisov s face a d the ton t ns of his o ce

H s w und th ugh a l l t o e had n t yet healed even n w weeks fter he had been h t. H face had the sam swolle p llor s the f es of the other hosp tal p tients but it was n t th s th t struck Rosto Wh t truck h m was that De iso d d n t seem gl d to see h m and smiled at h m u naturally He d d not

k abo t the reg me t n r about the ge eral state f aff rs d when Rostó spoke of these m tters d d not l ten

R tó even n t ced that De isov d d n t l'ke to be rem ded of the eg ment o g eral of th t other free l fe which wa go g o o ts de the hosp tal He seemed to try to for get that old l fe d wa only terested the ff ir with the comm ssari t off cers On Ros tó nquiry as to how the matter stood he at o ce produced from u der his p ll w p pe he had rece ed from th comm ss on a d the rough draft of his swer to t. He became an ma ed when h began ead his paper d specially drew Rost tte t n to the t g ing rejo ders h made to h s enem es. H s hosp tal comp ns who h d gathe ed rou d Rostó —a fresh arr al f m the w ld outs de —gradually began to disperse as soon a Deni so began eading his nswer Rostó not ced by their f ces that all those g tleme had l ready heard that st ry mo e than o ce a d were tired of t. Only the man who had the

Denisov

"But what I say is h sa d, turn t Ros tóv t would be best imply to petit n the Empero f pardo They say great rewards will now be di tributed, and urely pard n would be gra ted.

"M petition th Empewo excl med Deni so

bers to book. Let them twy m I m n t afwaid of anyone I eserved the Tsar and my countwy honowably d ha ot t len A d m l to

with more than four hundred patients! I s a
well that k
two poun
or we sho
dred sir and they re always sending me fresh ones There *are* four hundred? Fl > ha
(
Major Denisov Rostóv said again He was wounded at Molliten

Dead I fancy Eh Makéev? queried the doctor in a tone of indifference

The assistant however did not confirm the doctor s words

Is he tall and with reddish hair? asked the doctor

Rostóv described Denísov s appearance

There was one like that said the doctor as if pleased That one is dead I fancy However I ll look up our list We had a list Have you got it Makéev?

Makár Alexéevich has the list answered the assistant But if you ll step into the officers wards you ll see for yourself he added turning to Rostóv

Ah you d better not go sir said the doctor or you may have to stay here yourself

But Rostóv bowed himself away from the doctor and asked the assistant to show him the way

Only don t blame me! the doctor shouted up after him.

Rostóv and the assistant went into the dark corridor The smell was so strong there that Rostóv held his nose and had to pause and collect his strength before he could go on A door opened to the right and an emaciated sallow man on crutches barefoot and in underclothing limped out and leaning against the doorpost looked with glittering envious eyes at those who were passing Glancing in at the door Rostóv saw that the sick and wounded were lying on the floor on straw and overcoats

May I go in and look?

What is there to see? said the assistant

But just because the assistant evidently did not want him to go in Rostóv entered the soldiers ward The foul air to which he had already begun to get used in the corridor was still stronger here It was a little different more pungent and one felt that this was where it originated

In the long room brightly lit up by the sun through the large windows the sick and wound
ed is Those who were conscious raised themselves or lifted their thin yellow faces and all looked intently at Rostóv with the same expression of hope of relief reproach and envy of another s health. Rostóv went to the middle of the room
through the
rooms saw
looking si
pected such a sight Just before him, almost across the middle of the passage on the bare floor lay a sick man probably a Cossack to judge by the cut of his hair The man lay on his back his huge arms and legs outstretched. His face was purple his eyes were rolled back so that only the whites were seen and on his bare legs and arms which were still red the veins stood out like cords He was knocking the back of his head against the floor hoarsely uttering some word which he kept repeating Rostóv listened and made out the word It was drink drink a drink! Rostóv glanced round looking for someone who would put this man back in his place and bring him water

Who looks after the sick here? he asked the assistant

Just then a commissariat soldier a hospital orderly came in from the next room marching stiffly and drew up in front of Rostóv

Good day your honor! he shouted rolling his eyes at Rostóv and evidently mistaking him for one of the hospital authorities.

Get him to his place and give him some water said Rostóv pointing to the Cossack

Yes your honor the soldier replied complacently and rolling his eyes more than ever he drew himself up still straighter but did not move

No it s impossible to do anything here thought Rostóv lowering his eyes and he was going out but became aware of an intense look fixed on him on his right and he turned Close to the corner on an overcoat sat an old unshaven gray bearded soldier as thin as a skeleton with a stern sallow face and eyes intently fixed on Rostóv The man s neighbor on one side whispered something to him pointing at Rostóv who noticed that the old man wanted to speak to him. He drew nearer and saw that the old man had only one leg bent under him the other had been amputated above the knee His neighbor on the other side who lay mo-

surprised had he been absent.

Boris lodged with another adjutant, the Polish Count Zhilinski. Zhilinski, a Pole brought up in Paris, was rich, and passionately fond of the French, and almost every day of the stay at Tilsit, French officers of the Guard and from French headquarters were dining and lunching with him and Boris.

On the evening of the twenty-fourth of June Count Zhilinski arranged a supper for his French friends. The guest of honor was an aide-de-camp of Napoleon's, there were also several French officers of the Guard, and a page of Napoleon's, a young lad of an old aristocratic French family. That same day Rostóv, profiting by the darkness to avoid being recognized in civilian dress, came to Tilsit and went to the lodging occupied by Boris and Zhilinski.

Rostóv, in common with the whole army from which he came, was far from having experienced the change of feeling toward Napoleon and the French—who from being foes had suddenly become friends—that had taken place at headquarters and in Boris. In the army, Bonaparte and the French were still regarded with mingled feelings of anger, contempt, and fear. Only recently, talking with one of Plátov's Cossack officers, Rostóv had argued that if Napoleon were taken prisoner he would be treated not as a sovereign, but as a criminal. Quite lately, happening to meet a wounded French colonel on the road, Rostóv had maintained with heat that peace was impossible between a legitimate sovereign and the criminal Bonaparte. Rostóv was therefore unpleasantly struck by the presence of French officers in Boris' lodging, dressed in uniforms he had been accustomed to see from quite a different point of view from the outposts of the flank. As soon as he noticed a French officer, who thrust his head out of the door, that warlike feeling of hostility which he always experienced at the sight of the enemy suddenly seized him. He stopped at the threshold and asked in Russian whether Drubetskóy lived there. Boris, hearing a strange voice in the anteroom, came out to meet him. An expression of annoyance showed itself for a moment on his face on first recognizing Rostóv.

"Ah, it's you? Very glad, very glad to see you," he said, however, coming toward him with a smile. But Rostóv had noticed his first impulse.

"I've come at a bad time I think. I should not have come but I have business," he said coldly.

"No, I only wonder how you managed to get away from your regiment. *Dans un moment je suis à vous*," he said, answering someone who called him.

"I see I'm intruding," Rostóv repeated.

The look of annoyance had already disappeared from Boris' face: having evidently reflected and decided how to act, he very quietly took both Rostóv's hands and led him into the next room. His eyes, looking serenely and steadily at Rostóv, seemed to be veiled by something, as if screened by blue spectacles of conventionality. So it seemed to Rostóv.

"Oh, come now! As if you could come at a wrong time!" said Boris, and he led him into the room where the supper table was laid and introduced him to his guests, explaining that he was not a civilian, but an hussar officer, and an old friend of his.

"Count Zhilinski—*le Comte N. N.—le Capitaine S. S.*," said he, naming his guests. Rostóv looked frowningly at the Frenchmen, bowed reluctantly, and remained silent.

Zhilinski evidently did not receive this new Russian person very willingly into his circle and did not speak to Rostóv. Boris did not appear to notice the constraint the newcomer produced and, with the same pleasant composure and the same veiled look in his eyes with which he had met Rostóv, tried to enliven the conversation. One of the Frenchmen, with the politeness characteristic of his countrymen, addressed the obstinately taciturn Rostóv, saying that the latter had probably come to Tilsit to see the Emperor.

"No, I came on business," replied Rostóv briefly.

Rostóv had been out of humor from the moment he noticed the look of dissatisfaction on Boris' face, and as always happens to those in a bad humor, it seemed to him that everyone regarded him with aversion and that he was in everybody's way. He really was in their way, for he alone took no part in the conversation which again became general. The looks the visitors cast on him seemed to say: "And what is he sitting here for?" He rose and went up to Boris.

"Anyhow, I'm in your way," he said in a low tone. "Come and talk over my business and I'll go away."

"Oh, no, not at all," said Boris. "But if you are tired, come and lie down in my room and have a rest."

"Yes, really..."

They went into the little room where Boris slept. Rostóv, without sitting down, began:

"In a minute I shall be at your disposal..."

be degwaded? Listen I m w iting to them stwaight This is what I say If I had wobbed the Tweasuwy

It s certainly well written said Túshin but that s not the point Vasíli Dmítrich and he also turned to Rostóv One has to submit and Vasíli Dmítrich doesn t want to You know the auditor told you it was a bad business

Well let it be bad said Denísov

The auditor wrote out a petition for you continued Tushin and you ought to sign it and ask this gentleman to take it No doubt he (indicating Rostóv) has connections on the staff You won t find a better opportunity

Haven t I said I m not going to gwovel? Denísov interrupted him and went on reading his paper

Rostóv had not the courage to persuade Denísov though he instinctively felt that the way advised by Tushin and the other officers was the safest and though he would have been glad to be of service to Denísov He knew his stubborn will and straightforward hasty temper

When the reading of Denísov s virulent reply which took more than an hour was over Rostóv said nothing and he spent the rest of the day in a most dejected state of mind amid

silent all the evening

Late in the evening when Rostóv was about to leave he asked Denísov whether he had no commission for him

Yes wait a bit said Denísov glancing round at the officers and taking his papers from under his pillow he went to the window where he had an inkpot and sat down to write

It seems it s no use knocking one s head against a wall! he said coming from the window and giving Rostóv a large envelope In it was the petition to the Emperor drawn up by the auditor in which Denísov without alluding to the offenses of the commissariat officials simply asked for pardon

Hand it in It seems

He did not finish but gave a painfully unnatural smile

CHAPTER XIX

Having returned to the regiment and told the commander the state of Denísov s affairs Rostóv rode to Tilsit with the letter to the Emperor

On the thirteenth of June the French and Russian Emperors arrived in Tilsit Borís Drubetskóy had asked the important personage on whom he was in attendance to include him in

everyone else had always called him [illegible]

You are speaking of Buonaparte asked the general smiling

Borís looked at his general inquiringly and immediately saw that he was being tested.

I am speaking Prince of the Emperor Napoleon he replied The general patted him on the shoulder with a smile

You will go far he said and took him to Tilsit with him

Borís was among the few present at the Niemen on the day the two Emperors met. He saw the raft decorated with monograms saw Napoleon pass before the French Guards on the farther bank of the river saw the pensive face of the Emperor Alexander as he sat in silence in a tavern on the bank of the Niemen awaiting Napoleon s arrival saw both Emperors get into boats and saw how Napoleon—reaching the raft first—stepped quickly forward to meet Alexander and held out his hand to him and how they both retired into the pavilion Since he had begun to move in the highest circles Borís had made it his habit to watch attentively all that went on around him and to note it down At the time of the meeting at Tilsit he asked the names of those who had come with Napoleon and about the uniforms they wore and listened attentively to words spoken by important personages At the moment the Emperors went into the pavilion he looked at his watch and did not forget to look at it again when Alexander came out The interview had lasted an hour and fifty three minutes He noted this down that same evening among other facts he felt to be of historic importance As the Emperor s suite was a very small one it was a matter of great importance for a man who valued his success in the service to be at Tilsit on the occasion of this interview between the two Emperors and having succeeded in this, Borís felt that henceforth his position was fully assured He had not only become known but people had grown accustomed to him and accepted him Twice he had executed commissions to the Emperor himself so that the latter knew his face and all those at court far from cold shouldering him as at first when they considered him a new comer would now have been

surp ised had he been bsent.

Boris lodged w th tl er adjutant the P l ish Cou t Zh lin k Zh l n k a Pole brought up in Paris, was ri h, and pa n t ly fo d of the French, d almost every da of the ta t Tils t, Fre ch fficers f the Guard d from Fre ch headquarters were din nd lunch in w th him and Boris.

O th even f the twenty f urth f June Cou t Zhil sk arra ed suppe for h s French friend Th guest of l r was na d decamp f N poleon s, there w e also everal F ch officers f th Guard d pa e f Na po eo s, you l d f old rist crat Fren h fami That same day Rost profit by the da kness to d be ecognized ci ilia dress cam to T lsit nd went t the lodg occup ed by Borí nd Zh li ki.

Rostó n common w th the wh le rmy from wh ch he cam wa f r from ha g ex per enced the chang f feel ng t wa d N po- d h French—who from be g foes had k n nl e

sack fficers, Rostó had rgued u on were taken priso er he w uld be treated n t so er n, but crim n l Q te l l ha se t meet w u ded Fr h col l

from quit differe t po t of n me utposts f th fla k. A soo he t ced a F ench fficer who thrus h head ut of th door tha wa l k feel f host l ty wh ch he was experienced t l ht f he emy denl se ed h m H t pped t th thresh d d asked Russian whether Drubetsk li ed there. Boris, heari tra e c th eroom, cam ou t meet him. An ex pressio f a ce h wed tself f mo men his fa first ecogn n Rost

Ah, you. V ry gl d ery gl d t see y u he said, ho ever comi g wa d him with smi l B t Ros had n t ed his firs mpulse.

l com t bad im l thi k I h uld not ha com bu I ha bus ess he sa d co dl

N l l w der how o man ged to g t wa from ou regim t. Da m m t j

su à u he sa d n wering someo e wl called h m.

I see I m intrud g Rost repeated

Tl e look of a yance had alread d sap- pea ed from Bo i f ce ha n e dently re- flected nd dec ded l w t act he ery qu et ly took both Rost s hands nd led h m nto tl next oom H s eyes, look ng sere ely an l tead ly t Rost seemed to be e led by some th if screened by blue specta les of co ent o l t So t seemed to Rost 5

Oh come now As f you could come at wron t m sa d Boris, d h led h m to the room wh e the upper table was l d nd nt oduced h m t h s guests expla n n that h wa ot a l an but an hussar officer a d n old friend of his.

Cou t Zh l n k — *l Comte N N — le C p* *t e S S* sa d he nam h guests. Rost v looked frown n ly at the Frenchmen bowed rel ctantl nd rem ned lent.

th new

r

p prod ced d, w tl th same ple sit t e t d the sam e led look n his eyes w th en the

n th t the l tter h d prou y t t to see the Empero

No I came n bus ess, repl ed Rost 5 b fly

from the mo-

d e

l

everybod s wa He reall w u e t w y f he l e took no part i th c ersat n wh ch a n becam general. Tl e looks the vis t rs cast n h m seemed t say A d what is h tt her f ? H rose d went up t Bo is.

A how I m n your way he sa d l w to Come d talk er my bus ess a d I ll go wa

Oh o not t all sa d Boris. But f you re tired, om d lie d wn i my room nd ha e est.

Yes, really

They went i to the l ttle room where Borí lept. Rostó w thout s tti down began at In m t I shall be you d sposal.

once irritably (as if Boris were to blame in some way) telling him about Denisov's affair asking him whether through his general he could and would intercede with ...

...

I ... out a sense of awkward ness Boris with one leg crossed over the other and stroking his left hand ...

...

I ... uncomfortable and cast down his eyes

I have heard of such cases and know that His Majesty is very severe in such affairs I think it would be best not to bring it before the Emperor but to apply to the commander of the corps But in general I think

So you don't want to do anything? Well then say so! Rostov almost shouted not looking Boris in the face

Boris smiled

On the contrary I will do what I can Only I thought

At that moment Zhilinski's voice was heard calling Boris

Well then go go go said Rostóv and refusing supper and remaining alone in the little room he walked up and down for a long time hearing the lighthearted French conversation from the next room

CHAPTER XX

Rostov had come to Tilsit on the day least suitable for a petition on Deni...

... to do so and Boris even had he wished to could not have done so on the following day On that day June 27 the preliminaries of peace were signed The Emperors exchanged decorations Alexander received the Cross of the Legion of Honor and Napoleon the Order of St Andrew of the First Degree and a dinner had been arranged for the evening given by a battalion of the French Guards to the Preobrazhénsk battalion Th Emperors were ...

Rostóv f...

with Boris ...

supper he ... to be asleep and early next morning went away avoiding Boris In his civilian clothes and a round hat he wandered about the town staring at the French and their uniforms and at the streets and houses where the Russian and French Emperors were staying In a square he saw tables being set u... and preparations made for the dinner he saw the Russian and French colors draped from side to side of the streets with huge monograms A and N In the windows of the hou... flags ...

B...

want ...

olas ... seen us but I won't leave here without having done all I can for Denisov and certainly not without getting his letter to the Emperor The Emperor! He is here thought Rostóv who had ...

...

I ... was assembling evidently preparing for the Emperor to come out

I may see him at any moment thought Rostóv If only I were to hand the letter direct to him and tell him all could they really arrest me for my civilian clothes? Surely not! He would understand on whose side ...

He ...

Wh...

that ... even if they did arrest me for being here what would it matter? thought he looking at an officer who was entering the house the Emperor occupied After all people do go in It's all nonsense! I'll go in and hand the letter to the Emperor myself so much the worse for Drubetskoy who drives me to it! And suddenly with a determination he himself did not expect Rostóv felt for the letter in his pocket and went straight to the house

No I won't miss my opportunity now as I did after Austerlitz he thought expecting every moment to meet the mon...

...

... I am happy when I can do good but to remedy injustice is the greatest happiness Rostóv fancied the sovereign saying And passing people who looked after him with curiosity he entered the porch of the Emperor's house

A broad staircase led straight up from the entry and to the right he saw a closed door Below under the staircase was a door leading to the lower floor

...

esty

A pet t Thi way t the fficer on duty he was shown the doo l d downsta rs) ly two t be acc pted

O hearin thus d ffere t o e Rostó grew fri htened at what he was d g the th ught f meet g th Empero at ny mome t was so f ci t d co sequ ntly so larm that h wa re dy to run way but th fficial h had q est o ed h m opened the oo d Rostó e tered

A sh rt t t m n of about th rty n h te b eeches d h h boots d b t te h t that h had ev de tly o ly just put wa tand g that room, d h s al t was b tto n t th b k f his b eeches n w p of hand some ilk-embro dered bra es th t, f som eason, attracted Rostó tt t n Thus man a peak t someo e n the dj groom.

A good figu d n he first bloom h sa g b t o ee Rost he t pped hort d lro ned

What is t A petit n

"What is t? ked tl e person n the othe room.

A ther pet t o w ed the m n th th bra es.

"Tell him t c m l t He ll becom g out directly we must go

Later l ter T morr w It too l te.

Rost turned d was about to go but th ma the bra es t pped him.

"Whom ha y u me fr m Who are you?

I me fr m M jo Den so nswe ed Rostó

Ar you ff cer?

Li ten t Co t Rost

What dacity H nd t through y ur mma der A d go l with y u go d h t ed t put n the un f rm the let ha ded h m.

Ros we t b k t th hall d n t ced that the po ch there w ma y officers nd g erals l ll p rad u f rm wh m he h d pass.

th mp pri ty f his co d t nd p nt g l t, Rost w th d w cast es was mak g h ay t l th h use thr u h th b ll t s t h l m l e called h m d a ha d det ed h m

What ar y u d g h n ci l dress asked deep

It was cavalry ge ral who had obt ed tl e Empero s special f vo d r ng tl can pa gn a d who h d formerly comm nded th

told h m the wh le aff ki g t t er cede for Deniso wl m the general knew H ng heard Rost t the end the g neral hook h s l ead gra ely

I m sorry sorry fo th t f ne fellow G e me the lett r

H rdly had Rostó handed h m the letter nd fi hed expl g Deniso ca e when ha ty tep and the j ngl ng of spurs were he d on the sta rs, and the general, lea h m we t to the por h The gentlemen f the Empero s s te ran d wn the st rs nd went to the r horses. Hayne the same groom who h d been at Auste l tz led up the Emperor h rse l the f t creak of a footstep Rost k ew at o e was he rd on the sta rs. Forgett n the d nger f be recogn ed Rostó went close t the po ch, together w th some i qu t e ci l ns d ga fter two y rs saw those f tures l ad red that same f ce a d sam look d tep nd the sam un on of majesty

ar u d by h gl He spoke a few words t some of the ge ral and recogn g th f r mer comm nde of Rostó s d is sm led and beck ned t him.

All th u t drew back nd Rostó saw the ge ral talk g f som time to the Empero

The Empe o sa d few words to h m d took tep toward his h rse. Aga n tl e crowd f members of the su te and street ga ers (amo g wh m wa Rostó) m ed nea e t th Emper Stopp g bes d his h rs w th his h d on the saddl th Emp ro tu ed t th ca alry g neral and sa d in a loud vo c es d ntly wishing t be heard by ll

I ca not do t, General. I can t becaus th law tro ger th n I d he ra ed his foot to th t rrup

Th g neral bowed hi head respectf lly d the mo arch mou ted nd rod d wn the street

once irritably (as if Boris were to blame in some way) telling him about Denisov s affair asking him whether through his general he could and would interced
on D

Boris in the f
ness Boris wi crossed over the other and stroking his left hand with the slender fingers of his right listened to Rostóv as a general listens to the report of a subordinate now looking aside and now gazing straight into Rostóv s eyes with the same veiled look Each time this happened Rostóv felt uncomfortable and cast down his eyes

I have heard of such cases and know that His Majesty is very severe in such affairs I think it would be best not to bring it before the Emperor but to apply to the commander of the corps But in general I think

So you don t want to do anything? Well then say so! Rostóv almost shouted not looking Boris in the face

Boris smiled

On the contrary I will do what I can Only I thought

At that moment Zhilinski s voice was heard calling Boris

Well then go go go said Rostóv and refusing supper and remaining alone in the little room he walked up and down for a long time hearing the lighthearted French conversation from the next room

CHAPTER XX

ROSTÓV HAD COME to Tilsit on the day least suitable for a petition on Denisov s behalf He could not himself go to the general in attendance as he was in mufti and had come to Tilsit without permission to do so and Boris even had he wished to could not have done so on the following day On that day June 27 the preliminaries of peace were signed The Emperors exchanged decorations Alexander received the Cross of the Legion of Honor and Napoleon the Order of St Andrew of the First Degree and a dinner had been

to be asleep and early next morning went away avoiding Boris In his civilian clothes and a round hat he wandered about the town staring at the French and their uniforms and at the streets and houses where the Russian and French Emperors were staying In a square he saw tables bein set up and preparations made for the dinner he saw the Russian and French colors draped from side to side of the streets with hugh monograms A and N In the windows of th h
flags

wan
olas
here between us but I w
and c
the Er
thought Rostóv who had e Emperor! He is here

as were assembling evidently preparing for the Emperor to come out

I may see him at any moment thought Rostóv If only I were to hand the letter direct to him and tell him all could they really arrest me for my civilian clothes? Surely not! He would understand on whose side
He
Wh
thar
they did arrest me for being here what would it matter? thought he looking at an officer who was entering the house the Emperor occupied After all people do go in It s all nonsense! I ll go in and hand the letter to the Emperor myself so much the worse for Drubetskoy who drives me to tl And suddenly with a determination he himself did not expect Rostóv felt for the letter in his pocket and went straight to the house

No I won t miss my opportunity now as I did after Austerlitz he thought expecting every moment to meet the monarch and conscious of the blood that rushed to his heart at the thought I will fall at his feet and beseech him He will lift me up will listen and will even thank me I am happy when I can do good but to remedy injustice is the greatest happiness Rostóv fancied the sovereign saying And passing people who looked after him with curiosity he entered the porch of the Emperor s house

A broad staircase led straight up from the entry and to the right he saw a closed door Below under the staircase was a door lead
to the lower floor
Wlom
esty

as th h sure that the cross would dl e e w tch ne tl e feast f m d tance. In l s mind tl er And t really d d

Offic us h ds Russ n a d F ench am med t ly e ed the cross nd f tened it t the f rm Lázarev gl c d m r ely t the I t tl ma w th wh te h nds who was d g some

l

stand there o g way do someth

B t e g rders he rema ed f r some t me th t rig d po t n

The Emp rors remount d nd rode aw y Th Preobra hé k battal b eak ng rank

rs dc l a d ew nea m rely to ee h m A rumbl f R and Fr nch ces a d hl the

Lázarev?

I h e

"T m rr w I he r the P eobra hé k ll g them di er

"Yes b t wh t l k f Láz e l Twel e h dred fra cs pe f l f

H cap l ds! h ted a Preobra hé k soldie d g a h ggy F ch cap

Its fi th gl F rst rate

H e y u he d the passw d? ked on Gua ds ffi e of oth "Th day bef ye t day t was N p l F b e' ye t rday Al d Rus gr d O d y ur Emper gi es t nd next d y N poleo T m rr w Emper w ll s d St George C t the bra e t of th F ch G ds. It has t b d e. H must respo d n k d.

Bori too w th h f d Zh ll k cam t see th P eobrazhé k b q t On h way b k he t ed Rostó ta d g by th co er f a house.

Rostó ! H w d y u d ? We m ssed o e n ther he sa d d ld n t fra f m k g h t w the m tter so tra g ly di m l d tr bled w Rostó f

N th g tl g epl ed Ro tó

"I ll call d?

"Yes, I w ll

Rostó stood t th t corn f l g time

why th se e vered arms and legs d those de l men? The aga n he th ught of Lá are re warded and Deni o pu shed a d u p d ned He caught h mself h bori s h

l ad t ed th t m rn g There he l u d so m ny people am g them off cers wl o l k h m elf h d come cl n cl tl es tl at l e had d fficulty n g tt g a d nne Two off ers f h wn d n j ned h m Th cons rsa t on n turally t rn d on the peac Tl e off ers his omrades l k most f the army were

n r mm t o N cholas ate d dra k (ch efly the l tte) n s lence He fi l d

nd ther fo e much to the urp e of the ffi cers

H w can y u j dge wh t best? h cr ed the blood ddenly ru h g to h fa e H can y u judge the Emp ro s act ? Wh t ht h w t rg ? We cannot comp e he d th the Empe r sa ms h s ct ns!

But I ne er d w d abo t th Empe o l s d th ffi justify g himself nd un bl to understand R stó outburst ex ept on tl e ppo t n that he was dru k.

But Rostó d d n t list n t h m

"We n t d pl m t c offici ls we e sol diers nd noth g m re he we t on If we are ord red to d we must die If w e pun

at a gallop Beside himself with enthusiasm Rostov ran after him with the crowd

CHAPTER XXI

THE EMPEROR rode to the square where facing one another a battalion of the Preobrazhénsk regiment stood on the right and a battalion of the French Guards in their bearskin caps on the left

As the Tsar rode up to one flank of the bat talions which presented arms another group

gallop wearing a small hat a blue uniform open over a white vest and the St Andrew rib *bon over his shoulder He was riding a very* fine thoroughbred gray Arab horse with a crim son gold embroidered saddlecloth On ap proaching Alexander he raised his hat and as he did so Rostóv with his cavalryman s eye could not help noticing that Napoleon did not sit well or firmly in the saddle The battalions shouted Hurrah! and *Vive l Empereur!* Napoleon said something to Alexander and both Emperors dismounted and took each oth er s hands Napoleon s face wore an unpleas ant and artificial smile Alexander was saying something affable to him

In spite of the trampling of the French gen darmes horses which were pushing back the crowd Rostov kept his eyes on every movement of Alexander and Bonaparte It struck him as a surprise that Alexander treated Bonaparte as an equal and that the latter was quite at ease with the Tsar as if such relations with an Em peror were an everyday matter to him

Alexander and Napoleon with the long train

ors that Rostov standing in the front row was afraid he might be recognized

Sire I ask your permission to present the Legion of Honor to the bravest of your soldiers said a sharp precise voice articulating every letter

This was said by the undersized Napoleon looking up straight into Alexander s eyes Alexander listened attentively to what was said to him and bending his head smiled pleasantly

To him who has borne himself most brave ly in this last war added Napoleon accentuat ing each syllable as with a composure and as

surance exasperating to Rostóv he ran his eyes over the Russian ranks drawn up before him, who all presented arms with their eyes fixed on their Emperor

Will Your Majesty allow me to consult the colonel? said Alexander and took a few h y steps toward Prince Kozlóvski the comma der of the battalion

Bonaparte meanwhile began taking the glove off his small white hand tore it in doing so, and threw it away An aide-de-camp behind him rushed forward and picked it up

To whom shall it be given? the Emperor Alexander asked Koslóvski in Russian in a low voice

To whomever Your Majesty commands.

The Emperor knit his brows with dissatisfac tion and glancing back remarked

But we must give him an answer

Kozlóvski scanned the ranks resolutely and included Rostóv in his scrutiny

Can it be me? thought Rostóv

Lázarev! the colonel called with a frown and Lázarev the first soldier in the rank stepped briskly forward

Where are you off to? Stop here! vo es

often happens to soldiers called before the ranks

ing at once what he wanted moved about and whispered as they passed something from one to another and a page—the same one Rost *had seen the previous evening at Boris*—ran forward and bowing respectfully over the out stretched hand and not keeping it waitin a moment laid in it an Order on a red ribbon Napoleon without looking pressed two fingers together and the badge was between them Then he approached Lázarev (who rolled his eyes and persistently gazed at his own m arch) looked round at the Emperor Alexander to imply that what he was now doing was done for the sake of his ally and the small white hand holding the Order touched one of Lázarev s buttons It was as if Napoleon knew that it was only necessary for his hand to deign to touch that soldier s breast for the soldier to be forever happy rewarded and distinguished from everyone else in the world Napoleon merely laid the cross on Lázarev s breast and dropping his hand turned toward Alexander

a th ugh sure that the cross would adhere there. A d t really did.

Officious ha ds, Russ a nd French, im mediately ezed th cross nd fastened t to the niform. Lázarev gl ced m ro ely t the l t ho as d g some

1

und there, go way or do somt tu g

But receiving rders, he remai ed f som time in that rigid pos ti n.

The Emperors remou ted d rode way The Preobrazhé k b ttal break ng rank mn led with the F ench Gu rds and sat d wn t the tabl p epared for them.

Lázarev sat in the place of h nor Rus n d French fficers embraced him, congratul t d him, and p essed h s ha ds. Crowds of offi ers d civilia drew ear merely to ee him. A rumbl f Russia and Fre ch o es nd h bles th

Lázarev!

"I ha e.

"Tomorrow I hear the Preobrazhénskis w ll gi them dinner

"Yes, but hat luck for *Lázarev! Twel e* h ndred francs pens on for life.

"Here s cap l ds shouted a Preobraz hé sk soldier don n haggy F ench cap I fine thing! First rate

"H e yo heard th p ssw d?" a ked on Guards fficer f an ther "Th day before yes terday as N pol F *b m ou é* esterda *Ale d e Rusn gr deu* O day our Emperor gi es t nd ext da N po leon. Tom rrow ur Emperor will send St. George Cros the bra est of th F ench Guards. It has be done. He must respond in kind.

Boris, too with his friend Zhilínski, came t see th Preobrazh nsk banquet. O his way back, h noticed Rostov stan ing by th cor er f house.

"Rostov How d yo do? W missed on an other h said, and cou not efrain from ask what was th matter w strange d dismal and troub ed was Rostov' face.

"Nothing, nothing, replied Rostov

"You'll call round?"

"Yes, I will

Rostov st od at that corner for long time,

— h he feast from a d ta ce. In h s mind,

wh le hosp tal w th arm u l ts d rt nd d ease So dly d d he recall that hosp tal stench of dead flesh th t he looked round to see where the smell came from Next he th u ht of that self sat sfied Bonapa te w th h mall wh te hand who was n w n Em pero l ked and respected by Alexander Then why those severed arm and legs and those dead men? Then ga he tho ght of Láz rev re warded and Deniso pun shed and unpar do ed. He caught h m lf harbo ch stra ge th ughts that he wa f ghtened.

had noticed that morn g I here I e to u ma y people m g them off cers who l ke h mself, had come n ci l n cl tl es that l e had d fficulty in gett g a d er Two officers

done f s his troops had ne ther provis o s *nor ammu tion. N cholas ate and drank* (chiefly the l tter) n lence. He fi hed a *couple of bottles of w ne by h mself. Th pro*cess n hi mi d went on tormenti g h m w th

that t was humiliating to look t th French Rostó began hout g w th uncalled f wrath and therefo e much to th urp ise of the offi cers

How can y u j dge what best?" he cr ed, the blood uddenly rushi g t his f ce. H w can you judge th Emper ctions What right ha e we to argue W cannot compre hend either th Emperor' ms o h ctions

B t I never sa d w d about the Emper or! said the officer justify g himself, and un abl t understand Rostov o tburst, except on the suppos ti n that h was drunk.

But Rostóv did n t li ten to him.

"We are not diplomatic officials, we ar sol diers and nothi g more, h went on. If w are ordered to die, w must die. If we re pun

ished it means that we have deserved it it s not for us to judge If the Emperor pleases to recognize Bonaparte as Emperor and to conclude an alliance with him it means that that is the right thing to do If once we begin judging and arguing about everything nothing sacred will be left! That way we shall be saying there is no God—nothing! shouted Nicholas banging the table—very little to the point as it seemed to his listeners but quite relevantly to the course of his own thoughts

Our business is to do our duty to fight and not to think! That s all said he

And to drink said one of the officers not wishing to quarrel

Yes and to drink assented Nicholas Hullo there! Another bottle! he shouted

In 1808 the Emperor Alexander went to Erfurt for a fresh interview with the Emperor Napoleon and in the upper circles of Petersburg there was much talk of the grandeur of this important meeting

CHAPTER XXII

In 1809 the intimacy between the world's two arbiters as Napoleon and Alexander were called was such that when Napoleon declared war on Austria a Russian corps crossed the frontier to co-operate with our old enemy Bonaparte against our old ally the Emperor of Austria and in court circles the possibility of marriage between Napoleon and one of Alexander s sisters was spoken of But besides considerations of foreign policy the attention of Russian society was at that tim [illegible]

Life meanwhile—real life with its essential interests of health and sickness toil and rest, and its intellectual interests in thou ht, science poetry music love friendsh [illegible]

[illegible] es of reconstruction

Book Six 1808-10

*

CHAPTER I

Prince Andrew h d spent two years cont nu ously the cou try

All th pl ns P erre had attempted on his es- fromo e th g

He had th h hest degree pract cal te- city hich P err l cked nd w th ut fuss or train his p rt this et th gs go ng

O o e of his estates the three hundred erfs were l berated and b came f ee agr cultural labo ers—this be g e of th first ex mples of the k d Russ On th estates the se fs compulsory l bo was commuted fo a q tre t. A tra ed m dw f was e gaged for B guchárovo t his expense, d p est was p d t teach ead g nd writing to th chil dre f th peasa ts a d h useh ld erfs.

Prince A drew p t h lf his t m t Bald H lls th his f th d his son wh was till th ca f nurses. The the half he pent n Boguchár Cl ister a h f ther call d Pri A drew estat Desp te the d ffer toth ffa rs f the w ld h h d e. p essed t P erre h did g tly f ll wed ll th t went r ei ed ma y book d to h rpris u ed th t when h his fath had vi t rs

ey f last t o f rt e campa gn d w th draw p p posal f f rm of th army rules d egul o s.

I th pri f 809 h went to vi t th Ry azá estates wh h had been nherited by his so hose guardia h was.

W rmed by th pri g sunshi he sat n th f h looking t the new grass the first lea es o the birches, and the first puffs of wl te p g cloud flo t ng cros the clear blue ky He was not th nk ng of anyth ng but looked bse t m ndedly and cheerfully from de to s de

They cro ed the ferry where l e h d talked w th P erre the year bef e They went thr ugh the muddy v ll ge past th esh g floors nd green fields f w nter rye downh ll where n w he s n

here a d there nd into a b ch h both s des of the ro d In the fo est it Th

l ft g last year le es The co rse e g ee colo of th m ll fir t ees scatte ed here nd there amo g the b r hes was an unple sant e m nder of w nter On enter ng the fo est the h rses began t sn rt d sw ted is bly

P ter th footm n mad some remark to the co chm n the latter assented. B t apparently th co chm n ymp thy wa not en gh for P te nd h turn d n the box t ward h s ma ter

H w pl sant t y ur excellency! hes d w th respectful m le.

"Wh t?

It s pleasant, y ur cell ncy!

Wh t is h talki g bout? thought Prince A drew Oh th p ng I uppo he th ught as h turned round. Yes re lly every th ng green l eady H w early! Th b ches nd cherry nd lders too re com g out But the o ks sh w no gn yet Ah h re is e oak!

At th edg f th ro d stood n k. Prob- bly t n mes th e f the birches that f rmed the forest t was t n t mes as thick and tw ce as t ll as they It was n n rm us tree, its girth tw as great as man could embrace d ev d tly long go m f ts branches had been broken off and ts b k scarred. W th ts huge

ungainly limbs sprawling unsymm

Only the dead looking evergreen firs dotted about in the forest and this oak refused to yield to the charm of spring or notice either the spring o

Sprir
say Arc
ingless c
same and Here is no spring no sun no happiness! Look at those cramped dead firs ever the same and at me too sticking out my broken and barked fingers just where they have grown whethe

ough the forest Prince Andrew turned several times to look at that oak as if expecting something from it Under the oak too were flowers and grass but it stood among them scowling rigid misshapen and grim as ever

Yes the oak is right a thousand times right thought Prince Andrew Let others—the young—yield afresh to that fraud but we know life our life is finished!

A whole sequence of new thoughts hopeless but mournfully pleasant rose in his soul in connection with that tree During this journey he as it were considered his life afresh and arrived at his old conclusion restful in its hopelessness that it was not for him to begin anything anew—but that he must live out his life content to do no harm and not disturbing himself or desiring anything

CHAPTER II

Prince Andrew had to see the Marshal of the Nobility for the district in connection with the affairs of the Ryazán estate of which he was trustee This Marshal was Count Ilyá Rostóv and in the middle of May Prince Andrew went to visit him

It was now hot spring weather The whole forest was already clothed in green It was dusty and so hot that on passing near water one longed to bathe

Prince Andrew depressed and preoccupied with the business about which he had to speak to the Marshal was driving up the avenue in the grounds of the Rostóvs house at Otrádnoe He heard merry girlish cries behind some trees on the right and saw a group of girls running to cross the path of his *calèche* Ahead of the rest and nearer to him ran a dark haired remarkably slim pretty girl in a yellow chintz dress with a white handkerchief on her head from under which loose locks of hair es

Suddenly he did not know why he felt a pang The day was so beautiful the sun so bright everything around so gay but that slim pretty girl did not know or wish to know of his existence and was contented and cheerful in her own separate—probably foolish—but bright and happy life What is she so glad about? What is she thinking of? Not of the military regulations or of the arrangement of the Ryazán serfs quitrents Of what is she thinking? Why is she so happy? Prince Andrew asked himself with instinctive curiosity

In 1809 Count Ilyá Rostóv was living at Otrádnoe just as he had done in former years that is entertaining almost the whole province with hunts theatricals dinners and music. He was glad to see Prince Andrew as he was to see any new visitor and insisted on his stay n the night

During the dull day in the course of which he was entertained by his elderly hosts and by the more important of the visitors (the old counts house was crowded on accou t of an

ing about? Why is she so glad?

That night alone in new surroundings he was long unable to sleep He read awhile and then put out his candle but relit it It was hot in the room the inside shutters of which were closed He was cross with the stupid old man (as he called Rostóv) who had made him stay by assuring him that some necessary documents had not yet arrived from town and he was vexed with himself for having stayed

He got up and went to the window to open it As soon as he opened the shutters the moonlight as if it had long been watching for this burst into the room He opened the casement. The night was fresh bright and very still Just before the window was a row of pollard trees, looking black on one side and with a silvery light on the other Beneath the trees grew some kind of lush wet bushy vegetation with silver lit leaves and stems here and there Farther back beyond the dark trees a roof glittered with dew to the right was a leafy tree with brilliantly white trunk and branches and above it shone

the moo nea ly at its full n a p le lmo t
ta less, sp g sky Pr n e A drei leaned h s
lbo s the w ndow led e d l eyes rest d
that sky

His room was n the first floor Those in tl e
rooms bo e er also wake. He heard female
cto erh d

h n bo e
e
-d

th r o ce

"I t, I can t sleep wh t th use? Come
w I the last t me

Tw girl h o ces sa g a mu cal pa sage—
the d f some so g

Oh, how l ly! Now g t leep nd there
e d of t.

"Y go t leep b t I can t sa d the first
e comi g ea t the w nd w She was
idently lea ght t f r the ru tle of
her dress d e e her breath g c uld be
h d. E eryth wa st ne t ll l k the moon
d its l h ht d the h d ws Pr n e A drew
too da d n t u f fea of b tray g h un
t t l prese e.

Só ya! S yat h wa n l ea d the first
peak Oh h w can y u le p? O ly look
how gl n us t s! Ah h w glo u l D wak
p Só ya he sa d lmo t w l t rs n her
e "Ther ever n wa ch a lo ely
l t bef l

Só ya mad som r lu ta t eply

Do just come d ee h t a m nl Oh
h w l ely! Com h D l g sweet
heart, com h ! Ther y u ee? I fe l l ke
m rms
s

H hea d th so d f cuffle d Só ya
disapp It p t n o lock

Oh y u ly p l th ws f me. All ght,
wo g

Aga ll was lent but Pr A drew
k w h wa till tt g th e F m t m t
m h h d soft rustl nd t t mes h.

O God, O God What does t m n? sh
dd ly cl med. To bed then f t must
be and he l mmed th ca em t.

F h I m ht as well n t exist! th ht
Pri A drew wh l h l t ned t h o
f som eason pe g y t fea g that he
m l t y som th g bout h m. Ther he is
wa As f t were purpo th ht he
I h soul th e udd nly ose uch n un
expected turm l f yo th f l thou hts nd

h l fe,
self

CHAPTER III

NEXT X O I G I Y ng taken leave of no one
but the count and n t w t ng for tl e l d es t
appear Pr nce A d ew set off f r l me

It w alre dy the beg nn ng of J ne wl en
on h s eturn journey he dro e nto tl e b rcl
fo est whe e the gn rled old oak l ad made s
strange nd memorable n imp ess on on lum
In the fo est tl e harness bell sounded yet m re
muffled th n they h d done s x eeks before
f n w ll as tl ck shady a d den e and
they u g firs dotted about in the forest d d not
j on the gei eral beauty but lend g them
sel es to the mood a ound were del cately
green w th fluffy young shoots

The whole d y had been hot. Somewl ere
t rm was gatl r ng but only sm ll lo d
had scatte ed some ra ndrops l ghtly spr n
kl ng the d and the sappy lea es. Tl e left
s de f the f rest was da k n the sl ade tl e
r ght de gl ttered n the sunl ght, wet n l
sh y d ca c ly swayed by the breez E ery
th g was n blossom the n ght ngales tr lled
and the r o ces e erberated n w near n
f way

Yes here n th s forest wa that o k v tl
wh ch I greed tl ught Pr ce Andrew But
wher t? l e ga n w nde ed gaz g at tl e
left s de of th d nd tho t recogn n
t he looked w th dm rat n t the ery o k
he so gl t. Tl old o k qu te tran f gured,
p d out ca py of sappy da k gre n
f l ge tood rapt nd l ghtly trembl in tl
rays of th e en g sun Ne ther gna led f n
g rs no old cars no ld d ubts and sorr
were ny of them in e dence n w Thr u l
the ha d ntury-old b k, e en wh e th e
w e n tw gs lea es h d sprouted ucl as ne
could hardly b l e the old veteran could ha
produ ed.

"Yes t tl e sam o k, th ugl t P e An
drew nd ll t ce he was sei ed by n un
reason g sp gt m fe l g of joy nd en
l All th best m m ts f hi l fe udde ly
ros t h s m m ry Aust l tz w th the l fty
hea his w f de d rep o chful f
P err t tl e f rry th t g rl thr lled by the
b uty f th n ght d that n gl t its lf d
the moon d ll this rushed suddenly to
h m d.

N I f n t o e t th rty-one! Pr nce
A drew udd nly d ded f lly nd d cis ely

ungainly limbs sprawling unsymmetrically and its gnarled hands and fingers it stood an aged stern and scornful monster among the smiling birch trees Only the dead looking evergreen firs dotted about in the forest and this oak refused to yield to the charm of spring or notice either the sn nr

Spring lo say Are you ingless const [illegible] Always the same and always a fraud! There is no spring no sun no happiness! Look at those cramped dead firs ever the same and at me too sticking out my broken and barked fingers just where they have grown whether from my back or my sides as they have grown so I stand and I do not believe in your hopes and your lies

As he passed through the forest Prince Andrew turned several times to look at that oak as if expecting something from it Under the oak too were flowers and grass but it stood among them scowling rigid misshapen and grim as ever

Yes the oak is right a thousand times right thought Prince Andrew Let others—the young —yield afresh to that fraud but we know life our life is finished!

A whole sequence of new thoughts hopeless but mournfully pleasant rose in his soul in connection with that tree During this journey he as it were considered his life afresh and arrived at his old conclusion restful in its hopelessness that it was not for him to begin anything anew—but that he must live out his life content to do no harm and not disturbing himself or desiring anything

CHAPTER II

Prince Andrew had to see the Marshal of the Nobility for the district in connection with the affairs of the Ryazán estate of which he was trustee This Marshal was Count Ilyá Rostóv and in the middle of May Prince Andrew went to visit him

It was now hot spring weather The whole forest was already clothed in green It was dusty and so hot that on passing near water one longed to bathe

Prince Andrew depressed and preoccupied with the business about which he had to speak to [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] saw a group of girls running to cross the path of his calèche Ahead of the rest and nearer to him ran a dark haired remarkably slim pretty girl in a yellow chintz dress, with a white handkerchief on her head from under which loose locks of hair escaped. The girl was shouting something but seeing that he was a stranger ran back laughing without looking at him

Suddenly he did not know why he felt a pang The day was so beautiful the sun so bright everything around so gay but that slim pretty girl did not know or wish to know of his existence and was contented and cheerful in her own separate—probably foolish—but bright and happy life What is she so glad about? What is she thinking of? [illegible]

—

[illegible] Prince Andrew asked himself with instinctive curiosity

In 1809 Count Ilyá Rostóv was living at Otrádnoe just as he had done in former years, that is entertaining almost the whole province with hunts theatricals dinners and music He was glad to see Prince Andrew as he was to see any new visitor and insisted on his staying the night

During the dull day in the course of which he was entertained by his elderly hosts and by the more important of the visitors (the old count's house was crowded o [illegible]

[illegible] about? Why is she so glad?

That night alone in new surroundings he was long unable to sleep He read awhile and then put out his candle but relit it It was hot in the room the inside shutters of which were closed He was cross with the stupid old man (as he called Rostóv) who had made him stay by assuring him that some necessary documents had not yet arrived from town and he was vexed with himself for having stayed

He got up and went to the window to open it As soon as he opened the shutters the moonlight as if it had long been watching for this burst into the room He opened the casement. The n [illegible]

[illegible] the other Beneath the trees grew some kind of lush wet [illegible] silvery vegetation with [illegible] leaves and stems here and there Farther back beyond the dark trees roof glittered with dew to the right was a leafy tree with brilliantly white trunk and branches and above it sl one

th Emper perso lly but the pr ject will speak fo ts lf

He me to d wh t h h d written to n old fi ld marsh l frie d f h f thers The field marshal m de n pp tme t to see h m ec ived him gracio ly a d p om d t n f m the Emper A few d ys later Prince An drew ece ed n ti e th t he was t go to see the M ter of W r Co t Arakché v

O the ppo ted d y Pri ce Andrew en tered Co t Arakchée s w t g room at n ne in the m rn g

He d d t kn w Arakchéev pers lly h d ever see h m d ll he h d h d f h m p ed h m th b t l ttle espect f the m n

H M te f W a man t usted by the Empero d I eed t c cern myself bout his perso al q al t es he has be commis ed t co der my p j ct, so he l can get t ad pt d th ght P e And ew as he ted am g n mber f mporta t d un mport t people Co nt Arakchée wait g oom.

D h serv ce ch efly an adjut nt Pri e A drew had ee the terooms of m ny mport t men d the d ff ent types f ch rooms e w ll k own to h m Co t Arak héev teroom h d qu te a p c l cl racte Th fa e f the mp ta t p pl wa t g th t m f d ce h wed emb rra ment d n l th f e

t me Th n suddenly the grating sou d of harsh vo ce w he rd f m tl e other s de f the door nd the officer—w th pale face and trembling lips—came o t d passed through tl e w t ng room clutching l he d.

After this Prince A d ew was conducted to the door and the off cer on duty a d in a whis per "To the r ght t the wi d w

Pr ce And ew entered pl n tidy room and saw at the table a m n of f rty w th a lo g wa st a lo g l ly cr pped l e d deep wri kles c wl ~ b ows above d ll green h hazel eyes d n o erhang g red nos Arakchéev t rned h s he d t wa d h m w tl out looking at h m.

What y r pet t ? ked Arakchéev

I m n t pet t g y r ex llency re tu ned P ce A d ew q etly

—k

M jesty the Emper has d gned to send yo e lle cy p je t s bm tted by me

Y u see my d sir I ha e read you proj ect terrupted Arak hée utte g o ly the first ords m bly a d th n— ga w th ut look g at P c A d ew—relap g grad l ly to a to e of grumbl g co tempt You re p opo g ew m l tary laws? There are m ny l w but no ne t carry t the old o es Nowad y erybody des gns laws it is eas er

g t t us h fere to Cou t Arak hé O ge ral m —

so

to

leg

nd he h ded t to Pr nce A d ew

g ble He el

Acro th p pe was crawled p n l w th ut n l l — —

p

d

c

tu

t

w t th d t m k d the

how d t f th m uter oom by th dj ta t d ty n ffi er wh struck P A dr w by h h m l t d a d f ght ed w dm tted t that terri ble doo Th ffi er di e lasted l ng

Sila mean f ce

y u g

To wh t mm tt e has the m mo dum be n ef rr d? q ed Pri ce And ew

To th Comm tt e n Army Regul t d I h r mm nded that y ur h r sh uld be pp t d m mber but with ut a s lary

Pri ce A d ew m led.

I do t w t e

A member w th ut l ry r peated Arak

It is not enough for me to know what I have in me—everyone must know it Pierre and that young girl who wanted to fly away into the sky everyone must know me so that my life may not be lived for myself alone while others live so apart from it but so that it may be re flected in them all and they and I may live in harmony!

On reaching home Prince Andrew decided to go to Petersburg that autumn and found all sorts of reasons for this decision A whole series of sensible and logical considerations showing it to be essential for him to go to Petersburg and even to re enter the service kept spring ing up in his mind He could not now under *stand how he could ever even have doubted the* necessity of taking an active share in life just as a month before he had not understood how the idea of leaving the quiet country could ever enter his head It now seemed clear to him that all his experience of life must be senseless ly wasted unless he applied it to some kind of work and again played an active part in life He did *not even remember how formerly on* the strength of similar wretched logical argu ments it had seemed obvious that he would be degrading himself if he now after the les sons he had had in life allowed himself to be- lieve in the possibility of being useful and in

former pursuits no longer interested him and often when sitting alone in his study he got up went to the mirror and gazed a long time at his own face Then he would turn away to the por trait of his dead Lise who with hair curled *à la grecque* looked tenderly and gaily at him out of the gilt frame She did not now say those former terrible words to him but looked sim ply merrily and inquisitively at him And Prince Andrew crossing his arms behind him long paced the room now frowning now smil ing as he reflected on those irrational inex pressible thoughts secret as a crime which al tered his whole life and were connected with Pierre with fame with the girl at the window the oak and woman s beauty and love And if anyone came *into his room at such moments* he was particularly cold stern and above all unpleasantly logical

My dear Princess Mary entering at such a moment would say little Nicholas can t go out today it s very cold

If it were hot Prince Andrew would reply *at such times very dryly to his sister* "he could go out in his smock but as it is cold he must wear warm clothes which were designed for that purpose That is what follows from the fact that it is cold and not that a child who needs fresh air should remain at home he would add with extreme logic as if punishi someone for those secret illogical emotions that *stirred within him*

At such moments Princess Mary would think how intellectual work dries men up

CHAPTER IV

Prince Andrew arrived in Petersburg in Au- gust 1809 It was the time when the youthful Speránski was at the zenith of his fame and his *reforms were being pushed forward* with the greatest energy That same August the Emper or was thrown from his *calèche* injured his leg and remained three weeks at Peterhof recei ing Speránski every day and no one else At that time the two famous decrees were being prepared that so agitated society—abolishing court ranks and introducing examinations to *qualify for the grades of* Collegiate Assessor and State Councilor—and not merely these but a whole state constitution intended to change the existing order of government in Russia le gal administrative and financial from the Council of State down to the district tribunals Now those vague liberal dreams with which the Emperor Alexander had ascended the throne and which he had tried to put into effect with the aid of his associates Czartoryski Novosilt sev Kochubéy and Stróganov—whom he him-

ski on the civil side and Arakchéev on the mili tary Soon after his arrival Prince Andrew as a gentleman of the chamber presented himself at court and at a levee The Emperor *though* he met him twice did not favor him with a single word It had always seemed to Prince Andrew before that he was antipathetic to the Emperor and that the latter disliked his face and personality generally and in the cold re pellent glance the Emperor gave him he now found further confirmation of this surmise *The courtiers explained the Emperor s neglect* of him by His Majesty s displeasure at Bol kónski s not having served since 1805

I know myself that one cannot help one s sympathies and antipathies thought Prince Andrew so it will not do to present my pro posal for the reform of the army regulations to

the Emper p rso lly but the pr j ct will peak f ts lf

H m nti d wh t h had wr tten to an ld fi ld m rshal fr e d f h s f the s The fi ld marsh l m de an appo tme t to see h m ec ed h m grac u ly d p m s d to n form the Emper r A few d ys lat r Pr nc An drew e d tice th t he w s t g to see the M n ste f War Count Arakchéev

On the pp ted d y P nce Andrew en tered Co t Arakché v s w t ng room t n ne in the m rn ng

He d d ot kn w Arakchéev pers lly had ever see h m d ll he h d hea d f h m n sp ed him w th b t l ttle resp ct f th m

He is M te f W a m n t u ted by the — lf bout s- n e n t

mport t people n Co nt A u ing room.

— h fl n djutant

chéev a teroom h d qu t p ci u

The f es of th u mporta t peopl w t ng th ir t m f d h w d emb rrass- m t d ers l ty th f es of those f h h r n k expressed mm fe l g f wkward ess, c e d by m k f co rn d nd cul f them l es the t t n nd th per so f wh m they w wa t g Som w lk d thou htf ll p d d wn otl rs wh p d d l hed Pri A drew h ard the k ame S1 A d (e h nd th w d *U l* will gi t t us h feren e t Count Arakchée O general (mp rt t p so ge) e d tly fe l g ff d d t h g to ait so l g t cross g d u cros g h — m lf

dj ta t d ty tak h n m but e t ed ro cal look d was t ld th t his turn ld com d urs Af er som others h d be h wn d t of th mi er' room by the dj ta n duty ffi er ho truck Pri e A drew by h h miliated a d frigh ed was dm ted t that terri ble doo Th fficer s ud ence lasted a long

Sila means force.

t me Then suddenly the grat ng s und of a h rsh vo ce was hea d from the thers de of the do r and the off cer—w th p le f ce and trembl ng l ps—came out an l p sed tl rougl tl e wa t g room clutch ng h s l e d

After th Prince A drew was conducted to the door d tl e off ce n duty sa d in a wh s per "To the r ght at tl e w nd w

P nce Andrew entered pl in tidy room and saw at the table a man of forty w th l ng wa t a l g cl sely cr pped l e d deep wrin kles cowl ng b ws abo e dull green h h zel eyes and an o erl ng ng red nose Arakchéev turned h s he d tow d l m witl out look ng at h m

› ked Arakchéev re-

e t, nterrupted Arakchéev u l b , e first w rd m bly nd then— ga n w thout look g at Pr c A drew—relap g grad l ly nto t ne f grumbl c ntempt. You n m new m l t ry laws? There are

to l rn f om y u exc lle cy h w y u propose t d l w th th mem ra dum I ha e p esent d d Pr e And ew pol tely — —

nd he ha ded t t Pr ce And w

Across th p p r was scrawled n pe c l w th ut p tal l tters m p lled nd w tl out pu ctu t n U so dly co stru ted be cau es mbles m tat f the F ch m l tary c d d f m th Art cl f War eed lessly d t g

To what c mm ttee has the m mora d m been f rred? q red Pr ce A d ew

"To the Comm tt Army Regul t ns d I ha e mm d d that your hon h uld be ppo ted a member b t w tho t a sal ry

Pri ce A d ew sm led.

I d t wa t o e.

A member w thout salary repeated Arak

chéev I have the honor Eh! Call the next one! Who else is there? he shouted bowing to Prince Andrew

CHAPTER V

WHILE WAITING for the announcement of his appointment to the committee Prince Andrew looked up his former acquaintances particularly those he knew to be in power and whose aid he might need In Petersburg he now experienced the same feeling he had had on the eve of a battle when troubled by anxious curiosity and irresistibly attracted to the ruling circles where the future on which the fate of millions depended was being shaped From the irritation of the older men the curiosity of the uninitiated the reserve of the initiated the hurry and preoccupation of everyone and the innumerable committees and commissions of whose existence he learned every day he felt that now in 1809 here in Petersburg a vast civil conflict was in preparation the command

of reconstruction of which Prince Andrew had a vague idea and Speránski its chief promoter began to interest him so keenly that the question of the army regulations quickly receded to a secondary place in his consciousness

Prince Andrew was most favorably placed to secure a good reception in the highest and most diverse Petersburg circles of the day The reforming party cordially welcomed and courted him in the first place because he was reputed to be clever and very well read and secondly because by liberating his serfs he had obtained the reputation of being a liberal The party of the old and dissatisfied who censured the in

mine society world welcomed him gladly because he was rich distinguished a good match and almost a newcomer with a halo of romance

that he had greatly improved during these last five years having softened and grown more manly lost his former affectation pride and contemptuous irony and acquired the serenity that comes with years People talked about him were interested in him and wanted to meet him

The day after his interview with Count Arakchéev Prince Andrew spent the evening at Count Kochubéy s He told the count of his interview with *Sila Andréevich* (Kochubéy spoke of Arakchéev by that nickname with the same vague irony Prince Andrew had noticed in the Minister of War s anteroom)

Mon cher even in this case you can t do without Michael Mikháylovich Speránski. He manages everything I ll speak to him. He has promised to come this evening

What has Speránski to do with the army regulations? asked Prince Andrew

Kochubéy shook his head smilingly as if surprised at Bolkónski s simplicity

We were talking to him about you a few days ago Kochubéy continued and about your freed plowmen

Oh is it you Prince who have freed your serfs? said an old man of Catherine s day turning contemptuously toward Bolkónski

It was a small estate that brought in no profit replied Prince Andrew trying to extenuate his action so as not to irritate the old man uselessly

Afraid of being late said the old man looking at Kochubéy

There s one thing I don t understand he continued Who will plow the land if they are set free? It is easy to write laws but difficult to rule Just the same as now—I ask you Count —who will be heads of the departments when everybody has to pass examinations?

Those who pass the examinations I suppose replied Kochubéy crossing his legs and glancing round

Well I have Pryánichnikov serving under me a splendid man a priceless man but he s sixty Is he to go up for examination?

Yes that s a difficulty as education is not at all general but

Count Kochubéy did not finish He rose, took Prince Andrew by the arm and went to meet a tall bald fair man of about forty with a large open forehead and a long face of unusual and peculiar whiteness who was just entering The newcomer wore a blue swallow tail coat with a cross suspended from his neck and a star on his left breast It was Speránski Prince Andrew recognized him at once and felt a throb within him as happens at critical moments of life Whether it was from respect envy or anticipation he did not know Speránski s whole figure was of a peculiar type that made him easily recognizable In the society in which Prince Andrew lived he had never seen anyone who together with awkward and clum

sr gestures possessed such calmness nd self assurance he had never seen so resolute yet gentle an exp ess n that i those half-closed, rat er humid eyes, or so firm sm l that ex pressed nothing n r had he heard such a re fined, smooth, soft o ce bo e ll he had nev er seen such d l cat whiteness of face o hands —hands hich er broad, but ery plump soft, and hit Such wh te ess nd soft es Pr e Andrew had only seen o the f ces of sold ers who had been l n n hosp tal This was Speranski, Secretary of Stat eporter to the Em pero and his compani n t Erfurt, wher he had more than o ce met and talked w th N po eon.

Speránski d d n t hift his eyes from o e f ce to another as people olu tarily d o en ering large compa d was n o hurry to peak. He pok slowly w th ura ce that he would be l ed t d he looked only t the perso with wh m he was o ers g

Pri ce A drew f llo ed Sperá k every word d mo ement w th part cular ttent on. As happens some people espec lly t m n o judge those near t them severely he l ways meeti nyon ew—especi lly ny one whom, l k Sperá k h kn w b eputa tio —expected t disco er n him the perfec tion of huma qualities.

Speránski t ld Kochubéy he was sorry he had been bl to m soo er as he had been detained t th palace H did n t say that th Emperor had kept him, d Pri c Andrew no ed this affectat f modesty When Ko ch béy introd ed Pri ce Andrew Speránski slowly turned his eyes t Bolkó ki w th his customary smil d looked t him n silence

"I am ery glad to make your cqua tance. I had heard f you, as everyon has, he sa d af er pause.

Koch béy sa d few words bout the recep tio Arakchéev had gi n Bolkónsk Speránski smiled more markedly

"The chairman f th Committee n Arm Regulatio is my good fri d M n eur M itski, he sa d, full rticulati g ery word and syllable, d f you l k I ca put you tou h w th him. He paused th full t p "I hope you will find him ympath tic nd ready to co-operat in p mou g ll that reaso ble.

A circl soo f rmed rou d Sperá ki, and the ld ma who had talked bo t hi bordi na Pryánichniko ddressed questi n t him.

Prince Andrew withou jo g in th con versat on wat hed every mo en ent of Speránski s th man not lo g nce n n gn fica t

w th wh ch Sperán k nswered the old ma He ppeared to ddress condescend n words to l m from n mmeasurable l e ght When th old man began to peak too loud Sperá sk m led a d sa d he could not judge of the d ant ge r disadvantage f wh t pleased the so ere gn.

H talked f r a l ttle wh le n the gen eral ci le Sperán k rose nd com up to Prince Andrew took him al to the other end of the room. It was clear th t he tho ght it necessary to terest h mself n Bolkon ki.

I h d no ch nce to talk w th you Pr nce dur g th a m ted con ersat on n wh ch that enerable gentleman n ol ed me, he sa d w th mildly contemptuous mil as f timati g by that smil that he d Pri ce And ew understood the s gn ficance of th peopl w th wh m he had ju t been talkin Thi flattered Prince A drew I ha e k w i of y f l n t me first from your ct n w th regard to your serf first example of wh ch t is ery desirabl that there h uld be m re tat rs nd seco dly because you re o of those gentlemen of the chamber who ha e n t ons dered themsel es offended by th e ew decree concern g the ranks ll tted o courti rs, wh ch is caus so much gos p d tittle-tattle

N sa d Pri ce Andrew my father d d not w h me t tak d antage f the pri lege. I began th e erv ce from the lower grade

"Y ur f ther man f th last cet tury ev de tly tands bo e our contemporar es who so co demn this mea ure wh ch merely e establishes n tural just ce

I think, howeve that thes co demn t on ha some grou d returned Pri ce Andrew tryin to es t Sperán k fl ence f which h began to be co ci us. He d d not l ke to

Grou ds of person l amb tion ma be Sperá ki put n quietly

A d f tat interest to some ext nt, said Pri A drew

What do you mean? asked Speránski quietly lowering his eyes

I am an admirer of Montesquieu replied Prince Andrew and his idea that *le principe des monarchies est l honneur me parait incontestable Certains droits et privilèges de la noblesse me paraissent etre des moyens de soutenir ce sentiment*

The smile vanished from Speránsk h face wl h

I

Si vous envisagez la question sous ce point de vue he began pronouncing French with evident difficulty and speaking even slower than in Russian but quite calml

ne
to
a nega onor *l honneur* is e l
worthy
of com u rewards which recognize it His arguments were concise simple and clear

An institution upholding honor the source of emulation is one similar to the *Légion d honneur* of the great Emperor Napoleon not harmful but helpful to the success of the service but not a class or court privilege

I do not dispute that but it cannot be denied that court privileges have attained the same end returned Prince Andrew Every courtier considers himself bound to maintain his position worthily

Yet you do not care to avail yourself of the privilege Prince said Speránski indicating by a smile that he wished to fin h m

ednesday he added I will after talking with Magnítski let you know what may interest you and shall also have the pleasure of a more detailed chat with you

Closing his eyes he bowed *à la française* without taking leave and trying to attract as little attention as possible he left the room

CHAPTER VI

DURING the first weeks of h s stay in P
P
h

t ior a h es s hon r seems to me incontestal le Certa n r gl ts d p leges f r the ar tocracy ppear to me a means of ma n tai ing that sent ment

If you regard the q est on from that po nt of v ew

overshadowed by the trifling cares that engrossed him in that city

On returning home in the e

e the arrangement of the day so as to be in time everywhere absorbed the greater part of his vital energy He d d nothing did not even think or find time to think, but only talked and talked successfully of what he had thought while in the country

He sometimes noticed with dissatisfaction that he repeated the same remark on the same day in different circles But he was so busy for whole days together that he had no time to notice that he was thinking of nothing

As he had done on their first meeting at Kochubéy s Speránski produced a stron impression on Prince Andrew on the Wednesday when he received him tête à tête at his o n house and talked to him long and confidentially

To Bolkónski so many people appeared contemptible and insignificant creatures and h so longed to find in someone the living ideal of th

I had Speránski sprung from the same class as himself and possessed the same breeding and traditions Bolkónski would soon have discovered his weak human unheroic s des but as it was Speránski s strange and logical turn of mind nsp red him with respect all the more because he did not quite understand him. Moreover Speránski either because he appreciated the other s capacity or because he considered it necessary to win him to his side showed off his dispassionate calm reasonableness before Prince Andrew and flattered h m with that subtle flattery which goes hand in hand with self assurance and consists in a tac t assumpt on that one s companion is the only man besides oneself capable of understand ng the folly of the rest of mankin l and the reasonableness and profundity of one s own ideas.

During their long conversation on Wednesday evening Speránski more than once remarked We regard everything that is above the common level of rooted custom or with a smile But we want the wolves to be fed and the sheep to be safe or They cannot understand th is and all in a way that seemed to say We you and I understand what they are and who we are

This first long conversation with Speránski

D g the frst pe od of the r cq a ntan e Bolkón ki felt a pass o te adm rat on f h m s m l r to that wh ch he had o ce felt f Bo p rte The fact tl at Spe á k was tl

his energy d p rs ten had tta ned powe hich he as us g solely f the w lf re of Russ I Pri Andrew eyes Sperá k was th ma h w uld himself h w hed to b — e wh e pl ed all the f ts f l fe e so bly con dered mporta t ly what was ra tio al, a d was cap ble f pply g th ta d ard of easo t everyth g E eryth g emed so mple d clear n Sperá k e pos t

h m the more and u co c ously to st gthen t.

On that first e e g Bolkón k sp t w tl h m ha i g me t ed the Comm ss n f tl Re s n f the Code of Law Sperá k tol l h m sa ca t cally tl t the Comm l d ted f h d ed d fifty years had co t m ll d had do e noth g cept tl t R k mpf h d stu k l b l o tl e corre spo d g p ragraphs of the d fferent codes

And that ll tl e t te l for the m ll t has spe t, sa d he We w t t g e the Senate w j d cal pow rs b t we ha e laws Th t s why t is n for men l ke y Pr n t to serv these t mes

P e A d ei d that f tl t w k ed cat n in jur prude was needed l cl he d d ot p ssess.

B t obody pos esses t so wh t w uld y h ? It is ci s ci l from wh ch we mu t b eak w y t.

A w ek l ter Pr e A d ew was member of the Comm ttee Army Regul t s and— wh t he had ot t ll exp ted—wa cha rm n of tu f th comm ttee f r the re of th l ws At Sperá k equest l e t k tl e first p rt of the C il Code th t w be g drawn p d th the a d f th *Cod N po léo* d the I t tutes of Ju t he w ked t f rmul t g th sect on Perso al R l t

in his d pende ce a d not subm t t Spe rá ki p ns t ly E eryth g was ght d everyth g wa t sh uld be nly o e thi d co erted Pr And ew Th s was Sperán ki ld m rr l ke look which d d t allow e t p etrat to h soul d h s d l cate h te ha ds wh ch P e A d ew in luntarily wat hed as o e d es w t h the ha ds of those wh pos ess power Th m rr l ke ga e d those del cate h ds rr t ted Pri ce A dr w h k ew n t why He wa u pleasa tly tru k too by th e ess con tempt f th rs th t he bserved Sperá k d by th d rs ty f l es f rgume it h used to s ppo th op He m d u e of er ry k d of mental d ce pt logy d p ssed too boldly t med t P An d w from to th N w h w uld take th

y og cal o dd nly ri t th e Im of m taphy cs. (This l t eso w he ery f eq tly mployed.) He w ld tra f q est t m taphy cal he gl ts p o to d fi f p t m d th ght d ha ded ed th r f tat h eded ld ga des e d to the le l of th gi nal d scuss

I g eral the tra t l Sperá ski ment l t

CHAPTER VII

NEA LY TI O A b f e th 8 8 P err n tur g t P t rsburg lter t g l estates h d l t ly f d h m elf n le d g pos t n mo g the P t rsb rg F ee m so He rm

co ld ever occu h m wh h t P A d s m d so t l n m ly th t t fter ll mpos bl t e p es ll e th k a d th t h h d ever f l th d bt, l not ll l th k d b l se ? A d t a j t th pecul rity f Sp rá k m d that p rticul ly ttra ted Pr A dr w

e ct n f t mples d ppl m t d f h could the colle t n of Im n rega d t wh ch the m j ty of members we st gy d rregul He ppo ted Im t s le ha ded poo h use the orde h d f d d Pe rsburg

H l f mea wh l co ti ed bef w th th sam nf tuat d d s p t ons. H

"What do you mean?" asked Speránski quietly, lowering his eyes.

"I am an admirer of Montesquieu," replied Prince Andrew, "and his idea that *le principe des monarchies est l'honneur me paraît incontestable. Certains droits et privilèges de la noblesse me paraissent être des moyens de soutenir ce sentiment.*"[1]

The smile vanished from Speránski's white face, which was much improved by the change. Probably Prince Andrew's thought interested him.

... than in Russia, but quite calmly.

Speránski went on to say that honor, *l'honneur*, cannot be upheld by privileges harmful to the service; that honor, *l'honneur*, is either a negative concept of not doing what is blameworthy or it is a source of emulation in pursuit of commendation and rewards which recognize it. His arguments were concise, simple, and clear.

"An institution upholding honor, the source of emulation, is one similar to the *Légion d'honneur* of the great Emperor Napoleon, not harmful but helpful to the success of the service, but not a class or court privilege."

"I do not dispute that, but it cannot be denied that court privileges have attained the same end," returned Prince Andrew. "Every courtier considers himself bound to maintain his position worthily."

"Yet you do not care to avail yourself of the privilege, Prince," said Speránski, indicating by a smile that he wished to finish amiably an argument which was embarrassing for his companion. "If you will do me the honor of calling on me on Wednesday," he added, "I will, after talking with Magnítski, let you know what may interest you, and shall also have the pleasure of a more detailed chat with you."

Closing his eyes, he bowed *à la française*, without taking leave, and trying to attract as little attention as possible, he left the room.

CHAPTER VI

During the first weeks of his stay in Petersburg Prince Andrew felt the whole trend of thought he had formed during his life of seclusion quite overshadowed by the trifling cares that engrossed him in that city.

On returning home in the evening he would jot down in his notebook four or five necessary calls or appointments for certain hours. The mechanism of life, the arrangement of the day so as to be in time everywhere, absorbed the greater part of his vital energy. He did nothing, did not even think or find time to think, but only talked, and talked successfully, of what he had thought while in the country.

He sometimes noticed with dissatisfaction that he repeated the same remark on the same day in different circles. But he was so busy for whole days together that he had no time to notice that he was thinking of nothing.

As he had done on their first meeting at Kochubéy's, Speránski produced a strong impression on Prince Andrew on the Wednesday, when he received him tête-à-tête at his own house and talked to him long and confidentially.

To Bolkónski so many people appeared contemptible and insignificant creatures, and he so longed to find in someone the living ideal of that perfection toward which he strove, that he readily believed that in Speránski he had found this ideal of a perfectly rational and virtuous man. Had Speránski sprung from the same class as himself and possessed the same breeding and traditions, Bolkónski would soon have discovered his weak, human, unheroic sides; but as it was, Speránski's strange and logical turn of mind inspired him with respect all the more because he did not quite understand him. Moreover, Speránski, either because he appreciated the other's capacity or because he considered it necessary to win him to his side, showed off his dispassionate calm reasonableness before Prince Andrew and flattered him with that subtle flattery which goes hand in hand with self-assurance and consists in a tacit assumption that one's companion is the only man besides oneself capable of understanding the folly of the rest of mankind and the reasonableness and profundity of one's own ideas.

During their long conversation on Wednesday evening, Speránski more than once remarked: "We regard everything that is above the common level of rooted custom ..." or, with a smile: "But we want the wolves to be fed and the sheep to be safe ..." or: "They cannot understand this ..." and all in a way that seemed to say: "We, you and I, understand what they are and who we are."

This first long conversation with Speránski

[1] If you regard ... view.

only strengthened in Prince A drew the feel ng he had experienced toward him at their first meeting H saw in him remarkable, clear-thinkin ma f vast intellect who by his energy and pers ence had tta ed power which he was us solely f r the welf re of Russia. I Prince Andrew s eyes Sperán k wa the man he would himself ha e wi hed t be— on who explai ed all th f cts of l f reason bl considered mportant o ly what wa ra tional, and was capabl of ppl th sta d ard f reason t everythin E erythi seemed so simple nd lear in Sperán k expos t on that Prince A drew luntaril agreed w th him bout everythi g If h repl ed nd gued, t was ly because he wished to ma n- tain his independen and n t subm t to Spe ránski pinions entirel E eryth g was right and everythi g wa as t sh uld be only o e thing disco certed Prince A drew This was Speránski ld, mirro l'k look, which d d not allow t pe etrat to his soul, nd his delicate whit hands, which Pri ce Andrew inv ntaril wat hed o does watch the hands f those who possess power This mirro like gaze and those del cate hands irrita ed Prince Andrew h knew no wh H was un- p easantl truck, too by th excessi con tempt for thers that he observed Speranski, and by th diversity f lines of argum t h used to support his pini ns. He mad use of every kind f mental device, except analogy and passed too boldl t seemed to Prince An- drew from t another Now h would take up the pos ti n f practical man and con demn dreamers now that of satirist, d laugh ironicall t his oppo ents now grow severely logical, or udden! rise to the realm f metaphysics. (This last resourc wa one he very frequentl employed.) H would transfer question to metaphys cal heights, pass n t definitions f pa time, and thought, and, having ded ed th refutation h eeded, would ga descend to the level of th origi nal discus ion.

I general th trai of Speranski mentality which struck Princ Andrew most was his ab- solute and unshakabl bel f the power nd uthori f reason. It was evident tha th thought could ever occur him wh ch t Pri Andrew seemed so a ural, nam l that is f er all impossi b to express all on thinks, nd tha h had never f lt the doubt, l not all l th k d belies nonsense And was just this peculiarity of Speránsk mind tha particularly tracted Princ Andrew

During th first period of the r cqua nta c Bolk nski felt a pass nate admirat on f h m milar to that which he had once felt fo Bon p rte The f ct that Sperán ki was tl

Prince Andrew to cherish his sentime t i h m the more, nd unconsciously to strengthen it.

O that first ev n Bolkón k spent w il him, havin me t ed th Commiss on f th Rev n of the Cod of Laws, Sperá sk t ld him sarca ticall th t the Comm ss on had ex ed f h dred d fifty ears, had co t mill s, and had do e th g except that Rosenkampf had stu k l bel on the corre- po din paragraphs f th d fferent codes.

A d that ll the ta e has for th m ll on t ha pe t, sa d h "We want t gi e the Senat new jurid cal powers, b t we ha e l ws. That is why t is s fo men l'ke ou Pri ce, not t serv n these t mes

Pri ce A drew said that f that wo k n education in juri prude ce was needed wh l he did n t possess.

B t n bod possesses t, so what would you have It is cious circle from which we must break way out.

A week later Prince Andrew was membe of the Comm ttee on Army Regul t o s d— what he had n t t all expected—was cha rman of section of th comm ttee f the rev on f the laws. At Sperán k request he took th first part of th Ci il Code that w be drawn p d, w th th d of th *Cod N po- l* and th I stitutes of Just n n he wo ked t f rm l u th secti on Person l Ri hts.

CHAPTER VII

NEARL TWO YEARS bef e this, n 808 P err on return o Petersburg f er t h estates had luntarily f und h ms lf n a leadi g pos tion mong th Petersburg Free masons. H arranged dinin d funeral lodge meetings, enrolled new members, nd bu ed himself un un various lodges nd cqu n uthentic charters. H ga money f r th erection of temples d supplemented as far as h could th collection f alms, egard to which th majorit of members were ungy and irregula r He upported lmost le- handed poorhouse th rder had f nded n Petersburg

His l fe mea while conti ued as bef re w th th same nfatuation and diss pations. H

What do you mean? asked Speránski quietly lowering his eyes

I am an admirer of Montesquieu replied Prince Andrew and his idea that *le principe des monarchies est l honneu me p*

The smile vanished from Speránski s white face which was much improved by the change Probably Prince Andrew s thought interested him

Si vous envisagez la question sous ce point de vue he began pronouncing French with evident difficulty and speaking even slower than in Russian but quite calml

ne

to

honor *l honneur* is either a negative concept of not doing what is blameworthy or it is a source of emulation in pursuit of commendation and rewards which recognize it His arguments were concise simple and clear

An institution upholding honor the source of emulation is one similar to the *Légion d honneur* of the great Emperor Napoleon not harmful but helpful to the success of the service but not a class or court privilege

I do not dispute that but it cannot be denied that court privileges have attained the same end returned Prince Andrew Every courtier considers himself bound to maintain his position worthily

Yet you do not care to avail yourself of the privilege Prince said Speránski indicating by a smile that he wished to finish amiably an argument which was embarrassing for his companion If you will do me the honor of calling on me on Wednesday he added I will after talking with Magnítski let you know what may interest you and shall also have the pleasure of a more detailed chat with you

Closing his eyes he bowed *à la française* without taking leave and trying to attract as little attention as possible he left the room

CHAPTER VI

overshadowed by the trifling cares that engrossed him in that city

On returning home in the evening he would jot down in his notebook four or five necessary calls or appointments for certain hours. The mechanism of life the arrangement of the day so as to be in time everywhere absorbed the greater part of his vital energy He did nothing did not even think or find time to think, but only talked and talked successfully of what he had thought while in the country

He sometimes noticed with dissatisfaction that he repeated the same remark on the same

had done on their first meeting at Kochubéy s Speránski produced a strong impression on Prince Andrew on the Wednesday when he received him tête à tête at his own house and talked to him long and confidentially

To Bolkónski so many people appeared contemptible and insignificant creatures and he so longed to find in someone the living ideal of that perfection toward which he strove that he readily believed that in Speránski he had found this ideal of a perfectly rational and virtuous man Had Speránski sprung from the same class as himself and possessed the same breeding and traditions Bolkónski would soon have discovered his weak human unheroic sides but as it

tu

m

M

cia

others s capacity or because he considered it necessary to win him to his side showed off his dispassionate calm reasonableness before Prince Andrew and flattered him with that subtle flattery which goes hand in hand with self assurance and consists in a tacit assumption that one s companion is the only man besides oneself capable of understanding the folly of the rest of mankind and the reasonableness and profundity of one s own ideas.

During their long conversation on Wednesday evening Speránski more than once remarked We regard everything that is above the common level of rooted custom or with a smile But *we* want the wolves to be fed and the sheep to be safe or *They* cannot understand this and all in a way that seemed to say *We* you and I understand what *they* are and who *we* are

This first long conversation with Speránski

secure the tr mph of tue he read we m tcl em fr m p jud ce d ff se p n ciples n h rm y w tl the p rit of tl tim s dert ke the educat n of the y u un te o rsel es n i dissol ble bond with tl e w est m boldly yet p dently o c me uperst t fidel ty d folly and f rm f th e dev t d to us a b dy l k d together by u ity f p rpo e d p ses ed of author ty nd po e

T tt th d we mu t secu a p e- po d ra e f t e over e a d mu t e de r t th t the h est m may e en n th w ld rece e al t g re rd for h rtue B t these gre t nde v rs w are gra ely h mpered by tl e p l t cal inst t t ns f today Wh t is to be d n these c cum st c ?T f re l t erthrowe ry th rep l f e by f ? N l We e ry f r from th t. E ery le t f rm de erves re s e f t q te f l t em dy ev l wl le m ren v h t they e d lso because sd m ds l

The h le pl n f ur rder should be b d the dea f pr p r g men f firm ness d rt b d t getl er by u ty of t — m g t the pu hm t of e a d folly a d p t g t l t d t e ra g thy m f om th d t d tta h g tl em t Brotl hood O ly then w ll d h tl p we u btru ely to b d th h ds f tl e p t t rs of d der d t t ol tl m w th t the r be w e of t. I w d w m t f u d f rm f g m t l ld l sw y wl h h uld b d ffused th wh l ld w th ut de t y g the h d of t e sh p d be d wh cl ll tl er go m t ca c t e in tl r cu t m ry e d d ryth g x ept h t mped th gre t m f o de wh h t bta f t tl t ry er e Th w th t f Cl t n ty tself lt t ght m t be e d good d f them n b f t t l ft w tl mple nd ru t f tl b t d w est m

At that t m wl e rytl g w pl ged da k ess p e h g l w f s f fic e t Th lty f T th d wed her h

of tue Our o der should prov de means to that e d

As soon as we l ave a certain n mber of

wl ch h s al e dy n secret ccompl shed mucl f r the welfare of manki d

Tl s speecl n t only m de a strong mpres s n but created e tement in the lodge Tl e m j ty f tl e Br thers ee g n t d ngerous des gns of Ill m sm met it w th a cold ess tl t s rpr ed P erre The Grand M ster be- n

meet ng l e was struck f r the f rst time by the endless variety of men m ds wh ch prevents a truth from e er p e e ti g itself d t cally t two perso E en those members who s m d t be on l is s de u derstood h m in th ow w y w th l m tat s and lterat ons h co ld t greet sw l the lw ys wanted m t wa t c vey l s th ght to others j t as h h m lf u derstood it

At tl e d f tl e meet g the Grand Master w th rony d ill w ll epro ed Bez kh v for l s vehem d s d t wa not l e of v t e al e b t also love f str fe that l d m ed h m n the d p te P err d d n t an er h m d ked b efly wl etler l s pro- p l ld be ac epted He w s told that t vould t and w th t wa t g f the usual f rm l t es l e left the l dge nd went l me

CHAPTER VIII

A IN PIERRE was o t ken by the dep es on l d e ded F tl ree days after the d l ery of h peech at tl lodge he lay on a s fa t h me re e g no e d go g wl er I n

r

r Th Ill t g t to l t t t p bl h cal i t t t ns.

liked to dine and drink well and though he considered it immoral and humiliating could not resist the temptations of the bachelor circles in which he moved

Amid the turmoil of his activities and distractions however Pierre at the end of a year began to feel that the more firmly he tried to rest upon it the more Masonic ground on which he stood gave way under him At the same time he felt that the deeper the ground sank under him the closer bound he involuntarily became to the order When he had joined the Freemasons he had experienced the feeling of one who confidently steps onto the smooth surface of a bog When he put his foot down it sank in To make quite sure of the firmness of the ground he put his other foot down and sank deeper still became stuck in it and involuntarily waded knee deep in the bog

Joseph Alexéevich was not in Petersburg—he had of late stood aside from the affairs of the Petersburg lodges and lived almost entirely in Moscow All the members of the lodges were men Pierre knew in ordinary life and it was difficult for him to regard them merely as Brothers in Freemasonry and not as Prince B or Iván Vasílievich D whom he knew in society mostly as weak and insignificant men Under the Masonic aprons and insignia he saw the uniforms and decorations at which they aimed in ordinary life Often after collecting alms and reckoning up twenty to thirty rubles received for the most part in promises from a dozen members of whom half were as well able to pay as himself Pierre remembered the Masonic vow in which each Brother promised to devote all his belongings to his neighbor and doubts on which he tried not to dwell arose in his soul

He divided the Brothers he knew into four categories In the first he put those who did not take an active part in the affairs of the lodges or in human affairs but were exclusively occupied with the mystical science of the order with questions of the threefold designation of God the three primordial elements—sulphur mercury and salt—or the meaning of the square and all the various figures of the temple of Solomon Pierre respected this class of Brothers to which the elder ones chiefly belonged including Pierre thought Joseph Alexéevich himself but he did not share their interests His heart was not in the mystical aspect of Freemasonry

In the second category Pierre reckoned himself and others like him seeking and vacillating who had not yet found in Freemasonry a straight and comprehensible path but hoped to do so

In the third category he included those Brothers (the majority) who saw nothing in Freemasonry but the external forms and ceremonies and prized the strict performance of these forms without troubling about their purport or significance Such were Willarski and even the Grand Master of the principal lodge

Finally to the fourth category also a great many Brothers belonged particularly those who had lately joined These according to Pierre s observations were men who had no belief in anything nor desire for anything but joined the Freemasons merely to associate with the wealthy young Brothers who were influential through their connections or rank and of whom there were very many in the lodge

Pierre began to feel dissatisfied with what he was doing Freemasonry at any rate as he saw it here sometimes seemed to him based merely on externals He did not think of doubting Freemasonry itself but suspected that Russian Masonry had taken a wrong path and deviated from its original principles And so toward the end of the year he went abroad to be initiated into the higher secrets of the order

In the summer of 1809 Pierre returned to Petersburg Our Freemasons knew from correspondence with those abroad that Bezúkhov had obtained the confidence of many highly placed persons had been initiated into many mysteries had been raised to a higher grade, and was bringing back with him much that might conduce to the advantage of the Masonic cause in Russia The Petersburg Freemasons all came to see him tried to ingratiate themselves with him and it seemed to them all that he was preparing something for them and concealing it

A solemn meeting of the lodge of the second degree was convened at which Pierre promised to communicate to the Petersburg Brothers what he had to deliver to them from the highest leaders of their order The meeting was a full one After the usual ceremonies Pierre rose and began his address

Dear Brothers he began blushing and stammering with a written speech in his hand. it is not sufficient to observe our mysteries in the seclusion of our lodge—we must act—act We are drowsing but we must act. Pierre raised his notebook and began to read

For the dissemination of pure truth and to

secure the tr umph of rtue h re d w must cleans men from p jud ce d ffuse p in ciples in harm y w th th sp it of tl e times u dertake the educat on of the you g un te urselves in ind ssoluble bo ds w th the w est men, boldly y t prud ntly ove c me supersti tions, fidel ty d f lly and form of those devoted to us body l ked together by un ty f purpose and possessed of autho ty and power

"T ttain th e d we must ecu e a p e ponderance f rtue ov r e and mu t en deavor to secure tl t the h est m n m y a ec e la t ng re rd f r are t ons rcum- every e ery serves while ecause uld be based o the dea f p ep r m of firm es d irtue bou d together by u ty f conviction—a m t th pu shment of ce and f lly d p tr iz tal nt nd rtue raisin worthy men from th dust and ttach in them to ur Brotherhood. Only then w ll our order ha th power un btru ly to bind the ha ds f the protectors f diso der and to trol them w th ut their be ware f l w rd, w must f u d f rm f g ernmen holdi u ersal sway wh ch hould be diffused er th whol w ld w thout d stroyin th bo ds f citizensh p nd bes d which all ther go er m ts ca co ti u in their customary cours d do everyth n ex cept hat impedes th great aim f ur der which is to btai f virt th ct ry er vice. This m was that f Chri tian ty tself. I taught m be wise nd good and f their own ben t to f llow the exampl d instructio f th bes d wises men.

At that time, when everything was pl nned in darkness, preachi g alon was of course uf ficient. Th novelty f Truth end wed her th special strength, b now w need much more powerful methods. I is now necessary that man, go erned by his senses, ho d find in irtue charm palpabl to those senses. It impossib to eradica th passions bu w must striv to direct them to nobl aim, and is therefore ecessary that everyone should be able to satisfy his passions within the limits f rtue Our order sl ould provide means to that end.

As soon as we ha e a cert in number of wo thy men in e ery tate each of tl em aga n tra ng two others and ll be g closely united e eryth g w ll be poss ble for o r rder wl ch has al eady in secret ccomplished mucl f r the welf e of ma k nd.

Th s spee h not o ly made a strong impres s on but created excitement in the lodge. The m jority of the Brothers see g in it dangerous des gns of Illum m met t w th a coldness that surp sed P erre The Grand Master be gan sw ring h m nd P erre beg n develop ng h ew w th m nd more warmth It was l g nce there had been so stormy a meet ing Part es were f rmed some accus ng P erre of Illum n m others upport n h m At that m et g he was struck f r the first t me by the ndless variety of men m nds which p eve ts a truth from e er present ng tself ident cally to two persons. E en those members who seemed t be on l s s de u derstood him in th r own w y w th l m tati ns and lterat o s h could n t gree to as what he always wanted most wa to con ey his th u ht to others just a he h mself u derstood it.

At th end of the meeti the Gra d Master om ed Bez kh v for

CHAPTER VIII

AGAIN PIERRE was o ertaken by the dep ess on h so dreaded. Fo three d ys fter th del ery f his speech t the lod he lay on sof at hom ecei no e d go g nowh e.

It was just then that he rece ed l tter fr m his wife, who impl ed him to see her telli him how grieved she was about him a d how she wished to devote her whole life to him.

At the end of the letter she nformed him that in few days she would eturn to Peters burg from broad.

F llow ng thi letter one f the Mason c Brothers whom Pierre respected less than the thers forced his way in to see him and, turn ing th co ersation upon P erre s matrimo al affairs, by wa of fraternal d ice expressed

The Illuminati sought to subst tute republican for monarchical institutions.

the opinion that his severity to his wife was wrong and that he was neglecting one of the first rules of Freemasonry by not forgiving the penitent

At the same time his mother in law Prince Vasili s wife sent to him imploring him to come if only for a few minutes to discuss a most important matter Pierre saw that there was a conspiracy against him and that they wanted to reunite him with his wife and in the mood he then was this was not even unpleasant to him Nothing mattered to him Nothing in life seemed to him of much importance and under the influence of the depression that possessed him he valued neither his liberty nor his resolution to punish his wife

No one is right and no one is to blame so she too is not to blame he thought

If he did not at once give his consent to a reunion with his wife it was only because in his state of depression he did not feel able to take any step Had his wife come to him he would not have turned her away Compared to what preoccupied him was it not a matter of indifference whether he lived with his wife or not?

Without replying either to his wife or his mother in law Pierre late one night prepared for a journey and started for Moscow to see Joseph Alexéevich This is what he noted in his diary

Moscow 17th November

I have just returned from my benefactor and hasten to wr te d n s h t I have exper enced J eph Alexéev ch is l ving poorly a l ha for three years been suffering from a p i fi l d e se of the bla lde No one l a e e hea l him utter a gr an or a o l of compl i t F m morn g t ll late at n gl t ex ept v l en he eats his very pl in food l e is wo k ng at e ence He recei e l me grac ously and ma le me it do n on the l ed on wh ch he lay I m de the s gn of the Kn ghts of the East and of Je u l m n l l e e pon l l n the same manner a k ng n e th a m l l m le what I had learne l n l ga ned n tl Pr an l S o h

li c i y ask g wheth r I m mbered the threefold aim of th or ler (1) The preservat on and tu ly of the my tery (2) The pur f cat n n l reform tion of ones lf fo ts re ept o a l (3) The impro ement f the hum ra e l y str ing

for such purificat on Wh ch is the principal a m of these r
purif ca
indepen
time jus t s aim demands the greatest efforts f us and so led astray l y pr de losi g s gl t of th i aim v e occupy ourselves either with the mystery which in our impurity we are unworthy to recei e or seek the r f rm
ot
lig
ca
up y j i te On this ground Joseph Alexéevich condemned my speech an l my whole activity a d n the depth of my soul I agreed v th him Talk ing of my family affa rs he sa d to me the chief duty of a true Ma on as I have tol l you lies in perfecting h mself We often think that l y remo ing all the d ff cult es of our life we shall more qu ckly reach our aim l ut on the contrary my dear sir t is only in the mi l t f v orl lly cares that we can attain our three chief aims (1) Self knowledge—for man can only know himself by comparison (2) Self perfect ng wl ich can only be atta ned l y confl ct an l (3) The attainment of the chief v rtue—l ve of death Only the vicis itu les of l fe can sl ow us its vanity and level p o r innate lo e of leath or of rel irth t a new life These words a e all the more remarkal le l ecat se in spite of l is great phys cal suffe ings Joseph Alexéevi h is never v eary of life tl ough he loves death for wh ch—in spite of the purity an l loftiness of h inner man—he does not yet feel him elf sufficiently prepared My benef ctor th n explained t me fully the meani g of the Great Square of cre t on and po nte l out to me tl at the nu ml ers tl ree and ever are tl e bi is of everythin He a l ed n e not to a o l intercourse with the Petersb rg Brothers but to t ke up only eco l gra le posts in the lo lge to try l le d ert g tl e Brothers from pr le to t l m

P t sbu g 23 d No e nb

I am agai l ng w th my wife My mother in law came to me n t rs a l ai l tl at Hélène wa l re a d tl at sh i plored me to l e r l e th t she w s inn c nt an l i nl ppy at my lesert n

w wi s a l nd l e to seek H l my benefactor l een l l e wo tl l h t l l me what t l I went to my room n l re l Jos ph Alexéevich s letters an l recalled my con ers t ons w tl h m a l ledu ed from t all tl t l o gl t t t Iu e a si pplia t a l o gl t to react a l ip ng l a l to ryo e—especi lly to on so losely

— me— d th t I must bea my cross

t
I
se

tion.

CHAPTER IX

AT THAT TI E s l ays h ppe s the h ghest

th circle f Co t R myá tsev nd Ca l court. I this gr p Hélène as soon a h h d settled P tersb rg w th her husb nd, took

t llect and po eu ma

Hélè e had bee t Erfurt duri g th f mous m eu f th Emperors d had brou ht from there thes co ect w th the N pol om tab'l t es. At Erfurt her uccess h d been brilliant. N poleo him lf h d ot ced h r n the thea er d sa d f her: C t u *superb* m l. Her uccess as beautiful and le ga t man did n urpri P erre fo h had becom ev n ha dsomer than bef e Wh t did urprise h m wa hat dur g thes las two years h wife had ucceeded ga n g th ep tau *d' f mm h rm t uss p t ll q b ll.* Th distinou hed Pri ce d Lign wro e her e ght pa l tters. Bil b sa ed p his ep grams to produce them in Co ess Bez kh a p es n e. To b re ed th Co tess Bezukh sal n was rega ded dipl ma of t llect. Youn m n read book bef ttendi Hélèn eve gs to ha som th to say in her sal d secr ta es of th embassy d even ambassa dors, co fided d plomat secrets to her so that ay Hélè was power P err who knew h was ery t p d, som times tte d d, w th tra feel f perplexity d fear her ev gs d di er part es wher pol tics poetry d philosophy wer discus ed. At these parties his feelings were lik those f con juro who always expects h s t ck to be fou d out at ny m ment But wheth e because stu p d ty wa just wh t was needed t run such sal n or because th e s ho were dece ved f und pleasure n the de ept on at any rate it rema ned une p ed nd Hélène Be kho a reputat n s a l ly a d cle er woman be came so firmly est bl shed th t she could say the empt est n l stup dest th gs and yet e ery body w uld go nto raptures o r every o d of hers nd look f a p found me n ng i t of wh ch he herself h d no concept n

P rre was just th l u band needed fo a br ll nt ciety woman He as tl t absent m ded crank gr *d se g eu* husba d l o was n n on s way and f r from po l g the h gh t ne a d gen ral mp es on of the draw

th last two years a esult of o t bsorpti n n abstract nterests d h s s n re

equall plea ed t s e e ery ne and equ lly i diff nt to tl m ll Somet mes he j ned con rsat n wh ch nterested h m nd regard less f wheth ny gentlem n of th embassy wer p esent n t l p n ly exp essed l ews wh h wer somet mes t at ll n a rd w tl th epted t ne of the m m nt. B t the gen ral op n concern g th q eer husb d of th m t d t gu hed w ma n P tersburg was so w ll establ shed th t no one took his f e ks er usly

Am n the m yy u g men wh frequented

tu bed P rre H had uffered so p fully three years b f r f m th m rtificati n t which his wife had ubjected him that he n w protected h mself from th da f ts epet ti n first by n t being a husb nd to his w f

*Tha uperb animal.

† Of charming woman, as wi ty as h is lovely

the opinion that his severity to his wife was wrong and that he was neglecting one of the first rules of Freemasonry by not forgiving the penitent

At the same time his mother in law Prince Vasili s wife sent to him imploring l m n

, b ust him and that they wanted to reunite him with his wife and in the mood he then was this was not even unpleasant to him Nothing mattered to him Nothing in life seemed to him of much importance and un der the influence of the depression that pos sessed him he valued neither his liberty nor his resolution to punish his wife

No one is right and no one is to blame so she too is not to blame he thought

If he did not at once give his consent to a reunion with his wife it was only because in his state of depression he did not feel able to take any step Had his wife come to him he would not have turned her away Compared to what preoccupied him v as it not a matter of indifference whether he lived with his wife or not?

Without replying either to his wife or his mother in law Pierre late one night prepared for a journey and started for Moscow to see Joseph Alexéevich. This is what he noted in his diary

Moscow 1 th November

I have just returned from my l enefacto and h sten to wr te dov n what I ha e expe ienced Jo eph Alexéev ch s living poorly an l h s for tl ree years b en s ffer ng from a pa nft l d sease of the l ladder No one l a ever hea d h m tter n groan o a v ord of compla nt From mo g t ll late at n gl t except v hen he eats his very pla n food he is w rk ng at c ence He rece e l me grac ously and ma le me it down on the l e l on wh ch he lay I made the s gn of the Kn gl ts of the East and of Jerus l m an l he re p n led n the same manne a k ng m v ith a m l l mile what I had lear e l an l ga ned in tl e Pr n

I c e y as i g whether I em mbered tl thr ef ld a m of the order (1) The pres rvation an l study of tl e my t ry (2) The purif cat n an l reformat on of oneself for ts recept o a l (3) Tl e improvement of the l m n ra e l y tr g l a

for such purif cation Which is the principal e of these three? Certainly self reformation a d self purification Only to this aim can we al ays stri e independently of circum tances B t at the same time just this aim demands the greatest efforts of us and so led astray l y pride losi g s ght of th s a m we occupy ourselves either with the mystery whi l

(

(

I

c t s attracted by soc al activity and puffed up by pride On th s groun l Joseph Alexée ch con lemned my speech and my whole act ity a d in the depth of my so l I agreed with l m Talk ng of my family affairs he sa d to me the ch f duty of a true Mason as I have told you l es in pe fecting him elf We often th nk th t by remov ng all the d ff culties of our life we shall more qu ckly reach our a m but on the contrary my dear sir t is only n the m d t f w rl lly cares that we can attain our tl ee ch ef aims (1) Self kn l edge—for man can only know himself by comp n son (2) Self perfect ng which can only l e atta ed by confl ct and (3) The atta nme t of tl e chief virtue—l ve of death Only the v c ssitu les of l fe can sh w us ts anity and de elop o r innate love of death or of rel irth to a new l fe These rds are all the mo e remarkal le becai se in sp te of his great phys cal sufferings Joseph Alexéevich is ne er weary of life though he lo es d ath f r which—in p te of the pu ity an l loft ness of his inner man—he loes not yet feel h mself suff ciently prepared My benef ctor then e plaine l t me fi lly the mea i g of the Great Square of creati n and pointed out to me that the numbers th ee a d eve i re tl e l a s of everytl ng He a l ised me not to avoid inte course with the Petersl urg Brothers b t to take up only seco d grade posts in the lo lg to try wh le d ert g the B th rs from pr le to turn tl em t wa d the t ue path of

P te sbu g 23 d Nove ber

I m again l ing with my wife My m ther in law c me to me in t rs an l sa l that Hélène w here an l that she implo ed me t hear l er that he was nnoc nt an l i nl appy at y les rt on a d mu h mo e I k ew tl at if I o ce let myself see her I houl l n t h st e gth t go on ef ng wl t she w nte l In my pe plexity I l d n t know who e a l and adv ce to s ek H l my bene fact r bee l e e h woi l l h ve t l l me wl at t do I went to my oom an l rere l Joseph Alexée ch s lett rs and recalled my n ersat n w th him l led

ef

I a

holds t, d comb t prod es ther bod es. Mercury is fl d, I tal sp ritual essence. Christ, th H ly Sp rit H m!

3 d December

Awok I read th Script res b t was p thet Al rw rds en d p ed p d down th large h ll. I hed t med ta b t ead y imaginat p ct red oc rrence f f r years o hen Dol M meet m Mosco af er d I sa d h I ped I was j y g per fect peace f m d in p f my w f bsence At h tim I ga h m ns N w I ecalled every det l f h t meet d m d ga h m th most m lev lent d b t repl es. I ec

rud to h m. H becam I t d I ecollected myself ly hen t was too l t My God I ca not get on with him t ll. Th ca use f this is my egotism. I set myself bo I m d so becom much worse than h fo h is len t t my rude- ess h I I th trary ish t mpt f him. O God, gra t th t in I is p esence I m y rather see my leness d beh so th t h too may ben fit. After di er I f ll leep d as I was dro g ff I lea ly hea d say g in m lef ea "Thy day

I dreamed tl t I as lk g th dark d was uddenly rro ded by dogs I went o d m ed. S ddenly m ll h dog seized my lef th gh h its teeth d ld t I go I bega t throttl t th my I ds Sca ly h d I torn ff bef h I gge bega b t g m I I f ed t p I t th h gh I I f d h b gger d hea er t grew A d ldenly Broth A cam d k

p ug m t bro d en I ga den d th ga den as I rge d be f I I ld g I A p O Lo d, grea A h ect f N h lp m t ea f m mys lf tl ese d gs—my pa — especially th las wh h es in ts lf I rength f ll th f rmer es d d m t en er th t empl f rt is f wh ch I ta ed i my dream

h D mber

I dreamed h t Joseph Alexéev ch was tt g my h se I th t I ry gl d d w hed t en erta h m I seemed as if I h tered es

ly w th other people d d lenly remem bered th t this co I I t please h m d I w hed t com los to h m I eml race I m B t o I I w ear I saw tl t I f ce h I I a gel

I ppened W w t g I o tl e floo H w t ll m so tl g I I w l ed t h w h m my en ll lity a d t I t g t wl t I sa g I bega p ct g t self th co d t f y d tl gra c f God sa t fy g me. A d tears cam m eves I I gl d h t ced this B t h looked t m w tl ex t d j mped p b eak ff his re- ks I f lt b hed d asked wl tl wh t h h d been say g d d t ern I t I d d t ply ga m k d look d then w I d ly f d rs I es my bed oom wl ere tl er is d bl hed H I y d wn th edge f it d I I rned w th I gi g t cares h m I I e dow oo A d he sa d "T ll m fra kly wl t yo I ef tempt ti ? Do y k t. I tl k y k ow t I eady Al hed I y th q est I pl ed tl t I tl w my ch f tempt t H hook his head ered I usly d even I I eat I d th h g! I was I g w tl y w f as h d used I was t I g w h I I er h I d. T I is I epl ed tl t I I I n lep w f f on eml ra es d ga m t ders I th t that w my I ty B t I pl ed tl t I h ld be asl It I It d d I ly ev ryth g va ished. A d I wok d f d my m d th ext from th G pel Th I f wa th I gl t f m A d th I gl t h th dark ess d th d k ess comp h ded t t. Joseph Alexée h f ce h d looked y g d b ght Tl t d y I ec ed I tt from m be f ct wh ch h t bo t co j gal I t es

9th Dec mber

Il d d m f wh h I k w th tl I b g heart I saw th t I w Mosco my I se th I g tt room d Joseph Alexéev I

and secondly by not allowing himself to suspect

"No, now that she has become a bluestocking she has finally renounced her former infatuations," he told himself. "There has never been an instance of a bluestocking being carried away by affairs of the heart"—a statement which, though gathered from an unknown source, he believed implicitly. Yet strange to say Boris' presence in his wife's drawing room (and he was almost always there) had a physical effect upon Pierre: it constricted his limbs and destroyed the unconsciousness and freedom of his movements.

"What a strange antipathy," thought Pierre, "yet I used to like him very much."

In the eyes of the world Pierre was a great gentleman, the rather blind and absurd husband of a distinguished wife, a clever crank who did nothing but harmed nobody and was a first-rate, good-natured fellow. But a complex and difficult process of internal development was taking place all this time in Pierre's soul, revealing much to him and causing him many spiritual doubts and joys.

CHAPTER X

PIERRE WENT ON with his diary, and this is what he wrote in it during that time:

24th November

Got up at eight, read the Scriptures, then went to my duties. [By Joseph Alexéevich's advice Pierre had entered the service of the state and served on one of the committees.] Returned home for dinner and dined alone—the countess had many visitors I do not like. I ate and drank moderately and after dinner copied out some passages for the Brothers. In the evening I went down to the countess and

I am going to bed with a happy and tranquil mind. Great God, help me to walk in Thy paths, (1) to conquer anger by calmness and deliberation, (2) to vanquish lust by self-restraint and repulsion, (3) to withdraw from worldliness, but not avoid (a) the service of the state, (b) family duties, (c) relations with my friends, and (d) the management of my affairs.

27th November

I got up late. On waking I lay long in bed yielding to sloth. O God, help and strengthen me that I

the Emperor's new projects ... them but remembered my rules and my benefactor's words—that a true Freemason should be a zealous worker for the state when his aid is required and a quiet onlooker when not called on to assist. My tongue is my enemy. Brothers G. V. and O. visited me and we had a preliminary talk about the reception of a new Brother. They laid on me the duty of Rhetor. I feel myself weak and unworthy. Then our talk turned to the interpretation of the seven pillars and steps of the Temple

admission took place. The new decoration of the premises contributed much to the magnificence

alone with him in the dark chamber I caught myself harboring a feeling of hatred toward him which I vainly tried to overcome. That is why I should really like to save him from evil and lead him into the path of truth, but evil thoughts of him did not leave me. It seemed to me that his object in entering the Brotherhood was merely to be intimate and in favor with members of our lodge. Apart from the fact that he had asked me several times whether N. and S. were members of our lodge (a question to which I could not reply) and that according to my observation he is incapable of feeling respect for our holy order and is too preoccupied and satisfied with the outer man to desire spiritual improvement, I had no cause to doubt him, but he seemed to me insincere, and all the time I stood alone with him in the dark temple it seemed to me that he was smiling contemptuously at my words, and I wished really to stab his bare breast with the sword I held to it. I could not be eloquent, nor could I frankly mention my doubts to the Brothers and to the Grand Master. Great Architect of Nature, help me to find the true path out of the labyrinth of lies!

After this, three pages were left blank in the diary, and then the following was written:

I have had a long and instructive talk alone with Brother V., who advised me to hold fast by Brother A. Though I am unworthy, much was revealed to me. Adonai is the name of the creator of the world. Elohim is the name of the ruler of all. The third name is the name unutterable which means the ... and

poor teachings of mundane science and our sacred all-embracing teaching is clear to me. Human sciences dissect everything to comprehend it and kill everything to examine it. In the holy science of our order all is one, all is known in its entirety and life. The Trinity—the three elements of matter—are sulphur, mercury, and salt. Sulphur is of an oily and fiery nature; in combination with salt by its fiery nature it arouses a desire in the latter by means of which it attracts mercury, seizes it

I co live i P tersb rg on my p y and w th he fortu e a d my good m gement we can get l g c ly I m n t m rry g fo mo ey —I co d r th t di h o able—but a w fe should b her sha e a d husb d h I ha e my pos t th serv ce she h s con ect ns d some mea s *In ou times th t s* worth someth g is t t? But abo e all h s handsom est mable g rl d she lo es m

B rg blushed d m led.

A d I l her becau e her charact r s sen bl d ery good N w th othe s ter m f m l qu te d f not w? /ell t take tea th us, d q ckly d bl g up h to one he blew sm ll d g of t b co sm k perfectly embody g his dre m f h p p ess.

Af er th first f el f perplex ty oused in th p e ts by Berg p opos l the h l day to f] y us ess usual t uch t mes took possess f the f m ly but th j cing was ex tern l d ns ce e. I th f m ly f el g to w wkwa d ess d

been bl *to tate th cause of h emb rrass* m t, b t t es lted f m the state f his f fairs. He d d t k ow at ll how much he h d, hat his d bts m ted to what d wry he could p e Véra. Whe h dau hters we e born he had ass gned t each of them f her dowry estate w th three h dred erf but e f these estates h d l e dy b n sold, nd the ther as m tgaged nd th nterest so m ch n rrears that t w uld h to b sold so that t a mposs bl to g t t Véra. N had h y m y

Berg h d l eady be n gaged mo th a d ly e k ema ed bef th w dd g but th t had t yet d cid d n his wn m d the q est f th d wry poken to h w f bo t t. At et me th count th ught f g g her th Ryazá esta e of ll g forest, t ther t m f borr w g m y on a t f ha d. A few days b f the wedd g Berg e tered th co t s t dy ea ly o m rn ing d w th pleasa t smil esp tf lly asked his f t fath l w to let h m kn w

rv would be The count was so t y

nes I ke about it. I I ke t. e sat fi d.

And p tt ng Berg on th sh ulder I e got up w h g to nd the onvers t on But Berg m l g pleasantly expl ed tl at f he d d n t k w f r certa n how much Véra would ha e

s ll to m y o me s to ma ta n my w fe I sl ould be ct g b dly

Tl e c n ersati n ended by the count wh w h d t b ge ero nd t x o d further m portun ty say th t he w uld g ve a n te of h nd f r ghty th usa d rubles Berg sm led h h lder nd

O t least twe ty th usa d Cou t h added nd th n a n te of h nd f r only xty th u s d

Yes yes all r ght! sa d the unt h rr ed ly O ly cuse m my dear fellow I ll g e y u twe ty tho sa d nd n te of ha d fo ghty th us d as well Yes yes! K ss me

CHAPTER XII

N TA A IXTEEN a d t wa *the year* 809 th ery ye r to wh ch he h d co ted on her fi gers w th B f fter they had k ed f ur y rs go S e then he had n t seen him Be fo e S(nya d h mother f Bori happ ed to b m t n d he poke qu te f e ly of that p sod of some ch ld h l g fo gott n m t te that was not w th m t n g B t n the ecret d pth f he soul the quest on wheth her gagement to B is w a jest r an m

Otrád b t h d ne er b n to ee them. Som t mes t o curr d t N tá h tl t hed d t w l to e her nd this conj ture w co firmed by the sad to n wh ch her ld rs poke f h m

N w day ld f d t remembered the countess w ld y when Bori was m t ned.

Ann M kháylo lso had of late vis t d

I knew that these drawings represented

adve

page

I t

body flying up to the clouds u with a transparent knew that this maiden was nothing else than a representation of the Song of Songs And looking at those drawings I dreamed I felt that I was doing wrong but could not tear myself away from them Lord help me! My God if Thy forsaking me is Thy doing Thy will be done but if I am myself the cause teach me what I should do! I shall perish of my debauchery if Thou utterly desertest me!

CHAPTER XI

THE ROSTÓVS' MONETARY AFFAIRS had not improved during the two years they had spent in the country

Though Nicholas Rostóv had kept firmly to his resolution and was still serving modestly in an obscure regiment spending comparatively little the way of life at Otrádnoe

n

out e obviously presenting itself to the old count was to apply for an official post so he had come to Petersburg to look for one and also as he said to let the lassies enjoy themselves for the last time

Soon after their arrival in Pe

P

th

emselves giving it a thought yet in Petersburg their circle of acquaintances was a mixed and indefinite one In Petersburg they were provincials and the very people they had entertained in Moscow without inquiring to what set they belonged here looked down on them

The Rostóvs lived in the same hospitable way in Petersburg as in Moscow and the most diverse people met at their suppers Country neighbors from Otrádnoe impo

l

ad obtained a post in Petersburg Among the men who very soon became frequent visitors at the Rostóvs' house in Petersburg were Borís Pierre whom the count had met in the street and dragged home with him and Berg who spent whole days at the Rostóvs and paid the eldest daughter Countess Véra the attentions a young man pays when he intends to propose

Not in vain had Berg shown everybody his right hand wounded at Austerlitz and held a

r

l

l

yone believed in the merit and usefulness of his deed and he had obtained two decorations for Austerlitz.

In the Finnish war he also managed to distinguish himself He had picked

of

a

st

it

t had been necessary to do this and he received two decorations for the Finnish war also In 1809 he was a captain in the Guards wore medals and held some special lucrative posts in Petersburg

Though some skeptics smiled when told of Berg's merits it could not be denied that he was a painstaking and brave officer on excellent terms with his superiors and a moral young man with a brilliant career before him and an assured position in society

Four years before meeting a German comrade in the stalls of a Moscow theater Berg had pointed out Véra Rostóva to him and had said in German *das soll mein Weib werden* and from that moment had made up his mind to marry her Now in Petersburg having considered the Rostóvs' position and his own he decided that the time had come to propose

Berg's proposal was at first received with a perplexity that was not flattering to him At first it seemed strange that the son of an obscure Livonian gentleman should propose marriage to a Countess Rostóva but Berg's chief characteristic was such a naïve and good natured egotism that the Rostóvs involuntarily came to think it would be a good thing since he himself was so firmly convinced that it was good indeed excellent Moreover the Rostóvs' affairs were seriously embarrassed as the suitor could not but know and above all Véra was twenty four had been taken out everywhere and though she was certainly good looking and sensible no one up t now had proposed t her So they gave their consent

You see said Berg to his comrade whom he called friend only because he knew that everyone has friends you see I have considered it all and should not marry if I had not thought it all out or if it were in any way unsuitable But on the contrary my papa and mamma are now provided for—I have arranged that rent for them in the Baltic Provinces—and

That girl will be my wife

her l t prayer Ca t be that th s c ch w ll be my gra e? N tásh flushed and e ger

aga t the th p hed it her sl pp u j mped t the bed the c u tess h d f red m ght b come h r gr ve Th c u l w s l gh w th feathe bed d five p ll ws ea h sm ll er than tl o e bel w Natá h j mp d it s k to the f th b d rolled o to the

ow peep g t her m ther The tess fi h d h r p yers a d came to tl e bed w th ter l e but s e th t N tá h s h d w c ed she s l d h k d e k w y

N w the w the l s d h

M mm ca w l v t lk? Y ? d Na tá ha. N w j t e o y u th t a d n ther th t ll d ! A d s g he m ther r d th e k sh k ed h n the th oat l h b h t her m the N tásh seemed ro gh b t sh was so se t e a d t tf l th t h w e he cl sp d h r m tl er sh lw ys m g d to d t w th t hu t g her o mak

n d s ttl d d wn be de h u der th q lt sp ead th rms d med er ous ex p es

Tl

Wh t t t ght?—B t I h to tell y

N tásh p the h d h mother m th

Abo t B rl I kn w l d er ly th ts h t I h v com bo t D ts y t— Ik w N

e n m l k so B t wh t the ? What y th k g bout? Y ha e q te t rn d h h d I can e th t

A she sa d th the c tess looked d t her da ghter N tásl was ly g look g

stead ly stra gl t bef re her at one of tl e m h ga y spl in es carved on tl e corners of tl e l d tead s th t tl e c untess only s v her d ughter s f e n p f le Th t face struck he l y it pecul arly ser us d c centrated ex p s on

N tá l a vas l ste g and co de ng

Well what the ? s d she

You l a e qu te t rne l l s hea l l w l y Wh t do y u t o f l ? You k w y o can t m rry l m

Why t? sa d N tá ha w thout cl n her p t n

B ca h you g because l e s poor be ca e l e el t n nd because you yo self d t l e h n

H w do y u know?

I k w It not ght darl g!

But f I w t to d N tásha.

Le e ff talk g n se s d the cou t ess

B t f I w nt to

N tá h I m in ea est

Natá l d d t l t her f l Sl e d es tl e te l ge l d to he k s ed t n tl e b ck d then o the p lm then aga n tur ed t ve d bega k s g first e knuckle

da ght d tl at o templat ns c ed to h e f g tte ll sl l d w hed to s y

It w t d my l e! N t e ery n w ll u derst d th s f e d h p dat fr m y r ch ld l d ys d t see h m s it m te w th y m y j r you th eyes of otl er y men wh s t u d bo ll t to ments h m f n th g He m y l e dy h e f d su t bl d w lthy m tch and now he l alf crazy

Crazy? ep ted N tá ha

I ll t ll y om th gs l ut my elf I h d cous n

c

them less frequently seemed to hold herself with particular dignity and alwa ot -

t n the Rostovs came to Petersburg Boris called on them

He drove to their house in some agitation The memory of Natásha was hi mo -

his him service th k -

i of marrying one of the richest heiresses in Petersburg plans which might very easily be realized When he entered the Rostovs ' own room \

ucted Natásha in a short dress with dark eyes shining from under her curls and boisterous childish laughter as he had known her four years before and so he was taken aback when quite a different Natásha entered and his face expressed rapturous astonishment This expression on his face pleased Natásha

Well do you recognize your little madcap playmate asked the countess

Boris kissed Natásha s hand and said that he was astonished at the change in her

How handsome you have grown!

I should think so! replied Natásha s laughing eyes

And is Papa older? she asked

Natásha sat down and without joining in Boris conversation with the countess silently and minutely studied her childhood s suitor He felt the weight of that resolute and affectionate scrutiny and glanced at her occasionally

Boris un form spurs tie and the way his hair was brushed were all *comme il faut* and in the latest fashion This Natásha noticed at once He sat rather sideways in the armchair nex to ! ^

ha

ha

lar

am the highest Petersburg society recalling with mild irony old times in Moscow and Moscow acquaintances. It was not accidentally Natásha felt that he alluded, when speaking of the highest aristocracy to an ambassador s ball he had attended a d

u under her brows This gaze disturbed and confused Boris more and more He looked round more frequently toward her and broke off in what he was saying He did not stay more than ten minutes then rose and took his leave The same inquisitive challenging and rather mocking eyes still looked at him. After his first visit Boris said to himself that Natásha attracted him just as much as ever but that he must not yield to that feeling because to marry her a girl almost without fortune would mean ruin to his career while to renew their former relations without intending to marry !

up

spit

late an began calling often and spending whole days at the Rostovs It seemed to him that he ought to have an explanation with Natásha and tell her that the old times must be forgotten that in spite of everything she could not be his wife that he had no means, and they would never let her marry him. But he failed to do so and felt awkward about entering on such an explanation From day to day he became more and more entangled It seemed to her mother and Sónya that Natásha was in love with Boris as of old She sang him his favorite songs showed him her album making him write in it did not allow him to allude to the past letting it be understood how delightful was the present and every day he went away in a fog without having said what he meant to, and not knowing what he was doing or why he came or how it would all end He left off visiting Hélène and received reproachful notes from her every day and yet he continued to spend whole days with the Rostóvs

CHAPTER XIII

ONE NIGHT when the old countess in nightcap and dressing jacket without her false curls, and with her poor little knob of hair showing under her white cotton cap knelt sighing and groaning on a rug and bowing to the ground in prayer her door creaked and Natásha also in a dressing jacket with slippers on her bare feet and her hair in curlpapers ran in The countess—her prayerful mood dispelled—looked round and frowned She was finishing

in Petersburg high society was to accompany them to the ball.

no yet dressed.

Natásha was going to her first grand ball. She had got up at ... that morning ... had been in a fever of excitement and activity all day. All her powers ... concentrated on ensuring that they all—she herself, Mamma, and Sónya—should be as well dressed as possible. Sónya and her mother put themselves entirely in her hands. The countess was to wear a ... velvet dress, and the two girls white gauze over pink silk slips with roses in their bodices and their hair

both were already on the hairdresser ... most done. Sónya was finishing dressing and so was the countess, but Natásha who had bustled about helping them all was behindhand. She was still sitting before the looking-glass with a dressing jacket thrown over her slender shoulders. Sónya stood ready dressed in the middle of the room ... pressing the head of a pin till it hurt her ... was fixing ... the ribbon that squeaked as the pin went through it.

"That ... the way ... not the way, Sónya ..."

Sónya sat down and Natásha pinned the ribbon differently.

"Allow me, Miss ... said the maid who was holding Natásha's h...

"Oh, dear! Well then wait. That's right, Sónya."

"Aren't you ready? It is nearly ... came the countess ...

"Directly! Directly! And you, Mamma?"

"I have only my cap to pin on."

"Don't do it without me!" called Natásha. "You won't do it right."

"But it's already ten."

They had decided to be at the ball by half past ten, and Natásha had still to get dressed and they had to call at the Taurida Gardens.

When her hair was done, Natásha ... in her short petticoat from under which her dancing shoes showed, and in her mother's dressing

jacket, ran up to Sónya, scrutinized her and ...

to the maids who were turning up the hem of the skirt.

The cause of the delay was Natásha's skirt ...

"Mávra, quicker, darling!"

Perónskaya must be tired of waiting.

"It's ready, Miss," said the maid, holding up the shortened gauze dress with two fingers, and blowing and shaking something off it, as if by this to express a consciousness of the airiness and purity of what she held.

Natásha began putting on the dress.

"In a minute! In a minute! Don't come in, Papa!" she cried to her father as he opened the door—speaking from under the filmy skirt which still covered her whole face.

Sónya slammed the door to. A minute later they let the count in. He was wearing a blue swallow-tail coat, shoes and stockings, and was perfumed and his hair pomaded.

"Oh, Papa! how nice you look! Charming!" cried Natásha, as she stood in the middle of the room smoothing out the folds of the gauze.

"If you please, Miss, allow me," said the maid, who on her knees was pulling the skirt straight and shifting the pins from one side of her mouth to the other with her tongue.

"Say what you like," exclaimed Sónya in despairing ... as she looked at Natásha, "say what you like, it's still too long!"

Natásha stepped back to look at herself in the pier glass. *The dress was too long.*

"Really, madam, it is not at all too long," said Mávra, crawling on her knees after her young lady.

"Well, if it's too long we'll take it up ... we'll tack it up in one minute," said the resolute Dunyásha taking a needle that was stuck on the front of her little shawl and still kneeling ... the floor set to work once more.

At that moment, with soft steps, the countess came in shyly, in her cap and velvet gown.

"Oo-oo! my beauty!" exclaimed the count, "she looks better than any of you!"

and looked at her mother Not to marry but just so she added

How so my pet?

Just *so* There s no need for me to marry him But just *so*

Just so just so repeated the countess and shaking all over she went off into a good *humored unexpected elderly laugh*

Don t laugh stop! cried Natásha You re shaking the whole bed! You re awfully like me just such another giggler Wait and she seized the countess hands and kissed a *knuckle of the little finger saying June* and continued kissing July August on the other hand But Mamma is he very much in love? What do you think? Was anybody ever so much in love with you? And he s very nice very very *nice Only not quite my taste—he is* so narrow like the dining room clock Don t you understand? Narrow you know —gray light gray

What rubbish you re talking! said the *countess*

Natasha continued Don t you really understand? Nicholas would understand Bezukhov now is blue dark blue and red and he is square

You *flirt with him too said the countess* laughing

No he is a Freemason I have found out He is fine dark blue and red How can I explain it to you?

Little countess! the count s voice called from behind the door You re not asleep? Natásha jumped up snatched up her slippers and ran barefoot to her own room

It was a long time before she could sleep She kept thinking that no one could understand all that she understood and all there was in her

Sonya? she thought glancing at that curled up sleeping little kitten with her enormous plait of hair No how could she? She s virtuous She fell in love with Nicholas and does not wish to know anything more Even Mamma does not understand It is wonderful how clever I am and how charming she is she went on speaking of herself in the third person and imagining *it was some very wise man*

—th

it o

her

ty

nd

an

really say it s a wonderful voice!

She hummed a scrap from her favorite opera

to put out the candle and before Dunyásha had left the room had already passed into yet another happier world of dreams where everything was as light and beautiful as in reality and even more so because it was different.

Next day the countess called Boris aside and had a talk with him after which he ceased coming *to the Rostovs*

CHAPTER XIV

On the thirty first of December New Year s Eve 1809 10 an old grandee of Catherine s *day was giving a ball and midnight supper* The diplomatic corps and the Emperor himself were to be present

o the

trance which was carpeted with red baize and not only gendarmes but dozens of police of

lf stood

and footmen in plumed hats From the carriages emerged men wearing uniforms stars, and ribbons while ladies in satin and ermine cautiously descended the carriage steps which were let down for them with a clatter and then walked hurriedly and noiselessly over the baize at the entrance

Almost every time a new carriage *drove up* a whisper ran through the crowd and caps were doffed

The Emperor? No a minister prince ambassador Don t you see the plumes?

was whispered among the crowd

One person better dressed than the rest seemed to know everyone and mentioned by name the greatest dignitaries of the day

A third of the visitors had already arrived but the Rostóvs who were to be present were still hurrying to get dressed

There had been many discussions and preparat *ons for this ball in the Ro t family* many fears that the invitation would not arrive that the dresses would not be ready or that some

the countess and piloted the provincial Ro s

in Petersburg high society was to accompa y them t the ball.

They were to call for her t her house in the T urida Gardens t ten o clock, but it was al read five minutes to ten and the girls were not yet dressed.

N tasha was go ng to her first grand ball. She had got up eight that morning and h d been in a fever of excitement and ctivity all da All her powers since morn n had been co centra ed on ensuring that they all—she her se., Mamma, and So ya—should be as well dressed as possible. Sonya d her mother put themsel es entirely in her ha ds. The co ntess was to wea claret-col red velvet dress, and the two girls whit gauze over pink s'lk lips, with roses o their bodices and their hair dressed *la grecq*

Everything essential had alread been d e: feet, hands, necks, and ears washed, perfumed, and powdered, as befits a ball the openwork silk stockings and whit satin hoes with ribbons were alread on; the hairdressi was al most done. Sonya wa

. jacket thrown over her lender shoulders. Sonya stood read dressed in th middl of the room and, pressin the head of pin till it hurt her dai ty finger was fixing lastribbon tha squeaked as t p went through t.

"That not the wa that ot th wa Sonya!" cried N tasha turn ng her head and clutching with both hands t her hair which the maid who was dressin t had t tim to release. "That bow is not ri ht. Come here

Sonya sat d wn and N tásha pinned the ribbon on d.fferentl

"Allow me, Miss I can t do t lik that," said the maid who was holding N tásha hair

"Oh, dear! W ll then wait. That s ri ht, Sonya.

Aren t you read It is early ten, came the countess' vo e.

"Directly! Directl And you, Mamma

I have .ly my cap to pin on.

"Don t do without m called N tásha. "You won t do t right.

"But t s alread en.

They had decided to be t the ball by half past ten, and N tásha had till t get dressed and they had t call t th T urida Gardens.

When her hair was do N tásha, in her short petticoat from under which her dancin shoes showed, and in her mother dressing jacket, ran up to Sónya, scrutinized her and

t the ma ds who were turn n up the hem of her kirt.

The cause of the d l was Natá ha s kirt, which was too lo g Two ma ds were turn up th hem and hurriedly b ting off the end of thread. A th rd w th p n in her mouth was running bout between the countess and Són ya, nd f urth held the whole of the gossa mer garment up h h n one uplifted ha d.

"Má ra, qu cker darl ng

G ve m m th mble, Miss, from there

"Whenever will you be read ?" asked the count comin to the door Here some scent. Peronskaya must be tired of wa tin

"It read M ss, sa d the maid, hold up the short ned gauze dress w th two fingers, a d bl w n d hakin someth g off t, as f b this to express conscious ess of the iriness and purity of what sh held.

N tásha began putt ng on the dress.

"In minut In min te! Don t come n Papa sh cr ed to her father as h opened th doo —speaki from under the film kirt which till co ered her whol face.

Sonya slammed the doo to. A minute later they let th count n. H was weari blu swallow tail coat, hoes and stockings, and was perfumed nd his hair pomaded.

Oh, Papa how n ce you look Charmin cried N tásha, as sh stood in the middle of the room smoothing o t the f lds of th gauze.

If you please, Miss allow me, said the maid, who on her knees was pullin th skirt strai ht nd shiftin the p ns from one sid of her mouth to th other with her tongue.

"Sa what ou l'k excla med Sonya, in despair g lo as she looked t N tásha, sa what you like till too lo g

N tasha tepped back to look t herself in th p er glass. Th dres was too l

Reall madam, t is not t all too long," said Mávra, crawling on her knees fter her young lad

"Well, f t too l n we'll tak t up we'll tack t up in one min te said the resolute Dunyásha taki g a needle that was stuck on th fro t f her littl shawl d, till kneel ing on the floo set t work o ce more.

At that moment, with soft steps, th coun ess cam n sh l in her cap nd elvet gown.

Oo-oo m beauty excla med the count, sh looks better than an of you

and looked at her mother Not to marry but just so she added

How so my pet?

Just so There s no need for me to marry him But just so

Just so just so repeated the countess and shaking all over she went off into a good humored unexpected elderly laugh

Don t laugh stop! cried Natásha You re shaking the whole bed! You re awfully like me just such another giggler Wait and she seized the countess hands and kissed a knuckle of the little finger saying June and continued kissing July August on the other hand But Mamma is he very much in love? What do you think? Was anybody ever so much in love with you? And he s very nice very very nice Only not quite my taste—he is so narrow like the dining room clock Don t you understand? Narrow you know—gray light gray

What rubbish you re talking! said the countess

N

You flirt with him too said the countess laughing

No he is a Freemason I have found out He s fine dark blue and red How can I explain it to you?

Little countess! the count s voice called from behind the door You re not asleep? Natásha jumped up snatched up her slippers and ran barefoot to her own room

It was a long time before she could sleep She kept thinking that no one could understand all that she understood and all there was in her

Sonya? she thought glancing at that curled up sleeping little kitten with her enormous plait of hair No how could she? She s virtuous She fell in love with Nicholas and does not wish to know anything more Even Mamma does not understand It is wonderful how clever I am and how charming she is she went on speaking of herself in the third person and imagining it was some very wise man —the wisest and best of men—who was saying it of her There is everything everything in her continued this man She is unusually intelligent charming and then she is pretty uncommonly pretty and agile—she swims and rides splendidly and her voice! One can really say it s a wonderful voice!

She hummed a scrap from her favorite opera by Cherubini threw herself on her bed laughed at the pleasant thought that she would immediately fall asleep called Dunyásha the maid to put out the candle and before Dunyásha had left the room had already passed into yet another happier world of dreams where everything was as light and beautiful as in reality and even more so because it was different.

Next day the countess called Boris aside and had a talk with him after which he ceased coming to the Rostóvs

CHAPTER XIV

On the thirty first of December New Year's Eve 1809 10 an old grandee of Catherine s day was giving a ball and midnight supper The diplomatic corps and the Emperor himself were to be present

The grandee s well known mansion on th

...pected with red baize and not only gendarmes but dozens of police officers and even the police master himself stood at the porch Carriages kept driving away and fresh ones arriving with red liveried footmen and footmen in plumed hats From the carriages emerged men wearing uniforms stars and ribbons while ladies in satin and ermine cautiously descended the carriage steps which were let down for them with a clatter and then walked hurriedly and noiselessly over the baize at the entrance

Almost every time a new carriage drove up a whisper ran through the crowd and caps were doffed

The Emperor? No a minister prince ambassador Don t you see the plumes? was whispered among the crowd

One person better dressed than the rest, seemed to know everyone and mentioned by name the greatest dignitaries of the day

A third of the visitors had already arrived but the Rostóvs who were to be present were

...at the invitation would not arrive that the dresses would not be ready or that some-

...ress who was a friend and relation of the countess and piloted the provincial Rostóvs

in Petersb rg h gh soci ty was to a comp ny them t the b ll

They were t call for her t her h use n the T urid Gard ns t ten clock but t w s al ready fi m utes to ten and th girl we e t yet dressed.

to h r first grand b ll She

th roses n th bodices

dressed à la gr q e

E erythi g essent l had already been d ne feet, ha ds n cks d ears washed pe fumed and po dered, as befits a b ll t e op n o k Th stocki gs d wh te sat h es w th r b bons er lready n th h dres was al most d Só ya wa fi is! dress nd so was th co tess, b t Natásh wh had bustled bo t help g them ll wa b h dh nd She wa till tu bef e look glass w th a dress j ck t th wn er he l d h ul ders. Só ya tood eady dress d n th m ddle f th room d p ess g the head f p n t ll hurt herd ty fi er was fi n l t b bo that sq eaked the p n nt thr ugh t

"That s t th way th t s t th way So ya cried N tásha t rn her head nd cl tch h both h d t he hai wh ch the m d h was dress t h d n t t me to lease. "Th t bow n t ht Com h e!

S ya t d w d N tásha p d th r b bo o diffe ently

Allow m M ss! I can t d t l ke th t sa d the ma d h was h ldi g N tásh s h

Oh, dear! W ll the wa t. That s ht S ya.

Are t yo eady? It nearly t n came th countess

Directly! D tly A d y u M mm

I ha ly my cap t p n o

Do t d t w th t m l called N tash "You w t d right.

"B t lready t n

They had d c ded to b t th b ll by half past ten d N tásha h d till t get dressed nd they had t call t th T u d G d ns.

When her h wa d N tá h her short petu t fr m u de wi h h da ci shoes showed d he mo her s dress

ke ran up to Sónya scrut n zed her and

h r sk rt

Th cause of the delay was Natá ha s skirt

run g bout b twe n th c ya nd fourth held the whole of the gossa m r garment p h hon o e upl fted hand.

Má ra qu ke d l g

G e me my th mble Miss from there

"Whene r w ll y u be ready? a ked the cou t com n to the door He e s some scent Peró kaya must b t red of wa t ng

It s ready M ss sa d the maid h ld g up th ho te ed gau e dress w th two fi gers and bl w g a d l k g som th ng off it, s f by th s to p ess co sci u ness of the a ess nd pu ty f wh t she held

Natásha b gan putt g n the dress.

"In m ute! In m ut ! Don t come n P p l sh cr d to her f the s he ope ed the doo — p k f m under the f lmy kurt whi h t ll o ered h wl le f ce

Sónya l mmed th doo to A m nute l t r they l t the cou t n He was g blu wallow t l co t hoes nd tock s, and as perfumed nd his h pom ded.

ook! Ch rm g!

the sk rt

desp ng o he looked t N tásha, say

Re lly madam t s t t all too lo s d Má ra crawl g her knees after her youn l dy

W ll f t s too l we'll tak t up w ll tack t p in ne mi ute, said the reso l t Dunyásha taki a eedle hat was stuck on the fro t f her little shawl and, still knee in on the floo set to work once more.

At that moment, w h soft steps, the count ess came in sh ly in her cap and velvet gown.

Oo-oo m beauty!" exclaimed the count. she looks better than any of you!"

and looked at her mother Not to marry but just so she added

How so my pet?

Just so There s no need for me to marry him But just so

Just so just so repeated the countess and shaking all over she went off into a good humored unexpected elderly laugh

Don t laugh stop! cried Natásha You re shaking the whole bed! You re awfully like me just such another giggler Wait and she seized the countess hands and kissed a knuckle of the little finger saying June and continued kissing July August on the other hand But Mamma is he very much in love? What do you think? Was anybody ever so much in love with you? And he s very nice very very nice Only not quite my

What rubbish you re talking! said the countess

You flirt with him too said the countess laughing

No he is a Freemason I have found out He s fine dark blue and red How can I explain it to you?

Little countess! the count s voice called from behind the door You re not asleep? Natásha jumped up snatched up her slippers and ran barefoot to her own room

It was a long time before she could sleep She kept thinking that no one could understand all that she understood and all there was in her

Sonya? she thought glancing at that curled up sleeping little kitten with her enormous plait of hair No how could she? She s virtuous She fell in love with Nicholas and does not wish to know anything more Even Mamma does not understand It is wonderful how clever I am and how charming she is she went on speaking of herself in the third person and imagining it was some very wise man —the wisest and best of men—who was saying it of her There is everything everything in her continued this man She s unusually intelligent charming and then she is pretty uncommonly pretty and agile—she swims and rides splendidly and her voice! One can really say it s a wonderful voice!

She hummed a scrap from her favorite opera by Cherubini threw herself on her bed laughed at the pleasant thought that she would immediately fall asleep called Dunyásha the maid to put out the candle and before Dunyásha had left the room had already passed into yet another happier world of dreams where everything was as light and beautiful as in reality and even more so because it was different.

Next day the countess called Borís aside and had a talk with him after which he ceased coming to the Rostóvs

CHAPTER XIV

On the thirty first of December New Year Eve 1809 10 an old grandee of Catherine's day was giving a ball and midnight supper The diplomatic corps and the Emperor himself were to be present

The grandee s well known mansion on the

carpeted with red baize and not only gendarmes but dozens of police officers and even the police master himself stood at the porch Carriages kept driving away and fresh ones arriving with red liveried footmen and footmen in plumed hats From the carriages emerged men wearing uniforms stars, and ribbons while ladies in satin and ermine cautiously descended the carriage steps which were let down for them with a clatter and then walked hurriedly and noiselessly over the baize at the entrance

Almost every time a new carriage drove up a whisper ran through the crowd and caps were doffed

The Emperor? No a minister prince ambassador Don t you see the plumes? was whispered among the crowd

One person better dressed than the rest, seemed to know everyone and mentioned by name the greatest dignitaries of the day

A third of the visitors had already arrived but the Rostóvs who were to be present were

that the invitation would not arrive that the dresses would not be ready or that some

press who was a friend and relation of the countess and piloted the provincial Rostóvs

m Petersburg high society was to ccomp ny them to th b ll.

They ere to call f her t her house in the T d G dens t te o clock but it w al ready fi e m tes to ten d the g ls w e n t yet dressed.

N tásh w s g n to her first gra d b ll She had got p t e ht that m rn a d had been fever f e ctement d act ty ll d v All her po ers s m rn g h d been c n ce trated n ensuri g that they ll—she he s lf M mm a d Só ya—sh uld be as well dr ed as poss ble Só y d h m th p t themsel es ent ly n he ha ds The c nt s

d a la gr cq

E eryth essent l h d l eady bee d e feet ha ds e ks d e r w sh d pe f med a d po d d, a befits a b ll th ope o k silk tock gs a d wh te s t n h es w th l bo were al ady the h rd e g was al t d e. Só ya was fi l g d g a d so was the co ntess b t Natásh wh h d bustled b t h lp g them all w b h dha d She t ll tt g b f look gl s w th a dress g j ket th wn he le d r h l d rs. Só y t od r dy d ed th m ddle f the room and p es g th h d f p n t ll h the da nty fi ger w f g l tr b- bo th t sq e ked the p n e t thr gh it.

"That s t th w y th t s t the w y Só ya! cr d Natá ha t n h head nd d tch g w th both h nds t he ha wh ch the ma d h wa d es t l d n t t me to el e Th t b w s not ght Come h

Só y t d wn d N tásha p n ed the r b- bon n d ff rently

Allow m M ss! I can t d t l ke th t sa d the ma d h w h ld g N tásh h

Oh d ! Well then w t That s ght, S ya.

Ar t you eady? It e rly t n cam the co nt ss ce

D tly! D e tly! A d y u M mma

I h ly my cap t p n o

Do t do t w th t m l call d N tásha.

"Y u w n t d t ght.

B t t l e dy te

They h d d d d t b t th b ll by half past te d N tá l a h d t ll to get d essed d they h d t ll t the T d G d s

Wh n h r h w d N tá ha her short pet co t f m der wh ch he da shoes th d d her m thers d es g

j cket ran up to Sónya scrutin ed her and the ran to her m ther Turn g l er mother s head th s w y and that she f ste ed on the cap and hur iedly kis ng her gr y h ir ran b ck to the ma ds wl o were t rn ng up tl e l em of he sk rt

The cause of tl e delay w s Natásha s skirt wh ch was too long Two m ds were turnin up tl e hem d l ur iedly b ting off the e d of thr d A th d w tl pin in l er mouth w s r nn g bout l etwe n tl e c untess nd Són ya and a f urtl h ld tl e whole of tl e g a m garment p h hon on upl fted l nd

Má ra qu ker da l ng!

G e me my tl imble M s from there

'Whe ever ll yo be ready? asked tl e

s n es

N tásha b gan putti g on the d ess

In mi ute! I m ute! D n t come in Papa! she cr ed to he f ther s h ope ed tl e door—speak g f om under the f lmy sk rt wl cl t ll o er d l e wl le fa e

Só y sl mmed the doo to A m te later they l t th cou t in. He w s wea ng l lue wallow ta l co t hoes d tock n s and w s perf m d d h ha r pomaded.

Oh, P p ! how ce yo l k Charm ng cr ed N ta ha, as she tood in tl m dd A tl room smoothi g o t th f lds f

If y u please Mis sa d ma d who on her kn es w tra ht d sh ft her mo h to the

"S what y l ke despa g o ice what y l ke t' a ll too long

N tasha tepped back to look the p er gla Th d ess u

Real y madam said Má ra, crawl ng on

lady

W ll t s too l g w ll take

w ll ta k t p

l n

o

m

and looked at her mother Not to marry but just so she added

How *so* my pet?

Just *so* There s no need for me to marry him But just *so*

Just so just so repeated the countess and shaking all over she went off into a good humored unexpected elderly laugh

Don t laugh stop! cried Natásha You re shaking the whole bed! You re awfully like me just such another giggler Wait and she seized the countess hands and kissed a knuckle of the little finger saying June and continued kissing July August on the oth er hand But Mamma is he very much in love? What do you think? Was anybody ever so much in love with you? And he s very nice very very nice Only not quite my taste—he is so narrow like the dining room clock Don t you understand? Narrow you know—gray light gray

What rubbish you re talking! said the countess

N ı

You flirt with him too said the countess laughing

No he is a Freemason I have found out He is fine dark blue and red How can I explain it to you?

Little countess! the count s voice called from behind the door You re not asleep? Natásha jumped up snatched up her slippers and ran barefoot to her own room

It was a long time before she could sleep She kept thinking that no one could under stand all that she understood and all there was in her

Sonya? she thought glancing at that curled up sleeping little kitten with her enormous plait of hair No how could she? She s virtu ous She fell in love with Nicholas and does not wish to know anything more Even Mam ma does not understand It is wonderful how clever I am and how charming she is she went on speaking of herself in the third per son and imagining it was some very wise man—the wisest and best of men—who was saying it of her There is everything everything in her continued this man She is unusually in telligent charming and then she *is* pretty uncommonly pretty and agile—she swims and rides splendidly and her voice! One can really say it s a wonderful voice!

She hummed a scrap from her favori

b C! –

ai

di

to

ha

an appier world of dreams where ev thing was as light and beautiful as in real and even more so because it was different.

Next day the countess called Boris aside a had a talk with him after which he ceased co ing to the Rostóvs

CHAPTER XIV

On the thirty first of December New Y Eve 1809 10 an old grandee of Cather day was giving a ball and midnight sup The diplomatic corps and the Emperor him were to be present

The grandee s well known mansion on English Quay glittered with innumerable l g Police were stationed at the brightly lit trance which was carpeted with red baize a not only gendarmes but dozens of police ficers and even the police master himself sto at the porch Carriages kept driving away a fresh ones arriving with red liveried footm and footmen in plumed hats From the ca riages emerged men wearing uniforms star and ribbons while ladies in satin and erm n cautiously descended the carriage steps wh c were let down for them with a clatter and the walked hurriedly and noiselessly over the baiz at the entrance

Almost every time a new carriage drove up a whisper ran through the crowd and caps were doffed

The Emperor? No a minister prince ambassador Don t you see the plumes? was whispered among the crowd

One person better dressed than the rest, seemed to know everyone and mentioned by name the greatest dignitaries of the day

A third of the visitors had already arrived but the Rostóvs who were to be present were

I

t. sses would not be ready or that some thing would not be arranged as it should be

Márya Ignátevna Peronskaya a thin and shallow maid of honor at the court of the Dow ager Empress who was a friend and relation of the countess and piloted the provincial Rost vs

Petersburg high society was to accomp ny em to the ball.

They were to call f her t her house in the ända G dens at ten o clock b t it was al ly five minutes to te d the g ls we e t dressed.

Natasha was goin t her first gra d ball She had got up ht that m rn d h d been fever f excitement d ct ty ll da ll her powers sin e m rn had been con centrated n ensuri that they ll— he l er ell Mamma, d Sónya—sl ould be as well dressed possible. So ya a d he m tl put dressed in m

med à la gr cq e

E erth essential h d al eady be n d e feet, hands, necks a d ears wa h d perfumed and powdered, as befits a b ll the ope k silk stockings nd h t sat n h es w th rib-bons were alread o the ha dress g a l most don Só ya was fi h g d ess g d so was t countess, b t N tásh wh h d bu tled bout help g them ll, wa beh dh d Sh was stil tu bef e a look ol ss w th dressi jack t thr n r he sl der h ul ders. Sonya stood eady dressed n the m ddle of the room a d p ess the h d of p n t ll it hurt her da ty fi e was fi g l t b-bon that sq e ked as the p n t th gh t

"That n t th way tl t n t th w y Sonya!" cried N tásh t he head nd clutch n th both h ds t her ha l ch the maid h was d ess t h d n t t m t release. "That bow ot ght Com he

Sonya sat d n d N tásh p n d th b-bo differently

"All w m M ss! I ca t d t l'ke h t d th maid h was h ld g N ásh h

"Oh, dear! Well the wa t That right Sonya."

"Aren t yo ready? It is ly t came t cou tess e.

"Directly! D e tly! A d M mma

I ha e ly my cap t p o

"Do t do t w h t m !" called Natásha. "You w t d t right.

"B t t l eady t

They had decided t b t th b ll by half past ten d N ásha h d till t get dressed nd they had t call t th T da G rd ns.

Wh n her h wa d e N t h n her short pett t f m d wh ch h d g shoes ho ed d he mother s dress g jacket ran up to Sónya scrut n ed her nd

to th m ds who were turn g up the hem of he skirt.

Th cause of the delay was Natá ha s skirt wh ch was too l Two ma ds were turn up the h m nd l rr edly b ting ff the end of th d. A tl d tl p n in her m uth w r n g about bet een the countess a d Só ya and fou th held the whole of the gossa mer garment t p l h on e upl fted hand.

"Má ra qu cke d l n

"G e me my th mble M ss from the e

"Wh ever w ll y u be re dy? ked the

ort d ga e dress w th tw fi gers a d bl w g d sh k g someth ff t, as if b

u v ho o he k ees pull the sk rt tra ght a d hifting the p ns from o e s he m th to the ther with her t ngue

"S y what y u l'k exclaimed Son desp r g o ce as she looked t N tásha, wh t yo lik t st ll too long

N tásh stepped b k t k d at herself in the p glass. The dress long

"Re lly madam, it is not ll t o long, sa d M vra cra lin her k ees a ter her lady

"Well f t s too lo we'll take t up we ll tack t p in o e m t sa d the res l te Dunyásha tak g needle th t was st ck on th fro t of her little shawl a d still kneel ing on the floo et to rk on e m re.

At tha mom t th soft steps the c u t ess came shyl in he cap d elvet go n.

"Oo-oo my be ty! excl med the cou t h looks better than any f you

and looked at her mother Not to marry but just so she added

How so my pet?

Just *so* There s no need for me to marry him But just *so*

Just so just so repeated the countess and shaking all over she went off into a good humored unexpected elderly laugh

Don t laugh stop! cried Natásha You re shaking the whole bed! You re awfully like me just such another giggler Wait and she seized the countess hands and kissed a knuckle of the little finger saying June and continued kissing July August on the other hand But Mamma is he very much in love? What do you think? Was anybody ever so much in love with you? And he s very nice very very nice Only not quite my taste—he is so narrow like the dining room clock Don t you understand? Narrow you know—gray light gray

What rubbish you re talking! said the countess

N

You flirt with him too said the countess laughing

No he is a Freemason I have found out He is fine dark blue and red How can I explain it to you?

Little countess! the count s voice called from behind the door You re not asleep? Natásha jumped up snatched up her slippers and ran barefoot to her own room

It s as a long time before she could sleep She kept thinking that no one could understand all that she understood and all there was in her

S nya? she thought glancing at that curled up sleep ng little kitten with her enormous plait of hair No how could she? She s virtuous She fell in love with Nicholas and does not w sh to know anything more Even Mamma does not understand It is wonderful how clever I am and how charming she s she went on speaking of herself in the third person and imag ning it was some very wise man —the w isest and best of men—who was saying it of her There is everything everything in her continued this man She is unusually intelligent charming and then she s pretty uncommonly pretty and agile—she sw ms and rides splendidly and her voice! One can really say it s a wonderful voice!

She hummed a scrap f
by Cherubini threw hersc
at the pleasant thought
diately fall asleep call
to put out the candle
had left the room had
another happier world
thing was as light and
and even more so be

Next day the cou
had a talk with hi
ing to the Rostóv

CHAPT

ON THE THIRTY
Eve 1809 10 a
day was giving
The diplomatic
were to be prese

The grandee s
English Quayglitt
Police were stati
trance which was
not only genda
ficers and even th
at the porch Carr
fresh ones arrivin
and footmen in p
riages emerged me
and ribbons while l
cautiously descended
were let down for the
walked hurr edly and
at the entrance

Almost every time a n
whisper ran through the
doffed

The Emperor? No a
ambassador Don t you s
was whispered among the cr

One person better dresse
seemed to kno

n

bu

still hurrying to get dressed

There had been many discus
rations for th s ball in the Rost
fears tl

get L ng ress who w s a friend and rel
the countess and piloted the prov ncial R

Ah, here she is, the Q een of Petersburg Countess Berukhova, sa d Perónskaya, ndi cating Hélè who had just entered. H w lovely! She is quit equal to Márya Antóno na. See how the men, youn and old, pay court t her Beautiful and clever they say Prince — is quit mad bout l er But see, those two though not good lookin re even more run a ter

She pointed to a lady who wa cross g the room f llowed b very pla n daughter

"She is p endid match a millionairess, said Perónskaya. And look, here come her suitors.

"That is Berukhova brotl Anat le Ku ragin, she sa d, dicati ha dsom officer of the Hors Guards who passed by them with head erect, lookin t someth n over the heads f the ladies. "H ha dsom isn t he I hear they will marry him to that rich girl. B t your cousin, Drubetskoy is lso ery ttent e to her They say he ha millions. Oh yes, that the French ambassad r h mself sh repl ed to the cou tess quiry bout Caulaincourt. "Look if he were k All the same, the French are charming, ery charmin No one more charming n societ Ah, here sh is Yes, s still the most beau iful of them all our Marya Antónovna And how simply sh is dressed. Lovel A d that t ut n n spec tacles is the universal Freemason she went on, indicatin P erre. P t him beside his wif and he looks regular buffoo

Pierre, sway g his tout bod d anced, making way through th crowd d noddi to right and lef as casually d good n tured ly as if h ere passi g through crowd t a fair H pushed through, evidently looking f someone.

N tásha looked joyfully t th familiar face of Pierre, th buffoon, as Perónsk ya had called him, nd knew h was lookin f them, and for her particular H had promised to be at the ball d trod ce p rtners to her

But before he reached them P erre s pped beside a ery ha dsom dark man of middl height, and in whit un form, who tood by window talkin to tall man weari g tars nd ribbon. N tásha t ce recognized th shorter nd younger ma the white uni form. t was Bolkónski who seemed to her to ha e grown m h you ger happ er and better looking

"There someo lse w know—Bolkónski, do you see, Mamma?" sa d N tásha, pointing out Pri ce Andrew "You remember he stayed a n ht w th us at Otrádnoe.

Oh, you k ow h m sa d Perónskaya. I can t bear him. *Il f t à p t la pl e et l be u temps.* He too proud f r nyth Takes fter hi father And he s ha d in glo e with Sperá ki writin some project o other Just look how he treats the lad es There ne talk to h m and h has turned wa " she sa d, po ntin t him. I d g e it to h m f he treated me a he does those l dies.

CHAPTER XVI

SUDDENLY EVERYBODY STIRRED began talk n and pressed f rward a d then ba k, nd be tween th two rows, which separated, th Em pero entered to the sound of mus c that had immedi t l truck up Beh d him walked h host nd hostess. He walked n rap dl bow g to right and left as if nxious to get the first moments of the recept on o e The ba d pl ed the polon se n vogu at that t me o ccount of th words that had been set to it, begi n g Alexander Elisa eta all our hearts you ravish qu te " Th Emperor passed n to the drawi room th crowd made rush f th doors, nd several person with ex ted faces hurried there d ba k gain Then the crowd hastily ret red from the drawi g room doo t which the Empero reappeared talk ing to the hostess. A young man look ng dis tra ht, pou ced down on th lad es, k g them t move as de. Some ladies, with faces be tray g compl e f rgetfulness of all th rules f decorum, pushed f rward to th detrime t of th t lets. The m n began to hoose part ners d tak their pl ces f r the pol naise.

Everyo e mo ed back, nd th Empero came sm l out of the drawing room lead ng his hostess b th ha d but not keep g t me t th mus c. The host f llowed with Márya Ant ovn Nary hkina then cam mbassa d rs, min ters, nd various generals, whom Peron k ya dil gentl named. M re than half th ladies alread had partners nd were tak ng up o prepari g to take up, thei pos t ons f th pol n se. N tásha felt that he would be left with her mother d So ya among minority of women who crowded nea th wall not havin been nvited to dance. Sh tood with her lender rms hangi g down her scarcely d fi ed bosom ris g and fall ng regu larly and with bated breath nd gl ttering, fri ht ed yes gazed tra ht bef re her ev dently prepared fo the he ght f joy o misery

H is ll th rage jus now

Alexander I mistress.—Tr.

He would have embraced her but blushing she stepped aside fearing to be rumpled

Mamma your cap more to this side said Natasha I ll arrange it and she rushed for ward so that the maids who were tacking up her skirt could not move fast enough and a piece of gauze was torn off

Oh goodness! What has happened? Really it was not my fault!

Never mind I ll run it up it won t show said Dunyásha

What a beauty—a very queen! said the nurse as she came to the door And Sonya! They are lovely!

At a quarter past ten they at last got into their carriages and started But they had still to call at the Taurida Gardens

Peronskaya was quite ready In spite of her age and plainness she had gone through the same process as the Rostovs but with less flur ry—for to her it was a matter of routine Her ugly old body was washed perfumed and pow dered in just the same way She had washed be hind her ears just as carefully and when she

lress
old
nira

tion as the Rostovs servants had been

She praised the Rostóvs toilets They praised her taste and toilet and at eleven o clock care ful of their coiffures and dresses they settled themselves in their carriages and drove off

CHAPTER XV

NATASHA had not had a moment free since early morning and had not once had time to think of what lay before her

In the damp chill air and crowded closeness of the swaying carriage she for the first time vividly imagined what was in store for her there at the ball in those brightly lighted rooms —with music flowers dances the Emperor and all the brilliant young people of Petersburg The prospect was so splendid that she hardly believed it would come true so out of keeping was it with the chill darkness and closeness of the carriage She understood all that awaited her only when after stepping over the red baize at the entrance she entered the hall took off her fur cloak and beside Sónya and in front of her mother mounted the brightly illuminated stairs between the flowers. Only then did she remember how she must behave at a ball and tried to assume the majestic air she considered indispensable for a girl on such an occasion But fortunately for her she felt her eyes growing misty she saw nothing clearly her pulse beat a hundred to the minute and the blood throbbed at her heart She could not assume that pose which would have made her ridiculous and she moved on almost fainting from excitement and trying with all her might to conceal it. And this was the very attitude that became her best Be fore and behind them other visitors were en tering also talking in low tones and wearing ball dresses The mirrors on the landing re flected ladies in white pale blue and pink dresses with diamonds and pearls on their bare necks and arms

Natásha looked in the mirrors and couldn t distinguish her reflection from the others All was blended into one brilliant procession On entering the ballroom the regular *hum* of voices footsteps and greetings deafened Natásha and the light and glitter dazzled her still more The host and hostess who had already been standing at the door for half an hour re peating the same words to the various arrivals, *Charmé de vous voir* greeted the Rostovs and Peronskaya in the same manner

at her and gave her alone a special smile in addition to her usual smile as hostess Looking at her she may have recalled the golden irre coverable days of her own girlhood and her own first ball The host also followed Natásha with his eyes and asked the count which was his daughter

Charming! said he kissing the tips of his fingers

In the ballroom guests stood crowding at the entrance doors awaiting the Emperor The countess took up a position in one of the front rows of that crowd Natásha heard and felt

calm her

There are some like ourselves and some worse she thought

Perónskaya was pointing out to the count ess the most important people at the ball

That is the Dutch ambassador do you see? That gray haired man she said indicating an

Delighted to see you

Ah, here she is, the Queen of Petersburg Countess Bezukhova, sa d Perón kaya ndi cating H lè e who had just entered. How lovely She is qu te equal to M rya Antónovna. See how the men youn nd old, pay court t her Beautiful d clever they say Prince — is quit mad bout l er But see those two though not good-looking are even more run a er

She po ted to lady who was cross n th room f llowed by very plain daughter

"She is sp endid match, a millionairess, said Peronskaya. And look, here com her suitors.

"That is Bezukhova brother An tol Ku ragin, she said, ind cati ha dsome officer of the Horse Guards who passed by them with head erect, looking t something over th heads of the ladies. "H ha dsom, isn t h I hear they will marry him to that rich girl. But your cousin, Drubetskoy lso ery ttentive to her They say sh has millions. Oh es, that s the French ambassador himself she replied to the countess inquiry bout Caulaincourt. "Looks as if he were king All the same, the French are charmin ery charmi No one more charming in society Ah, here she is Yes, s still the most beautiful of them all, our Marya A t novna. And how simply sh is dressed. Lovely And that t ut one n spec tacles is the universal Freemason, he went on, indicatin P erre. Put him besid his wife and he looks regular buffoon

Pierre, swayi his stou bod dvanced, making wa through th crowd nd nodding to right and left casually nd good natured ly as if he were passing through crowd t a fair H pushed through, evidentl looking for someone.

Natasha looked joyfully t the familiar face of Pierre, the buffoon, Peronskaya had called him, nd knew he was looking for them, and for her in particular H had promised to be at the ball and introduce partners to her

But before he reached them P erre topped beside very handsome, dark man of midd height, and in whit un form, who stood by a window talking to tall man wearing stars and ibbon. N tásha at once recognized the shorter and younger man in the white uni form. It was Bolkonski. who seemed to her to hav grown much ounger happ er and better lo king

"There someon else w know—Bolkónski, do you see, Mamma?" said N tásha, pointin

Alexander I mistress.—Tr.

out Prince Andrew "You remember h tayed a n ht w th us at Otrádnoe.

Oh, you know him sa d Perón kaya I can t bear h m. *Il f t à p e t la pl et l be u temps* He s too proud f anyth n T kes fter his f ther And he s hand n gl e with Sperán k wr t n some project or other Ju t look how he treats the ladies Ther s ne talk n to h m d he has turned awa he sa d, po ntin t him. "I d gi e t to him f he treated me s he does those l dies.

CHAPTER XVI

be-
m-
nd
l
ow
the

ng to right nd l lt s

first moments of the recept on o er The band played the polonaise n vogu t that time on count of th words that h d been set to t, beginni Alexander Elisa eta, ll ur hearts you ravish quite The Emperor pa sed n to the drawi g room, th crowd mad rush f th doors, nd several persons with excited faces hurried there nd back ga n. Then the crowd hast ly retired from the drawin room door t which th Emperor reappeared talk ing to the hostess. A young man, looking dis traught, pounced d wn on th ladies, asking them to move as de. Som lad es, with faces be traying complete forgetfulness of all the rules of decorum, pushed forward to the detriment of their toilets. The men be n to hoose part ners nd take their places for th polonaise.

Everyo moved back, and the Emperor cam smiling out of th drawing room leading his hostess by the hand but not keep time to the music. The host followed with Márya Antonovna Narýshkina then cam ambassa dors, ministers, and various generals, whom Peronskaya dilig ntl named. M re than half the ladies alread had partners nd were tak ing up, or prepari g to take up their pos tions for the polonaise. N tásha f lt that she w uld be left with her mother and Sonya mon a minority of women who crowded ear the wall not having been in ted to da e. She tood with her lender arms hangi g down her scarcely defined bosom ris and fall ng regu larly and with bated breath d gl tteri frightened eyes gazed traight bef re l er ev dently prepared f r the he ght f joy o misery

"H is all the rage just now

She was not concerned about the Emperor or any of those great people whom Perónskaya was pointing out—she had but one thought

Is it possible no one will ask me that I shall not be among the first to dance? Is it possible that not one of all these men will notice me? They do not even seem to see me or if they do they look as if they were saying Ah she s not the one I m after so it s not worth looking at her! No it s impossible she tho [illegible]

m [illegible]

ly

[illegible]

The strains of the polonaise which had continued for a considerable time had begun to sound like a sad reminiscence in Natásha s ears She wanted to cry Perónskaya had left them The count was at the other end of the room She and the countess and Sónya were standing by themselves as in the depths of a forest amid that crowd of strangers with no one interested in them and not wanted by anyone Prince Andrew with a lady passed by evidently not recognizing them The handsome Anatole was smilingly talking to a partner on his arm and looked at Natásha as one looks at a wall Boris passed them twice and each time turned away Berg and his wife who were not dancing came up to them

This family gathering seemed humiliating to Natásha—as if there were nowhere else for the family to talk but here at the ball She did not listen to or look at Véra who was telling her something about her own green dress

At last the Emperor stopped beside his last partner (he had danced with three) and the music ceased A worried aide de camp ran up to the Rostóvs requesting them to stand farther back though as it was they were already close to the wall and from the gallery resounded the distinct precise enticingly rhythmical strains of a waltz The Emperor looked smilingly down the room A minute passed but no one had yet begun dancing An aide de camp the Master of Ceremonies went up to Countess Bezúkhova and asked her to dance She smilingly raised her hand and laid it on his shoulder without looking at him The aide de camp [illegible]

[illegible] circle then at the corner of the room he caught Hélène s left hand and turned her the only sound audible apart from the ever-quickening music being the rhythmic click of the spurs on his rapid agile feet while at every [illegible]

out ar[illegible]

Natásh[illegible] and was ready to cry because it was not she who was dancing that first turn of the waltz

Prince Andrew in the white uniform of a cavalry colonel wearing stockings and dancing shoes stood looking animated and bright in the front row of the circle not far from the Rostóvs Baron Firhoff was talking to him about the first sitting of the Council of State to be held next day Prince Andrew [illegible]

[illegible]

co[illegible] cerning which various rumors we[illegible]

re[illegible]

[illegible] intending to dance who had not yet gathered courage to enter the circle

Prince Andrew was watching these men abashed by the Emperor s presence and the women who were breathlessly longing to be asked to dance

Pierre came up to him and caught him by the arm

You always dance I have a protégée the young Rostóva here Ask her he said

Where is she? asked Bolkónski Excuse me! he added turning to the baron we will finish this conversation elsewhere—at a ball one must dance He stepped forward in the direction Pierre indicated The despairing dejected expression of Natásha s face caught his eye He recognized her guessed her feelings saw that it was her début remembered her conversation at the window and with an expression of pleasure on his face approached Countess Rostóva

Allow me to introduce you to my daughter said the countess with heightened color

I have the pleasure of being already acquainted if the countess remembers me said Prince Andrew with a low and courteous bow quite belying Perónskaya s remarks about his rudeness and approaching Natásha he held out his arm to grasp her waist before he had completed his invitation He asked her to waltz That tremulous expression on Natásha s face prepared either for despair or rapture suddenly brightened into a happy grateful childlike smile

I have long been waiting for you that frightened happy little girl seemed to say by the smile that replaced the threatened tears as she raised her hand to Prince Andrew s shoul

der They were the s d c uple to nter the circle. Pri ce A drew w e of the best da c ers f his day d N tásh d nced exqu t ly Her l ttle feet the wh t sat d n n sl o s did their wo k sw ftly l ghtly and d pe d ently of herself wh l l er f e beam d w th ecstatic happ ess. H l de bare rms d ck ere ot be t ful— mpar d t Hélèn s her sho lders looked th n d her bosom un de el ped. But Hélè e seem d t ere l d ed b varnish left by the th us ds f looks that h d canned her p rs wh le N tásh was l k g l expo d f th first t me who w uld h f lt ery m h h med h d he n t b n assured that this wa bsol t ly necessary

Pri A drew l ked d ci d wish ot escape as q ckly poss ble f om the polit cal d cle er talk wh ch everyone ddressed to h m hi g lso t b e k up the ci cle of e tra t he d l ked ca ed by the Empe r's prese e he da ed d had ch sen N tásha because P erre po nted l o t t h m nd be cause she as the first p tty gi l wh ca ght h ey b t scarc ly had he embra ed that slen der pple figur d felt her turn so close to h m d smil so near h m th n t le w e f her charm ro e t h h d a d h felt him self ev ed d rej n ted wh fter lea h r h tood b th deeply and watch ing th ther da ers.

there h d been someth ng to be ashamed of n wh t Pr nce A d ew h d o erhe d

Like ll men who h e grown up n society Pri ce Andre v l ked meet g s meone there not f the con e t on l soc ety stamp And uch as Natá h w th her urpr se he del ght, her shyness and e en her m t kes n speak French. W th h he beha ed w th sp ci l ca e d t nderness s tt g be de her and t lk of th mplest d m tu mpo t t m tters

was t red d p nt g nd e dently tho ght of decl n g b t mmed tely p t her h d ga ly th m n s sh ulder smil g t Pri ce A d w

I d be glad t t bes d you and rest I m tired but y u ee how they keep ki g me nd I m gl d of t, I m h ppy nd I lo e every body d you a d I derst d t ll nd much, much mo was sa d n her sm le. Wh n her p rt er left her N tásha ran across the

CHAPTER XVII

After Pri ce A res Boris came up to ask N tásha f da e d then the d -de-camp h had pe ed the b ll a d everal other men so th t, flushed d happy and p ss g n her superfl us p rt ers to Só ya h d d t ase da ci g ll th even g Sh noti ed d saw n th g of what occup ed ev ery e else. N ly d d h f l t t e that the Empero talked l g time w th th French mb sad d how particularly graci us h was t a erta l dy that Pri ce So- nd so d So- d so d d d sa d th d that, and that Hélè e had great u es nd was h red by the pec l t entu n f So- d so b t she d d t even see th Emper nd o ly t ced that he had go becaus the ball became l e l er f er his departure. F o of th merry till ns bef pper Pr ce A drew was her partner He em ded her f th first e co ter th Otrád oe e ue d how he had bee u ble to leep that moon l ght ght, d t ld her h w h had ti ly erheard her N tásha blushed t that recollectio and tried to excuse herself, as f

sh w n t be d ci g here m nth bef e he w ll be m rried. S ch as h are rar her he th ght s N tásha re djusting rose that was l pp on h r bodic settled herself be de h m

Whe the till o was ver th old cou t n h bl e co t cam up to th d n ers He n t ed Pri ce Andrew to com a d see them nd ked h d ughter whether he was joy g h rself N tásha d d n t nsw t once but o ly looked p with m le that sa d rep o ch f lly H w can you ask. ch a quest n?

I h e ne joyed my elf o much be for l he sa d, d Pri e A drew n ti ed h w her thin rms rose qu ckly as f to mbra e he f the d ta tly dropped gai N tá ha was h pp er th h had e er been in her l fe. She was at th t he ght of bliss whe one becomes compl tely k d nd good d d es t bel th poss b l ty f ev l unhapp ness o sorrow

At th t b ll P erre f the first time f lt humil ted by the pos t n h w fe occup ed in urt circles. He as gloomy nd abs nt

She was not concerned about the Emperor or any of those great people whom Perónskaya was pointing out—she had but one thought

Is it possible no one will ask me that I shall not be among the first to dance? Is it possible that not one of all these men will notice me? They do not even seem to see me or if they do they look as if they were saying Ah she s not the one I m after so it s not worth looking at her! No it s impossible she thought They must know how I long to dance how splendidly I dance and how they would enjoy dancing with me

The strains of the polonaise which had continued for a considerable time had begun to sound like a sad reminiscence in Natásha s ears She wanted to cry Perónskaya had left them. The count was at the other end of the room She and the countess and Sónya were standing by themselves as in the depths of a forest amid that crowd of strangers with no one interested in them and not wanted by anyone Prince Andrew with a lady passed by evidently not recognizing them The handsome Anatole was smilingly talking to a partner on his arm and looked at Natásha as one looks at a wall Boris passed them twice and each time turned away Berg and his wife who were not dancing came up to them

This family gathering seemed humiliating to Natásha—as if there were nowhere else for the family to talk but here at the ball She did not listen to or look at Véra who was telling her something about her own green dress

At last the Emperor stopped beside his last partner (he had danced with three) and the music ceased A worried aide de camp ran up to the Rostóvs requesting them to stand farther back though as it was they were already close to the wall and from the gallery resounded the distinct precise enticingly rhythmical strains of a waltz. The Emperor looked smilingly down the room A minute passed but no one had yet begun dancing An aide de camp the Master of Ceremonies went up to Countess Bezúkhova and asked her to dance She smilingly raised her hand and laid it on his shoulder without looking at him The aide de camp an adept in his art grasping his partner firmly round her waist with confident deliberation started smoothly gliding first round the edge of the circle then at the corner of the room he caught Hélène s left hand and turned her the only sound audible apart from the ever quickening music being the rhythmical click of the spurs on his rapid agile feet while at every third beat his partner s velvet dress spread out and seemed to flash as she whirled round. Natásha gazed at them and was ready to cry because it was not she who was dancing that first turn of the waltz

Prince Andrew in the white uniform of a cavalry colonel wearing stockings and dancing shoes stood looking animated and bright in the front row of the circle not far from the Rostóvs Baron Firhoff was talking to him about the first sitting of the Council of State to be held next day Prince Andrew as one closely connected with Speránski and participating in the work of the legislative commission could give reliable information about that sitting concerning which various rumors were current But not listening to what Firhoff was saying he was gazing now at the sovereign and now at the men intending to dance who had not yet gathered courage to enter the circle

Prince Andrew was watching these men abashed by the Emperor s presence and the women who were breathlessly longing to be asked to dance

Pierre came up to him and caught him by the arm

You always dance I have a protégée the young Rostóva here Ask her he said

Where is she? asked Bolkónski Excuse me! he added turning to the baron we will finish this conversation elsewhere—at a ball one must dance He stepped forward in the direction Pierre indicated The despairing dejected expression of Natásha s face caught his eye He recognized her guessed her feelings saw that it was her début remembered her conversation at the window and with an expression of pleasure on his face approached Countess Rostóva

Allow me to introduce you to my daughter said the countess with heightened color

I have the pleasure of being already acquainted if the countess remembers me said Prince Andrew with a low and courteous bow quite belying Perónskaya s remarks about his rudeness and approaching Natásha he held out his arm to grasp her waist before he had completed his invitation He asked her to waltz. That tremulous expression on Natásha s face prepared either for despair or rapture suddenly brightened into a happy grateful childlike smile

I have long been waiting for you that frightened happy little girl seemed to say by the smile that replaced the threatened tears as she raised her hand to Prince Andrew s shoul

der They were the eco d couple to enter the circle. Prince Andrew as f the best da c ers 1 his day and N tá ha d ed exqu tely Her little feet in thei wh te sat n danci hoes did their work sw ftly l htly d depe d ntl of herself, wh le her f ce beamed w th ecsta c happ ess. Her sle d bare arm d neck were t bea tif l—comp ed to Hélè e s her shoulders looked th d her bosom u developed. B t Hélè eemed as t ere hard ened by varnish left by the th usa ds of looks that had sca ed her p rso wh l N tásha was lik girl expo ed f r the first t me who w uld ha f lt ery m ch a hamed had he ot be n assured that this was bsol ely necessary

Prince Andrew l ked da d wish gt escape as q kly as poss ble from the political a d clever talk wh ch every e dd essed to h m, w hing also t b eak up the ci cle f re straint he disl'ked, ca ed by the Emper r's presen e, he danced, d had chosen Natásha beca se P err po ted her out t h m a d be cause she was the first p tty girl who caught his ey b t scarcely had h embraced that sl n der supple figure d f lt her stirri so close to him nd smil so ear him than the w e f her charm rose to h head d he felt h m self ev ved and rej enated when after lea ng h r he tood b eathin deeply nd watch ing th ther da ers.

there h d been somethi g to be sh med of in what Prin e Andrew h d o erheard.

L k ll men who have gr wn up n society Prince And ew l ked meet g someone the n t of the con ent n l society stamp A d uch was N tá h w th her surpri e her del ght, her shyness, and even her mistakes n spe ki French W th her h beha ed w th p c l ca e nd t nderness s tt g bes de her and talk ng of the mplest d most u mportant m tters

— — —

her seat when an ther dancer chose her She

—

Andrew

I d be gl d to s t bes de you d rest I m tired b t you see h w they k ep aski g me a d I m gl d of t, I m happy d I l e every body d you d I u derstand t all a d m ch, m ch m e was said in her smile. When her p rtner l ft her N tásha ran cross the room to choos tw l d es f the figure.

—

CHAPTER XVII

AFTER PRI CE A DREW Boris came up to ask N tásha f r da ce, d then th de-d -camp h had ope ed the ball and several other you men so that, flushed d happy d pa sing her superfl u p rtners to Sónya, sh did ot ease da cing ll th even Sh noticed and sa thi of what occup ed ev ery e lse. N t nly did h f l otice that th Emper talked l g t me with th F ench ambassado and how particularly graci us h was to ertain lad or that Prince So-and so nd So- d so did d sa d thi d that, d that Hélè e had great success nd was ho ored by the pecial tentio f So- nd-so b t he d d t even see th Emperor d only noticed th t he had go e because th ball became l e l er f er his departure. F o of th merry c till ns bef re supper Prince Andrew was gain her partner He eminded her of their first encou ter n the Otrádnoe enue, nd how had been u ble to leep that moo l ght ht, and t d her how h had n olun ta ly erheard her N tá ha blushed t that recollect. and tried excuse herself, as if

she w n t be danci g here m th bef e she will be married. S ch as he are rare here h th ght, as N tásh r djust ng rose that wa l pp n on her bodice, ettled hers lf be s de him

When th cotill on was o er the old count n his bl co t cam up to th da cers. He n t ed Pri e A drew t come nd ee them, nd asked hi dau hter whether h was enjoy herself. N tásha d d n t answer t o ce but only looked up w th m le that said rep ch- fully H w can y u a k ch question

I ha never e joyed myself so much b f e! h sa d, d Pri c A drew n ti ed h w her thin arms ose qu ckly as if to embrace her father d in tantly dropped gain N tá ha was happ er tha sh had ever been n her l f Sh wa

—

At that b ll P rre fo the first time f lt humiliated b th pos ti n h wif occup ed in court circles. H as gloomy and bsent

She was not concerned about the Emperor or any of those great people whom Perónskaya was pointing out—she had but one thought

Is it possible no one will ask me that I shall not be among the first to dance? Is it possible that not one of all these men will notice me? They do not even seem to see me or if they do they look as if they were saying Ah she s not the one I m after so it s not worth looking at her! No it s impossible she thought They must know how I long to dance how splendid ly I dance and how they would enjoy dancing with me

Th

tu

so

She wanted to cry Perónskaya had left them The count was at the other end of the room She and the countess and Sónya were standing by themselves as in the depths of a forest amid that crowd of strangers with no one interested in them and not wanted by anyone Prince Andrew with a lady passed by evidently not recognizing them The handsome Anatole was smilingly talking to a partner on his arm and looked at Natásha as one looks at a wall Borís

This family gathering seemed humiliating to Natásha—as if there were nowhere else for the family to talk but here at the ball She did not listen to or look at Véra who was telling her something about her own green dress

At last the Emperor stopped beside his last partner (he had danced with three) and the music ceased A worried aide de camp ran up to the Rostóvs requesting them to stand farther back though as it was they were already close to the wall and from the gallery resounded the distinct precise enticingly rhythmical strains of a waltz The Emperor looked smilingly down the room A minute passed but no one had yet begun dancing An aide de camp the Master of Ceremonies went up to Countess Bezukhova and asked her to dance She smilingly raised her hand and laid it on his shoulder without looking at him The aide de camp an adept in his art grasping his partner firmly round her waist with confident deliberation started smoothly gliding first round

ever quickening music being the rhythm eclick of the spurs on his rapid agile feet, while at every third beat his partner s velvet dress spread out and seemed to flash as she whirled round. Natásha gazed at them and was ready to cry because it was not she who was dancing that first turn of the waltz.

Prince Andrew in the white uniform of a cavalry colonel wearing stockings and dancing shoes stood looking animated and bright in the front row of the circle not far from the Rostóvs Baron Firhoff was talking to him about the first sitting of the Council of State to be held next day Prince Andrew as one closely connected with Speránski and participating in the work of the legislative commission could give reliable information about that sitting concerning which various rumors were current. But not listening to what Firhoff was saying he was gazing now at the sovereign and now at the men intending to dance who had not yet gathered courage to enter the circle

Prince Andrew was watching these men abashed by the Emperor s presence and the women who were breathlessly longing to be asked to dance

Pierre came up to him and caught him by the arm

You always dance I have a protégée the young Rostóva here Ask her he said

Where is she? asked Bolkónski Excuse me! he added turning to the baron we will finish this conversation elsewhere—at a ball one must dance He stepped forward in the direction Pierre indicated The despairing dejected expression of Natásha s face caught his eye He recognized her guessed her feelings, saw that it was her début remembered her conversation at the window and with an expression of pleasure on his face approached Countess Rostóva

Allow me to introduce you to my daughter said the countess with heightened color

I have the pleasure of being already acquainted if the countess remembers me said Prince Andrew with a low and courteous bow quite belying Perónskaya s remarks about his rudeness and approaching Natásha he held out his arm to grasp her waist before he had completed his invitation He asked her to waltz. That tremulous expression on Natásha s face prepared either for despair or rapture suddenly brightened into a happy grateful childlike smile

I have long been waiting for you that frightened happy little girl seemed to say by the smile that replaced the threatened tears as she raised her hand to Prince Andrew s shoul

der They were the econd coupl t enter the circle. Prince Andrew wa e of the best d nc ers f his day d N tá h danced exqu tely Her l ttl feet in th r wh te sat nd nei hoes did th ir wo k sw ftl l htly and nd pend tly f herself wh l her f beamed w th ecstatic happ ness. Her lende bar arms and eck ere t bea tiful—comp red t Hélèn her sho lders looked th d he bosom un deve.oped. B t H lèn seemed s t ere hard ened b a tarn h left by the th usands of looks that had scan ed her person wh le N tásha was l ke girl exposed l th first t m who w uld ha f lt ery m ch h ned had h n t been assured that th was bsolutely necessary

Pri e A drew l ked d ci d wishing t escape as q ckly s poss bl fr m th polit cal d clever talk which every ne dd es ed t h m ishi g lso t break up the circle of re stra t h disl ked ca sed by the Emp ro s prese ce h da ced d had ch osen N tásha because P erre po ted he ut to h m nd be cause he was th first p tty gi l who ca ght h ey b t scarcely had he embra ed th t le der ppl figure d f lt her t rning so close to h m d m l so near him than th w n l her charm ro e to hi head a d he felt h m self rev ed d reju en ted wh n fter lea her he ood b eath deeply and watch g th ther da rs.

CHAPTER XVII

AFTER PRINCE A REW B ri came up to ask N tá ha f da ce nd then the d -de-camp h had ope ed th ball d everal th to g men so that flushed d happy nd p g her perfl us partners o Só ya h d d ease da g ll th en ng Sh t ced d saw n th g f what occup ed ev eryo else. N nl did h fail n that th Emper talked l g t m w th th F nch mba sad d h w p rt cul ly grac us h a t certa n l dy hat Prin e So nd so d So d so d d d sa d th d that, nd that Hélè had grea u es d wa h ed by th peci l f So nd so b t he d d no even ee h Empero d lyn ed that h had g becau th ball becam l e l er f er his d p u F n f th merry ll bef pper Pr Andrew was a her p rt er H em ded her f th firs n th Otrád oe nd l w h d bee n bl to leep that moon l gt l nd ld h how h had n l n l hea d her N ásha blu hed t that rec llect d tried t cuse herself, as if there had been someth ng to be ashamed of in what Prince Andrew had o erhe rd.

Like all men who ha e grown up n society ... And ew l ked meeting someone there ... And h

shyness, ... French. W th h r he b ha ed with pec ca e and tenderness tt ng bes de her and talk n of the s mplest and m t un mportant m tters he dm red her hy gra e In the m ddle of the cot ll n h n compl ted one of the f ru es N tá ha till out of b e th, was eturn n t her seat when another dancer chose her She wa t red and p nt g and de tly thought f decl n n but immediately put her hand ga ly n the man sh ulder smil ng t Prince Andrew

I d be gl d to s t beside you and rest I m t red but y u see h w they keep aski g me and I m gl d of t, I m happy nd I l e every body nd y u and I u d rst nd it ll and much, much m re was sa d in her smile. When he p rtner left h r N tásha ran cross the room to choose tw lad es f r the figure.

If he goes to her cous n first nd th n to h w ll be my w fe sa d Pr nce

e that

wa l pp g on her bod ce e ueu ne f be de h m.

Wh n th cotill n was over the ld count n hi bl coat came up to th da cers. He n t ed Pr n Andrew t ome nd see them d asked h da hter wh ther he was *enjoyi g* herself N tásha d d not nswer t o ce b t nly looked up w th m l that sa d reproach *fully* *H w can y u ask uch question*

I ha e never enjoyed my elf so m ch be f el sh sa d, d Pri *A drew uced* h w h thi arms rose q *ckly as f to embrace* her father and *tantly dropped aga N tá ha was happ tha she h d eve been h l fe Sh was t that hei ht f bl hen ne becomes compl t ly ki d d good d d es t bel ev th poss bil ty f evil happ ess, sorrow*

At that b ll P rre f the first time f lt h miliated b the po t h f occup ed in court circles. H as gloomy a d bse t

She was not concerned about the Emperor or any of those great people whom Perónskaya was pointing out—she had but one thought

Is it possible no one will ask me that I shall not be among the first to dance? Is it possible that not one of all these men will notice me? They do not even seem to see me or if they do they look as if they were saying Ah she s not the one I m after so it s not worth looking at her! No it s impossible she tho gh

The strains of the polonaise which had continued for a considerable time had begun to sound like a sad reminiscence in Natásha s ears She wanted to cry Perónskaya had left them The count was at the other end of the room She and the countess and Sónya were standing by themselves as in the depths of a forest amid that crowd of strangers with no one interested in them and not wanted by anyone Prince Andrew with a lady passed by evidently not recognizing them The handsome Anatole was smilingly talking to a partner on his arm and looked at Natásha as one looks at a wall Boris passed them twice and each time turned away Berg and his wife who were not dancing came up to them

This family gathering seemed humiliating to Natásha—as if there were nowhere else for the family to talk but here at the ball She did not listen to or look at Véra who was telling her something about her own gr

At last the partner (he mus c ceased we rried aide de camp ran up to the Rost s requesting them to stand far ther back though as it was they were already close to the wall and from the gallery re sounded the distinct prec se enticingly rhythmical strains of a waltz The Emperor looked smilingly down the room A minute passed but no one had yet begun dancing An aide de camp the Master of Ceremonies went up to Countess Bezukhova and asked her to dance She smilingly raised her hand and laid it on his shoulder without looking at him The aide de camp ner I be the edge o t e c rcle then at the corner of the room he caught Hélène s left hand and turned her the only sound audible apart from the ever quickening music being the rhythm cclick of the spurs on his rap d agile feet while at every third beat his partner s velvet dress spr out and seemed to flash as she whirled ro Natásha gazed at them and was ready t because it was not she who was dancin first turn of the waltz

Prince Andrew in the white uniform cavalry colonel wearing stockings and d ing shoes stood looking animated and br in the front row of the circle not far from Rostóvs Baron Firhoff was talking to l about h be hel ly con in the give r

she was gazing now at the sovereign a now at the men intending to dance who h not yet gathered courage to enter the circle

Prince Andrew was watching these me abashed by the Emperor s presence and th women who were breathlessly longing to b asked to dance

Pierre came up to him and caught him b the arm

You always dance I have a protégée the young Rostóva here Ask her he said

Where is she? asked Bolkónski Excuse me! he added turning to the baron we will finish this conversation elsewhere—at a ball one must dance He stepped forward in the direction Pierre indicated The despairing dejected expression of Natásha s face caught his eye He recognized her guessed her feelings saw that it was her début remembered her conversat on at the window and with an expression of pleasure on his face approached Countess Rostóva

Allow me to introduce you to my daughter said the countess with heightened color

I have the pleasure of being already acquainted if the countess remembers me said Prince Andrew with a low and courteous bow quite belying Per nskaya s remarks about h s rudeness and approaching Natásha he held out his arm to grasp her waist before he had completed h s invitation He asked her to waltz That tremulous expression on Natásha s face prepared either for despair or rapture suddenly brightened into a happy grateful child like smile

I have long been wa ting for you that frightened happy little g rl seemed to say by the sm le that replaced the threatened tears as she raised her hand to Prince Andrew s shoul

der They were t..e seco d couple to enter the circle. Pri..ce A drew was e of the best da ers f h.s day a d N tasha da ced exquisitel Her litt! fe t in th ir white satin danc hoes d d th ir work sw ftl lightl d depe d entl f herself, while her f ce beamed w th ecsta happiness. Her lender bare arms nd eck were n t bea tiful—compared to Hélè her shoulders looked thin d her bosom un

h m w hi g lso t b eak up the ci cle f re tra t h disl ked, caused by the Emp or prese ce, h da ed, d h d cl osen N tásha because P erre po ted her out t him d because she was the first p tty gi l who caught h eye but sca cely had he embrac d th t sl n der s pple fi u e d f lt her tur so close t h m d sm l so near l m th tl e w e f her harm ro e t h head a d h f lt himself rev ed d j ted wl fter lea h h tood b thi d eply d watching the ther da rs.

CHAPTER XVII

l p t ers t Soeva, he d d n t c d ci g ll the even

cause the ball became ler f er his d p ture. F ne the t ll s bef e pper Pri..ce A.. was ga h p rt r H emnde her first t n the Otrádnoe l w h had bee b to I ht ght d t ld her how ta ly erheard her N er lle n d tried to excuse

there had been someth g to be ashamed of in what Prince Andrew had o erheard.

Like all men who ha e grown up n society Pri ce Andre v l ked meeting someone there n t of the co ent l soc ety stamp And ch

cot ll h

And ew

I d be gl d to s t bes de you and rest I m t d b t h

cross the room to choo e t o l d es f r the figure.

"L s e goes t h r cou n first a d then to

She was not concerned about the Emperor or any of those great people whom Perónskaya was pointing out—she had but one thought

Is it possible no one will ask me that I shall not be among the first to dance? Is it possible that not one of all these men will notice me? They do not even seem to see me or if they do they look as if they were saying Ah she s not the one I m after so it s not worth looking at her! No it s impossible she thought They must know how I long to dance how splendidly I dance and how they would enjoy dancing with me

Th— tinu soun ... in scence in Natásha s ears She wanted to cry Perónskaya had left them The count was at the other end of the room She and the countess and Sónya were standing by themselves as in the depths of a forest amid that crowd of strangers with no one interested in them and not wanted by anyone Prince Andrew with a lady passed by evidently not recognizing them The handsome Anatole was smilingly talking to a partner on his arm and looked at Natásha as one looks at a wall Borís passed them twice and each time turned away Berg and his wife who were not dancing came up to them

This family gathering seemed humiliating to Natásha—as if there were nowhere else for the family to talk but here at the ball She did not listen to or look at Véra who was telling her something about her own green dress

At last the Emperor stopped beside his last partner (he had danced with three) and the music ceased A worried aide-de camp ran up to the Rostóvs requesting them to stand farther back though as it was they were already close to the wall and from the gallery resounded the distinct precise enticingly rhythmical strains of a waltz The Emperor looked smilingly down the room A minute passed but no one had yet begun dancing An aide-de camp the Master of Ceremonies went up to Countess Bezukhova and asked her to dance She smilingly raised her hand and laid it on his shoulder without looking at him The aide de camp an ...

ever quickening music being the rhythmic click of the spurs on his rapid agile feet while at every third beat his partner s velvet dress spread out and seemed to flash as she whirled round Natásha gazed at them and was ready to cry because it was not she who was dancing that first turn of the waltz

Prince Andrew in the white uniform of a cavalry colonel wearing stockings and dancing shoes stood looking animated and bright in the front row of the circle not far from the Rostóvs Baron Firhoff was talking to him about the first sitting of the Council of State to be held next day Prince Andrew as one closely connected with Speránski and participating in the work of the legislative commission could gi ...

ing he was gazing now at the sovereign and now at the men intending to dance who had not yet gathered courage to enter the circle

Prince Andrew was watching these men abashed by the Emperor s presence and the women who were breathlessly longing to be asked to dance

Pierre came up to him and caught him by the arm

You always dance I have a protégée the young Rostóva here Ask her he said

Where is she? asked Bolkónski Excuse me! he added turning to the baron we will finish this conversation elsewhere—at a ball one must d... dire jecte eye sa... it was her début remembered her conversation at the window and with an expression of pleasure on his face approached Countess Rostóva

Allow me to introduce you to my daughter said the countess with heightened color

I have the pleasure of being already acquainted if the countess remembers me said Prince Andrew with a low and courteous bow quite belying Perónskaya s remarks about his rudeness and approaching Natásha he held out his arm to grasp her waist before he had completed his invitation He asked her to waltz That tremulous expression on Natásha s face prepared either for despair or rapture suddenly brightened into a happy grateful child like smile

I have long been waiting for you that frightened happy little girl seemed to say by the smile that replaced the threatened tears as she raised her hand to Prince Andrew s shoul

er They were the co d c uple to enter the ircle. Prince And ew was ne f the best d nc rs f his day d N tásh d ced exqu tely Her littl feet n the r wh t sat n danci hoes l d th ir work sw ftly l htly and nd p nd ntl f herself wh l h r f ce beamed w th rest ic happ ess. He le d r b r rms nd eck were ot beautiful—compared t Hélèn her shoulders looked th d her bosom un dev l ped. But Helè eemed as t er hard ... h arn h left by the th usa ds l look

—

l

n hi g lso t b eak up the ... z t he d l ked, cau ed by the Emp s se ce he da ced, d had cl en N tásha ... t d he ut to him d b rmerly ppeared y ter u n ... ght Speránsk s dd ly became pl n and tracti e.

— d r th con ersat n d d n t c e f ment d seemed t ust f the co tents book f f y a e d tes B f e M gnt ud fi sl ed his t ry some n cl e was nx — t rel te someth t ll fu er M t of ecd tes f t rel t t th t t ers related t people the ers ce It emed t this c mp ny the n n ficance of those

. cil that m rn c eaf d tary wh n ed his p repl d tl t l tho l t so n Gervais ga l g f n ffici l io rem rkable f tl t p d ty f every dy co erned. St lyp tutter brok n th co rsat n d bega edly t lk — l th buses that ex ted d r the f rmer nder f th s—th eat t g seri u ur t th co rsat M gn tski sta t n t n St l p bo t l h m n e G r erve ed w th j k d th t lk e rt d to u f rmer l ely t ne

E dently Spe á ki l ked to est fte h labors d fi d musem t n ci le of fr ds, d his guests u d rsta d g h w h tried to e l h m d mus th msel s. But th ir ga ety seemed to Pri ce Andr m thless nd tiresome Sperá k s h gh p t hed struck him pleasa tly d th essant la hter grated h m l ke f lse n te Prince

th re had been something to be h med of in what Pri ce Andrew had o e heard.

Like ll men wh h e grown up n society Prince Andre v l ked meet ng someone ther not f the convent l society st mp And such was N tásha w th her urprise her del ght her hyness nd even her mist kes n p aki Fre ch W th h r he beha ed w th p cial care a d tenderness s tt ng bes d her and talk n of the s mplest and mo t u mport nt matters he dmi ed her shy gra e In the m ddle of the cot ll on h n compl ted one of the figu es N tásh t ll out of breath was return n to her eat when other dancer cho e her She was t ed and pant g and ev dently thought of decl ng but mmediately put her h nd ga ly on the m n s h ulder m l n at Prince Andr w

I d b gl d to t bes de you and rest I m t d b t you see h w they k ep asking me nd I m gl d of t, I m h ppy d I l ve e ery body and y u d I understand it ll nd much much more was sa d in her smile Wh n h p rt r left her N tásha ran cross the de m to choo e tw l dies f r th figure.

t k g goes to her cous n first a d th n t h d co h w ll be my w fe sa d Prin e sat n F f Qu te to h s own surp is as

H t s m t m first to her cou n co ked a bottl of w d rema k headl d ys good w e rides n carri ge and p s p ssed t t tl rva t d got p All rose d c nt u g to t lkl dly went to th d aw g oom Two l tt rs b o ght by cour r wer

other

N f the rec t t nl s d Sperá ki on

compo ed bout u well k own s burg peopl He wa t rrupted several t mes by ppl us When th erses w e fi led P Andre w nt up to Sperán ki d took h lea e

Wh e e you off to so e ly? asked Sperán k

I p omised to go to rec pt n

Th sa d o m e. Pr A d ew looked clos ly t th m rro lik mpe etrable eyes nd felt th t t had be n r d culo s f h m to h pe ted yth g f m Speránski d

worldly welfare in order without clinging to anything to wander in hempen rags from place to place under an assumed name doing no one any harm but praying for all—for those who drive one away as well as for those who protect one higher than that life and truth there is no life or truth!

There was one pilgrim a quiet pockmarked little woman of fifty called Theodosia who for over thirty years had gone about barefoot and worn heavy chains Princess Mary was particularly fond of her Once when in a room with a lamp dimly lit before the icon Theodosia was talking of her life the thought that Theodosia alone had found the true path of life suddenly came to Princess Mary with such force that she resolved to become a pilgrim herself When Theodosia had gone to sleep Princess Mary thought about this for a long time and at last made up her mind that strange as it might seem she must go on a pilgrimage She disclosed this thought to no one but to her confessor Father Akinfi the monk and he approved of her intention Under guise of a present for the pilgrims Princess Mary prepared a pilgrim s complete costume for herself a coarse smock bast shoes a rough coat and a black kerchief Often approaching the chest of drawers containing this secret treasure Princess Mary paused uncertain whether the time had not already come to put her project into execution

Often listening to the pilgrims tales, she was so stimulated by their simple speech, mechanical to them but to her so full of deep meaning that several times she was on the point of abandoning everything and running away from home In imagination she already pictured herself by Theodosia s side dressed in coarse rags walking with a staff a wallet on her back along the dusty road directing her wanderings from one saint s shrine to another free from envy earthly love or desire and reaching at last the place where there is no more sorrow or sighing but eternal joy and bliss

I shall come to a place and pray there and

and shall at last reach that eternal quiet haven where there is neither sorrow nor sighing thought Princess Mary

But afterwards when she saw her father and especially little Koko (Nicholas) her resolve weakened She wept quietly and felt that she was a sinner who loved her father and little nephew more than God.

Book Seven 1810-11

*

CHAPTER I

T B E EGE D tells tl t th b c c f
l bo – dl —w cond t n of th first
m bles d ess b f e the F ll F llen m n
h ta ed lo e f dlen ss but the c rse
e hs th t ly becau e h e t
k b d th s e t f ur b w but
beca m ral n t e s uch that we can
t b both dle d t e An ner c
tell us w n the wr g f we are dle If
m ld fi d t te wh h h felt th t
th gh dl h s f lfill h duty he w uld
ha e f d f th c d t f m n s

t f m l t ry erv e h st d a w l
co t th compul ory d rrep cl ble
dle es

N h l Rost v exp d th bl s ful
d t t th f ll wh ft 8 l e n
t d t s rv th Pá l gr d eg me t n
h h h l dy mm d d the squ d n h
had k e f m D lso

Ros ó h d b m bl ff good n tu d
ld

h h l f Of l t 809 he f d let
ters f m h m m e f q t mpl ts f m
h m h h t th ff rs wer f ll g to
gr d gr t d so d d th t t w s
t m f l m m b k t gl dd d m
f rt h ld parent

h t e t r th wh lpool f l fe w th ts
emb rr m t d ff rs to be tra ght ed
t t w th t w ds q rrel d
r gues ts t es soc ty d w th Só y l
nd h p m se t her It w ll d e df lly

d fficult d mpl cated d he repl ed to h
F h beg n

ngagement to
d g w uld be n ye s time be ause th old
p e m d d fficult Th lette gr eved
nd m t fi d N h l In the first pl ce he
w sorry that N tá l f r wh m l e ca d
m tha f a y ne el e in the f m ly sh uld
b l st t the l me d ec dly fr m h

the F r m m nt he he t ted n t
h ld n t pply f le e n o de to e N
tá h bef re she w marr d but then came
the m u ers nd n derat n bo t S

so mu l d w so good n tu ed th t ev ry
body t k d t ge of h m nd th gs er
g g f m b d t w rs F G d s ke I
mpl y c me t nce f y do n t h
t mak me d th hole f m ly vr tch d
r t th u t

Th lett t u hed N ch l H had tl t
m n ense f m tter-of f ct m n wh ch
h wed h m wl t l e o ght t do

Tl ght th g w w f n t t t e

worldly welfare in order without clinging to anything to wander in hempen rags from place to place under an assumed name doing no one any harm but praying for all—for those who drive one away as well as for those who protect one higher than that life and truth there is no life or truth!

There was one pilgrim a quiet pockmarked little woman of fifty called Theodosia who for over thirty years had gone about bar [illegible]

[illegible] was talking of her life the thought that Theodosia alone had found the true path of life suddenly came to Princess Mary with such force that she resolved to become a pilgrim herself When Theodosia had gone to sleep Princess Mary thought about this for a long time and at last made up her mind that strange as it might seem she must go on a pilgrimage She disclosed this thought to no one but to her confessor Father Akinfi the monk and he approved of her intention Under guise of a present for the pilgrims Princess Mary prepared a pilgrim s complete costume for herself a coarse smock bast shoes a rough coat and a black kerchief Often approaching the chest of drawers containing this secret treasure Princess Mary paused uncertain whether the time had not already come to put her project into execution

Often listening to the pilgrims tales she was so stimulated by their simple speech, mechanical to them but to her so full of deep meaning that several times she was on the point of abandoning everything and runnin[g] away from home In imagination she already pictured herself by Theodosia s side dressed in coarse rags walking with a staff a wallet on her back along the dusty road directing her wanderings from one saint s shrine to another free from envy earthly love or desire and reaching at last the place where there is no more sorrow or sighing but eternal joy and bliss

I shall come to a place and pra[y] [illegible]

[illegible] at last reach that eternal quiet haven where there is neither sorrow nor sighing thought Princess Mary

But afterwards when she saw her father and especially little Koko (Nicholas) her resolve weakened She wept quietly and felt that she was a sinner who loved her father and little nephew more than God

Book Seven 1810-11

*

CHAPTER I

THE BIBLE LEGEND t ll us that th bsence of labo —idleness—wa co d on f th first ma b essedness bef re the F ll. Fallen man has reta ed I f dleness, but the curse we s t ra e no l because w ha t seek ur bread the sweat of our brows, but because o moral n ture is u h that we can not be both d t ease. An n er vo ce te us we are in th wr n f we are dle. If ma could find tat which h f lt that though id. he was fulfillin hi d ty h would ha e found o f th co d ti ns of man primiti b essedness. And such tat of obl gatory and irreproachabl dleness is th l of bo class—the mil tary The chi f ttra tio f military servi e has con isted and will consist in this compulsory and irreproachabl idleness

N cholas Ros experien ed this blissful condition t ful when af er So he con tinued to serv in t Pa lovrad emm t n which he read commanded the squadron he had taken over from Den sov

Rostov had becom blu good natured fellow whom his Moscow cqua tan es would ha cons dered rather bad form, but who was liked nd respected by hi omrades. bordi na es nd periors nd wa well con en ed h h l O la n Sog he fou d in let ers from home more frequen compla ts from his mother that their affairs were fall ng nto grea er nd grea er disorder d that was time for him to come back ladden nd com fort h old parents

Read ng these letters Nicholas fel dread f their wa to tal him wa from sur roundings in which protected from l th en tang ments f l he was living so calml d qu H f t sooner or la er h wou d ha to re en er t whir pool of l f with its embarrassments and affairs to be straightened out, its accoun with stewards, quarrels, nd intrigues, its on socie nd with Sonya lov nd his promise to her l was all dreadfully

comm ed nd he repl ed to h

engageme do d n would be n vea time because the old d n would be n vea time because the old pri ce mad d fficulties. This letter grieved d mortified N hol s. In th first pl ce he was sorry that N ta ha f whom he cared more than f nyone else the famil should be lost to the home a d seco dly from his h sorry ed not to ha e

dispense with permiss n from his uola u ther F r moment he hes tated whether he should not pply f leave n order to see N tásha bef re he was married, but th n came th maneuvers, d cons derati n bout S va d bout th confu on of their ffairs nd

2

hand, their whol property would be so d b uctio d they would all ha e t go beggin Th count wa so weak, nd tru ted M t nk so much, nd was so good-n tured, that every bod ook d antage of him and thi gs were go from bad t worse. F God sake I mplo e you, com t once f you d not wish t mak m and the whole fami wretched, wro th countess.

This letter t ched N cholas. He had that common sense of a matter-of fact man which showed him wha h ught to do.

Th right thing now was, if not to retire from the servic t any ra e to go home o leave. Why he had to go he did not know but after his after-dinner nap he [illegible] orders to saddle Mars, an extremel vicious gra tallion

o ld certa lyescape hould she reach it. B t, com g toward h m he saw h unds d hu ts- man gall p ng almost tra ht t th w lf There as t ll h pe A l g yell wish voun borro e N ch la d d n t k w fr m n th r lea h, ru hed mpet usly at th wolf from fro t d lmost kn ked h o er But the olf j mped p m qu ckly th n a yo e co ld ha e expected d gnash g her teeth flew t the y llow h borz wh ch w th p erron lp fell w th t he d n the grou d bleed g f m ga h n t de

Hard Old fell w! w led N h las.

Thank t the delay caused by this cross g f the wolf's p th th old dog w h ts f lted ha r ha g fr m ts th h wa w thun fi e — er d th w lf

denly th w lf d they ro eu u

her by th th oat) w h h pp est mo- m f h l f W th h h nd n h saddle- bo h wa ready o d m t d t b the olf whe h dd nl thrus h r head up from m g th t m ss f dogs, nd th n h f ep w re n th ed f h gully She

l d p babl bru sed w u ded l mbed w h d fficult f th gully

Oh m God Why? N ch l cr ed n des- pa

U l h tsm wa gall p from th other d cross l w lf path d h borzo s mo pped h mal d an Sh wa a hemmed

N h las d h d t w th U l d h h ma wer ll d g rou d the wolf cr l l h u d p ep d m ea h m m n h t th w lf crou hed ba k d rt f rw d ga ev ery m h hook hers lf d mo ed ward th wood her l w ld be safe

Al eady t th beg g of th hase, D l h ng th lyul u g had rushed t

from the wood. He saw h rdy se e the wolf nd checked h s h rse s ppos ng the aff r to be o er But wh n h saw that the h rsemen d d n t d m unt nd that the lf shook her self a d ran f s f ty D n el s t h chestnut gall p not at th wolf but tra ght toward the wood ju t K rdy h d run to cut the n mal off As a result of th s he gall ped up to the wolf ju t wh n sh h d been st pped ec o d t me by U cle s borz s.

I t w

N ch l s ne ther saw no hea d D el un t l the chestnut b eath ng h lv p t d past h m a d l e he rd the f ll of a body nd sa D n el ly on the wolf's ba k mo the dogs tryin to se e l b the ears. I wa e de t t th dogs th hu t rs and to the olf h self th t ll was n w o r Th t rrified lf pressed ba k he ears d tr ed to ri e but the took

neck A t k wa thru be e j he wa f t ned w th le h as f b dled he

old w f l e n y u sc nd comp n ed by the dogs y lp t he took l to tl pl whe e they w ll to meet Th h u ds l d k lled two f the cubs nd the borzo s th ee Th h tsm n ssem bled w th the booty and the t es nd ll cam to look t the w lf which w th her bro d b owed head h g g d wn nd the b t ten t k betw n h r j w ga ed w th great gl ssy es t th s crowd of dogs nd m u rou d l er Wh h wa tou hed he jerked h bo d lees nd looked w ldly t s mply at rybod Old Count Rost lso rod p nd t u hed th w lf

Oh what f rm d ble one sa d h A f rm d bl n eh he ked D l ho a d g ea

Yes ur ex ell cy n red D n l q kly d ff h cap

The cou emembe ed the w lf he h d l t l p d his enco t w th D l

Ah b t u crusty f ll fr ndl sa d th cou t.

way the voices of the huntsmen approached receded and rose he realized what was happening at the copse He knew that young and old wolves were there that the hounds had separated into two packs that somew l n wolf

gone

way

ic made thousands of different conjectures as to where and from what side the beast would come and how he would set upon it Hope alternated with despair Several times he addressed a prayer to God that the wolf should come his way He prayed with that passionate and shame faced feeling with which men pray at moments of great excitement arising from trivial causes What would it be to Thee to do this for me? he said to God I know Thou art great and that it is a sin to ask this of Thee but for God s sake do let the old wolf come my way and let Karáy spring at it—in sight of Uncle who is watching from over there—and seize it by the th o t

e wood with the two scraggy oaks rising above the aspen undergrowth and the gully with its water worn side and Uncle s cap just visible above the bush on his right

No I shan t have such luck thought Rostov yet what wouldn t it be worth! It is not to be! Everywhere at cards and in war I am always unlucky Memories of Austerlitz and of Dolokhov flashed rapidly and clearly through his mind Only once in my life to get an old wolf I

eyes and

to the r

ation of voice in the cries of the dogs

Again he looked to the right and saw something running toward him across the deserted field No it can t be! thought Rostov taking a deep breath as a man does at the coming of something long hoped for The height of happiness was reached—and so simply without warning or noise or display that Rostóv could not believe his eyes and remained in doubt for over a second The wolf ran forward and jumped heavily over a gully that lay in her path She was an old animal with a gray back and big reddish belly She ran with out hurry evidently feeling sure that no one saw her Rostov holding his breath looked round at the borzois They stood or lay not seeing the wolf or understanding the situation Old Karáy had turned his head and was angri

ly searching for fl

and

his ps The borzois jumped up jerkin the rings of the leashes and pricking their ears Karáy finished scratching his hindquarters and cocking his ears got up with quivering tail from which tufts of matted hair hun down

Shall I loose them or not? h himself

from the

iognomy

ar ged she shuddered seein hat she had probably never seen before—human eyes fixed upon her—and turning her head a little toward Rostov she paused

Back or forward? Eh no matter forward the wolf seemed to say to herself and she moved forward without again looking round

ng downhill leaping over gullies to head off the wolf and the borzois passed it, running faster still Nicholas did not hear his own cry nor feel that he was galloping nor see the borzois nor the ground over which he went he saw only the wolf who increasing her speed bounded on in the same direction alon the hollow The first to come into view was Milka with her black markings and powerful quarters gaining upon the wolf Nearer and nearer now she was ahead of it but the wolf turned its head to face her and instead of puttin on speed as she usually did Milka suddenly raised her tail and stiffened her forelegs

Ulyulyulyu shouted Nicholas

The reddish Lyubim rushed forward from behind Milka sprang impetuously at the wolf and seized it by its hindquarters but immediately jumped aside in terror The wolf crouched gnashed her teeth and again rose and bounded forward and followed at the distance of a couple of feet by all the borzois who did not get any closer to her

She ll get away! No t s impossible! thought Nicholas still shouting with a hoarse voice

Karáy *ulyulyu* he lo ed look

made it plain that Karáy had miscalculated Nicholas could already see not far in front of him the wood where the wolf

wo ld certa ly escape hould he rea h t. But com t ard h m he saw h unds d h ts ma gallop g alm t stra ht t th wolf The e w s t ll h pe A l yell w h y ung borz e h la d d n t kn w fr m an h ru l ed imp t u ly t th w lf B t

flew u ;
p ercm yelp f ll w th ts h d n th grou u ll el f m ga h n t s d

h ha g fr m is th
w lf

de ly th w lf a y
h m

head, th her ears l d b k (K y
g her by th th) w the h pp est mo me t f h l f W l h s h d h saddle bo h wa re dy to d m u t d tab th olf whe h dd nl thru t h head up from m g th t m f d s d the her f ep we th dge f th gull Sh l ked her teeth (K rá n l g h d h by
her

P

U l l tsm wa gall p from th other d ctos f w lf p th nd h borz mo pped th mal d Sh w a hemmed
h l d t tt d t w th U cl d h h m w ll d g u d the w lf cr l l h d p p r d mo t ea l m m n tl tl w lf cr h d b k d t rt g f rw d ga es erv m h bor k l ers lf d m ed t ward h ood h h w ld b saf
Al ead th beg g of h h D l hea g th ulyulyu g had rushed out

fr m the wood. He s w K ray se e the wolf and che ked h s h rse suppo the affa r to be o er But wl en h s w that the horsen en d d n t d smount and th t the w lf hook l er elf nd ran for saf ty D n l set h s chestnut gall p n n t at tl e lf but stra ght t ward th wood ju t K rdy had run to cut the n m l ff A result f tl s l e galloped up to th lf ju t when h h d be stopp d a s c h U cle borzo

a f t wer fla l
h l e ther s v nor h a d Dan el un

tryi t e her by th e t
t th dogs tl e hunters d to th lf her
rrified lf

D n el wh pereu
ch ngi g h po t n t h foot n th lf's ck. A st k wa thru t b tw en l e j s nd

ld w lf l e n a hy g a t
nd comp ed by the d s y lp at l took l er to the pl e wh e th y we ll t m et Tl e h d l d k lled two f the cub and the borz tl e The l u tsmen ss m bled w th th booty d th r t rnes nd ll cam t look t th w lf wh h th l e bro d browed head han g d wn nd th b t t n t ck b tween h j w ga d th g eat gl ssy yes t his crowd f d s d m n u nd gher Wh h wa t u h d h jerked h bo d legs nd look d w ldly yet mply t erybody Old Cou t R tó also ode up a l touched the w lf
Oh wh t a f rm dabl o d he A f rm d bl eh? h ked D l h a t d g nea
Yes u ex ll cy ed D l qu kly d ffi h cap
The u t emembered th w lf h h d l t l p d l encou ter th D f
Ah, b t y e cru ty f ll w f ndt sa d th co t

way the voices of the huntsmen approached receded and rose he realized what was happening at the copse He knew that young and old wolves were there that the hounds had separated into two packs that om

I

He made thousands of different conjectures as to where an I f om

addressed a prayer to God that the wolf should come his way He prayed with that passionate and shame faced feeling with which men pray at moments of great excitement arising from trivial causes What would it be to Thee to do this for me? he said to God I know Thou art great and that it is a sin to ask this of Thee but for God s sake do let the old wolf come my way and let Karáy spring at it—in sight of Uncle who is watching from over there—and seize it by the throat in a death grip! A thousand times during that half hour Rostóv cast eager and restless glances over the edge of the wood with the two scraggy oaks rising above the aspen undergrowth and the gully with its water worn side and Uncle s cap just visible above the bush on his right

No I shan t have such luck thought Rostóv yet what wouldn t it be worth! It is not to be! Everywhere at cards and in war I am always unlucky Memories of Austerlitz and of Dolokhov flashed rapidly and clearly through his mind Only once in my life to get an old wolf I want only that! tho

e

tc

at o note in the cries of the dogs

Again he looked to the right and saw something running toward him across the deserted field No it can t be! thought Rostóv taking a deep breath as a man does at the coming of something long hoped for The height of happiness was reached—and so simply without warning or noise or display that Rostóv could not believe his eyes and remained in doubt for over a second The wolf ran forward and jumped heavily over a gully that lay in her path She was an old animal with a gray back and big reddish belly She ran without hurry evidently feeling sure that no one saw her Rostóv holding his breath looked round at the borzois They stood or lay not seeing the wolf or understanding the situation Old Karáy had turned his head and was angrily searching for fleas baring his yellow teeth and snapping at his hind legs

Ulyulyulyu! whispered Rostóv pouting his lips The borzois jumped up jerking the rings of the leashes and pricking their ears Karáy finished scratching his hindquarters and cocking his ears got up with quivering tail from which tufts of matted hair hung down

Shall I loose them or not? Nicholas asked himself as the wolf approached

from the

iognomy

she had

eyes fixed upon her—and turning her head a little toward Rostóv she paused

Back or forward? Eh no matter forward the wolf seemed to say to herself and she moved forward without again looking round and with a quiet long easy yet resolute lope

Ulyulyu cried Nicholas in a voice not his own and of its own accord his good horse darted headlong downhill leaping over gullies to head off the wolf and the borzois passed it running faster still Nicholas did not hear his

I

I

h

with her black markings and powerful quarters gaining upon the wolf Nearer and nearer now she was ahead of it but the wolf turned it

sp

he

shouted Nicholas

The reddish Lyubím rushed forward from behind Milka sprang impetuously at the wolf and seized it by its hindquarters but immediately jumped aside in terror The wolf crouched gnashed her teeth and again rose and bounded forward followed at the distance of a couple of feet by all the borzois who did not get any closer to her

She ll get away No it s impossible! thought Nicholas still shouting with a hoarse voice

Karáy *ulyulyu* he shouted looking round for the old borzoi who was now his only hope Karáy with all the strength age had left him stretched himself to the utmost and watching the wolf galloped heavily aside to intercept it But the quickness of the wolf s lope and the borzoi s slower pace made it plain that Karáy had miscalculated Nicholas could already see not far in front of him the wood where the wolf

Book Eight 1811-12

*

CHAPTER I

After Prince A n ew's engagement t N tăsh P err w th ut ny pparent caus ud s be-

mport t p rso g qu tan w th all w th ts dull

great d l d cam m e n t ch w u the b h l ets le d g uch l f th t the Co ess Hélè th ght t n essary t peak sever ly t h m bo t. P rre f lt th t she was right, d to d comp mis g h w nt w y to M w

I Mos w oo as h t d h h ge h use h ch th f d d d I d g p n esses t ll l ed th ts rm t soon h

h g l rr d wher d w e d g th day l ur ly when he saw those old M sc l d es th Moscow b ll d th E g l h Cl b h f l h m lf t h me qu t ha l Mosc w he f lt t p e t h m arm d d rty as old d es g gow

Mos w soc y f m tl ld w men d wn to th ch ldr e ed P err l ke a lo g expec ed gu t whose pl ce was lw ys ready wa t g h m. F Moscow society P erre was the n cest, k ndest most ntellectual *merrie t,* h edless

e ry e.

Be efit perf rman es poor p ctur s statues b n olent societ es gyp y cho rs chools ub- scr pt n d ners p es F emas ns chu ch es d books—no ne d n thing m t w th h f two

n e a d n e o s ee t the Cl b w th ut

d e ry when he w not there

Whe fter b chel upp he ro w th h m ble d k ndly mile y ld g t the entr ties of the fest mp y to dr off som wh w th them, h uts of d l ght and tr umph o m g th y u g men At b lls he d ed f p rt er was n eded You g l d es m rried d u marr ed l ked h m be ca e w th ut m k g l t ny f th m he w equ lly m bl to all esp ci lly fters p per *Il st h m t In pas de e* they sa d of h m.

P err was o e of those t d g ntlemen n w t g of wh m ther wer hu d ds good hum dly d th d ys Mo cow

H w h rr f d h w uld h e been se en years b f when he first rr d f m b o d had he been t ld that th was n n ed f h m t k o pl anyth g th t his ruth d l g been sh ped t m lly p determ ed d th t wriggl as he m ght h w uld b wh t ll n h po t we e. He could not h e be l eved t! Had he n t t n t m l ged w th all his h rt to establ h epubl c n Russ

H is charming h ha sex.

of age that Prince Andrew was marrying without his father s consent and he could do the same but that she would never receive that *intriguer* as her daughter

Exploding at the word *intriguer* Nicholas raising his voice told his mother he had never expected her to try to force him to sell his feelings but if that were so he would say for the last time But he had no time to utter the decisive word which the expression of his face caused his mother to await w h — l

t

a with a pale and set face entered the room from the door at which he had be n l

et I

screamed so as to drown his voice a most

Mamma darling it s not at all so my poor sweet darling she said to l mo

I y and excitement of the conflict could not and would not give way

Nicholas I ll explain to you Go away! Listen Mamma darling said Natásha

Her words were incoherent but they attained he n

c
c

a
p
b
to
knowledge

Firmly resolved after putting his affairs in order in the regiment to retire from the army and return and marry Sónya Nicholas serious sorrowful and at variance with his parents but as it seemed to him passionately in love left at the beginning of January to rejoin his regiment

After Nicholas had gone things in the Ros

tóv l
and

Sc ppy at the separation from Nicholas and still more so on account of the hostile tone the countess could not help adopting toward her The count was more perturbed than ever by the condition of his affairs which called for some decisive action Their town house and estate near Moscow had inevitably to be sold and for this they had to go to Moscow But the countess health obliged them to delay their departure from day to day

Natásha who had borne the first period of separation from her betrothed lightly and even cheerfully now grew more agitated and impatient every day The thought that her best days, which she would have employed in loving him were being vainly wasted with no advantage to anyone tormented her incessantly His letters for the most part irritated her It hurt her to think that while she lived only in the thought of him he was living a real life seeing new places and new people that interested him. The more interesting his letters were the more vexed she felt Her letters to him far from giving her any comfort seemed to her a wearisome and artificial obligation She could not write because she could not conceive the possibility of expressing sincerely in a letter even a thousandth part of what she expressed by voice smile and glance She wrote to l m f rm l

t
t

es
jou y o Moscow any longer Natásha s trousseau had to be ordered and the house sold Moreover Prince Andrew was expected in Moscow where old Prince Bolkónski was spending the winter and Natásha felt sure he had already arrived

So the countess remained in the country and the count taking S nya and Natásha with him went to Moscow at the end of January

Book Eight 1811-12

*

CHAPTER I

After Prince A drew's engagem nt to Na tásha, P erre w tho t ny appare t cause ud d nly f lt t imposs bl to go n livin as be f re. Frmly conv ced he was f the truths revealed to him by hi benef ct nd happy as he had been n perfecti g his er man t hich he had devoted himself w th ch ard r —all th est f ch l f an hed fter the —— d ew nd N tásh d the

w l

great deal d came n mo n ui u the bachel r s, lead uch l f that th Co ess Hélè th ht t n cessary t peak sever ly t h m bo t. P err f lt tha she was right, d d ompromis g her went wa Mosc w

I Mosc w soo as h ered his h ge house wh ch th f ded nd f d pri esses ll f ed, w th ts rm u et u as soon s dri g th h th wn he saw th Ibert hri w h m rabl pers burn g be f re th gold co rs f th co s, th Kremlin Squa w th w u di tu bed b hicles h l gh d ers d ho ls f the S tsev Vrazhe k hose ld Mosco es who des red noth g b rried where d were d g th days l ur ly wh n h saw those ld Moscow l d es th Moscow balls, nd th En lish Cl b h f lt h ms lf hom quiet ha n. I Moscow h f lt pea e t home, arm d d rt as n ld dressing gown.

Mosc w soci t from th ld women d wn to h hildr n, ece ed P err l k a l g expect ed guest whose pla was lways ready wa ting h m. F r Moscow society P erre was the n cest, kindest, most tellectual merr est,

h eedless

e His

pen to

e ryo e

Benefit perf rmances, poor p tures, statues, ben l nt societ es, gypsy chours, schools sub cript n dinners prees, Freemaso church es, nd books—no n d n thing m t w th refusal from him, nd had t not been f two fr ends who had borrowed large ums from h m nd t k n him unde their protect n he w uld ha g en e erythi g way There wa n er d er r so ree t the Club w thout

on h

began. Wh n ther were quarrels his ki ully sm le d w ll t med jests reconciled the anta onists. The Maso d ers were dull nd d eary when h was not there.

Wh n after bach l r suppe he ros w th

he d ed I partner was needed. Young l d es, m rried and unmarried, liked him be caus w th ut m k g lo e t any f them he wa equally m bl to all especi lly fter up per *Il t h rma t l n a pas de ex* " they sa d f him.

Pierr wa ne of those tired gentlemen

ed good

l g been shaped, ernally pred termined, d h t wriggle as h mi ht, h *would be* hat all n hi pos t were. H *could no have be* l eved t Had he n t *t oo time looked* with all his heart to *establish rep blic* in Russi

H *as charming* h *has no sex.*

of age that Prince Andrew was marrying without his father s consent and he could do the same but that she would never receive that *intriguer* as her daughter

Exploding at the word *intriguer* Nicholas raising his voice told his mother he had never expected her to try to force him to sell his feelings but if that were so he would say for the last time But he had no time to utter the decisive word which the expression of his face caused his mother to await with terror and which would perhaps have forever remained a cruel memory to them both He had not time to say it for Natásha with a pale and set face entered the room from the door at which she had been listening

Nicholas you are talking nonsense! Be quiet be quiet be quiet I tell you! she almost screamed so as to drown his voice

Mamma darling it s not at all so my poor sweet darling she said to her mother who conscious that they had been on the brink of a rupture gazed at her son with terror but in the obstinacy and excitement of the conflict could not and would not give way

Nicholas I ll explain to you Go away! Listen Mamma darling said Natásha

Her words were incoherent but they attained th

c
c ead and left the room
N
anc
pro
be t
to t
knowledge

Firmly resolved after putting his affairs in order in the regiment to retire from the army and re
re
as
th beginning of January to rejoin his regiment

After Nicholas had gone things in the Ros

tov
and

Sc appy at the separation from Nicholas and still more so on account of the hostile tone the countess could not help adopting toward her The count was more perturbed than ever by the condition of his affairs which called for some decisive action Their town house and estate near Moscow had inevitably to be sold and for this they had to go to Moscow But the countess health obliged them to delay their departure from day to day

Natásha who had borne the first period of separation from her betrothed lightly and even cheerfully now grew more agitated and impatien
wh
we
an
for most part irritated her It hurt her to think that while she lived only in the thought of him he was living a real life seeing new places and new people that interested him. The more interesting his letters were th

could not write, because she could not conceive the possibility of expressing sincerely in a letter even a thousandth part of what she expressed by voice smile and glance She wrote to him formal monotonous and dry letters to which she attached no importance herself and in the rough copies of which the countess corrected her mistakes in spelling

There was still no improvement in the countess health but it was impossible to defer the journey to Moscow any longer Natásha s trousseau had to be ordered and the house sold. Moreover Prince Andrew was expected in Moscow where old Prince Bolkónski was spending the winter and Natásha felt sure he had already arrived

the
we

Book Eight 1811-12

*

CHAPTER I

After Prince A d ew's gagement to N tásha P erre w th ut ny ppare t cause sud d ly f lt t imposs bl t go liv g as be f re. F rmly co ced as he was f the truths

e gageme t f Andrew d N tásha d th death f Joseph Alexée ch, th ew f which eached him lmost t th sam t m O ly the k le f l f emai ed his h use a brillia t wif wh n w joyed the f rs f ery importa t perso e cqua ta w th all P tersb rg, d h c urt rs e w th ts dull formal t es. A d th l f dde ly seemed to P err expectedly loathsome H eased keep in d ry vo ded the comp y f th Broth ers, bega go t th Cl b ga drank a great d al d came o m e n t h w th th bach l ets, lead ng ch l f that the Co ess Hélè th ght t ecessary t peak se ly h m bo t t. P err f lt that sh was right, d t d mpromis g her w nt wa t Moscow

I Moscow as soo as h tered h h ge house wh ch th faded d fad pri cesses still l ed, th ts rm u t n as soon as, dr hro h th t wn he saw th Ibera hri w h um rabl tapers burn g be f e th gold co ers f th ns, th Kremlin Squa w h t w d bed by eh cles th l gh d ers d h ls of th S tsev Vra bek those ld Mosco es who des red no hing l rr ed owhere d wer e d g

the n cest, k dest, ... and most ... genial nob ... of the ... purse was a ... because ... everyone.

Benefit perf ... bene ... scrip ... es, and books—no ... refusal from h ... friends who had b ... him and taken him under ... would ha ... ever d ... him. A soo as he ... sofa fter two bottles of ... rounded, and talking ... began. When there were ... sm l a d well-timed ... n ts. Th Masonic d ... dreary when he was not ...

Wh after a bachelor ... h miab e and kind ... entreaties of the ... somewhere th ... tri mph arose ... h da ed if ... dies m rried and ... cause w tho t making ... was equally amiab e ... per H t harme ... sa d f him.

P erre was ne of ... waiti g f whom ... humo edly endir ...

H w horrified he ... years before when he ... had h been told ... him t seek or pass ... long been hoped, ... and that ... all n h position ... lieved t Had he ... all his heart to ...

H is chang ...

Book Nine · 1812

*

CHAPTER I

From the close of the year 1811 an intensified arming and concentrating of the forces of Western Furope began and in 181 these forces—*millions of men reckoning those transporting* and feeding the army—moved from the west eastwards to the Russian frontier to

sian frontier and war began that is an event took place opposed to human reason and to human nature Millions of men perpetrated against one another such innumerable crimes *frauds treacheries thefts forgeries issues of false money burglaries incendiarisms* and murders as in whole centuries are not recorded in the annals of all the law courts of the world but which those who committed them did not at the time regard as being crimes

What produced this extraordinary occurrence? What were its causes? The historians tell us with naive assurance that its causes were the wrongs *inflicted on the Duke of Oldenburg the nonobservance of the Continental* System the ambition of Napoleon the firmness of Alexander the mistakes of the diplomatists and so on

Consequently it would only have been necessary for Metternich Rumyánstev or Talleyrand between a levee and an evening party to have taken proper pains and *written a more* adroit note or *for Napoleon to have written to Alexander* My respected Brother I consent *to* restore the duchy to the Duke of Oldenburg —and there would have been no war

We can understand that the matter seemed like that to contemporaries It naturally seemed to Napoleon that the war was caused by Eng ... *es (as in fact he said on the island*

ar was Napoleon s amb ...

Oldenburg that the cause of the war was the violence done to him to businessmen that the cause of the war was the Continental System which was ruining Europe to the generals and old soldiers that the chief reason for the war was the necessity of giving them employment *to the legitimists of that day that it was the need of re establishing les bons principes* and to the diplomatists of that time that it all resulted from the fact that the alliance be ... en ... d ... m

No 178 It is natural that these and a co t less and infinite quantity of other reasons the number depending on the endless diversity of points of view presented themselves *to the men of that day but to us to posterity* who *view the thing that happened* in all its magnitude and perceive its plain and terrible meaning these causes seem insufficient To us it is incomprehensible that millions of Christian ... r either be ... er ... te

or *the Duke of Oldenburg* wronged We n *not grasp what connection such circumstances* have with the actual fact of slaughter and violence why because the Duke was wronged thousands of men from the other side of Europe killed and ruined the people of Smolénsk and Moscow and were killed by them

To us their descendants who are not historians and are not carried away by the *process of research and can therefore regard the event* with unclouded common sense an incalculable number of causes present themselves The deeper we delve in search of these causes the more of them we find and each separate cause or whole series of causes appears to us equally *valid in itself and equally f lse by its insignificance compared to the magnitude of the* events and by its impotence— *part from the* cooperation of all the other coincident causes —to occasion the event To us the wish or objection of this or that French corporal to serve a second term appears as much a cause as Na

poleo refusal to w thdraw h troop bey d Le\ tu d to rest the duch of Olden burg I had he t wished to serv nd had a seco d, third d thousa dth corporal and pri ate also r fused, there w uld ha e been so ma y less men n N poleon s army nd t, a could t ha occurred.

H d N poleo t t k ffe t th de ma d that he h ld w thdraw beyo d the V tula a d t dered his troop to d ance there ould ha bee war but h d ll his serva ts bj cted t serv g a co d term then also there co ld ha bee war N could there ha been war h d there been Engl h trigues d o D k f Olden burg, d had Alexander n t felt nsulted d had ther t bee tocrat c go rnment in Russ r Revol t Fra e and a subseq t d tat rsh p d Empir o ll the things that p od ced th Fre h R ol tion d so W th t each of these causes n th m uld ha happe ed So all th causes— my iads f causes—c ded t bri g t bout. A d so there as o cause fo that occur rence b t t had to occur becaus t h d to M ll ns of m ci g the h m n feel ings and easo h d t go f m west to ea t to slay their f ll ws, j t som ntu es prev ou ly h des f m n had me from the east to th est, l y th f ll w

Th tio f N poleo d Alexa d on bose rd h —
as
l

cum ces u ended

d by h t mber of d tse from

es
es
u m e w try t expl ch events n h t ry e so bly th mo e u ea so ble d omp he bl d they b come to

Ea h ma l es f h mself us g his free- dom t t h perso l ms d feels with h s wh le being that he can n w do or b t n from d g th s o th t act o but as soon he has don t, that ct on performed t a ce t n m m nt n t m becomes rrevocable nd bel gs to h t ry n wh ch t has not a f ee but a predest ed s n fica ce.

Th re e two des to th l fe of e ery m n his nd dual l f h h is th mo e free th mo e bstract ts t ests nd h elem ntal hi e l fe n wh ch he ne tably obeys l ws la d d wn fo him.

M l es co ciously f r hims lf b t is n u consc ous trument th tta n t of th h tor c, u rsal ms of h ma ty A

h gh m n t nd on the soci l l dde the mo peopl he c ected w th d th m e pow he ha o er others the m e ev dent tl e p edest n t on d e tab l ty of h e ry act on

"The ki s heart is in th h ds of the Lo d.

A k is h t ry l e

H t ry that th u con c us ge ral h l fe f m k d u es every mom nt of th l f f k gs tool f ts o n purpo es

Th gh N poleon t th t time 8 was m ced th n e er that t depe ded on h m, *er (pas) l de p pl* — Ale der p essed t n tl e l t letter he wrot h m—he had ne bee so much th grip f e tabl l w wh ch com p ll d h m wh le tl k g that he w ct o h own l t to perf rm f th h l f—th t is t say f h t ry— h t had to be pe f rmed

Th peopl of th wes m ed
sl
d

n
th
b g e m me t f t oops to Pruss —u dertake (s it seem d t N po- leo) ly f th p rpose f ecu rmed pea the F ch Emp l e d h b t f w c c d w th his peopl cl t s ll eme by the gra deu f the preparat d th p d t e th se p parat d th n ed f bt g d a t ges t compensat f that exp d tur th catu g l rs he ed D es-

"T hed (to hed) th blood f his peo- ples.

Book Nine · 1812

*

CHAPTER I

FROM THE CLOSE of the year 1811 an intensified arming and concentrating of the forces of Western Europe began and in 1812 these forces—millions of men reckoning those transporting and feeding the army—moved from the west eastwards to the Russian frontier towards which since 1811 Russian forces had been similarly drawn On the twelfth of June 1812 the forces of Western Europe crossed the Russian frontier and war began that is an event took place opposed to human reason and to human nature Millions of men perpetrated against one another such innumerable crimes frauds treacheries thefts forgeries issues of false money burglaries incendiarisms and murders as in whole centuries are not recorded in the annals of all the law courts of the world but which those who committed them did not at the time regard as being crimes

What produced this extraordinary occurrence? What were its causes? The historians tell us with naive assurance that its causes were the wrongs inflicted on the Duke of Oldenburg the nonobservance of the Continental System the ambition of Napoleon the firmness of Alexander the mistakes of the diplomatists and so on

Consequently it would only have been necessary for Metternich Rumyántsev or Talleyrand between a levee and an evening party to have taken proper pains and written a more adroit note or for Napoleon to have written to Alexander My respected Brother I consent to restore the duchy to the Duke of Oldenburg —and there would have been no war

We can understand that the matter seemed like that to contemporaries It naturally seemed to Napoleon that the war was caused by England as he said at St Helena that the war was caused by England's intrigues; it naturally seemed to members of the English Parliament that the cause of the war was Napoleon's ambition; to the Duke of

Oldenburg that the cause of the war was the violence done to him to businessmen that the cause of the war was the Continental System which was ruining Europe to the generals and old soldiers that the chief reason for the war was the necessity of giving them employment to the legitimists of that day that it was the need of re-establishing *les bons principes* and to the diplomatists of that time that it all resulted from the fact that the alliance between Russia and Austria in 1809 had not been sufficiently well concealed from Napoleon and from the awkward wording of Memorandum No 178 It is natural that these and a countless and infinite quantity of other reasons the number depending on the endless diversity of points of view presented themselves to the men of that day but to us to posterity who view the thing that happened in all its magnitude and perceive its plain and terrible meaning these causes seem insufficient To us it is incomprehensible that millions of Christian men killed and tortured each other either because Napoleon was ambitious or Alexander was firm or because England's policy was astute or the Duke of Oldenburg wronged We cannot grasp what connection such circumstances have with the actual fact of slaughter and violence why because the Duke was wronged thousands of men from the other side of Europe killed and ruined the people of Smolénsk and Moscow and were killed by them

To us their descendants who are not historians and are not carried away by the process of research and can therefore regard the event with unclouded common sense an incalculable number of causes present themselves. The deeper we delve in search of these causes the more of them we find and each separate cause or whole series of causes appears to us equally valid in itself and equally false by its insignificance compared to the magnitude of the events and by its impotence—apart from the cooperation of all the other coincident causes —to occasion the event To us the wish or objection of this or that French corporal to serve a second term appears as much a cause as Na

po eo s refusal to withdraw l s tr p bey d t. V tul d to restor the d chy f Old n burg f r had h ot wish d to serve a d had a seco d th d d th s d th corporal d p vate lso r f ed there w ld h been so m y les me n N p leons rmy a d th ar uld t h e ccurred

H d N poleo t t ke ff e t the demand that he sh ld w thdraw bey d the V tula, d t dered h troop to d n there w ld h e b n w but had ll his sergea ts obj ted t ers g a ec d term th also the ld h b en n w N could the ha bee wa h d th b en n Engl h trigues d n D ke of Old burg, d had Al der t f lt ns lted nd had there t been n a tocrat go ernment in Russ Rev l t n Fra d a bseq t d ctators l p d Emp ll th th gs that p od ed the F e ch Re lut n d so W th t e h of these ca es oth n ld h e h ppe ed. So ll thes causes—myriads f causes—co cided t brin t bout. A d so there was o o e cause f that occur rence b t t had t occur because t h d t. M ll f men ci g th ir human feel ings and reaso had go f m west t ea to lay th f llow j t as som centur es previ usly ho des f m had come from the east to th est, l y their fellows.

Th ctio f N poleon d Alexa der on hose ords th ev t seemed to ha g, wer l tl t tary as th ct ns of an soldier ho was dra n t the campa gn by l or by conscriptio Th ould not be otherw se, for n rder that th w ll of N poleo nd Alex der (whom the event seemed to depend) hould be carried out, th concurrence of innumerabl circumstances wa needed w thout y f which the event ould not ha e tak p e. I as necessary that millions of men hose hands la th eal power—th soldiers ho fired, transported provisions and guns —should consent carry out the will of these weak indi iduals, nd should ha been induced do so by infinite umber of diverse d omp ex causes.

W a for ed to fall back on fatalism as an ex lanation of irrational events (that is to say ever the reasona eness of which w do not derstand). The more w try explain such events h ever reasona the more unreasona and incomprehens e d they become to us.

Each ma lives for himself, using his free dom his personal aims, and feels with l wh le be ng th t he c n now do or bstain f m do ng th or that act n but as soo he has d ne t, that t on perform d t a ce t n moment n t me becomes rre ocable nd belo gs to h story n wl ch t h not a f ee but p edest ed gn fican e

There ar tw des t the l f of e ery man h s nd dual life h ch is the more f e tl e mo b tract its terests nd h element l hi l fe n wh ch he ne tably obeys l ws l d d wn for h m.

M n l c n usly f h m elf but is n

h h m n sta ds on th soc l l dde the m peopl he o nected w th d the m pow he has o er others the m es dent tl p edest n t on and e tab l ty of his ery ct

"The k g heart is the h ds of the Lord.

A k g hi tory l e

H tory that th u conscious general h e l fe f m k d, u es ery moment of th l l f k gs s tool f ts ow p rposes

Tho gh N poleon t that time in 8 2 was mo co nced tha er that t depe ded on him, *er er (e p er) le de e peupl* —as Alexa der expres ed t tl e l t letter he wrote h m—he h d ne er bee so much in th grip f ev table la s wh ch compelled h m, wh le tl nk g that he w t g on his own l t n t perf rm f the h e l fe—that is to say f hist ry— hatever had to be perf rmed.

The peopl of the west m ed e tward t la their f ll w men d by th law of co cidence thousa ds of m t ca es fitted n nd co-ordinated to prod e that mo em t a d war ep oa hes f the bserva e of the Cont nental S tem, the D ke of Olde burg wro gs, th mo ement f troop to Prus ia—undertake (as t seemed t N poleon) o l fo the p rpose of ecu n armed pea e, the F ench Emper l e d ha f war co d g w th his peopl clinations, allurement by the gra deur of th preparations, d the expe ditu tl ose preparatio d the eed f obta g ad vantages to compensat f that exp d ture t intoxicati g bo rs he rece ed D es

"T shed (or not to shed) th blood f his peo-

Bala hev Arakchéev looked t the Emperor from der his brow d ffi g w th h ed nose st pped f rwa d from the cro d f ex pecti g the Emp ro to ddress him (Boris u derstood that Arakchée en ed Bala hē d as d plea ed that dently mportant ew had re hed the Empero therw se than thro gh h mself.)

B t the Emp o a d B lasl p ssed ut to the ill m ted gard n w th ut n ticing

wa go g thro gh th figures f the mazurk h wa w rr ed by the q est f h t ne s B lashe h d brο ght and h he uld fi d t t bef re others.

I th figu e h ch he h d t choo e tw l dies h h p ed to Hélè e th t he me nt to choose Co

e ee g Bal h d the Empe re urn to th er d he tood st ll They erem g t ard th doo Bo i fl tte g a f he h d t had t m to w thdraw espe t f lly p ess d clos to th doorpo t w th bow d head.

The Emp ror th th g t t n f one wh h b perso lly aff nted was fin sh g th these w ds

"T enter Russ w th t d cl g wa ! I ll t m k p c I g s s gl arm d

p

wh h l h d p es ed h tho ghts, b t d pleased that Bo i had o er heard t.

Let kn w f t! tl e Empero dded th a f

Borí derstood th t th was m t f r h m d l h s eyes l ghtly bowed h s head Tl Emper e ter d th b ll oom nd rema ed the e bo t other h lf h u

Bo wa thus the first t le rn the ew th t the F l rmy l d cr ed th N em d, tha k t th w bl t h w certa n mporta t perso ges hat m h tl t w led from tl ers wa us lly k w to h m d by thus m ns h rose h gh r n the est mation

The pected s f th Fre l ha crossed th N em was p rt cul ly tartl g f er m th f f lf lled expecta d

at b ll On first rece ng the news under the fl ence f d g t on d esentment tl e Emp h d fou d phrase th t ple ed l m fully e pres ed l feel ngs and ha nce be come f m us On t rn o home t two o cl ck that n ght he sent fo h s secretary Sh hkó d told h m to write n ord r to the tr ps nd a resc pt t F eld Mar h l P nce S ltykó n wh ch he n ted n tl e words bein serted th t he would not make pea e so l as a s le armed F enchm n re m ined Russ n so l

N t d y the foll w ng letter was sent to Napoleon

M ns m f è

Yest d y I learned th t, desp t th l y lty th wh ch I h k pt my gagements with Y M jes y) troop h rossed the R s fro er d I h this m m t rece ed from P t rsb rg

his p ports Th so h ch th D l Bassa based his fusal to d l th t h m w ld h ed m

l as l t h g occ rred l d t d g b tween w l be possibl I th co rary case Y M jesty I l ll ee m self f rced t pel ta k th t n h g my p t h pro ked. I t ll d p d n Y M jes y r p rv h m y f m th cal m ty f th I m c.

(gned) ALEXA DER

CHAPTER IV

AT TI O the m rn o f th f rt enth of Ju e the Emp o h g s t f r B lasl

p pe t d to h m the w d tl t he w uld t m k pe e s l g s gle rmed e emy r m ed Ru so l d

ast ttempt t r concil

ly as possible and another that a Saxon should be shot on whom a letter containing information about the orders to the French army had been found Napoleon also gave instructions that the Polish colonel who had needlessly plunged into the river should be enrolled in the *Legion d honneur* of which Napoleon was himself the head

Quos vult perdere dementat

CHAPTER III

The Emperor of Russia had meanwhile been in Vilna for more than a month reviewing troops and holding maneuvers Nothing was ready for the war that everyone expected and to prepare for which the Emperor had come from Petersburg There was no general plan of action The vacillation between the various plans that were proposed had even increased after the Emperor had been at headquarters for a month Each of the three armies had its own commander in chief but there was no supreme commander of all the forces and the Emperor did not assume that responsibility himself

The longer the Emperor remained in Vilna the less did everybody—tired of waiting—prepare for the war All the efforts of those who surrounded the sovereign seemed directed merely to making him spend his time pleasantly and forget that war was impending

– –

ceived The Emperor gave his consent The aides de camp collected money by subscription The lady who was thought to be most pleasing to the Emperor was invited to act as hostess Count Bennigsen being a landowner in the Vilna province offered his country house for the fete and the thirteenth of June was fixed for a ball dinner regatta and fireworks at Zakret Count Bennigsen s country seat

The very day that Napoleon issued the order to cross the Niemen and his vanguard driving off the Cossacks crossed the Russian frontier Alexander spent the evening at the entertainment given by his aides de camp at *Bennigsen s country house*

It was a gay and brilliant fete Connoisseurs of such matters declared that rarely had so many beautiful women been assembled in one place Countess Bezukhova was present among other Russian ladies who had followed the sovereign from Petersburg to Vilna and eclipsed the refined Polish ladies by her massive so-called Russian type of beauty The Emperor noticed her and honored her with a dance

Boris Drubetskóy having left his wife in Moscow and being for the present *en garçon* (as he phrased it) was also there and though not an aide de camp had subscribed a large sum toward the expenses Boris was now a rich man who had risen to high honors and no

having seen her for a long time and did not recall the past but as Hélène was enjoying the favors of a very important personage and Boris had only recently married they met as good friends of long standing

At midnight dancing was still going on Hélène not having a suitable partner herself

merged from a dark gold em ... gown talked to her of old acquaintances and at the same time unaware of it himself and unnoticed by others never for an instant ceased to observe the Emperor who was in the same room The Emperor was not dancing he stood in the doorway stopping now one pair and now another with gracious words which he alone knew how to utter

As the mazurka began Boris saw that Adjutant General Balashev one of those in closest attendance on the Emperor went up to him and contrary to court etiquette stood near him while he was talking to a Polish lady Having finished speaking to her the Emperor looked inquiringly at Balashev and evidently understanding that he only acted thus because there were important reasons for so doing nodded slightly to the lady and turned to him Hardly had Balashev begun to speak before a look of amazement appeared on the Emperor s face He took Balashev by the arm and crossed the room with him unconsciously clearing a path seven yards wide as the people on both sides made way for him Boris noticed Arakchéev s excited face when the sovereign went out with

Those whom (God) ... to destroy ... m ...

B lash Arakchéev looked at the Emp ror

derstood th t Arakchéev en ed Balashē d was d pleased th t e d tly impo t nt ews h d re h d the Empero oth rw se th n thro h him lf)

B t th Empero a d B l he pa sed out to th ll min ted garden w th t t cing Arakchéev h h ld g h s swo d a d gl c ing rathf lly ar d f llow d s me tw ty p es beh d them

All th t me B ri wa go g thr gh the figu es of the m z k he w w rr ed by the q est f wh t ew B l sh h d bro ght and h w he ld fi d t t b fo others I th figu m wh h he h d t choose two l d he l pe ed t Hélène th t l m nt

den h e e g Bal h a d th Emp return g to the er d he stood t ll They em g t w d the doo B flutt ri g as f he h d tl d t me t w thdraw e pe t f lly p ess d clos to the doorpost w th bowed h d

The Emp w th th g t t n of e wl h s bee perso lly ffr t d w fi h g th the d

"T t r R w tl t d cl g w l l

p eas e t tte these w d H w s t fied w th th f rm wh h h h d exp es ed h tho ghts b t d ple ed that B ri had o er h rd t

Let k w f tl th Empero dded th a f w

ed there bo t noth h lf h u Bo f th th first t l th ew th t th F l rmy h d cr ed the N em

Tl e pected w f the F l h g crossed th N me wa p rticul rly tartl g lter a m tl f f lfilled expect t ns d t a ball On first rece v g the news under the i fluence of nd gn t n nd esentment the Empe l ad f u d a phra e that ple ed l m fully exp e ed h s fe l ngs and h nce be come f mous O return ng l ome at two lock th t n ght he ent f r his secret ry Sh hkó and told h m to write n o der to the troop d a re cript t F eld M r hal P e S ltykó n wh ch l e in sted on the wo ds b g nserted th t he would n t m ke pe e so lon as a s ngl armed F enchman re m n d on Russ n s l

Ne t d y th follow ng letter was sent to Napoleon

M m f è

Yes d y I l rmed th t desp t th l yalty th wh ch I h k pt my engagements w th Y M jesty y t p h os ed the R s an fro t d I h this m m t ec ed f m P t rsl g t wh h Co t La t n f rm m f th ggres tl t Y M jesty h co dered y rs lf t be t t f w w th m f m th t m P k ák ked f h p ssp ts Th so n wh h th D d B san based h fusal to del th m h m w ld ev h led m t ppos tl t tl t d t ll erv p t t f ggressi I f t th mb ss l h h m lf has decl ed th d t m k th t l m d d

troop fr m Russ rrit ry I w ll ega d wh t h p ss d th g oc rred l d d l tu w

(gn d) ALEXA

CHAPTER IV

AT TI O the m n f th f tee th f J e the Emp h g t f B l h

w uld t m ke p e so l g s gl rm d emy em ed o Ru a l d told h m t t n m t th e w d to N pole n Alex d d d n t t them n h l tt to N poleo b ca w th his ch racte t t ct he f lt t w ld b j d ci us t use them t mom t wh l t ttempt t c l

moment considered themselves happy

That evening between issuing one order that the forged Russian paper money prepared for use in Russia should be delivered as quickly as possible and another that a Saxon should be shot on whom a letter containing information about the orders to the French army had been found Napoleon also gave instructions that the Polish colonel who had needlessly plunged into the river should be enrolled in the *Legion d honneur* of which Napoleon was himself the head

Quos vult perdere dementat

CHAPTER III

THE EMPEROR OF RUSSIA had meanwhile been in Vilna for more than a month reviewing troops and holding maneuvers Nothing was ready for the war that everyone expected and to prepare for which the Emperor had come from Petersburg There was no general plan of action The vacillation between the various plans that were proposed had even increased after the Emperor had been at headquarters for a month Each of the three armies had its own commander in chief but there was no supreme commander of all the forces and the Emperor did not assume that responsibility himself

The longer the Emperor remained in Vilna the less did everybody—tired of waiting—prepare for the war All the efforts of those who surrounded the sovereign seemed directed merely to making him spend his time pleasantly and forget that war was impending

In June after many balls and fetes given by the Polish magnates by the courtiers and by the Emperor himself it occurred to one of the Polish aides de camp in attendance that a dinner and ball should be given for the Emperor by his aides de camp This idea was eagerly received The Emperor gave his consent The aides de camp collected money by subscription The lady who was thought to be most pleasing to the Emperor was invited to act as hostess Count Bennigsen being a landowner in the Vilna province offered his country house for the fete and the thirteenth of June was fixed for a ball dinner regatta and fireworks at Zakret Count Bennigsen s country seat

The very day that Napoleon issued the order to cross the Niemen and his vanguard driving off the Cossacks crossed the Russian frontier Alexander spent the evening at the entertainment given by his aides de camp at Bennigsen s country house

It was a gay and brilliant fete Connoisseurs of such matters declared that rarely had so many beautiful women been assembled in one place Countess Bezukhova was present among other Russian ladies who had followed the sovereign from Petersburg to Vilna and eclipsed the refined Polish ladies by her massive so-called Russian type of beauty The Emperor noticed her and honored her with a dance

Boris Drubetskoy having left his wife in Moscow and being for the present *en garçon* (as he phrased it) was also there and though not an aide de camp had subscribed a large sum toward the expenses Boris was now a rich man who had risen to high honors and no longer sought patronage but stood on an equal footing with the highest of those of his own age He was meeting Hélène in Vilna after not having seen her for a long time and did not recall the past but as Hélène was enjoying the favors of a very important personage and Boris had only recently married they met as good friends of long standing

At midnight dancing was still going on Hélène not having a suitable partner herself offered to dance the mazurka with Boris They were the third couple Boris coolly looking at Hélène s dazzling bare shoulders which emerged from a dark gold embroidered gauze gown talked to her of old acquaintances and at the same time unaware of it himself and unnoticed by others never for an instant ceased to observe the Emperor who was in the same room The Emperor was not dancing he stood in the doorway stopping now one pair and now another with gracious words which he alone knew how to utter

As the mazurka began Boris saw that Adjutant General Balashëv one of those in closest attendance on the Emperor went up to him and contrary to court etiquette stood near him while he was talking to a Polish lady Having finished speaking to her the Emperor looked inquiringly at Balashëv and evidently understanding that he only acted thus because there were important reasons for so doing nodded slightly to the lady and turned to him Hardly had Balashëv begun to speak before a look of amazement appeared on the Emperor s face He took Balashëv by the arm and crossed the room with him unconsciously clearing a path seven yards wide as the people on both sides made way for him Boris noticed Arakchéev s excited face when the sovereign went out with

Those whom (God) wishes to destroy He drives mad

Baron Arakchéev looked at the Emperor from under his brow and, sniffing with his red nose, stepped forward from the crowd as if expecting the Emperor to address him. (Boris understood that Arakchéev envied Balashev and was displeased that evidently important news had reached the Emperor otherwise than through himself.)

But the Emperor and Balashev passed out into the illuminated garden without noticing Arakchéev who, holding his sword and glancing wrathfully around, followed some twenty paces behind them.

All the time Boris was going through the figures of the mazurka, he was worried by the question of what news Balashev had brought and how he could find it out before others.

In the figure in which he had to choose two ladies, he whispered to Hélène that he meant to choose Countess Potocka who, he thought, had gone out onto the veranda, and glided over the parquet to the door opening into the garden, where, seeing Balashev and the Emperor returning to the veranda, he stood still. They were moving toward the door. Boris, fluttering as if he had not had time to withdraw, respectfully pressed close to the doorpost with bowed head.

The Emperor, with the agitation of one who has been personally affronted, was finishing with these words:

"To enter Russia without declaring war! I will not make peace as long as a single armed enemy remains in my country!"

It seemed to Boris that it gave the Emperor pleasure to utter these words. He was satisfied with the form in which he had expressed his thoughts, but displeased that Boris had overheard it.

"Let no one know of it!" the Emperor added with a frown.

Boris understood that this was meant for him and, closing his eyes, slightly bowed his head. The Emperor re-entered the ballroom and remained there about another half hour.

Boris was thus the first to learn the news that the French army had crossed the Niemen and, thanks to this, was able to show certain important personages that much that was concealed from others was usually known to him, and by this means he rose higher in their estimation.

The unexpected news of the French having crossed the Niemen was particularly startling after a month of unfulfilled expectations and at a ball. On first receiving the news, under the influence of indignation and resentment the Emperor had found a phrase that pleased him, fully expressed his feelings, and has since become famous. On returning home at two o'clock that night he sent for his secretary Shishkóv and told him to write an order to the troops and a rescript to Field Marshal Prince Saltykóv, in which he insisted on the words being inserted that he would not make peace so long as a single armed Frenchman remained on Russian soil.

Next day the following letter was sent to Napoleon:

Monsieur mon frère,

Yesterday I learned that, despite the loyalty with which I have kept my engagements with Your Majesty, your troops have crossed the Russian frontier, and I have this moment received from Petersburg a note, in which Count Lauriston informs me, as a reason for this aggression, that Your Majesty has considered yourself to be in a state of war with me from the time Prince Kurakin asked for his passports. The reasons on which the Duc de Bassano based his refusal to deliver them to him would never have led me to suppose that that incident could serve as a pretext for aggression. In fact, the ambassador, as he himself has declared, was never authorized to make that demand, and as soon as I was informed of it I let him know how much I disapproved of it and ordered him to remain at his post. If Your Majesty does not intend to shed the blood of our peoples for such a misunderstanding, and consents to withdraw your troops from Russian territory, I will regard what has passed as not having occurred and an understanding between us will be possible. In the contrary case, Your Majesty, I shall see myself forced to repel an attack that nothing on my part has provoked. It still depends on Your Majesty to preserve humanity from the calamity of another war.

I am, etc.,

(signed) ALEXANDER

CHAPTER IV

AT TWO in the morning of the fourteenth of June the Emperor, having sent for Balashev and read him his letter to Napoleon, ordered him to take it and hand it personally to the French Emperor. When dispatching Balashev the Emperor repeated to him the words that he would not make peace so long as a single armed enemy remained on Russian soil and told him to transmit those words to Napoleon. Alexander did not insert them in his letter to Napoleon because with his characteristic tact he felt it would be injudicious to use them at a moment when a last attempt at reconcilia-

moment considered themselves happy

That evening between issuing one order that the forged Russian paper money prepared for use in Russia should be delivered as quickly as possible and another that a Saxon should be shot on whom a letter containing information about the orders to the French army had been found Napoleon also gave instructions that the Polish colonel who had needlessly plunged into the river should be enrolled in the *Legion d honneur* of which Napoleon was himself the head

Quos vult perdere dementat

CHAPTER III

THE EMPEROR OF RUSSIA had meanwhile been in Vilna for more than a month reviewing troops and holding maneuvers Nothing was ready for the war that everyone expected and to prepare for which the Emperor had come from Petersburg There was no general plan of action The vacillation between the various plans that were proposed had even increased after the Emperor had been at headquarters for a month Each of the three armies had its own commander in chief but there was no supreme commander of all the forces and the Emperor did not assume that responsibility himself

The longer the Emperor remained in Vilna the less did everybody—tired of waiting—prepare for the war All the efforts of those who surrounded the sovereign seemed directed merely to making him spend his time pleasantly and forget that war was impending

In June after many balls and fetes given by the Polish magnates by the courtiers and by the Emperor himself it occurred to one of the Polish aides-de camp in attendance that a dinner and ball should be given for the Emperor by his aides de camp This idea was eagerly received The Emperor gave his consent The aides de camp collected money by subscription The lady who was thought to be most pleasing to the Emperor was invited to act as hostess Count Bennigsen being a landowner in the Vilna province offered his country house for the fete and the thirteenth of June was fixed for a ball dinner regatta and fireworks at Zakret Count Bennigsen s country seat

The very day that Napoleon issued the order to cross the Niemen and his vanguard driving off the Cossacks crossed the Russian frontier Alexander spent the evening at the entertainment given by his aides de camp at Bennigsen s country house

It was a gay and brilliant fete Connoisseurs of such matters declared that rarely had so many beautiful women been assembl[illegible] place Co[illegible] other R[illegible] ereign [illegible] the ref[illegible] called Russian type of beauty [illegible]ss ve so- noticed her and honored her with a dance

Boris Drubetskoy having left his wife in Moscow and being for the present *en garçon* (as he phrased it) was also there and though not an aide de camp had subscribed a large sum toward the expenses Boris was now a rich man who had risen to high honors and no longer sought patronage but stood on an equal footing with the highest of those of his own age He was meeting Hélène in Vilna after not having seen her for a long time and did not recall the past but as Hélène was enjoying the favors of a very important personage and Boris had only recently married they met as good friends of long standing

At midnight dancing was still going on Hélène not having a su[illegible] off [illegible] shoulders which emerged from a dark gold embroidered gauze gown talked to her of old acquaintances and at the same time unaware of it himself and unnoticed by others never for an instant ceased to observe the Emperor who was in the same room The Emperor was not dancing he stood in the doorway stopping now one pair and now another with gracious words which he alone knew how to utter

As the mazurka began Boris saw that Adjutant General Balashev one of those in closest attendance on the Emperor went up to him and contrary to court etiquette stood near him while he was talking to a Polish lady Having finished speaking to her the Emperor looked inquiringly at Balashev and evidently understanding that he only acted thus because there were important reasons fo[illegible]

[illegible] on the Emperor s face He took Balashev by the arm and crossed the room with him unconsciously clearing a path seven yards wide as the people on both sides made way for him Boris noticed Arakcheev s excited face when the sovereign went out with

Those wh[illegible]m (God) [illegible] es to destr y [illegible] drives mad.

Balash Arak héev looked at the Empero from der h s brow nd ffi g w th h s red nose, tepped f rward from the cro d as f ex pectu g the Emp ror to ddress h m. (B ris u erstood that Arakchéev en ed B lash and as di ple ed that dently mportant news had reached the Empero otherwise th n trough himself.)

B t th Empero d B l h p ed out to the llum ted garden w th ut n ticing Arakchée wh h ld g his sw d and glanc ing wrathfully d, f llowed some tw ty p es behi d them

All th t me Boris was go n thro gh the figures f the mazu k he wa w rr ed by the

to choose Co tess Potocka wh h th u t had go e to t the ra da d gl ded o e the parq t t the doo open g t to th gar den wher ee g B l sh nd th Emp ro return t the era da h stood t ll They were mo g t w rd the door Boris fluttering as f h had t had t m t w thdraw espect fully p essed close to the doorpost w th bow d head.

The Empero with th ag t t n of o who has been perso lly ff t d was fin sh ng w th these w d

"T en er Russ w th t d l n g wa l I will not make pea as l g a gl rmed enemy em my cou try!

It seemed t Bo is th t ga the Emperor pleasur t tter these w ds. He wa satisfied w th the f rm wh ch h h d exp essed h s thou hts, b d pleased that Bo i had o er h rd t.

"Let o e k w f t th Empero dded th fro

Bori derstood that th wa mea t f h m d los g h eves l gh ly bowed h s head. Th Emper -en er d the b llroom d ema ed her bout ther half h

Bo i wa thus th first t learn the ews th th F h rmy had crossed h N em d, tha k h wa ble t how rta n mporta perso ges h t mu h th t was n ealed f m thers wa usuall kn wn t h m, d by thus mea h rose h gher th ir est mat n.

The expected ew f the Fren h ha rossed th N em was part cula l tartl lter mo th l l lfilled expectat ns d

t a ball On first rece ng the news under the nfluence of nd gnat on nd resentment the Empe r h d fou d phra e th t pleased him fully exp essed h s feel ngs a d h s ce be com f mous On r turn ng hom at two o clock th t n ght he ent f r his s cretary Sh shkó nd told him to rite an o der to th troops nd a rescr pt to F eld M rsh l Pri c S ltyk n which he in isted on the w rds bein inserted that h w uld not make pea es l n s s n le rmed Frenchm n e ma ned n Russ n soil

Next day the follow ng letter was sent t N poleon

lty with h Y R w ed from ist n n

f rms m as reaso f this ggress ou in t Y M jesty has con dered y rself be in tat f w w th m from th t m Prin K rák n asked f his passports Th reasons wh ch th D d Bassan based his efusal to del er them to him w ld ev ha led m to ppose h t th t cid co ld serv as p text f ggressi n I

to hed th blood f peoples f h mis derst d d co ents t w thdraw y troops from Russia erri ry I will egard what

I am tc.

(gned) ALEX DER

CHAPTER IV

AT TWO n th m rn g of th f urt nth of Ju e th Empero h g se t f B lash a d ead him his letter to N poleon o dered h m t tak t nd ha d t personally to the F en h Empero Wh n disp tch ng B l h th Empe peated to him the w ds that he w ld t m k pe ce so l g as gle armed e emy em ed n Rus an so l and t ld h m t transm t those w rds to Napoleon Alexa der d d n t n ert them n hi l tter t N poleo becaus w th his characteri t t ct h f lt t w uld be j d ous to use them t m me t when last attempt t co cil

moment considered themselves happy

That evening between issuing one order that the forged Russian paper money prepared for use in Russia should be delivered as quickly as possible and another that a Saxon should be shot on whom a letter containing information about the orders to the French army had been found Napoleon also gave instructions that the Polish colonel who had needlessly plunged into the river should be enrolled in the *Legion d honneur* of which Napoleon was himself the head

Quos vult perdere dementat

CHAPTER III

The Emperor of Russia had meanwhile been in Vilna for more than a month reviewing troops and holding maneuvers Nothing was ready for the war that everyone expected and to prepare for which the Emperor had come from Petersburg There was no general plan of action The vacillation between the various plans that were proposed had even increased after the Emperor had been at headquarters for a month Each of the three armies had its own commander in chief but there was no supreme commander of all the forces and the Emperor did not assume that responsibility himself

The longer the Emperor remained in Vilna the less did everybody—tired of waiting—prepare for the war All the efforts of those who surrounded the sovereign seemed directed merely to making him spend his time pleasantly and forget that war was impending

In June after many balls and fetes given by the Polish magnates by the courtiers and by the Emperor himself it occurred to one of the Polish aides de camp in attendance that a dinner and ball should be given for the Emperor by his aides de camp This idea was eagerly received The Emperor gave his consent The aides de camp collected money by subscription The lady who was thought to be most pleasing to the Emperor was invited to act as hostess Count Bennigsen being a landowner in the Vilna province offered his country house for the fete and the thirteenth of June was fixed for a ball dinner regatta and fireworks at Zakret Count Bennigsen s country seat

The very day that Napoleon issued the order to cross the Niemen and his vanguard driving off the Cossacks crossed the Russian frontier Alexander spent the evening at the entertainment given by his aides de camp at Bennigsen s country house

It was a gay and brilliant fete Connoisseurs of such matters declared that rarely had so many beautiful women been assembled in one place Countess Bezukhova was present among other Russian ladies who had followed the sovereign from Petersburg to Vilna and eclipsed the refined Polish ladies by her massive so-called Russian type of beauty The Emperor noticed her and honored her with a dance

Boris Drubetskóy having left his wife in Moscow and being for the present *en garçon* (as he phrased it) was also there and though not an aide de camp had subscribed a large sum toward the expenses Boris was now a rich man who had risen to high honors and no longer sought patronage but stood on an equal footing with the highest of those of his own age He was meeting Hélène in Vilna after not having seen her for a long time and did not recall the past but as Hélène was enjoying the favors of a very important personage and Boris had only recently married they met as good friends of long standing

At midnight dancing was still going on Hélène not having a suitable partner herself offered to dance the mazurka with Boris They were the third couple Boris coolly looking at Hélène s dazzling bare shoulders which emerged from a dark gold embroidered gauze gown talked to her of old acquaintances and at the same time unaware of it himself and unnoticed by others never for an instant ceased to observe the Emperor who was in the same room The Emperor was not dancing he stood in the doorway stopping now one pair and now another with gracious words which he alone knew how to utter

As the mazurka began Boris saw that Adjutant General Balashëv one of those in closest attendance on the Emperor went up to him and contrary to court etiquette stood near him while he was talking to a Polish lady Having finished speaking to her the Emperor looked inquiringly at Balashëv and evidently understanding that he only acted thus because there were important reasons for so doing nodded slightly to the lady and turned to him Hardly had Balashëv begun to speak before a look of amazement appeared on the Emperor s face He took Balashëv by the arm and crossed the room with him unconsciously clearing a path seven yards wide as the people on both sides made way for him Boris noticed Arakchéev s excited face when the sovereign went out with

Those whom (God) wishes to destroy He drives mad.

Balash Arakchéev looked at the Empe

understood that Arakchéev en ed B lashëv d as d ple ed th t e idently mpo t nt new h d reached the Empero therwise th n through himself)

B t the Emperor d B l e p sed out into the ll m ted garden w thout n t ci g Arak héev ho h ld g h word d glanc in rathf lly aro d f ll w d some twe ty p ces beh d them.

All th t me B ri was go g thro gh the figu es f the m zurk he was w rried by the quest of l t new Bal h v l d br ght and ho he ould fi d t t b f e thers.

I th figu e wh ch he had t choose two lad es, h h pe ed to Hélèn that he me t to choos Co ntess Poto ka who he th u ht had go e t t th era da and gl ded o er th p rq et to th door pen g to the gar den wh e se g B l she d the Empero return t the era d h tood t ll They ere mo g t ard the doo Bori fl tteri g as f he had ot had time t w thdraw espe t f lly p essed clo e t the doorpost w th bowed head.

Th Empero with the gitation f o e who has bee perso lly ff ted w s fin sh g th these ds

"T enter Russia w th t d cl g war! I w ll ot make pea l g as s gl armed enemy rema s my co try!

It seemed t Boris that t ga e the Empero pleasur t tter these w ds. He was sat fied th the f rm wh h h had expressed his tho hts, b t displeased that Boris had o er heard t.

"Let k f t th Emperor dded th a f wn.

Bori understood that this wa meant f h m nd, los g his eyes, l htly bowed his head. Th Empero re-entered th b llroom nd rema ed there bout an ther half h ur.

Bo wa thus the first to learn th ews that th F en h rmy had crossed th N em n d, tha ks t this, was b t show certa mporta t personages that much that was ea ed from others wa usuall known t h m, d by this means he rose higher in t ir estimation.

The nexpected news f the French ha in crossed the N emen was particularl startl after month expectations d

t b ll On first rece ving the news under the influe ce f nd gn t on and resentment the Emp l d found phra e th t pleased h m fully e pres ed h s feel ngs nd h s s n be come f mous On r turning h me at two o clock th t n ght he e t f h secretary Sh hkó and told h m to r te an o der to the tr p nd a re ei pt to F ld M rshal Pr S ltykó n wl h l e in ted on the wo ds be g nserted th t he would n t make pea e o lon le armed F enchm n re m ed on Russ an so l

Ne t d y th following letter was sent to Napoleon

fro t d I h this m m t ec ed from P sb rg

f his passports Th easo wh ch th D d Bassa based his fusal to d l them t m

ta d g and nse ts t w thdraw y troops from Russia t rrit ry I w ll rega d wh t h passed t h g oc rred d der ta d g bet een us w ll be poss bl I l co trary case Y

(gned) ALEXA ER

CHAPTER IV

AT TWO o n th morn of the f rt enth of June th Empero ha g s nt fo B lash

... Empe peated t h m th word th t h w uld n t mak pe so l g s le rmed enem em ed on Russ an so l nd told him to transm t those wo ds to N poleo Alexa der d d n t n ert th m n h lette to N poleo because w th his characteri t t ct h f lt t w ld be judici us to use them at a moment wh last ttempt t reconcil

moment considered themselves happy

That evening between issuing one order that the forged Russian paper money prepared for use in Russia should be delivered as quickly as possible and another that a Saxon should be shot on whom a letter containing information about the orders to the French army had been found Napoleon also gave instructions that the Polish colonel who had needlessly plunged into the river should be enrolled in the *Legion d honneur* of which Napoleon was himself the head

Quos vult perdere dementat

Those whom (God) wishes to destroy he makes mad.

CHAPTER III

THE EMPEROR OF RUSSIA had meanwhile been in Vilna for more than a month reviewing troops and holding maneuvers Nothing was ready for the war that everyone expected and to prepare for which the Emperor had come from Petersburg There was no general plan of action The vacillation between the various plans that were proposed had even increased after the Emperor had been at headquarters for a month Each of the three armies had its own commander in chief but there was no supreme commander of all the forces and the Emperor did not assume that responsibility himself

The longer the Emperor remained in Vilna the less did everybody—tired of waiting—prepare for the war All the efforts of those who surrounded the sovereign seemed directed merely to making him spend his time pleasantly and forget that war was impending

In June after many balls and fetes given by the Polish magnates by the courtiers and by the Emperor himself it occurred to one of the Polish aides-de camp in attendance that a dinner and ball should be given for the Emperor by his aides-de camp This idea was eagerly received The Emperor gave his consent The aides de camp collected money by subscription The lady who was thought to be most pleasing to the Emperor was invited to act as hostess Count Bennigsen being a landowner in the Vilna province offered his country house for the fete and the thirteenth of June was fixed for a ball dinner regatta and fireworks at Zakret Count Bennigsen s country seat

The very day that Napoleon issued the order to cross the Niemen and his vanguard driving off the Cossacks crossed the Russian frontier Alexander spent the evening at the entertainment given by his aides de camp at Bennigsen s country house

It was a gay and brilliant fete Connoisseurs of such matters declared that rarely had so many beautiful women been assembled in one place Countess Bezukhova was present among other Russian ladies who had followed the sovereign from Petersburg to Vilna and eclipsed the refined Polish ladies by her massive so-called Russian type of beauty The Emperor noticed her and honored her with a dance

Boris Drubetskoy having left his wife in Moscow and being for the present *en garçon* (as he phrased it) was also there and though not an aide de camp had subscribed a large sum toward the expenses Boris was now a rich man who had risen to high honors and no longer sought patronage but stood on an equal footing with the highest of those of his own age He was meeting Hélène in Vilna after not having seen her for a long time and did not recall the past but as Hélène was enjoying the favors of a very important personage and Boris had only recently married they met as good friends of long standing

At midnight dancing was still going on Hélène not having a suitable partner herself offered to dance the mazurka with Boris They were the third couple Boris coolly looking at Hélène s dazzling bare shoulders which emerged from a dark gold embroidered gauze gown talked to her of old acquaintances and at the same time unaware of it himself and unnoticed by others never for an instant ceased to observe the Emperor who was in the same room The Emperor was not dancing he stood in the doorway stopping now one pair and now another with gracious words which he alone knew how to utter

As the mazurka began Boris saw that Adjutant General Balashev one of those in closest attendance on the Emperor went up to him and contrary to court etiquette stood near him while he was talking to a Polish lady Having finished speaking to her the Emperor looked inquiringly at Balashev and evidently understanding that he only acted thus because there were important reasons for so doing nodded slightly to the lady and turned to him Hardly had Balashev begun to speak before a look of amazement appeared on the Emperor s face He took Balashev by the arm and crossed the room with him unconsciously clearing a path seven yards wide as the people on both sides made way for him Boris noticed Arakcheev s excited face when the sovereign went out with

Balashëv Arakchéev looked at the Emperor from under his brow d, sn ffing w th his red nose stepped f rward from th cr wd as f ex pecting th Emperor to ddress him. (Boris nd Arakchéev en ed Balashëv

through himseli)

h Emperor and Bala hev passed ut n n nty

he rathiully at uss

pa ers behi d them.

All the time Bori was go g through the figures f the mazurka, h was worried by the q estio f what new Balash had brought and how he uld fi d t t bef others.

I the figure which he had to choose two ladies, he hispered t Hélè e that h meant to choose Countess Potocka who h thou ht, had go t nto th era da, nd gl ded over the parq t to th doo open n nto the gar den where see g Balash nd th Empero returning t the eranda he tood till. They ere moving to ard the door Boris, fluttering as if he had t had time w thdraw respect fuly pressed close to th doorpost w th bowed head.

The Emperor w th th gitati n f one who ha been personall ffr ted was finishing h these words

"T en er Rus ia w thout declaring war I will not mak peace as l s gl armed enem rema ns in my country

It seemed to Boris that ga th Emperor pleasure to tter these w rds. He was sa isfied with the form which h had expressed hi thoughts, but displeased that Bori had o er heard it.

"Let no know I t th Emperor added th frown.

Boris nderstood that this was meant f h m nd, clos his eyes, l htly bowed hi head. The Emper entered th ballroom nd rema ed there bou an ther half hour

Bor was thus th first learn th ews t a the French rm had crossed th N em n d, tha k to this, was bl t show ertain importa t personages tha much that was d from others wa usuall known t h m, nd by t means he rose higher in their esti mation.

The unexpected ews f th French ha in crossed the N emen was particularl tartl g a er month f unfulfilled expectations d at ball. On first receiving the news, under the nfluence f ind gn ti n and resentment the Emperor had f und phrase that pleased him fully exp essed his feel ngs d has since be com famous. On r turn ng home at two o clock that n ht he s nt for his secretary Shishko nd t ld him to wr te an order to the troops and rescr pt to F eld Marshal Prince Salt k n which he n ted on the words being nserted that he would not make peace so long as in le armed Frenchman re mained on Russian soil

Next day the following letter was sent to N poleon

Mons eu mon frèr

Yes erday I learned th t, desp t the loyalty w th which I ha kept my engagements with Y ur M jest your troops ha crossed the Rus an fro tier and I ha this m ment recei ed from Petersb rg n e, in wh ch Co La risto f rm m as eason f this ggression that Y M jesty has con dered y rself be n tat f war with m from th time Prince K rákin a ked f his passports Th reasons on wh ch th D d Bassan based his refusal to del er them him would never ha led m to ppose that th incident co ld serv as pretext f ggression. In fact h mbassad as h h mself has declared

troops from Russian territory I wi eg at has passed no ha g occurred d der con

I am, etc.,

(gned) ALEXA DER

CHAPTER IV

AT TWO the morn of the f urteenth of Ju e the Empero ha g se t f Balash v and read him his l tte to N poleon o dered him to tak t d hand t personally to the F ench Empero When di p tching B l h th Empero repeated to him th w ds that h w uld t mak peace so l g as n le armed enem emai ed n Ru an so l d t ld him t transm t those w rds to N poleon. Alexa der d d n t nsert them n his l tt to Napoleon because w th his characteri t t ct he felt w uld be njudici us t use them t moment wh n a la t ttempt t reconcili

ation was being made but he definitely instructed Balashev to repeat them personally to Napoleon

Having set off in the small hours of the fourteenth accompanied by a bugler and two Cossacks Balashev reached the French outposts at the village of Rykonty on the Russian side of the Niemen by dawn There he was stopped by French cavalry sentinels

A French noncommissioned officer of hussars in crimson uniform and a shaggy cap shouted to the approaching Balashev to halt Balashev did not do so at once but continued to advance along the road at a walking pace

The noncommissioned officer frowned and muttering words of abuse advanced his horse's chest against Balashev put his hand to his saber and shouted rudely at the Russian general asking was he deaf that he did not do as he was told? Balashev mentioned who he was The noncommissioned officer began talking with his comrades about regimental matters without looking at the Russ[illegible]

Afte[illegible] ity and [illegible] peror [illegible] the Em[illegible] [th]ree hours before and in general being accustomed to the respect due to his rank in the service Balashev found it very strange here on Russian soil to encounter this hostile and still more this disrespectful application of brute force to himself

The sun was only just appearing from behind the clouds the air was fresh and dewy A herd of cattle was being driven along the road from the village and over the field the larks rose trilling one after another like bubbles rising in water

Balashev looked around him awaiting the arrival of an officer from the village The Russian Cossacks and bugler and the French hussars looked silently at one another from time to time

A French colonel of hussars [illegible] dently just left his bed [illegible] the village on a handsome [illegible] accompanied by two hussars The officer the soldiers and their horses all looked smart and well kept

It was that first period of [illegible] when troops are still in full trim [illegible] peacetime maneuvers but [illegible] martial swagger in the [illegible] the gaiety and spirit of enterprise which always [accompany] the opening of [illegible]

The French colonel with difficulty [illegible] a yawn but was polite and evidently understood Balashev's importance He led him past his soldiers and behind the outposts and told him that his wish to be presented to the Emperor would most likely be satisfied immediately as the Emperor's quarters were he believed not far off

They rode through the village of Rykonty past tethered French hussar horses past sentinels and men who saluted their colonel and stared with curiosity at a Russian uniform and came out at the other end of the village The colonel said that the commander of the division was a mile and a quarter away and would receive Balashev and conduct him to his destination

The sun had by now risen and shone gaily on the bright verdure

They had hardly ridden up a hill past a tavern before they saw a group of horsemen coming toward them In front of the group on a black horse with trappings that glittered in the sun rode a tall man with plumes in his hat and black hair curling down to his shoulders He wore a red mantle and stretched his long legs forward in French fashion This man rode toward Balashev at a gallop his plumes flowing and his gems and gold lace glittering in the bright June sunshine

Balashev was only two horses' length from the equestrian with the bracelets plumes necklaces and gold embroidery who was galloping toward him with a theatrically solemn countenance when Julner the French colonel whispered respectfully The King of Naples! It was in fact Murat now called King of Naples Though it was quite incomprehensible why he should be King of Naples he was called so and was himself convinced that he [illegible] solemn and important air than formerly He was so sure that he really was the King of Naples that when on the eve of his departure from that city while walking through the streets with his wife some Italians called out to him [illegible] he turned to his wife [illegible] fellows they don't know that I [illegible]

But though he firmly believed himself to be King of Naples and pitied the grief felt by the subjects he was abandoning latterly after he [illegible] especially since his last interview with Napoleon [illegible] ter view with [illegible] august brother [illegible] you King that [illegible] but not in yours!

Lo [illegible] k g

—he had cheerfully taken up his fam l bu h rse

as ra erated d expen l ss g ily and co t tedly gall ped l the roads of P a d, w h t l mself k w r why or hither

On see g the Russ general he threw back h head with ts long h r cu l ng t h s sh l ders, majestically royal manne d looked inquirin ly t the Fre ch col el The col nel respectf lly f rmed H M jesty of B l h mission whose n me h co ld not p ounce

De Bal ma hè sa d the k g (ercom ing b his assura ce th d fficulty that h d p e sented tself t the col nel) Charmed to make our equa ta ce General he added w th gesture f kingly co descen n

A soo as th K bega t pe k l ud nd l this royal d gn ty n tantly f rsook h m nd without notici g t he pa sed nto l is n t ural t f good natured fam liari y He l d h ha d the w thers of B la h s h rs nd said

"W ll, Ge eral t all looks l k wa as f regret ci cumsta e f wh h he was u t to jud e.

"Your M jesty replied B l hev m master th En pero does not des e wa d Your M jes sees said Bala h us ng tl words l M j ty t every pportu ty w th th ectat navo dabl freq ently ddress t whom the titl was t ll a n lty

M ra face beamed w th t p d sat fact n h l t ed to M eu d B l mac! è But o te bl d h f lt cumbent on h m, k g d n all t confer on sta a rs with Alexa der o H d s-mou ted, took Bal shev rm, d m few steps wa f om h u te wh ch wa ed respectful bega to pa e p d d wn w th him, try g to peak en fica tly H referred the fact hat Empero N poleon had re-sen ed the demand tha h ho ld w thdraw h troops from Prus ia, espec ll when hat demand became ge erall know d tl d g y f Fra wa t erebv ff ded.

Balash ep ed ha l er was h f fens t e dema d, because b t Murat errupted him.

"Then you don t cons uer th Empero Alex er the ggressor he asked u expectedly h k ndl nd foolish sm le.

Roya y has its obligations.

Balash v t ld him why he con de ed N poleon to be the rig n t r of the wa

Oh my de general! Murat again nter rupted h m w th all my heart I wish the Em perors m y rra e th ffair between them a d that the war begun by no w h of m e m y fin h a qu ckly a poss ble sa d he n tl t ne of ervant wl o wants to rema n good frie ds w th a ther desp te quarrel between tl e r ma ters.

And h went on to nqu es about th Grand D k d the stat of l s l ealth and to rem d amus ng t mes he had s

gh r ht rm, sa d

I w n t deta oul l ger General. I w l u cess to ur m ss n nd w tl h em bro dered red ma tl h s fl w g feathers d h gl tterin orn m nts h rejo ed h s su t who were espectfully awai h m.

Balash rod on uppos from M rat w rds that h would ery soon be brou ht be f re N poleon h mself B t n tead of that, t th ne t llage th ntin ls of D outs f ntry rps d ta ned l m as the p ckets f th a gu d had do e nd n djutant of the corps commander who was fet hed condu ted h m into the vill g to M rshal D o t.

CHAPTER V

DA O T WAS O N POLEO what Arakchéev wa to Alexa d —though not a coward l k Arak héev h was as precise as cruel d bl t exp ess h s devot n to his mo ch ex p by cru lty

In th organ m f states such men are nec essary ol es necessary n th orga ism f n ture d they lways exist, lways ppea d h ld tl own however congru us th p ese ce nd their proxim ty to th head of the go ernment may be. Thi es tab l t l e can expl n how th cru l Arak h ev wl o to e out gren d er mu tache w tl h own ha ds, whose weak nerves rendered h m unabl to f ce danger and who wa n ther n ed cated man o court er wa ble t ma nta n h powerful pos on w th Alexan der whos own character wa hi alrous no-bl nd gentl

Balasl ev f d D t seated on barr l n th shed of peasa t hut, writ g—h wa aud t o s Let er quarters could ha been f und him b t Marshal D out was

of those men who purposely put themselves in most depressing conditions to have a justification for being gloomy For the same reason they are always hard at work and in a hurry How can I think of the bright side of life when as you see I am sitting on a barrel and working in a dirty shed? the expression of his face seemed to say The chief pleasure and necessity of such men when they encounter anyone who shows animation is to flaunt their own dreary persistent activity Davout allowed himself that pleasure when Balashev was brought in He became still more absorbed in his task when the Russian general entered and after glancing over his spectacles at Balashev s face which was animated by the beauty of the morning and by his talk with Murat he did not rise or even stir but scowled still more and sneered malevolently

When he noticed in Balashev s f agreeable ... Davout r ... he wante ...

Thinking he could have been received in such a manner only because Davout did not know that he was adjutant general to the Emperor Alexander and even his envoy to Napoleon Balashev hastened to inform him of his rank and mission Contrary to his expectation Davout after hearing him became still surlier and ruder

Where is your dispatch? he inquired Give it to me I will send it to the Emperor

Balashev replied that he had been ordered to hand it personally to the Emperor

Your Emperor s orders are obeyed in your army but here said Davout you must do as you re told

And as if to make the Russian general still more conscious of his dependence on brute force Davout sent an adjutant to call the officer on duty

P ... Em ... of ... laid across two barrels) Davout took the packet and read the inscription

You are perfectly at liberty to treat me with respect or not protested Balashev but permit me to observe that I have the honor to be adjutant general to His Majesty

Davout glanced at him silently and plainly derived pleasure from the signs of agitation and confusion which appeared on Balashev s face

You will be treated as is fitting said he and putting the packet in his pocket left the shed

A minute later the marshal s adjutant de Castrès came in and conducted Balashev to the quarters assigned him

That day he dined with the marshal at the same board on the barrels

Next day Davout rode out early and after asking Balashev to come to him peremptorily requested him to remain there to move on with the baggage train should orders come for it to move and to talk to no one except Monsieur de Castrès

After fo ... sciousness ... —particular ... by contrast with the sphere of power in which he had so lately moved—and after several marches with ... baggag ... the ... na—n ... by the French—through the very gate by which he had left it four days previously

Next day the imperial gentleman in waiting the Comte de Turenne came to Balashev and informed him of the Emperor Napoleon s wish to honor him with an audience

Four days before sentinels of the Preobrazhénsk regiment had stood in front of the house to which Balashev was conducted and now two French grenadiers stood there in blue uniforms unfastened in front and with shaggy caps on their heads and an escort of hussars and Uhlans and a brilliant suite of aides de camp pages and generals who were waiting for Napoleon to come out were standing at the porch round his saddle horse and his Mameluke Rustan Napoleon received Balashev in the very house in Vilna from which Alexander had dispatched him on his mission

CHAPTER VI

Though Balashev was used to imperial pomp he was amazed at the luxury and magnificence of Napoleon s court

The Comte de Turenne showed him into a big reception room where many generals gentlemen in waiting and Polish magnates—several of whom Balashev had seen at the court of the Emperor of Russia—were w ... said th ...

... who was on duty came into the great reception room and bowing politely asked Balashev to follow him.

B lash ent to small re eption room one doo f h ch led to a tudy th very one from h ch the Russ n Empe r h d d s- p tched h m n h miss H tood a minute or tw wa u H h d I urr ed footstep bevo d the doo both h l es of t were opened rap dl ll as l t nd tl en from the tudy the so d a heard f th r tep firm d resolut —they were th e of N p leo He

just bee brushed but e lock h g d the m ddle f his bro d f head H s pl mp h k tood t sl rply bo e the bl k

short rp le t fmu w th b d thick sh ul ders d hest d t m ch l ta ly p o- trud h d th t mpos g d sta ly ppe ces me of f ty wl l c m fort. It as de t too that h wa the best f p ts th t d y

ll nodded w r t B l h s low d respe tf l bo nd com up to him t o e hem

s say tl e ht th d say t w ll Good day G rall sa d h l h e r ed th l ter b ht from th Emper or Alex der d m ry gl d t ee y u. H gl ed w th h l g eyes t B lasl ē la e d mmediat ly looked p t h m

I as pla that Bal ! p rso l ty d d no teres h m t ll E d tly o ly h t h pl h *h* ou m d erested h m. N h g ts d h mself I d y gn f ca e I I m because e ryth g th wo ld. t seemed t h m d p ded t rely on l s w ll. l d t d d d t des w h c u ed b t t ha be f ed E n (h empha ed tl w d) I m r dy to rcei y expl t y ca g e m

A d h bega learly d co ci ly t ex pl h reasons f d ssa f ct n w tl th Rus go er ment J d g by the calmly modera d m cable t wh ch the F en h Emperor pok B l I ē was firmly

pers ded that he w hed for peace nd in

the s ght of the Emperor eyes bent on l m confused h m Y u e flurried—c mpose yourself! N poleon seemed t y as with a sca cely percept bl m l he looked t B l sh u f rm nd sword.

Bal he recovered h m elf and b gan to spe k. He sa d th t the Empero Alexande d d not co d Ku ák n demand f his pass ports a s fficie t cau e fo war that Kurák n h d cted on h o n u t e d w th ut his so er gn s ass t th t the Empero Alex ander d d n t des e war nd had n relat ons w th E gla d.

Not *yet* nterpo ed N poleon nd s f fea to g e e t to h s feel ngs he f w ed d nodd d l ghtly as s gn th t B l sh m ght pro eed.

After say g ll l h d been n tructed t say Bal he dded that the Emp Alex d w hed f pe e but wo ld t ter to negot t e pt n cond t n th t He B l h hes tated he remember d th w ds th Emperor Ale der h d n t w t

m on R ss n so l b t some c mpl f el

u B l h who mor tha c l w ed h eyes n l ta ly not ced th q g I N poleo left leg wh ch crea ed th m the m N poleon ra sed h c

I des e pe ce no less th n th Emp ro Alex d r he bega Ha e I ot f e ghte m th bee d g e eryth ng to bta n t? I h e wa ted e ghteen m nths f expl n t ns. B t n order to beg n egoti t n wh t d m ded f m? h sa d frown g d mak ng

Th N men i 8 was th fro er be ee R ss d E land.—Tr.

an energetic gesture of inquiry with his small white plump hand

The withdrawal of your army beyond the Niemen sire replied Balashev

The Niemen? repeated Napoleon So now you want me to retire beyond the Niemen —only the Niemen? repeated Napoleon looking straight at Balashev

The latter bowed his head respectfully

Instead of the demand of four months earlier to withdraw from Pomerania only a withdrawal beyond the Niemen was now demanded Napoleon turned quickly and began to pace the room

You say the demand now is that I am to withdraw beyond the Niemen before commencing negotiations but in just the same way two months ago the demand was that I should withdraw beyond the Vistula and the Oder and yet you are willing to negotiate

He went in silence from one corner of the room to the other and again stopped in front of Balashev Balashev noticed that his left leg ... er than before and his face

is a great sign with me he remarked at ... date

Such demands as to retreat beyond the Vistula and Oder may be made to a Prince of Baden but not to me! Napoleon almost screamed quite to his own surprise If you gave me Petersburg and Moscow I could not accept such conditions You say I have begun this war! But who first joined his army? The Emperor Alexander not I! And you offer me negotiations when I have expended millions when you are in alliance with England and when your position is a bad one You offer me negotiations! But what is the aim of your alliance with England? What has she given you? he continued hurriedly evidently no longer trying to show the advantages of peace and discuss its possibility but only to prove his own rectitude and power and Alexander s errors and duplicity

The commencement of his speech had obviously been made with the intention of demonstrating the advantages of his position and showing that he was nevertheless willing to negotiate But he had begun talking and the more he talked the less could he control his

—just ...

mencement of the interview

I hear you have made peace with Turkey? Balashev bowed his head affirmatively

Peace has been concluded he began

But Napoleon did not let him speak He evidently wanted to do all the talking himself and continued to talk with the sort of eloquence and unrestrained irritability to which spoiled people are so prone

Yes I know you have made peace with the Turks without obtaining Moldavia and Wallachia I would have given your sovereign those provinces as I gave him Finland Yes he went on I promised and would have given the Emperor Alexander Moldavia and Wallachia and now he won t have those splendid provinces Yet he might have united them to his empire and in a single reign would have extended Russia from the Gulf of Bothnia to the mouths of the Danube Catherine the Great could not have done more said Napoleon growing more and more excited as he paced up and down the room repeating to Balashev almost the very words he had used to Alexander himself at Tilsit All that he would have owed to my friendship Oh what a splendid

ander s might have been!

He looked compassionately at Balashev and as soon as the latter tried to make some rejoinder hastily interrupted him

What could he wish or look for that he would not have obtained through my friendship? demanded Napoleon shrugging his shoulders in perplexity But no he has preferred to surround himself with my enemies and with whom? With Steins Armfeldts Bennigsens and Wintzingerodes! Stein a traitor expelled from his own country Armfeldt a rake and an intriguer Wintzingerode a fugitive French subject Bennigsen rather more of a soldier than the others but all the same an incompetent who was unable to do anything in 1807 and who should awaken terrible memories in the Emperor Alexander s mind Granted that were they competent they might be made use of continued Napoleon—hardly able to keep pace in words with the rush of

of them all, but I ca ot say so judging by his first mo ements. And what are they do g all these courtiers? Pf el proposes Armfeldt disputes, Benn gsen co ders and B r lay called on to t, does t kn w what to decide on d time passes bri g g o result. B grati n alone mil tary man. H s tup d but he has ex perience, qu ck eye nd resol t n And hat role is y r yo mon rch pl y ng n that monstr us crowd? They comp mi e h m and throw h m th respo s b l ty for all A er gn h ld n t be w th

t

d

"The campa gn began nly w you ha en t even been abl t d f d V'lna. You are cut n tw d ha e been dri en ut f the P lish provi ces. Y ur rmy grumbling

O the co trary Y ur M jesty sa d Bal ev hardly ble to remember what had been said to h m d f ll win these erbal fi ew ks with d fficulty the troops e burn ng with eagerness

I know e eryth g N poleon nterrupted him. I know everyth I know the number of your ba tal exactly as I know m own You ha not tw hu dred th usand m n nd I ha h ee mes tha n mbe I gi ou my word f honor sa d N poleon, f r t hat

we ht— I

n-

he

u

by

they worth noth nd ha mak g pea w h you. A f th Swedes— t is her f to be go erned b mad k ngs. The

less he wer mad.

N poleo gri ed mal iously d ga n raised h uffbox his nose.

Balashev k ew how t reply t each f N

wedes. Balashev w hed to reply tha when Russia is on her sid Sweden is practicall n

la d bu N poleo ga n ngry exclama- tion drown his voice. N poleon was n that sta f rr tab l ty in wh ch man has to talk, ta k, nd talk mer ly to con himse.f that

h B l hey began to feel un

h

f

as a m n he l

gro dless wrath th t had ev dently se ed N poleon He knew that n ne of the words now uttered by N poleon h d ny gn ficance nd that N poleon him elf w uld be ashamed of them when he came to his nses Balashe stood w th d w cast eyes look ng t the mo e ments f N poleo tout legs nd try ng to o d meet his eyes

B t wh t do I ca e bout your ll es said N poleon I have all es—the Poles. There are ghty th usand of them and they fight like lions And there will be two hund ed thousand of them.

And p b bly st ll mo e perturbed by the f ct that he had uttered this ob ous falsehood, l h till tood s lently before

f

t

houted

Kn w th t f youst up Prussia gainst me he decla ed I ll w pe t ff the map of Eu ope

hi face pal and distorted by n er nd h truck on of hi small hands energet cally w th the other Yes I will throw you b ck bey nd th D n nd beyond the Dn eper and w ll

h t was

m A d h walked le tly se p a d down th room, his fat h ulders tw tch ing

H put his snuffbox nto hi waistcoat pock et, took t out ga n l fted t several t mes to his ose. d stopped n front f Balashev H paused, looked cally tra ht nto Bala hev eyes, d sa d quiet ice

A d et what splend d re gn y ur master m ht have h d!"

B lash feeli t cumbent on him to re pl said that f om the Russia d th s did not ppea n so gloomy l ght. N poleon was lent, till look ng deris ly t him d evidently not listening to him. Balashev said that P ussia the best results wer expected from the war N poleon nodded condescend ngly as if to sa I know t your duty to say that, but you d n t bel ev t yourself. I ha convinced you.

Namely large Polish state.—Tr.

an energetic gesture of inquiry with his small white plump hand

The withdrawal of your army beyond the Niemen sire replied Balashev

The Niemen? repeated Napoleon So now you want me to retire beyond the Niemen —only the Niemen? repeated Napoleon looking straight at Balashev

The latter bowed his head respectfully

Instead of the demand of four months earlier to withdraw from Pomerania only a withdrawal beyond the Niemen was now demanded Napoleon turned quickly and began to pace the room

You say the demand now is that I am to withdraw beyond the Niemen before commencing negotiations but in just the same way two months ago the demand was that I should withdraw beyond the Vistula and the Oder and yet you are willing to negotiate

He went in silence from o

ter than before and his face seemed petrified in its stern expression This quivering of his left leg was a thing Napoleon was conscious of The vibration of my left calf is a great sign with me he remarked at a later date

Such demands as to retreat beyond the Vistula and Oder may be made to a Prince of Baden but not to me! Napoleon almost screamed quite to his own surprise If you gave me Petersburg and Moscow I could not accept such conditions You say I have begun this war! But who first joined his army? The Emperor Alexander not I! And you offer me negotiations when I have expended millions when you are in alliance with England and w

yo he continued hurriedly evidently no longer trying to show the advantages of peace and discuss its possibility but only to prove his own rectitude and power and Alexander s errors

vio
stra ges of his positi n
shown
gotiate
more I
words

The whole purport of his remarks now was evidently to exalt himself and insult Alexander —just what he had least desired at the commencement of the interview

I hear you have made peace with Turkey

Balashev bowed his head affirmativ

Peace

But N
dently w
and con

talk with the sort of eloquence and unrestrained irritabil t to which spoiled people are so prone

Yes I know you have made peace with the Turks without obtaining Moldavia and Wallachia I would have given your sovereign those provinces as I gave him Finland Ye he went on I promised and would have given the Emperor Alexander Moldavia and Wallachia and now he won t have those splendid provinces Yet he might have united them to his empire and in a single reign would have extended Russia from the Gulf of

then
cou
gro

more excited as he paced up and down the room repeating to Balashev almost the very words he had used to Alexander himself at Tilsit All that he would have owed to my friendship Oh what a splendid reign! he repeated several times then paused drew from his pocket a gold snuffbox lifted it to his nose and greedily sniffed at it

What a splendid reign the Emperor Alexander s *might have been!*

He looked compassionately at Balashev and as soon as the latter tried to make some rejoinder hastily interrupted him

What could he wish or look for that he would not have obtained through my friendship? demanded Napoleon hrugging his shoulders in perplexity But no I

ferre
ar
ni
ex

wn country Armfeldt a rake and an intriguer Wintzinger ode a fu tive French subject Bennigsen rather more of a soldier than the others but all the same an incompetent who was unable to do anything in 18 and who should awaken terrible memories in the Emperor Alex

C
l
a

words with the rush f thoughts that ncessantly sp ing p prov how right and strong he was (in his perception the two were one and the same)— but they are not even that! They are neither fit for war nor peace! Barclay is said to be the most capable

of them all, but I cannot say so judging by his first movements. And what are they doing, all these courtiers Pf l proposes, Armfeldt disputes, Ben igsen cons ders, a d Barclay called on to act, does not know what to decide on and time passes bri ging no result. Bagration alone mil ary man. H stup d, but he has experience, qu ck eye, nd resol tion And at role is your youn monarch playi g in that monstrous crowd. They compromise him and throw on him th respons bil ty f r ll tha happens. A so ereign ho ld not be w th the army u less h is general said N poleon, evidently ut ering these words as direct challenge to t. Emperor He knew how Alex nder desired to be mil tary commander

"The campaign began ly week ago nd you ha en t even been ble to defend Vilna. You are cut n two and ha been dri en ut of the P lish provinces. Your army is grumbling."

"On the co trary Your M jesty said Balashev hard bl to remember what had been said to him nd followin these erbal fireworks ith difficulty the troops re burn ng with eagerness

I know everyth ng N poleon terrupted him. I know everyth I know th number of your ba talio exactly as I know m own.

he is n the ri ht. Balashev began to feel uncomf rtable as envoy he feared to demean his dign ty and felt th necess ty of reply n but, as a man he shrank bef re the transport of groundless wrath that had ev d ntly e ed Napoleon He knew that none of the words now uttered by N poleon had any ni ficance and that N poleon himself would be ashamed of them wh n h cam to his en es. Balashev stood with d wncast eyes look ng at the moveme ts of N poleon t ut legs nd try ng to vo d meetin his eyes.

But what do I ca e about your ll es. said N poleon. I ha e llies—the Poles. There are e hty thousand of them nd they fight like lions. And there w ll be two hundred thousand of them.

And probably till more perturbed by th f ct that he had uttered this bvious falsehood, h Balashe still tood s lently before

N

t

shouted

K w that f you tir up Prussia a nst me, I'll w pe t off th map f Europe h declared, his face pal nd distorted by anger a d h truck one of his small hands energet cally w th the other "Yes, I will throw you back bey d the D n and beyo d the Dnieper and w ll

ch t wa

dred nd thirty thousa d men thus d I in Vilna. The Turks w ll be f no use to you they are worth noth n d ha bown t by making peace w h ou. A f th Swedes—t is their fate to be governed by mad ki gs. Their king was ma d they cha ed him f n other—Bernadot who promp ly went mad—for no S ed wou d ll h mself w th Russia u less he er mad.

N po eo gri ed mal ciously d gain raised his snuffbox to his nose.

Balashev k ew how to reply each of N poleon emarks, nd would ha d so he or ti mad the gestur of man wish ng to ment bu N poleo lways ter pted him. To the alleged nsan ty f the Swedes. Balashev wished reply that when Russia is her sid Sweden is pract cally n and but N poleon ga n ngry exclama tion to drown his voice. N poleo was in that state f irritabil n wh ch man ha to talk, talk, nd talk mer ly to co himself that

ing

H put his snuffbox to his waistcoat pocket, took t out aga n l fted t several times to his nose, and topped in front f Bal shev He paused, looked ir n cally stra ght into Balashev eyes, nd said n quiet vo ce

A d et what splendid reign yo master mi ht have h d!

the war N poleon nodded condescendingl as if to sa I know t your duty to sa that, but you d t believe t yourself. I ha convinced you.

Named large Polish state.—Tr.

When Balashev had ended Napoleon again took out his snuffbox sniffed at it and stamped his foot twice on the floor as a signal The door opened a gentleman in waiting bending respectfully handed the Emperor his hat and gloves another brought him a pocket handkerchief Napoleon without giving them a glance turned to Balashev

Assure the Emperor Alexander from me said he taking his hat that I am as devoted to him as before I know him thoroughly and very highly esteem his lofty qualities I will detain you no longer General you shall receive my letter to the Emperor

And Napoleon went quickly to the door Everyone in the reception room rushed forward and descended the staircase

CHAPTER VII

AFTER ALL THAT Napoleon had said to him—those bursts of anger and the last dryly spoken words I will detain you no longer General you shall receive my letter Balashev felt convinced that Napoleon would not wish to see him and would even avoid another meeting with him—an insulted envoy—especially as he had witnessed his unseemly anger But to his surprise Balashev received through Duroc an invitation to dine with the Emperor that day

Bessières Caulaincourt and Berthier were present at that dinner

Napoleon met Balashev cheerfully and amiably He not only showed no sign of constraint or self reproach on account of his outburst that morning but on the contrary tried to reassure Balashev It was evident that he had long been convinced that it was impossible for him to make a mistake and that in his perception whatever he did was right not because it harmonized with any idea of right and wrong but because *he* did it

The Emperor was in very good spirits after his ride through Vilna where crowds of people had rapturously greeted and followed him From all the windows of the streets through which he rode rugs flags and his monogram were displayed and the Polish ladies welcoming him waved their handkerchiefs to him

At dinner having placed Balashev beside him Napoleon not only treated him amiably but behaved as if Balashev were one of his own courtiers one of those who sympathized with his plans and ought to rejoice at his success In the course of conversation he mentioned Moscow and questioned Balashev about the Russian capital not merely as an interested traveler asks about a new city he intends to visit

cow? How many houses? Is it true that Moscow is called Holy Moscow? How many churches are there in Moscow? he asked

And receiving the reply that there were more

Balashev

But a large number of monasteries and churches is always a sign of the backwardness of a people said Napoleon turning to Caulaincourt for appreciation of this remark

Balashev respectfully ventured to disagree with the French Emperor

Every country has its own character said he

But nowhere in Europe is there anything like that said Napoleon

I beg Your Majesty's pardon returned Balashev besides Russia there is Spain where there are also many churches and monasteries

This reply of Balashev's which hinted at the recent defeats of the French in Spain was much appreciated when he related it at Alexander's court but it was not much appreciated at Napoleon's dinner where it passed unnoticed

The uninterested and perplexed faces of the marshals showed that they were puzzled as to what Balashev's tone suggested If there is a point we don't see it or it is not at all witty their expressions seemed to say So little was his rejoinder appreciated that Napoleon did not notice it at all and naively asked Balashev through what towns the direct road from there to Moscow passed Balashev who was on the alert all through the dinner replied that just as all roads lead to Rome so all roads lead to Moscow there were many roads and among them the road through *Poltava* which Charles XII chose Balashev involuntarily flushed with pleasure at the aptitude of this reply but hardly had he uttered the word *Poltava* before Caulaincourt began speaking of the badness of the road from Petersburg to Moscow and of his Petersburg reminiscences

After dinner they went to drink coffee in Napoleon's study which four days previously had been that of the Emperor Alexander Napoleon sat down toying with his Sèvres coffee cup and motioned Balashev to a chair beside him

Napoleon was in that well known after-dinner

ner mood wl cl m e tl y e so ed cat e m les a man c ntented w tl l mself and l s- posed to conside very e l fr e d It seemed t h m that he w s r led l y me wl l ed l m a d l e felt co l th t fter l d er B l l ev too w l frien l and wor l per N pol t d t l n w tl ple s a t tl l l g l tly l c s y l e

Tl ey t ll n tl ts tl e roo the Empe r Alex de occup e l? Stra i n t t G er l he d ev d tly n t d ul t g tl t th s r ma k ld l e gree ble to l s l e rer e t e t top e h Nap le n pe ity to Al der

B lashe ld m ke reply a d bowed l s head i len e

To l ave one s ear pulle l l y tl e Emp r r w co s dered the g e test h or and mark of fav r at tl e Frencl court

Well adorer and courtier of tl e Emp eror Alexa der wl y l t y u s y anytl i s l l e s if it was ri licul us t i l s presenc t l c the ad rer l o t r f anyo e l thi elf N pol Are the l r re dy for tl e g ner l? he ad l l with a sl gl t i l mat i of l s l l reply to Bal sl ev s l w Let l i i l en me l e l s *I ngw y t g*

Tl e letter t ken l y l l sl w s tl e l st N p l i sent to Al x nd r Every l t l of the interv ew w s c mmu icate l to tl e Ri sl r mo rch and tl e war l eg n

CHAPTER VIII

ent s tl t tl e Empe r Al nde l as r ded l mself w tl y per l enem e Tl t l d n t d r t d H l e t tho ht that I may d tl e s m r a ll e tur ed q r gly to P l l d e i l e tly tl s the ght t ed h m b ck to tl e tr ck of l s mo n g ger wh h w s t ll l l n h m

A d let h m k ow tl t I w ll d so d N pol

l l s ly l t d l l c ld t

r y th y dev t d t l m d wh m t

tl
t
l
P

ent p t l t l l ly l exp t lly f l ly l kly l l ly f l e w e d g m tl t m ly mp t t f t l to B l l l ra d l l l t the l y y ll R g e l s f e d tak ng h m by tl ea p lled t g tly m l g l h l l nly

for K á n l t tl e l tter l d al eady left tl e c ty P erre h d w r c l h s l rother in l w tl t l e And w w n l str ck A t le K rá g pr mptly l t ned an ppo nt ent fr tl M n ter of W r nd went t j i i tl e ar ny Mold i Wl il n Petersl g l r ce An

i so l w tte l to meet K rág i per lly in d to f d fre l p etext f

l

N ly l ll e t l l l k

When Balashev had ended Napoleon again took out his snuffbox sniffed at it and stamped his foot twice on the floor as a signal The door opened a gentleman in waiting bending respectfully handed the Emperor his hat and gloves another brought him a pocket handkerchief Napoleon without giving them a glance turned to Balashev

Assure the Emperor Alexander from me said he taking his hat that I am as devoted to him as before I know him thoroughly and very highly esteem his lofty qualities I will detain you no longer General you shall receive my letter to the Emperor

And Napoleon went quickly to the door Everyone in the reception room rushed forward and descended the staircase

CHAPTER VII

AFTER ALL THAT Napoleon had said to him—those bursts of anger and the last dryly spoken words I will detain you no longer General you shall receive my letter Balashev felt convinced that Napoleon would not wish to see him and would even avoid another meeting with him—an insulted envoy—especially as he had witnessed his unseemly anger But to his surprise Balashev received through Duroc an invitation to dine with the Emperor that day

Bessières Caulaincourt and Berthier were present at that dinner

Napoleon met Balashev cheerfully and amiably He not only showed no sign of constraint or self reproach on account of his outburst that morning but on the contrary tried to reas [illegible]

The Emperor was in very good spirits after his ride through Vilna where crowds of people had rapturously greeted and followed him From all the windows of the streets through which he rode rugs flags and his monogram were displayed and the Polish ladies welcoming him waved their handkerchiefs to him

At dinner having placed Balashev beside [illegible] bly [illegible] own [illegible] ith his plans and ought to rejoice at his success In the course of conversation he mentioned Moscow and questioned Balashev about the Russian capital not merely as an interested traveler asks about a new city he intends to visit but as if convinced that Balashev as a Russian must be flattered by his curiosity

How many inhabitants are there in Moscow? How many houses? Is it true that Moscow is called Holy Moscow? How many churches are there in Moscow? he asked

And receiving the reply that there were more than two hundred churches he remarked

Why such a quantity of churches?

The Russians are very devout replied Balashev

But a large number of monasteries and churches is always a sign of the backwardness of a people said Napoleon turning to Caulaincourt for appreciation of this remark

Balashev respectfully ventured to disagree with the French Emperor

Every country has its own character said he

But nowhere in Europe is there anything like that said Napoleon

I beg Your Majesty's pardon returned Balashev besides Russia there is Spain where there are also many churches and monasteries.

This reply of Balashev's which hinted at the recent defeats of the French in Spain was much appreciated when he related it at Alexander's court but it was not much appreciated at Napoleon's dinner where it passed unnoticed

The uninterested and perplexed faces of the marshals showed that they were puzzled as to what Balashev's tone suggested If there is a point we don't see it or it is not at all witty their expressions seemed to say So little was [illegible]

[illegible] alert all through the dinner replied that just as all roads lead to Rome so all roads lead to Moscow there were many roads and among them the road through Poltava which Charles XII chose Balashev involuntarily flushed with pleasure at the aptitude of this reply but hardly had he uttered the word Poltava before Caulaincourt began speaking of the badness of the road from Petersburg to Moscow and of his Petersburg reminiscences

After dinner they went to drink coffee in Napoleon's study which four days previously had been that of the Emperor Alexander Napoleon sat down toying with his Sèvres coffee cup and motioned Balashev to a chair beside him

Napoleon was in that well known after-din

er mood h ch more tha any re so ed cau e mak man co te ted th h mself d d s- posed to cons d e ry h f d. It se med to him that he wa surr ded by m h d ed him and he f lt co ced th t after h. din er Bal h too wa hus f d d w r h per N poleo turned t h m w th pleas- t, th h l ghtly sr c, m le

"They t ll m th is the room the Empero Alexander occup ed Stra ge n t t, Ge al he sa d, d tly t d l t that th s remark ld be greeabl t h s h ar ce t n t t pro e his. N poleon s, sup ri rity t Alexa der

B lash co ld mak eply d bowed h s head in lence

"Yes. F ur d y go n thi room W tz g erod and St wer d l berati g co t ed Napoleo w th th sam der and s lf-co fid t mile. 'What I ca t dersta d he t is that the Emp Alexander has urro ded hims lf w th m p rso l em es. That I d n t u dersta d. H he t tho ht that I may do th am nd he turned q in gly t Bal h d d ntly this th ght turned him b ck to th track f his morn g er wh ch wa till fresh h m.

N

B

To h e ones e r pulled by the Emperor was con de ed tl e greatest l onor d mark of f or t tl e Fre cl court.

"Well ad e a d ourt er of the Emp ro Alexa d why d t y u y a yth g?" sa d he a f t d culo in h presence to b

h he d n eply to B l sh bow Let l m ha e m e he h sa l g y l g

The lett taken by B la l s tl e l t N poleon e t t Al nd r E ery deta l of the t rv ew w omm cated to tl e Rus- n monarcl l tl e war bega

CHAPTER VIII

g promptly obta ed n ppo tme t fro n the M n ter of W nd ent to jo the rmy M lda a. Wh l Petersb g P e A drew

l t d becau l ould t h lp hear g wha was sa d t him. N poleon d d t t th e p es h treated B l h t as an y from hi emy but as a ma f ll dev ed t h m and wh must jo th f rm ma er h milat n A d com that t re h ta Ag p e l en fiden ly q ckl d mply as f l were d som l g mer l mporta t but plea to Balashev h ra ed his ha d t th f rty year-old Ru ian eral face d, tak g him by the ear pul ed ge tly milin th his lips onl

ui w u d n t thi k t p op t wr t d chall ge Kurá n H tho gl t that f h chall ed h m w th ut som f esh c t m ght mp om e th y u g Cou tess Ros- t d so h w ted t meet Kurág pe so ally n orde t fi d a fresh p t t f d l B t h ga n f led to m t Kurá n Tu k y f soo fter Pr e A d w rr ed the l tt t rned t R In ew try am d ew co d tions P e A d ew f d life eas er bea Aft his b trothed h d brok n f th w th h m—which h felt the m cu ly th m h r d th b d t y o ld h no l tl k th th ghts that had first m t h l

When Balashev had ended N ~ took ~ his fo opene [illegible] waiting bending re spectfully handed the Empero [illegible] gloves chief I turned

Assure the Emperor Alexander from me said he taking his hat that I am as devoted to him as before I know him thoroughly and very highly esteem his lofty qualities I will de tain you no longer General you shall receive my letter to the Emperor

And Napoleon went quickly to the door Ev eryone in the reception room rushed forward and descended the staircase

CHAPTER VII

AFTER ALL THAT Napoleon had said to him—those bursts of anger and the last dry [illegible] words I [illegible] you shall r [illegible] vinced tha [illegible] would not wish to see him and would even avoid another meeting with him—an insulted envoy—especially as he had witnessed his unseemly anger But to his surprise Balashev received through Duroc an invitation to dine with the Emperor that day

Bessières Caulaincourt and Berthier were present at that dinner

Napoleon met Balashev cheerfull [illegible] ably He [illegible] or self re [illegible] morning [illegible] s [illegible] b [illegible] tc [illegible] and that in his perception whatever he did was right not because it har monized with any idea of right and wrong but because *he* did it

The Emperor was in very good spirits after his ride through Vilna where crowds of peo ple had rapturously greeted and followed him From all the windows of the streets through which he rode rugs flags and his monogram were displayed and the Polish ladies welcom ing him waved their handkerchiefs to him

At dinner having placed Balashe [illegible] I m N ~ [illegible] eler asks about a new city he intends to visit but as if convinced that Balashev as a Russian must be flattered by his curiosity

How many inhabitants are th [illegible] cow? He ~ is call [illegible] are th [illegible] asked

And receiving the reply th [illegible] more th ~ [illegible] Bal [illegible] as

But a large number of monasteries and churches is always a sign of the backwardness of a people said Napoleon turning to Cau laincourt for appreciation of this remark

Balashev respectfully ventured to disagree with the French Emperor

Every country has its own character said he

But nowhere in Europe is there anything like that said Napoleon

I beg Your Majesty's pardon returned Bal ashev besides Russia there is Spain where there are also many churches and monasteries.

This reply of Balashev's which hinted at the recent defeats of the French in Spain was much appreciated when he related it at Alex ander's court but it was not much appreciated at Napoleon's dinner where it passed unno ticed

The uninterested and perplexed faces of the marshals showed that they were puzzled as to what Balashev's tone suggested If there is a point we don't see t or it is not at all witty their expressions seemed to say So little was his rejoinder appreciated that Napoleon d l not not ce it at all and na [illegible] k [illegible] t [illegible] a [illegible] dinner replied that just as all roads lead to Rome so all ro ds lead to Moscow there were many roads and am ng them the road through *Polt a* which Charles XII chose Balash v involuntarily flushed with pleasure at the aptitude of this reply but hardly had he uttered the word *Poltda* before Caulaincourt began speaking of the badness of the road from Petersburg [illegible]

[illegible] of Balash v about the Rus sian capital not merely as an interested trav [illegible] ell known after hi

When Balashev had ended Napoleon again took out his snuffbox sniffed at it and stamped his foot twice on the floor as a signal The door opened a gentleman in waiting bending respectfully handed the Emperor his hat and gloves another brought him a pocket handkerchief Napoleon without giving them a glance turned to Balashev

Assure the Emperor Alexander from me said he taking his hat that I am as devoted to him as before I know him thoroughly and very highly esteem his lofty qualities I will detain you no longer General you shall receive my letter to the Emperor

And Napoleon went quickly to the door Everyone in the reception room rushed forward and descended the staircase

CHAPTER VII

AFTER ALL THAT Napoleon had said to him—those bursts of anger and the last drvly ... words I ... you shall r ... vinced tha ... ould not wish to see him and would even avoid another meeting with him—an insulted envoy—especially as he had witnessed his unseemly anger But to his surprise Balashev received through Duroc an invitation to dine with the Emperor that day

Bessières Caulaincourt and Berthier were present at that dinner

Napoleon met Balashev cheerfull ... ably He ... or self re ... morning ... ontrary tried to reassure Balashev It was evident that he had long been convinced that it was impossible for him to make a mistake and that in his perception whatever he did was right not because it harmonized with any idea of right and wrong but because *he* did it

The Emperor was in very good spirits after his ride through Vilna where crowds of people had rapturously greeted and followed him From all the windows of the streets through which he rode rugs flags and his monogram were displayed and the Polish ladies welcoming him waved their handkerchiefs to him

At dinner having placed Balashev beside him Napoleon not only treated him amiably but behaved as if Balashev were one of his own ...

... st o ... Balashev about the Russian capital not merely as an interested traveler asks about a new city he intends to visit but as if convinced that Balashev as a Russian must be flattered by his curiosity

How many inhabitants are there in Moscow? How many houses? Is it true that Moscow is called Holy Moscow? How many churches are there in Moscow? he asked

And receiving the reply ... more ...

... ns are very devout replied Balashev

But a large number of monasteries and churches is always a sign of the backwardness of a people said Napoleon turnin to Caulaincourt for appreciation of this remark

Balashev respectfully ventured to disagree with the French Emperor

Every country has its own character said he

But nowhere in Europe is there anything like that said Napoleon

I beg Your Majesty s pardon returned Balashev besides Russia there is Spain where there are also many churches and monasteries

This reply of Balashev s which hinted at the recent defeats of the French in Spain was much appreciated when he related it at Alexander s court but it was not much appreciated at Napoleon s dinner where it passed unnoticed

The uninterested and perplexed faces of the marshals showed that they were puzzled as to what Balashev s tone suggested If there is a point we don t see it or it is not at all witty their expressions seemed to say So little was his rejoinder appreciated that Napoleon did not notice it at all and n ...

... e d nner replied that just as all roads lead to Rome so all roads lead to Moscow there were ma ...

... aptitude of this reply but hardly had he uttered the word *Poltá a* before Caulaincourt began speaking of the badness of the road from Petersburg to Mo...

... ur lay pre ously had been that of the Emperor Alexander Napoleon sat down toying with ...

mood which more tha a) reasoned cause makes man conten ed w th h ms lf nd d s posed to consider everyo e h f end. It e med to him that he was surroun l d by men wh adored him, and he f lt co ced that after h dinner Balas too sh Ine d ndw r pe N po on turned t l m w th a ple s nt though sh d ro m le

"Ther tel me this is th room the Emper r A exander occup ed. Stra ge n t t G ner al" he sa d, ev ently not d bt g tl t tl s remark would be greeable t h s h er t ce n ent to prove his N poleon s s per ity t Alexander

Balashev could make r ply nd bowed h s head in silence.

"Yes, Four days go in tl room W tz g erode and Stei wer d l berat g c nt u d N po eo with the sam der e nd elf-co fident smile. "What I ca t dersta d h went n, is that th Empero Ale d l as surrounded himself w th m perso l em es That I d not u dersta d. H he n t thought tha I ma d th sam nd he turned inq ir g to Balash d ev d tly th s thought turned him b k t th tra k f h morning anger hich wa till fresh n h m

And let him kn w th I w ll d so sa d N poleon, risi d push his cup way th h hand. I'll dri e all his W rttemberg Baden and Weimar relatio f Germany Yes, I'll dr them out. Let him prepare asy um for them Russia

Balashev bowed his head with an ir nd cat in t h would lik to mak his bow nd lea e, and onl l ened because h ould t help hearing what wa said to him. N poleon d d ot otice this expression he trea ed Bal shev ot as an envoy from his enem bu as man now ful dev ted him and who must p ce his former master umiliation.

"And why has the Emperor Alexander taken ommand f th armies. Wha is th ood f that. War is m pro ession, bu his busi ess is t reign and not command armies. Why has h taken on himself such esponsibility

Again N po eon brought o his snuffbox, p ced severa times up and down the room in lence, and then su en od unexpectedl p to Balashev and h mile, f ent, quickly and simpl if h were d in something ot mere mporta bu pleasin Balashev he raised his h d th fort ear-old Russian genera l d tak g him by the ear pulled t gently mili g ith his lips only

T have one s e r pulled by the Emperor was c ns dered the greatest honor and mark of fav r at tl e Frencl c u t

Well ad er and c urt er of the Emperor Alexand r wl y d t you say anyth n sa l he if t was l cul h presen r to be tl e ad era d co rt er f a yon but h mse f N poleo Are tl e l rses ready f r the gener al? l e added w tl a sl ght in l nation of h l e l reply t B la l low "Let him l em l e ha a l g way t go!"

The l tt r t ke ly B l l c Napoleo nt t Al nder the nters w was com un ated to s n m a cl a l tl e w r began

CHAPTER VIII

AFTE H S INTERVIEW w th P erre in Pr nce A dr w went to Petersburg on business. a l e t ld h f m ly l t really to meet Ana t le Kurágin wl l e felt it ne essary to

So Pr c A d ew l a t g rece ved p[t m nto tl e l en l[rr taff l l f r l u k Pri A d w l d t tl k t[[ert wr t d cl ll g K rá n lle tl gl t l t f h ch lle ge l l h m w tl t some l esl c u t m gl t comp n tl y g Co tes R s tóva d so l e w te l t m t Kurág pe

th l tt ret e l t Ru l w e t n t y am d ew co d t10 lr ce N lrew f l life rt b r Alte l l etr tl e l l ll k

When Balashev had ended Napoleon again took out his snuffbox sniffed at it and stamped his foot twice on the floor as a signal The door opened a gentleman in waiting bending re spectfully handed the Emperor his hat and gloves another brought him a pocket handker chief Napoleon without giving them a glance turned to Balashev

Assure the Emperor Alexander from me said he taking his hat that I am as devoted to him as before I know him thoroughly and very highly esteem his lofty qualities I will de tain you no longer General you shall receive my letter to the Emperor

And Napoleon went quickly to the door Ev eryone in the reception room rushed forward and descended the staircase

CHAPTER VII

AFTER ALL THAT Napoleon had said to him—those bursts of anger and the last dryly spok n words I
you shall r
vinced tha would not wish to see him and would even avoid another meeting with him—an insulted envoy—especially as he had witnessed his unseemly anger But to his surprise Balashev received through Duroc an invitation to dine with the Emperor that day

Bessières Caulaincourt and Berthier were present at that dinner

Napoleon met Balashev cheerfully and ami ably He not only showed no sign of constraint or self reproach on account of his outburst that morning but on the contrary tried to reas sure Balashev It was evident that he had long been convinced that it was impossible for him to make a m stake and that in his perception whatever he d d was right not because it har monized with any idea of right and wrong but because *he* did it

The Emperor was in very good spirits after his ride through Vilna where crowds of peo ple had rapturously greeted and followed h m From all the windows of the streets through which he rode rugs flags and his monogram were d splayed and the Pol sh ladies welcom ing him waved their handkerch efs to him

At dinner having placed Balashev beside him Napoleon not only treated h m amiably but behaved as if Balashev were one of h s own courtiers one of those who sympath ized with his plans and ought to rejoice at h s succes I the course of conversation he mentioned Mos cow and questioned Balashev abou t the Rus s an capital not merely as an nterested trav eler asks about a new city he intends but as if

c ouses? Is it true that Moscow is called Holy Moscow? How many churches are there in Moscow? he asked

And receiving the reply that t more

s ans are very devout replied Bal ashev

But a large number of monast ch
of
lan preciation of this remark

Balashev respectfully ventured to d sagree with the French Emperor

Every country has its own character said he

But nowhere in Europe is there anythin like that said Napoleon

I beg Your Majesty s pardon returned Bal ashev besides Russia there is Spain wher there

T
rece
muc ciated when he related it at Ale ander s court but it was not much apprec at at Napoleon s dinner where it passed unr ticed

The uninterested and perplexed faces the marshals showed that they were puzzled to what Balashev s tone suggested If there a point we don t see it or it is not at all witt their expressions seemed to say So little h s rejoinder
not not
throug
to Mosc
alert all ugh the d nner repl ed that as all roads lead to Rome

w te at the aptitude of this reply hardly had he uttered the word *Poltava* be Caulaincourt began peaking of the badne the road from Petersburg to Moscow a his Petersburg reminiscences

After dinner they went to d nk coff

Bourı nne wh he sa d wa the onl person h M l m elle Bour enne a d T kl n but

If was erv hard, b t he lso kne that could not help t me t l er nd tl t he d served Wh does P ce Andrew who ees this, say th t m bo t h te Does h th k me sc undrel o ld fool wl o tho t y easo k p h ow dau hter dista e and tt hes tl Frenchw m t himself? H does t d rst d so I must ex pl t dh m t her e out th ht th ld p A d h began e pl why h could t p t p w th l d u ht eason character

If ask me sa d Pr \ drew w tl t look g p (h wa ce su g h f ther f th first ti h l (e) I d d n t w h to peak bo t t, b as k l w ll g e ou m fra k p If l er is ny derstand dd sc d bet een y u I M ry I ca t blam h f t t ll I k who he l es d espec y S y u k me continued Pr \ drew becom rr tabl — h was lway l bl t do f late— I ca I sa that if ther v m u derstand ings th y re caused b that w rthless w ma ho t fit t be my ister mp

Th d ma t first ta d fi edly tl son d un tural m l d losed the fresh gap betwee h ecth t wl ch Pr Andrew uld et u med.

Wh compa n, m dea bo El ? Y u lread been Il t er El

F th l d d t wa t j dge sa d Pr A drew hard d b t t e b t u h ll ed m nd I h sa d nd lw y ll say tha M ry is n bl m bu those t blam —d to bl m — tha F d m n.

Ah, he ha passed j dgm p sed j d ment sa d h ld ma l w ce d seemed to Pri A drew w tl som e mba ra m b t ther h uddenly j mped up nd cr ed Be ff, be ff Le tr c of you re ma her

Pri A drew wished t lea t ce but Prin ess Mary persuaded l m t tay n ther day That day he did see h father wh did not lea e his room d dmitted o one

wa th t he so l t d d d t ot h d l t l e f rr t d rness f l so wl cl l e l d l ped t re waken l y caress ng tl e boy a d tak l m on h s knee.

W ll go o sa d h son

Pri ce An lr w tho t reply g p t l m f h oom

w tl t form er tens ty d he ha t ed to escap fro tl ese ct o es d t fi d som w k soo poss ble.

So y u e dec led to go \ drew ked h ter

Tl k God th t l ca repl ed Pr An d w l m ery so ry you can t.

Wl do you say that epl ed Pri cess M ry Why do you say that wh n y u a e go ng to l rr bl wa d l s so old M de m ll B ur enne says h has bee sk bout o

A soo h began t speak of that, l e l p trembled d h tears began to fall Prince A drew tu ned way nd began pac th room

Ah my God my God When o e th ks who d what—what trash—ca cause people m ry h sa d w th mal gn ty tl t farmed Pr cess M ry

She u derstood th t wh n speak of trash he f rred n t ly to M demo elle Bouri nn th cau e of he m ry but lso to th m n ho had u ed his ow h pp ness.

A d w O th I beg l treat of yo sl sa d t uch his lbow nd look g t h w tl eyes that h tl ro l her tears. I u d rst d you (h looked dow) Don t m th t sorr w the work of m M n ar H tools. She look d l ttl bo Pr n e A dre l d w th the nfid nt ccu t med

and then in Switzerland and Rome but he even dreaded to recall them and the bright and boundless horizons they had revealed He was now concerned only with the nearest practical matters unrelated to his past interests and he seized on these the more eagerly the more those past interests were closed to him It was as if that lofty infinite canopy of heaven that had once towered above him had su[illegible]
into a low [illegible]
in which [illegible]
mysteri[illegible]

Of the [illegible]
him an [illegible]
familiar [illegible] on duty on Kutuzov's staff he applied himself to business with zeal and perseverance and surprised Kutuzov by his willingness and accuracy in work Not having found Kurágin in Turkey Prince Andrew did not think it necessary to rush back to Russia after him but all the same he knew that however long it might be before he met Kurágin despite his contempt for him and despite all the proofs he deduced [illegible]
it was not [illegible]
—he knew [illegible]
not be able [illegible]
than a rave[illegible]us man can help snatching at food And the consciousness that the insult was not yet avenged that his rancor was still unspent weighed on his heart and poisoned the artificial tranquillity which he managed to obtain in Turkey by means of restless [illegible] and rather vainglorious and ambitious activity

In the year 181[illegible] when news of the war with Napoleon reached Bucharest—where Kutuzov had been living for two months passing his days and nights with a Wallachian woman—Prince Andrew asked Kutuzov to transfer him to the Western Army Kutuzov who was already weary of Bolk[illegible]

Before joining the Western Army which was then in May encamped at Dr[illegible]ssa Prince Andrew visited Bald Hills which was directly on his way being only two miles off the Smolensk highroad During the last three years there had been so many changes in his life he had thought felt and seen so much (having traveled both in the east and the west) that on reaching Bald Hills it struck him as strange an[illegible]

[illegible] pillars and drove up the avenue leading to the house as if he were entering an enchanted sleepin[g] castle The same old stateliness the same cleanliness the same stillness reigned there and inside there was the same furniture the same walls sound and smell and the same timid faces only somewhat older Princess Mary was still the [illegible]
[illegible] plain [illegible]
and joyles[s] [illegible]
fear and co[illegible]
rienne was [illegible] coquettish self-satisfied girl enjoying every moment of her existence and full of joyous hopes for the future She had merely become more self-confident Prince Andrew thought Dessalles the tutor he had brought from Switzerland was [illegible]
of Rus[illegible]
the serv[illegible]
tellin[g] [illegible]
tor [illegible]
onl[illegible]
able [illegible] up on one side of his mouth [illegible] character he was the same as ever only showing still more irritability and skepticism as to what was happening in the world Little Nicholas alone had changed He had grown become rosier [illegible] curly dark hair and when merry and laughing quite unconsciously lifted the upper lip of his pretty little mouth just [illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible] all remained as of old the inner relations of all these people had changed since Prince Andrew had seen them last The household was divided into two alien and hostile camps who changed their habits for his sake and only met because he was there To the one camp belonged the old prince Mademoiselle Bourienne and the architect to the other Princess Mary Dessalles little Nicholas and all the old nurses and maids

During his stay at Bald Hills all the family dined together but they were ill at ease and Prince Andrew felt that he was a visitor for whose sake an exception was being made and that his presence made them all feel awkward Involuntarily feeling th[is] at dinner on the first day he was taciturn and the old prince noticing this also became morosely dumb and retired to his apartments directly after dinner In the evening when Prince Andrew went to him and trying to rouse him began to tell him of the young Count Kámensky's campaign the old prince began unexpectedly to talk about Princess Mary blaming her for her superstitions and her dislike of Mademoiselle

m ch f. I the d rs ued t was stated not that the Empero w ld take comma d but onl that h uld be w th th rmy The Em pero mo eo er had with him not a comma d er in chi f taff b t the mperial he dquarters staff. I t e da e him wa th head f th mperial staff, Quartermaster General Pr nce V k nski as well as generals, mperi l a des-decamp dipl matic fficials, d l rge m ber f f re ners, b t n t the army taff. Bes des these there were ttenda e on th Empero th t) defi te appo ntm ts Arakchéev the ex M te f W r Co t Ben en the se ge eral in ra k th Gra d Duk Tsaré ch Con ta t e Pá lo ch Cou t Rumyántse th Ch cell r Ste a f rmer R—

ia n r W lzoge —a d ma y others. Though these men had n m l tary ppo t ment in th arm the pos t o ga them fl en e, d ft corp mma der r e en the comma der in chi f, did not kn w n what cap city h as q est ed by Be n the Gra d Duke Arakché o Pr n V lk nsk as e this that d e dd d n tk w wh ther erta rder ece ed n th form f d emanated from the ma who ga e t o from th Emp ro and wheth t had to be ex ecuted t. B t this was o ly th ext rn l co d tio the esse t l n fica ce of th presence of th Emp d of ll these peo-pl from urt r po t of ew (d n n Empero ca tr ll becam court ers) wa clear t everyo It was this the Emp ro d d not assum the t tl f comma de in chi f but disposed of ll the armies th m n und h m er his ass ta ts. Arakchéev was f thful custodian to e f der and cted as th so ereign bod guard. Bennigse wa l dlord in th Vilna pro ce who ppeared to be do- th ho rs f th d trict, b t was n eal ty good ge eral usef l d user d eady t hand to epl Barcl y Th Gra d D k as ther because t ted him t be Th ex M er Ste wa ther because his d ce as seful d th Empero Alexander h ld him high esteem personally Armf ldt ru lently ha ed N poleon d wa ge ral full f self-c fid qual that always flu ed Alexa der P ul wa there because h was bold d decided peech. Th dju ta ts general wer ther because they lways companied the Emp ro d lastly and chi f ly Pf l as ther because h had drawn p

the pl n of camp gn aga st N poleon a d ha , t duced Alexa der to bel e e in the efficacy of that pl n wa d rect ng the wl ole bus ess of the wa W th Pf el was Wol o n who e pressed Pfuel th hts n more c m preh ns ble way than Pf el himself (who was a harsh book h theorist self-co fident to the po t of despis everyo e else) was able to d

Bes des these Russ n nd f re gners who propounded ew a d unexpected ideas every day—espe ally the f e gn rs, who d d so w tl a bold ess characte ist f people employed a try n t the r own—there w re many sec o dary p rso ges ccomp y g the rmy be cause th r pri pals were there.

Am th op n and o ces n this m m se restless b ll t nd pro d phere Pr c A drew n t ced the f llow ng harply d fi ed bd is ns f te d ncies nd part es

Th first p rty co isted of Pfu l d h s ad herents—m l tary theori ts who bel e ed n a sc ce of war w th mm tabl laws—l ws of obl que mo em ts outfla k s, a d so f rth. Pf l d h dherents dem nded ret em t nto the depths f the cou try ccordan e w th precise laws d fined by pseudo-theory of war d they saw only b rba ism, gn ra ce or il te u n e ery deviatio fr m that theory To this party bel ed the f re gn no-bles Wol o en W tz gerod nd others h fly G rmans.

Th eco d party was directly pposed to the first e extreme as lways happen was met by ep ese t t es of the the Th members f this p rty were tho who had dema ded n d an from V l to P l nd d f eed m from all prearra ged pl s. Bes des be g d —

u g Erm l (who was begi g t ome t the f t) nd others. At that time f mous jok f Ermól was be g circulated that as great f vo h h d pet tio ed the Em pe to m k him Germa Th men f that p rty rem mber S ro sa d that what o had t do was ot reaso or stick p to m ps, but t fight, beat th emy keep h m ut f Russ d not let th army get dis-couraged.

To the third p rty— n which the Empero h d m —
who m
ther t
ca iliar

look with which one looks at the place where a familiar portrait hangs Sorrow is sent by *Him* not by men Men are His instruments they are not to blame If you think someone has wronged you forget it and forgive! We have no right to punish And then you will know the happiness of forgiving

If I were a woman I would do so Mary That is a woman s virtue B

t ... in his unexpended anger suddenly swelled up in his heart

If Mary is already persuading me to forgive it means that I ought long ago to have punished him he thought And giving her no ... repl ... mon ... knew ... e amy

Princess Mary begged him to stay one day more saying that she knew how unhappy her father would be if Andrew left without being reconciled to him but Prince Andrew replied that he would probably soon be back again from the army and would certainly write to his father but that the longer he stayed now the more embittered their differences would become

Good by Andrew! Remember that misfortunes come from God and men are never to blame were the last words he heard from his sister when he took leave of her

Then it must be so! thought Prince Andrew as he drove out of the avenue from the house at Bald Hills She poor innocent creature is left to be victimized by an old man who has outlived his wits The old man feels he is guilty but cannot change himself My boy is growing up and rejoices in life in which like everybody else he will deceive or be deceived And I am off to the army Why? I myself don t know I want to meet that man whom I despise so as to give him a chance to kill and laugh at me

These conditions of life had been the same before but then they were all connected while now they had all tumbled to pieces Only senseless things lacking coherence presented themselves one after another to Prince Andrew s mind

CHAPTER IX

Prince Andrew reached the general headquarters of the army at the end of June The first army with which was the Emperor occupied the fortified camp at Drissa the second army

t ... l ... es Everyone was dissatisfied with the general course of affairs in the Russian army but no one anticipated ... ger of ... no one ... than th ... Princ ... whom ... been assigned on the bank of the Drissa As there was not a single town or large village in the vicinity of the camp the immense number of generals and courtiers accompanying the army were living in the best houses of the villages on both s de of ...

... ski stiffly and coldly an l told him in his foreign accent th ...

Prince Andrew had hoped to find with the army was not there He had gone to Petersburg but Prince Andrew was glad to hear this His mind was occupied by the interests of the center that was conducting a gigantic war and he was glad to be free for a while from the distraction caused by the thought of Kuragin During the first four days while no duties were required of him Prince Andrew rode round the whole fortified camp and by the aid of his own knowledge and by talks with experts tried to form a definite opinion about it But the question whether the camp was advantageous or disadvantageous remained for him undecided Already from his military experience and what he had seen in the Austrian campaign he had come to the conclusion that in war the most deeply considered plans have no significance and that all depends on the ... unexpected movements of the enemy—that cannot be foreseen—are met and ... how and by whom the whole matter is handled To clear up this ... point for himself Prince Andrew utilizing his position and acquaintances tried to fathom the character of the control of the army and of the men and parties engaged in it and he deduced for himself the following idea of the state of affairs

While the Emperor had still been at Vilna the forces had been divided into three armies First ... the Emperor was with the first army but not as commander

nch L I the orders is ed t was tated not th t th Emperor w uld t ke comma d but ly that he ld be w tl the army The Em p ro m eo er h d th h m n t a comma d er chief's st ff b t th mpe l headq rters taff I tt da ce him was the h d of the imperial taff Q rterm te Ge eral Pr ce V lk k a well ge rals mper l a des d camp dipl mat c off als d l rge n m be f f gners b t n t th rmy st ff Bes des these the e e tte dan on the Empero w th ut y defi t ppo tm ts Arakché thee M t of W r Co t Ben gsen the ge eral rank th G nd D k Tsaré ch Co ta t ne P4 l ich Co t Rumyánts the Ch ll Ste f rmer Pru m —

m gré Wol n— nd m y thers Th h thes men h d m l t ry ppo t me t th army th pos t ga e th m fl e ce d fte corp comm d o e n th comm —

g e th th t d ce nd d d tk w hether certa n der e d the f rm f d ie ema ted f m the m n wl o ga to from the Emp d h th it hadt bee ecuted t B t th w ly the t l d t the esse t l on f ca e of th p ese f the Emp d f ll these peo pl fr m t po t f ew (d n Empero tv ll b ca e t rs) w s clear t every n It w th the Emp d d t m the t tle f comma der n chi f b t d posed f ll the rm es the me u d h m re h ss tants Arakché w f thf l custodia to f e d d ted th er on bod gu d. B gs w l dl rd the Vil p o wl ppe d t be do g the h f the d tr t b t w l ty good ge ral f l d is d eady t ha d t pl B l y The Gra d D ke as the beca t t d h m t be Tl M is er Ste n a th b c h d e f l nd the Emp Ale d h ld h m in high este m perso lly Armf ldt ru f tly hated N poleo d w ge ral f ll f self-c fide e qu l ty that lw ys fl e ed Alexa d r P l w th b caus h w bold d d ded p e h Th dj ta its g ral we th b e tl y lw y mp ed the Emp d l tly d hi f ly Pf l was the b caus he h d drawn p

tl e pl n of camp gn aga st Napoleon a d ha ng nduced Alex nder to bel eve in tl e ffi—

do

Bes de these Ru s and fore gners h p opo ded new d u e pected de s ev ry d y—espec lly th for g ers who d d s w tl a boldnes chara ter t c f people employed in ountry n t tl e wn—the e we e m y sec o dary pers ges accomp ny g the rmy be cause the p pals we e th e
Am th —

ıı el d l sadl er ts dem ded r t reme t to tl e d pths f th co try n a co d ce w th n

u y G rm s.

Th eco d p rty was d rectly opposed t the first o e tr m a lw y happe s w met by ep ese tat es of the otl e The me bers of th p ty w e th e wh h d d m nded a d a from Vil t Pol d a d freed m f m ll pre rra g d pl Bes des be g ad ocates of bold —

(wh wa beg n g to m t tl e f t) d otl ers At th t t me a f m us j k f Ermól w s b g ci cul ted that great f r he h d pet tio ed the Em p t m k h m Germ Th men f that p ty r m mbe g S vo s d that wh t e h d to d was n t t re son or st k p m p b t to figl t be t the e my keep h m o t f Russ d ot l t th rmy get di couraged
To
h d m
wh tr
ther t
ci l

ш Arakchée belo g d

look with which one looks at the place where a familiar portrait hangs Sorrow is sent by *Him* not by men Men are His instruments they are not to blame If you think someone has wronged you forget it and forgive! We have no right to punish And then you will know the happiness of forgiving

If I were a woman I would do so Mary That is a woman s virtue But a man should not and cannot forgive and forget he replied and though till that moment he had not been thinking of Kuragin all his unexpended anger suddenly swelled up in his heart

If Mary is already persuading me to forgive it means that I ought long ago to have punished him he thought An ...
reply he
moment
knew was
... ımy

Princess Mary begged him to stay one day more saying that she knew how unhappy her father would be if Andrew left without being reconciled to him but Prince Andrew replied that he would probably soon be back again from the army and would certainly write to his father but that the longer he stayed now the more embittered their differences would become

Good by Andrew! Remember that misfortunes come from God and men are never to blame were the last words he heard from his sister when he took leave of her

Then it must be so! thought Prince Andrew as he drove out of the avenue from the house at Bald Hills She poor innocent creature is left to be victimized by an old man who has outlived his wits The old man feels he is guilty but cannot change himself My boy is growing up and rejoices in life in which like everybody else he will deceive or be deceived And I am off to the army Why? I m ...
k ...

These conditions of life had been the same before but then they were all connected while now they had all tumbled to pieces Only senseless things lacking coherence presented themselves one after another to Prince Andrew s mind

CHAPTER IX

PRINCE ANDREW reached the general headquarters of the army at the end of June The first army with which was the Emperor occupied the fortified camp at Drissa the second army
t
l
... ees Everyone was dissatisfied with the general course of affairs in the Russian army but no one anticipated ... ger of ...
no one
than th

Princ
whom ... assigned on the bank of the Drissa As there was not a single town or large village in the vicinity of the camp the immense number of generals and co ...
h
o
c
F ... nski stiffly and coldly and told him in his foreign accent that ...
m ...
to
rer

Prince Andrew had hoped to find with the army was not there He had gone to Petersburg but Prince Andrew was glad to hear this His mind was occupied by the interests of the center that was conducting a gigantic war and he was glad to be free for a while from the distraction caused by the thought of Kuragin During the first four days while no duties were required of him Prince Andrew rode round the whole fortified camp and by the aid of his own knowledge and by talks with experts tried to form a definite opinion about it But the question whether the camp was advantageous or disadvantageous remained for him undecided Already from his military experience and what he had seen in the Austrian campaign he had come to the conclusion that in war the most deeply considered plans have no significance and that all depend on the way unexpected movements of the enemy—that cannot be foreseen—are met and on how and by whom the whole matter is handled To clear up this last point for himself Prince Andrew utilizing his position and acquaintances tried to fathom the character of the control of the army and of the men and parties engaged in it and he deduced for himself the following idea of the state of affairs

While the Emperor had still been at Vilna the forces had been divided into three ... First ...
ly
one
... Emperor
as with the first army but not as commander

ch f.I th ders sued t w t ted ot th t the Emperor w uld t ke c mm nd but lyth the o ld be tl the army The Em pero mo eo er had with h m t ommand er chi f's t ff b t the imp l he dquarte staff. In att d e on h m w s the h d of the

Bes des these there wer n att d on tl e Empero w th t ny d fi te appo tments Arakchéev th e M ter f War Co t B n men the s ge ral n rank the G d D ke Tsaré ch Co tant Pá l cl Co nt R myá tsev th Ch cell St f rmer

m gré W lzoge — d ma y th rs. Tho h these men had no m l tary ppo t m t the rmy th pos t n ga them fl e e d ft corp mm der o n th mma der ch f d d t k w what cap ty h as q est ed by Be n ose the Gra d D k —

Em pero and wheth t had to be ecu ed t. B t th was nly th extern l d the esse t l gn ficance f th prese f the Empe d f ll these peo pl f m c urtier' po t f ew (and n n Empe c tv ll becam court ers) was clear t every e. It was this the Emper d d n tassum th t tl f comma der in chi f b t d posed of ll th armies th men ar u d h m er his ass ta ts. Arakchéev was f thful custodia to e f o der and cted as th so er gn bod guard. Bennigsen wa la dl d the V lna p ce who ppeared to be do g the honors f the district, b t was eal y good ge eral, usef l n d iser d dy t hand to eplace Barclay The Grand D ke as ther because su ed him to be Th ex M ter Ste was ther because h d usef l nd th Emperor Alexander h ld h m in high esteem personally Armfeld iru lently ha ed N poleon d wa general f ll f self-co fiden e, qual ty that always flu e ed Alexander Paulucci was there because h as bold nd decided in peech. Th adju ta ts general wer there because they lways companied the Emperor nd lastly and chief ly Pfuel was t er because he had drawn up

tl e pl n of campa gn gai st N poleon a d ha g induced Alexa der to bel e e in tl e

a harsh book sh theor t elf-confident to the p t of desp g e eryone el e) was able to do

B des thes Ru n a d f re gners who p pounded new and e pected d as e ery day—e p c lly tl e f e gners who d d so w tl a bold ess chara t st c f people employed n o ntry n t tl e r own—there were ma y sec o dary pers ges omp y g the army be cause tl r pr n p ls we e there

Amo g th p d ces n th im me e restless br ll nt d proud sphe e P A d ew t ced the f ll w g sh rply defi d s bd s of tende c es d p t es

Th f rst p rty e ted of Pfu l a d h s d l e e ts—m l tary theor ts wh bel e ed in sc n e f war w th mm table l ws—l ws f obl q e m em ts outfl nk gs nd so f rtl Pf l nd h dl ents dema ded retirem nt

n lly G rm s.

Th eco d party was d ectly opposed t th first o e ext eme as always happen was met by ep esentat es of th tl e The m mbers f th p rty we th e who had dem ded n d n from V l to P land nd f eed m from all p earra ged pl s. Bes des be g d ocates of bold t th s sect n lso ep e se ted t nalism, wh ch made them st ll m re nes ded th dispute. They w Ru ia B grat Ermól (who was begi n g t m to th fr nt) a d tl ers. At th t t m a f mous joke of Ermol was being ci culated tha as great f o he had pet tioned th Em pe t make h m Germ Th men of that party rememberi Suv ro said that what had to do was n t t reaso t ck p s to maps, but t fight, beat the e emy keep h m ut f Russ d t let the army get dis couraged.

To the thi d party—i which the Empero had most c fid nce—bel ged the courtiers who tried t rran e comp mises between th other two Th members of this party ch fly ci ilians d t whom Arakchéev bel ged,

look with which one looks at the place where a familiar portrait hangs Sorrow is sent by *Him* not by men Men are His instruments they are not to blame If you think someone has wronged you forget it and forgive! We have no right to punish And then you will know the happiness of forgiving

If I were a woman I would do so Mary That is a woman s virtue B it m

t

suddenly swelled up in his heart ... this unexpended anger

If Mary is already persuading me to forgive it means that I ought long ago to have punished him he thought

reply he

moment

knew was

Princess Mary begged him to stay one day more saying that she knew how unhappy her father would be if Andrew left without being reconciled to him but Prince Andrew replied that he would probably soon be back again from the army and would certainly write to his father but that the longer he stayed now the more embittered their differences would become

Good by Andrew! Remember that misfortunes come from God and men are never to blame were the last words he heard from his sister when he took leave of her

Then it must be so! thought Prince Andrew as he drove out of the avenue from the house at Bald Hills She poor innocent creature is left to be victimized by an old man who has outlived his wits The old man feels he is guilty but cannot change h m If

s

Why? I myself don t know I want to meet that man whom I despise so as to give him a chance to kill and laugh at me

These conditions of life had bee i t

be

ne

sei

themselves one after another to Prince Andrew s mind

CHAPTER IX

PRINCE ANDREW reached the general headquarters of the army at the end of June The first army with which was the Emperor occupied the fortified camp at Drissa the second army

t

l

ites Everyone was dissatisfied with the general course of affairs in the Russian army but no one anticipated a ... ger of

no one

than th

Prince

whom he had been assigned ... Barclay de Tolly to the Drissa As there was not a single town or large village in the vicinity of the camp

l

villages on both sides of the river over a radius of six miles Barclay de Tolly was quartered nearly three miles from the Emperor He received Bolkonski stiffly and coldly and told him in his foreign accent that he would mention him to the Emperor for a decision as to his employment but asked him meanwhile to remain on his staff Anatole Kurágin whom Prince Andrew had hoped to find with the army was not there He had gone to Petersburg but Prince Andrew was glad to hear this His mind was occupied by the interests of the center that was conducting a gigantic war and he was glad to be free for a while from the distraction caused by the thought of Kurágin During the first four days while no duties were required of him Prince Andrew rode round the whole fortified camp and by the aid of his own knowledge and by talks with experts tried to form a definite opinion about it But the question whether the camp was advantageous or disadvantageous remained for him undecided Already from his military experience and what he had seen in the Austrian campaign he had come to the conclusion that in war the most deeply considered plans have no significance and that all depends on the way unexpected movements of the enemy—that cannot be foreseen—are met and on how and by whom the whole matter is handled To clear up this last point for himself Prince Andrew utilizing his position and acquaintances tried to fathom the character of the control of the army and of the men and parties engaged in it and he deduced for himself the following idea of the state of affairs

While the Emperor had still been at Vilna the forces had been divided into three armies First the army under Barclay de Tolly second the army under Bagration and third the one commanded by Tormásov The Emperor was with the first army but not as commander

who wished to ga some d a tage wo ld at tract the Empero ttenti n by l udly dvo- cating th ery thi the Empero had h ted at he da befo d would disp te nd shout the council, beati his breast a d chall ng those ho did t gree with h m t d els, t ed p tin that he was prep red t sac fice himself f th c mmo good. A th rd, in the bse ce f ppo ts, betwee two coun cils would mpl sol c t pecial gratu t f

u ork wo ld f en c m dent lly u de t Empero ey A fifth, t h eve l is long-el ed m l di w th th Emper or would tubbornly t o the correctness or his tv f som ewly emer p nd for t bject would prod rguments mo e or less fortib nd correct.

All the men f th party were fi h g f ru es, decora io s, d p mot s, d this pursu t at hed ly th weathercock of mperial favo nd d ectl they not ced t turnin

u at wa per tun sero

rything id this vortex of egotism, co fl ct of ew nd feel gs, and the di ersi f ra e no these peopl — t g th and largest party of those p eoccu pied with personal terests mp rted great con us on and bscur ty t th mmo task. Wha ever q estion ose, warm f these drones, w thout ha fi ished th b zzing on p evious them flew o er o the ew and by their h m dr wned d obscured th voices f those h ere disp t g h estl

From mo g ll these parties, j t t th tim Prince A d ew ea hed th rmy other n th part wa be f rmed d was be- ginn g to raise o ce This was th party of the elders, reasonabl m n experien ed d capab stat ff rs, who, w thout hari an f those co fl ct op io s, were bl to take detached w f hat was go g t th staff headquart rs d to n d mea of escape from th m ddl decisio ntrica cy d eak ess.

Th men f this part said nd tho ht that h was wro g resulted chi fl from th Em- peror presence n th army w h hi mil tary court d from the co sequent p ese ce there

of n ndefi te co d t o al and u teady fl c tuat of relat n wh l in pl ce at court b t harmful an rm that a so ere gn should re gn but n t comm nd the army nd that the only wa out of th pos tio would be for the Empero nd hi court to lea e the army that th mere presence of the Empero paral zed the a t n of fifty thousa d m n requ red t secure h personal s fety d that the worst comma der n ch ef f depe dent w ld be better tha the ery best o e tramm led b th prese ce d a tho ty of th mo h.

Just t th t me Pri ce A drew was l g

h m by th Empero to d scuss the general course of ff irs, he respectfull uggested—on the plea th t t was ecessary f r th so ere gn to r use wa l k sp t n the pe ple of the cap tal—that th Empero sho ld lea e the army

That ous g of the peopl by th r so ere gn d h call to them to d fe d the r co try—the ery nciteme t wh ch wa the ch f caus of Russ tri mph n so f as it wa prod ed b the Tsa s personal presence Moscow—wa uggested t th Empero d ccepted b h m, as p etext f qu tt the army

CHAPTER X

THE LETTER h d ot yet been prese ted to the Emp r wh Ba l y o day t d er formed Bolkónski that th so ere gn wished t see h m personally to q estio him bo t Turk y d that Pr e A drew wa to p e- sent h mself Benn gse quarters t that e

N wa ece ed t the Empero quarters that ery day f fresh mo ement by N po- leo wh l mi ht da ger th rmy—news bsequ tly f u d t be f lse. A d that morn ing Col el M cha d had dden ro nd the Drissa fort ficati ns w th th Empero nd had po ted o t t him that this fortified cam

Pr A drew arri ed t Benn gsen qua ters— country gentleman s house f modera ize, uated on the very ba ks of th river

thought and said what men who have no convictions but wish to seem to have some generally say They said that undoubtedly war particularly against such a genius as Bonaparte (they called him Bonaparte now) needs most deeply devised plans and profound scientific knowledge and in that respect Pfuel was a genius but at the same time it had to be acknowledged that the theorists are often one sided and therefore one should not trust them absolutely but should also listen to what Pfuel s opponents and practical men of experience in warfare had to say and then choose a middle course They insisted on the retention of the camp at Drissa according to Pfuel s plan but on changing the movements of the other armies Though by this course neither one aim nor the other could be attained yet it seemed best to the adherents of this third party

Of a fourth opinion the most conspicuous representative was the Tsarévich who could not forget his disillusionment at Austerlitz where he had ridden out at the head of the

eral confusion The men of this party had b the quality and the defect of frankness in their opinions They feared Napoleon recognized his strength and their own weakness and frankly said so They said Nothing but sorrow shame and ruin will come of all this! We have abandoned Vilna and Vitebsk and shall abandon Drissa The only reasonable thing left to do is to conclude peace as soon as possible before we are turned out of Petersburg

This view was very general in the upper army circles and found support also in Petersburg and from the chancellor Rumyántsev who for other reasons of state was in favor of peace

The fifth party consisted of those who were adherents of Barclay de Tolly not so much as a man but as minister of war and commander in chief Be he what he may (they always began like that) he is an honest practical man and we have nobody better Give him real power for war cannot be conducted successfully without unity of command and he will show what he can do as he did in Finland If our army is well organized and strong and has withdrawn to Drissa without suffering any defeats we owe this entirely to Barclay If Barclay is now to be superseded by Bennigsen all will be lost for Bennigsen showed his incapacity already in 1807

The sixth party the Bennigsenites said on the contrary that at any rate there was no one more active and experienced than Bennigsen and twist about as you may you will have to come to Bennigsen eventually Let the others make mistakes now! said they arguing that our retirement to Drissa was a most shameful reverse and an unbroken series of blunders The more mistakes that are made the better It will at any rate be understood all the sooner that things cannot go on like this What is wanted is not some Barclay or other but a man like Bennigsen who made his mark in 1807 and to whom Napoleon himself did justice—a man whose authority would be willingly recognized and Bennigsen is the only such man

The seventh party consisted of the sort of people who are always to be found especially around young sovereigns and of whom there were particularly many round Alexander—generals and imperial aides de camp passionately devoted to the Emperor not merely as a monarch but as a man adoring him sincerely and disinterestedly as Rostov had done in 1805 and who saw in him not only all the virtues but all human capabilities as well These men though enchanted with the sovereign for refusing the command of the army yet blamed him for such excessive modesty and only desired

staff and consulting experienced and practical men where necessary would himself lead the troops whose spirits would thereby be raised to the highest pitch

The eighth and largest group which in its enormous numbers was to the others as ninety nine to one consisted of men who desired neither peace nor war neither an advance nor a defensive camp at the Drissa or anywhere else neither Barclay nor the Emperor neither Pfuel nor Bennigsen but only the one most essential thing—as much advantage and pleasure for themselves as possible In the troubled waters of conflicting and intersecting intrigues that eddied about the Emperor s headquarters it was possible to succeed in many ways unth

the day after merely to avoid responsibility or to please the Emperor would declare that he had no opinion at all on the matter Another

does not t to k ow nyth s ce he does not beli-ve that a yth g can be k wn Tl e German self assura ce is w rst of all stro ger and m re repuls e tha y othe becau e he magines that h k ows the truth—sc ence—hich he himself ha n ented but wh ch s for him th bsol t truth.

Pf el was de tly of th t so t He had a scien —the theory f bl que mo ements de duced by him from the hi t ry of F ede ck th Great s ars a d ll he cam cross tl e history f mo e rece t warf re eemed to h m bsurd d ba b rous—m n trous coll s ons n hich so ma y bl ders wer comm tted by both des that thes w rs co ld not be called

ble f th pl f camp gn th t ded n J d A erstadt, b t h d d n t see the lea t proof of th f ll b l ty f his tl eory n the d sasters of that war O th o trary th de viat m d from h theory were n h p the sole cau e of th whol d saster d th h

ppl cati His l e f theory m d h m h te everyth pract cal a d h w ld n t l t n to H

He sa d few w d t P A drew d Chern hev bo t th prese wa w th the a f m n wh kn b f h d that ll ill go d wh t d plea ed that t hould be so Tl bru hed t fts f h u k p beh d d the h tly brushed hair h temples p essed th most lo q ently

H pa ed t th ne t oom d the d p q erul so ds f h wer at once hea d f m th e.

CHAPTER XI

PR CE A DREW) w t ll f ll wi g Pfuel t f the room whe Co t Be gsen tered hurr edly and noddi t B lkónsk b t P g w t to th st dy g vi g tructi t h dj t t h w t. The Empero was f ll w h m d B sen had has ened t m k som prep rat d t be ready t rec e the so gn Ch nythe and Prince Andrew we t out to tl e p rch whe e the Emperor s l looked f t gued, was d m u t ng Marqu s Paulucc wa t lk g to h m w tl p t cul r warmth and the Emperor w th h s head be t to tl e left, w s l t n g w tl d ssat f e l a r Tl e Em pero mo ed f rward ev d tly w l g to e d the conversat o b t tl e flu hed d e c ted Ital obl u of decorum f llowed l m d co t nued to speak

And f the man wh d sed f rm ng th camp—the Drissa camp sa d P ulc e s th Emperor m u ted the st p and not cing Pr nce A d ev ca ed l s u f m l r f ce as to th t person s re co t nued P ul c c desperately pp ently u able to restra h mself th m who d sed the Dri sa camp —I ee n hern t s b t the l n t asylum or tl e gall w

W tl t heed tl e d of th Ital a s re m rks d as th l not hear g them the Empero ecogn g B lkónsk ddressed h m gr ly

I m s ry gl d t see so Go n there wh they e meet a d w t f me

The Empero w t t th t dy He wa f ll ed by P c Pete M kháyl ch V l kó ks a d B n St n d th doo cl ed beh d th m. Pr e A dew t k g ad an tag f th Empe perm ss o ccomp n d Pa l cc wh m he l d k own n Turkey n to th draw g oom wh th c l as as embled

Pr e P te M khá l h V lk s k occu p ed tl e pos t w e of l l of the Empero staff He cam o t of the st dy to the draw g oom w th me m ps wl ch l e p d on table d p t q estu s o wh ch he w l ed to l th op n of the gentle me p ese t. Wh t had h pp ed w that n ws (wl ch ft rw rd p o ed t be f l e) h d b e ed d the ht of m m t by th F e ch t outfl k the D ss camp

Th first t p k wa G neral Armf ldt who to m et th d ff ult tl t p es ted it elf u p ctedly p posed a p rf ctly new po t w y f m tl e P tersburg d Mos ow ro ds Th eason f th s wa e pl cable (less h w l ed to h w tl the too c uld h op) b t h urged th t th po t th rmy h ld u te d tl e wa t th er y It wa pl th t Armf ldt h d th l t o t th t pl n l o nd n w po ded t t so m ch t w th q es t o p t—wh ch n f ct his pl n d d n t n

Neither Bennigsen nor the Emperor was there but Chernyshev the Emperor s aide de camp received Bolkonski and informed him that the Emperor accompanied by General Bennigsen and Marquis Paulucci had gone a second time that day to inspect the fortifications of the Drissa camp of the suitability of which serious doubts were beginning to be felt

Chernyshev was sitting at a window in the first room with a French novel in his hand This room had probably been a music room there was still an organ in it on which some rugs were piled and in one corner stood the folding bedstead of Bennigsen s adjutant This adjutant was also there and sat dozing on the rolled up bedding evidently exhausted by work or by feasting Two doors led from the room one straight on into what had been the drawing room and another on the right to the study Through the first door came the sound of voices conversing in German and occasionally in French In that drawing room were gathered by the Emperor s wish not a military council (the Emperor preferred indefiniteness) but certain persons whose opinions he wished to know in view of the impending difficulties It was not a council of war but as it were a council to elucidate certain questions for the Emperor personally To this semicouncil had been invited the Swedish General Armfeldt Adjutant General Wolzogen Wintzingerode (whom Napoleon had referred to as a renegade French subject) Michaud Toll Count Stein who was not a military man at all and Pfuel himself who as Prince Andrew had heard was the mainspring of the whole affair Prince Andrew had an opportunity of getting a good look at him for Pfuel arrived soon after himself and in passing through to the drawing room stopped a minute to speak to Chernyshev

At first sight Pfuel in his ill made uniform of a Russian general which fitted him badly like a fancy costume seemed familiar to Prince Andrew though he saw him now for the first time There was about him something of Weyrother Mack and Schmidt and many other German theorist generals whom Prince Andrew had seen in 1805 but he was more typical than any of them Prince Andrew had never yet seen a German theorist in whom all the characteristics of those others were united to such an extent

Pfuel was short and very thin but broad boned of coarse robust build broad in the hips and with prominent shoulder blades His face was much wrinkled and his eyes deep set His hair had evidently been hastily brushed smooth in front of the temples but stuck up behind in quaint little tufts He entered the room looking restlessly and angrily around as if afraid of everything in that large apartment Awkwardly holding up his sword he addressed Chernyshev and asked in German where the Emperor was One could see that he wished to pass through the rooms as quickly as possible finish with the bows and greetings and sit down to business in front of a map where he would feel at home He nodded hurriedly in reply to Chernyshev and smiled ironically on hearing that the sovere n was in specting the fortifications that he Pfuel had planned in accord with his theory He muttered something to himself abruptly and in a bass voice as self assured Germans do—it mi ht have been stupid fellow or the whole affair will be ruined or somethin absurd will come of it Prince Andrew did not catch what he said and would have passed on but Chernyshev introduced him to Pfuel remarking that Prince Andrew was just back from Turkey where the war had terminated so fortunately Pfuel barely glanced—not so much at Prince Andrew as past him—and said with a laugh That must have been a fine tactical war and laughing contemptuously went on into the room from which the sound of voices was heard

Pfuel always inclined to be irritably sarcastic was particularly disturbed that day evidently by the fact that they had dared to inspect and criticize his camp in his absence From this short interview with Pfuel Prince Andrew thanks to his Austerlitz experiences was able to form a clear conception of the man Pfuel was one of those hopelessly and immutably self confident men self confident to the point of martyrdom as only Germans are because only Germans are self confident on the basis of an ab tr t n t on—science that is the supposed knowledge of absolute truth A Frenchman is self assured because he regards himself personally both in mind and body as irresistibly attr t e to men and women An Englishman i elf ssur l a l e n a it en of the best-organ ed stat the rld and therefore as an Englishman h k w what he should do a l kn t that all he does as an Englishman is undoubtedly rre t An Italian is self assured l ecau e s ex tal le and easily forgets himself and other people A Ru an is self assured just because he kn noth ing and

does ot t to kn w yth g s c h does not believe that a ythi g can be k own The German sell ass ra ce is w rst of all str n er a d more epul e tha y other becau e he imagines that he k ws the truth—sc ence—which he himself has e ted b t wh ch is f him th bsol te truth.

Pf el was e d tly f that sort He had scien e—the theory f bl qu m eme ts d d ed by him from the hi t ry f F ederick th G eat s wars d all h cam cross the history f m e ce t wa f eem d t h m bsurd d barb us—m str us c llis in hich so many blunders we e mm tted by both s des that these w rs could ot be call d wars, they d d n t cc d w th the th ry d therefo co ld t erve as materi l f sci nce.

I 806 Pf el had been e of those respo bl fo the pl f camp gn that e ded Jena d A erstadt, b t he d d ot e the least proof f the fall b l ty f h theory n the disas ers f that war O th co trary th de on made f om h theory were n h s p io the sole cause f th wh le d aster d w h —

th
lo
f
en
to

ua l om dev t pract fr m th theory ly p oved t h m th ccuracy of h theory

He sa d few w ds t P A drew d Chern) hev bo t th p ese t w w th the ir f man wh know bef h d that ll will g wr g, d h t d plea ed that t ho ld be so Th brushéd t fts of ha tick g p beh d d the hast ly bru hed ha h temples exp essed this most lo q ently

H p ed to th ext oom, d the d p q erul us so ds f his ce w t once heard f om there.

CHAPTER XI

Pr ce A dr w' eyes wer t ll f ll w Pfu l t f th oom when Co t Ben gsen en tered hurr edly and noddi to Bolkónsk but t p went to th t dy gi g tructio t his dj ta t as he went. The Emperor was f llow g h m and Ben sen had hastened t make som p p rati ns a d to be ready to ce e th so er gn. Cher ny l e and Pr nce A d ew we t o t to the porch whe e the Empero wl o look d f t gued wa d mo nt g M rqu s P lucc was t lk g to h m w th p rt cul r warmtl a d r—

the co ersat o but tl e flu h d and excited Ital obl us of decorum f llowed l m d co t ued to speak

A d as f the man wh ad ed form g th c mp—th D ssa camp d P lu as the Emper mou ted the step nd t g Pr e A d ew can d h unl m l fac as to th t person s e co t nued P luc d per t ly pp tly u able to restra n h mself the m n who d sed th Drissa camp —I ee lternat e b t the l n t ca ylum or the g ll ws!

W tho t heed g tl e e d f th Ital n re mark a d as tho gh ot heari g them the Emp o r comn g Bolkó sk addres ed h m gr ously

I am ery gl d to see yo Go n there where th y e meet — d w t f r me

The Empero went to tl st dy He w s f ll w d by Prin e P ter M kháyl ch Vol k k d B n Ste n d th door closed beh d them. Pr ce A d ew tak g d tap of th Em —

I
t

eu
Pr p — k
p d th
Emper

the dra g oom w th some maps wh ch he p ead on tabl a d p t q est s o wh ch h w h d to l th p n of the g tle m p ese t. What had happen d was that ew (wl ch fterw ds p ed to be f lse) had b en d d g the ht f m m t by th F e ch to utfl k the Dr ssa camp

The f rst t peak was Ge eral Armfeldt who to m t the d fficulty that p es nted t elf e p ctedly p posed perfectly new pos t w y f om th P tersb rg and Mos cow d Th easo f th was e pl cable (less he wish d to how that h to ld ha op n) b t h u ged that at this po t tl e rmy h ld u te d there w t th emy It was pl th t Arm f ldt had th ht t that pl l g go d ow ex po ded t t so m ch er th q es tions p t—wh ch n fact, his pla did t n-

Neither Bennigs[illegible] but Chernyshe[illegible] received Bolkó[illegible] [illegible] informed him that the Emperor accompanied by General Bennigsen and Marquis Paulucci had gone a second time that day to inspect the fortifications of the Drissa camp of the suitability of which serious doubts were beginning to be felt

Chernyshev was sitting at a window in the first room with a French novel in his hand This room had probably been a music room there was still an organ in it on which some rugs were piled and in one corner stood the folding bedstead of Bennigsen s adjutant This adjutant was also there and [illegible] rolled [illegible] or by [illegible] one st[illegible] [illegible] had been the drawing room and another on the right to the study Through the first door came the sound of voices conversing in German and occasionally in French In that drawing room were gathered by the Emperor s wish not a military council (the Emperor preferred indefiniteness) but certain persons whose opinions he wished to know in view of the impending difficulties It was not a council of war but as it were a council to elucidate certain questions for the Emperor personally To [illegible] cil had [illegible] feldt [illegible] rode [illegible] renegа[illegible] subject) Michaud Toll Count Stein who was not a military man at all and Pfuel himself who as Prince Andrew had heard was the mainspring of the whole affair Prince Andrew had an opportunity of getting a good look at him for Pfuel arrived soon after himself and in passing through to the drawing room stopped a minute to speak to Chernyshev

At first sight Pfuel in his ill made uniform of a Russian general which fitted him badly like a fancy costume seemed familiar to Prince Andrew though he saw him now for the first time There was about him something of Weyrother Mack and Schmidt and many other German theorist generals whom Prince Andrew had seen in 1805 but he was more typical than any of them Prince Andrew had never yet seen a German theorist in whom all the characteristics of those others were united to such an extent

Pfuel was short and very thin but broad boned of coarse robust build broad in the hips and with prominent shoulder blades His face was much wrinkled and his eyes deep set His hair had evidently been hastily brushed smooth in front of the temples but stuck up behind in quaint little tufts He entered the room looking restlessly and angrily around as if afraid of everything in that large apartment Awkwardly holding up his sword he addressed Chernyshev and asked in German where the Emperor was One could see that he wished to pass through the rooms as quickly as possible finish with the bows and greetings and sit down to business in front of a map where he would feel at home He nodded hurriedly in reply to Chernyshev and smiled ironically on hearing that the sovereign was inspecting the fortifications that he Pfuel had planned in accord with his theory He muttered something to himself abruptly and in a bass voice as self assured Germans do—it might have been stupid fellow [illegible] or the whole affair will be ruined or something absurd will come of it [illegible] Prince Andrew did not catch what he said and would have passed on but Chernyshev introduced him to Pfuel remarking that Prince Andrew was just back from Turkey where the [illegible] fo[illegible] a[illegible] [illegible]st have been a fine tactical war and laughing contemptuously went on into the room from which the sound of voices was heard

Pfuel always inclined to be irritably sarcastic was particularly disturbed that day evidently by the fact that they had dared to inspect and criticize his camp in his absence From this short interview with Pfuel Prince Andrew thanks to his Austerlitz experiences was able to form a clear conception of the man Pfuel was one of those hopelessly and immutably self confident men self confident to the point of martyrdom as only Germans are because only Germans are self-confident on the basis of an abstract notion—science that is the supposed knowledge of absolute truth A Frenchman is self assured because he regards himself personally both in mind and body as irresistibly attractive to men and women An Englishman is self assured as being a citizen of the best-organized state in the world and therefore as an Englishman always knows what he should do and knows that all he does as an Englishman is undoubtedly correct An Italian is self assured because he [illegible] form[illegible]

loes not want t know a yth s ce h does not believe that anyth g can be kn wn. The German self ssuran e is worst of ll stro ger and more repuls e tha a y other because he ma nes that he k ws the truth—science—which h himself has in ented b t wh ch is f r him the bsol te truth.

Pfuel was ev d tly f that sort. He had a ence—the theory f bl que mo em nts deduced by him from the hist ry of Frederick the Great wars, d all he came cross n the

wars, they did t ccord w th the theory nd therefore co ld sers as materi lf scien e.

In 806 Pf l had been e of those respo for th pl f camp gn that ended in Jena d A erstadt, but he d d n t see the least proof of th fall b l ty f h theory n the disa ers f that war O the co trary the de tio s mad fr m his theory were his op ion, th sol ca f the wh le disa ter d with charact ristically gleeful sarcasm he ou d remark, "There I sa d th wh l ffa ou d go to the devil Pf l was e f those theoreticians ho so l th theory th t they lose ght f th theory bj ct— ts practical pp icati n. His l f theory made h m hat everyt practical d he w uld t l ten to H was ev pleased b f l es f f il ures resulti from dev t pract e from the theory nly p ed t him th curacy of his theory

He sa d few words t Prin e A drew nd Chern shev bo t the prese t war w th th ar f ma who k ws bef hand that all will go ro g, d wh is t d pleased that would be so The unbrushed tufts f h stick p beh d d th ha tily brushed ha his emples exp essed this most eloquently

H passed th ext room d th deep q erulous so ds f his ce w re t o heard from there.

CHAPTER XI

Prince Andrew's eyes were ll f ll w Pfuel ou f th room wh Co t Be gsen n tered hurriedly and nodd to Bolkónski, but no p us g went t th tudy g vi nstructio to his dj ta t as he w nt. The Emperor was f llow him, d B nn gsen had hastened t mak some prep rati ns and to be ready to ece the so er gn. Chern y h nd Prince Andrew went out nto the po ch, where the Emperor who looked f tigued, was dismount g Marqu s P ulucc was talki g t h m w th p rt cular warmth nd the Emperor w th h head bent to the left, w t d ssatisfied The Em

Ital n out ous o u nd co t ued to pe k.

"And f r the man who d sed f rm g th camp—the Drissa camp sa d P ulucc s the Empero m u ted the steps nd not ci g Pr ce And ew sca ned h u f m l r f ce as t th t person s re co t ed P uluc ci desperat ly apparentl u bl to restra n h ms lf th m n who d sed the Dr ssa camp —I see no ltern t e but the lun t c asylum or the gall ws

W th ut heed the end of the Ital n s rema ks d tho gh n t heari g them the Empero recogn n Bolkónsk addressed h m gra u ly

I am ry gl d t see ou Go there where they re meet nd wa t f me

The Empero went to the tudy He wa foll wed by Prince P t r M kháyl ch Vol kó k and B ron Ste n nd the doo closed beh d them. Pri ce A d ew tak g d an tage f the Empero perm ss n ccomp ed P ulu wh m h had known in Tu key in th draw room wher the o cil as assembled.

Pr nce Peter M khá l ch V lk n k occu p ed th pos as t w e of ch ef f the Empero taff He cam out of th study nto th draw g room w th som m p wh ch he p ead on tabl d put quest on on wh ch h w hed t l ear th op on of the gentle men pres nt. What had happe ed was that news (wh ch fterwards pro ed to be f l e) h d been ec ed d n g the n ght f mo e t b th F e ch to outfl nk th D ssa camp

Th first t peak wa General Armfeldt who t meet th d fficult th t p es nted t ll u pectedl p posed a p fe tly ew pos n way from the Pet rsburg d Mos ow ds The eason f th w e pl cable (nless he w l ed to how hat he too could ha n op) but h urged l t th po t th rmy l ld u d here awa t th nemy I was pl n d Armf ldt had th u ht o t that pl n l go nd w ex pou ded n t so much n w the q es t n pu —wh ch in fact his pl n did n t n-

swer—as to avail himself of the opportunity to air it It was one of the millions of proposals one as good as another that could be made as long as it was quite unknown what character the war would take Some disputed his arguments others defended them Young Count Toll objected to the Swedish general s views more warmly than anyone else and in the course of the dispute drew from his side pocket a well filled notebook which he asked permission to read to them In these voluminous notes Toll suggested another scheme totally different from Armfeldt s or Pfuel s plan of campaign In answer to Toll Paulucci suggested an advance and an attack which he urged could alone extricate us from the present uncertainty and from the trap (as he called the Drissa camp) in which we were situated

During all these discussions Pfuel and his interpreter Wolzogen (his bridge in court relations) were silent Pfuel only snorted contemptuously and turned away to show that he would never demean himself by replying to such nonsense as he was now hearing So when Prince Volkónski who was in the chair called on him to give his opinion he merely said

Why ask me? General Armfeldt has proposed a splendid position with an exposed rear or why not this Italian gentleman s attack—very fine or a retreat also good! Why ask me? said he Why you yourselves know everything better than I do

But when Volkónski said with a frown that it was in the Emperor s name that he asked his opinion Pfuel rose and suddenly growing animated began to speak

Everything has been spoiled everything muddled everybody thought they knew better than I did and now you come to me! How mend matters? There is nothing to mend! The principles laid down by me must be strictly adhered to said he drumming on the table with his bony fingers What s the difficulty? Nonsense childishness!

He went up to the map and speaking rapidly began proving that no eventual ... ter the ef... thing h... were re... [illegible] the enemy would inevitably be destroyed

Paulucci who did not know German began questioning him in French Wolzogen came to the assistance of his chief who spoke French badly and began translating for him hardly able to keep pace with Pfuel who was rapidly demonstrating that not only all that had happened but all that could happen had been foreseen in his scheme and that if there were now any difficulties the whole fault lay in the fact that his plan had not been precisely executed He kept laughing sarcastically he demonstrated and at last contemptuously ceased to demonstrate like a mathematician who ceases to prove in various ways the accuracy of a problem that has already been proved Wolzogen took his place and continued to explain his views in French every now and then turning to Pfuel and saying Is it not so your excellency? But Pfuel like a man heated in a fight who strikes those on his own side shouted angrily at his own supporter Wolzogen

Well of course what more is there to explain?

Paulucci and Michaud both attacked Wolzogen simultaneously in French Armfeldt addressed Pfuel in German Toll explained to Volkónski in Russian Prince Andrew listened and observed in silence

Of all these men Prince Andrew sympathized most with Pfuel angry determined and absurdly self confident as he was Of all those present evidently he alone was not seeking anything for himself nursed no hatred against anyone and only desired that the plan formed on a theory arrived at by years of toil should be carried out He was ridiculous and [illegible] ly sarca[illegible] spect by [illegible] sides th[illegible] [illegible]ks of all except Pfuel had one common trait that had not been noticeable at the council of war in 1805 there was now a panic fear of Napoleon s genius which though concealed was noticeable in every rejoinder Everything was assumed to be possible for Napoleon they expected him from every side and invoked his terrible name to shatter each other s proposals Pfuel alone seemed to consider Napoleon a barbarian like [illegible] who op[illegible] [illegible] addressed him and the way Paulucci had allowed himself to speak [illegible] the Emperor but above all from a certain desperation in Pfuel s own expre[illegible] it was clear that the others knew and Pfuel [illegible] felt that his fall was at hand And despite his self confidence and grumpy German sarcasm he was pitiable with his hair smoothly brushed on the temples and sticking up in tufts behind Though he concealed the fact under a show of irritation and contempt he was evidently in

desp ır th t the le rem g chan e f se ı fyı g h s theory by l uge e pe ment and pm ı, t so d e to tl e ı l ole w rld was sl pp g ay from hım

polygl t talk and t the e s rm es plan ret t t d ho t felt notl but amaze-

t a d t b ny ce ce f r nd th t tl eref e th e can be os ch th g a a m l tary g — w ppea ed to h m a b- truth Wh t theory d scie e s po bl bo t m tter the c d t s d c cum st es f l h a e u k w a d nn t be d fi d. pec lly whe th t e gth of the ıı g f es ca t b er d? N ne ble t f ee wl t d t n u the e eı y rm es ll b d y t me d e ga ge tl e f f th th t d l m t S m t m —whe the e n t ard t th f tt t t We ut fll d t ıt ru g but a bra d j lly l d h sh ts H rrah — d t l m nt of fi e th d w th th ty th sa d as t S h Grabern wh le t t m s f fty tho sa d run f m l t th d t A terl t Wh t scı e ca the e b n m tte n wh ch as ın all pra t cal matters tl g b defi d de ryth g d p d umerabl o d t the gn fi f wl l determ d t p rt l m m t wl h rr es o k

p Am f ldt the d tl ey r ll good d ll b d d the d ta es f y ugges t c b s ly t th m m t f t l \ d l y d th y ll pe k f m l tary gen ıl m g wh ca d b d t be b l t p t th right t m d y wh t go to th r gl t d wl t tl e left? It ly b m l y m t d w th

— n ım ş w the best

butes—l e ı etrv t n l r ess nd ı h lo pl ıc q r g l bt He l ll be l m ted

ta y act n l pen ls n t on them but on the ma n tl e ra ks wl o sl its We re lost! or

l aulu ue ı ı ı u c y c w ß

At the rev ne t d y tl Empe or ked P e A d ew wh e he wo ld l ke to serv nd l ce A d ew l tl t d g c urt cl f e b t k gt re na n ttach d to tl so e gn p rs n b t for p rm ss on to serve n th rmy

CHAPTER XII

BEFO THE N G of tl e camp gn Ros- tó h d re e d letter f om h p ents n wh h tl ey t ld l n b efly of N tásl ll ess d the b k g off of he e ga m t to Pr n e And ew (l h they pl d by Na tál l g ı t l l n) d ga n ked N cl ol to t r f m th rmy d ret rn home O e g th s l tte N ch l d d t m ke ny tt pt to g t le e of b- ce to t f m th rmy b t t to h s p ts tl t l e w s rry N tál was ll d l r e g m t b k n off nd tl at l would do ll h ld t meet the r l es T S y l wr t ep t ly \d d f d fmys ull l e wrot N tl g b t l o ld k p m f m etur g t tl try B t w t tl nme e m t f the camp g I sh ld fe l d h n o ed t ly my m l ey but n my ow f I p efe ed my wn l pp es to my l d d ty t tl T tl l d But tl sl ll be o l t ep rat B l c e m d tly th w f l m t ll l d t lll d by y u I w ll th w p eryth d fly t

swer—as to avail himself of the opportunity to air it It was one of the millions of proposals one as good as another that could be made as long as it was quite unknown what character the war would take Some disputed his arguments others defended them Young Count Toll objected to the Swedish general s views more warmly than anyone else and in the course of the dispute drew from his side pocket a well filled notebook which he asked permission to read to them In these voluminous notes Toll suggested another scheme totally different from Armfeldt s or Pfuel s plan of campaign In answer to Toll Paulucci suggested an advance and an attack which he urged could alone extricate us from the present uncertainty and from the trap (as he called the Drissa camp) in which we were situated

During all these discussions Pfuel and his interpreter Wolzogen (his bridge in court relations) were silent Pfuel only snorted contemptuously and turned away to show that he would never demean himself by replying to such nonsense as he was now hearing So when Prince Volkónski who was in the chair called on him to give his opinion he merely said

Why ask me? General Armfeldt has proposed a splendid position with an exposed rear or why not this Italian gentleman s attack—very fine or a retreat also good! Why ask me? said he Why [illegible] know [illegible] that [illegible] time that he asked his opinion Pfuel rose and suddenly growing animated began to speak

Everything has been spoiled everything muddled everybody thought they knew better than I did and now you come to me How mend matters? There is nothing to mend! The principles laid down by me must be strictly adhered to said he drumming on the table with his bony fingers What is the difficulty? Nonsense childishness

He went up to the map and speaking rapidly began proving that no eventuality could alter the efficiency of the Drissa camp that everything had been foreseen and that if the enemy were really going to outflank it the enemy would inevitably be destroyed

Paulucci who did not know German began questioning him in French Wolzogen came to the assistance of his chief who spoke French badly and began translating for him hardly able to keep pace with Pfuel who was rapidly demonstrating that not only all that had happened but all that could happen had been foreseen in his scheme and that if there were now any difficulties the whole fault lay in the fact that his plan had not been precisely executed He kept laughing sarcastically he demonstrated and at last contemptuously ceased to demonstrate like a mathematician who ceases to prove in various ways the accuracy of a problem that has already been proved Wolzogen took his place and continued to explain his views in French every now and then turning to Pfuel and saying Is it not so your excellency? But Pfuel like a man heated in a fight who strikes those on his own side shouted angrily at his own supporter Wolzogen

Well of course what more is there t[illegible] ex plain?

Paulucci and Michaud both attacked Wolzogen simultaneously in French Armfeldt addressed Pfuel in German Toll explained to Volkónski in Russian Prince Andrew listened and observed in silence

Of all these men Prince Andrew sympathized most with Pfuel angry determined and absurdly self confident as he was Of all those present evidently he alone was not seeking anything for himself nursed no hatred against anyone and only desired that the plan formed on a theory arrived at by years of toil should be carried out He was ridiculous and unpleasantly sarcastic but yet he inspired in [illegible] spect by [illegible] sides th[illegible] one con[illegible] at the c[illegible] panic fe[illegible] concealed was noticeable in every rejoinder Everything was assumed to be possible for Napoleon they expected him from every side and invoked his terrible name to shatter each other s proposals Pfuel alone seemed to consider Napoleon a barbar[illegible]

[illegible] which the courtiers addressed him and the way Paulucci had allowed himself to speak of him to the Emperor but above all from a certain desperation in Pfuel s own expressions it was clear that the others knew and Pfuel himself felt that his fall was at hand And despite his self confidence and grumpy German sarcasm he was pitiable with his hair smoothly brushed on the temples and sticking up in tufts behind Though he concealed the fact under a show of irritation and contempt he was evidently in

tiche, spoke grandiloque tly of the Saltánov dam be a Russian Therm pyl e d of how deed orthy f t q ty h d been per f rmed by General R é k He recounted h w Raé k had led h s t o so s onto the d m u der terrific fire d had ch rged w th them be- d h m. Rostó heard the t ry a d not o ly said n thi g t e co rage Zdrzhin k enthu asm b t o the contrary looked l ke a man ashamed f h t he was hear g th u h w th no inte u n f contrad cting t. S ce th cam p ign of Aust l tz d of 8 7 R tó knew by e p r that men alw ys l e when de- scrib m l t ry expl ts s he h mself h d d hen eco t them bes des th t he had experi ce u h t k ow th t noth g happe s n ar t all w can m g ne o re h A d

p e, there must ha e been ch co f on d cro ding n th dam th t wa be g at

I uld n t ha seen h w w th hom Ra vsk came th d m And e n those wh d d see t w ld ot h be n m ch mul ted by t f wh t h d they t do th Raévsk tend r p ter l feel gs when the own k were d

t k my brothe Péty tl e e n Ilyi hos tra ger t m b t a c lad b t would ha e tried to put th m som here u d co er N ch l co t ed t th k he l te ed t Zdrzh n k B t l e d d w s express h th hts f h m tters too h had ga ed e pen e H k w that th tal red ded th gl ry f u rms d so had t p d tt d ubt t. A d h cted ccord ly

I can t ta d th y m r d Ilyí no- ti g that Rostó d d t r l h Zdrzh k co ersat n. My stock gs d hurt nd th ter is ru g my eat! I ll go d look for sh l er The ra eem less h y Ily e t t and Zdrzh k ode way F e min tes later Ilyí splash g thro h the m d came runn g back to the sl nty

Hurrah! Rostóv come q ck! I ve found it About two hundred yards aw y the e s a tavern where ou s have alre dy gathered We can at l t get dry there and Mary Hendríkhov s there

M ry Hendríkhovn was the w fe of the reg mental d ct r p tty young G rman wom n he had m rr ed in Pol nd Tl e doctor wheth e from l ck of me n or becau e he d d n t l ke to p rt from h s you g wife n tl e early days of the r marr ge took he about with h m whe e er the l ussar reg ment went and h jeal usy h d become t nd ng j ke am g the huss officers

Rostó threw h cloak o er h shoulders sh uted to L r l ka to f llow w th the th ngs a d— ow sl pp g n the mud now splash g r gl t thro h t—set off w th Ilyín n the les- g ra d the d rkness th t was occa nally re t by d ta t l gl t ing

Rostó wl ere re you?

Here What l ghtn gl they called to one other

CHAPTER XIII

IN THE TAVERN befor wl ch stood the doctor s co ered cart th e w e alre dy some f e of fi rs M ry He d Ikl pl mp l ttle bl de G rm in dress ng j ck t and n ght cap wa tt g on bro d b ch n the f o t co r Her husb d the doct r l y sle p be h nd l e Rostó a d Ilyín enter g the room w re w lcomed w th merry h ut a d l gl t r

D m h w j lly we are! sa d Rostó l h

A d why d y st nd th e gap g?

Wl t w ll tl ey el Wl y tl w t stre m from them! Don t make ou draw g oom wet

D n t mess M ry He drikh n d es cried the es.

R tó d Ilyí h te ed to fi d a co n r wl er th y co l l h g t to dry cl tl es w th ut ffe d g M ry He drikl o s modesty They we e go g to t y recess beh d p t t n to h ge b t f d t compl tely filled by three off c rs ho s t play g ca d by th l ht of a l tary candl n n empty bo d these officers w ld on ccou t y ld the pos u n M ry He drikh vna bl ged them w th the lo n f p tticoa t t be used a cu t a d be- h d th t creen R t d Ilyí h lped by La ru hka who had brought the r kits

you to press you forever to my ardent breast

It was in fact only the commencement of the campaign that prevented Rostóv from returning home as he had promised and marrying Sónya The autumn in Otrádnoe with the hunting and the winter with the Christmas holidays and Sónya s love had opened out to him a vista of tranquil rural
such as
now all
good pa ie ishes of smart borzois agriculture neighbors service by election thought he But now the campaign was beginning and he had to remain with his regiment And since it had to be so Nicholas Rostóv as was natural to him felt contented with the life he led in the regiment and was able to find pleasure in that life

On his return from his furlough Nicholas having been joyfully welcomed by his comrades was sent to obtain remounts and brought back from the Ukraine excellent horses which pleased him and earned him commendation from his commanders During his absence he had been promoted captain and when the regiment was put on war footing with an increase in numbers he was again allotted his old squadron

The campaign began the regiment was moved into Poland on double pay new officers arrived new men and horses and above all everybody was infected

regiment devoted himself entirely to the pleasures and interests of military service though he knew that sooner or later he would have to relinquish them

The troops retired from Vílna for various complicated reasons of state political and strategic Each step of the retreat was accompanied by a complicated interplay of interests arguments and passions at headquarters For the Pávlograd hussars however the whole of this retreat during the finest period of summer and with sufficient supplies was a very simple and agreeable business

It was only at headquarters that there was depression uneasiness and

my because they had to leave billets they had grown accustomed to or some pretty young Pol

befits a good soldier and not to think of the general trend of affairs but only of the task nearest to hand First they camped gaily before Vílna making acq
Pol

e an order to retreat to Sventsyáni and destroy any provisions they could not carry away with them Sventsyáni was remembered by the hussars only as the *drunken camp* a name the whole army gave to their encampment there and because many complaints were made against the troops who taking advantage of the order to collect provisions took also horses carriages and carpets from the Polish proprietors Rostóv remembered Sventsyáni because on the first day of their arrival at that small town he changed his sergeant major and was unable to manage all the drunken men of his squadron who unknown to him had appropriated five barrels of old beer From Sventsyáni they retired farther and farther to Drissa and thence again beyond Drissa drawing near to the frontier of Russia proper

On the thirteenth of July the Pávlograds took part in a serious action for the first time.

On the twelfth of July on the eve of that action there was a heavy storm of rain and hail In general the summer of 1812 was remarkable for its storms

The two Pávlograd squadrons were bivouacking on a field of rye which was already in ear but had been completely trodden down by cattle and horses The rain was descending in torrents and Rostóv with a young officer named Ilyín his protégé was sitting in a hastily constructed shelter An officer of their regiment with long mustaches extending onto his cheeks who after riding to the staff had been overtaken by the rain entered Rostóv s shelter

I have come from the staff Count Have you heard of Raévski s exploit?

And the officer gave them details of the Saltánov battle which he had heard at the staff

Rostóv smoking his pipe and turning his head about as the water trickled down his neck listened inattentively with an occasional glance at Ilyín who was pressing close to him. This officer a lad of sixteen who had recently joined the regiment was now in the same relation to Nicholas that Nicholas had been to Denísov seven years before Ilyín tried to imitate Rostóv in everything and adored him as a girl might have done

Zdrzhinski the officer with the long mus-

tche, spok gra diloq ently of the Saltán v dm being Russian Thermopyl e, and of how deed worthy f antiquity had been per formed by General Raévski. He recounted how Raévski had led his two sons nto the dam un der terr.. fire and had charged with them be- sd. hm. Rostó heard the st ry nd not only sad nothing to encourage Zdrzhinski s enthu- siasm but, t..e co trary looked like man ashamed f what he was hearing though with no mention of co tradict t. S nce the cam paigns f Austerlitz and f 1807 Rost k ew by experience that men al ays l e when de scribing military expl ts, as he himself had done when recounting them bes des that, h had experience enough to know that noth happens in war at all as we can imagin o re- late it. And so

us in narrow ha ty Rostov looked t him n il nce. In th first place, there must ha been such confusion and crowding the dam that was be ng t tacked that if Raévski did lead his sons there it could have had no effect except perhaps on some dozen men earest to him, thought h "the rest could t ha seen h w o w th whom Raevski cam o to th dam. And even those who did see t would n t ha e been much stimulated by t, f what had they to do with Raévski s tender paternal feel ngs when their own skins wer in da ger And bes des, the fate f the F therla d did not depend o whether they took th Saltán dam not, as we are told was th case t Thermop lae. So why should he ha mad uch sacrifice. A d why expose his own children in th battl I would no ha taken my brother Pétya there, even Ilyin, who tra ger to m but n ce lad, b.. would ha tried o put them som where under co er N cholas co tinued to think, as h liste ed t Zdrzhinski. B t h did not express his thoughts f in such ma ters, too, he had gained experience. H knew that t.. tal redo ded t th gl ry f our arms and so e had to p etend not to doubt t. And h. cted ccordingly

I ca t d this any mo e, sa d Ilyin o- ticing that Ros ó did n t elish Zdrzhinski s con ersation. My ockings and shirt nd the wa er is ru n m sea I'll go and look for shel er Th ra seems less heavy

Ily went out d Zdrzhinski rod way Five min es la er Ilyin splashi g through the mud, came runn ng back to the shanty

"Hurrah Rostó come qu ck! I e found t About two hundred yards way there s a ta ern where ours ha e already gathered. We can at least get dry there d Mary H drikhovn s there.

Mary Hendrikhovna was the wife of the regi mental doctor pretty you g German woman he had married n Poland. The doctor wheth er from lack of means o because he did not like to part from his young wife n the early days of their marriage took her bout w th him wherever th hussar regiment went and his jeal usy had become ta d g joke among the hussar officers.

Rostóv threw his cloak o er his shoulders, sho ted to Lavrushka to f llow with the things, nd—now sl pp g in th mud now spl shing right through t—set off with Ilyin n the les- sening rain d the darkness that was occa s onally rent by dista t l htn g

Rostó where are you

Here. What l htnin they called to on another

CHAPTER XIII

I TH TA ER before which stood the docto s co ered cart, there were already som fi e of ficers. Mary Hendrikhovn plump l ttle bl de German n dress a ja ket a d n ht cap was sit on broad bench in the fro t corner Her husba d, th doct la asleep be hind her Rost nd Ilyin, on enteri the room, were welcomed w th merry shouts and laughter

Dear m how jolly we are sa d Rostó laughi

And why do you tand there gap g

"What sw lls they are Why the water treams from them Don t make our drawing room so wet.

Do t mess M ry Hendrikho n s dress cried other es.

Rostó d Ilyin hastened t find corner where they could cha ge to dry cl thes w tho t ff nding Mary He drikhovna modesty They were go g into tiny recess beh d partition to cha ge but found completely filled by three officers who sat pla n cards by the l ht f a solitary ca dl on an empty box, d these officers w uld on no ccount yield their pos tio

who had brought th ir kits,

you to press you forever to my ardent breast

It was in fact only the commencement of the campaign that prevented Rostóv from returning home as he had promised and marrying Sónya The autumn in Otrádnoe with the hunting and the winter with the Christmas holidays and Sónya s love had opened out to him a vista of tranquil rural
su h
no
goc
bor uors service by election thought he But now the campaign was beginning and he had to remain with his regiment And since it had to be so Nicholas Rostóv as was natural to him felt contented with the life he led in the regiment and was able to find pleasure in that life

On his return from his furlough Nicholas having been joyfully welcomed by his comrades was sent to obtain remounts and brought back from the Ukraine excellent horses which pleased him and earned him commendation from his commanders During his absence he had been promoted captain and when the regiment was put on war footing with an increase in numbers he was again allotted his old squadron

The campaign began the regiment was moved into Poland on double pay new officers arrived new men and horses and above all everybody was infected with the merrily excited mood that goes with the commencement of a war and Rostóv consc o of

u t he knew that sooner or later he would have to relinquish them

The troops retired from Vílna for various complicated reasons of state political and strategic. Each step of the retreat was accompanied by a complicated interplay of interests arguments and passions at headquarters For the Pávlograd hussars however the whole of this retreat during the finest period of summer and with sufficient supplies was a very simple and agreeable business

It was only at headquarters that there was depression uneasiness and intriguing in the body of the army they did not ask themselves where they were going or why If they regretted having to retreat it was only because they had to leave billets they had grown accustomed to or some pretty young Pol h lady If the thought that things looked bad chanced to enter anyone s head he tried to be as cheerful as befits a good soldier and not to think of the general trend of affairs but only of the task nearest to hand First they camped gaily before Vilna making acquaintance with the Polish landowners preparing for re ew a d bein
com
Sven destroy any provisions they could not carry away with them Sventsyáni was remembered by the hussars only as the *drunken camp* a name the whole army gave to their encampment there and because many complaints were made against the troops, who taking advantage of the order to collect provisions took also horses carriages and carpets from the Polish proprietors Rostóv remembered Sventsyáni because on the first d l the
serg
the en of his squadron who unknown to him had appropriated five barrels of old beer From Sventsyáni they retired farther and farther to Drissa and thence again beyond Drissa drawing near to the frontier of Russia proper

On the thirteenth of July the Pávlograds took part in a serious action for the first time

On the twelfth of July on the eve of that action there was a heavy storm of rain and hail In general the summer of 8

ready r e
but had been completely trodden down by cattle and horses The rain was descend ng in torrents and Rostóv with a off
s extend ng onto his cheeks who after r ding to the staff ha l been overtaken by the rain entered Rostóv s shelter

I have come from the staff Count. Have you heard of Raévski s exploit?

And the officer gave them deta ls of the Saltánov battle which he had heard at the staff

Rostóv smoking h s pipe and turning h s head about as the water tri kled down his neck l ste ed inattent ely w th an occasional glance at Ilyín wl o w s press ng close to him. Th s off cer a lad of sixteen who had recently jo ned the reg ment wa now in the same relation to N cholas that Nichol s had been to Denisov se en years before Ilyín tried to imitate Rostóv in everyt ing and adored him as a g rl m ght ha e done

Zdrzhinski the off cer with tl e long mus-

he, spoke gr d loqu ntly of the Saltánov d of

at k h d ie
r terrifi fi a d had ch rg d with them be
de h m, R tó he rd the tory nd not only
d noth g t n urage Zdrzh k s enthu
asm b t o the c t ry l ked l ke a m n

enb g m l t ry e pl ts s he h ms lf h u
d hen re u t g them bes des that h

d cro ded Rostó n th n rrow h ty
Ro tó looked t h m n s l n In th first
pl e ther must h e been such a confus n
d cro di g n th dam th t was b g t
ta ked th t f Raé k d d lead h son ther
t could ha had n eff ct except perhaps on
som do en m earest t h m, th u ht h
th rest co ld n t ha seen h w w th
hom Raé k came to the dam. A d ev n
thos h did see t w uld not ha e been
m ch umula ed by t, f what had they to do
with Raé k s tender p ternal feel gs when
the n k ns wer danger And besides,
th f t of th F therland did not depend n
hether they ook th Sa tánov dam o not, as
are told as th case at Thermopylae. So
hy sh ld h ha e made uch sacrifice And
hy expose his own children n t battl I
ld t ha taken my brother Pétya t ere,
o ev Ilyin who stranger me but a nice
lad, b would ha e tried to put them som
here under cover Nicholas continued to
th k as h listened o Zdrzh nski. But h did
not express his thoughts, for in such matters,
too h had gained experience. He knew that
th tal redounded o the glory of our arms
d so had pretend not to doubt it. And
h cted ac ordingly

I ca t stand t s any more said Ilyin, o
t g tha Ro ov did not relish Zdrzh nski
con ersation. "M stockings and shirt and
th wa er is running on my seat! I'll go and
look for shelter The rain seems less heavy

Ily went out and Zdrzh nski rode away
F minutes later Ilyin, splashing through

d came runni g b ck to the sh nty

th e

er f m l ck of me ns o beca e l u u
l ke t p rt from h s y ng w fe in tl e e rly
d y of the r m rr age took her about w th
h m where er the hu ar reg ment went and
his jeal u y had become a sta d ng j ke among
the huss r ffi ers

r ght th o gl t—s t olt w u lly
e ng rain and the da kn s th t w s occa
on lly ent by d stant l ghtn g

Ro tó where a yo ?

H e Wh t l ghtn ng! they called to one
n ther

CHAPTER XIII

IN THE TA ERN bef wh ch tood the d ct r s
co ered cart ther were l eady some fi e of
ficers. M ry He drikho na, plump l ttle
bl nde German n a dres j ket nd n ht
cap was s tt g on a br d be ch in the fr nt

lau hter

Dear m how jolly we sa d Rostó
laughi

A d why do y u tand ther gap ng?
"What wells they are! Why the w ter
treams from them Don t make our draw g
oom so wet.

"Don mes Mary Hendrikho na s dress
cried other ces.

Rostóv d Ilyi hastened to fi d a rner
wher t ey could cha to dry cl thes
without offend g Mary He drikhovna
modes They wer going to t y r cess
beh nd part tion to change b t fou d
it complet filled by three officers who sat
playing cards by the li ht of sol tary candl
on n empty box, a d these officers w uld
on no coun yield their pos tion Mary
Hendrikhovna ob ed them with h loan
f a petticoa to be used as a curta n and be
hind tha screen Rostó nd Ilyin helped
by Lavrúsh a who had brought their kits

you to press you forever to my ardent breast

It was in fact only the commencement of the campaign that prevented Rostóv from returning home as he had promised and marrying Sónya The autumn in Otrádnoe with the hunting and the winter with the Christmas holidays and Sónya s love had opened out to him a vista of tranquil rural joys and peace such as he had never known before and which now allured him A splendid wife children a good pack of hounds a dozen leashes of smart borzois agriculture neighbors service by election thought he But now the campaign was beginning and he had to remain with his regiment And since it had to be so Nicholas Rostóv as was natural to him felt contented with the life he led in the regiment and was able to find pleasure in that life

On his return from his furlough Nicholas having been joyfully welcomed by his comrades was sent to obtain remounts and brought back from the Ukraine excellent horses which pleased him and earned him commendation from his commanders During his absence he had been promoted captain and when the regiment was put on war footing with an increase in numbers he was again allotted his old squadron

The campaign began the regiment was moved into Poland on double pay new officers arrived new men and horses and above all everybody was infected with the merrily excited mood that goes with the commencement of a war and Rostóv conscious of his advantageous position in the regiment devoted himself entirely to the pleasures and interests of military service though he knew that sooner or later he would have to relinquish them

The troops retired from Vilna for various complicated reasons of state political and strategic Each step of the retreat was accompanied by a complicated interplay of interests arguments and passions at headquarters For the Pávlograd hussars however the whole of this retreat during the finest period of summer and with sufficient supplies was a very simple and agreeable business

It was only at headquarters that there was depression uneasiness and intriguing in the body of the army they did not ask themselves where they were going or why If they regretted having to retreat it was only because they had to leave billets they had grown accustomed to or some pretty young Polish lady If the thought that things looked bad chanced to enter anyone s head he tried to be as cheerful as befits a good soldier and not to think of the general trend of affairs but only of the task nearest to hand First they camped gaily before Vilna making acquaintance with the Polish landowners preparing for reviews and being reviewed by the Emperor and other high commanders Then came an order to retreat to Sventsyáni and destroy any provisions they could not carry away with them Sventsyáni was remembered by the hussars only as the drunken camp a name the whole army gave to their encampment there and because many complaints were made against the troops who taking advantage of the order to collect provisions took also horses carriages and carpets from the Polish proprietors Rostóv remembered Sventsyáni because on the first day of their arrival at that small town he changed his sergeant major and was unable to manage all the drunken men of his squadron who unknown to him had appropriated five barrels of old beer From Sventsyáni they retired farther and farther to Drissa and thence again beyond Drissa drawing near to the frontier of Russia proper

On the thirteenth of July the Pávlograds took part in a serious action for the first time

On the twelfth of July on the eve of that action there was a heavy storm of rain and hail In general the summer of 1812 was remarkable for its storms

The two Pávlograd squadrons were bivouacking on a field of rye which was already in ear but had been completely trodden down by cattle and horses The rain was descending in torrents and Rostóv with a young officer named Ilyín his protégé was sitting in a hastily constructed shelter An officer of their regiment with long mustaches extending onto his cheeks who after riding to the staff had been overtaken by the rain entered Rostóv s shelter

I have come from the staff Count Have you heard of Raévski s exploit?

And the officer gave them details of the Saltánov battle which he had heard at the staff

Rostóv smoking his pipe and turning his head about as the water trickled down his neck listened inattentively with an occasional glance at Ilyín who was pressing close to him This officer a lad of sixteen who had recently joined the regiment was now in the same relation to Nicholas that Nicholas had been to Denísov seven years before Ilyín tried to imitate Rostóv in everything and adored him as a girl might have done

Zdrzhinski the officer with the long mus-

he spoke gra diloquently of the S ltán v
en being Russian Thermopylae and of
deed o thy of ant qu ty h d been per
rmed by Ge eral Raévski. Herecounted h w
Raévsk had led h s tw sons onto the d m un
fire d h d charged w th tl em be
d n t only
hu
n n
w th
cam
knew
by experie ce th t men alw y l e when de
he h m elf h d

and cro
Rostóv looked t h m le e In th first
pl ce th e m th e b en uch c nfus on
and cro d g o th d m th t was be ng t
tacked that f Raé k d d l d h so ther
t co ld h e h d o effe t except perh ps n
som d e men e rest t h m thou ht h
th rest co ld n t ha e h w w th
hom Raé k cam t the d m A d en
those h d d ee t w ld n t h e b en

the f t f th F th l nd d d n t a p u

ld th t k my b ther Pe y u
Ilyi h tranger m but n
l d, b t w ld h tr ed t put th m som
her der N ch las n nued t
th k as h l t d t Zdrzhin k Bu h d d
t exp ess h th hts f n h m ers
too h h d ga ed exper n H kn w th
th tal d u ded h gl ry f u rm
d so h d p nd t t d ub And
b cted d gly
I d h y m d Ilyi no-
ti g th Ros d d l h Zdrzh k
My ock ngs d hurt nd n
th wa er run ng n my se t! I ll go d
look for h l er Th ra seem less heavy
Il u d Zdrzh k od w y
F m es l Ilyin pl h g thr gh

the mud came runn ng ba k to the sl anty
Hurrah! Rostóv come qu ckl I e found it
About two hundred yar ls away there s a tavern
where ours have already gathered. We can at
least get dry there and M ry Hendríkhovna s
there

M ry Hendríkhovna was the wife of the re
ment l doctor a pretty young Germ n woman
he had marr ed in Pol nd The doctor wheth
er fr m lack f me ns or because he d d not
l ke to part from h s youn wife in the early
days of their marri ge took her about w th
h m wherever the hu sar reg ment went and
h jealou y h d bec me a st nd ng joke amon
the hu s r offi ers
h clo k o er h s shoulders

n ng ra n and tl u
on lly nt by d sta t l ghtning
Rostó wl ere are you?
Her Wl at l ghtn ng! they called t one
n ther

PTER XIII

nt
be
tl e
h d her R
oom were wel omed w th merry sh uts nd
l ugh r
D m how j lly we are! l Ro tóv
l ugh g
And why d y u t nd the e g p g?
Wh t swell they el Wl y tl w ter
tre m f m th m! D n t m ke ou l wing
oom so wet
D t mes M ry H drikl o a
cried the e
Rostó l Ilyi h t ed to
wh e they c ul l ge
w h t ffe d ng Mary
m d ty They were g
b l nd p rtition t
t e mpl t ly filled b
pl y g car l l y the
on an empty box, and
cou t
Hen l ikl
f a pett coat to be used as a
h d that were For
by Lavrushka

changed their wet things for dry ones

A fire was made up in the dilapidated brick stove A board was found fixed on two saddles and covered with a horsecloth a small samovar was produced and a cellaret and half a bottle of rum and having asked Mary Hendrikhovna to preside they all crowded round her One offered her a clean handkerchief to wipe her charming hands another spread a jacket under her little feet to keep them from the damp another hung his coat over the window to keep out the draft and yet another waved the flies off her husband s face lest he should wake up

Leave him alone said Mary Hendrikhovna smiling timidly and happily He is sleeping well as it is after a sleepless night

Oh no Mary Hendrikhovna replied the officer one must look after the doctor Perhaps he ll take pity on me someday when it comes to cutting off a leg or an arm for me

There were only three tumblers the water was so muddy that one could not make out whether the tea was strong or weak and the samovar held only six tumblers of water but this made it all the pleasanter to take turns in

Too hot! she replied blushing with pleasure

Ilyin put a few drops of rum into the bucket

finger in it and I ll drink it all up

When they had emptied the samovar Rostóv took a pack of cards and proposed that they should play Kings with Mary Hendrikhovna They drew lots to settle who should make up her set At Rostóv s suggestion it was agreed that whoever became King should have the right to kiss Mary Hendrikhovna s hand and that the Booby should go to refill and reheat the samovar for the doctor when the latter awoke

Well but supposing Mary Hendrikhovna is King? asked Ilyin

As it is she is Queen and her word is law

They had hardly begun to play before the doctor s disheveled head suddenly appeared from behind Mary Hendrikhovna He had been awake for some time listening to what was being said and evidently found nothing entertaining or amusing in what was going on His face was sad and depressed Without greeting the officers he scratched himself and asked

cards behind the partition soon left their game and came over to the samovar yielding to the general mood of courting Mary Hendrikhovna She seeing herself surrounded by such brilliant and polite young men beamed with satisfaction try as she might to hide it and perturbed as she evidently was each time her husband moved in his sleep behind her

There was only one spoon sugar was more plentiful than anything else but it took too long to dissolve so it was decided that Mary Hendrikhovna should stir the sugar for everyone in turn Rostóv received his tumbler and adding some rum to it asked Mary Hendrikhovna to stir it

But you take it without sugar? she said smiling all the time as if everything she said and everything the others said was very amusing and had a double meaning

It is not the sugar I want but only that your little hand should stir my tea

Mary Hendrikhovna assented and began looking for the spoon which someone meanwhile had pounced on

Use your finger Mary Hendrikhovna it will be still nicer said Rostóv

and thereby became s

them Returning from the yard the doctor told his wife (who had ceased to smile so happily and looked at him in alarm awaiting her sentence) that the rain had ceased and they must go to sleep in their covered cart or everything in it would be stolen

But I ll send an orderly Two of them! said Rostóv What an idea doctor!

I ll stand guard on it myself! said Ilyin

No gentlemen you have had your sleep, but I have not slept for two nights replied the doctor and he sat down morosely beside his wife waiting for the game to end

Seeing his gloomy face as he frowned at his wife the officers grew still merrier and some of them could not refrain from laughter for which they hurriedly sought plausible pretexts. When he had gone taking his wife with him and had settled down with her in their covered cart the officers lay down in the tavern covering themselves with their wet cloaks but they did not sleep for a long time now they exchanged remarks recalling the doctor s un

ssees and his wife s del ght, now they ran
er nto the porch d reported what was tak
ng pace in the covered trap. Several times
Rostov coverin his head, tried t go t sleep
but some remark would rouse him and con-
versation would be resumed, to the accom-
paniment of unreasonin merry childlike
laughter

CHAPTER XIV

It was early three o clock but no one was yet asleep hen the quartermaster ppeared with an order to move on to the l ttle t wn of Ostrovna. Still laughing and talking, the officers began hurried getting ready and an boiled some muddy water in the samovar But Rostov went off to his squadron without wa tin for tea. Da was breaking, the rain had ceased, and the clouds were dispers It felt damp and col, especially n cl thes that were still moist. As they left the ta ern in the twil ght of the dawn, Rostov d Ilyin both gl nced under the wet and glistenin leather hood of the doctor' cart, from under th pron of which his feet were sticking out, and the middl of which his wif s nigh cap was vis bl nd her eepr breathin udible.

"She really is dear l ttl thi " said Rostov to Ilyin, who was f ll wi g him.

"A charmin woma " sa d Ilyin, with all the gravity f boy f sixteen.

Half an hour la er th squadron was lined up on the road. Th command was heard to mount and the soldiers crossed themsel es and mounted. Rostó ridin n front ga e th order "Forward and th hussars, with clanking sabers and subd ed talk, th ir horses hoo splashi g in th mud, defiled in f urs and moved alo g the broad road planted with birch trees n each d f llowin the infantry and battery tha had gon on in front.

T ttered, blue purpl cl uds, edden in the east, were scudding bef re th wind. I was growi ligh er d li h er That curly grass which always grows b country roads des became clearly visible, till wet w th th n gh rain, the droop ng branches f th b rches, al so wet, swayed in th wind and flun down bright drops f wa er to n d The sold ers fa es were more and more clearly visible. Rostov always closel f llowed by Ilyi rod along th side f th road between tw rows f birch trees.

When campaigni g Rostó ll wed himself the indulgence of ridi g not egim ntal but Cossack horse. A judge of horses and sportsman he had l tely procured himself a large, fine mettlesome Donéts horse dun-colored, with l ght mane and tail and when he rode t no one could outgall p him. To ride this horse was pleasure to him, and he thought of the horse of the morning of the doct r s wife but not nce of the mpend n danger

F rmerly when go ng nto ct on Rostóv had f lt afra d now he had not the least feel in of fear He was fea less, n t because he had grown used to be ng under fire (one cannot grow used to da ger) but because he had learned how to man ge his thoughts when in danger He had grown accustomed when going nto ct n to th nk bout anyth but what would seem most l k ly to interest him—th mpend ng danger Dur n the first period he tried a d much a h

b rch trees, occas onally plucki g

and careless an a as though he wer out f rid H l nced w th p ty t the ex cited face f Ily n who talked much nd n great gitation. H k ew from experience the t rm u e pectation of terro nd death the cornet was uffer g nd knew that only tim could h lp him.

As soon as the un ppeared n a clear strip f ky beneath th cl uds, th wind fell as f t dared n t poil the beauty of the ummer morning after the torm drops ull continued to fall but vertically now and ll was ull. The wh l un ppeared on the horizon nd disappeared behi d l n narrow cloud that hun bo t. A few minutes later t reap-

ahead f them.

Bef Rost had had tim to cons der nd determine the distance f that firi g, Count Os ermann T ls oy djutant came gall p from V t bsk with orders t dvance t a trot alo th road.

Th squadron overtook nd passed the infantry and th battery—which had also qu ckened th ir pa e—rod down hill, nd pass ng through n empty and deserted village gain

changed their wet things for dry ones

A fire was made up in the dilapidated brick stove A board was found fixed on two saddles and covered with a horsecloth a small samovar was produced and a cellaret and half a bottle of rum and having asked Mary Hendrikhovna to preside they all crowded round her One offered her a clean handkerchief to wipe her charming hands another spread a jacket under her little feet to keep them from the damp another hung his coat over the window to keep out the draft and yet another waved the flies off her husband s face lest he should wake up

Leave him alone said Mary Hendrikhovna smiling timidly and happily He is sleeping well as it is after a sleepless night

Oh no Mary Hendrikhovna replied the officer one must look after the doctor Perhaps he ll take pity on me someday when it comes to cutting off a leg or an arm for me

There were only three tumblers the water was so muddy that one could not make out whether the tea was strong or weak and the samovar held only six tumblers of water but this made it all the pleasanter to take turns in order of seniority to receive one s tumbler from Mary Hendrikhovna s plump little hands with their short and not overclean nails All the officers appeared to be and really were in love with her that evening Even those playing cards behind the partition soon left their game and came over to the samovar yielding to the general mood of courting Mary Hendrikhovna She seeing herself surrounded by such brilliant and polite young men beamed with satisfaction try as she might to hide it and perturbed as she evidently was each time her husband moved in his sleep behind her

There was only one spoon sugar was more plentiful than anything else but it took too long to dissolve so it was decided
Hendrikh
one in t
adding s
hovna to stir it. ed Mary Hendrik

But you take it without sugar? she said smiling all the time as if everything she said and everything the others said was very amusing and had a double meaning

It is not the sugar I want but only that your little hand should stir my tea

Mary Hendrikhovna assented and began looking for the spoon which someone meanwhile had pounced on

Use your finger Mary Hendrikhovna it will be still nicer said Rostov

Too hot! she replied blushing with pleasure

Ilyin put a few drops of rum into the bucket of water and brought it to Mary Hendrikhovna asking her to stir it with her finger

This is my cup said he Only dip your finger in it and I ll drink it all up

When they had emptied the samovar Rostov took a pack of cards and proposed that they should play Kings with Mary Hendrikhovna They drew lots to settle who should make up her set At Rostov s suggestion it was agreed that whoever became King should have the right to kiss Mary Hendrikhovna s hand and that the Booby should go to refill and reheat the samovar for the doctor when the latter awoke

Well but supposing Mary Hendrikhovna is King? asked Ilyin

As it is she is Queen and her word is law

They had hardly begun to play before the doctor s disheveled head suddenly appeared from behind Mary Hendrikhovna He had been awake for some time listening to what was being said and evidently found nothin entertaining or amusing in what was going on His face was sad and depressed Without greeting the officers he scratched himself and asked to be allowed to pass as they were blocking the way As soon as he had left the room all the f
f cers burs
drikhov
and ther
ore attract ve to
them Returning from the yard the doctor told his wife (who had ceased to smile so happily and looked at him in alarm awaiting her sentence) that the rain had ceased and they must go to sleep in their covered cart or every thing in it would be stolen

But I ll send an orderly Two of them said Rostov What an idea doctor!

I ll stand guard on it myself! said Ilyin

No gentlemen you have had your sleep but I have not slept for two nights replied the doctor and he sat down morosely beside his wife waiting for the game to end

Seeing his gloomy face as he frowned at his wife the officers grew still merrier and some of them could not refrain from laughter for which they hurriedly sought plausible pretexts When he had gone taking his wife with him and had settled down with her in their covered cart the officers lay down in the tavern covering themselves with their wet cloaks but they did not sleep for a long time now they exchanged remarks recalling the doctor s un

horse a d gall ped t tersect the p th f the dragoons d so d ed l es One Uhl n stopped another h as on foot fl g h mself to the

Rostó p k g to e gray h se dashed after him. O the way he came upon bu h his galla t h rse cle r d t d alm t b f e he had right d hims lf in his ddle he saw that he would imm d tely o take the en emy h had s l cted. That F e chman by h un f rm ffic w s g g at gall p crouch g n his gray h rs nd urg g t on w h h he

Th

ock t his h rse d f m f ght. R tó reined his h rse and h yes sou ht his fo to s e wh m h had q hed. Th F ench dragoon ffi er was hopp g w th e foot on th gr und th ther be g ca ght n th t rup H eyes crewed p w th fe as f he every mom t exp t d the blow gazed up t R tó with hr k g t rr H p l and m d ta ed f —f d you g w th a dimple n the ch d l ght bl e eyes—was not an enemy fac t ll ted t b ttl field, b t a most d ry h m l k f e B fo Rostó had d d d what t d w th h m th fficer cried, I s rr der! He h rr edly but va ly tri d t get his foot ut f the t rr p d d d t remo e his frighte d bl yes from

goo e was w ded, b t thou h h f was bl edi g h w uld n t gi p his h rse the was perched p b hi d hussar w th h arms d him third was b g helped by n huss t mo nt his horse. I fro t, th Fre ch f try w re fir g as they ran. The hussars gall p d hast ly ba k w th the p iso rs. Rostó gall p d b k w th th rest, wa e f pl t f l g f d p ess h he rt. Som th g gu d fused, wh ch he co ld t t ll cou t f h d me er h m w th the captur f th t ff er d th bl w h had deal him.

Cou t Osterman Tol tóy met the return ing hussars sent for Rostóv tha ked h m nd s d he w uld rep t h gall t deed to the Empe and would recommend h m f St George Cross Wh n sent for by Count Oster m n Rostó remember ng tl t l e had ch rged w thout ord rs f lt su e h s comm d e w s end g fo h m to p sh h m fo b ch f d scipl e Osterm nn s fl tter ng wo ds and p m e of a rew d should tl e

worry g me? he asked h mself as he ode b k f m the ge eral Ilyí ? No he s saf H e I d sgrac d my elf ny w y? No that not it. Som th g else esembl g emors tormented h m Yes h yes that F ench of ficer w th the d mpl And I remembe l ow my rm p used wh n I r ed t

Rostó saw th p soners be g led away d gall p d fter th m t ha e look t h Fre chman w th the d mple n his ch He w s tt g in h f e g n il rm n an l u r p ckhors nd looked nx sly ab t h m The sw d cut on h rm c uld sca cely b

ot st e

All th t d y and the ne t h f e ds d

m n I n d kept tu g someth g er n h mind.

Ro t was lw ys th k h

called m! And d d I do t f my co ntry' s k ? And h w w he to bl m with h d m pl nd blu eyes? A d h w fr ght ned he w l

But wh le N cholas was co der g th

ascended The horses began to lather and the men to flush

Halt! Dress your ranks! the order of the regimental commander was heard ahead For ward by the left Walk march! came the or der from in front

And the hussars passing along the line of troops on the left flank of our position halted behind our Uhlans who were in the front line To the right stood our infantry in a dense column they were the reserve Higher up the hill on the very horizon our guns were visible through the wonderfully ı

illu[illegible]

fror

e[illegible]

[illegible] ky ex

c [illegible] ots with the enemy in the dale

At these sounds long unheard Rostóv s spirits rose as at the strains of the merriest music *Trap ta ta tap'* cracked the shots now together now several quickly one after anoth er Again all was silent and then again it sounded as if someone were walking on deto nators and exploding them

The hussars remained in the same place for about an hour A cannonade began Count Ostermann with his suite rode up behind the squadron halted spoke to the commander of the regiment and rode up the hill to the guns

After Ostermann had gone a command rang out to the Uhlans

Form column! Prepare to charge!

The infantry in front of them parted into platoons to allow the cavalry to pass The Uh lans started the streamers on their spears flut tering and trotted downhill toward the French cavalry which was seen below to the left

As soon as the Uhlans descended the hill the hussars were ordered up the hill [illegible]

the batt [illegible]

the Uhl

ing and [illegible] spent without tak ing effect

The sounds which he had not heard for so long had an even more pleasurable and ex hilarating effect on Rostóv than the previous sounds of firing Drawing himself up he viewed the field of battle opening out before him from the hill and with his whole soul follo[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] ere amid the smoke and five minutes later our Uhlans were galloping back not to the place they had occupied but more to the left and among the orange-colored Uhlans on chestnut horses and behind them in a large group blue French dragoons on gray horses could be seen

CHAPTER XV

Rostóv with his keen sportsman s eye was one of the first to catch sight of these blue French dragoons pursuing our Uhlans Nearer and nearer in disorderly crowds came the Uh lans and the French dragoons pursuing them. He could already see how these men who looked so small at the foot of the hill jostled and overtook one another waving their arms and their sabers in the air

Rostóv gazed at what was happening before him as at a hunt He felt instinctively that if the hussars struck at the French dragoons now the latter could not withstand them but if a charge was to be made it must be done now at that very moment or it would be too late He looked around A captain standing beside him was gazing like himself with eyes fixed on the cavalry below them

Andrew S[illegible] You

kno

[illegible] and

reall

Rostóv without waiting to hear him out, touched his horse galloped to the front of his squadron and before he had time to finish giving the word of command the whole squad ron shar ng his feel ng was following him. Rostóv himself did not know how or why he did it He acted as he did when hunting with out reflecting or considering He saw the dra goons near and that they were galloping in dis order he knew they could not withstand an attack—knew there was only that moment and that if he let it slip it would not return The bullets were wh ning and whistling so stimu latingly around him and his horse was so ea er to go that he could not restra n himself He touched his horse gave the word of command and immed ately hearing behind h m the tramp of the horses of his deployed squadron rode at full trot downh ll toward the dragoons. Hardly had they reached the bottom of the hill before their pace inst nctively changed to a gallop which grew faster and faster as they drew nearer to our Uhlans and the French dragoons who galloped after them The dra goons were now close at hand On seeing the hussars the foremost began to turn while those beh ind began to halt With the same feeling with wh ch he had galloped across the path of a wolf Rostóv gave rein to his Donets

horse d galloped t tersect the p th f the drago O

l all the Fren h dragoo s w e gall p g b ck Rostó p cki go t ne gray h rse dashed after him. O th ay he came pon bush his galla t h rse cleared t, d lm t bef e he had ri hted hims lf i his saddle he saw that he o ld immed t ly ove take the en emy h had selected. That Fre hm n by his un f rm an fficer wa go g t gallop cro ch g o his gray h rse d urgi g t on with h sabe I oth m me t Rostó s horse dashed ts breast aga t the h ndquarters f th officer s h rs lmost k ocking t o er and t th same nst t Rostó w th t kn w ing why raised his saber d truck the Fre ch ma with t.

The ta t he had d th all Rostó s nimatio va ished. Th office fell n t so much from th bl w—wh ch had b t sl ghtly cut h arm abo e th lbow—a f om the shock to his h rse nd from fr ght. R tóv re ed in his horse d h s eyes so ght h f to see wh m h h d q hed. Th F ench dragoo ffi e was h pp g w th o e foot on th ground, th ther be g caught n the st rup II eyes cr wed up w th f s f he every m me t expected th bl w gaz d up t Rostó with hri k g terro H s p l and mud ta ed f e—f d y u g w th dimpl the chi d l ght bl e eyes—was not an enemy face t lls ted t b ttl field b t a most rd ary h m l ke f e Bef re Rostó had d cid d wh t t d w th h m the officer cried I surre der! He hurr edly b t vainly tried to get his foot o t f th t rrup a d d n t rem his fri ht ed bl e eyes from Rostó s f ce. Som hussars who gall ped p dise gaged h foot d h lp d h m t th saddle. O all d the h sars w e busy w th th dragoo o e was w ded, b t tho gh hi f was bl edi g h w ld n t gi p his h rs hi d third hi h fi g ba k w th

f depress I n u ple sant f el g nd fused which h co ld t t ll cou t f h d m h m w th th capture f th t off er d th blow he had d lt him.

Co nt Ostermann Tolstóy met tl e return i hussars sent for R tó tl a ked l im and sa d he w uld report h s gallant deed to the Emperor nd would recomme d him f a St George s Cr ss When sent for by Count O ter m nn R stó r membe g that he l a l ch rged w th ut orders felt sure h s comm nd was s d ng f him to pun h h m f r breach of d sc pl ne Osterm nn s fl tter ng

w rry g me? he ked h mself as he rode b k from tl e general Ilyí ? No l e s safe H e I d graced my elf n ny way? N that not t. Som thing else resembl g rem rse t rmented h m. Yes oh yes that French of fice w th the d mple And I remember h w my rm p used when I ra sed t

Rost saw th p son rs be g led a ay l gall ped ft th m t ha e look t l s Fr chm n w th the d mple on h s ch He wa tt h s f e gn u form on an l ssa p kl rs a d looked an ou ly bo t l i Th sw d cut on h s arm could sca cely b ll l u H n

All th t d y nd the next h s frie ds l

ma l ne nd k pt turn ngs meth g o er n h s m nd.

Rostó wa always thinki g bo t that br l l nt e pl t of his wh ch t h m eme t h d ga ned h m th St. George s Cross d c gi e l m r put t on f bra ery nd ther was eth g he ould n t t ll understa d So otl rs e even m e fra d th I m! h th ght. So that s ll there n wh t s called h

B t hile N ch las was co s d g thes q est s d st ll could each n l sol t t n wa

ascended The horses began to lather and the men to flush

Halt! Dress your ranks! the order of the regimental commander was heard ahead For ward by the left Walk march! came the or der from in front

And the hussars passing along the line of troops on the left flank of our position halted behind our Uhlans who were in the front line To the right stood our infantry in a dense column they were the reserve Higher up the hill on the very horizon our guns were visible through the wonderfully [illegible]

[illegible]

e [illegible] Our advanced line already in action could be heard briskly ex changing shots with the enemy in the dale

At these sounds long unheard, Rostóv s spirits rose as at the strains of the merriest music *Trap ta ta tap!* cracked the shots now together now several quickly one after anoth er Again all was silent and then again it sounded as if someone were walking on deto nators and exploding them

The hussars remained in the same place for about an hour A cannonade began Count Ostermann with his suite rode up behind the squadron halted spoke to the commander of the regiment and rode up the hill to the guns

After Ostermann had gone a command rang out to the Uhlans

Form column! Prepare to charge!

The infantry in front of them parted into platoons to allow the cavalry to pass The Uh lans started the streamers on their spears flut tering and trotted downhill toward the French cavalry which was seen below to the left

As soon as the Uhlans descended the hill the hussars were ordered up the hill to suppo the battery [illegible] the Uhlan [illegible] ing and w [illegible] ing effect

The sounds which he had not heard for so long had an even more pleasurable and ex hilarating effect on Rostov than the previous sounds of firing Drawing himself [illegible]

[illegible] amid the smoke and five minutes later our Uhlans were galloping back not to the place they had occupied but more to the left and among the orange-colored Uhlans on chestnut horses and behind them, in a large group blue French dragoons on gray horses could be seen

CHAPTER XV

Rostov with his keen sportsman s eye was one of the first to catch sight of these blue French dragoons pursuing our Uhlans Nearer and nearer in disorderly crowds came the Uh lans and the French dragoons pursuing them. He could already see how these men who looked so small at the foot of the hill jostled and overtook one another waving their arms and their sabers in the air

Rostóv gazed at what was happening before him as at a hunt He felt instinctively that if the hussars struck at the French dragoons now the latter could not withstand them but if a charge was to be made it must be done now at that very moment or it would be too late He looked around A captain standing beside him, was gazing like himself with eyes fixed on the cavalry below them

Andrew Sevastyánych! said Rostóv You know we could crush them

A fine thing too! replied the captain and really

Rostóv without waiting to hear him out, touched his horse galloped to the front of his squadron and before he had time to finish giving the word of command the whole squad ron sharing his feeling was following him. Rostóv himself did not know how or why he did it He acted as he did when hunting with out reflecting or considering He saw the dra goons near and that they were galloping in dis order he knew they could not withstand an attack—knew there was only that moment and that if he let it slip it would not return The bullets were whining and whistling so stimu latingly around him and his horse was so eager to go that he could not restrain himself He touched his horse gave the word of command and immediately hearing beh[illegible]

[illegible] bo tom of the hill before their pace instinctively changed to a gallop which grew faster and faster as they drew nearer to our Uhlans and the French dragoons who galloped after them The dra goons were now close at hand On seeing the hussars the foremost began to turn while those behind began to halt With the same feeling with which he had galloped across the path of a wolf Rostóv gave rein to his Donéts

the slightly harmful p lls n the l ttle g lt box had to be adm istered? E n to Natásha her self it was pleasa t to see that so m ny sacri fices were being mad f her sake and to kn w that she had to tak med ci t certa h urs though sh declared that no med cine w uld cure her and that t was ll onse se And t was even pleasa t t be ble to sh w by dis egard g th rders that he d d n t bel e e i medi cal treatment and did t val e her l fe.

The doctor cam every day f lt her pulse looked t her to gue a d regardless of her grief-stricken fa joked w th her B t when he had gon to ther room to which th countess hurried! f llowed h m, h assumed a gra e air a d tho ghtfully haki g hi head said that th gh there was da ger he had hopes f the effect f this last med cine d one must wait d see, that the malady was chiefly mental, b t And th countess try ing to co ceal the ct n fr m herself d from h m, slipped a go d co n to his hand d l was returned to th p tient with mo tran quil mind.

The symptoms f N tásha s ill ess were that he te l ttle, lep l tle coughed, and was l was low pirited. Th doctors sa d that h could not get without medical treatment, so they kept her th ufl tmospher f th town, and th Ros vs did not move to the country that summer f 8

In p te f the many p lls sh swallowed nd the drops and powders t of the l ttl bottles and boxes of which M dam Schoss who was fond f such thi gs mad larg collection d in sp te f be ng depri ed of the co ntry l fe to which she was accustomed, outh preva led. N tásha grief began to be overlaid by the impressions f daily lif t ceased to pres so painfull her heart, graduall faded to the past, and she began to recover physically

CHAPTER XVII

N TÁSHA WAS CALMER but no happier She not merel ided a l external forms of pleasure —balls, promenades, concerts, and theaters— but e ever laughed withou sound f tears in her laughter She could no ng. A soon as she began laugh, or tried to sing by herself, tears choked her tears f remorse, tears t th rec ection of those pure times which could ever return, tears f exation tha she should so uselessly ha rui ed her oun lif which might ha been so happ Laughter nd ng partic lar seemed to her like blas p emy in face of her sorrow W thou any need f self restra nt no wish to coquet e er e te ed her head. She sa d a d felt at that t me th t no man was mo e to her th n Nastásya Ivánovna the buffoon Something stood senti nel w th n he d f b de l er every joy Be s des, he h d lost all the old interests of her carefree girlish l fe th t had been so full of hope The pre us utumn the hunti g, Uncle and th Christma h l days sp nt with N cholas t Otrádnoe were what he recalled often est and most p infully What w uld sh not h e g en to bri g b ck even a s ngle day of that time! But t was gone fo ever Her pre sentiment at the t me had not dece ved her— that that tate of f eedom d read ness f r ny enjoyment w uld n t return ga n. Yet t was necessary to l e on.

—

nothing to come. There was no joy in l fe yet l f was pas g N tásha appar ntly tried ot to be bu den h ndra ce to any ne, but wanted n thing for herself. Sh kept way from everyon in the house nd felt at ease o ly w th her brother Pétya. She l ked to be w th him better than w th th others, a d when alo e w th him sh sometimes lau hed. She hardly ever l ft the house nd of those who cam to see them was glad to see o ly o e per son, P erre. It would ha e been imposs ble to treat her w th more del cacy greater care, nd t th same time mo e seriously than did Co nt Bezukho N tasha u consciou ly f lt this del cacy and so found great pleasure in his society But sh was not even grateful to him fo t nothing good on P erre part seemed to her to be an effort, t seemed so natural for him to be ki d to everyon that there was no mer t n his kindness. Sometimes N tásha n t ced em barrassment and wkward es on his part her presence, especially when he wa ted to do something to please her or feared that some thi g they pok of w uld waken memories distressing to her She noticed this nd ttrib uted it t his general kindness and h ness, which she magined must be th same toward everyo as t was to her After those n l n tary words—that if he wer f ee h w uld ha a ked on his knees f her ha d and her lov — uttered t moment when sh was so tro gly gitated, P err never pok to N tásha of h feelings and t seemed pla n to her that those words which had then so comforted her were

an hussar battalion and when a brave officer was needed he was chosen

CHAPTER XVI

ON RECEIVING NEWS of Natásha s illness the countess though not quite well yet and still weak went to Moscow with Pétya and the rest of the household and the whole family moved from Márya Dmítrievna s house to their own and settled down in town

Natásha s illness was so serious that fortunately for her and for her parents the consideration of all that had caused the illness her conduct and the breaking off of her engagement receded into the background She was so ill that it was impossible for them to consider in how far she was to blame for what had happened She could not eat or sleep grew visibly thinner coughed and as the doctors made them feel was in danger They could not think of anything but how to help her Doctors came to see her singly and in consultation talked much in French German and Latin blamed one another and prescribed a great variety of medicines for all the diseases known to them but the simple idea never occurred to any of them that they could not know the disease Natásha was suffering from as no disease suffered by a live man can be known for every living person has his o ... s ...

ner

... maladies of those organs This simple thought could not occur to the doctors (as it cannot occur to a wizard that he is unable to work his charms) because the business of their lives was to cure and they received money for it and had spent the best years of their lives on that business But above all that thought was kept out of their minds by the fact that they saw they were really useful as in fact they were to the whole Rostóv family Their usefulness did not depend on making the patient swallow substances for the most part harmful (the harm was scarcely perceptible as they were given in small doses) but they were useful necessary and indispensable because they satisfied a mental need of the invalid and of those who loved her—and that is why there are and always will be pseudo-healers wise women homeopaths and allopaths They satisfied that eternal human need for hope of relief for sympathy and that something should be done which is felt by those who are suffering They satisfied the need seen in its most elementary form in a child, when it wants to have a place rubbed that has been hurt A child knocks itself and runs at once to the arms of its mother or nurse to have the aching spot rubbed or kissed and it feels better when this is done The child cannot believe that the strongest and wisest of its people have no remedy for its pain and the hope of relief and the expres... s ... s ...

T...

th... u ... her bump assurin... her that it would soon pass if only the coachman went to the chemist s in the Arbát and got a powder and some pills in a pretty box for a ruble and seventy kopeks and if she took those powders in boiled water at intervals of precisely two hours neither more nor less

What would Sónya and the count and countess have done how would they ... no h...

... I ... doctors the carrying out of which suppl ed an occupation and consolation to the family circle? How would the count have borne his dearly loved daughter s illness had he not known that it was costing him a thousand rubles and that he would not grudge thousands more to benefit her or had he not known that if her illness continued he would not grudge yet other thousands and would take her abroad for consultations there and had he not been able to explain the details of how Métivier and Feller had not understood the symptoms but Frise had and Mudrov had diagnosed them even better? What would the countess have done had she not been able sometimes to scold the ... not strictly ...

she would ... s ... her grief in her vexation if you won t obey the doctor and take your medicine at the right time! You mustn t trifle with it you know or it may turn to *pneumonia* she would go on deriving much comfort from the utterance of that foreign word incomprehensible to others as well as to herself

What would Sónya have done without the glad consciousness that she had not undressed during the first three nights ... ready ... w...

the awful harmful p ll n the l ttle g lt box had to be dm tered? E e t Natásha her self t was pleasant t see that so ma y sacr fices were be g made f her sak d to know that she had to take medici e t certain hours though sh decl ed that med ct would cure her a d that t was all nsense A d t was even pleasa t to be ble t how by dis egard ng th rders, that he d d ot bel eve n medi cal treatme t a d did t al her l fe

The doctor came every day felt her pulse, looked t her t gue nd regardless of her gr f stricke face joked with her B t when he had gone to n ther room t wh ch th countess h rriedly f ll ed him, h assumed grave air and thoughtfully shaking his head said that th gh there was da ger he had hopes f th effect f this last medicine d one must wait a d see that the mal dy was chiefly mental, b t And th countess, try ing to co eal the ct from herself nd from him, slipped gold co into his hand nd l wa r turned to th p t ent with m e tran quil mind.

Th r—

w ll, and th Rost s did n t move to the country that summer f 8 2

I sp t f th ma y p lls h wallowed and the drops d powders t f th l ttl bottles and bo es f wh h M dam Schoss who wa fond f such thi gs mad large collecti n d in sp t f bei g depri ed f the country l f to which sh was cust med, uth prevailed Natásha gr f began t be overlaid by th impr ss io f daily lif t ceased to pres so pa ull her heart. t gradually faded to th past, nd she began to recover phys cally

CHAPTER XVII

NATASHA WAS CALMER b t o happ er She no longer ly ded all external forms of p easure —balls, promenades, co certs and theaters— but h ever la ghed w thout sound of tears in her la h er Sh could not g As soon as she bega to l gh, or tried to sing by herself, tears choked her: tears f remorse, tears th re l ection f those pure times which could ever eturn, tears f exation that she should so uselessly ha e ruined her young lif wh ch might ha been so happ Laughter and ng ing particular seemed to her l ke blas phem in face of her sorrow W thout ny

need of self restra nt, no wish to coquet ever entered her head. She sa d nd felt at that time that no man wa more to he than Nastásya I no na the buffoon Something stood senti nel w thin her a d f bade her every joy Be s des, he had lost all the old nterests f her carefree gi lish l fe that had been so full of hope Th p ev ous utumn the hu t g, U cle and the Chr tmas hol days spent w th N cho las t Otrádnoe were what she recalled ofte est and most p infully What would she not ha e gi en to bring b ck en a s ngle day of that tim ! But t was go e f rever Her pre sentiment t the t me h d n t dece ed her— that that stat of freedom and readi ess f r ny enjoyment wo ld n t return gain Y t it was necessary to l e on.

It comf rted her to reflect that she was ot better as she had formerly imag ed, but worse much worse than nybody lse n the world. But this was n t no h. She knew that, d asked herself, "What next But there was

from everyo e n th house d felt t ease o ly w th her b other Pétya She l ked to be w th him better than w th the others, and when alone w th him sh sometimes l hed. She hardly ever left th hous and of those who came to see them was glad to ee only o e per so P erre It w uld ha e been imposs bl t treat her with more d l cacy greater care and t th s m

good on P erre part eemed to her to be n ff rt, t seemed so n tural f r him to be ki d to everyo that there was no merit his kindness. Sometimes N tásha not ed em barrassment and wkwardness on his p rt her presence especially when h wa ted t do something to please her or feared that some thi g they spoke of would

distress

uted t

which

everyo as was to her After those in ol n tary w rds—that f he wer free h would ha asked o his knees fo her ha d and her l ttered moment when she was so tro gly gitated, P erre never pok to N tásha of h feel ngs nd t seemed plai to her that those words, which had then so omf rted her were

an hussar battalion and when a brave officer was needed he was chosen

CHAPTER XVI

On receiving news of Natásha s illness the countess though not quite well yet and still weak went to Moscow with Pétya and the rest of the household and the whole family moved from Márya Dmítrievna s house to their own and settled down in town

Natásha s illness was so serious that fortunately for her and for her parents the consideration of all that had caused the illness her conduct and the breaking off of her engagement receded into the background She was so ill that it was impossible for them to consider in how far she was to blame for what had happened She could not eat or sleep grew visibly thinner coughed and as the doctors made them feel was in danger They could not think of anything but how to help her Doctors came to see her singly and in consultation talked much in French German and Latin blamed one another and prescribed a great variety of medicines for all the diseases known to them but the simple idea never occurred to any of them that they could not know the disease Natásha was suffering from as no disease suffered by a live man can be known for every living person has his own [illegible] and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] liver [illegible] nerve [illegible] maladies of those organs This simple thought could not occur to the doctors (as it cannot occur to a wizard that he is unable to work his charms) because the business of their lives was to cure and they received money for it and had spent the best years of their lives on that business But above all that thought was kept out of their minds by the fact that they saw they were really useful as in fact they were to the whole Rostóv family Their usefulness [illegible] [illegible] small doses) but they were useful necessary and indispensable because they satisfied a mental need of the invalid and of those who loved her—and that is why there are and always will be pseudo-healers wise women homeopaths and allopaths They satisfied that eternal human need for hope of relief for sympathy and that something should be done which is felt by those who are suffering They satisfied the need seen in its most elementary form in a child, when it wants to have a place rubbed that has been hurt A child knocks itself and runs at once to the arms of its mother or nurse to have the aching spot rubbed or kissed and it feels better when this is done The child cannot believe that the strongest and wisest of its people have no remedy for its pain and the hope of relief and the expres[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] her bump assuring her that it would soon pass if only the coachman went to the chemist s in the Arbát and got a powder and some pills in a pretty box for a ruble and seventy kopeks and if she took those powders in boiled water at intervals of precisely two hours neither more nor less

What would Sónya and the count and countess have done how would [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] occupation and consolation to the family circle? How would the count have borne his dearly loved daughter s illness had he not known that it was costing him a thousand rubles and that he would not grudge thousands more to benefit her or had he not known that if her illness co[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] would the countess have done had she not been able sometimes to scold the invalid for not strictly obeying the doctor s orders?

You ll never get well like that she would say forgetting her grief in her vexation if you won t obey the doctor and take your medicine at the right time! You mustn t trifle with it you know or it may turn to *pneumonia* she would go on deriving much comfort from the utterance of that foreign word incomprehensible to others as well as to herself

What would Sónya have done without the glad consciousness that she had not undressed during the first three nights in order to be ready to carry out all the doctor's injunctions with precision and that she still kept awake at night so as not to miss the proper time when

— h 1 1 lt box

tho gh he decl red that r o eu u ture her d that twas ll o nse And twas even pleasa t t be bl t h w by dis egard ing the rders, that sh d d t bel e e n medi cal tre tment d d d not alue her l fe

The doct came ev ry d y f lt he pulse looked at her t gu d egardless of her gn f mck f joked w th her B t when he had go nto a ther room t which the countess h rriedly f ll wed h m, he assumed a gra e ir a d th ghtfully haki g h s head said that th gh th e was da ger he h d hopes f th ffect f this l t med ne d *on mus ait a d see that the mal dy was* chiefly me tal b t And the cou tess try ing to co eal the ct from herself nd f m him, lipped gold co t h s ha d nd l way returned to tl p t t w th m re tran q l m d.

The sympt ms of N tásha s ll ess w e that he te l ttle l pt l ttl co ghed nd was l ways low pir ted. Th doct rs sa d th t h co ld t get w th t medical treatm nt, so they kept her i th t fl g tmospher of the town and th R t d d t m to the co try that mmer of 8 2

I p te f the ma y p lls h w ll wed d the dr ps d powd rs t of the l ttle bottles a d bo es f wh h M d m Schoss wh w fond f ch th gs made larg collect o a d p f be d pri ed f the cou try l fe t hich she was cus med y uth p e led N tásha s grief began to be o la d by th impress ns f d ly l fe t ea ed to p es so pa f lly her heart t grad lly f ded to th past, d h began to reco er phy cally

CHAPTER XVII

N TAS IA WAS CALM ER b t happ er Sh not mer ly a ded ll ex ern l f rms f pleasure

need of self restra nt no w sh to coquet e er entered her he d She s d and f lt t that t me th t no m n was more to her th n Nastásya Ivá o n the buffoon. Somethi g stood nt nel w th n her and fo bade l er every joy Be s des he had lost all the old i terests of her carefree gi l h l fe th t had been so full of hope The p e us utumn the hunti g Uncle

h e g en to bri g b ck e en a s ngle d y of that time l B t t was go e fo ever Her pre entiment t the time had n t dece ed her— that th t state of f eedom and read ness for ny enjoyment wo ld not eturn gain Yet t wa necessary to l ve on

It comf ted her to flect that she was t *bett r as sh had f rmerly mag ed but worse* m ch worse than nybody else n the world. B t th s was n t n ugh. Sh knew that nd ked herself 'What ext? But there was n th g to come. There was no j y n l fe yet l fe wa pass g Natásh app re tly tried not to be b rd n or a hindra ce to yone but a ted n thi g for herself. She kept away f om ery n n the hou d felt t ease o ly w th her b other Pétya Sh l ked to be w th h m better th n w th the others nd when l ne w th h m she somet mes l ughed. She hardly e e left the house and of those who came t see th m was gl d to ee o ly one pe so P err It w ld h e be n mposs ble to tr t h w th m re del cacy great care and t th sam t me more er ously th nd d Co t Bez kh N tá h unconsciou ly felt th del cacy d so fou d great pleasure in h soc ty But sh was not e en grateful to l m f t n thi g good n P rre s p rt seemed to her t be ff t, i med so n *tural fo h m to be* k d to e eryon that the wa no m t h k dness Somet mes N tásha not d m- b rrassm nt d wkwa d ess on h p t her p es n e especially wh n he wa ted t d

ecu f those pure t mes wh ch ld ever et rn tears of ex t th t he hould so selessly ha e ru ed h y g l fe wh h m ght ha bee so happy Lau ht nd g ing p rt cul seemed t her l ke bl s- phemy fa f her sorrow W h t y

eryo e as t was t he Aft thos l n- tary w ds—that f he w e fr e h w uld h e sked h k ees f her h d nd her l —

an hussar battalion and when a brave officer was needed he was chosen

CHAPTER XVI

On receiving news of Natásha's illness the countess though not quite well yet and still weak went to Moscow with Pétya and the rest of the household and the whole family moved from Márya Dmítrievna's house to their own and settled down in town

Natásha's illness was so serious that fortunately for her and for her parents the consideration of all that had caused the illness her conduct and the breaking off of her engagement receded into the background She was so ill that it was impossible for them to consider in how far she was to blame for what had happened She could not eat or sleep grew visibly thinner coughed and as the doctors made them feel was in danger They could not think of anything but how to help her Doctors came to see her singly and in consultation talked much in French German and Latin blamed one another and prescribed a great variety of medicines for all the diseases known to them but the simple idea never occurred to any of them that they could not know the disease Natásha was suffering from as no disease suffered by a live man can be known for every living person has his own n
and n

u ... user

ners

maladies of those organs This simple thought could not occur to the doctors (as it cannot occur to a wizard that he is unable to work his charms) because the business of their lives was to cure and they received money for it and had spent the best years of their lives on that business But above all that thought was kept out of their minds by the fact that they saw they were really useful as in fact they were to the whole Rostóv family Their usefulness did not depend on making the patient swallow substances for the most part harmful (the harm was scarcely perceptible as they were given in small doses) but they were useful necessary and indispensable because they satisfied a mental need of the invalid and of those who loved her—and that is why there are and always will be pseudo-healers wise women homeopaths and allopaths They satisfied that eternal human need for hope of relief for sympathy and that something should be done which is felt by those who are suffering They satisfied the need seen in its most elementary form in a child, when it wants to have a place rubbed that has been hurt A child knocks itself and runs at once to the arms of its mother or nurse to have the aching spot rubbed or kissed and it feels better when this is done The child cannot believe that the strongest and wisest of its people have no remedy for its pain and the hope of relief and the expression of its mother's sympathy while she rubs the bump comforts it. The doctors were of use to Natásha because they kissed and rubbed her bump assuring her that it would soon pass if only the coachman went to the chemist's in the Arbát and got a powder and some pills in a pretty box for a ruble and seventy kopeks and if she took those powders in boiled water at intervals of precisely two hours neither more nor less.

What would Sónya and the count and countess have done how would they have looked if nothing had been done if there had n t h n
those pill
the click
life order
which su ... occupation and consolation to the family circle? How would the count have borne his dearly loved daughter's illness had he not known that it was costing him a thousand rubles and that he would not grudge thousands more to benefit her or had he not known that if her illness continued he would not grudge yet other thousan

tom
nose ... at would the countess have done had she not been able sometimes to scold the invalid for not strictly obeying the doctor's orders?

You'll never get well like that she would say forgetting her grief in her vexation if you won't obey the doctor and take your medicine at the right time! You mustn't trifle with it you know or it may turn to *pneumo ia* she would go on deriving much comfort from the utterance of that foreign word *incomprehensible* to others as well as to herself

What would Sónya have done without the glad consciousness that she had not undressed during the first three nights ...
ready ...
with p
night ... the proper time when

in Moscow people spoke f an ppeal b the Empero to the people and of his comi g him self from the army to Moscow And as up to the eleventh f July no ma fest o appeal had been rece ed, exaggerated reports becam current bo t them d bo t the pos tion of Russia. It was said that the Empero was lea ing the arm because t was in dan e t was said that Smolé k had surrendered, that N po eon had arm f mill n nd only mirad could sa e Russia.

On the leventh f J ly which was Satur da the ma fest was ece ed b t wa n t et in print, d P erre who wa t the Ros t s promised t me t d n er next day Sunda and bri cop of th man fest and ppeal, which h w uld bta n fr m Count Rostopchin.

That Sunday the Rostó went to Mass t the Razumo ks pri at chapel as usual. It was a hot July day E en t ten o clock, when the Rostóvs got t f the carri ge t the chapel, th ultry ir the houts f h wkers, the bright and gay summer clothes f th crowd, the dusty lea es f the trees on th boulevard, th sounds f th ba d nd the wh t trousers of battalio marchi t parad th rattl g f wheels on th cobblesto es nd th brill t, hot sunshine ere all full of that ummer lan guor that content d disc nt w th th p es ent, hich is most tro gly f lt on bright, hot day town. All th Mosc w tab l ties, all the Rost s cqua tan es were t the Razu movsky chapel f as f expecti g someth g to happe man wealthy fam l es who usually left town for th ir cou try esta es had n t gone way that mmer As N tásha her mother sd passed thr h th cr wd be hind li eried footman who leared th way for them, sh heard young man peakin bout her in too loud whisper

"That Rosto a, th who

"Sh m ch thin er b t all th same she s pret

S e heard, thou ht sh heard the names of Kurá nd Bolk ki. B t he was always ima g that. It alway seemed t her that everyone who looked her wa th nki nly of hat had happened to her W th kin heart, wretched h al s wa ow wh n she found herself cr wd, N tasha n her lilac silk dress trimmed wi h bl k l ce walked was omen ca walk—w th th more repose and tat li ess th greater th pa n d hame in her soul. Sh k ew f certa n that h was prett bu this no lo er ga her satisfactio as t used to. On the contrary t tormented her more than anythi g else of l te d p rt cular l so on this bright hot ummer day n town

It s Su d y ga n— othe week pa t, she

no good to an e. S e t od by t f not s de nd exchanged nods w th cqua nta ces near her From hab t he scruti ized the l d es dresses condemned the bear g of l dy sta d ng close by who was n t cross g herself prop erly b t n cramped manner d ga n she th ught w th exatio that she was herself be g j dged d was judg g others, nd sud d nly t the sou d of th serv ce she felt hor rified t her own vile ess, h rrified that the f rmer pur ty of her soul was ga n lost t her

A comely fresh-looking ld man was con ducting the serv ce w th that m ld solemn ty which has so le at nd soothi n effect on the souls of th w rsh pers. Th gates of the sanctuary screen wer closed the curtain was lowl drawn a d from beh d t soft my te ri us pro ou ced som words Tears th cause of which sh herself d d n t u derst d mad N tasha b ea t hea e d joy us but ppress e feel g tated h

"Teach me what I h uld do how to li e my l f how I may grow good f rever f ever he pleaded.

Th deaco cam out onto the ra sed pace bef e th altar screen nd, holdi g his thumb ex ended drew hi l hair from under his dalmati and, making the gn f the cross on his breast, began n l ud nd solemn o to ec e th wo ds of th prayer

"In peace let us pray u t th Lord."

"As o commun ty w th ut di u ct on of class, w th ut nmity un ted by brotherly l e —l t us pray tho ht N tasha.

"Fo th pea that from bo e, and f th salvatio of our souls."

"Fo th w ld of gel nd ll th pirits who dwell bo us, prayed N tásha.

Wh n they prayed f th warriors, sh thou ht of her brother nd D niso When they prayed f ll tra l by land nd sea h remembered Prince A drew prayed fo him, nd asked God to f rgi her all the wro gs sh had d e him. When they pra ed f those who lo e us, she prayed f r the mem-

spoken as all sorts of meaningless words are spoken to comfort a crying child It was not be cause Pierre was a married man but because Natásha felt very strongly with him that moral barrier the absence of which she had experi enced with Kurágin that it never entered her head that the relations between him and her self could lead to love on her part still less on his or even to the kind of tender self conscious romantic friendship between a man and a woman of which she had known several instances

Before the end of the fast of St Peter Agra féna Ivánovna Belova a country neighbor of the Rostóvs came to Moscow to pay her devo tions at the shrines of the Moscow saints She suggested that Natásha should fast and pre pare for Holy Communion and Natásha glad ly welcomed the idea Despite the doctor s or ders that she should not go out early in the morning Natásha insisted on fasting and pre paring for the sacrament not as they generally prepared for it in the Rostóv family by attend ing three services in their own house but as Agraféna Ivánovna did by going to church every day for a week and not once missing Vespers Matins or Mass

The countess was pleased with Natásha s zeal after the poor results of the medical treat ment in the depths of her heart she hoped that prayer might help her daughter more than medicines and though not without fear and concealing it from the doctor she agreed to Natásha s wish and entrusted her to Belova Agraféna Ivánovna used to come to wake Na tásha at three in the morning but generally found her already awake She was afraid of be ing late for Matins Hastily washing and meek ly putting on her shabbiest dress and an old mantilla Natásha shivering in the fresh air went out into the deserted streets lit by the clear light of dawn By Agraféna Ivánovna s advice Natásha prepared herself not in their own parish but at a church where according to the devout Agraféna Ivánovna the priest was a man of very severe and lofty life There were never many people in the church Natá sha always stood beside Belova in the customary place before an icon of the Blessed Virgin let into the screen before the choir on the left side and a feeling new to her of humility be fore something great and incomprehensible seized her when at that unusual morning hour gazing at the dark face of the Virgin illumi nated by the candles burning before it and by the morning light falling from the window she listened to the words of the service which she tried to follow with understanding When she understood them her personal feeling be came interwoven in the prayers with sh ... its own W ... sweeter s ... stand eve ... that it is impossible to understand all that it is only necessary to believe and to commit oneself to God whom she felt guiding her soul at those moments She crossed herself bowed low and when she did not understand in horror at her own vileness simply asked God to forgive her everything everything and to have mercy upon her The prayers to which she surrendered herself most of all were those of repentance On her way home at an early hour when she met no one but bricklayers going to work or men sweeping the street and everybody within the houses was still asleep Natásha experienced a feeling new to her a sense of the possibility of correcting her faults the possibility of a new clean life and of happiness

During the whole week she spent in this way that feeling grew every day A ...

t ... it seemed to Natásha so great that she felt she should never live till that blessed Sunday

But the happy day came and on that memo rable Sunday when dressed in white muslin she returned home after communion for the first time for many months she felt calm and not oppressed by the thought of the life that lay before her

The doctor who came to see her that day or dered her to continue the powders ...

s ... ease be par ticular about it

Be quite easy he continued playfully as he adroitly took the gold coin in his palm She will soon be singing and frolicking about The last medicine has done her a very great deal of good She has freshened up very much

The countess with a cheerful expression on her face looked down at her nails and spat a little for luck as she returned to the drawing room

CHAPTER XVIII

At the beginning of July more and more dis quieting reports about the war began to spread

n Moscow peopl spoke of ppeal b the Emperor to the people. d of hi coming him s from the arm to Moscow And as up t th enth f July no man fest or appeal had been rece ved, exaggerated reports became current bout them d bout th pos tion of Russia. It was said that th Empero wa lea ng t arm because t was danger t was and that Smo nsk had surrendered that N poleo had an arm f mill n nd only miracle could sa Russ a.

On the leventh f J ly which was Satur da the manifest was rece ed b t was n t yet in print, d P erre who wa t th Rostovs promised to come t d nner next day Sunda d bri cop of the man fest nd ppeal, which he w uld obta n from Count Rostopchin.

That Sunday the Rost vs went to M ss t the Razumovskis privat chapel usual. It was hot July day Even t t n o clock, when the Rost vs got t of th carri ge t the chapel, the sultry a the shouts of h wkers, the light d gay summer clothes of th crowd, the dusty lea es f the trees on the boulevard, the sounds f the ba d d the wh t trousers of battalion marchi p rad the rattl of wheels on th cobblest es, d th brill nt, hot sunshine were all full of that ummer l n guor that co tent d disco t nt w th th p esent, hich is most tro gly f lt on bright, h t day in to n All th Moscow tab l ties, all the Rost n cqua ta ces, were t the Razu movskis chapel f as f expecti someth g to happen many wealthy f mil es who usually lef town for th ir co ntry esta es had not gon way tha summer A N tásha, t her mother sid passed thr ugh the crowd behind li eried footman who cleared th way for them sh heard you man peak g bout her in oo lo d whisper

"That Ros óva th o who

"Sh much thi er b t all th sam she pretty

Sh heard, thought sh heard, the n mes f Kurá n nd Bolk ki. But he was always imagini g that. It lways seemed to her that every bo looked t h wa think only f wha had happened to her W th ki heart, et hed she lways wa ow wh n she fou d herself cr wd, N tasha her lil lk dress trimmed with bla k la walked —as omen ca walk—w th th more repose and ta l ess th grea er th pa d ham in her soul. Sh k ew f rta that sh was pret b t this no lo ger ga her satisfa tio as t used to. On th contrary t tormented her more than nyth g else of late nd particul r ly so on th s bright hot summer day in town

It s Sunday ga n— oth r week pa t, she th ught recall ng that she had been here the Sund befo nd lwa the same l f that no l f nd the same urround gs n wh ch t used to be so ea y to l e l m pretty I my o ng and I kn w th t o I am good I used to be bad but n w I k ow I m good, she thou l t b t et my best e rs e l pp b d are no good t an o She stood by her mother s de nd excha ged nods w th acqua ntances near her From hab t sh scrut n ed the l d es dresses, co demned the beari g of a l dy stand ing close by who was not cross g herself properly but in cramped manner d ga n he tho ght w th exati n that she was herself be j dged d was j dging others d d d nly t th sound of th serv he felt ho rified t he own l ness, horrified that the

sanctuary screen were closed, th curta n was lowl drawn d from beh d t soft myste rious o e pro ou ced som words. Tears, the cause of wh ch she herself d d n t u derstand m de N tásha b east hea e d joyous but oppress feel agitated her

"Teach m what I h ld do, how to li e m l fe, h w I may grow good f rever f rever she pleaded.

The deacon cam out onto the ra sed pace bef the alta screen nd, holdi g his thumb ext nded drew hi l ha from under his dalmati and, making the gn of the cross on his breast, began in lo d nd solemn o c to ecit th words f th prayer

I peace let us pra unto the Lord.

A o commu ty w th ut disti cti of class, w th ut nmit un ted by brotherly l —let us pray th ught N tásha.

"F th peace that from bo e, and f r th sal ation of our souls.

Fo th wo ld f gels nd all the spirits who d ell bo us prayed N tásha

Wh n they pra ed f the warri rs, sh thought f her brother and De iso When th y prayed f all tra l g by l d nd sea, h remembered Prince A drew prayed for h m and asked God to f rgi e her all th wro gs sh had d him. When they pra ed fo those who l us, she prayed f th mem-

spoken as all sorts of meaningless words are spoken to comfort a crying child It was not because Pierre was a married man but because Natásha felt very strongly with him that moral barrier the absence of which she had experienced with Kurágin that it never entered her head that the relations between him and herself could lead to love on her part still less on his or even to the kind of tender self conscious romantic friendship between a man and a woman of which she had known several instances

Before the end of the fast of St Peter Agraféna Ivánovna Belóva a country neighbor of the Rostóvs came to Moscow to pay her devotions at the shrines of the Moscow saints She suggested that Natásha should fast and pre pare for Hol C
ly welcom
ders that u i ot go out early in the morning Natásha insisted on fasting and preparing for the sacrament not as they generally prepared for it in the Rostov family by attending three services in their own house but as Agraféna Ivánovna did by going to church every day for a week and not once missing Vespers Matins or Mass

The countess was pleased with Natásha s zeal after the poor results of the medical treatment in the depths of her heart she hoped that prayer might help her daughter more than medicines and though not without fear and concealing it from the doctor she agreed to Natásha s wish and entrusted her to Belova Agraféna Ivánovna used to come to wake Natásha at three in the morning but generally found her already awake She was afraid of being late for Matins Hastily washing and meekly putting on her shabbiest dress and an old mantilla Natásha shivering in the fresh air went out into the deserted streets lit by the clear light of dawn By Agraféna Ivánovna s advice Natásha prepared herself not in their own parish but at a church where according to the devout Agraféna Ivánovna the priest was a man of very severe and lofty life There were never many people in the church N
h

t u t ti e choir on the left side and a feeling new to her of humility before something great and incomprehensible seized her when at that unusual morning hour gazing at the dark face of the Virgin illuminated by the candles burning before it and by the morning light falling from the window she listened to the words of the service which she tried to follow with understanding When she understood them her personal feeling became interwoven
its own
sweeter s
stand
to t
beli c mit oneself to God whom she felt guiding her soul at those moments She crossed herself bowed low and when she did not understand in horror at her own vileness simply asked God to forgive her everything everything and to have mercy upon her The prayers to which she surrendered herself most of all were those of repentance On her way home at an early hour when she met no one but bricklayers going to work or men sweeping the street and everybody within the hou s
still asl
to her
her fu
and of h pp ss

During the whole week she spent in this way that feeling grew every da
p
as
th u seemed to Natásha so great that she felt she should never live till that blessed Sunday

But the happy day came and on that memorable Sunday when dressed in white muslin she returned home after communion for the first time for many months she felt calm and not oppressed by the thought of the life that lay before her

The doctor who came to see her that day ordered her to continue the powders he had prescribed a forth
S
ing a
satisf p sc be particular about it

Be quite easy he continued playfully as he adroitly took the gold co n in his palm She will soon be singing and frolicking about The last medicine has done her a very great deal of good She has freshened up very much

The countess with a cheerful expression on her face looked down at her nails and spat a little for luck as she returned to the drawing room

CHAPTER XVIII

AT THE BEGINNING of July more and more dis quieting reports about the war began to spread

"O Lord ur God, n wh m we bel eve and n hom we put ur trust, let us not be con founded in ur hope f Thy me cy nd give ~ f Th bless ng th t those who hate

Thy people. Sh w Thy mercy up us ... y O Lord, and gra t us Thy s lvat on m ke the hearts of Thy servants t ej ce n Thy mercy smite d our nem es nd dest y them sw ftly beneath the f et f Thy fa thful serv a F Thou art the defen e th ucco nd the victory f them that p t the trust n The nd to Thee be ll gl ry to Father Son and H ly Ghost, now d f ever w ld w th ut e d. Amen

I N tásha recept e cond ti n f soul this prayer aff cted her tr gly Sh l t ned to ev ery word abo t the ct ry of Moses o er Amal k, of G deon e M di n nd of D do er Goliath, d bo t th destructi n of "Thy Jerusalem, d he prayed to God w th the

She shared w th all her heart n th pray r th pint f righteousness f th tr gthen ing f th heart b faith a d h pe nd ts n matio by l e. B t he could n t pray that her enemies might be trampl d und foot hen b t few mi utes bef he h d be n wishi g he had more f them that she might pray for them. But n ther could sh doubt ... h t was being

sins, a d especially of her own n nd he prayed to God to forg them all nd her too nd to give them all d her too pea d happ ess. A d t seemed to her that God heard her prayer

CHAPTER XIX

F M TH when P erre f er lea g the Ros w th N tásha gra ful look fresh n h m d, had gazed t th comet that seemed to be fixed th ky d felt that som th new wa ppeari g n h own horiz n—from that day th problem f the an ty nd uselessness f ll earthly thi gs, that had incessa tly to men ed h m no lo ger p ese ted tself. That terr ble ques ion "Why "Wher f e? which had come to him mid every occupation, was now repla ed, not by nother ques by

reply to the former quest n but by *her* im ge. When he listened to or h mself took part in tr l conversati ns wh n he r ad or he rd of human ba eness o folly he wa not horr fied s formerly nd d d not sk h mself why men struggled so bout these th gs when all d comprehen ble—but he

m to com ga n and I I e ... w ll r know t. And his soul felt calm and pea ful

P erre still w nt into society drank as much and led th same dle nd d ss p ted l fe because bes des the hours he pent at the Rostó there were other hours he had to spend somehow nd the hab ts and cqua ntances he had mad n Moscow formed current that bo e h m al ng rres st bly But l tterly when mo e d mo e disqu ti g reports came fr m th eat f war d N tásha s health began to

ealed to P rr th f llow ng proph cy concern ng N poleo drawn from the Rev lation of St. J hn

In chapter 3 erse 8 of the Apocalypse, t is said

> Here is wisd m. Let h m that hath u dersta di ... unt the number of the beast f t is the number f man nd his number is Six hundred threesco e nd ix.

And n th fifth verse f the same chapter:

> And there was g en u to him mouth speak great things and blasphemies

bers of her own family her father and mother and Sónya realizing for the first time how wrongly she had acted toward them and feeling all the strength of her love for them When they prayed for those who hate us she tried to think of her enemies and people who hated her in order to pray for them She included among her enemies the creditors and all who had business dealings with her father and always at the thought of enemies and those who hated her she remembered Anatole who had done her so much harm—and though he did not hate her she gladly prayed for him as for an enemy Only at prayer did she feel able to think clearly and calmly of Prince Andrew and Anatole as men for whom her feelings were as nothing compared with her awe and devotion to God When they prayed for the Imperial family and the Synod she bowed very low and made the sign of the cross saying to herself that even if she did not understand still she could not doubt and at any rate loved the governing Synod and prayed for it

When he had finished the Litany the deacon crossed the stole over his breast and said Let us commit ourselves and our whole lives to Christ the Lord!

Commit ourselves to God Natásha inwardly repeated. Lord God I submit myself to Thy will! she thought I want nothing wish for nothing teach me what to do and how to use my will! Take me take me! prayed Natásha with impatient emotion in her heart not crossing herself but letting her slender arms hang down as if expecting some invisible power at any moment to take her and deliver her from herself from her regrets desires remorse hopes and sins

The countess looked round several times at her daughter s softened face and shining eyes and prayed God to help her

Unexpectedly in the middle of the service and not in the usual order Natásha knew so well the deacon brought out a small stool the one he knelt on when praying on Trinity Sunday and placed it before the doors of the sanctuary screen The priest came out with h s purple velvet biretta on his head adjusted his ha r and knelt down with an effort Everybody followed his example and they looked at one another in surprise Then came the prayer just received from the Synod—a prayer for the deliverance of Russia from hostile invasion

clergy read and which acts so irresistibly on a Russian heart

Lord God of might God of our salvation! Look this day in mercy and blessing on Thy humble people and graciously hear us spare us and have mercy upon us! This foe confounding Thy lan[illegible] whole world are gathered dom to dest loved Russia o deile Thy temples to overthrow Thine altars and to desecrate our holy shrines How long O Lord how long shall the wicked triumph? How long shall they wield unlawful power?

Lord God! Hear us when we pray to Thee strengthen with Thy might our most gracious sovereign lord the Emperor Alexander Pávlovich be mindful of his uprightness [illegible]

[illegible] is kingdom by Thine almighty hand and give him victory over his enemy even as Thou gavest Moses the victory over Amalek Gideon over Midian and David over Goliath Preserve his army put a bow of brass in the hands of those who have armed themselves in Thy Name and gird their loins with strength for the fight Take up the spear and shield and arise to help us confound and put to shame those who have devised evil against us may they be before the faces of Thy faithful warriors as dust before the wind and may Thy mighty Angel confound them and put them to flight may they be ensnared when they know it not and may the plots they have laid in secret be turned against them let them fall before Thy servants feet and be laid low by our hosts! Lord Thou art able to save both great and small Thou art God and man cannot prevail against Thee!

God of our fathers! Remember Thy bounteous mercy and loving kindness which are from of old turn not Thy face from us but be gracious to our unworthiness and in Thy great goodness and Thy many mercies regard not our transgressions and iniquities! Create in us a clean heart and renew a right spirit within us strengthen us all in Thy faith fortify our hope inspire us with true love one for another arm us with unity of spirit in the righteous defense of the herit ge Thou gavest to us and to our fathers and let not the scepter of the wicked be exalted against the destiny of those Thou hast sanctified

"O Lord our God, in whom we bel eve and in whom e p t our trust, let us not be con founded in our hope of Thy mercy nd give us tok n f Thy bless ng that those who hate us and our Orthod x fa th may ee t and be put to sham and perish, and may all th n tions know that Thou art the Lord and we are Th people. Show Thy mercy upon us thi day O Lord, and gra t us Th salvation make the hearts f Thy serva ts to rejo ce n Th mercy smite down enem es d destroy them swiftly beneath th feet f Th fa thful serv a ts Fo Thou rt th defense, the succor and t e ict ry of them that put th ir trust n Thee, and to Thee be all glory to F ther Son nd H ly Ghost, now d fore er wo ld w thout end. Amen."

I N tásha recepti conditi n f soul this prayer ffected her tro ly Sh l tened to ev ery rd bo t the ct ry of Moses o er Am a k of G deo over M dia and of D do er Goliath, and bout the destructi n of "Thy Jerusalem, and sh prayed to God w th th tenderness and emot n w th wh ch her heart was overfl wi b t with t fully u derstand g hat sh was askin f God in that prayer Sh shared w th all her heart n th prayer for th pirit f righteous ess f r th stre gthen ing f the heart by faith a d h pe d its an imatio by l e. B t he could not pray that her enemies m ght be trampled under foot hen but few mi tes bef re she had been w hing he had more f them that h m ght pray for them. B t ne ther co ld sh doubt the righteous ess f th pra er that was be g ead bended k ees. Sh f lt n her heart dev t d tremul us w t the th ught of the p ni hment that o ertakes men f th ns, d especially f he own ns and he prayed to God to f rgi them ll d her too nd to gi e them all, nd her too peace d happ ess. A d seemed to her that God heard her prayer

CHAPTER XIX

F M TI Y when P err fter leavi g th Ros with N tásha grat ful look fresh n his m d had gazed t the com t that eemed t be fixed the sky d f lt that someth g new was ppear g on his wn horiz —from that da th problem f the a ty nd u eless ess f ll earthly th ngs, that had cessa tly t m ed him, no longer prese ted tself. That ermbl ques ion "Why "Wheref re? which had ome to him amid every occupation was now eplaced, not by nother questi n o by reply to the former question but by *her* image. When he l tened to or h mself took part n tri al conversat ons, when he read o heard of human ba eness or f lly he was not horri fied as f rmerly and d d not ask h mself wh y men struggled so bout these th s wl en ll is so transient and ncomprehen ble—but he remembered her as he h d last seen her nd all hi d ubts ani hed—not because she had answered the quest on that had h u ted h m but because h conception of her transferred h m in tantl to another brighter realm of sp ritual ctivity n which no ne could be jus- 6ed o guilty—a realm of beauty and lo e ld

himselt

"Well suppos ng N N has swindled the country nd th Tsar and the country and the Tsar confer honors upon him, what does that matter? She smiled t m yesterday and a ked m to come aga n and I love her and no one w ll ever know it. And his soul felt calm and peac ful.

P erre till went into society drank as much nd led th same dle and diss pated l fe be cause bes des the hours he spent at the Ros tó s there were other h urs h h d to spend somehow nd th h b ts nd acquaintances he had made n M scow formed current th t bore him al ng rresistibl But latte ly when more d mo disqu et n reports came fr m the seat of war d N tásha health began to impro and h no lo ger aroused n h m the f rmer feel n of careful p ty an ever ncrea g restless ess, wh ch he could not explain took possess n of him. He felt th t the cond tion he was n could not co tinue l ng th t cata troph was com g which would change his wh l l f d h impati ntly ought ev rywhere f gn of that pproach g catas- tr ph O e of h brothe Mason had re ealed to P rre th e f ll w g prophecy con cern g N poleon, drawn from th R elati n f St. J h

In chapter 3 erse 8 of the Apocalyp e t is said

Here wisd m. Let h m that hath un derstand count th number f the beast f r t is th numbe of man d h number Six hu dred threesco e nd ix.

And n the fifth erse f th sam chapter

A d th e was gi en unt him a mouth peaki great tl gs nd blasphem es

bers of her own family her father and mother and Sónya realizing for the first time how wrongly she had acted toward them and feeling all the strength of her love for them When they prayed for those who hate us she tried to think of her enemies and people who hated her *in order to pray for them* She included among her enemies the creditors and all who had business dealings with her father and always at the thought of enemies and those who hated her she remembered Anatole who had done her so much harm—and though he did not hate her she gladly prayed for him as for an enemy Only at prayer did she feel able to *think clearly and calmly of Prince Andrew* and Anatole as men for whom her feelings were as nothing compared with her awe and devotion to God When they prayed for the Imperial family and the Synod she bowed very low and made the sign of the cross saying to herself that even if she did not understand still she could not doubt and at any rate loved the governing Synod and prayed for it

When he had finished the Litany the deacon crossed the stole over his breast and said Let us commit ourselves and our whole lives to Christ the Lord!

Commit ourselves to God Natásha inwardly repeated Lord God I submit myself to Thy will! she thought I want nothing wish for nothing teach me what to do and how to use my will! Take me take me! prayed Natásha with impatient emotion in her heart not crossing herself but letting her slender arms hang down as if expecting some invisible power at any moment to take her and deliver her from herself from her regrets desires remorse hopes and sins

The countess looked round several times at her daughter s softened face and shining eyes

well the deacon brought out a small stool the one he knelt on when praying on Trinity Sun

hair and knelt down with an effort Everybody followed his example and they looked at one another in surprise Then came the prayer just received from the Synod—a prayer for the deliverance of Russia from hostile invasion

Lord God of might God of our salvation! began the priest in that voice clear not grandiloquent but *mild in which only the Slav* clergy read and which acts so irresistibly on a Russian heart

Lord God of might God of our salvation! Look this day *in mercy and blessing on Thy* humble people and graciously hear us spare us and have mercy upon us! This foe confounding Thy land desiring to lay waste the

loved Russia to defile Thy temples to overthrow Thine *altars and to desecrate* our holy shrines How long O Lord how long shall the wicked triumph? How long shall they wield unlawful power?

Lord God! Hear us when we pray to Thee

ness reward him according to his righteousness and let it preserve us Thy chosen Israel! Bless his counsels his undertakings and his work strengthen his kingdom by Thine almighty hand and give him victory over his enemy even as Thou gavest Moses the victory over Amalek Gideon over Midian and David over Goliath Preserve his army put a bow of brass in the hands of those who have armed themselves in Thy Name and gird their loins with strength for the fight Take up the spear and *shield and arise to help us confound* and put to shame those who have devised evil against us may they be before the faces of Thy faithful warriors as dust before the wind and may Thy mighty Angel confound them and put them to flight may they be ensnared when they know it not and may the plots they have laid in secret be turned against them let them fall before Thy servants feet and be laid low by our hosts! Lord Thou art able to save both great and small Thou art God and man cannot *prevail against Thee*

God of our fathers! Remember Thy bounteous mercy and loving kindness which are *from of old turn not Thy face from us but* be gracious to our unworthiness and in Thy great goodness and Thy many mercies regard not our transgressions and iniquities! Create in us a clean heart and renew a right spirit within us strengthen us all in Thy faith fortify our hope inspire us with true love one for another arm us with unity of spirit in the

of evers nce the appearance of the comet and especially n e the beginn g of the wa

He had lo g bee th k n of ente ng the ar m and ould ha e d e so h d he n t b en hindered, first, by hi memb rsh p f the Soc ty of Freemaso t which he wa bou d by o th nd hich preached perpetu l pe c nd the ab l f war a d ec ndly by th f t th t

the beast th t poke gr t d bl pt em us th gsh d bee p edest ed f m t n ty nd that the f re h ght n t to unde take) th g b t a t f wh t wa bou d to come to pass.

CHAPTER XX

A FEW TIMATE FRIENDS were d n ng w th the Rost that day s usual n Su d ys.

P erre cam arly so t fi d th m lone

H h d gro n so t t th) th t he ou d ha bee b rm l h d h t been so tall, so broad f l mb nd so t g tl t he car ned his b lk w th e d nte e

H we t p th ta rs puffi g d mutt g someth g His co hm n d d n t en k h ther he was t wa t. H kn w th t wh n his master a t th Rost s h tayed till m d ght. Th Ros footm n rushed erly forw d t h lp h m ff w th h loak d t k his hat d u k. P rre from club l b t, al wa l ft bot hat d tuck n th t room

The first perso h saw n th hou e was N tásha E e b f h saw h wh le t k g ff his cloak h heard her Sh wa pract ca g l fa exercises the mus room. H k w th t

be t th room g g Sh h d he back t h m h h p ed th doo but whe tur g q kly h saw h b d u pri d f she blushed d cam rap dly p t him

I a t t try to g ga n h sa d dd g as if by way f excuse t lea t something t do.

"That cap tal

H w gl d I m you e com ! I m so happy today sh sa d w th the ld n m t

P erre h d not seen in h r for a long time You kno N chola h s rece ed a St George s Cro s? I am o proud of h m

Oh yes I sent that a nouncement But I d n t want to t rrupt y u he added nd was bout to go to th draw n room

N tá l topped h m

Count it wrong of me to s ng l e sa d blush nd fix g her eyes nqu gly on h m.

She w P erre flushed t her wo ds. I saw n u same rmy ord th t h Bolk sk (he wh pered the n me ha t ly) n Rus a d n the rmy k — I wa oe k ng

By ssoci t of dea I rre wa t o e carr ed back to th d y he try to co fort h r he had sa d that f h we e not h n

th m

Yes y u you he sa d tteri th word) u rapt rously— that diff rent th g I know no o k de mo e ge rou o bet te than y u n body could b ! H d y u n t been the the d now too I d n t k wh t w ld ha b come f me because

Tears uddenly rose n her eyes he tu ed way l fted h mus before he yes bega g g ga nd a began walk up a d d wn the oom.

Just th P tya came runn g in from the draw room

Pé ya wa n w h dsom rosy l d f fiftee w th full ed l ps d resembled N tasha. H was prep g t te th u rs ty but l e nd his f nd Obolé k had lat ly n cret greed to jo the hussars.

Pétya h d om rush g o t t talk t h s namesake bo t th s aff ir He h d ked

and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months

The French alphabet written out with the same numerical values as the Hebrew in which the first nine letters denote units and the others tens will have the following significance

a	b	c	d	e	f	g	h	i	k
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
l	m	n	o	p	q	r	s		
20	30	40	50	60	70	80	90		
t	u	v	w	x	y				
100	110	120	130	140	150				
z									
160									

Writing the words *L Empereur Napoléon* in numbers it appears that the sum of them is 666 and that Napoleon was therefore the beast foretold in the Apocalypse Moreover by applying the same system to the words *quarante deux* which was the term allowed to the beast that spoke great things and blasphemies the same number 666 was obtained from which *it followed that the limit fixed for Napoleon s power had come in the year 1812 when the* French emperor was forty two This prophecy pleased Pierre very much and he often asked himself what would put an end to the power of the beast that is of Napoleon and tried by the same system of using letters as numbers and adding them up to find an answer to the question that engrossed *him He wrote the words L Empereur Alexandre La nation russe* and added up their numbers but the sums were either more or less than 666 Once when making such calculations he wrote down his own ... Com P rre Besouhoff but ... me right ... tituting a *z for the s* and adding *de* and the article *le* still without obtaining the desired result Then it occurred to him if the answer to the question were contained in his name his nationality would also be given in the answer So he wrote *Le russe Besuhof* and adding up the numbers got 671 *This was only five too much and five* was represented by *e* the very letter elided from the article *le* before the word *Empereur* ... ing the *e* though incorrectly Pierre

Includ ng a for the f tt r e in j j eu oy e
s on from the le t elo e Tmpere ır —T

Forty two

what means he was connected with the great event foretold in the Apocalypse he did not know but he did not doubt that *connection* for a moment His love for Natásha Antichrist Napoleon the invasion the comet 666 *L Empereur Napoléon* and *L russe Besuhof*—all this ... h m

lead him to a great achievement and great happiness

On the eve of the Sunday when the special prayer was read Pierre had promised the Rostóvs to bring them from Count Rostopchín whom he knew well both the appeal to the people and the latest news from the army In the morning when he went to call at Rostop*chín s he met there a courier fresh from the* army an acquaintance of his own who often danced at Moscow balls

Do please for heaven s sake relieve me of something! said the courier I have a sackful of letters to parents

Among these letters was one from Nicholas Rostóv *to his father Pierre took that letter and Rostopchín also gave him the Emperor s ap*peal to Moscow which had just been printed the last army orders and his own most recent bulletin Glancing through the army orders Pierre found in one of them in the lists of killed wounded and rewarded the name of Nicholas Rostóv awarded a *St George s Cross of the Fourth Class for courage shown in the Ostrov*na affair and in the same order the name of Prince Andrew Bolkónski appointed to the command of a regiment of Chasseurs Though he did not want to remind the Rostóvs of Bolkónski Pierre could not refrain from making *them happy by the news of their son s having received a decoration so he sent that printed* army order and Nicholas letter to the Rostóvs, keeping the appeal the bulletin and the other orders to take with him when he went to dinner

His conversation with Count Rostopchín and the latter *s tone of anxious hurry the meeting with the courier* who talked casually of how badly things were going in the army the rumors of the discovery of spies in Moscow and of a leaflet in circulation stating that Napoleon promised to be in both the Russian capitals by *the autumn and the talk of the Emperor s being expected to arrive next day*—all aroused with fresh force that feeling of agitation and expectation in Pierre which he had been conscious

d ever since the ppearance of the comet, and especially nce the beginning of the war

H had long been thinki of entering the ar my and would ha e do e so had he not been hindered first, by his membership of the Soci ty of Freemasons t which h was bound by oath and which preached perpetual peace and the b- elimon f ar and seco dl b th f ct that w n

m mon t en er the arm lay n th agu der t at h was L ruse B suh f who h d the number of th beast, 666 that his part n the great a air f settin limit to the power of the beast that spoke great d bl sphem us things had been predesti ed from tern ty nd t t er ore h ought n t t undertake n t g but wait f what was bound t come to pass.

CHAPTER XX

A FEW INTIM TE FRIENDS were d n g w th the Ros vs that da as usual on Su d ys.

Pierre came early so as t fi d them al ne

H had gro n so stout thi year that h would ha been b rm l h d he n t been so tall, so broad f limb d so tro th t he car ned his bulk th e d nt ease

H went p the tairs, puffing d mutteri something. His coachman did not even k whether h a t wa t. He knew th t when h master was t th Rost s h tayed till m d ght. Th Rost footm n rushed e gerly forward t h lp him ff w th his cl k d take his hat d tick. P erre from club hab t, al ways l f both hat d u k n th nte oom

The first perso he saw n th house wa N tasha. E en bef re h saw h whil t k ng off his cloak h heard her Sh was pra t ci g sol fa exercises th mus room. He knew th t she had ot g ce h ll ess nd so the sound f h o ce rp sed d d l gl ted h m H opened th doo softly nd saw l n th lilac dress h had w r t h ch walk g about th oom g She had he back t him hen h pe ed th doo b t wh turn ing qui kl sh saw hi b l rp ed f ce she blushed d cam rap dly up t h n

I want t try t g ga h sa d dd ng as f by way of excuse t t l ast some- thing to do.

"Tha s cap tal!

How gl d I m y e comet I m so hap- py today she sa d w th th old m t n

P erre h d not seen n h r for a long time. "You know N cholas ha rece ved a St. George s Cross I m so proud of h m.

Oh yes, I sent that nnouncement. But I don t want to terrupt you," he added and was bout to go to the draw room.

Natash s pped him.

Count t wrong f me to n she sa d blushi g and fix ng her eyes inqu ri gl on him.

you d sappro ed f I bel eve in you co pl te- l You d n t know how mportant ou r t m how much you do e f me She

would k n h knees f her h d nd th sam feel g f p ty tend ness, nd l e took possess n f h m nd the same w rd rose t his l ps. But he d d not gi e him t me to sa them

Yes y u you she sa d, utteri the words rapturously— that d fferent thin I know no o k der more generou o bet t th n you nobody could bel H d you not been tl th n a d n w too I d n t kn w wh t would ha e become of me because

Tears sudd nl ro e n h eyes she tu ed way l fted h n us bef re h eyes bega s g ga n nd ga n began walk n up l d wn th room

Just th n Petya came runn g n from the draw n room.

Pétya was n w a h dsome ros l d of fifteen w th f ll ed l p nd resembled N tásh He wa prep r g to nt the u ers ty but l e d h f d Obolé sk had l t ly n secret gr ed to jo the hussars.

Pétya h d come ru h g o t t t lk t l s n mesake bout th s aff r H h d ked

and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months

The French alphabet written out with the same numerical values as the Hebrew in which the first nine letters denote units and the others tens will have the following significance

a	b	c	d	e	f	g	h	i	k
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
l	m	n	o	p	q	r	s		
20	30	40	50	60	70	80	90		
t	u	v	w	x	y				
100	110	1 0	130	140	150				
z									
160									

Writing the words *L Empereur Napoleon* in numbers it appears that the sum of them is 666 and that Napoleon was therefore the beast foretold in the Apocalyp

pl

de

th

same number 666 was obtained from which it followed that the limit fixed for Napoleon s power had come in the year 1812 when the French emperor was forty two This prophecy pleased Pierre very much and he often asked himself what would put an end to the power of the beast that is of Napoleon and tried by the same system of using letters as numbers and adding them up to find an answer to the question that engrossed him He wrote the words *L Empereur Alexandre La nation russe* and added up their numbers but the sums were either more or less than 666 On

ing suc

name

the sur

u not come right Then he changed the spelling substituting a *z* for the *s* and adding *de* and the article *le* still without obtaining the desired result Then it occurred to him if the answer to the question were contained in his name his nationality would also be given in the answer So he wrote *Le russe Besuhof* and adding up the numbers got 6,1 This was only five too much and five was represented by *e* the very letter elided from the article *le* before the word *Empereur* By omitting the *e* though incorrectly Pierre got the answer he sought *L russe Besul of* made 666 This discovery excited him How or by

Includ g a 5 for th lette e dropped by el s on from the le bef e Empereur—T Forty two

what means he was connected with the great event foretold in the Apocalypse he did not know but he did not doubt that connect on for a moment His love for Natásha Antichri Napoleon the invasion the comet 666 *L Fpereur Napoléon* and *L russe Besul of*—all th had to mature and culminate to lift him ou of that spellbound petty

hal

lea

pin

On the eve of the Sunday when the special prayer was read Pierre had promised the Rostóvs to bring them from Count Rostopchín whom he knew well both the appeal to the people and the latest news from the army In the morning when he went to call at Rostopchín s he met there a courier fresh from the army an acquaintance of his own who often danced at Moscow balls

Do please for heaven s sake relieve me of something! said the courier I have a sackful of letters to parents

A

I

F

peal to Mosco o c m the Emperor s appeal to Moscow which had just been printed the last army orders and his own most recent bulletin Glancing through the army orders Pierre found in one of them in the lists of killed wounded and rewarded the name of Nicholas Rostóv awarded a St George s Cross of the Fourth Class for courage shown in the Ostróvna affair and in the same order the name of Prince Andrew Bolkónski appointed to the command of a regiment of Chasseurs Though he did not want to remind the Rostóvs of Bolkónski Pierre could not refr

them

recei

army

as letter to the Rostóvs keeping the appeal the bulletin and the other orders to take with him when he went to dinner

His conversation with Count Rostopchín and the latter s tone of anxious hurry the meeting with the courier who talked casually of how badly things were going in the army the rumors of the discovery of spies in Moscow and of a leaflet in circulation stat

prom

the

exp

fres

of agitation and expectation in Pierre which he had been conscious

of every u e the ppe rance of the comet and especially s ce the beg nn f the wa
H h d long been th nk f ent g the ar my d uld ha e d ne so had he n t been hindered first, by his memb rsh p f th Soc ety f Freemaso to which h wa bound by th and h ch p eacl ed perpetual peace d the ab l f a nd ec dly by the f ct th t hen h sa th gre mass f Musco te who had d ed f rm nd were talking p tr t m he som how f l ash med t t k the tep B t th ch f aso f t carry g ut h s int t t th army l y n th gue dea that h *L ru B* *f* who h d the umbe f h be 666 th t h p t n the great ff ir f se g l t h power f th b ast th poke gr t d bl ph m u th gs had b p edest ed f m rn ty d that th f h gh n t t und t k ny thi g b wa f wh w bound m t pass.

CHAPTER XX

A EW E OS w d g w th the Rost h t d y usu l Su d y
P rr cam ly so fi d them l n
H had gr so t u tl y ar h t h ld ha be b n l h d h n t b tall so b d f l b d so ng h t h car ed hi b lk w tl d
H p h ta rs p ffi g d mu t g som h g H h d d n n k h th h H k w th wh n h mas as h Ros h ta d ll m d gh Th Ros fro m ru h d g ly f rw d h lp h m ff w d l l k d k h ha d k l rr f n lub l b t, l w l l be h l d k h oo
I h fi p so h saw h h u w N asha E l f h wh wh l k g ff h l k h h d l Sl w p c g sol f er es l m m H k w l h l d g l llnes d so h d l l l ed d d l gh ed h m
H p d l d f l d w l th l l es h l l w h h w lk g
b h g g Sl l d h b k l l l p l l d l wh g l kl h w h b d l d f l bl l d l p ll P h m l ry g h sa d dd l g l l w f use l som l g d
ll P l m l m so hap-
H w l l l l sa d w h h ld m u n p od

P erre had not seen in her for a long time You kno v N ch l s h s recei ed a St. George s Cro ? I am so proud of h m

Ol yes I sent tl at a nouncement But I don t w nt to interrupt you he added and wa bout t go to the draw n room.

N tásh st pped h m.

Count t wrong of me to s ng she sa d blu h ng d fix ng h r eyes inqu r ngly on h m

N Wl y l ould t b ? On the ntrary

But why d you k me?

I do kn w myself Natá h nswered qu kly but I should not l ke t d nytl ng y u d pp ed of I bel eve n y u compl te l Y u d n t kn w how mpo t nt you are t me h w mu h you e d ne f me She pok rap dly d d d n t n t ce h w P erre flush d h w d l w n th t same rmy d th t *h* B lk n k (h wh pered the n ne h t ly) n Rus nd n the rmy ga n Wh d y u th nk? — he wa spe k ng hurr dl den ly f d her trength m gl t f l h — W ll he f rg m ? W ll not lw y h b t t fe l ng t wa d me? Wl t d y u th nk? Wh t do y u th nk?

I h nk l err pl ed tl at he h s n th ng t f rg Ifl wer n h pl

By sso t n f d P rr w at e carr ed b k tl d y h n try n to om f her l h d d that f h were n t h m lf bu th best m th wo ld and f ee he w uld k h kn es f r he hand and the f l g f p ty t d ness nd l e took poss n f h m d h sam w rds rose t h l p But l d d t g e h m t me to say h m

Yes y u Y he s d utte the h

be n tl e the d ow too I u om f m because

d n the oom.

Just th P tya came run g in from the draw room.

Pétya was now ha dsome rosy l d of fifteen w th full ed l p and resembled N tásha H was p ep ng to e ter the u vers ty b t l e d hi f d Obolenski had lately n secret, greed t j the hussars.

Pétya h d come rushi g t to talk t h s n mesake bo t this affair He h d asked

Pierre to find out whether he would be accepted in the hussars

Pierre walked up and down the drawing room not listening to what Pétya was saying

Pétya pulled him by the arm to attract his attention

Well what about my plan? Peter Kirílych for heaven s sake! You are my only hope! said Pétya

Oh yes your plan To join the hussars? I ll mention it I ll bring it all up today

Well *mon cher* have you got the manifesto? asked the old count The countess has been to Mass at the Razumóvskis and heard the new prayer She says it s very fine

Yes I ve got it said Pierre The Emperor is to be here tomorrow there s to be an Extraordinary Meeting of the nobility and they are talking of a levy of ten men per thousand Oh yes let me congratulate you!

Yes yes thank God! Well and what news from the army?

We are again retreating They say we re already near Smolénsk replied Pierre

O Lord O Lord! exclaimed the count Where is the manifesto?

The Emperor s appeal? Oh yes!

Pierre began feeling in his pockets for the papers but could not find them Still slapping his pockets he kissed the hand of the countess who entered the room and glanced uneasily around evidently expecting Natásha who had left off singing but had not yet come into the drawing room

On my word I don t know what I ve done with it he said

There he is always losing everything! remarked the countess

Natásha entered with a softened and agitated expression of face and sat down looking silently at Pierre As soon as she entered Pierre s features which had been gloomy suddenly lighted up and while still searching for the pa

mes

st have left

Oh! And my coachman has gone

But Sónya who had gone to look for the papers in the anteroom had found them in Pierre s hat where he had carefully tucked them under the lining Pierre was about to begin reading

No after dinner said the old count evidently expecting much enjoyment from that reading

At dinner at which champagne was drunk to the health of the new chevalier of St George Shinshín told the n the town news of the illness of the old Georgian princess of M tiser s disappearance from Moscow and of how some German fellow had been brought to Rostopchín and accused of being a French spyer (so Count Rostopchín had told the story) and how Rostopchín let him go and assured the people that he was not a spire at all but only an old German ruin

People are being arrested said the count I ve told the countess she should not speak French so much It s not the time for it now

And have you heard? Shinshín asked. Prince Golítsyn has engaged a master to teach him Russian It is becoming dangerous to speak French in the streets

And how about you Count Peter Kirílych? If they call up the militia you too will have to mount a horse remarked the old count addressing Pierre

Pierre had been silent and preoccupied all through dinner seeming not to grasp what was said He looked at the count

Oh yes the war he said No! What sort of warrior should I make? And yet everything is so strange so strange! I can t make it out I don t know I am very far from having military tastes but in these times no one can answer for himself

After dinner the count settled himself comfortably in an easy chair and with a serious face asked Sónya who was considered an excellent reader to read the appeal

To Moscow our a cient Capital!

'The enemy has ntered the bo lers of Russia with immen e forces He comes to despo l our belo e l country

Sónya read painstakingly in her high pitched voice The count listened with closed eyes heaving abrupt sighs at certain passages

Natásha sat erect gazing with a searching look now at her father and now at Pierre

Pierre felt her eyes on him and tried not to look round The countess shook her head disapprovingly and angrily at every solemn expression in the manifesto In all these words she saw only that the danger threatening her son would not soon be over Shinshín with a sarcastic smile on his lips was evidently preparing

better pretext present itself

After reading bout the d ngers that threat ened Russia, the hopes the Emperor placed on Moscow and especially on its illu tri us n b l ity So ya, w th a q er her vo ce due ch ef ly to th atte ti n that was be g paid to her read th last words

"W ourselves will not d l t ppear am g our peopl in th t Cap tal d in thers p rts f our realm for consulta on and f th d recti h ene- of Russia.

"Yes, that s tl cried the cou t, open his mo t eves d iffing repeatedly f a tro g vinaigrette had been h ld t his nos and he added, "Let the Empero but say the word and we'll sacrifice everythi g and begrudg noth- in

Bef re Shinshin had time to utter th joke he was ready t make th count s p tri tism, N tásha jumped up from her place nd ran to her father

"What darlin ur Papa is sh cried kiss- ing him, d she ga looked t P erre with the unconsci us coq try that had returned to her with her better pirits.

"There Here p triot f you sa d Shin shin

Not patriot t ll, but imply N tásha replied injured t ne. E erythi g seems funn to you, b t this isn t t all joke.

A jok indeed put n the count. "Let him but say th wo d d we'll ll go. W re not Germans

B t did yo notice, t says, for consulta tio ? said P erre

Never m d what f

At this mom t, P tya, to whom n body wa pa ing v ttenti n, cam up t his father w th ery flushed face nd sa d n his breaki g that was now deep nd w shrill

"Well, Papa I t ll you d fin ely nd M m- ma too, t as y please, but I say d fi ely tha yo m

er husband.

"That comes f your talk g sa d he. But th t had already recovered from his excitement.

Come come! sa d he Here s a fine war or! No! N nsense! Y u must study

It s not nons nse Papa Fédya Obolén ki s younger than I nd he s go ng too Bes des ll the same I can t tudy n w wl en Pétya st pped short flusl ed till he persp red but still got out the w rds when our F therl nd n d nger

"That ll do that ll do—nonsense.

But you sa d yourself that we would sacri fice e eryth g

Pétya Be qu t I tell you cried the cou t w th gl n at his w fe who had turned p le and wa t ring fixedly t her son.

And I t ll you—Peter K rilych here w ll also tell you

"Nonsen e I tell you. Your mother m lk

tudy bef re ha a nap

"Well Peter Kirilych let go d ha e a smoke he aid.

P erre was gitated nd undecided. N tásha s unwontedly brilliant eyes conti ually gl nc g at him w th m re than cordial look, had re d ed him to this condition.

No I th nk I ll go h me.

H me? Why you meant to pend the e e- e

only brighten up when you re I ere

"Yes, I h d f rgotten I eally must go h me bus ess said P erre hur edly

W ll then a evo said the count and w nt ut of the room.

"Why are you go g Why are y u upset. asked N tásha, and h looked challe gingly nto P erre eyes.

Because I lov you! was what h wanted to sa but h did n t say t, nd ly blushed till th tears came and l wered hi eyes.

Because t is better fo me to come less ft n because No imply I ha bus ness.

"Why? N t ll m N tásha began resolute- ly and sudd nly topped.

They looked each other with d mayed and embarrassed fa es. He tried t smile but could not his sm l expressed ufferi g nd he silently kissed her hand nd went o t.

P erre made up his mi d not to go to the Ros- t vs ny more.

Pierre to find out whether he would be accepted in the hussars

Pierre walked up and down the drawing room not listening to what Pétya was saying

Pétya pulled him by the arm to attract his attention

Well what about my plan? Peter Kirílych for heaven s sake! You are my only hope! said Pétya

Oh yes your plan To join the hussars? I ll mention it I ll bring it all up today

Well *mon cher* have you got the manifesto? asked the old count The countess has been to Mass at the Razumovskis and heard the new prayer She says it s very fine

Yes I ve got it said Pierre The Emperor is to be here tomorrow there s to be an Extraordinary Meeting of the nobility and they are talking of a levy of ten men per thousand Oh yes let me congratulate you!

Yes yes thank God! Well and what news from the army?

We are again retreating They say we re already near Smolénsk replied Pierre

O Lord O Lord! exclaimed the count Where is the manifesto?

The Emperor s appeal? Oh yes!

Pierre began feeling in his pockets for the papers but could not find them Still slapping his pockets he kissed the hand of the countess who entered the room and glanced uneasily around evidently expecting Natásha who had left off singing but had not yet come into the drawing room

On my word I don t know what I ve done with it he said

There he is always losing everything! remarked the countess

Natásha entered with a softened and agitated expression of face and sat down looking silently at Pierre As soon as she entered Pierre s features which had been gloomy suddenly lighted up and while still searching for the pa

[illegible] t have left

[illegible] gone

pe

Pierre s hat where he had carefully tucked them under the lining Pierre was about to begin reading

No after dinner said the old count evidently expecting *much enjoyment from that* reading

At dinner at which champagne was drunk to the health of the new chevalier of St George Shinshín told the n the town news of the illness of the old Georgian princess of Métivier s disappearance from Moscow and of how some German fellow had been *brought to Rostop*chín and accused of being a French spyer (so Count Rostopchín had told the story) and how Rostopchín let him go and assured the people *that he was not a spire at all* but only an old German ruin

People are being arrested said the count I ve told the countess she should not speak French so much It s not the time for it now

And have you heard? Shinshín asked. Prince Golítsyn has engaged a master to teach him Russian It is becoming dangerous to speak *French in the streets*

And how about you Count Peter Kirílych? If they call up the militia you too will have to mount a horse remarked the old count addressing Pierre

Pierre had been silent and preoccupied all [illegible] hat was

[illegible] *at sort* of warrior should I make? And yet everything is so strange so strange! I can t make it out. I don t know I am very far from having military tastes but *in these times no one can answer* for himself

After dinner the count settled himself comfortably in an easy chair and with a serious face asked *Sónya who was considered an ex*cellent reader to read the appeal

To Moscow our an[illegible] t Capital!

The enemy has entered the borders of Russia *with immense forces He comes to despoil our be*loved country

Sónya read painstakingly in her high pitched voice The count listened with closed eyes *heaving abrupt sighs at certain passages*

Natásha sat erect gazing with a searching look now at her father and now at Pierre

Pierre felt her eyes on him and tried not to *look round The countess shook her head dis*approvingly and angrily at every solemn expression in the manifesto In all these words she *her son*

[illegible] sar

[illegible] ring

[illegible] on-

better pretext present itself

would be too bold. B t in sp te f this he con tinued to struggle desperately forward, and from between the backs of those n front he caught glimpses f an open pace w th a trip of red cloth pread ut o t but just th n the crowd swayed back—th pol ce n front were pushing back those who had pressed too close to the process the Empero was pass ng from the palace to the Cathedral of th As sumption—and Petya unexpectedly rece ed such bl w on his de nd ribs and was squeezed so hard that suddenly everything grew dim bef re his eyes and he lost con ci us ness. When he cam to himself man of cleri cal appeara ce with tuft of gray hair t the back of his head and wearing habb blue cassock—probably church clerk nd cha ter —was holding him under the arm w th ne hand while warding ff the pressure of th crowd with th other

"Y crushed the you gentleman sa d the clerk. "What are you up to Gently They've crushed him, crushed him

Th Emperor entered th Cathedral of the Assumption. The crowd pread ut ga n more evenly and th clerk led P tya—pale and b eath less—to the Tsar-can n. Several peopl were sorry fo Petya d uddenl crowd turned toward him and pressed und him. Those who tood earest him ttended to him un buttoned his coat, seated him n the raised platform f the ca nd eproached those others (whoever they might be) who had crushed him.

On m ght easily get killed that way! What do they mean b t. kill people Poo dear he as wh as heet! — ar ous o ces were heard sa ng

Petya soo cam t himself, the color re turned to his f ce, th pa h d passed and t the cost f that temporary unpleasantness h had btai ed pla by th cann n from wher h hoped t see th Empero who would be re turn ng that way P tya no l nger thought of presenting his pet ion. If h could only see th Empero h wo ld be happy!

Whil th serv e wa proceeding in th Cathedral f th Assumpt n—it was com b ed service f prayer o th occasion of the Emperor arrival nd f thanksgivi g for th nclusio f pea e with th Turks—the crowd ou id p ead ou nd hawkers ppeared, sell ng kvas, gi gerb ead, nd poppyseed sweets (f h h Pé ya was particularly f d) d

ord nary con ersation could ga n be heard. A tradesman s w fe was show rent n her shawl nd tell ng how much the shawl h d cost n ther was saying that all s lk goods had now got dear The clerk who had rescued Pet ya was talk ng to a functionary bout the pr ests who were officiati that da with the bishop. The cle k several times u ed the word plen ry (of th serv ce) word Pétya d d not un derst nd. Two young citizens were joking w th som erf gi l who were cracking nuts. All these con ersat on especially the joking w th th girls were such as m ht have had par t cular charm f r Pétya t his age but they did n t nterest h m n w H sat on h elevation—

had experienced when he was being crushed, together w th that of rapture still further n ten fied his sense of the importance of th oc casi n

Suddenly th sound of firing of cannon was heard from the embankment, to celebrate the sign of peace w th th Turks nd the crowd rushed mpe u usly toward the embank ment t watch the firi Petya too w uld ha e run there, but th clerk who had taken the young gentleman u der his protecti n stopped h m. The firing was t ll proceeding when of ficers, ge erals, nd gentlemen waiti came ru n out of the cathedral, and f er them others n more l isurel manner caps were ga n raised, nd those who had ru to look t th cannon ran ba k ga n. At last f ur men n un f rms and sashes emerged from th cathe dral doors. Hurrah hurrah shouted the crowd gain.

"Which is h Which?" asked Pétya in a tearful o ce, of those around him, but no on nswered him, everybod was too excited d P tya fixing on on f those f u m whom he could not clearly see fo th tears of joy that filled his eyes, concentrated all his enthusiasm n him—though t happened n t to be th Em pero —frantically shouted Hurrah nd re sol ed that t m rrow come what might, he would jo th rm

Th crowd ran fter the Empero followed him to th pala e nd began to di perse It

That pal e wi d ws, expecti g he knew not

A ery large ca non cast in 1586 and preserved in Moscow Kremlin as curios ty —Tr.

CHAPTER XXI

After the definite refusal he had received Pétya went to his room and there locked himself in and wept bitterly When he came in to tea

and several of the Rostóvs domestic serfs

a grown up man He frowned before his looking glass gesticulated shrugged his shoulders and finally without saying a word to anyone took his cap and left the house by the back door trying to avoid notice Pétya decided to go straight to where the Emperor was and to explain frankly to some gentleman in waiting (he imagined the Emperor to be always sur

drance to loyalty and that he was ready to While dressing Pétya had prepared many fine things he meant to say to the gentleman in waiting

It was on the very fact of being so young that Pétya counted for success in reaching the Emperor—he even thought how surprised everyone would be at his youthfulness—and yet in the arrangement of his collar and hair and by

ever increasing crowds moving toward the Krémlin the less he remembered to walk with the sedateness and deliberation of a man As he approached the Krémlin he even began to avoid being crushed and resolutely stuck out his elbows in a menacing way But within the Trinity Gateway he was so pressed to the wall by people who probably were unaware of the patriotic intentions with which he had come that in spite of all his determination he had to give in and stop while carriages passed in rumbling beneath the archway Beside Pétya stood a peasant woman a footman two trades

for all the carriages to pass ... lutely working his way with his elbows but the woman just in front of him who was the first against whom he directed his efforts angrily shouted at him

What are you shoving for young lordling? Don t you see we re all standing still? Then why push?

Anybody can shove said the footman and also began working his elbows to such effect that he pushed Pétya into a very filthy corner of the gateway

Pétya wiped his perspiring face with his hands and pulled up the damp collar which he had arranged so well at home to seem like a man s

He felt that he no longer looked presentable

impossible to smarten oneself up or move to another place because of the crowd One of the generals who drove past was an acquaintance of the Rostóvs and Pétya thought of asking his help but came to the conclusion that that would not be a manly thing to do When the carriages had all passed in the crowd carrying Pétya with it streamed forward into the Krémlin Square which was already full of people There were people not only in the square

ous voices of the crowd that filled the whole Krémlin

For a while the crowd was less dense but suddenly all heads were bared and everyone rushed forward in one direction Pétya was being pressed so that he could scarcely breathe and everybody shouted Hurrah! hurrah! hurrah! Pétya stood on tiptoe and pushed and pinched but could see nothing except the people about him

All the faces bore the same expression of excitement and enthusiasm A tradesman s wife standing beside Pétya sobbed and the tears ran down her cheeks

Father! Angel! Dear one! she kept repeating wiping away her tears with her fingers

Hurrah! was heard on all sides

For a moment the crowd stood still but then

nching his ly pushed forward elbowing his way and shouting hurrah! as if he were prepared that instant to kill himself and everyone else but on both sides of him other people with similarly ferocious faces pushed forward and everybody shouted hurrah!

So this is what the Emperor is! thought Pétya No I can t petition him myself—that

would be too bold. But in spite of this he continued to struggle desperately forward, and from between the backs of those in front he caught glimpses of an open space with a strip of red cloth spread on it; but just then the crowd swayed back—the police in front were pushing back those who had pressed too close to the procession: the Emperor was passing from the palace to the Cathedral of the Assumption—and Pétya unexpectedly received such a blow on his side and ribs and was squeezed so hard that suddenly everything grew dim before his eyes and he lost consciousness. When he came to himself, a man of clerical appearance with a tuft of gray hair at the back of his head and wearing a shabby blue cassock—probably a church clerk and chanter—was holding him under the arm with one hand and warding off the pressure of the crowd with the other.

"You've crushed the young gentleman!" said the clerk. "What are you up to? Gently! They've crushed him, crushed him!"

The Emperor entered the Cathedral of the Assumption. The crowd spread out again more evenly, and the clerk led Pétya—pale and breathless—to the Tsar-cannon. Several people were sorry for Pétya, and suddenly a crowd turned toward him and pressed round him. Those who stood nearest him attended to him, unbuttoned his coat, seated him on the raised platform of the cannon, and reproached those others (whoever they might be) who had crushed him.

"One might easily get killed that way! What do they mean by it? Killing people! Poor dear, he's as white as a sheet!"—various voices were heard saying.

Pétya soon came to himself, the color returned to his face, the pain had passed, and at the cost of that temporary unpleasantness he had obtained a place by the cannon from where he hoped to see the Emperor who would be returning that way. Pétya no longer thought of presenting his petition. If he could only see the Emperor he would be happy!

While the service was proceeding in the Cathedral of the Assumption—it was a combined service of prayer on the occasion of the Emperor's arrival and of thanksgiving for the conclusion of peace with the Turks—the crowd outside spread out and hawkers appeared, selling kvas, gingerbread, and poppyseed sweets (of which Pétya was particularly fond), and

A very large cannon cast in 1588 and preserved in the Moscow Krémlin as a curiosity.—Tr.

ordinary conversation could again be heard. A tradesman's wife was showing a rent in her shawl and telling how much the shawl had cost; another was saying that all silk goods had now got dear. The clerk who had rescued Pétya was talking to a functionary about the priests who were officiating that day with the bishop. The clerk several times used the word "plenary" (of the service), a word Pétya did not understand. Two young citizens were joking with some serf girls who were cracking nuts. All these conversations, especially the joking with

lo... fo him. The feeling of pain and fear he had experienced when he was being crushed, together with that of rapture, still further intensified his sense of the importance of the occasion.

Suddenly the sound of a firing of cannon

run there, but the clerk who had taken the young gentleman under his protection stopped him. The firing was still proceeding when officers, generals, and gentlemen in waiting came running out of the cathedral, and after them others in a more leisurely manner: caps were again raised, and those who had run to look at the cannon ran back again. At last four men in uniforms and sashes emerged from the cathedral doors. "Hurrah! hurrah!" shouted the crowd again.

"Which is he? Which?" asked Pétya in a tearful voice, of those around him, but no one answered him, everybody was too excited; and Pétya, fixing on one of those four men whom he could not clearly see for the tears of joy that filled his eyes, concentrated all his enthusiasm on him—though it happened not to be the Emperor—frantically shouted "Hurrah!" and resolved that tomorrow, come what might, he would join the army.

The crowd ran after the Emperor, followed him to the palace, and began to disperse. It was already late, and Pétya had not eaten anything and was drenched with perspiration, yet he did not go home but stood with that diminishing, but still considerable, crowd before the palace while the Emperor dined—looking at the palace windows, expecting he knew not

CHAPTER XXI

After the definite refusal he had received Pétya went to his room and there locked himself in and wept bitterly When he came in to tea silent morose and with tear stained face everybody pretended not to notice anything

Next day the Emperor arrived in Moscow and several of the Rostóvs domestic serfs begged permission to go to have a look at him That morning Pétya was a long time dressing and arranging his hair and collar to look like a grown up man He frowned before his looking glass gesticulated shrugged his shoulders and finally without saying a word to anyone took his cap and left the house by the back door trying to avoid notice Pétya decided to go straight to where the Emperor was and to explain frankly to some gentleman in waiting (he imagined the Emperor to be always surrounded by gentlemen in waiting) that he Count Rostóv in spite of his youth wished to serve his country that youth could be no hindrance to loyalty and that he was ready to While dressing Pétya had prepared many fine things he meant to say to the gentleman in waiting

It was on the very fact of being so young that Pétya counted for success in reaching the Emperor—he even thought how surprised everyone would be at his youthfulness—and yet in the arrangement of his collar and hair and by his sedate deliberate walk he wished to appear a grown up man But the farther he went and the more his attention was diverted by the ever increasing crowds moving toward the Krémlin the less he remembered to walk with the sedateness and deliberation of a man As he approached the Krémlin he even began to avoid being crushed and resolutely stuck out his elbows in a menacing way But within the Trinity Gateway he was so pressed to the wall by people who probably were unaware of the patriotic intentions with which he had come that in spite of all his determination he had to give in and stop while carriages passed in rumbling beneath the archway Beside Pétya stood a peasant woman a footman two tradesmen and a discharged soldier After standing some time in the gateway Pétya tried to move forward in front of the others without waiting fo[illegible]

[illegible] s t ie urst against whom he directed his efforts angrily shouted at him

What are you shoving for young lordling? Don't you see we're all standing still? Then why push?

Anybody can shove said the footman and also began working his elbows to such effect that he pushed Pétya into a very filthy corner of the gateway

Pétya wiped his perspiring face with his hands and pulled up the damp collar which he had arranged so well at home to seem like a man's

He felt that he no longer looked presentable and feared that if he were now to approach the gentlemen in waiting in that plight he would not be admitted to the Emperor But it was impossible to smarten oneself up or move to another place because of the crowd One of the generals who drove past was an acquaintance of the Rostóvs and Pétya thought of asking his help but came to the conclusion that that would not be a manly thing to do When the carriages had all passed in the crowd carrying Pétya with it streamed forward into the Krémlin Square which was already full of people There were people not only in the square but everywhere—on the slopes and on the roofs. As soon as Pétya found himself in the square he clearly heard the sound of bells and the joyous voices of the crowd that filled the whole Krémlin

For a while the crowd was less dense but suddenly all heads were bared and everyone rushed forward in one direction Pétya was being pressed so that he could scarcely breathe and everybody shouted Hurrah! hurrah! hurrah! Pétya stood on tiptoe and pushed and pinched but could see nothing except the people about him

All the faces bore the same expression of excitement and enthusiasm A tradesman's wife standing beside Pétya sobbed and the tears ran down her cheeks

Father! Angel! Dear one! she kept repeating wiping away her tears with her fingers

Hurrah! was heard on all sides

For a moment the crowd stood still but then it made another rush forward

Quite beside himself Pétya clinching his teeth and rolling his eyes ferociously pushed forward elbowing his way and shouting hurrah! as if he were prepared that instant to kill himself and everyone else but on both sides of him other people with similarly ferocious faces pushed forward and everybody shouted hurrah!

So this is what the Emperor is! thought Pétya No I can't petition him myself—that

marshals of the n bil ty were t stand when the Empero entered, wh n ball hould be g en in the Emperor hono whether they should gro p themsel es by d tricts or by bole pro ces a d so on but soon as the war as t ched on o what the nob l ty had bee con ned f r the talk became undeced d defi te The all preferred listening t speak g

A middle ged man handsom nd rile in the uniform f a retired n val ffice wa speak

hom h was cq nted. He too pp o ched that gro p d li t ned w th a k dly m le

from th fact that some peopl P erre knew as the meekest d quietest of m n walked away disappro ly o exp essed disagreement w th him. P erre pushed his way to th middl of the gro p liste ed and ed hims lf that th ma was deed l beral but of views qu different from his wn Th naval officer poke in part cularly sonorous mus cal nd aristocrati barit e ce pleasantly wallow ng his r's d ge erally slurring his co o-nants the of m call g utt hi erv a t, Heah Bw g m my p p l It was ndic ativ of diss p u n and the ex cise of uthor ity

"What f th Sm lé k people ha e offahd to waise mil tia f the Empewah Ah w to take Sm lénsk our patte n? If th ble wis-tocwacy f th pw f Moscow thinks fit, t ca sh w ts l valty to o so we gn the Empewah thah ways H w f gott n th a g f the mil tia the yeah seven? All that d d as to enw ch th pw ests sons d thieves d wobbahs.

Co t Ilyá Rostó smiled blandly nd nod ded pp o al.

And as ur mil tia of any use to the Em

ll get nly depwa ty fwom them Th nobil ty don t gwudge theah l es—ev wy one f us w ll go d bwi g m wecwuits d th so weign (th t wa th way he referred

to the Emperor) need only say the w rd and we ll ll die fo him added the orator with an mat on

Count Ro tó s mouth watered w th pleasure and he nudged Pierre but Pierre wanted to speak himself. He pushed forward feel ng stirred but not yet sure what t rred him or wh t he would say Scarcely had he opened l i m uth when o e of the enat rs, a man w th

p re t the p esent moment to dopt con crip-ti n or to call out the m l t a. We ha e been summoned to eply t the appeal with wh cl our so e gn the Emperor has hon red us. But to jud wh t is best—conscription or th m l tia—we can lea e to the supreme uthori ty

P erre suddenly saw an outlet for h s exc te-ment. He hard ned his heart ga nst the se t who was introduci this t nd narrow tt tude to the del berat on of the n b l ty P erre tepped f rward nd nterrupted him H himself d d not y t k ow what he w uld say but he began to peak e ge ly occas n l ly l ps n nto French or expressi g himself i bookish Russian

Excuse me your excellency h began (He was well acqua ted w th th en tor b t thou ht t necessary on this occas on to d dress him f rm lly) "Thou h I d t gree w th the gentleman (he hes tated he wished to say M t è h or bl p op t — My ery h rable ppo t") w tl the ge tleman wh m I h e n t the h n of kn w g I ppos th t the n b l ty ha been ummo ed not mer ly to exp ess th symp thy d nthusia m but lso t con der the means by which can assist ur Fath

nd h d c n w re eady to mak of ours l es—and not to obtain from us ny co-co un el.

M ny persons w thdrew from the circle no-tici g th t s sarca t c sm le nd th f ee dom of P erre s emarks. O ly Count Rost

Food f ca

what and envying alike the notables he saw arriving at the entrance to dine with the Emperor and the court footmen who served at table glimpses of whom could be seen through the windows

While the Emperor was dining Valuev looking out of the window said

The people are still hoping to see Your Majesty again

The dinner was nearly over and the Emperor munching a biscuit rose and went out onto the balcony The people with Pétya among them rushed toward the balcony

Angel! Dear one! Hurrah! Father! cried the crowd and Pétya with it and again the women and men of weaker mold Pétya among them wept with joy

A largish piece of the biscuit the Emperor was holding in his hand broke off fell on the balcony parapet and then to the ground A coachman in a jerkin who stood nearest sprang forward and snatched it up Several people in the crowd rushed at the coachman Seeing this the Emperor had a plateful of biscuits brought him and began throwing them down from the balcony Pétya s eyes grew bloodshot and still more excited by the danger of being crushed he rushed at the biscuits He did not know why but he had to have a biscuit from the Tsar s hand and he felt that he must not give way He sprang forward and upset an old

h ut the old

Pétya pushed her hand away with his knee seized a biscuit and as if fearing to be too late again shouted Hurrah! with a voice already hoarse

The Emperor went in and after that the greater part of the crowd began to disperse

There! I said if only we waited—and so it was! was being joyfully said by various people

Happy as Pétya was he felt sad at having to go home knowing that all the enjoyment of that day was over He did not go straight home from the Krémlin but called on his friend Obolénski who was fifteen and was also entering the regiment On returning home Pétya announced resolutely and firmly that if he was not allowed to enter the service he would run away And next day Count Ilyá Rostóv—though he had not yet quite yielded—went to inquire how he could arrange for Pétya to serve where there would be least danger

CHAPTER XXII

Two days later on the fifteenth of July an immense number of carriages were standing outside the Slobóda Palace

The great halls were full In the first were the nobility and gentry in their uniforms in the second bearded merchants in full skirted coats of blue cloth and wearing medals. In the noblemen s hall there was an incessant movement and buzz of voices The chief magnates sat on high backed chairs at a large table under the portrait of the Emperor but most of the gentry were strolling about the room

All these nobles whom Pierre met every day at the Club or in their own houses were in uniform—some in that of Catherine s day others in that of the Emperor Paul others again in the new uniforms of Alexander s time or the ordinary uniform of the nobility and the general characteristic of being in uniform imparted something strange and fantastic to these diverse and familiar personalities both old and young The old men dim-eyed toothless bald sallow and bloated or gaunt and wrinkled were especially striking For the most part they sat quietly in their places and were silent or if they walked about and talked attached them

the general expectation of a solemn event and at the same time the everyday interests in a boston card party Peter the cook Zinaída Dmítrievna s health and so on

Pierre was there too buttoned up since early morning in a nobleman s uniform that had become too tight for him He was agitated this extraordinary gathering not only of nobles but also of the merchant class—*les états généraux* (States General)—evoked in him a whole series of ideas he had long laid aside but which were deeply graven in his soul thoughts of the *Contrat social* and the French Revolution The words that had struck him in the Emperor s appeal—that the sovereign was coming to the capital for consultation with his people—strengthened this idea And imagining that in this direction something important which he had long awaited was drawing near he strolled about watching and listening to conversations but nowhere finding any confirmation of the ideas that occupied him

The Emperor s manifesto was read evoking enthusiasm and then all moved about discussing it Besides the ordinary topics of conversation Pierre heard questions of where the

marshals of the bility were to tand wh n the Emperor tered, wh n b ll h uld be given in the Empero s ho whethe they should gro p themsel es by districts o by hol provi ces d so o but as soon as the war was to ched what th nob l ty had bee co e ed f r th talk became und oded d defin te. The all preferred listening to speak g

A middl ged man ha dsome and rile, n the f rm f etired a al officer was peak

— —

from th fact that some people P erre knew as th meekest and q etest f men walked away disapp ingly r expressed disagreem nt with him. P erre pushed his way to the middl of the group l t ed and con ced himself that th man as deed a l beral but of views quite differe t from his wn Th n al offi er spok a particularly so rous mus cal nd aristocrati barit o e pleasa tly swallow ing his r' and generally slurr g his co o- nants the vo e f a ma call ut t his erv t, Heah Bw g m my p pe! It was dic at f diss p tion and the exercise f uthor ity

"What if the Smolénsk people h ffahd to waise m'litia f the Empewah Ah w to tak Smolénsk as ur p tt n If the noble wistocwacy f th pwo ce f Moscow thinks fit, it ca how ts l yalty to our so weign th Empewah thah ways H e we f gott n the wa g of the mil tia in the yeah seven? All that did as to enw ch the pwiests sons and thieves d w bbahs.

Count Ilyá Rostóv smiled blandly and nodded pp oval.

"And was our militia f ny us to the Em p ? N t t all It ly wui ed our farmi g! Bettah ha e nother consew pti n o ou men w d wetu n n thah sold ers n peasants nd w ll get o ly d pwa ty f m them. Th nob l ty don t gwudge theah l es—evewy one of us l go a d bw g mo e wecwu ts d the sov' gn (that was th way h ferred t the Empero) need only say the word and we ll ll d e fo him added the orator with animation

Count R stó s mouth wate ed with pleasure a d he nudged P erre but P erre wanted to spe k h mself. He pushed f rward feel ng stirred but not y t sure what st rred him or what he would say Scarcely had he opened l mouth when one of the en tors a man w tl out tooth in his head w th a shrewd tl ugl angry expres stand g near the first speak er nterrupted h m. E d ntly ccust med to ma gi d b tes and to ma ntain n n r gument, h began n low but dist ct to es

I magin s r sa d he mumbl g w th his toothless mouth that we h e been summ ed here not t d cuss whether it best for tl e em p re t the prese t moment to adopt conscription o to call o t the m l ti We have been ummoned to eply to the ppeal w th wh ch ou so ere gn the Empero has h ored us. But to j dge what best—conscription or the *m l ti —we can lea e to the supreme auth ri ty*

P rre uddenly saw n outl t f r his excitement. He h rdened his heart gainst the en to who was troducin this set d narrow tt tude nto th del beration of the n b l ty P erre stepped f rward d i terrupted h m. *H h mself did n t yet know what he would* say but he began to peak eage ly occas nal ly lap ng into F ench o express g h mself bookish Russian.

Excuse m your ex llency h began (H was w ll cqua nted w th the n tor but thought t necessary on this occas n to d *dress h m formally) "Though I d n t gr* w th th gentleman (he hes tated h wished to say *M t s h bl p é p t* — My ery honorable oppon nt") w th th g ntleman whom I h e not the ho o f kn wing I uppose that the n b l ty ha e bee umm ned n t merely to exp ess the r *sympathy d nthusiasm but lso to con* der the means by which we can assist ou F ther la d I im gin h went on warm g to his subject, th t the Empero h mself would not be satisfied to find n us merely owners of serfs whom w are will n t dev te to h serv and *h r à c n we* e ready to m k of oursel es— nd not *to obtain from us ny co-*co-counsel

M ny persons w thd ew from th circle noticing the ena sa cast sm l d th f dom of P err emarks. O ly Count Rost

Food f ca n.

was pleased with them as he had been pleased with those of the naval officer the senator and in general with whatever speech he had last heard

I think that before discussing these questions Pierre continued we should ask the Emperor—most respectfully ask His Majesty—to let us know the number of our troops and the position in which our army and our forces now are and then

But scarcely had Pierre uttered these words before he was attacked from three sides The most vigorous attack came from an old acquaintance a boston player who had always been well disposed toward him Stepán Stepánovich Adráksin Adráksin was in uniform and whether as a result of the uniform or from some other cause Pierre saw before him quite a different man With a sudden expression of malevolence on his aged face Adráksin shouted at Pierre

In the first place I tell you we have no right to question the Emperor about that and secondly if the Russian nobilit

the Em

The

move

and c

Another voice that of a nobleman of medium height and about forty years of age whom Pierre had formerly met at the gypsies and knew as a bad cardplayer and who also transformed by his uniform came up to Pierre interrupted Adráksin

Yes and this is not a time for discussing he continued but for acting there is war in Russia! The enemy is advancing to destroy Russia to desecrate the tombs of our fathers to carry off our wives and children The nobleman smote his breast We will all arise every one of us will go for our father the Tsar! he shouted rolling his bloodshot eyes Several approving voices were heard in the crowd We are Russians and will not grudge our blood in defense of our faith the throne and the Fatherland! We must cease raving if we are sons of our Fatherland! We will show Europe how Russia rises to the defense of Russia!

Pierre wished to reply but could not get in a word He felt that his words apart from what meaning they conveyed were less audible than the sound of his opponent s voice

Count Rostóv at the back of the crowd was expressing approval several persons briskly turning a shoulder to the orator at the end of a phrase said

That s right quite right! Just so!

Pierre wished to say that he was ready to sacrifice his money his serfs or himself only one ought to know the state of affairs in order to be able to improve it but he was unable to speak Many voices shouted and talked at the same time so that Count Rostov had not time to signify his approval of them all and the group increased dispersed re formed and then moved with a hum of talk into the largest hall and to the big table Not only was Pierre s attempt to speak unsuccessful but he was rudely interrupted pushed aside and people

away from h

happened

the substan

been forgotten after the many subsequent speeches but to animate it the crowd needed a tangible object to love and a tangible object to hate Pierre became the

or

al

an

Glink

who w

were h crowd) said that hell must be repulsed by hell and th

thunderclaps! was repeated approvingly in the back rows of the crowd

The crowd drew up to the large table at which sat gray haired or bald seventy year old magnates uniformed and besashed almost all of whom Pierre had seen in their own homes with their buffoons or playing boston at the clubs With an incessant hum of voices the crowd advanced to the table Pressed by the throng against the high backs of the chairs the orators spoke one after another and sometimes two together Those standing behind noticed what a speaker omitted to say and hastened to supply it Others in that heat and crush racked their brains to find some thought and hastened to utter it The old magnates whom Pierre knew sat and turned to look first at one and then at another and their faces for the most part only expressed the fact that they found it very hot Pierre however felt excited and the general desire to show that they were really to go to all lengths—which found expression in the tones and looks more than in the substance of the speeches—infected him too He did not

re ce his p n n b t felt h mself in some way t bl me d w hed to just fy him self

I ly sa d th t t w uld be mo e to the p rpose to m ke sacr fices when we kn what is eded sa d he try g t be h ard abo e the th r ces.

O e l the old men ne rest to h m looked ro d, b t his ttentı n was mm dı tely dı erted by n exclamatı n t the other de of the table

Yes Mosc w w ll be surrendered! She will be r exp tı ! ho ted e man

He the e emy f mank ndı er ed a th e All w me to peak Ge tlemen you ar crush g me

CHAPTER XXIII

AT TH I T Cou t R st pchín w th his

f t f th crowd l gentry

O so ere gn th Emp r w ll be here mome t sa d Rost pchi I m stra ght from th p lace See g the pos t n we e l th k the e l ttl need f d scuss n Th Empe h de gned t summon us d th mer ha t M ll w ll pour f rth from ther —he po ted t the me ch nts hall— but our bus ess s to s pply m d t p rsel es. Tl t is th l ast we ca d

A f ce took pl ce confi ed to the m gn tes s ttı t th tabl Th wh le con lt passed m re tha q tly Aft ll l p edı g se tl so d of the old es say g e f r tl er I gree r fo a y I too m f th t p d so had ex m u f l ffect.

Th secr t ry w t ld t wr te d wn the esol f th Moscow b l ty d g try that they w ld f rn h te me f lly eq pped t f ery th sand fs the Sm le k g try had d e The h rs m de scrap g se the g tlem wl had l rred ose w th pp t rel f d bega walk g p d d rm n rm t tretcl th legs d erse co ples.

"Th Emp ro l Tl e Empero s dde cry eso ded thro h the h ll d tl wh le thr h rr ed t th e tra ce

Th Empe te ed the hall tl gh a b oad p th betwee two l es f bles. E ery l pres ed respectf l w tru k cu os ty

P erre stood rathe far off and could not l ear ll that the Empero sa d. From what l e did he r he u derstood that the Emperor spoke of *the da ger th aten the emp e and of the h pes he pl ed on the Moscow nobil ty He wa a e ed by a vo ce which inf rmed h m f the resolut on just rrı ed at.*

Ge tlemen! sa d the Emperor w th a qu er *o ce.*

There was a rustl ng mo g the crowd a d it ga sub ded so that P erre dist tly l ea d the ple santly human vo ce of the Emperor say g w th em t on

I e er do bted the dev t on of the Rus s n nobles but tod y ıt h s surpassed my ex pe t t ns. I th nk y n the n me of the Fathe la d Gentlemen let us act! T me ı most prec o s.

The Empero cea ed peak g the crowd began p ess n ou d h m a d rapturou ex cl matı were he rd from ll s des.

Yes most preci us royal w rd said

we t to th t f the me ch nts Th e he re m ed bout t m nutes. P erre wa m g th e wl o saw h m come out from the mer ch nts hall w tl t rs f em t n n h eyes.

com g ut accomp d by two merch nts ne f whom P err k ew f t *otkup hch k* The th w the m yo m n w th th n

d k pt repe t

O l es d property—t ke th m Your M jesty!

P erre one feeling at th moment wa a de e t sh w that h wa ready to go ll le gth d was prep red t sacr fi e e eryth ng He w f lt ash med f h s sp ech w th ts con t

A dealer i p ts—o wh lea ed from th go *ernm* t th m poly f th sal f p rits f certain district.—TR.

was pleased with them as he had been pleased with those of the naval officer the senator and in general with whatever speech he had last heard.

I think that before discussing these questions Pierre continued we should ask the Emperor—most respectfully ask His Majesty—to let us know the number of our troops and the position in which our army and our forces now are and then

But scarcely had Pierre uttered these words before he was attacked *from three sides* The most vigorous attack came from an old acquaintance a boston player who had always been well disposed toward him Stepán Stepánovich Adráksin Adráksin was in uniform and whether as a result of the uniform or from some other cause Pierre saw before him quite a different man With a sudden expression of malevolence on his aged face Adráksin shouted at Pierre

In the first place I tell you we have no right to question the Emperor about that and secondly if the Russian nobility had that right the Emperor could not answer such a question The troops are moved according to the enemy s movements and the number of men increases and decreases

Another voice that of a nobleman of medium height and about forty years of age whom *Pierre had formerly met at the gypsies and* knew as a bad cardplayer and who also transformed by his uniform came up to Pierre interrupted Adráksin

Yes and this is not a time for discussing he continued *but for acting there is war in* Russia! The enemy is advancing to destroy Russia to desecrate the tombs of our fathers to carry off our wives and children The nobleman smote his breast We will all arise every one of us will go for our father the Tsar! he shouted rolling his bloodshot eyes Several approving voices were heard in the crowd We are Russians and will not grudge our blood in defense of our faith the throne and the Fatherland! We must cease raving if we are sons of our Fatherland! We will show Europe how Russia rises to the defense of Russia!

Pierre wished to reply but could not get in a word He felt that his words apart from what meaning they conveyed were less audible than the sound of his opponent s voice

Count Rostóv at the back of the crowd was expressing approval several persons briskly turning a shoulder to the orator at the end of a phrase said

That s right quite right! Just so!

Pierre wished to say that he was ready to sacrifice his money his serfs or himself only one ought to know the state of affairs in order to be able to improve it but he was unable to speak Many voices shouted and talked at the same time so that Count Rostov had not time to signify his approval of them all and the group increased dispersed re formed and then *moved with a hum of talk into the largest hall* and to the big table Not only was Pierre s attempt to speak unsuccessful but he was rudely interrupted pushed aside and people turned away from him as from a common enemy This happened not because they were displeased by the substance of his speech which had even been forgotten after the many subsequent speeches but to animate it the crowd needed a tangible object to love and a tangible object to hate Pierre became the latter Many other orators spoke after the excited nobleman and all in the same tone Many spoke eloquently and with originality

Glinka the editor of the *Russian Messenger* who was recognized (cries of author author were heard in the crowd) said that hell must be repulsed by hell and that he had seen a child smiling at lightning flashes and thunder*claps but we will not be that child*

Yes yes at thunderclaps! was repeated approvingly in the back rows of the crowd

The crowd drew up to the large table at which sat gray haired or bald seventy year-old *magnates uniformed and besashed almost* all of whom Pierre had seen in their own homes with their buffoons or playing boston at the clubs. With an incessant hum of voices the crowd advanced to the table Pressed by the throng against the high backs of the chairs the orators spoke one after another and sometimes two together Those standing behind noticed what a speaker omitted to say and hastened to supply it. Others in that heat and crush racked their brains to find some thought and hastened to utter it The old magnates whom Pierre knew sat and turned to look first at one and then at another and their faces for the most part only expressed the fact that they found it very hot Pierre however *felt* excited and the general desire to show that they were ready to go to all lengths—which found expression in the tones and looks more than in the substance of the speeches—infected him too He did not

re o ce his op ns b t f lt himself n some ay to blame d w hed t just fy him self

I ly said that it would be mo e to the purpose t make sacrifi es when we know what eeded sa d h tryi g to be heard bo e th ther ces.

O f the ld men nearest t h m looked round, but his ttenti n was immed tely di erted by n e clamation t the other de of th table

Yes, Moscow w ll b surrendered! She will be ur expiati h uted ne ma

He is the e emy f ma k d! cried n th er All me to peak. Ge tlemen you are crushi g m

CHAPTER XXIII

A TI T M E T Co t Ro t pchin w th his pmtrud g ch d l rt eyes weari g the un f rm f ge eral w th sash o er his shoulder entered the room, t pp g briskly to the fro t f th cro d f ge try

Our so ere gn th Empe o w ll be he e moment sa d Rost pch n I m tra ht from th palace See g the po ti n we are in I thi k there little need f d scuss on. The Emper h d gned t umm n us and th mercha ts. M ll ns w ll pour forth from ther —he po ted to th merchants hall— but our bus ess to s pply men nd not sp re ursel es. Th t is the least we ca do

A co fer ce took pl ce confi ed t the magna es tti t the table Th wh l co sultatio passed more th qu etly Afte ll th p ecedi g e the so d of th r old vo es sa g fter n ther I agree o for variet I too m f th t p d so on had ev n mo rnf l effect.

Th secretary a t ld to wr te d wn th reso tion f th Moscow n b l ty a d ge try that they wo ld f rn h t n m f ll equipped

S

to

w

th g d con erse o ples.

"The Empero ! The Empe ! dde cry reso ded hm

P rre tood rather far off and could not hear ll th t the Empero sa d. From what he d d hear he u derstood th t the Emperor spoke of the da ger threatening the emp re and of the h pes he pl ced on the Moscow nob l ty He vas nsw red by vo ce wh ch informed h n of the resolut n just rrived at.

Gentlemen! sa d the Emperor w th a qu er g v ice.

There was a rustl g mo g the crowd nd t ga n sub ded so that P erre d t nctly hea d the pleasantly hum n o ce of the Emperor say ng with em tion

I n e doubted the de ot on of the Russ an nobles b t tod y t has surpassed my ex pect t ns. I th nk you in the n me of the F the l d! G ntl men let us ct! T me s mo t precious.

Th Empero cea ed speak g the crowd began press g rou d h m and rapturous ex cl m t ns wer heard from ll s des

"Yes m t preci u a royal ord sa d Cou t Ro tó w th a sob He stood t th b ck, d th u h he h d h rd h rdly nything un derstood e ryth g n h own way

From the hall of the n bil ty the Emperor w t to th t f the merch ts. There he re ma ed bout te m utes. P erre wa m ng those wh saw h m come o t from the mer chants h ll w th tears of em t on n h yes.

comi g out comp ed by two merch nt e of whom P erre knew f t *olkup I I k* The th was th may a m w th a th sallow f nd narrow beard. B th er w ep g Tears filled the th n man eyes d the f t *tk p h h k* sobbed o tr ght l ke a ch ld d kept repeat

O l es and prop rty—take them, You Majesty!

P rre s one feel g at the moment wa d

o e nf rmed R t pchi that he would g th usa d men nd he ma nte nce.

A deal in p ri —o wh leased from th go ernmen h m poly f th sal f p rits f certa district.—TR.

was pleased with them as he had been pleased with those of the naval officer the senator and in general with whatever speech he had last heard

I think that before discussing these questions Pierre continued we should ask the Emperor—most respectfully ask His Majesty—to let us know the number of our troops and the position in which our army and our forces now are and then

But scarcely had Pierre uttered these words before he was attacked from three sides The most vigorous attack came from an old acquaintance a boston player who had always been well disposed toward him Stepán Stepánovich Adráksin Adráksin was in uniform and whether as a result of the uniform or from some other cause Pierre saw before him quite a different man With a sudden expression of malevolence on his aged face Adráksin shouted at Pierre

In the first place I tell you we have no right to question the Emperor about that and secondly if the Russian nobility had that right the Emperor could not answer such a question The troops are moved according to the enemy s movements and the number of men increases and decreases

Another voice that of a nobleman of medium height and about forty years of age whom Pierre had formerly met at the gypsies and knew as a bad cardplayer and who also transformed by his uniform came up to Pierre interrupted Adráksin

Yes and this is not a time for discussing he continued but for acting there is war in Russia! The enemy is advancing to destroy Russia to desecrate the tombs of our fathers to carry off our wives and children The nobleman smote his breast We will all arise every one of us will go for our father the Tsar! he shouted rolling his bloodshot eyes Several approving voices were heard in the crowd We are Russians and will not grudge our blood in defense of our faith the throne and the Fatherland! We must cease raving if we are sons of our Fatherland! We will show Europe how Russia rises to the defense of Russia!

Pierre wished to reply but could not get in a word He felt that his words apart from what meaning they conveyed were less audible than the sound of his opponent s voice

Count Rostóv at the back of the crowd was expressing approval several persons briskly turning a shoulder to the orator at the end of a phrase said

That s right quite right! Just so!

Pierre wished to say that he was ready to sacrifice his money his serfs or himself only one ought to know the state of affairs in order to be able to improve it but he was unable to speak Many voices shouted and talked at the same time so that Count Rostov had not time to signify his approval of them all and the group increased dispersed re formed and then moved with a hum of talk into the largest hall and to the big table Not only was Pierre s attempt to speak unsuccessful but he was rudely interrupted pushed aside and [illegible]

[illegible] even been forgotten after the many subsequent speeches but to animate it the crowd needed a tangible object to love and a tangible object to hate Pierre became the latter Many other orators spoke after the excited nobleman and all in the same tone Many spoke eloquently and with originality

Glink[illegible]
who [illegible]
were [illegible]
be rep[illegible] by hell and that he had seen a child smiling at lightning flashes and thunderclaps but we will not be that child.

Yes yes at thunderclaps! was repeated approvingly in the back rows of the crowd

The crowd drew up to the large table at which sat gray haired or bald seventy year-old magnates uniformed and besashed almost all of whom Pierre had seen in their own homes with their buffoons or playing boston at the clubs With an incessant hum of voices the crowd advanced to the table Pressed by the throng against the high backs of the chairs the orators spoke one after another and sometimes two together Those standing behind noticed what a speaker omitted to say and hastened to supply it Others in that heat and crush racked their brains to find some thought and hastened to utter it The old magnates whom Pierre knew sat and turned to look first at one and then at another and their faces for the most part only expressed the fact that they found it very hot Pierre however felt excited and the general desire to show that they were ready to go to all lengths—which found expression in the tones and looks more than in the substance of the speeches—infected him too He did not

ren nce hu p n ns but f lt himself in som y t bl me and w hed t justify h m self

I o ly s d tl t it would be m e to the purpose to m ke cr fices wh n we kn w what eeded s d he try ng to b h d abo e the ther ces

O e of the ld men n rest to h m look d round, but his ttent on w s mm d ately d verted by an excl mat on at the other s de of the table

Yes, Moscow w ll be urrender d! She w ll be ur exp t l h uted ne man

He the e emy f m nk nd! cr ed noth er All w me to pe k. Gentlemen you are crush ng me!

CHAPTER XXIII

A m T o t NT Co nt R t pchin w th h pmtrud g ch n a d l t eye we ng th f rm of a ge er l w th asl o er h h ul der enter d the m t pp ng b kly to the fro t f th crowd f g ntry

Ou so e e g th Emp w ll be h e n mome t s d R t pch I m ra ght from th p l Se g the pos t n we m I th k th l tl n d f d scu s n Th Empe h d gn d to ummon us a d th me h ts. M ll n w ll p ur f th from th —h p nted t the me h nts hall— b t ou bu es s t upply m n and not p re rs l e Tl t th least we ca d

A co fe n ook pl confin d t the man es tt g t th table Th wh l con ultat pas d m th n qu ly After all he p eced g se he sou d f th ld vo es say g f n her l gree for vari y l oo m of hat p n n nd so on had ev m u nful ff t.

Th secr tary w t ld o wr d wn th resol f th Mosc w n b l ty nd gentry that th ld f rn h n m n full eq pped t f ev ry thousand serfs as th Smolé k ge rv had d Th ir ha rs mad scrap g n ise th gentlem n who had co ferred rose w th pp rel f nd began wa k g p d d wn rm n rm, ur ch th lers d n rse uples

"Th Emper Th Emper udd n cry reso ded th h th hall nd th whole t ron h rr ed o h n ra

Th Emper ered t hall th h broad p h between two l es of nobles. E ery fac p essed espectful w truck curios ty

P erre tood rather far off and could not l ear all th t the Emperor said. From wh t he d l hear he understood that the Emperor spoke of the d ng threaten ng the emp re and of the hopes he placed on the Mo cow nob l ty He w n wered by a vo ce wh ch nformed h n of the res lut n ju t arr ed at

Gentlemen! s d the Emperor w th a quiv e ng vo ce

There s a ru tl ng am ng the crowd and t aga n subs ded so tl t P erre d st nctly he rd the pl as ntly human o ce of the Emperor s ying w th em t on

I ne er d ubt d the d ot n of tl e Rus s n n bles but t day t h s surpassed my ex pect t ns I th nk y u in the name of the Fathe land! G ntlemen let us act! Time is m t p ec u

The Empero cea d sp k g the crowd began p es ng ound h m nd raptur us ex cl m t on were hea d f om ll s de

Ye mo t p c u a royal wo d s d Count R tó w th a sob He tood at the b ck and th ugh h h d h d hardly nyth ng un derstood e eryth ng in h own way

Fr m th h ll of th nob l ty tl e Emperor w nt to th t of the merch nts The e he re ma ned b ut ten m nutes P rre was among th e wl o w h m me ut from the mer h nts hall w tl te rs of em t n n h eyes As becam kn wn l te h had carcely begu to dd ess the merchants bef e te rs gu hed f m h eyes nd he c ncl d d n a t embl ng

When P rre s w the Emperor he was com g ut comp ed by two merch ts n f wh m P erre knew fat *olk p hch k* Th othe w s tl e m yo a m w th a th llow f d narr w be d. B tl were eep ng Tears fill d the thin man s yes nd the fa *tk p hchik* sobbed ut ght like a ch ld nd kept peat g

Ou l e a d property—take them Y ur M jesty!

— —

t t l t de cy a d so ght n pportun ty leff g t. H hea d that Co t Mamo n was f m h g eome t, Bezukhov at e f rmed Rost pchin that he w uld gi e th usand me d their mai tenance.

A dealer sp ts—one who leased from t e go ernment the mon poly of the sal f pints for certain district.—Tr.

Old Rostóv could not tell his wife of what had passed without tears and at once consented to Pétya s request and went himself to enter his name

Next day the Emperor left Moscow The assembled nobles all took off their uniforms and settled down again in their homes and clubs and not without some groans gave orders to their stewards about the enrollment feeling amazed themselves at what they had done.

Book Ten 1812

*

CHAPTER I

I J em m g a d could not r u

bursts f nger i the pres nce of Kurákin and th f Bal h

Alexa der refus d n got t n because he f lt h mself t be perso lly sulted Ba clay d T lly t ed t command the army n the best ay because he w hed t fulfill h s duty d earn f me gr at comm nde Rostóv charged th F ch becau e he c uld t re- tra h h f gall p cross le el fi ld d the me w y tl um rabl pe ple h took p rt n the w cted i cord w th th perso l ch racte t cs h b ts circum ta ces, d m Tl ey w e m ed by f ar or nity jo ced w d gn t reason d, ma g tl t tl ey kn w wh t th y we e do- g d d d t f th o f ee w ll but they ll l tary tools f h t ry carry ng k l d from tl m but comp e h bl t us. S h s the t bl f te f m of ct nd the l gl e they stand th soc l h ra chy tl e l ss th y f ee.

Th t rs f 8 2 ha l g n l ft th t ge th p rso l t ests l a hed lea g tra d th g m of that time b t ts l t e lts

Pr d mp ll d all tl men tr g t t p rso l ms t fu tl r tl e mpl hm t f t p nd us esult no o f tl en t ll expected—ne ther N p leo Alexa d t ll les ny f th who d l tl l fight g

Th ca se f l dest t n of th F e ch rmy 8 2 s l t us n w No o e w ll d y that that ca se wa th n ha d ts d a e t tl h rt of Ru l t n the seaso th y prep rat on f r w te camp d tl tl er tl e ch ra te g v en to th wa by tl b rn g f Russ n towns and th hatred f tl e f e th arou ed m n the Ru s an people But no one at the t n e fo es w (what n w s ems s v dent) that tl was the only w y an army of e ght hundred thousand m n—the best n the w rld and led by the be t gen ral—could be destroyed n con fl ct w th a r w rmy f h lf its numer cal strengtl nd led by nexper nced comm nd ers th Russ n rmy v as *Not only d d o e th b t n the Russ an side* every ef fort was m de to h nder the only th ng that ould s Russ a wh le *the Fr h de* desp te N p leon s exper ence and o-called military gen us e ry eff rt was directed to n h ng on to Mos ow t the nd of the u n

s ught a b ttle nd th t h n is u u h m to st p t Sm lén k a d of mak s n l tatements to how tl t tl e dang of th cam p gn w s e n th n und rstood. Russ a u

e t. H d th t ent t curred the e h nts

e t then but ha n w be f rgotten b cause th e nt f ls fied th m. There e lw y so

conjectures many were to quite the contrary effect

Conjectures as to Napoleon s awareness of the danger of extending his line and (on the Russian side) as to *luring the enemy into the* depths of Russia are evidently of that kind and only by much straining can historians attribute such conceptions to Napoleon and his marshals or such plans to the Russian commanders All the facts are in flat contradiction to such conjectures During the whole period of the war not only was there no wish on the Russian side to draw the French into the heart *of the country* but from their first entry into Russia *everything was done to stop them* And not only was Napoleon not afraid to extend his line but he welcomed every step forward as a triumph and did not seek battle as eagerly as in former campaigns but very lazily

At the very beginning of the war our armies were divided and our sole aim was to unite them though uniting the armies was no advantage if we meant to retire and lure the enemy *into the depths of the country* Our Emperor *joined the army to encourage it to defend* every inch of Russian soil and not to retreat The enormous Drissa camp was formed on Pfuel s plan and there was no intention of retiring farther The Emperor reproached the commanders in chief for every step they retired He could not bear the idea of letting the enemy even reach Smolénsk still less could he *contemplate the burning of Moscow* and *when our armies did unite he was displeased* that Smolénsk was abandoned and burned without a general engagement having been fought under its walls

So thought the Emperor and the Russian commanders and people were still more provoked at the thought that our forces were *retreating into the depths of the country*

Napoleon having cut our armies apart advanced far into the country and missed several chances of forcing an engagement In August he was at Smolénsk and thought only of how to advance farther though as we now see that advance was evidently ruinous to him

The facts clearly *show that Napoleon did* not *foresee the danger of the advance on Moscow nor* did Alexander and the Russian commanders then think of luring Napoleon on but quite the contrary The luring of Napoleon into the depths of the country was not the result of any plan for no one believed it to be possible it resulted *from a most complex* interplay of *intrigues* aims and wishes among those who took part in the war and had no perception whatever of the inevitable or of the one way of saving Russia Everything came about fortuitously The armies were divided at *the commencement of the campaign We tried to unite them with the evident intention* of giving battle and checking the *enemy s* advance and by this effort to unite them while avoiding battle with a much stronger enemy and necessarily withdrawing the armies at an acute angle—we led the French on to Smolénsk But we withdrew at an acute angle not only because the French advanced between our two armies the angle became still more acute and *we withdrew still farther* because Barclay de

er disliked by

nder his com

command of

the second army—tried to postpone joining up and coming under Barclay s command as long as he could Bagratión was slow in effecting the junction—though that was the chief aim of all at headquarters—because as he alleged *he exposed his army to danger on this march and it was best for him to retire more to the left* and more to the south worrying the enemy from flank and rear and securing from the Ukraine recruits for his army and it looks as if he planned this in order not to come under the command of the detested foreigner Barclay whose rank was inferior to his own

The Emperor was with the army to encourage it but his presence and ignorance of what steps to take and the enormous number of advisers and plans destroyed the first army s energy and it retired

The intention was to make a stand at the Drissa camp but Paulucci aiming at becoming commander in chief unexpectedly employed his energy to *influence Alexander and Pfuel s whole plan* was abandoned and the command entrusted to Barclay But as Barclay did not inspire confidence his power was limited The armies were divided there was no unity of command and Barclay was unpopular but from this confusion division and the *unpopularity of the foreign commander in chief there resulted on the one hand* indecision and the avoidance of a battle (which we could not have refrained from had the armies been united and had someone else instead of Barclay been in command) and on the other an ever increasing indignation against the foreigners and an *increase in patriotic zeal*

At last the Emperor left the army and as the most convenient and indeed the only pretext

dec ded th t tw nec

wa trebled.

He left n o de not to b truct the com ma d r ch ef's *und ded control* f the rmy a d h p g th t m e d cis ct n o ld then be take b t the comm nd of the rm es becam st ll m confused nd enf e bled. B n gse the Ts ré ch nd a warm f dj ta ts ge eral rema ed w th th army t ke p the comm nder n ch ef under ob er t and rouse h s ergy a d B cl y feel les f ee th e r u d r the ob rv t f ll thes eyes f the Empero be- came till mo e caut us f unde tak g ny dec ct nd o ded g ng battle

B rcl y stood f caut on The Ts ré ch

dj ta ts ge eral t P tersburg nd plu ged to n open truggle w th B nn gsen nd the Tsaré ch.

At Sm lénsk the rmies t last reun ted

ff B grat ón

Desp t hu se ty ra k B grat ó n th test f m g n m ry took h ord rs from Bar l y b t h g ubm tted, er ed th h m less than ever By the Empe d rs B grat n po ted d t h m H te t Arakchée the Emp confid t It must be my so e gn pl es b t I can t k w th th M t (m B cl y) F God sak send me somewh re else f nly comma d f regime t. I can d t her Headquart rs so f ll f Germ th t R ssian ca t t d th n e ythi g I th ght I was eally rv g myso re gn d the F therl d, b t t turn t ha l m serv g Barcl y I confess I d n t t t

The sw rm f Bron ítskis d W tz ge rodes d the l k t ll f rther emb tt ed th l between the comm ders n ch f d even less ty esulted. Prep rat nswer m d t fight th French bef e Sm lénsk A g eral sent urvey th pos ti n This

gen ral h ti g B rclay r de to s t f end f h s own a corps comm nder and l ng spent the day w th h m eturned to Bar lay nd demned sunsu t blef m e ery p nt f ew th b ttleground h had not seen

Wh le d pute and ntr gues were go g *on* about the future field of b ttle and wl le we we e look ng f r the French—ha ng lo tt uch w th th m—tl e French tumbled upon N é ovsk s d s on and reached the walls f Smo- *lén* k.

It w s necessary to fight n unexpected b t

Sm lénsk was bando ed contrary to the w hes of th Emperor d of the whole peo-

th nk g only f th wn l es but k dl g h tr d of the f e. N p leon d n ed f rthe and w et red thu rr g t the ery result wh ch e u ed h destruct n

CHAPTER II

TH DAY ft r h son l d left, Pr nce N chol s t f r Pri ces M ry t come to h s study

Well? Ar you sat fi d n w? sa d he You e m de me q arr l w th my son! S t fied e y u? Th t ll you w nted! S t fied It hurts me t hu ts. I m old nd weak d th wh t y u wa t d Well the glo t o tl Gl to t

Afte th t P ncess M ry d d ot ee her f ther fo wh le w k He wa ll and d d n t le e h s t dy

Pr n ess M ry n t ced t he surp e th t d ring th ll es the ld p ce n t o ly x lud d her from his room but d d t dm t M d m selle B u nne e th Tíkh n l tte ded h m.

At th d f th week the pr nce reapp ed d resumed h f rmer w y of l fe de ot h m lf w th pe l ct ty to bu ld g pera t o d the rra gem nt f the gard n n l compl t ly b e k g off h el tion w th M d m s ll B u nne H looks a d cold t e to h daughter em d t say 'Ther y u e ? Y u pl tted aga n t me you l ed to P e And ew bout my rel t th tl t Fre ch w m n d m d m qu rr l w th h m b t y ee I ne d th her n y u

Pri cess M ry p th lf f e ry d y w th l ttle N hol watc g h lesso teachin

him Russian and music herself and talking to Dessalles the rest of the day she spent over her books with her old nurse or with God s folk who sometimes came by the back door to see her

Of the war Princess Mary thought as women do think about wars She feared for her brother who was in it was horrified by and amazed at the strange cruelty that impels men to kill one another but she did not understand the signif icance of this war which seemed to her like all previous wars She did not realize the signifi cance of this war though Dessalles with whom she constantly conversed was passionately in terested in its progress and tried to explain his own conception of it to her and though the God s folk who came to see her reported in their own way the rumors current among the people of an invasion by Antichrist and though Julie (now Princess Drubetskáya) who had re *sumed correspondence with her* wrote patri otic letters from Moscow

I write you in Russian my good friend wrote Julie in her Frenchified Russian be cause I have a detestation for all the French and the same for their language which I can not support to hear spoken We in Moscow are elated by enthusiasm for our adored Em peror

My poor husband is enduring pains and hunger in Jewish taverns but the news which *I have inspires me yet more*

You heard probably of the heroic exploit of Raévski embracing his two sons and saying *I will perish with them but we will not be shaken!* And truly though the enemy was twice stronger than we we were unshakable We pass the time as we can but in war as in

charpie only you my friend are missing and so on

The chief reason Princess Mary did not re alize the full significance of this war was that

hesitatingly believed him

All that July the old prince was exceedingly *ti e and even* animated He planned anoth

very little and instead of s p s

as usual changed his sleeping place every day One day he would order his camp bed to be set up in the glass gallery another day he re mained on the couch or on the lounge chair in

would spend a night in the dining room

On August 1 a second letter was received from Prince Andrew In his first letter which came soon after he had left home Prince An drew had dutifully asked his father s forgive ness for what he had allowed himself to say and begged to be restored to his favor To this letter the old prince had replied affectionately and from that time had kept the Frenchwom an at a distance Prince Andrew s second let ter *written near Vitebsk after the French had* occupied that town gave a brief account of the whole campaign enclosed for them a plan he *had drawn and forecasts as to the further prog* ress of the war In this letter Prince Andrew pointed out to his father the danger of staying at Bald Hills so near the theater of war and on the army s direct line of march and advised him to move to Moscow

At dinner that day on Dessalles mention ing that the French were said to have already entered Vitebsk the old prince remembered his son s letter

There was a letter from Prince Andrew to day he said to Princess Mary— Haven t you read it?

No Father she replied in a frightened *voice*

She could not have read the letter as she d d

to him in speaking of the present war

That must be very interesting said Des salles. Prince Andrew is in a posit on to know

Oh very interesting! said Mademoiselle Bourienne

Go and get it for me said the old prince to Mademoiselle Bourienne You know—un der the paperweight on the little t ble

Mademoiselle Bourienne jumped up ea gerly

No don t! he exclaimed with a frown You go Michael Ivánovich

Michael Ivánovich rose and went to the study But as soon as he had left the room the old prince looking uneasily round threw down his napkin and went himself

"They can t d anyth ng always make a muddle," he muttered.

While he was away Pr ncess M ry Dessalles Mademoiselle Bo ienne nd e en l ttle N ch olas exchanged looks n s le ce The old pr nce returned w th qu k st p ac mpanied by Michael I án tch b ng ng the letter nd a plan. These h put d wn bes de h m—not l t ting any ne read them t d nner

O mo to the draw ng room he h nded the letter to P ess M ry and spread ng out before h m the pl f tl e new bu ld ng nd fixin h eyes po t t ld he to re d th l t ter alo d. Whe sl h d done so P ncess Mary looked qu r gly t he f the He was exam g the plan e dently engr ed n his own d as

"What do y u th k of t Pr nc ? D s lles tured to ask

D D sa d the p as if unpleasantly wak ed d n t tak ng his ey s from the pla f th b ld g

"Very poss bly the the ter of war w ll m e so ear to u that

H ha ha The tl e t of wa l s d tl e p ce I h e d d st ll say that the thea ter I w is P la d d th nemy w ll never get bey d th N emen

Dessalles look d mazement t th p nce ho as talk ng of the N em n wh n th en emy as lready t the Dn epe but Pr ncess M ry f rge t g tl geograph cal pos tion of th N eme tho ht that what he fathe was say g as rr ct

"Wh n th s w m lts they ll k n the P l h swamps. O ly they could fa l to it the p co t ued ev d ntly thnk g f the camp gn f 80 wh ch eemed to h m so re t. B gs h uld h e d n d n to Prussia soo er the th ngs w uld ha e tak d ff nt t

B t, P Dessalles began timidly the l ter m ns V it bsk.

Ah, th l tter? Yes epl ed the p nce peev hly Yes yes His fa udd nly took mo ose express H p used. Yes h wr tes tha tl e Fre ch were beaten t at what t?"

Dessalles dr pped his eyes.

"Th p ce says noth g bout that, h e- how y u me n to lter it.

M chael I ánov ch went up to the plan and the p n e after spe k ng to h m about tl e ne v bu ld ng l ked angr ly at Pr ncess Mary and Des lles and went to h s own room.

Princess Mary s w Des lle emb rras ed and ast n hed look fixed on her f ther no t c d h s s lence nd was struck by the f ct that her f ther had f rgott n h s son s letter on the ble but she was n t only h rea fraid

e en to think abo

In th even ng Michael Iván ich sent by th p ince came t Pr ncess M ry for P ince And ew s l tter wh ch h d been forgotten in the dr w ng room She ga t t him and un pleas nt t n s to her to d so ventu ed to k h m wh t he f ther was d

Always bu y epl d Mich el Iváno ich w th a resp tfully r n m le wh ch caused P n ss M ry to turn p le. He s worry ng ry much b ut the new bu ld g He has been ead a little but n w —Mich l I án ov cl w nt on l we ng h s vo e— n w he s at h desk, bu y w th h s w ll I exp t (One of tl e p nce s f t occupat on of l te had be n the prep t n f som p per he n eant to lea at his d th nd which he called l s w ll ")

And Alpátych be g sent to Sm lén k? asked Pr nces M ry

Oh yes he has be n wa t ng t start f r som t me

CHAPTER III

WHEN MICHAEL I Á ICH returned to the h l tt r th old p nce, w th pec s

somewhat drama

m nuscript—his Remarks as h term d t— h Emper

The prince h d l t o g u t n Sm lén k and, walking up and d wn the oom past Alpátych wh tood by the doo he ga e his tructions.

him Russian and music herself and talking to Dessalles the rest of the day she spent over her books with her old nurse or with God s folk who sometimes came by the back door to see her

Of the war Princess Mary thought as women do think about wars She feared for her brother who was in it was horrified by and amazed at the strange cruelty that impels men to kill one another but she did not understand the signif icance of this war which seemed to her like all previous wars She did not realize the signifi cance of this war though Dessalles with whom she constantly conversed was passionately in terested in its progress and tried to explain his own conception of it to her and though the God s folk who came to see her reported in their own way the rumors current among the people of an invasion by Antichrist and though Julie (now Princess Drubetskáya) who had re sumed correspondence with her wrote patri otic letters from Moscow

I write you in Russian my good friend wrote Julie in her Frenchified Russian be cause I have a detestation for all the French and the same for their language which I can not support to hear spoken We in Moscow are elated by enthusiasm for our adored Em peror

My poor husband is enduring pains and hunger in Jewish taverns but the news which I have inspires me yet more

You heard probably of the heroic exploit of Raévski embracing his two sons and saying I will perish with them but we will not be shaken! And truly though the enemy was twice stronger than we we were unshakable We pass the time as we can but in war as in war! The princesses Aline and Sophie sit whole days with me and we unhappy widows of live men make beautiful conversations over our *charpie* only you my friend are missing and so on

The chief reason Princess Mary did not re alize the full significance of this war was that

calm and confident that Princess Mary un hesitatingly believed him

All that July the old prince was exceedingly active and even animated He planned anoth er garden and began a new building for the domestic serfs The only thing that made Prin cess Mary anxious about him was that he slept very little and instead of sleeping in his study as usual changed his sleeping place every day One day he would order his camp bed to be set up in the glass gallery another day he re

rienne—a serf boy read to him Then again he would spend a night in the dining room

On August 1 a second letter was received from Prince Andrew In his first letter which came soon after he had left home Prince An drew had dutifully asked his father s forgive ness for what he had allowed himself to say and begged to be restored to his favor To this letter the old prince had replied affectionately and from that time had kept the Frenchwom an at a distance Prince Andrew s second let ter written near Vitebsk after the French had occupied that town gave a brief account of the whole campaign enclosed for them a plan he had drawn and forecasts as to the further pro ress of the war In this letter Prince Andrew pointed out to his father the danger of stayin at Bald Hills so near the theater of war and on the army s direct line of march and advised him to move to Moscow

At dinner that day on Dessalles mention ing that the French were said to have already entered Vitebsk the old prince remembered his son s letter

There was a letter from Prince Andrew to day he said to Princess Mary— Haven t you read it?

No Father she replied in a frightened voice

She could not have read the letter as she did not even know it had arrived

He writes about this war said the prince with the ironic smile that had become habitual to him in speaking of the present war

That must be very interesting said Des salles. Prince Andrew is in a position to know

Oh very interesting! said Mademoiselle Bourienne

Go and get it for me said the old prince

up ea gerly

No don t! he exclaimed with a frown You go Michael Ivánovich

Michael Ivánovich rose and went to the study But as soon as he had left the room the old prince looking uneasily round, threw down his napkin and went himself

"They can't do an thin always make one muddle," he muttered.

While he was away Princess Mary, Dessalles, Mademoiselle Bourienne, and even little Nicholas exchanged looks in silence. The old prince returned with quick steps, accompanied by Michael Ivanovich, bringing the letter and a plan. These he put down beside him—not letting anyone read them at dinner.

On moving to the drawing room he handed the letter to Princess Mary and, spreading out before him the plan of the new building and fixing his eyes upon it, told her to read the letter aloud. When she had done so Princess Mary looked inquiringly at her father. He was examining the plan, evidently engrossed in his own ideas.

"What do you think of it, Prince?" Dessalles ventured to ask.

"I! I!" said the prince as if unpleasantly wakened, and not taking his eyes from the plan of the building.

"Very possibly the theater of war will move so near to us that..."

"Ha ha ha! The theater of war!" said the prince. "I have said and still say that the theater of war is Poland and the enemy will never get beyond the Niemen."

Dessalles looked in amazement at the prince, who was talking of the Niemen when the enemy was already at the Dnieper, but Princess Mary, forgetting the geographical position of the Niemen, thought that what her father was saying was correct.

"When the snow melts they'll sink in the Polish swamps. Only they could fail to see it," the prince continued, evidently thinking of the campaign of 1807 which seemed to him so recent. "Bennigsen should have advanced into Prussia sooner, then things would have taken a different turn..."

"But, Prince," Dessalles began timidly, "the letter mentions Vitebsk..."

"Ah, the letter? Yes..." replied the prince peevishly. "Yes... yes..." His face suddenly took on a morose expression. He paused. "Yes, he writes that the French were beaten at... at... what river is it?"

Dessalles dropped his eyes.

"The prince says nothing about that," he remarked gently.

"Doesn't he? But I didn't invent it myself."

No one spoke for a long time.

"Yes... yes... Well, Michael Ivanovich," he suddenly went on, raising his head and pointing to the plan of the building, "tell me how you mean to alter it..."

Michael Ivanovich went up to the plan and the prince after speaking to him about the new building looked angrily at Princess Mary and Dessalles and went to his own room.

Princess Mary saw Dessalles' embarrassed and astonished look fixed on her father, noticed his silence, and was struck by the fact that her father had forgotten his son's letter on the drawing-room table; but she was not only afraid to speak of it and ask Dessalles the reason of his confusion and silence, but was afraid even to think about it.

In the evening Michael Ivanovich, sent by the prince, came to Princess Mary for Prince Andrew's letter which had been forgotten in the drawing room. She gave it to him and, unpleasant as it was to her to do so, ventured to ask him what her father was doing.

"Always busy," replied Michael Ivanovich with a respectfully ironic smile which caused Princess Mary to turn pale. "He's worrying very much about the new building. He has been reading a little, but now"—Michael Ivanovich went on, lowering his voice—"now he's at his desk, busy with his will, I expect." (One of the prince's favorite occupations of late had been the preparation of some papers he meant to leave at his death and which he called his "will.")

"And Alpatych is being sent to Smolensk?" asked Princess Mary.

"Oh, yes, he has been waiting to start for some time."

CHAPTER III

When Michael Ivanovich returned to the study with the letter, the old prince, with spectacles on and a shade over his eyes, was sitting at his open bureau with screened candles, holding a paper in his outstretched hand, and in a somewhat dramatic attitude was reading his manuscript—his "Remarks" as he termed it—which was to be transmitted to the Emperor after his death.

When Michael Ivanovich went in there were tears in the prince's eyes evoked by the memory of the time when the paper he was now reading had been written. He took the letter from Michael Ivanovich's hand, put it in his pocket, ...

ga... his instructions.

him Russian and music herself and talking to Dessalles the rest of the day she spent over her books with her old nurse or with God s folk who sometimes came by the back door to see her

Of the war Princess Mary thought as women do think about wars She feared for her brother who was in it was horrified by and amazed at the strange cruelty that impels men to kill one another but she did not understand the signif icance of this war which seemed to her like all previous wars She did not realize the signifi cance of this war though Dessalles with whom she constantly conversed was passionately in terested in its progress and tried to explain his own conception of it to her and though the God s folk who came to see her reported in their own way the rumors current among the people of an invasion by Antichrist and though Julie (now Princess Drubetskáya) who had re sumed correspondence with her wrote patri otic letters from Moscow

I write you in Russian my good friend wrote Julie in her Frenchified Russian be cause I have a detestation for all the French and the same for their language which I can not support to hear spoken We in Moscow are elated by enthusiasm for our adored Em peror

My poor husband is enduring pains and hunger in Jewish taverns but the news which I have inspires me yet more

You heard probably of the heroic exploit of Raévski embracing his two sons and saying I will perish with them but we will not be shaken! And truly though the enemy was twice stronger than we we were unshakable We pass the time as we can but in war as in war! The princesses Aline and Sophie sit whole days with me and we unhappy widows of live men make beautiful conversations over our *charpie* only you my friend are missing and so on

The chief reason Princ ... alize the fu ...

... and confident that Princess Mary un hesitatingly believed him

All that July the old prince was exceedingly active and even animated He planned anoth er garden and began a new building for the domestic serfs The only thing that made Prin cess Mary anxious about him was that he slept very little and instead of sleeping in his study as usual changed his sleeping place every day One day he would order his camp bed to be set up in the glass gallery another day he re mained on the couch or on the lounge chair in the drawing room and dozed there without un dressing while—instead of Mademoiselle Bou rienne—a serf boy read to him Then again he would spend a night in the dining room

On August 1 a second letter was received from Prince Andrew In his first letter which came soon after he had left home Prince An drew had dutifully asked his father s forgive ness for what he had allowed h ...

... rince Andrew s second let ter written near Vitebsk after th ...

... forecasts as to the further prog ress of the war In this letter Prince Andrew pointed out to his father the danger of staying at Bald Hills so near the theater of war and on the army s direct line of march and advised him to move to Moscow

At dinner that day on Dessalles mention ing that the French were said to have already entered Vitebsk the old prince remembered his son s letter

There was a letter from Prince Andrew to day he said to Princess Mary— Haven t you read it?

No Father she replied in a frightened voice

She could not have read the letter as she did not even know it had arrived

He writes about this war said the prince with the ironic smile that had become habitual to him in speaking of the present war

That must be very interesting said Des salles. Prince Andrew is in a position to know

Oh very interesting! said Mademoiselle Bourienne

Go and get it for me said the old prince to Mademoiselle Bourienne You know—un der the paperweight on the little table

Mademoiselle Bourienne jumped up ea gerly

No don t! he exclaimed with a frown You go Michael Ivánovich

Michael Ivánovich rose and went to the study But as soon as he had left the room the old prince looking uneasily round threw down his napkin and went himself

CHAPTER IV

BALD HILLS Prince N ch las Bolkón kı s es-tate l y f rty m les east from Smolénsk and two miles from the m n ro d to Moscow

The same eve g that the p n e gave his m truct s to Alpátych Dess lles having ked t see Pr cess Mary told her th t s the p cewas ot erywell d was tak ng no teps secure h s s fety though fr m Pr nce An

as poss bl f ther was da g r

H gre e ed llhıso d rsAlpátych wear g whıt b r h t—a p e ent fr m the p e— d carry ng a tuck as the pr nce d d ent t acc mp ed by his f mily Three ell fed ro s tood ready harnessed t m ll co eya w th le ther hood.

Th larger bell wasm ffl d nd th l ttle b lls th harness t ff d w th p pe Th p nce allowed o e t Bald H lls t dri ew th ring g bell b t n l g j rney Alpátych l ked to h ve them. H t ll tes—the n clerk gh use le k cullery m d cook t ld w me l ttle p g boy th co chm n d n us d mest serfs—wer s ng h m ff.

H d hter pl ed ch ntz-co ered d wn cush ns f h m t s t n d b h nd h b ck. H ld er l w popped n mall bundle d e f the co hm n h lped him to th hicl

"Th l Th l W m fuss! W m d Alpátych puffing nd pe k g rap dly just as tl pri did d he cl mb d to th trap

Af er g g th cl k orders bout th w k to be d Alpá ych t try g t m tat th p w l f ed th h t f m his b ld head d crossed h m lf h ee t mes.

If h yt l g e me b k Yák Alpá h! F Ch sak hı k of us cr ed h w f ferr g t tl rum rs f w d the my

W m w m l W men f ss muttered Alpá h to h mself d tarted n his journey k k d h f ld f y ll w ry d h ll gr h kly grow g oats d t th- er qu te black fields just being pl wed a second time

As he ent al ng he looked with plea ure at the year s splend d crop of corn scrut n ed the tr ps f ry field wh ch here and there we e already be ng re p d m de his calcul t ons as to th sow ng nd the h rve t and asked him self whether he had not forgotten any of the p nce s orders

H v ng b t d the horses tw ce on the way h arr ed at the t wn toward evening on the fourth of August

Alpátych kept meet ng and overtak ng bag gag tra n d troop on the oad. As he ap pr ched Smolénsk he heard the sounds of d t nt fir ng but these d d not mpress h m What tru k h m mo t w s the s ght of spl n d d fi ld of o t n wh ch a camp had been p tched nd wh ch w s being mown down by the ld ers e dently f r f dder This f ct mp es ed Alpát h but n tl nk ng bout l s own bu ness he soon f rg t t

All the nte e t of h s l fe for mo e th n th rty y rs had been bounded by the w ll of the p n e and he ne e went bey nd that l m t E ryth g not c nn t d w th the exe cut on of the p ces ders d d not nte est and d d n t e en ex st for Alpátych.

On each g Smolé sk on the even ng of th fou th f Augu t he put up n the Gách ubu b cro s th D epe t the nn kept by F rapónt wh e he h d be n n the h b t of putt g up f tl e l st tl ty years Some thi ty ye rs go Ferapónto by Alpátych d e h d bo ght wood f m the pr nce h d begun to trad nd n w h d h u e n nn nd corn

belly

"Y u e welcom Yáko Alpátych. Folks e l g the t wn but you ha com to it s d he.

Why e they le ng the t wn? asked Al pátych

Th t wh t I s y Folks re foolish! Alw ys fra d f the F e ch.

W m sf w m n s fuss! s d Alpátych.

Just wh t I th nk Yák Alpátych What I say dersh bee g en n tt l t th m so that mu t be r ght. And th p asants e ask

First notepaper—do you hear? Eight quires like this sample gilt edged it must be exactly like the sample. Varnish sealing wax as in Michael Ivánovich s list

He paced up and down for a while and glanced at his notes

Then hand to the governor in person a letter about the deed

Next bolts for the doors of the new building were wanted and had to be of a special shape the prince had himself designed and a leather case had to be ordered to keep the will in

The instructions to Alpátych took over two hours and still the prince did not let him go He sat down sank into thought closed his eyes and dozed off Alpátych made a slight movement

Well go go! If anything more is wanted I ll send after you

Alpátych went out The prince again went to his bureau glanced into it fingered his papers closed the bureau again and sat down at the table to write to the governor

It was already late when he rose after sealing the letter He wished to sleep but he knew he would not be able to and that most depressing thoughts came to him in bed So he called Tíkhon and went through the rooms with him to show him where to set up the bed for that night

He went about looking at every corner Every place seemed unsatisfactory but worst of all was his customary couch in the study That couch was dreadful to him probably because of the oppressive thoughts he had had when lying there It was unsatisfactory everywhere but the corner behind the p ano in the sitting room was better than other places he had never slept there yet

With the help of a footman Tíkhon brought in the bedstead and began putting it up

That s not right! That s not r ght! cried the prince and himself pushed it a few inches from the corner and then closer in again

Well at last I ve fin shed now I ll rest thought the prince and let Tíkhon undress him

Frowning with vexation at the effort necessary to divest himself of his coat and trousers the prince undressed sat down heavily on the bed and appeared to be med tating as he looked contemptuously at his withered yellow legs He was not meditating but only deferring the moment of making the effo t

you would release me! thought he Pressin his lips together he made that effort for the twenty thousandth time and lay down But hardly had he done so before he felt the bed rocking backwards and forwards beneath him as if it were breathing heavily and jolting This happened to him almost every night He opened his eyes as they were closing

No peace damn them! he muttered angry he knew not with whom Ah yes there was something else important very important that I was keeping till I should be in bed The bolts? No I told him about them No it was something something in the drawing room Princess Mary talked some nonsense Dessalles that fool said something Something in my pocket—can t remember

Tíkhon what did we talk about at dinner?

About Prince Michael

Be quiet quiet! The prince slapped his hand on the table Yes I know Prince Andrew s letter! Princess Mary read it Dessalles said something about Vitebsk Now I ll read it

He had the letter taken from his pocket and the table—on which stood a glass of lemonade and a spiral wax candle—moved close to the bed and putting on his spectacles he began reading Only now in the stillness of the night reading it by the faint light under the green shade did he grasp its meaning for a moment

The French at Vitebsk in four days march they may be at Smolénsk perhaps are already there! Tíkhon! T kl on

I don t wan

He put th closed his ey Danube at br reeds the Ru sian camp and himself a young general without a wrinkle on his ruddy face vigorous and alert entering Potemk n s gaily colored tent and a burning sense of jealousy of the favorite agi tated him now as strongly as it had do ie then He recalled all the words spoken at that first meeting with Potemkin And he saw bef re him a plump rather sallow faced short tout woman the Empress Mother with her smile and her words at her first grac o him and coff f

ner hand

Oh quicker quicker! To get back to that time and have done with all the present Quicker quicker—and that they should leave me in peace!

CHAPTER IV

Bald Hills, Prince Nicholas Bolkónski's estate, lay forty miles east from Smolensk and two miles from the main road to Moscow

The same evening that the prince gave his instructions to Alpátych, Dessalles, having asked to see Princess Mary, told her that, as the prince was not very well and was taking no steps to secure her safety, though from Prince Andrew's letter it was evident that to remain at Bald Hills might be dangerous, he respectfully advised her to send a letter by Alpátych to the Provincial Governor at Smolénsk, asking him

given to Alpátych with instructions to hand it to the Governor and to come back as quickly as possible if there was danger

Having received all his orders Alpátych, wearing a white beaver hat—a present from the prince—and carrying a stick as the prince did, went out accompanied by his family. Three well fed roans stood ready harnessed to a small conveyance with a leather hood.

The larger bell was muffled and the little bells on the harness stuffed with paper. The prince allowed no one at Bald Hills to drive with ringing bells, but on a long journey Alpátych liked to have them. His satellites—the senior clerk, counting-house clerk, scullery maid, a cook, two old women, a little pageboy, the coachman, and various domestic serfs—were seeing him off.

His daughter placed chintz-covered down cushions for him to sit on and behind his back. His old sister-in-law popped in a small bundle, and one of the coachmen helped him into the vehicle.

"There! There! Women fuss! Women, women!" said Alpátych, puffing and speaking rapidly just as the prince did, and he climbed into the trap.

After giving the clerk orders about the work to be done, Alpátych, turning to the prince's window, lifted the hat from his bald head and crossed himself three times.

"If there is anything... come back, Yákov Alpátych! For Christ's sake think of us!" cried his wife, referring to the rumors of war and the enemy.

"Women, women! Women's fuss!" muttered Alpátych to himself and started on his journey, looking round at the fields of yellow rye and the still green thickly growing oats, and at other quite black fields just being plowed a second time.

As he went along he looked with pleasure at the year's splendid crop of corn, scrutinized the strips of ryefield which here and there were already being reaped, made his calculations as to the sowing and the harvest, and asked himself whether he had not forgotten any of the prince's orders.

Having baited the horses twice on the way he arrived at the town toward evening on the fourth of August.

Alpátych kept meeting and overtaking baggage trains and troops on the road. As he approached Smolénsk he heard the sounds of distant firing but these did not impress him. What struck him most was the sight of a splendid field of oats in which a camp had been pitched and which was being mown down by the soldiers, evidently for fodder. This fact impressed Alpátych, but in thinking about his own business he soon forgot it.

All the interests of his life for more than thirty years had been bounded by the will of the prince and he never went beyond that limit. Everything not connected with the execution of the prince's orders did not interest and did not even exist for Alpátych.

On reaching Smolénsk on the evening of the fourth of August he put up in the Gáchina

trade, and now had a house, an inn, and a corn dealer's shop in that province. He was stout, dark, red-faced peasant in the forties, with thick lips, a broad knob of a nose, similar knobs over his black frowning brows, and a round belly.

Wearing a waistcoat over his cotton shirt, Ferapóntov was standing before his shop which opened onto the street. On seeing Alpátych he went up to him.

"You're welcome, Yákov Alpátych. Folks are leaving the town but you have come to it," said he.

"Why are they leaving the town?" asked Alpátych.

"That's what I say. Folks are foolish. Always afraid of the French."

"Women's fuss, women's fuss!" said Alpátych.

"Just what I think, Yákov Alpátych. What I say is: orders have been given not to let them in, so that must be right. And the peasants are ask

First notepaper—do you hear? Eight quires like this sample gilt edged it must be exactly like the sample Varnish sealing wax as in Michael Ivánovich s list

He paced up and down for a while and glanced at his notes

Then hand to the governor in person a letter about the deed

Next bolts for the doors of the new building were wanted and had to be of a special shape the prince had himself designed and a leather case had to be ordered to keep the will in

The instructions to Alpátych took over two hours and still the prince did not let him go He sat down sank into thought closed his eyes and dozed off Alpátych made a slight movement

Well go go! If anything more is wanted I ll send after you

Alpátych went out The prince again went to his bureau glanced into it fingered his papers closed the bureau again and sat down at the table to write to the governor

It was already late when he rose after sealing the letter He wished to sleep but he knew he would not be able to and that most depressing thoughts came to him in bed So he called Tíkhon and went through the rooms with him to show him where to set up the bed for that night

He went about looking at every corner Every place seemed unsatisfactory but worst of all was his customary couch in the study That couch was dreadful to him probably because of the oppressive thoughts he had had when lying there It was unsatisfactory everywhere but the corner behind the piano in the sitting room was better than other places he had never slept there yet

With the help of a footman Tíkhon brought in the bedstead and began putting it up

That s not right! That s not right! cried the prince and himself pushed it a few inches from the corner and then closer in again

Well at last I ve finished now I ll rest thought the prince and let Tíkhon undress him

Frowning with vexation at the effort necessary to divest himself of his coat and trousers the prince undressed sat down heavily on the bed and appeared to be meditating as he looked contemptuously at his withered yellow legs He was not meditating but only deferring the moment of making the effor t

you would release me! thought he Pressing his lips together he made that effort for the twentythousandth time and lay down But hardly had he done so before he felt the bed rocking backwards and forwards beneath him as if it were breathing heavily and jolting This happened to him almost every night He opened his eyes as they were closing

No peace damn them! he muttered angry he knew not with whom Ah yes there was something else important very important that I was keeping till I should be in bed The bolts? No I told him about them No it was something something in the drawing room Princess Mary talked some nonsense Dessalles that fool said something Something in my pocket—can t remember

Tíkhon what did we talk about at dinner?

About Prince Michael

Be quiet quiet! The prince slapped his hand on the table Yes I know Prince Andrew s letter! Princess Mary read it Dessalles said something about Vitebsk Now I ll read it

He had the letter taken from his pocket and the table—on which stood a glass of lemonade and a spiral wax candle—moved close to the bed and putting on h

[illegible]

g [illegible] grasp its meaning for a moment

The French at Vitebsk in four days march they may be at Smolénsk perh [illegible] y there! [illegible]

I don t

He p[illegible]

closed h[illegible] re rose before him the Danube at bright noonday reeds the Russian camp and himself a young general without a wrinkle on his ruddy face vigorous and alert entering Potemkin s gaily colo[illegible] a h[illegible]

[illegible] words spoken at that first meeting with Potemkin And he saw before him a plump rather sallow faced short stout woman the Empress Mother with her smile and her words at her first gra[illegible]

[illegible] quicker! To get back to that time and have done with all the present! Quicker quicker—and that they should leave me in peace!

CHAPTER IV

BALD HILLS, Pr nce N cholas Bolkónsk s es- tat lay f rty m les east from Smolén k nd two miles from th ma n ro d to Moscow

The same en g that the prince ga e his nstructi ns t Alpátych Dessalles h v ng sked t see Prin ess M ry t ld her that as th p n was t eryw ll nd was t king n teps to secure h s saf ty though from Pr n An drew lette t was ev dent th t t emain t Bald H lls m gh b dange us he p ctfully advised her t e d letter by Alpátych t the Provi cial Go rn r t Sm lén k k ng h m f aff rs d the ex

is

oor f Pr ess Mar g en Alp h w th tru t ns to h u t to the Go rn d t com b k as qu ckly poss bl f ther w d g

H gre ed llhis d rs Alpátych, wear h b h t— P f m the p — d carry g t ck h p n d d ou c mpa ed by his f m ly Three ll fed roa tood d h rnessed t m ll eva th leath hood

Th larger bell w muffled d h l t l b lls es ff d w th p p — u h ng

u gh l k scullers m u n ld w m l l p boy th chm n d d mes erf —w g him ff

er l d h u o er d d wn h k

t Il Tl W m fus W m n b ll m sa d Alp t puth k d p k g p d j as l f did d h cl mbed

P g l l k d rs bo th w k w up him Alp h rs g m h Yes, I've come, Yák v Alpátych. t l l h f m h b ld h d l g th town but you ha come to it ll h ee mes m b k Yák sa d h I l g k h k f us cr ed Why re they lea g the t wn? ked Al Cl l ru f w d h pátych. W f ss m ered Tha h t I say Folks are foolish! Always t f ta ed o h journey fra d of th Fre ch. t l l f l l l w rs d W me fuss omen fuss sa d Alpátych. t kl gr w g sats d t oth- J st h t I think Yák Alpátych. What I

er qu te black fields just being plowed a second time

As he went along he looked with pleasure at the yea s pl nd d crop of corn scrut nized the str p of ryefield wh ch here and tl ere vere already b ng reaped made h s calcul t ons as to th sow ng nd the harvest and asked h m elf whethe he had n t forgotten any of the p nce s o ders

H ng b ted the horses tw ce on the way he arr ed t the town t ward e en ng on the f urth f Augu t

Alpátych kept m t ng nd o ertaking bag gag tra ns d troop on the r ad A he ap- p ched Smolen k h hea d the sounds of d s t n f r ng but the did not mpress h m Wh t tru k h m m t wa the ght of a plen d d field f o t n wl cl camp had been p ch d d wh ch w b ng m wn down by he sold ers e d ntly f r fodder This fact mp es d Alpáty l but n tl nking bout h s w bu ness l e soon f rgot t

All he te ts f his l f for mor th n thi ty y rs h d b en bounded by th will f h p n d l ne w nt beyond that l m t E rythi ng n t nn ed w th the exe cu n f th p c ders d d n t interest nd d d n n xi t f r Alpátych.

On r ch g Sm lénsk on the en ng of d th f u h f Augu t h put up n the Gách n k ubu b cr h Dn p at the nn kept by k F rapo wl h had be n the hab t of pu n up f th l tl y years. Some thirty rs g F rapo t by Alpátych s d ce had bo ght wood f m the pr e had beg n to rad nd wh d h us n nd corn d al h p n th t pro e He w sto t da k ed faced pea nt the f rt es w th thick l p b d kn b f ose s m lar k obs h bl ck f wn g b ows, a d rou d

say is rders ha e beeen give not to let t em in, so that must be right. And th peasants are ask

ing three rubles for carting—it isn t Christian!

Yákov Alpátych heard without heeding He asked for a samovar and for hay for his horses and when he had had his tea he went to bed

All night long troops were moving past the inn Next morning Alpátych donned a jacket he wore only in town and went out on business It was a sunny morning and by eight o clock it was already hot A good day for harvesting thought Alpátych

From beyond the town firing had been heard since early morning At eight o clock the booming of cannon was added to the sound of musketry Many people were hurrying through the streets and there were many soldiers but cabs were still driving about tradesmen stood at their shops and service was being held in the churches as usual Alpátych went to the shops to government offices to the post office and to the Governor s In the offices and shops and at the post office everyone was talking about the army and about the enemy who was already attacking the town everybody was asking what should be done and all were trying to calm one another

In front of the Governor s house Alpátych found a large number of people Cossacks and a traveling carriage of the Governor s At the porch he met two of the landed gentry one of whom he knew This man an ex captain of police was saying angrily

It s no joke you know! It s all very well if you re single One man though undone is but one as the proverb says but with thirteen in your family and all the property They ve brought us to utter ruin! What sort of governors are they to do that? They ought to be

-

the other
We re not

dogs said the ex captain of police and looking round he noticed Alpátych.

Oh Yákov Alpátych! What have you come for?

To see the Governor by his excellency s order answered Alpátych lifting his head and proudly thrusting his hand into the bosom of his coat as he always did when he mentioned the prince He has ordered me to inquire into the position of affairs he added

Yes go and find out! shouted the angry gentleman They ve brought things to such a pass that there are no carts or anything! There it is again do you hear? said he pointing in the direction whence came the sounds of firing

They ve brought us all to ruin the brigands! he repeated and descended the porch steps

Alpátych swayed his head and went upstairs In the waiting room were tradesmen women and officials looking silently at one another The door of the Governor s room opened and they all rose and moved forward An official ran out said some words to a merchant called a stout official with a cross hanging on his neck to follow him and vanished again evidently wishing to avoid the inquiring looks and questions addressed to him Alpátych moved forward and next time the official came out addressed him one hand placed in the breast of his buttoned coat and handed him two letters

To his Honor Baron Asch from General in Chief Prince Bolkónski he announced with such solemnity and significance that the official turned to him and took the letters

A few minutes later the Governor received Alpátych and hurriedly said to him

Inform the prince and princess that I knew nothing I acted on the highest instructions—here and he handed a paper to Alpátych Still as the prince is unwell my advice is that they should go to Moscow I am just starting

expressed terror

Go he said nodding his head to Alpátych and began questioning the officer

Eager frightened helpless glances were turned on Alpátych when he came out of the Governor s room Involuntarily listening now to the firing which had drawn nearer and was increasing in strength Alpátych hurried to his inn The paper handed to him by the Governor said this

I assure you that the town of Smolénsk is not in the slightest danger as yet and it is unlikely that it will be threatened with any I from the one side and Prince Bagratión from the other are marching

from Ba y fe

governor of Smolénsk 1812)

People were nxiously roamı g about the streets.

Carts p led high w th household utens ls chairs, a d cupbo rds kept emergı g from the gates f the yards d m g al ng the treets. Loaded carts tood t the h use next to Fera pont s d wom wer wa l g nd lament ing as they sa d good by A small watchdog ran ro d barkı g ın front of the harnessed horses.

Alpátych e tered the yard at a qu cker pace than usual a d went tra ght to th hed here his horses a d trap w Th coachman was asleep He woke h m up t ld h m to har ess, a d went t the p ssage From the host s room came th sounds of child cry g th de sp ın g sobs f a woma nd the h ars an gry shoutı g f Ferapó to The cook began runnı g hither and thither the passage l ke frightened h just as Alpátych entered.

He s d her t death. Killed the mistress! Beat her dragged her bout so!

"What f ?" ked Alpátych.

"Sh kept beggı g t go way She wom an T ke me way says she d n t let me perish d my l ttle h ldre ! Folk h says are ll go e so why he says don t w go? A d he bega beatı g d pull g h bout so!"

At these w rds Alpátych nodded as f n p proval, d n t wish g to hear m e w nt to the door f the room ppos te the nnke per s here h had left h purch es.

"You brute, y mu dererl scr med th pal woman who w th baby her rms d her kerch ef t rn fr m her head, burst thro gh th doo t that mom t a d d wn th teps into the yard.

Ferapó to came out fter her b t on see ing Alpátych djusted his waistco t, moothed h ha r yaw ed, d f ll wed Alpátych to t oppos te room.

Go g l eady? sa d he

Alpátych, w tho t sw rı g lookı g t his host, sorted hı p ckages d asked how much he wed.

"W 'll reck up W ll ha e you been to the Governor' ?" ked Ferapóntov "What has been decided?"

Alpátych repl ed that th Go ern had n t told h m nyth d fin te.

"W th b ess, how can we get way?" sa d Ferap to "W d ha e to p y seven ru bles cartload t Do ogobú h d I t ll them they re not Christ t k t! Sel f now did a good str ke la t Th rsday—sold flour to the army t n ne rubles a sack. W'll y u have some tea? h added.

Wh l the h rses were be ng harnessed Al pátych and Ferapónto o er the r tea talked of the price of corn the crops and the good weath er fo harvest g

"Well t seems to be gett ng qu eter re-

So w e n f rce t seems They say the other d y Matthew I ánych Plát dro them nto the rı er Már n and drowned some e ht een th usand n one d y

Alpátych coll cted h parcels handed them t the co chma who had come n and ettled up w th th nnkeeper The no se of wheel hoof nd bell was heard from the gateway s l ttle trap p ssed out.

It was by ow l te n the fternoon H lf the street wa n had w th othe h lf br ght ly l t by the sun Alpátych looked out of the w dow nd we t to the doo Suddenly the stra ge sou d of a far-off wh tl g and thud was heard followed by a boom of cannon bl nd ing to dull ro that set the w nd ws rat tl g

He went t nto the str et two men were

comp so w th the n e of the fir g o ts de th town a d attracted l ttle ttentı n from th hab tants The t wn was be g bomb rd ed by hu dred d thirty guns wh ch N po leon had ordered up after f u o clock. The people did not t o e ealıze th mean ng of this bombardme t.

At first th n ıse of the fall g bombs and shells o ly roused curı ty Ferapónt s wife wh till then h d n t eased w l g un de the hed becam qu t d w th th b by

g e. u y y eve y tried to g t gl mpse f the *project les* s they flew o er th ır heads. Several people came ou d th corner talk g eagerly

"What f ema ked one. Knocked the roof d h ll to pl ters

Routed up the earth l ke p g sa d an other

"Th t s gra d, t bucks one up laughed

H tman f th Cossack army —Tr.

ing three rubles for carting—it isn t Christian!

Yákov Alpátych heard without heeding He asked for a samovar and for hay for his horses and when he had had his tea he went to bed

All night long troops were moving past the inn Next morning Alpátych donned a jacket he wore only in town and went out on business It was a sunny morning and by eight o clock it was already hot A good day for harvesting thought Alpátych

From beyond the town firing had been heard since early morning At eight o clock the booming of cannon was added to the sound of musketry Many people were hurrying through the streets and there were many soldiers but cabs were still driving about tradesmen stood at their shops and service was being held in the churches as usual Alpátych went to the shops to government offices to the post office and to the Governor s In the offices and shops and at the post office everyone was talking about the army and about the enemy who was already attacking the town everybody was asking what should be done and all were trying to calm one another

In front of the Governor s house Alpátych found a large number of people Cossacks and a traveling carriage of the Governor s At the porch he met two of the landed gentry one of whom he knew This man an ex captain of police was saying angrily

It s no joke you know! It s all very well if you re single One man though undone is but one as the proverb says but with thirteen in your family and all the property They ve brought us to utter ruin! What sort of governors are they to do that? They ought to be hanged—the brigands!

Oh come that s enough! said the other

What do I care? Let him hear! We re not dogs said the ex capt n of –

I

To see the Governor by his excellency s order answered Alpátych lifting h s head and proudly thrusting his hand into the bosom of his coat as he always did when he mentioned the prince He has ordered me to inquire into the position of affairs he added

Yes go and find out! shouted the angry gentleman They ve brought things to such a pass that there are no carts or anything! There it is again do you hear? said he pointing in the direction whence came the sounds of firing

They ve brought us all to ruin the brigands! he repeated and descended the porch steps

Alpátych swayed his head and went upstairs. In the waiting room were tradesmen women and officials looking silently at one another The door of the Governor s room opened and they all rose and moved forward. An official ran out said some words to a merchant, called a stout official with a cross hanging on his neck to follow him and vanished again evidently wishing to avoid the inquiring looks and questions addressed to him Alpátych moved forward and next time the official came out addressed him one hand placed in the breast of his buttoned coat and handed him two letters.

To his Honor Baron Asch from General in Chief Prince Bolkónski he announced with such solemnity and significance that the official turned to him and took the letters

A few minutes later the Governor received Alpátych and hurriedly said to him

Inform the prince and princess that I knew nothing I acted on the highest instructions—here and he handed a paper to Alpátych Still as the prince is unwell my advice is that they should go to Moscow I am just starting myself Inform them

But the Governor did not finish a dusty perspiring officer ran into the room and began to say something in French The Governor s face expressed terror

Go he said nodding his head to Alpátych and began questioning the officer

Eager frightened helpless glan es turned on A

Governor

to the f

increasing u uray n nearer

inn The

or said th

I

in the

it w ll

an l Pr

to un te our forces before Smolénsk which j ct n ll be effected on the 22nd nstant and both armies w th th united for es w ll defend ou compatr ts of the p ov n e ent ted to yo r care t ll our eff rts hall ha beaten back the enem es f our F the land o t ll th l st warr or in ou ant ranks h s pe hed From th y u will see that y u ha e a perfect gl t to re ure th e nhab ta ts of Sm lénsk for tho defended by two s ch bra e arm es may feel assured of tory (Instruct o s from B lay de Tolly to Ba n Asch the ci il go rnor of Smolénsk 18 2)

to stop I s de treet ne r the cro sroads here the veh cles had t pped h us and some hop w e n fire This fi e was l e dy burn g t lf ut. The fl mes n w d ed down a d ere l t the black moke w udden ly flared up ga n br ghtly l ghti g up w th stra ge d t ct ess the f es f th people cro d g t the cros ro ds Black figures flit

Alpátych g t down d turned t the d stre t t look t the fire. Soldiers were cont n ually rush g b ckwa ds a d f rw rds near it nd he saw tw f them and m n n frie e coat draggi g burn g beams to an ther yard cross th treet, wh le thers carried bundles of hay

Alpátych went p to l rge crowd sta di g before h h b rn wh ch was bl g bri kly The alls e e ll on fire d th b ckwall h d fallen in the wooden roof was collap ng d the raf ers ere al ght. Th cr wd was ev d nt ly tch fo the oof t fall n d Alpátych watched f t too

Alpátych f m liar e udd ly hailed the ld man.

Mercy us! Y ur ellency! wered Alpá ych, mmediat ly recognizing the o ce *f his yo g pri ce.*

Prin e A drew hi riding cl ak mounted on bl k h rse wa look g t Alpátych from th ba k f th cro d.

"Why vo here h asked.

"Your your excellency tammered Al pátych and broke to sobs. Are we really los M ter!

"Why re y here Pri ce Andrew repeat ed.

At that moment th flames flared up and showed h y g ma er pale w rn face. Al pátych told how he had been sent there nd how difficult t was t get wa

Ar w eally quit lost, your excellency he asked ga n.

Princ Andrew w tho t replyin took o t not book nd raising his k ee began writing in pencil n page h tor out. H wro e to h ter

"Smolensk being bandoned. Bald Hill will be occupied by the enem within a week. Set off immediatel for Moscow Let me know t once hen ou will tart. Send by special messenger to Uswazh.

H ng wri ten this and given the paper to Alpátych he told h m how to arrange fo the departure of the pr ce the p ncess his son

st ll foll wed y a g p p

Y u r col nel? houted the ch f of taff w th a German ccent n vo c fam l r t Pr ce Andrew Houses a e set on fire in you presence nd you tand by! What d es th s mean? You w ll nswer fo t! sh uted B rg who was now assistant to the ch ef f taff f the comm nde of the left flank of the

Berg d

the tenth a d if by the tenth I don t recei e *n ws that they ha ll g t way I shall h e to* throw up e erythi g nd com myself to B ld H lls.

Prince sa d Berg recogn g Prince An drew I only poke b cause I ha e to obey o ders b cause I lways do obey xactly You must pleas excuse me he w nt n pologet cally

Som thing cracked n th flames Th fi e died down fo moment and wreaths of bl k sm k rolled from u der the oof Ther was another t rrible cra h nd somethi g huge col l psed.

"Ou rou rou! yelled th crowd ch g th crash of th collap g oof of the barn th burn ng gra n n wh ch diffused cakel ke aroma all ar und The flames flared up ga n *l ghtin th n mated, del ghted exhausted* faces of the pectators

The man n th frieze coat raised his rms and houted

It fin lads N w t s raging It fin

"That the owner himself, cried everal v ces.

"Well then continued Prince Andrew to Alpátych, eport to them as I hav told you and not replying word to Berg who was now mute bes d him, h touched his hors nd rode down th d treet.

CHAPTER V

F M SMOLENSK th troops continued to re treat, f ll wed by th enemy On the tenth of August th egiment Pri ce Andrew command ed was mar hi lo g th h ghroad past the enue leadi g to B ld H lls. Heat and dr ught had continued f more than three weeks.

the first Lucky you jumped aside or it would have wiped you out!

Others joined those men and stopped and told how cannon balls had fallen on a house close to them Meanwhile still more projectiles now with the swift sinister whistle of a cannon ball now with the agreeable intermittent whistle of a shell! flew over people s heads incessantly but not one fell close by they all flew over Alpátych was getting into his trap The innkeeper stood at the gate

What are you staring at? he shouted to the cook who in her red skirt with sleeves rolled up swinging her bare elbows had stepped to the corner to listen to what was being said

What marvels! she exclaimed but hearing her master s voice she turned back pulling down her tucked up skirt

something exploded and the street was shrouded in smoke

Scoundrel what are you doing? shouted

ened baby began to cry and people crowded silently with pale faces round the cook The loudest sound in that crowd was her wailing

Oh h h! Dear souls dear kind souls! Don t let me die! My good souls!

Five minutes later no one remained in the street The cook with her thigh broken by a

tress rocked and hushed her baby and when anyone came into the cellar asked in a pathetic whisper what had become of her husband who had remained in the street A shopman who entered told her that her husband had gone with others to the cathedral whence they were fetching the wonder working icon of Smolénsk

clear was clouded with smoke through which high up the sickle of the new moon shone strangely Now that the terrible din of the guns had ceased a hush seemed to reign over the town broken only by the rustle of footsteps

the morning the distant cries and the crackle of fires which seemed widespread everywhere The cook s moans had now subsided On two sides black curling clouds of smoke rose and spread from the fires Through the streets soldiers in various uniforms walked or ran confusedly in different directions like ants from a ruined ant hill Several of them ran into Ferapóntov s yard before Alpátych s eyes Alpátych

is being abandoned Get away get away! and then turning to the soldiers shouted

I ll teach you to run into the yards!

Alpátych went back to the house called the coachman and told him to set off Ferapóntov s whole household came out too following Alpátych and the coachman The women who had been silent till then suddenly began to wail as they looked at the fires—the smoke and even the flames of which could be seen in the failing twilight—and as if in reply the same kind of lamentation was heard from other parts of the street Inside the shed Alpátych and the coachman arranged the tangled reins and traces of their horses with trembling hands

As Alpátych was driving out of the gate he saw some ten soldiers in Ferapóntov s open

at his hair burst into sobs and laughter

Loot everything lads! Don t let those devils get it! he cried taking some bags of flour himself and throwing them into the street

Some of the soldiers were frightened and ran away others went on filling their bags On seeing Alpátych Ferapóntov turned to him

Russia is done for! he cried Alpátych I ll set the place on fire myself We re done for! and Ferapóntov ran into the yard

Soldiers were passing in a constant stream

out

Night had come There were stars in the sky and the new moon shone out amid the smoke that screened it On the sloping descent to the Dnieper Alpátych s cart and that of the innkeeper s wife which were slowly moving amid the rows of soldiers and of other vehicles had

to stop. In a side street n ar the cr ssroads where th h des had t pped a house and some shops were n fire. This fire was alr ady burning tself ut. The flames now d ed down and were lost in the black moke n w sudden h flared up ga n b ghtly l ght ng up with strange dist ct ess the f ces f th people crowd g t the crossroads. Black figu es fl t ted abo t bef e the fire nd through the n cessa t crackl g f th flames talking nd shouti g could be heard. See g that hi trap would ot be ble to mo e n fo some t me

cross the street, while thers ... f ha

Alpátych went up to l rge crowd tand g before h h barn which was bl ng briskly Th alls w re ll n fir nd th b ck wall h d fallen in, the wooden roof was coll p ng and the raf ers were al ght. Th cr wd was evident l watchin fo the roof to fall nd Alpátych watched f t too

Alpá ych familiar vo ce suddenly hailed the ld man.

"Mercy us Your celle cy nswered Alpátych, mmed tely recogniz g the v ce f his young pri e

Prin e A drew n hi ridi g cloak, m unted on bl k horse, was look ng t Alpátych from th ba k f th crowd.

"Why are yo here? he asked.

"Y ur yo ex ellency stammered Al pátych and broke to sobs. Are w really lost M ter!

"Why re y u here? Pri e Andrew epeat ed.

At that moment the flames flared up d sho ed hi y g ma ter s pal w rn fa e. Al pátych t ld h w h had been nt there and how d fficult t wa g t way

Ar w eally q lost, your ex ell cy h ked ga n.

Pri A drew w tho t r ply g took ut not book d ra g hi k ee began writ g pencil p ge h tore t. H wrot to h er:

Smolénsk is bei g ba doned. Bald Hills will be occup ed by th enem within week. Set off mmediatel f Moscow Let me know once hen ou w ll tart Send by special messenger to Alpátych.

H g wri en thus nd given the paper to Alpátych he told h m h w to arrange for the d parture of the pr nce the princess, his son and the boy tut r and how nd where to let him know mmed tely Bef re he had h d time to fi h gi ing these nstruct ons, a chief of staff f ll wed by su te galloped up to h m

"You are a colonel? h uted the ch ef of staff w th a German ac ent n o ce famil r to Pr n e Andrew H u es are et on fire n you presen e nd you stand by! What does this mean? You w ll answer f r t houted Berg who was n w ass tant to the ch ef of staff f the comm nder of th left fl nk of the nf ntry of the first army place as Berg sa d ery agree ble and well *n é denc*

Prince Andrew looked t him and without reply ng w nt on speaki g to Alpátych

So tell them th t I hall wait a reply till the t nth and if by the tenth I don t recei e news th t they ha e ll got way I shall h ve to throw up e erything and com mys lf to Bald Hills.

Prince, sa d Berg, recognizing Prince An drew I only poke becaus I ha to obey or ders because I lways do obey exactly You must pl ase excuse me h w nt on pologet ically

Som thing crack d n th fl mes. The fire d ed d wn f m m nt nd wreaths of bl ck sm k rolled f om unde the roof The e was another terribl cra h nd somethi g huge col l psed.

Ou rou rou! yelled th crowd ech ng the cra h of the coll ps oof f th barn the burn ng gra n wh ch d ffused cake l ke ar ma ll ar und. The flames flared up a n l ht the n m ted, del ghted exhausted faces f the pect tors.

Th m n n the frieze co t raised his arms d h uted

It s fin l d ! N w t raging It fine!

"That th owner himself cried several o es.

Well then co t nued Pr n e Andrew to Alpátych report to them as I ha told you and n t eply g a word to Berg wh wa n w mute bes de him he touched his h rse nd rode d wn the d treet.

CHAPTER V

F OM SM LÉN K th troops continued to e treat, f ll wed by the enemy On the tenth of August th emm nt Pri ce Andrew command ed was ma h g l g th h ghro d past th en lead Bald H lls. Heat nd d o ght had conti ued f more than three weeks.

Each day fleecy clouds floated across the sky and occasionally veiled the sun but toward evening the sky cleared again and the sun set in reddish brown mist Heavy night dews alone refreshed the earth The unreaped corn was scorched and shed its grain The marshes dried up The cattle lowed from hunger finding no food on the sun parched meadows Only at night and in the forests while the dew lasted was there any freshness But on the road the highroad along which the troops marched there was no such freshness even at night or when the road passed through the forest the dew was imperceptible on the sandy dust churned up more than six inches deep As soon as day dawned the march began The artillery and baggage wagons moved noiselessly through the deep dust that rose to the very hubs of the wheels and the infantry sank ankle deep in that soft choking hot dust that never cooled even at night Some of this dust was kneaded by the feet and wheels while the rest rose and

-- -

higher rose that cloud of dust and through the screen of its hot fine particles one could look with naked eye at the sun which showed like a huge crimson ball in the unclouded sky There was no wind and the men choked in that motionless atmosphere They marched with handkerchiefs tied over their noses and mouths When they passed through a village they all rushed to the wells and fought for the water and drank it down to the mud

Prince Andrew was in command of a regiment and the management of that regiment the welfare of the men and the necessity of receiving and giving orders engrossed him The burning of Smolénsk and its abandonment made an epoch in his life A novel feeling of anger against the foe made him forget his own sorrow He was entirely devoted to the affairs of his regiment and was considerate and kind to his men and officers In the regiment they called him our prince were proud of him

- --

to a different world and who could not know and understand his past As soon as he came across a former acquaintance or anyone from the staff he bristled up immediately and grew spiteful ironical and contemptuous Everything that reminded him of his past was repugnant to him and so in his relations with that former circle he confined himself to trying to do his duty and not to be unfair

In truth everything presented itself in a dark and gloomy light to Prince Andrew especially after the abandonment of Smolénsk on the sixth of August (he considered that it could and should have been defended) and after his sick father had had to flee to Moscow abandoning to pillage his dearly beloved Bald Hills which he had built and peopled But despite this thanks to his regiment Prince Andrew had something to think about entirely apart from general questions Two days previously he had received news that his father son and sister had left for Moscow and thou h there was nothing for him to do at Bald Hills Prince Andrew with a characteristic desire to foment his own grief decided that he must ride there

He ordered his horse to be saddled and leaving his regiment on the march rode to his father s estate where he had been born and spent his childhood Riding past the pond where there used always to be dozens of women chattering as they rinsed their linen or beat it with wooden beetles Prince Andrew noticed that there was not a soul about and that the little washing wharf torn from its place and half submerged was floating on its side in the middle of the pond He rode to the keeper s lodge No one was at the stone entrance gates of the drive and the door stood open Grass had already begun to grow on the garden paths and horses and calves were straying in the English park Prince Andrew rode up to the hothouse some of the glass panes were broken and of the trees in tubs some were overturned and others dried up He called for Tarás the gardener but no one replied Having gone round the corner of the hothouse to the ornamental garden he saw that the carved garden fence was broken and branches of the plum trees had been torn off with the fruit An old peasant whom Prince Andrew in his childhood had often seen at the gate was sitting on a green garden seat plaiting a bast shoe

He was deaf and did not hear Prince Andrew ride up He was sitting on the seat the old prince used to like to sit on and beside him strips of bast were hanging on the broken and withered branch of a magnolia

Prince Andrew rode up to the house Several limes in the old garden had been cut down and a piebald mare and her foal were wandering in front of the house among the rosebushes. The shutters were all closed except at one

window wh ch was open A l ttle serf boy ee- ng Prince Andrew ran t the h u e Al pátych, having s nt his fam ly way was l e at Bald Hills a d was s tti g i doors r ad g

and kissing Pr n e Andrew s kne

Th n exed at hi own weakness he turned way d bega to report on the pos t on f f fairs. E erythi g pr cious and valu ble had been rem ed t Boguchár o Sev nty qua ters of grai had lso been carted way The hay and the sp g c rn of wh ch Alpátych said there had been rema kable crop that year had bee comm de red by the t oops d m n d wn wh le still green Th peasants were ru ed some of th m too h d gone to Bogucháro only few rem ed

W th t u g to hear h m ut Pr e Andrew ked

"When did my f ther nd s ter l a e? mea g when d d they lea e f r Moscow

Alpáty h derstand g th que ti n to refer to th dep rture f r Boguchár o re pl ed th t they h d left n the seventh a d ga e t t deta l co er n th estat managem t ask g f n tru t o s

Am I t l t the troop h e the ts and t take a rec pt f them? W h t ll ix hundred quarters l ft, he quired.

u ders ood h w t m ly s h q est ere d ly asked th m to ll y h gr ef

"Yes, let them h t, pl ed Pr An d ew

If you ti ed som d sorder th gard said Alpáty h t wa mposs bl to p e t t. Three egim ts ha e bee h re d pe t th ght, dragoo mostly l ook d wn th n me d ra k f th comm d ff e t l d ompl t bo t t.

"W ll, d wh t e y u go g to d ? W ll yo tay her f th emy occup es the pl ? asked Pri e A drew

Alpátych t rned h f ce t Pr A dr w looked t h m, d dd nly w th sol mn gest e raised his arm.

He is my refuge! H w ll be d n ! he exclaimed.

A gro p f ba eheaded peasa ts was p- proachi g cross th meadow toward th pri ce.

"Well good byl a d Pr nce Andrew bend i over to Alpátych. You must go away too take away what you can and tell the serfs to go to the Ryazán estate or to the one near Moscow

Alpátych clung to Prince Andrew s leg nd h m elf

mental ga den l ke fly mpass ve o h d d t ppi g th last on

the trees ti e came p se ng the y ung m ster th elder one w th fright ned look clutched her y unger comp n ion by the h nd nd h d w th her beh nd b rch tree not st pp ng to p ck up som green plums th h d dropped.

fright n d l ttle gi l was fra d of look at he and yet felt n rres st ble des re to do so A new sensat on of comf rt nd rel ef came o er h m when see ng thes gi ls he real zed th e te ce f the human interests ent ely

dange past, they pra g from the ambu h nd churrup ngs meth g n their shr ll l ttle es d h ld g up their kirts the r b re l ttle u burned feet campered merr ly nd qu ckly cr ss th m d w grass

Pri ce A drew wa somewhat refreshed by h g dden ff the dusty h gh o d l ng wh ch th troop we e mo ng But not far f om B ld H ll he aga n came o t on the ro d d o ertook his reg m nt t its halti pl ce by the d m f a small po d It wa p t one o cl k The s red b ll thro h th dust b rned d rched h s b k nt lerably thr gh h s bl ck co t. Th dust lways hung m t onless bo th buzz of talk th t cam from th res ng troops. There wa no w d A h crossed th d m Pr ce Andrew smelled the oo e d f eshness f th po d. He longed t get nt th t water h wever d rty t m ght be a d h gl n ed r und t th pool fr m

whence came sounds of shrieks and laughter The small muddy green pond had risen vis ibly more than a foot flooding the dam be cause it was full of the naked white bodies of soldiers with brick red hands necks and faces who were splashing about in it All this naked white human flesh laughing and shrieking floundered about in that dirty pool like carp stuffed into a watering can and the suggestion of merriment in that floundering mass rendered it specially pathetic

One fair haired young soldier of the third company whom Prince Andrew knew and who had a strap round the calf of one leg crossed himself stepped back to get a good run and plunged into the water another a dark noncommissioned officer who was always shag gy stood up to his waist in the water joyfully wriggling his muscular figure and snorted with satisfaction as he poured the water over his head with hands blackened to the wrists There were sounds of men slapping one another yelling and puffing

Everywhere on the bank on the dam and in the pond there was healthy white muscu lar flesh. The officer Timókhin with his red

less

It s very nice your excellency! Wouldn t you like to? said he

It s dirty replied Prince Andrew making a grimace

We ll clear it out for you in a minute said Timókhin and still undressed ran off to clear the men out of the pond

The prince wants to bathe

What prince? Ours? said many voices and

barn

of bodies splashing about in the dirty pond

On the seventh of August Prince Bagratión wrote as follo s from his quarters at Mikháy lovka on the Smolénsk road

Dear Count Aléxis Andréev ch —(He was wr t ing t Arakchéev but knew that hi lette woul l be read by the Emperor and therefore we gh ed every word in it to the best of his ability)

I expect the Min ster [Barclay de Tolly] has al ready reported the abandonment of Smolénsk to the enemy It is pitiable and sa l and the whole army is in despair that this most important place has l een wantonly ab a doned I for my part

was in such a fix as never before and might ha e lost half his army but could not have taken Sm lénsk Our troops fought, and are fghting a never before With fifteen thousand men I held the enemy at bay for thi ty f ve hours and beat him but he would not hold out even for f urteen ho rs It is disgraceful a stain on our army and as for h m he ought it seems to me not to l ve If he reports that o r losses were great it is not true perl aps about four thousand not more a d not even tl at but e en were they ten thou and that s v ar! But the enemy has lost masses

What v ou ld it have cost him to hol l out f r another two days? They wo ld have had to ret re

r men

retiring that n gl t We cannot fght n this way or we may oon l ng tl e enemy to Moscow

There is a rumor that you are th nking of pe ce God forl d tl at you should make peace after all o sacrif ces and su h insane retreats! You wo l l set all Russia aga nst you and every one of us

One man o ght to be in command and n t t Yo Minister may p rhaps be good as a M n ter

h l l t execra

e

gi e t iy wi tii g. su u y n wl o a l ocates the concl is n of a p ac nd that the M ni t r sho l l comm n l tl e army does n t love ou so e gn and lesi es the r i n of s all So I wr te you frankly call out the mil tia For the Min ter is l a l ng these v sit rs after him to Mos cow in a most m terly way Tl wh le army feels

l e c mp W l

n

m

or

fne arm y to s l l Cons l tl t on o r t tre t e h e lost l y f t gu a l left n the hos p tal m than ffee thou n l m n a l l d we att cked thi wo l l n t l a e l ppened. Tell me fo God s s ke wl t w ll Rus i o mother Ru s y to o r be g so f ghtened and wl y a we al a d g our good n l g lla t Fath r land to ucl ral l le and impl ni g feel gs of

tered and sham in all r bjects Wh t are scared t and f h m w fraid. I m n t blame that th Minister is acill t g cowa d dese dilatory d h all bad q l ties. Th whole army bewails t d calls d n curses upo him.

CHAPTER VI

A cmie umerable categories ppl cabl to the phe m n f human l f ne m y d s-

try prov l r even Moscow l fe—we may allot P tersb rg l f a d espec lly the l fe of its sa ons. That l fe f the sal ns is u cha ging S c th year 8 w h d made pea e nd had quarreled w th Bo p rte d h d m de con t t t s and u m de them aga b t the salons f A Pá l n a d Hélène rema ned just as they had been—th e seven nd the other fi e ears bef e. At A n Pá lo n they talked th perpl ty f Bo p rt s u esses j t as bef e d saw them nd n th bsers ce h wn to h m by the European ~ h sol ob-

with his ts eward g Hélèn as em k bly tell ge t woma they t lked w th the same ecstacy 8 as 808 f th great n tion d th great ma nd egr tted ur rupture w th Fra ruptu wh h, cco d g to them, ght t b p mptly term n ted by pea e.

Of la s the Empero return f m the rmy th er had bee som excit ment n these orfl u salo ci les d som demo tra tions f hos l ty t o other b t each camp retained its w t d cy I A na Pá l n circl ly those F chm n wer dm t ed who wer deep-roo ed legitim ts patr otu ch wer exp essed th effect that ne ught not t go t th Fre ch theat e d that to ma ta th F ench tro pe was costing the gover ment much as whole rmy corps. The progress f the war wa eagerly f llowed, nd ly h eports most flatter g to our ar m ere rcul ted. I th F ch cle of Hé lè d R myá tsev h eports f the cru l ty f th emy d f the w were co trad ct ed nd ll N poleo en pts t co lat n

Cou N. P. R. myá tsev had been Min er of Foreign Aff irs in 8o nd in 8og becam Cha llor.—Tr.

were d scussed. In th t c cle they disconte nanced tho e who d t ed hurr ed preparat on for emo al t Kazán of the cou t and the girl educat on l establ hments under the pa tronage of the Dowage Empress In Hélène s t th w r n general was regarded a as

p esseu y D qu te at h me n Hélène s hous wh ch e ery t—th t n t by

enthu a m—news of wh ch had e ci cu burg s multaneously w th the Empero s re turn—was d culed sarcast cally and very cle erly though w th much caut n

tary wa

port nt posts f rmed a co n ct

P com gs nd go gs between the two camp be cam confused d sa d t Hélène wh t he should ha sa d t Ann Pá lovn nd v ce ersa.

Soon fter the Empero return Pri ce Va fl n con ers t on bo t the wa at Anna Pá l n severely co demned Barcl y de Tol

een Kutu o th newly chos n ch ef of the Petersburg mil t p es d o er th e en oll m nt of recru ts at the T easury caut usly tu ed to ggest th t Kutuzo would be the man t sat fy all equireme ts.

Ann Pá lovn rema ked w th a m l n holy m l that Kutuzo had d ne noth g b t caus th Emperor nnoyance.

I h e talked d talked t th Assembly of the N b l ty Prince Vasili nterrupted but they d d n t listen t m I t ld them hi lec t n as ch f of th m l u w uld n t please the Emper r They d d n t list n to m

It ll th ma f oppos ti n h went on. And who f ? It is ll because we wa t to pe the fool sh enthus asm of those Muscovites Pri ce V il co ti ued, f rgetti g f mom nt that tho gh at Hélè s o e h d to ridicule the Moscow thus asm t Anna Pá l na s o e had t be ecstatic about t. But he

retrieved his mistake at once Now is it suitable that Count Kutuzov the oldest general in Russia should preside at that tribunal? He will get nothing for his pains! How could they make a man commander in chief who cannot mount a horse who drops asleep at a council and has the very worst morals! A good reputation he made for himself at Bucharest! I don t

No one replied to his remarks

This was quite correct on the twenty fourth of July But on the twenty ninth of July Kutuzov received the title of Prince This might indicate a wish to get rid of him and therefore Prince Vasili s opinion continued to be correct though he was not now in any hurry to express it But on the eighth of August a committee consisting of Field Marshal Saltykóv Arakchéev Vyazmítinov Lopukhín and Kochubéy met to consider the progress of the war This committee came to the conclusion that our failures were due to a want of unity in the com

armies and over the whole region occupied by them

On the ninth of August Prince Vasili at Anna Pavlovna s again met the man of great merit The latter was very attentive to Anna Pávlovna because he wanted to be appointed director of one of the educational establishments for young ladies Prince Vasili entered the room with the air of a happy conqueror who has attained the object of his desires

Well have you heard the great news? Prince Kutuzov is field marshal! All dissensions

ing room

also to

ceived the news with delight he could not resist the temptation

But Prince they say he is blind! said he reminding Prince Vasili of his own words.

Eh? Nonsense! He sees well enough said Prince Vasili rapidly in a deep voice and with a slight cough—the voice and cough with which he was wont to dispose of all difficulties

He sees well enough he added And what I am so pleased about he went on is that our sovereign has given him full powers over all the armies and the whole region—powers no commander in chief ever had before He is a second autocrat he concluded with a victorious smile

God grant it! God grant it! said Anna Pávlovna

The man of great merit who was still a novice in court circles wishing to flatter Anna Pávlovna by defending her former position on this question observed

It is said that the Emperor was reluctant to

Perhaps the heart took no part in that speech said Anna Pávlovna

Oh no no! warmly rejoined Prince Vasili who would not now yield Kutuzov to anyone in his opinion Kutuzov was not only admirable himself but was adored by everybody No that s impossible said he for our sovereign appreciated him so highly before

God grant only that Prince Kutuzov assumes real power and does not allow anyone to put a spoke in his wheel observed Anna Pávlovna

Understanding at once to whom she alluded Prince Vasili said in a whisper

I know for a fact that Kutuzov made it an absolute condition that the Tsarévich should not be with the army Do you know what he said to the Emperor?

And Prince Vasili repeated the words supposed to have been spoken by Kutuzov to the Emperor I can neither punish him if he does wrong nor reward him if he does right

Oh a very wise man is Prince Kutuzov! I have known him a long time!

They even say remarked the man of great merit who did not yet possess courtly tact that his excellency made it an express condition that the sovereign himself should not be with the army

asili and

verse

Anna Pl lovna turned way from him and glanced sadly t one another with a s gh at his naiveté.

CHAPTER VII

WHILE THIS was taking place in Petersburg the French had already passed Smolén k and were drawing earer and nearer to Moscow N po-leon historian Thiers, lik other of his historians, trvi to justify his hero says that he was drawn to the walls of Moscow ga nst his will. He is as ri ht as other historians who look for the explanation f historic events n the will f man he is as right as th Russian historians w o mai tain that Napoleon was drawn to Moscow by th kill of the Russian commanders. Here bes des th law of retrospection, w ich rewards all the past as prepara tion for events that ubsequently occur the law f recip ocity comes in, confus ng th whole matter A good chessplayer having lost game is s. cerely co vi ed that his loss resulted from mistake he made and looks fo that mistake in the opening, but f rgets that t each stage f the gam there were milar mistakes and t at none f his mo es were perfect. He onl not ces the mistak to which he pays t tention because his oppo ent took dva tave of t. How much more complex than thi is the gam f wa wh ch occurs under certa n limits f tim d wher t is not o e will that ma-pula es lif less bjects, but everything results from umerable co flicts f various wills.

After Smolénsk N poleo sought battle beyond Dorogobuzh t Vyázma and then t Tsárevo-Zaymi h h but t happened that ow ng t conju ct n f innumerabl circumsta es t e Russ an could not gi battl till hey reached Borod nó, seventy miles from Moscow From Vyázma N poleon ordered a direct dva on Moscow

Moscou la l as t q e d gr d em re la ll sacré d peupl d'Al d Moscou avec se ns mb bl glise en f rme d pagod h thi Moscow gave Napo eo magina ion no rest. O the march from V ázma to Tsárevo-Zaymi h ch he rode h l ba bobta led mbler compa ed by his Guards, his bodyguard, his pages, d aides-de-camp. Berth er his ch ef f taff, dropped beh nd question Russian prisoner captured by he cavalry Followed by Lelorgne

Moscow the Asia ic cap tal of this grea em pi he sacred ci y of Alex nder people Moscow th its in umerable churches shaped like Chinese pagodas.

— h o ertook N poleon th an

t v

corps is join ng up with the main a y and that Kutúzo has been appointed commander in chief. He is a very shrewd and garrulous fellow"

N poleon smiled d t ld them to give the Cossack horse and bring the man to him. H wished to talk to him himself. Several adjutants galloped off, nd an hour later Lavrúsh k the serf Deniso had handed over to Ros-

him.

"You are a Cossack"

"Yes, Cossack, your H nor"

"The Cossa k, not knowing in what company he was, f r N poleon pl in appearance had nothing bout t that would reveal to an Oriental mi d th presence of a monarch. talked w th extreme f miliarity of the cidents of the war says Thiers, narratin this episode. In real ty Lavrúshka, havin got drunk the day before and left his ma ter dinnerless, had been whipped nd sent to the vill ge n quest f chick ns, where he engaged n looting till th French took him prisoner La rúshka was on of those coarse bare-faced l ckeys who ha e seen ll sorts of th ngs, cons der t necessary t d everything in mean a d cunn way are ready to render any sort of serv ce to their master and re keen at guessin their master baser impulses, especially those prompted by vanity and pettiness.

Findi himself in the company of N pole on whose identity h had easily and surely recognized, Lavrushka was not in th least ba hed but merely did his utmost to gain his new master' f vor

H knew ery well that this was N poleon but N poleon s presence could no more ntimidat him than Rostó s, o sergea t majo with th rods, would ha d n for he had nothing that either th sergeant major or Napoleo could depri e him f.

So he rattled n t ll ng all the goss p h had heard mong the orderlies. M ch of t was true. But when N poleon ked him whether th Russians thought they would beat Bon parte or not, Lavrúshka screwed up his eyes and considered.

In this question he saw subtle cunning as men of his type see cunning in everything so he frowned and did not answer immediately

It s like this he said thoughtfully if there s a battle soon yours will win That s right But if three days pass then after that well then that same battle will not soon be over

Lelorgne d Ideville smilingly interpreted this speech to Napoleon thus If a battle takes place within the next three days the French will win but if later God knows what will happen Napoleon did not smile though he was evidently in high good humor and he ordered these words to be repeated

Lavrushka noticed this and to entertain him further pretending not to know who Napoleon was added

We know that you have Bonaparte and that he has beaten everybody in the world but we are a different matter —without knowing why or how this bit of boastful patriotism slipped out at the end.

The interpreter translated these words without the last phrase and Bonaparte smiled The young Cossack made his mighty interlocutor smile says Thiers After riding a few paces in silence Napoleon turned to Berthier and said he wished to see how the news that he was talking to the Emperor himself to that very Emperor who had written his immortally victorious name on the Pyramids would affect this *enfant du Don*

The fact was accordingly conveyed to Lavrushka

Lavrushka understanding that this was done to perplex him and that Napoleon expected him to be frightened to gratify his new masters promptly pretended to be astonished and awe struck opened his eyes wide and assumed the expression he usually put on when taken to be whipped As soon as Napoleon s interpreter had spoken says Thiers the Cossack seized by amazement did not utter another word but rode on his eyes fixed on the conqueror whose fame had reached him across the steppes of the East All his loquacity was suddenly arrested and replaced by a naive and silent feeling of admiration Napoleon after making the Cossack a present had him set free like a bird restored to its native fields

Napoleon rode on dreaming of the Moscow that so appealed to his imagination and the bird restored to its native fields galloped to our outposts inventing on the way all that had

Child of the Don

not worth telling He found the Cossacks inquired for the regiment operating with Platov s detachment and by evening found his master Nicholas Rostóv quartered at Yankóvo Rostóv was just mounting to go for a ride round the neighboring villages with Ilyin he let Lavrushka have another horse and took him along with him

CHAPTER VIII

PRINCESS MARY was not in Moscow and out of

from a dream He ordered the militiamen to be called up from the villages and armed and wrote a letter to the commander in chief informing him that he had resolved to remain at Bald Hills to the last extremity and to defend it leaving to the commander in chief s discretion to take measures or not for the defense of Bald

erals

noun

main at Bald Hills

But while himself remaining he gave in

by her father s feverish and sleepless ac

after his previous apathy could not bring herself to leave him alone and for the first time in her life ventured to disobey him She refused to go away and her father s fury broke over her in a terrible storm He repeated every injustice he had ever inflicted on her Trying to convict her he told her she had worn him out had caused his quarrel with his son had harbored nasty suspicions of him making it the object of her life to poison his existence and he drove her from his study telling her that if she did not go away it was all the same to him He declared that he did not wish to remember her existence and warned her not to dare to let him see her The fact that he did not as she had feared order her to be carried away by force but only told her not to let him see her cheered Princess Mary She knew it was a proof that in the depth of his soul he was glad she was remaining at home and had not gone away

The morning after little Nicholas had left the old prince donned his full uniform and prepared to visit the commander in chief His

n. le was already at the door Princess M ry saw him walk out of the house n his un form wearing all his orders and go down the garden to review his armed peasants nd domestic serfs. She sat b the wind w *listening to his* voice which reached her from th garden Sud denly several men came running up th enue with frigh ened faces.

Princess Mary ran out to th porch, d wn the flower-bordered path, and nto the a enue. A large crowd of militiamen and domestics were moving toward her and in ther midst several men were supporting by the armp ts and dragging along little old man in a uni form and decorations. Sh ran up to him nd, in the pa f t. sunlight that fell n small round spots through the shade of the lime-tree avenue, could not be sure what cha ge there was in his face. All sh could see was that his former stern and determ ed express on had altered to ne f timidity and submission. On seeing his daugh er h mo ed his helpless l ps and mad. hoarse sound. It was imposs ble to mak out what he wanted. He was lifted up carried to his stud d laid on the very couch he had so feared of late.

The doctor who was fetched that sam night, bled him and said that th prince had had a seizure paralyzing his right side.

It was becoming more and more dangerous to remain t Bald Hills, and next da they moved t. prince to Boguchárovo, the doctor accompanying him.

B the time they reached Boguchárovo Des. salles and the li tle prince had already lef for Moscow

For three weeks the old prince lay stricken by paralysis in the new house Prince Andrew had buil t Boguchárovo, ever in the same state, getting neither bet er no worse. H was unconscious nd la lik distorted corpse. H muttered unceasingly his eyebrows and lips twitching and was imposs b to tell whether he understood what was going on around him or not. One thing was ertain—that he was suffering nd wished o sa something But what it was, no one could tell. might be some capric of ck and half-crazy man, or t might relat to public affairs, or possibly to family concerns.

The doctor said this restlessness did not mea anything nd wa due o physical causes but Princess M ry thought he wished to tell her something, and the fact tha her presence always increased his restlessness confirmed her opinion.

He was evidently suffering both phys cally and mentally There was no hope of recovery It was imposs ble fo him to tra el t would not do to let him die on the road. "W uld t *not be better* f the end did come, the very end?" Princess M ry sometimes thought. N ght and day hardly sleep ng t ll, she watched him and, terribl to sa often watched him not w th hope of find n s gns of impro em nt but wishin to find symptoms of the approach of th nd.

Strange as it was to her to ckn wledge this feeling in herself, yet there t was. And what seemed till more terrible to her was that nc her father s illness began (perhap ev n soo er when he stayed w th him expecti som thi to happen) ll the person l desires nd hopes that had been f rgott n o leep ng with n her had wakened. Thou hts th t had not entered f free from ... s b l ty ... ted continuall in her imagin tio n ... mptation f th dev l. Thrust them as d as she would, question continuall recurred to her t how she would rder her l fe now fter *th t*. These were temptations of th devil and Princess Mary knew t. She knew that the sol weapon ... ains *h m* was prayer nd sh tried to pra Sh assumed n tit de of pra er looked t th cons, repeated the words f prayer but sh could not pra Sh felt that a different wo ld had now taken possess on of her—the life of wo ld of trenuous nd free ct ty quite opposed to the spiritual world n wh ch ... been ... ned nd n wh ch ...

It was becomi g dangerous to rema n Boguchárovo. News of the pp oach of th French came from all sides, and n o villag ten miles from Boguchárovo a homestead had been loo ed by French marauders.

...

that the French were only some twent fi e miles awa tha French proclamations were circulating in th villages, and that f the prin cess did not take her father wa before th fif eenth, he could not answer f th conse quences.

In this question he saw subtle cunning as men of his type see cunning in everything so he frowned and did not answer immediately

It s like this he said thoughtfully if theres a battle soon yours will win That s right But if three days pass then after that well then that same battle will not soon be over

Lelorgne d Ideville smilingly interpreted this speech to Napoleon thus If a battle takes place within the next three days the French will win but if later God knows what will happen Napoleon did not smile though he was evidently in high good humor and he ordered these words to be repeated

Lavrushka noticed this and to entertain him further pretending not to know who Napoleon was added

We know that you have Bonaparte and that he has beaten everybody in the world but we are a different matter —without knowing why or how this bit of boastful patriotism slipped out at the end.

The interpreter translated these words without the last phrase and Bonaparte smiled The young Cossack made his mighty interlocutor smile says Thiers After riding a few paces in silence Napoleon turned to Berthier and said he wished to see how the news that he was talking to the Emperor him ...
very F...
victor
this e...

The fact was accordingly conveyed to Lavrushka

Lavrushka understanding that this was done to perplex him and that Napoleon expected him to be frightened to gratify his new masters promptly pretended to be astonished and awe struck opened his eyes wide and assumed the expression he usually put on when taken to be whipped As soon as Napoleon s interpreter had spoken says Thiers the Cossack seized by amazement did not utter another word but rode on his eyes fixed on the conqueror whose fame had reached him across the steppes of the East All his loquacity was suddenly arrested and replaced by a naive and silent feeling of admiration Napoleon after making the Cossack a present had him set free like a bird restored to its native fields

Napoleon rode on dreaming of the Moscow that so appealed to his imag nation and the bird restored to its native fields galloped to our outposts inventing on the way all that had not taken place but that he ...

... the Cossacks inquired for the regiment operating with Platov s detachment and by evening found his master Nicholas Rostóv quartered at Yankóvo Rostóv was just mounting to go for a ride round the neighboring villages with Ilyín he let Lavrushka have another horse and took him along with him

CHAPTER VIII

Princess Mary was not in Moscow and out of danger as Prince Andrew supposed

After the return of Alpátych from Smolénsk the old prince suddenly seemed to awake as from a dream He ordered th...
b...
w...
f...

...discre...t on to take measures or not for the defense of Bald Hills where one of Russia s oldest generals would be captured or killed and he announced to his household that he would remain at Bald Hills

But while himself remaining he gave instructions for the departure of ...
D...
ar...
by ...feverish and sleepless activity after his previous apathy could not bring herself to leave him alone and for the first time in her life ventured to disobey him She refused to go away and her father s f...

...she had worn him out had caused h s quarrel with his son had harbored nasty suspicions of him making it the object of her life to poison his existence and he drove her from his study telling her that if she did not go away it was all the same to him He declared that he did not wish to remember her existence and warned her not to dare to let him see her The fact that he did not as she had feared order her to be carried away by force but only told her not to let him see her cheered Princess Mary She knew it was a proof that in the depth of his soul he was glad she was remaining at home and had not gone away

The morning after little Nicholas had left the old prince donned his full uniform and prepared to visit the commander in chief His

Child of the Don

...ch was already at the door Princess Mary ...w him walk out of the house in his uniform ...ring all his orders and go down the garden ...review his armed peasants and domest... ...fs. She sat by the window listen ng to his ...ce ...ch reached her from the garden. Sud...nly several men came running up th avenue ...th frigh ened faces.

Princess Mary ran out to the porch, d wn the flower-bordered path, and nto the venue A large crowd f militiamen a d domestics were moving toward her and n their midst several men were supportin b th armp ts and dragging along littl old man n a uniform and decorations. She ran up to him and, in the p...a of t... sunlight that fell in small round spots through the shad of th lime-tree ...venue, could not be sure what change there was in his face. All sh could see was that his former stern and determ ed expression had altered t one f timid ty nd ubmission. On seeing his daughter he mo ed his helpless l ps and mad hoarse sound. It was impossibl to ...ak out what he wa ed. H was lifted up carried t his stud nd laid on the very couch he had so feared f late.

The doctor who was fetched that same night, ...ed him nd said that th pri ce had had a seizure paralyzing h right side.

I was becoming more and more dangerous remain t Bald Hills, d next da they moved the prince to Boguchárov o, the doctor accompanying him.

B the time they reached Boguchárovo, Des...ll...s and the little prince had lready l ft f Moscow

For three weeks the old prince lay stricken by paralysis in th new house Pri ce Andrew had built t Boguchárov o ever th sam ...a...getting neither better no worse. He was unconscious nd la lik dist rted corpse. He muttered unceas ngl his ey brows nd l ps twitching, nd wa mpossibl to tell whether he understood ha was goi on around him or not. On thing was erta n—that h was ...ering nd wished sa somethi g But ...t it was, no on could ell. t m ght be some capric f k nd half-crazy man t ...ing rela to publ ffairs, or possibly to famil concerns.

The doctor said this restless ess did not mea an th g nd wa d physical causes but Princess M ry thought h w hed to t ll her someth ng nd h f ct that her presence ...ways ncreased his restlessness co firmed her opinion.

He was evidently suffering both physically and mentally There was no hope of recovery It was impossible fo him to travel. t would not do to let him die on the road. "Would it not be better if th end did come, the very end?" Princess M ry sometimes thought. N ght and da hardl sleep ng t all, she watched him and, terrible to say often watched him not with hope of finding s gns of improvement bu wishing to fi d symptoms of the approach of th nd.

Strange as t wa to her to cknowle... e th... feel ng n herself, yet there t was. And what seemed still more terrible to her was that nce her fathe s illness began (perhap even sooner when he tayed with him expectin someth n to happen) all the person l desires nd hopes that had been forgotten or sleep ... within her had wakened. Thoughts that h d not entered her mind for years—thoughts of a l fe free from the fear of her f ther and even the poss b l ty of lo e and of family happ ess—floated co...tinuall in her imagination l ke temptati n f the devil. Thrust them as d a s... w uld, question co tinuall recurred t her to how she would order her lif now after *th t*. These were temptations of th devil and Princess Mary knew t. She knew that th sole weapon ...a...n t *h m* wa prayer nd sh tried to pra She assumed n ttitud of pra er looked t the cons, repeated th words of prayer but she could not pra Sh felt that different wo ld had now taken possess on of her—the life of wo ld of trenuous and free ctivity qu...t opposed t the spiritual world n wh ch till now sh had been confi ed and wh ch her greatest comf rt had been prayer She could not pra ould not weep nd wo ld! cares took possession of her

It was becoming da gerous t rema n n Boguchárov o. News of the pproach of th French came from ll sides, d n one village ten miles from Boguchárov o, homestead had been looted by French marauders.

The docto insisted on the necessity of mo ng th prin e the provi cial Marshal of th Nobil ty sent n official to Princess Mary to persuad her to get way as quickly poss ble, nd the head of th rural police havi g come to Boguchárovo urged th same thing, sa ng that the French were only some twent five miles awa that French proclamations were circulating in the villages, and that if the princess did not tak her father wa before the fifteenth, he could not answer f th consequences.

The princess decided to leave on the fifteenth The cares of preparation and giving orders for which everyone came to her occupied her all day She spent the night of the fourteenth as usual without undressing in the room next to the one where the prince lay Several times waking up she heard his groans and muttering the creak of his bed and the steps of Tikhon and the doctor when they turned him over Several times she listened at the door and it seemed to her that his mutterings were louder than usual and that they turned him over oftener She could not sleep and several times went to the door and listened wishing to enter but not deciding to do so Though he did not speak Princess Mary saw and knew how unpleasant every sign of anxiety on his account was to him She had noticed with what dissatisfaction he turned from the look she sometimes involuntarily fixed on him She knew that her going in during the night at an unusual hour would irritate him

But never had she felt so grieved for him or so much afraid of losing him She recalled all her life with him and in every word and act of his found an expression of his love of her Occasionally amid these memories temptations of the devil would surge into her imagination thoughts of how things would be after his death and how her new liberated life would be ordered But she drove these thoughts away with disgust Toward morning he became quiet and she fell asleep

She woke late That sincerity which often comes with waking showed her clearly what chiefly concerned her about her father s illness. On waking she listened to what was going on behind the door and hearing him groan said to herself with a sigh that things were still the same

But what could have happened? What did I want? I want his death! she cried with a feeling of loathing for herself

She washed dressed said her prayers and went out to the porch In front of it stood carriages without horses and things were being packed into the vehicles

It was a warm gray morning Princess Mary stopped at the porch still horrified by her spiritual baseness and trying to arrange her thoughts before going to her father The doctor came downstairs and went out to her

He is a little better today said he I was looking for you One can make out something of what he is saying His head s clearer Come in he is asking for you.

Princess Mary s heart beat so violently at this news that she grew pale and leaned against the wall to keep from falling To see him talk to him feel his eyes on her now that her whole soul was overflowing with those dreadful wicked temptations was a torment of joy and terror

Come said the doctor

Princess Mary entered her father s room and went up to his bed He was lying on his back propped up high and his small bony hands with their knotted purple veins were lying on the quilt his left eye gazed straight before him, his right eye was awry and his brows and lips motionless He seemed altogether so thin small and pathetic. His face seemed to have shriveled or melted his features had grown smaller Princess Mary went up and kissed his hand His left hand pressed hers so that she understood that he had long been waiting for her to come He twitched her hand and his brows and lips quivered angrily

She looked at him in dismay trying to guess what he wanted of her When she changed her position so that his left eye could see her face he calmed down not taking his eyes off her for some seconds Then his lips and tongue moved sounds came and he began to speak again timidly and imploringly at her evidently afraid that she might not understand

Straining all her faculties Princess Mary looked at him The comic efforts with which he moved his tongue made her drop her eyes and with difficulty repress the sobs that rose to her throat He said something repeating the same words several times She could not understand them but tried to guess what he was saying and inquiringly repeated the words he uttered

Mmm ar ate ate he repeated several times

It was quite impossible to understand these sounds The doctor thought he had guessed them and inquiringly repeated Mary are you afraid? The prince shook his head and again repeated the same sounds

My mind my mind aches? questioned Princess Mary

He made a mumbling sound in confirmation of this took her hand and began pressing it to different parts of his breast as if trying to find the right place for it

Always thoughts about you thoughts he then uttered much more clearly than he had done before now that he was sure of being understood.

Princess M ry pressed her head aga n t his hand, trying t hide her sobs and tears.

He mo ed h s hand er her hair

"I ha e been call ng you all night he brou t o t.

If I had known she sa d thro gh her tears. I wa fra d to come in.

H pressed her ha d.

"Weren't ou sleep?

"No, I did t sleep," said Pri cess M ry sha her head.

Unconsci s m tat ng her f ther she now tried t express herself as he d d, as m ch a possible by gns, a d her to gue too seemed to mo w th d fficulty

"Dear o e De rest Princess Mary could not q te make out what he said, but from his look t wa clear that he had uttered a tender caressi g word such as he h d ne er used to her before "Wh didn t you come in?

And I, I was sh ng for his death! thought Princess Mary

H was silent awhile.

"Tha k yo daughter dear! for all, for ll forgive! thank you! forgive! thank you and tears began to flow from his eyes. "Call Andrew he sa d suddenl nd a childish, timid expression of doubt showed itself on his f ce he spoke.

H himself eemed aware that h dema d was meaning ess. So at lea t t seemed to Princess Mary

"I ha e a letter from h m, she repl ed.

H glanced t her with timid surprise.

"Where is h

"H w th th rmy Father at Smolénsk

H closed h eyes nd rema ed lent long time. Then I nswer to his d ubts d t confirm th f ct that now he understood d remembered erythi g h nodded his head d reopened his eyes.

"Yes he sai softly d dist ctly Russia has perished. They ve destroyed her

A d he began t sob a d ea n te rs fl wed from his eyes. Princess M ry could no l nger restra herself nd wept wh le he gazed t his face.

Again he losed h eyes. H sobs ce ed, he pointed to his eyes, d T khon, underst nd ing him, w ped wa th tears.

Then he a n ope ed his eyes nd sa d something on I them could u derst d for

he sa d.

Ha ng understood th s Princess M ry sobbed st ll l der and the doctor t k ng her rm led her out to the veranda, sooth ng her

Princess Mary st yed on the veranda. The d h d cle red t was hot a d sunn She could u derstand n th n th nk of noth ng d feel noth g except pass o te love f r her f ther love such as she thought she had never felt t ll th t moment She ran out sob b ng into the gard n nd as f r the pond, al ng the ve ues of y ung l me trees Pr ce Andrew h d planted.

"Yes I I I w sh ed f r his death! I Yes, I wanted it to end qu ker I w shed to be at pe ce And wh t w ll become of me? Wh t se w ll peace be when he s n l ger here Pr cess Mary murmured, pacing the garden w th hurried steps and pressing her h nd to her bosom wh ch heaved w th con ulsi e sobs.

When she h d comp eted the tour of the garden, wh ch brought her ga n to the ho e she saw M d mo elle B u ienne—who h d rem ed t Bogu hárovo nd d d not wish to lea e t—com g toward her w th a stranger Th was th M rshal of the Nob l ty of the d tri t, who h d come person lly to po nt o t to the princess the necessity for her prompt departure. Princess Mary listened witho t understand ng h m, she led h m to the house offered h m lu ch, d sat down w th h m. The e cusi g herself she went to the door of the old prince s room. The doctor came out w th an ag tated face and sa d she could not enter

Go way Princess! Go away go away!

Sh returned to the garden and sat wn on the grass at the foot of the sl pe by the po d, where no one could see her She d d not know h w l g h h d been there when she was

Just been speaking She thought he was pe k on ce g her mistress.

The princess decided to leave on the fif teenth The cares of preparation and giving orders for which everyone came to her occu pied her all day She spent the night of the fourteenth as usual without undressing in the room next to the one where the prince lay Several times waking up she heard his groans and muttering the creak of his bed and the steps of Tikhon and the doctor when they turned him over Several times she listened at the door and it seemed to her that his mutter ings were louder than usual and that they turned him over oftener She could not sleep and several times went to the door and listened wishing to enter but not deciding to do so Though he did not speak Princess Mary saw and knew how unpleasant every sign of anxiety on his account was to him She had noticed with what dissatisfaction he turned from the look she sometimes involuntarily fixed on him She knew that her going in during the night at an unusual hour would irritate him

his found an expression of his love of her Occa sionally amid these memories temptations of the devil would surge into her imagination thoughts of how things would be after his death and how her new liberated life would be ordered But she drove these thoughts away with disgust Toward morning he became quiet and she fell asleep

She woke late That sincerity which often comes with waking showed her clearly what chiefly concerned her about her father s illness On waking she listened to what was going on behind the door and hearing him groan said to herself with a sigh that things were still the same

But what could have happened? What did I want? I want his death! she cried with a feeling of loathing for herself

She washed dressed said her prayers and went out to the porch In front of it stood car riages without horses and things were being packed into the vehicles

It was a warm gray morning Princess Mary stopped at the porch still horrified by her spiritual baseness and trying to arrange her thoughts before going to her father The doc tor came downstairs and went out to her

He is a little better today said he I was looking for you One can make out something of what he is saying His head is clearer Come in he is asking for you

Princess Mary s heart beat so violently at this news that she grew pale and leaned against the wall to keep from falling To see him talk to him feel his eyes on her now that her whole soul was overflowing with those dreadful wicked temptations was a torment of joy and terror

Come said the doctor

Princess Mary entered her father s room and went up to his bed He was lying on his back propped up high and his small bony hands with their knotted purple veins were lying on the quilt his left eye gazed straight before him, his right eye was awry and his brows and lips motionless He seemed altogether so thin small and pathetic. His face seemed to have shriveled or melted his features had grown smaller Princess Mary went up and kissed his hand His left hand pressed hers so that she understood that he had long been waiting for her to come He twitched her hand and his

position so that his left eye could see her face he calmed down not taking his eyes off her for some seconds Then his lips and tongue moved sounds came and he began to speak gazing timidly and imploringly at her evidently afraid that she might not understand

Straining all her faculties Princess Mary looked at him The comic efforts with which he moved his tongue made her drop her eyes and with difficulty repress the sobs that rose to her throat He said something repeating the same words several times She could not under stand them but tried to guess what he was say ing and inquiringly repeated the words he ut tered

Mmm ar ate ate he repeated several times

It was quite impossible to understand these sounds The doctor thought he had guessed them and inquiringly repeated *Mary are you afraid?* The prince shook his head and again repeated the same sounds

My mind my mind aches? questioned Princess Mary

He made a mumbling sound in confirma tion of this took her hand and began pressing it to different parts of his breast as if trying to find the right place for it

Always thoughts about you thou his he then uttered much more clearly than he had done before now that he was sure of *being understood*

Princess Mary pressed her head against his hand, trying to hide her sobs and tears.

H moved his hand over her hair

"I h been calling you all night h brought out.

If onl I had known she said through her tears. "I was afraid to com in."

H pressed her hand.

"Weren t you asleep?"

"No, I did not sleep, said Princess Mary shakin her head.

Unconscious imitating her father she now tried to express herself as he did, as much as possibl by ges, and her tongue too seemed to move with difficulty

"Dear one Dearest Princess Mary coul not quit make out what he said, but from his look t was clear that he had uttered tender caressing word such as he had never used to her before. "Why didn t you come in?"

And I, I was wishing for his death, thought Princess Mary

H was silent while.

"Thank you daughter dear! for all, for al forgive thank you forgive thank you. and tears began to flow from his eyes. "Call Andrew he said suddenly and childish, timid expression of doubt showed itself on his face as he spoke.

H himself seemed ware that his demand was meaningless. So t leas t seemed to Princess Mary

"I have letter from him, she replied.

H glanced t her with timid surprise.

"Where is he?"

"H with the army F ther at Smolensk.

H closed his eyes and remained silent a long time. Then as if in answer to his doubts and to confirm th fact that now he understood and remembered everything, he nodded his head nd reopened his eyes.

"Yes, he said, softly and distinctly "Russia has perished. They ve destroyed her

And he began o sob and gain tears flowed from his eyes. Princess Mary could no longer restrain herself and wept while she gazed t his face.

Again he closed his eyes. His sobs ceased, he poin ed to his eyes, and Tikhon, understanding him, wiped wa the tears.

Then he gain opened his eyes and said something none of them could understand for long time, til t las, Tikhon understood and repea ed Pr ncess Mary had sought the meaning of his words in the mood in which he had just been speaking. She thought he was speaking of Russia, or Prince Andrew of herself, of his grandson, or of his own death, and so she could not guess his words.

Put on your white dress. I like t," was what he said.

H ving understood this Princess Mary sobbed still louder and the doct r taking her arm led her out to the veranda, sooth ng her and try ng to persuade her to prepare fo her journey When she had left the room the prince again began peaking bout his son, bout the war nd bout the Emperor angrily twitching his brows nd rais ng his hoarse vo ce and then he had second and final stroke.

Princess Mary stayed on the veranda. The day had cleared, t was hot and sunny She could understand noth ng, think of *nothing* and feel nothing, except passionate love fo her father lo e such as she thought sh had never felt till that moment. She ran out sobbing nto the garden nd as far as the pond, along the avenues of young lime trees Prince Andrew had planted.

"Yes *I I I wished for his death* Yes, I wanted t to end quicker I wished to be t peace And what will become of me. What use will peace be when he is no longer here?" Princess Mary murmured, pacing the garden with hurried teps and pressing her hands to her bosom which heaved with convuls e sobs.

When she had comp eted the tour of the garden, which brought her aga n to the house, she saw M demoiselle Bourienne—who had remained t Boguchárovo and did not wish to lea e t—coming toward her with a stranger This was the Marshal of the Nobility of the district, who had come personally t point out to the princess the necessity for her prompt departure Princess Mary listened without understanding him, she led him to the house, offered him lunch, nd sat down with him. Then, excusing herself, she went to th door of the old prince s room. The doctor came out with an gitated face and said she could not enter

"Go wa Princess! Go away go way!

She returned to the garden and sat down on the grass t the foot of the slope by th pond, where no on could see her She did no know how long he had been there when she was aroused by the sound of woman footsteps running along the path. She rose and saw Dunyásha her maid, who was evidentl lookin for her nd who stopped sudденl as if in alarm on seeing her mistress.

Please come Princess The Prince said Dunyásha in a breaking voice

Immediately I m coming I m coming! replied the princess hurriedly not giving Dunyásha time to finish what she was saying and trying to avoid seeing the girl she ran toward the house

Princess it s God s will! You must be prepared for everything said the Marshal meeting her at the house door

Let me alone it s not true! she cried angrily to him

The doctor tried to stop her She pushed him aside and ran to her father s door Why are these people with frightened faces stop

ously darkened room startled her In the room were her nurse and other women They all drew back from the bed making way for her He was still lying on the bed as before but the stern expression of his quiet face made Princess Mary stop short on the threshold

No he s not dead—it s impossible! she told

the force of the tenderness she had been feeling for him vanished instantly and was replaced by a feeling of horror at what lay there

Princess Mary sank into the arms of the doctor who held her up

In the presence of Tikhon and the doctor

another handkerchief tied together the legs that were already spreading apart Then they

cord Toward night candles were burning round his coffin a pall was spread over it the floor was strewn with sprays of juniper a printed band was tucked in under his shriveled head and in a corner of the room sat a chanter reading the psalms

Just as horses shy and snort and gather about a dead horse so the inmates of the house and strangers crowded into the drawing room round the coffin—the Marshal the village Elder peasant women—and all with fixed and frightened eyes crossing themselves bowed and kissed the old prince s cold and stiffened hand

CHAPTER IX

Until Prince Andrew settled in Boguchárovo its owners had always been absentees and its peasants were of quite a different character from those of Bald Hills They differed from them in speech dress and disposition They were called steppe peasants The old prince

disliked them for their boorishness

Prince Andrew s last stay at Boguchárovo, when he introduced hospitals and schools and reduced the quitrent the peasants had to pay had not softened their disposition but had on the contrary strengthened in them the traits of character the old prince called boorishness. Various obscure rumors were always current among them at one time a rumor that they would all be enrolled as Cossacks at another of a new religion to which they were all to be converted then of some proclamation of the Tsar s and of an oath to the Tsar Paul in 1797 (in connection with which it was rumored that freedom had been granted them but the landowners had stopped it) then of Peter Fedorovich s return to the throne in seven years time when everything would be made free and so simple that there would be no restrictions. Rumors of the war with Bonaparte and his invasion were connected in their minds with the same sort of vague notions of Antichrist the end of the world and pure freedom

In the vicinity of Boguchárovo were large villages belonging to the crown or to owners whose serfs paid quitrent and could work where they pleased There were very few resident landlords in the neighborhood and also very few domestic or literate serfs and in the lives of the peasantry of those parts the mysterious undercurrents in the life of the Russian people the causes and meaning of which are so baffling to contemporaries were more clearly and strongly noticeable than among others. One instance which had occurred some twenty years before was a movement among the peasants to emigrate to some unknown warm riv

Peter III who was assassinated on the accession of his wife Catherine II to the throne in 1762.—Tr.

h d of l s

ers. Hundreds of peasants among them the Boguchárovo folk, dd nly began sell g their cattle d mo g n whole f mil es t ward om wher

e ra way a d dro e or walked toward th warm r ers M ny of them w e pun ished some sent t S beria m ny d ed f cold a d h ger on the ro d ma y eturned of their n cco d, nd them ement died d wn of tself just as t h d spru g up w th ut p- parent reaso B t such undercurrents still ex ted mo g the people d gathered new f es ready t m n fest th ms l es just strangely u expe tedly d t th same t me imply n t rally a d f cibly N w 812 to y e l g clos t uch w th these peo ple t wa pp re t th t thes u de curr nts ct stro gly d near g n erupt n.

Alpátych wh had r ched Boguchárovo shortly bef the ld pri c death not ced a great m g the peasa ts, nd th t con trary t what was happen g n th B ld H ll district, where er rad us of f rty m les ll the peasants were mo g way d lea g th ll ges to be dev t ed by the Cossacks the peasa ts the t ppe eg on ro d Bogu chárovo were t wa rum ed n t ucl w th th F ch, r e ed l flets from them th t p ssed from h d to h nd nd d d not m grate. H learned from d mest serf l yal t h m that th peasa t K rp who possessed great fl e n the ll ge commu d h d re tly bee way dr g go ernme t tra s- port, had t rned w th new th t th Cossack were destroy g deserted ll ges b t that the Fre ch d d t h rm them. Alpáty h als kn w that th prev us day ther peasant had even b ght f m th ll g f V l kh wh h a occup ed by th F e ch a procl ma by F ch ge eral th t h rm ld be d he hab t ts d f they rema ed they w uld be p d f yth g tak e from them. A proof f thus the peasa t had bro ght from V isl úkh h dred ru bles n tes (h d d n t kn w that they were f lse) p d t h m d f h y

M e mporta t t ll Alpátych learned th t

cided not to m b t to wa t. Yet there was

er the s teenth he could not be a po e for wh t m ght happen. On the e n g of the day the old prince d ed the Marshal went a ay prom s ng to return next day for the f neral But this he was unabl to do f r he rece ed tidi gs th t the F ench had unexpectedly ad van d and h d barely time to remo e his o n fam ly nd valu bles from h estate

F r s me thirty ye rs Boguch áro o had been man ged by the illag Elder Dron whom the ld prince called by the dim nut e Dr nu h ka.

Dron was one f those phys cally and mental ly v gorous peasa ts who grow b g beards as soon they are f ge nd go on u chan d till they are sixty o seventy w th ut a gray ha r the loss f a tooth as stra ht d strong at s xty s at th rty

jesti gly called h m the M ter Du g the whole t me of his r ce D on had neve been drunk ll never fter sle pless n ghts th hardest t k h d l e h wn the le t f t gue d th gh he co ld not ead he l d e er forgotten gle m ney ccou t or the numbe of qu rters of flour n y f tl nd less cartlo ds he sold fo the prince n n gle hock of the wh le corn cr p n ny le cre f th Boguchárovo fi lds

Alpátych arri g from th de a tated B ld H lls cat e t f his D on on the d y f the pri ce s f eral nd t ld him to ha tw l h rses got ready f the pri cess car

s t. A p ych named cert n peasants he knew from wh m h told h m t take the carts.

Dron repl ed that th h rses f these pe s ants w e way cart g Alpátych named oth

ers but they too according to Dron had no horses available some horses were carting for the government others were too weak and *others had died for want of fodder It seemed* that no horses could be had even for the carriages much less for the carting

Alpátych looked intently at Dron and frowned Just as Dron was a model village Elder so Alpátych had not managed the prince s estates for twenty years in vain He was a model steward possessing in the highest degree the *faculty of divining the needs and instincts of* those he dealt with Having glanced at Dron he at once understood that his answers did not express his personal views but the general mood of the Boguchárovo commune by which the Elder had already been carried away But he also knew that Dron who had acquired property and was hated by the commune must *be hesitating between the two camps* the masters and the serfs He noticed this hesitation in Dron s look and therefore frowned and moved closer up to him

Now just listen Drónushka said he Don t talk nonsense to me His excellency Prince Andrew himself gave me orders to move all the people away and not leave them with *the enemy and there is an order from the Tsar* about it too Anyone who stays is a traitor to the Tsar Do you hear?

I hear Dron answered without lifting his eyes

Alpátych was not satisfied with this reply

Eh Dron it will turn out badly! he said shaking his head

The power is in your hands Dron rejoined sadly

Eh Dron drop it! Alpátych repeated withdrawing his hand from his bosom and solemnly pointing to the floor at Dron s feet I *can see through* you and three yards into the ground under you he continued gazing at the floor in front of Dron

Dron was disconcerted glanced furtively at Alpátych and again lowered his eyes

You drop this nonsense and tell the people to get ready to leave their homes and go to Moscow and to get carts ready *for tomorrow* morning for the princess th ngs And don t go

[illegible] Take the keys [illegible] *Christ s* sake!

Stop that! cried Alpátych sternly I see through you and three yards under you he repeated knowing that his skill in beekeeping his knowledge of the right time to sow the oats and the fact that he had been able to retain the old prince s favor for twenty years had long since gained him the reputation of being a wizard and that the power of seeing three yards *under a man is considered an attribute* of wizards

Dron got up and was about to say something but Alpátych interrupted him

What is it you have got into your heads eh? What are you thinking of eh?

What am I to do with the people? said Dron They re quite beside themselves I have *already told them*

'Told them I dare say! said Alpátych. Are they drinking? he asked abruptly

Quite beside themselves Yákov Alpátych they ve fetched another barrel

Well then listen! I ll go to the police officer and you tell them so and that they must stop this and the carts must be got ready

I understand

Alpátych did not insist further He had managed people for a long time and knew that the chief way to make them obey is to show no suspicion that they can possibly disobey Having *wrung a submissive I understand from* Dron Alpátych contented himself with that though he not only doubted but felt almost certain that without the help of troops the carts would not be forthcoming

And so it was for when evening came no carts had been provided In the village outside the drink shop another meeting was being held which decided that the horses should be driven out into the woods and the carts *should not be provided Without saying any*thing of this to the princess Alpátych had his own belongings taken out of the carts which had arrived from Bald Hills and had those horses got ready for the princess carriages *Meanwhile he went himself to the police au*thorities

CHAPTER X

After her father s funeral Princess Mary [illegible] parture (This was before his talk with Dron) Princess Mary raised herself on the sofa on *which she had been lying and replied through* the closed door that she did not mean to go away and begged *to be left in peace*

The windows of the room in which she was

ln looked westward She l y n the sof w th her f ce t the wall finge the butto f h leather cush and see g n th but

h had n t uspected but wi u tself durı g he f ther ll ess. She w shed to pra b t d d n t d re to, dared not in her prese t state of m nd address herself to God. Sh lay f a l g t me in that pos t n

Th had reached the othe s de of the house a d its sl nt g rays sh ne into th pen d w l ght g up the room and p tt f the morocco cush n t wh ch Pri cess M ry was lo k g The fl w of her th hts uddenly t pped. U consc usly she sat up smoothed her ha r got p nd went to the w ndow n vol ta ly nh l g the freshness of the clear but windy even g

"Yes, y can well enjoy the ev n g now! H is go d no o e w ll h nd r you she sa d t herself nd s nk g nt a ha r she let her h d f ll tl e w nd w s ll

l sten ng to the sou d of he o ce

Your posit on ı doubly terrible de r prin cess sa d Mademo selle Bourienne after pause I understand that you could not and can ot th nk f yourself but w th my l ve for you I must do so. H s Alpátych been to you Has he spoken to you of go ng away? she sked

Pri cess Mary d d not answer She d d not understand who was to go or where to. Is t poss ble to pl n or th k of anything now? Is t not all the same? she thought and d d not reply

"You know chè e Marie sa d Mademo selle Bourienne that we are n d ger—are surrounded by the Fren h It would be danger ous to m e now If we go we are almost sure to be t ken p soners, d God knows

Princess M ry looked t her compan on w th out u derstand n wh t she was t lk ng bout

Oh f anyone knew how l ttle anyth n m tters to me now she sa d. Of course I would on n accou t w sh to go away from h m. Alpátych d d say someth ng abo it go h

e bl k dress d weepers. She softly pproa hed Pri ess M ry ghed k ssed h r d mmed t ly began t cry The pr cess looked up t h r All the r f rm r d sh rm ny d her wn jeal u y recurred to her m d. B t she remembered too h w he had cha ged f lat t wa d M d mo selle Bouri n e nd co ld t bear t ee he thereby show g l ow j t were th p o ches Pri cess M ry l d m tally dd essed t her Bes des r f r m f m wl des red h de th to co demn he th ht.

Pr cess M ry dly p ctured to herself the p f M d mois ll Bou nne wh m sh had f l e kept t dist ce b t who yet a depe de t n h nd l g n h r h u e Sh f l sorry f her d l ld o t her ha d w h gl l ge le qu ry M d mo selle Bo ri t ce bega cry g aga d kissed that h d pe k g f th p ress so row d mak ng hers lf p rt e t. She sa d her ly co sol t n wa the f ct that the pri cess ll ed l t hare her sorrow th t all the ld mis ersta d gs sh uld k to noth g b t th great gr ef that h f lt her self blam les egard t e ery d th t h from b e saw her ffect d grat tud Th p ess l ea d h theed g her words but occa io lly look g p at her d

would n w be bette to st y here sa d M de mo lle Bourienne Beca use you w ll ree chèr M rie to f ll ı to the hand of the sol d ers or f tot us peasants would be terr ble"

Mademo selle Bou e ne took from her ret cule procl m t on (ot p nted on ord nary Russ n p per) of G eral Rame u s, tell ng people not t lea e the r h mes an l th t the Fre ch auth r es would afford th m prop protect n She h nded this t the pr ncess.

I th nk t would be best to pp l to tl e ge eral she cont n ed, nd I m ure th t all due respect wo ld be l wn you.

Pr cess M ry r d the paper a d h r f ce began to qu w th r fled sobs.

From whom d d yo get th she ked.

"They probably recon ed th t I m Fre h by my n me repl ed M lem elle Bou en blu h

Pr cess M ry w th the p per in her hand rose f om the w nd w d w th pale f ce w t ut of th room nd into wh t h d been Pr e A drew s tudy

"Du y á ha se l Alpátych Dró l k or so body to me h sa d nd tell M dem selle Bo en e t t come to m she added l ea g M d m selle B u en e vo ce "We must go t ce at o ce! she sa d pp lled at

ers but they too according to Dron had no horses available some horses were carting for the government others were too weak and others had died for want of fodder It seemed that no horses could be had even for the carriages much less for the carting

Alpátych looked intently at Dron and frowned Just as Dron was a model village Elder so Alpátych had not managed the prince s estates for twenty years in vain He was a model steward possessing in the highest degree the faculty of divining the needs and instincts of those he dealt with Having glanced at Dron he at once understood that his answers did not express his personal views but the general mood of the Boguchárovo commune by which the Elder had already been carried away But he also knew that Dron who had acquired property and was hated by the commune must be hesitating between the two camps the masters and the serfs He noticed this hesitation in Dron s look and therefore frowned and moved closer up to him

Now just listen Drónushka said he Don t talk nonsense to me His excellency Prince Andrew himself gave me orders to move all the people away and not leave them with the enemy and there is an order from the Tsar about it too Anyone who stays is a traitor to the Tsar Do you hear?

I hear Dron answered without lifting his eyes

Alpátych was not satisfied with this reply

Eh Dron it will turn out badly! he said shaking his head

The power is in your hands Dron rejoined sadly

Eh Dron drop it! Alpátych repeated withdrawing his hand from his bosom and solemnly pointing to the floor at Dron s feet I can see through you and three yards into the ground under you he continued gazing at the floor in front of Dron

Dron was disconcerted glanced furtively at Alpátych and again lowered his eyes

You drop this nonsense and tell the people to get ready to leave their homes and go to Moscow and to get carts ready for tomorrow morning for the princess things And don t go to any meeting yourself do you hear?

[illegible] f ll on l kne [illegible] Take the [illegible] or Christ s sake!

Stop that! cried Alpátych sternly I see through you and three yards under you he repeated knowing that his skill in beekeeping his knowledge of the right time to sow the oats and the fact that he had been able to retain the old prince s favor for twenty years had long since gained him the reputation of being a wizard and that the power of seeing three yards under a man is considered an attribute of wizards

Dron got up and was about to say something but Alpátych interrupted him

What is it you have got into your heads eh? What are you thinking of eh?

What am I to do with the people? said Dron They re quite beside themselves I have already told them

Told them I dare say! said Alpátych Are they drinking? he asked abruptly

Quite beside themselves Yákov Alpátych they ve fetched another barrel

Well then listen! I ll go to the police officer and you tell them so and that they must stop this and the carts must be got ready

I understand

Alpátych did not insist further He had managed people for a long time and knew that the chief way to make them obey is to show no suspicion that they can possibly disobey Having wrung a submissive I understand from Dron Alpátych contented himself with that, though he not only doubted but felt almost certain that without the help of troops the carts would not be forthcoming

And so it was for when evening came no carts had been provided In the village outside the drink shop another meeting was being held which decided that the horses should be driven out into the woods and the carts should not be provided Without saying anything of this to the princess Alpátych had his own belongings taken out of the carts which had arrived from Bald Hills and had those horses got ready for the princess carriages Meanwhile he went himself to the police authorities

CHAPTER X

After her father s funeral Princess Mary shut herself up in her room and did not admit anyone A maid came to the door to say that Alpátych was asking for orders about their departure (This was before his talk with Dron) Princess Mary raised herself on the sofa on which she had been lying and replied through the closed door that she did not mean to go away and begged to be left in peace

The windows of the room in which she was

lying looked estward. She lay on the sofa w th her f ce t the wall fingering th butt n of the lea her cush n d seeing noth n but

the had t suspected, but wh ch had self d ri g her father s llness. She wished to pray but did n t dare t dared n t n her present tate f m nd ddress herself to God. She lay f r long time n that po tion

The su had reached the ther d of the house d ts slanti g rays sh ne nt the open window l ght n up the room nd part of the morocco cushi t which Pri cess Mary was look g The fl w f her th ughts suddenly stopped. U co sci usly she sat up smoothed her hair got up d went to the w d w n vol tarily nhal g the f eshness of the clear but windy even g

"Yes, y u ca w ll enjoy th even g now! He is go e d n ne w ll h nder you, he sa d to herself, d sinking nto ha r she let her head fall th wi dow ill.

Someo e spok her *name* n soft a d ten der vo e from th garden d kissed her head. *She looked up It was M dem u lle Bourien* a bl ck dress d weepers. Sh softly pproached Pri cess M ry ghed kissed her nd mmediat l began to cry Th princess looked p t her All the f rmer disharmony d her own jeal usy recurred t her mi d. B t sh remembered too h w h had ch nged f la e toward M demo sell Bo ri nne and uld not bea t see her thereby howi g how unjust were the reproaches Pri cess Mary had mentally ddressed to her Bes des t for m for me who des ed his death, to condemn ? h thought.

Pri ess Mary dly p ctured t herself the pos tio f M demois lle Bourien whom sh had f lat kept dista ce, b t who yet wa depe den o her d li ing in her house. *She f l sorry f h d h ld t her hand* wi h gl e l gentl nquiry M demoiselle Bourien t ce began cry g ga n d kissed that ha d, peaki g f th princess so row d making herself partner n t. She said her ly consolati was the fact that th pri cess allowed her t share her sorrow that ll the ld mis derstand gs bould s k to noth but this great gri f that sh f lt her self blam less n regard to everyon d that h from bove, saw her ffection d grati tude. Th pr ess heard her not heed ng her words bu occasionally looking up t her and l sten n to the sound f her o ce.

"Y u po tion s d ubly terrible, dear prin cess, said M demoiselle Bour enne after a p use. I understand th t you could not, and cannot th nk of yo rself but w *th my l e for* you I must do so Has Alpátych been to yo ? H he poken to you of go ng way? she asked.

Princess Mary d d not answer She d d not understand who wa to go or where to Is t poss ble to pl n or th nk of anythi g *now?* I t not all the sam she tho ht, nd did not reply

" k M ri sa d Mademoi —are ger t sure to be tak n p soners, d God knows

Princess Mary looked at her *compan on* w th-out understanding what he was talking bout.

Oh, f nyone knew how little nyth ng matters to me now she sa d. Of cours I would *on n ccou t wish to go away from* h m. Alpátych d d say som thing about go-i g Speak to him I can do nothing noth i g, d d n t want to "

I *ve spoken t* him. He hopes w should be n tim to get way tom rrow but I th nk t would now be better to st y here sa d M de m selle Bouri nne. Because you will agree *cher M rie* to f ll nto th ha ds of th sol diers or of otous peasants w uld be terrible."

Mademoisell Bourienne took from her reticule proclamation (ot printed on o di n ry Russ an p per) of General Rameau s, tell in people not to lea e their homes and that the Fre ch auth rities would ffo d them prop-er protecti n. She handed this to th pri cess.

I think t would be best to ppeal to that general, h cont nued, and I am ur that ll due respect w uld be shown you.

Pr cess Mary ead the paper and her face began t qui er w th st fled sobs.

From whom d d you get this?" she asked.

"They probably ecogn zed that I am French, by my *name* repl ed M demoiselle Bouri enne blushi g

Prin ess M ry w th the p per n her hand, rose from th w nd w d with p le face w t o t of the room d nto what had been Prin Andrew study

"Dunyásha send Alpátych o Drónushka som bod to m he said, nd t ll Madem i-selle Bour enne not to com *to me,"* h dded, hear g M demoisell Bour en v ce "We must go t once, t ncel h said, pp lled t

the thought of being left in the hands of the French

If Prince Andrew heard that I was in the

This idea horrified her made her shudder blush and feel such a rush of anger and pride as she had never experienced before All that was distressing and especially all that was hu miliating in her position rose vividly to her mind They the French would settle in this house M le Général Rameau would occupy Prince Andrew s study and amuse himself by looking through and reading his letters and papers Mademoiselle Bourienne would do the honors of Boguchárovo for him I should be given a small room as a favor the soldiers would violate my father s newly dug grave to steal his crosses and stars they would tell me of their victories over the Russians and would pretend to sympathize with my sorrow

ng her own like her e did not care where she remained or what happened to her but she felt herself the representative of her dead father and of Prince Andrew Invol untarily she thought their thoughts and felt their feelings What they would have said and what they would have done she felt bound to say and do She went into Prince Andrew s study trying to enter completely into his ideas and considered her position

The demands of life which had seemed to her annihilated by her father s death all at once rose before her with a new previously un known force and took possession of her

Agitated and flushed she paced the room sending now for Michael Ivánovich and now for Tíkhon or Dron Dunyásha the nurse and the other maids could not say in how far Made moiselle Bourienne s statement was correct Alpátych was not at home he had gone to the police Neither could the architect Michael

a with With which ied to answer the old prince without expressing views of his own he now replied to Princess Mary so that nothing definite could be got from his answers The old valet Tíkhon with sunken emaciated face that bore the stamp of incon solable grief replied Yes Princess to all Princess Mary s questions and hardly refrained from sobbing as he looked at her

At length Dron the village Elder entered the room and with a deep bow to Princess Mary came to a halt by the doorpost

Princess Mary walked up and down the room and stopped in front of him

Drónushka she said regarding as a sure friend this Drónushka who always used to bring a special kind of gingerbread from his visit to the fair at Vyázma every year and smil ingly offer it to her Drónushka now since our misfortune she began but could not go on

We are all in God s hands said he with a sigh

They were silent for a while

Dronushka Alpátych has gone off some where and I have no one to turn to Is it true as they tell me that I can t even go away?

Why shouldn t you go away your excel lency? You can go said Dron

I was told it would be dangerous because of the enemy Dear friend I can do nothing I understand nothing I have nobody! I want to go away tonight or early tomorrow morning

Dron paused He looked askance at Princess Mary and said There are no horses I told Yákov Alpátych so

Why are there none? asked the princess

It s all God s scourge said Dron What horses we had have been taken for the army or have died—this is such a year! It s not a case of feeding horses—we may die of hunger ourselves! As it is some go three days without eating We ve nothing we ve been ruined

Princess Mary listened attentively to what he told her

The peasants are ruined? They have no bread? she asked

They re dying of hunger said Dron It s not a case of carting

But why didn t you tell me Drónushka? Isn t it possible to help them? I ll do all I can

To Princess Mary it was strange that now at a moment when such sorrow was filling her soul there could be rich people and poor and the rich could refrain from helping the poor She had heard vaguely that there was such a thing as landlord s corn which was some times given to the peasants She also knew that neither her father nor her brother would re fuse to help the peasants in need she only feared to make some mistake in speaking about the distribution of the grain she wished to give She was glad such cares presented them

sel es enabling her without cruple to f rget her own grief. She began aski g Dron about the peasants needs and what there wa in *Boguchiro* that bel n ed to the landlo d.

But we ha e gra n bel ngi g to my broth er" sh said.

"The la dlord s gra n is ll safe epl ed Dro pro dly *Our prince did not order* t to be sold.

G e t to the peasants let them have all t.ey eed I gi e you lea e n my brother's nam sa d she.

Dro made no nswer b t hed deeply

G them that corn f ther is eno gh of t. D strib te t ll. I g thi order n my brother me d tell them that what s ours is theirs. W do not grudge them nything Te l them so

Dro looked tently t the princess while sh was speak g

Dischar m l ttl mother f God sake! Order the keys to be taken f om me sa d he. I ha e served tw y three years nd ha e do no wr g Discharge me, fo God sak !

Pri ess Mary did t understand what he wan ed of her wh h was askin to be discharged. Sh epl ed that h had ever d ubt ed his dev tion d that sh was ready to do ythi g for him and f th peasants.

CHAPTER XI

A OUR LATER D vásh came t tell th princ ss tha Dro had me, d all th peasants had sembled t the b rn by the pri ess o der d w hed to ha e w rd w th their mistress.

B t I ever ld them to come, sa d Princess M ry I onl ld D *on to* l t them ha e th gra

O l f God sak *Princess dear* ha e them sen way d do t go out to them. It s l trick, sa d Du vá ha and when Yákov Alpá ch eturns let us get way nd please *don*

"What is tr ck?" asked Pri cess Mary in urp ise.

I know is, only listen to m for God sak A k urse too. They say they d t gree to lea Boguchá ovo as you ordered.

"You re mak g some m take. I ever or dered them go away said Pri cess Mary Call Dró usł ka.

D on cam nd confirmed Du vásha words, th peasa ts had come by th pri ess order

But I ever sent for them, decla ed the pr ess "You mus ha g en m message wr g *I only* sa d that you were to give them the grain

Dron only s ghed in reply

If you rder t th y will go way" sa d he

No no I ll go out to them, sa d Pr ces Mary and n p te of the nurse s d Dun á ha s protests she w nt out t to the porch Dron Dunyasha the nurse, nd M chael I án o ch followi g her

"They prob bly think I am offer ng them the grain t bribe them to emain here, whil I myself go away *leaving them to the mercy* of th French, th ught Princes Mary I w ll ffer them mo thly ration d hous *t our* Moscow estate. I am ure And ew w uld do ev n more n my place," she thou ht a she went out in the twili ht t ward the crowd tanding on th pasture by th barn.

The m n crowded closer togethe stirred

old and you g, were fixed on her nd there were so many different faces that he could not dist nguish any of them and, *feel g that* she must speak to them all at on e did not know how to d t. But gain th sense th t she represented her f ther and her brother ga e her courage, d sh boldly began her peech.

I am ery glad you ha e come, he sa d

because *t is* da gerous here th nemy s near because I am gi g y u ev ry th g, my fri nds and I beg you to tak every thing all our grain so that you may not uffer want And f y u ha e been t ld that I am gi ing you th grain to keep you here—that is n t true. On the contrary I ask you to go w th all your bel gi gs to our estate nea Moscow nd I promise you I will see to t that ther y u shall want for nothing You shall be gi n food d lodgi g

Th prin ess t pped. S ghs were *the only* sound heard in the crowd.

I m not do ng this on *my own* ccount, she continued, I do t in the nam f my dead father who was good master to you, and of my brother d his son.

Aga n h paused. No one brok the ilence.

Ours is common misf rtune nd we w ll share t ogether All that is m n is yours, he co cluded, sca n ng th faces before her

the thought of being left in the hands of the French

If Prince Andrew heard that I was in the power of the French! That I the daughter of Prince Nicholas Bolkónski asked General Rameau for protection and accepted his favor! This idea horrified her made her shudder blush and feel such a rush of anger and pride as she had ne
was distress
miliating ir y to her mind They the French would settle in this house M le Général Rameau would occupy Prince Andrew s study and amuse himself by looking through and reading his letters and papers Mademoiselle Bourienne would do the honors of Boguchárovo for him I should be given a small room as a favor the soldiers would violate my father s newly dug grave to steal his crosses and stars they would tell me of their victories over the Russians and would pretend to sympathize with my sorrow thought Princess Mary not thinking her own thoughts but feeling bound to think like her father and her brother For herself she did not care where she remained or what happened to her but she felt herself the representative of her dead father and of Prince Andrew Involuntarily she thought their thoughts and felt their feelings What they would have said and what they would have done she felt bound to say and do She went into Prince Andrew s study trying to enter completely into his ideas and considered her position

The demands of life which had seemed to her annihilated by her father s death all at once rose before her with a new previously unknown force and took possession of her

Agitated and flushed she paced the room sending now for Michael Ivánovich and now for Tíkhon or Dron Dunyásha the nurse and the other maids could not say in how far Mademoiselle Bourienne s statement was correct. Alpátych was not at home he had gone to the police Neither could the architect Michael Ivánovi
sleepy e
just the
for fifte as he had been accustomed to answer the old prince without expressing views of his own he now replied to Princess Mary so that nothing definite could be got from his answers The old valet Tíkhon with sunken emaciated face that bore the stamp of inconsolable grief replied Yes Princess to all Princess Mary s questions and hardly refrained from sobbing as he looked at her

At length Dron the village Elder entered the room and with a deep bow to Princess Mary came to a halt by the doorpost.

Princess Mary walked up and down the room and stopped in front of him.

Dronushka she said regarding as a sure friend this Drónushka who always used to bring a special kind of gingerbread from his visit to the fair at Vyázma every year and smilingly offer it to her Drónushka now since our misfortune she began but could not go on

We are all in God s hands said he with a sigh

They were silent for a while.

Drónushka Alpátych has gone off somewhere and I have no one to turn to Is it true as they tell me that I can t even go away?

Why shouldn t you go away your excellency? You can go said Dron

I was told it would be dangerous because of the enemy Dear friend I can do nothing I understand nothing I have nobody! I want to go away tonight or early tomorrow morning

Dron paused He looked askance at Princess Mary and said "There are no horses I told Yákov Alpátych so

Why are there none? asked the princess

It s all God s scourge said Dron What horses we had have been taken for the army or have died—this is such a year! It s not a case of feeding horses—we may die of hunger ourselves! As it is some go three days without eating We ve nothing we ve been ruined

Princess Mary listened attentively to what he told her

The peasants are ruined? They have no bread? she asked

They re dying of hunger said Dron It s not a case of carting

But why didn t you tell me Drónushka? Isn t it possible to help them? I ll do all I can

To Princess Mary it was strange that now at a moment when such sorrow was filling her soul there could be rich people and poor and the rich could refrain from helping the poor She had heard vaguely that there was such a thing as landlord s corn which was sometimes given to the peasants She also knew that neither her father nor her brother would refuse to help the peasants in need she only feared to make some mistake in speaking about the distribution of the grain she wished to give She was glad such cares presented them

again now "Now he will never tell anyone what he had in his soul. Never will that moment return for him or for me when he might have said all he longed to say and not Tikhon but I might have heard and understood him. Why did I not enter the room?" she thought. "Perhaps he would then have said to me what he said the day he died. While talking to Tikhon he asked about me twice. He wanted to see me, and I was standing close by outside the door. It was sad and painful for him to talk to Tikhon who did not understand him. I remember how he began speaking to him about Lise as if she were alive—he had forgotten she was dead—and Tikhon reminded him that she was no more, and he shouted, 'Fool!' He was greatly depressed. From behind the door I heard how he lay down on his bed groaning and loudly exclaimed, 'My God!' Why didn't I go in then? What could he have done to me? What could I have lost? And perhaps he would then have been comforted and would have said that word to me." And Princess Mary uttered aloud the caressing word he had said to her the day of his death. "Dearest!" she repeated, and began sobbing, with tears that relieved her soul. She now saw his face before her. And not the face she had known ever since she could remember and had always seen at a distance, but the timid, feeble face she had seen for the first time quite closely, with all its wrinkles and details, when she stooped near to his mouth to catch what he said.

"Dearest," she repeated again.

"What was he thinking when he uttered that word? What is he thinking now?" This question suddenly presented itself to her and in answer she saw him before her with the expression that was on his face as he lay in his coffin with his chin bound up with a white handkerchief. And the horror that had seized her when she touched him and convinced herself that that was not he but something mysterious and horrible, seized her again. She tried to think of something else and to pray but could do neither. With wide-open eyes she gazed at the moonlight and the shadows, expecting every moment to see his dead face, and she felt that the silence brooding over the house and within held her fast.

"Dunyasha," she whispered. "Dunyasha!" she screamed wildly, and tearing herself out of this silence she ran to the servants' quarters to meet her old nurse and the maidservants who came running toward her.

CHAPTER XIII

ON THE SEVENTEENTH OF AUGUST Rostóv and Ilyin, accompanied by Lavrushka who had just returned from captivity and by an hussar orderly, left their quarters at Yankovo, ten miles from Boguchárovo, and went for a ride—to try a new horse Ilyín had bought and to find out whether there was any hay to be had in the villages.

For the last three days Boguchárovo had lain between the two hostile armies, so that it was as easy for the Russian rearguard to get to it as for the French vanguard. Rostóv, as a careful squadron commander, wished to take such provision as remained at Boguchárovo before the French could get them.

Rostóv and Ilyín were in the merriest of moods. On the way to Boguchárovo, a princely estate with a dwelling house and farm where they hoped to find many domestic serfs and pretty girls, they questioned Lavrushka about Napoleon and laughed at his stories, and raced one another to try Ilyín's horse.

Rostóv had no idea that the village he was entering was the property of that very Bolkónski who had been engaged to his sister.

Rostóv and Ilyín gave rein to their horses for a last race along the incline before reaching Boguchárovo, and Rostóv, outstripping Ilyín, was the first to gallop into the village street.

"You're first," cried Ilyín, flushed.

"Yes, always first both on the grassland and here," answered Rostóv, stroking his heated Donets horse.

"And I'd have won on my Frenchy, your excellency," said Lavrushka from behind, alluding to his shabby cart horse, "only I didn't wish

and scanty beards emerged from the tavern, smiling, staggering, and singing some incoherent song, and approached the officers.

"Fine fellows!" said Rostóv laughing. "Is there any hay here?"

"And how like one another," said Ilyín.

"A mo-o-st m-e-rry co-o-m-pa-ny ..." sang one of the peasants with a blissful smile.

One of the men came out of the crowd and went up to Rostóv.

"Who do you belong to?" he asked.

"The French," replied Ilyín jestingly, and

All eyes were gazing at her with one and the same expression *She could not fathom wheth er it was curiosity devotion gratitude or ap*prehension and distrust—but the expression on all the faces was identical

We are all very thankful for your bounty but it won t do for us to take the landlord s grain said a voice at the back of the crowd

But why not? asked the princess

No one replied and Princess Mary looking round at the crowd found that every eye she met now was immediately dropped

But why don t you want to take it? she asked again

No one answered

The silence began to oppress the princess and she tried to catch someone s eye

Why don t you speak? she inquired of a very old man who stood just in front of her leaning on his stick If you think something more is wanted tell me! I will do anything said she catching his eye

But as if this angered him he bent his head quite low and muttered

Why should we agree? We don t want the grain

Why should we give up everything? We don t agree Don t agree We are sorry for you but we re not willing Go away yourself alone came from various sides of the crowd

And again all the faces in that crowd bore an identical expression though now it was certainly not an expression of curiosity or grati tude but of angry resolve

But you can t have understood me said *Princess Mary with a sad smile Why don t* you want to go? I promise to house and feed you while here the enemy would ruin you

But her voice was drowned by the voices of the crowd

We re not willing Let them ruin us! We *won t take your grain We don t agree*

Again Princess Mary tried to catch some-one s eye but not a single eye in the crowd was

ving to

ward.

r into

slavery! *Pull down your houses and go into* bondage! I dare say! I ll give you grain in deed she says voices in the crowd were heard saying

With drooping head Princess Mary left the crowd and went back *to the hou e Having re* peated her *order* to Dron to ha e horses ready for her departure next morning she went to her room and remained alone with her own thoughts

CHAPTER XII

For a long time that night Princess Mary sat by the open window of her room hearing the sound of the peasants voices that reached her from the village but it was not of them she was *thinking She felt that she could not under* stand them however much she might think about them She thought only of one thing her sorrow which after the break caused by cares for the present seemed already to be long to the past Now she could remember it and weep or pray

After sunset the wind had dropped The night was calm and fresh Toward midnight the voices began to subside a cock crowed the full moon began to show from behind the lime trees a fresh white dewy mist began to rise and stillness reigned over the village and the house

Pictures of the near past—her father s illness and last moments—rose one after another to her memory With mournful pleasure she now lingered over these images repelling with hor ror only the last one the picture of his death which she felt she could not contemplate even *in imagination at this still and mystic hour of* night And these pictures presented themselves to her so clearly and in such detail that they seemed now present now past and now fu ture

She vividly recalled the moment when he *had his first stroke and was being dragged along by his armpits through the garden* at Bald Hills muttering something with his help less tongue twitching his gray eyebrows and looking uneasily and timidly at her

Even then he wanted to tell me what he *told me the day he died she thought He had* always thought what he said then And she re

n 11 Hills

against *his will* She

stolen downstairs on tiptoe and going to the door of the conservatory where he slept that night had listened at the door In a suffering and weary voice he was saying something to Tikhon speaking of the Crimea and its warm nights and of the Empress *Evidently he had wanted to talk* And why did he call me? Why didn t he let me be there instead of Tik hon? Princess Mary had thought and thou ht

bil ty there re her features nd expres- th gl t he a h looked at I er d his t edt h rt m d t rs

Wh she began to tell h m that ll tl s had h ppe ed th day after her f the funeral her ed trembled. She turned way nd then f fea g he m ht t ke h r w ds as meant t mo e h im t p ty looked at h m with n ap- p ehen e gl ce f nqu ry Th e we e tears Rostó eyes. Pr ncess Mary ot ced thi d gla ed gratef lly t h m w th th t rad nt look wh ch ca ed the pla ess of he fa e to be f rgotten.

I ca t express Pr cess h w glad I am that I happe ed to r de h re d am ble to bow my read ess t erv you sa d Rostóv rts g Go hen y u plea d I g y u my ord f honor th t no o shall dare to caus to noyance f ly y u w ll llow m to t as your esc t. A d bow g espe tf lly as f t lady f yal blood h m ed t w rd th doo

Rost s d fere t l t seemed to dicat th t tho h he w ld cons der h mself happy t be equa ted w th her he did not w sh to tak dva tage f he m f rtu es to ntrude po l

Pri ess M ry u derstood this nd pprec ted h del cacy

I m ery ry grat f l to you he sa d F en h but I hope t wa ll m dersta d n d th t s to bl me f t. Sh sud d ly bega t cry

Excuse m h sa d

Rost k h b ws, left the room th ther low bow

CHAPTER XIV

W LL, is he p e ty? Ah, fri d—my p nk one d l rous her m is Dunyásha

E t n gl ci g t Rost f ce Ilyín t pped short. H saw that h hero d om mand was f ll w g qu te d fferent tra n I thought.

Rost gl ed gr ly t Ilyín d w th ut r pl g strod ff w th rap d teps t the vil lage.

I ll show them I ll g e t to them, th br g ds sa d h t h mself.

Alpátych t g l d g t t o ly just ma g g not to ru kept p w th h m w th d fficulty

What dec ha y been plea ed o ome t sa d I

Rost topped d, clencl g h fists, d de ly d rnly t rned o Alpátych.

Decision. What decis ? Old d tard!

cried h What ha e you been about Eh The peasants are r t g a d y u can t manage

gl d g ga t nd cont ued to mp rt t w He said th pe sants were bd rate and th t at the pres nt m me t t would be imp dent to o erres t them w thout n rmed f rce a d wo ld t n t be bette first to se d f r the m l tary?

t ent t.

W th ut con dering what h w ld do he m ed u co sciously w th qu k esolute st ps t wa d th crowd. And the n arer he dr w to t th mo e Alpátych felt that th s u reason ble ction might produce good results Tl e peasa ts n th crowd we s mil ly mpressed when they saw Rostó rap d firm step d resolut frown g fa

Afte the hussars h d come to the ll ge and R tó h d g ne to ee th princess a c ta n confus n a d d ssens on h d ar en mong the cr wd. Some of th peasa ts sa d th t these n w rrival were Russians d m ght take t m ss th t the mistress w be ng det ned. Dron was of th op n on b t soo he exp essed t K rp d thers attacked the e. Elder

H w m ny years ha e y u be n f tten ng n the mmu e K rp shouted t l im. It s ll o e t y u Y u ll d g up your pot of m ney d tak t away with y u. What d es t matter t y u whether our homes are ru ned o t?

We e been t ld t keep order nd th t no one to lea th h mes o take way n gle gra n nd that all bout t! cried n th er

It was y ur so t rn t be to crippled, b t n fear! You begrudged y u l mp of son l ttl old man uddenly began ttack g D n — nd so they took my V á k t be sh ed f r sold ! B t we all h e to d e

"To be ure, we ll h to die I m n t ga t the commu e sa d D

"Tl t t—n t ga st tl You e filled your belly

Th two t ll peasants h d th ir say As soon Rost n f ll wed by Ilyí La ru hk a d Alpátych, came p to th cr wd K rp thrust g h fingers t h belt nd smil g a l t

here is Napoleon himself —and he pointed to Lavrushka

Then you are Russians? the peasant asked again

And is there a large force of you here? said another a short man coming up

Very large answered Rostov But why have you collected here? he added Is it a holiday?

The old men have met to talk over the business of the commune replied the peasant moving away

At that moment on the road leading from the big house two women and a man in a white hat were seen coming toward the officers

The one in pink is mine so keep off! said Ilyin on seeing Dunyásha running resolutely toward him

She ll be ours! said Lavrushka to Ilyín winking

What do you want my pretty? said Ilyín with a smile

The princess ordered me to ask your regiment and your name

This is Count Rostóv squadron commander and I am your humble servant

Co-o om pa ny! roared the tipsy peasant with a beatific smile as he looked at Ilyín talking to the girl Following Dunyásha Alpátych advanced to Rostóv having bared his head while still at a distance

May I make bold to trouble your honor? said he respectfully but with a shade of contempt for the youthfulness of this officer and with a hand thrust into his bosom My mistress daughter of General in Chief Prince Nicholas Bolkónski who died on the fifteenth of this month finding herself in difficulties owing to the boorishness of these people —he pointed to the peasants— asks you to come up to the house Won t you please ride on a little farther said Alpátych with a melancholy smile as it is not convenient in the presence of ? He pointed to the two peasants who

tych

h?

said the peasants smiling joyfully at him

Rostóv looked at the tipsy peasants and smiled

Or perhaps they amuse your honor? remarked Alpátych with a staid air as he pointed at the old men with his free hand

No there s not much to be amused at here said Rostov and rode on a little way What s the matter? he asked

I make bold to inform your honor that the rude peasants here don t wish to let the mistress leave the estate and threaten to unharness her ho

I have the honor to report to you the actual truth said Alpátych

Rostóv dismounted gave his horse to the orderly and followed Alpátych to the house questioning him as to the state of affairs. It appeared that the princess offer of corn to the peasants the previous day and her talk with Dron and at the meeting had actually had so bad an effect that Dron had finally given up the keys and joined the peasants and had not appeared when Alpátych sent for him and that in the morning when the princess gave orders to harness for her journey the peasants had come in a large crowd to the barn and sent word that they would not let her leave the village that there was an order not to move and that they would unharness the horses Alpátych had gone out to admonish them but was told (it was chiefly Karp who did the talking Dron not showing himself in the crowd) that they could not let the princess go that there was an order to the contrary but that if she stayed they would serve her as before and obey her in everything

At the moment when Rostóv and Ilyín were galloping along the road Princess Mary despite the dissuasions of Alpátych her nurse and the maids had given orders to harness and intended to start but when the cavalrymen were espied they were taken for Frenchmen the coachman ran away and the women in the house began to wail

Father! Benefactor! God has sent you exclaimed deeply moved voices as Rostov passed through the anteroom

Princess Mary was sitting helpless and bewildered in the large sitting room when Rostóv was shown in She could not grasp who he was and why he had come or what was happening to her When she saw his Russian face and by his walk and the first words he uttered recognized him as a man of her own class she glanced at him with her deep radiant look and began speaking in a voice that faltered and trembled with emotion This meeting imme

ob l ty there e n l er f atures nd expres- o l tho ht he s he looked t her a d l s- t ed to h r t m d tory

Whe she began to tell h m th t all thus h d

— lool d t h m w u ap-

be forg tt n.

I ca t e p ess P ess h w glad I m th t I happe ed t de he e a d am ble to l w my read ne t ert y u a d Ro tóv

— m

th doo

R t dele ent l t e e m d t d cate tl t tl h be w ld der h m lf h ppy t be acq ted w th he he d d t w h to t l dva tage f her m f tu es to ı t ude p he

Pri ess M ry derstood th s d pprec ted h del cacy

I m ery ry grat f l to y u she sa d n F h b t I hop t w ll m u derstand g d th t o e s t bl me fo t She sud d ly beg t cry

E cuse m l h d

R tó k tt g h b w l ft the room w th the l w bow

CHAPTER XIV

W LL, ıs h p tty? Ah fri d—my p nk ne d l us her am Du yásh

L t gl ci g t R t f ce Ilyí t pp d sh t. He saw that h he o d com ma d r w f ll w g q t d fferent tra n f th ght.

R tó gl ed gr ly t Ilyí d w thout r ply g strod ff w th p d t p to th l l ge

I ll sh w th m I ll g tt th m th b g dsl sa d h t h m elf

Alpátych t gl d g tr t ly just m g g t to k pt p w th h m w thd fficulty

Wh t d ci h e y u b n ple ed t com t d l e

R tó t pp d d le ch g h fists sud d ly d t ly t ed n Alpátych

D s ? Wh t dee ? Old d t dl

cr e l he Wh t ha e y u been abo ut? Eh? Tl e p a nts re r t ng nd you can t na ı ge th m? Y u re tra t ryo rself! I kn w yo l ll fl y you all al e! And as ıf afraid [wast n h s st re of a ger he left Alpátych and went rap dly f rward Alpáty h m ster ng f s of fe ded feel ngs kept pace w tl R t v t gl d ng ga t nd co t ued to mp t l ews He ıd tl e pe s ts we e obdu te a d tl at at th p es nt mome t ıt w ld be mpruder t to o erres st them with t an armed f ce n l w uld ıt n t be better first to send fo tl e m l ıt ry?

~

t ve t t

W thout con der ı g what he w ld do he

bl act n m ght produce good results I l e pea ts the crowd were s m l rly mpre ed when they saw R tó s rap d firm st p and es l te f w g f e

Aft r the hus rs had c me th ll ge a l R tó h d g ne t s e the p nces rtain conf n d d ss on h d en amo g the crowd Some of the p asants s d that tl es new rr al w re Russ nd m gl t take ıt m ss that them tress w be g deta ned D n w f th s p n but a soo he expres ed ıt K rp a d others ttacked the e Elder

H w m y years h e y u b en f tt n ng o the c mm e? K rp shouted t l m It ll e t y u! Y u ll d g up your pot of mo ey a d tak t w y w th y u. What d es ıt m tt t y u whether our h mes a e ru ned o t?

We b n t ld t keep order d that no one t l e th ı h me t ke w y gl gra d th t ll bo t tl cr ed noth e

It w y so t rn t b co cr pted but

To be sure w ll h e t de l m n t ga t th mmu sa d D

Th t s t— t g t tl Y u ve filled your belly

T

here is Napoleon himself —and he pointed to Lavrushka

Then you are Russians? the peasant asked again

And is there a large force of you here? said another a short man coming up

Very large answered Rostóv But why have you collected here? he added Is it a holiday?

The old men have met to talk over the business of the commune replied the peasant moving away

At that moment on the road leading from the big house two women and a man in a white hat were seen coming toward the officers

The one in pink is mine so keep off! said Ilyín on seeing Dunyásha running resolutely toward him

She ll be ours! said Lavrushka to Ilyín winking

What do you want my pretty? said Ilyín with a smile

The princess ordered me to ask your regiment and your name

This is Count Rostóv squadron commander and I am your humble servant

Co-o-om pa ny! roared the tipsy peasant with a beatific smile as he looked at Ilyín talking to the girl Following Dunyásha Alpátych advanced to Rostóv having h ed l l

tem

with l

dau

I nce Nicholas Bolkónski who died on the fifteenth of this month finding herself in difficulties owing to the boorishness of these people —he pointed to the peasants— asks you to come up to the house Won t you please ride on a little farther said Alpátych with a melancholy smile as it is not convenient in the presence of ? He pointed to the two peasants who kept as close to him as horseflies to a horse

Ah! Alpátych Ah Yákov Alpátych Grand! Forgive us for Christ s sake eh? said the peasants smiling joyfully at him

Rostóv looked at the tipsy peasants and smiled

Or perhaps they amuse your honor? remarked Alpátych with a staid air as he pointed at the old men with his free hand

No there s not much to be amused at here said Rostóv and rode on a little way What s the matter? he asked

rude

I I the morning her excellency cannot get away

tri

dei I ych to the house questioning him as to the state of affairs. It appeared that the princess offer of corn to the peasants the previous day and her talk with Dron and at the meeting had actually had so bad an effect that Dron had finally given up the keys and joined the peasants and had not appeared when Alpátych sent for him and that in the morning when the princess gave orders to harness for her journey the peasants had come in a large crowd to the barn and sent word that they would not let her leave the village that there was an order not to move and that they would unharness the horses Alpátych had gone out to admonish them but was told (it was chiefly Karp who did the talking Dron not showing himself in the crowd) that they could not let the princess go that there was an order to the contrary but that if she stayed they would serve her as before and obey her in everything

At the moment when Rostóv and Ilyín were galloping along the road Princess Mary despite the dissuasions of Alpátych her nurse and the maids had given orders to harness and intended to start but when the cavalrymen were espied they were taken for Frenchmen the coachman ran away and the women in the house began to wail

Father! Benefactor! God has sent you exclaimed deeply moved voices as Rostóv passed through the anteroom

Princess Mary was sitting helpless and bewildered in the large sitting room when Rostóv was shown in She could not grasp I o l c

l

ed m as a man of her own class she glanced at him with her deep radiant look and began speaking in a voice that faltered and trembled with emotion This meeting immediately struck Rostov as a romantic event A helpless girl overwhelmed with grief left to the mercy of coarse rioting peasants And what a strange fate sent me here What gentleness and

nt t make me blu h pl ase don t thank

k

s
s
l
r

ory

Wh she h d t ke le e f h m and re- m d l ne h dde ly felt h eyes fill g w th tears d th n n t f the first t me th tra g q est n pre ented tself t her d d h l e h m?

O the r t f the w y to M s w th gh the p ces p t n w n t che f l on

w tl e p f m gled j y a ds rr w

W ll ppo g I d l h m? thought P M ry

A h m d he was f ck wl dg gt h r lf th t he h d f ll l w th m n who ld p h p v r l e he he omfo ted her elf w th th th ht tl t n o would e k w t d th t he w uld n t be to bl m f w th ut r p k g f t to ny he t d t th nd f her l fe to l e them w th wh m h h d f lle n love f th fi t dl t t m h l f

Som t mes wh sh ecalled h l ks his ymp thy d his w d h ppn s d d not pp mp bl t h It w t tho e mo- m t th t D yá h n t ed h m l g as l look d t f tl carr g w nd w

W t t f te th t b ght h m to B gu l á d t th t ery m me t? th ght Pri ss M ry A d th t c ed h t t f my b the ? A d ll th P es M ry w th h d f Pr d

Tl mp n th p e s m d on R s- ó w ery gr e bl To m mber l er ga e h mple e d wh h c m d l g f h d tu t B gu há ral

A w m m ght m rry l er br th brother l w l rs —Tr.

l ed l m on ha ng gone to look f r hay n l l a i g p cked upo eof the wealtl est heires es n Rus i he grew angry It made l m angry ju t beca use tl e idea of m rrying tl e gentl Pr n ess Mary wl o w s attracti e to him and h d a i e orm s f rtune had ag inst h s will m re th n once entered h s head For h mself personally N l las c uld not w sl for a better w f by m rrying her he w uld make tl e nn would be able to

about Princess B lkó skaya

CHAPTER XV

f l rm es Kutú ov

che on the ery d y a d t the very l t K t ov was e ew ng tl e troops f r the f rst t me H t pped in the v ll ge at the priest s h u e i f nt of wh h tood the comm nder

h ef's carr g d he at down on the ben h t the gate aw t g l s Se ene H h nes a e ry ne now called Kut v From the f eld beyo d the ll g came now sound of reg me tal mu a d now the r ar of many v es shout g H rrahl to the new com

Kut o b ce d of the fine weatl er A sh rt swarthy l e ten nt col nel of hussars w th th k mu t ches a d wh kers r de up to tl gate d gl c ng t Pr A d ew n q ed wl the h S ne H l e s w put t ng p there nd wh the l would so n be b k

P e And w epl ed th t he wa t on h s S H gh e st ff but w h mself a n w arr l Th l e t t col n l turned t m t rde ly wh w th the p cul ar co t mpt w th wh l c mm de n ch ef's o de ly pe ks t offic rs epl d

Wh t? H S H ghn ? I expect he ll be her oo Wh t do y u wa t?

Th l ute nt col l of hu rs m led be th h s must che at the o de ly s t ne d s mou ted ga h h rs t d p tch ru

d pp ch d B lkónsk w th l ght b w B lkó k made r m f h m on the bencl d the l eut nt l nel s t d wn bes d him.

tle walked to the front Dron on the contrary retired to the rear and the crowd drew closer together

Who is your Elder here? Hey? shouted Rostóv coming up to the crowd with quick steps

The Elder? What do you want with him? asked Karp

[illegible] the words were well out of his [illegible]

[illegible]

wrathful voice Where s the Elder? he cried furiously

The Elder He wants the Elder! Dron Zakhárych you! meek and flustered voices here and there were heard calling and caps began to come off their heads

We don t riot we re following the orders declared Karp and at that moment several voices began speaking together

It s as the old men have decided—there s too many of you giving orders

Arguing? Mutiny! Brigands! Traitors! cried Rostóv unmeaningly in a voice not his [illegible] Bind him [illegible] here was no [illegible] id Alpátych

Lavrushka however ran up to Karp and seized him by the arms from behind

Shall I call up our men from beyond the hill? he called out

Alpátych turned to the peasants and ordered two of them by name to come and bind Karp The men obediently came out of the crowd and began taking off their belts

Where s the Elder? demanded Rostóv in a loud voice

With a pale and frowning face Dron stepped out of the crowd

Are you the Elder? Bind him Lavrushka! shouted Rostov as if that order too could not possibly meet with any opposition

[illegible] two more peasants began b nd [illegible] and

[illegible]

And you all listen to [illegible] to the peasants Be off to your houses at once and don t let one of your voices be heard!

Why we ve not done any harm! We did it just out of foolishness It s all nonsense I said then that it was not in order voices were heard bickering with one another

"There! What did I say? said Alpátych coming into his own again It s wrong, lads!

All our stupidity Yákov Alp tych came the answers and the crowd began at once to disperse through the village

The two bound men were led off to the master s house The two drunken peasants followed them

Aye when I look at you! said one of them to Karp

How can one talk to the masters like that? What were you thinking of you fool? added the other— A real fool!

Two hours later the carts were standing in the courtyard of the Boguchárovo house The peasants were briskly carrying out the propri[illegible] goods and packing them on the carts and [illegible]

standing in the yard direct ng

Don t put it in so carelessly said one of the [illegible] tak [illegible]

that or shove it under the cord [illegible] rubbed? I don t like that way of doing things Let it all be done properly according to rule Look here put it under the bast matting and cover it with hay—that s the way!

Eh books books! said another peasant bringing out Prince Andrew s library cupboards Don t catch up against it! It s heavy [illegible] books

[illegible] play! [illegible] avely [illegible] ction [illegible] aries that were on the top

Unwilling to obtrude himself on the princess Rostóv did not go back to the house but [illegible] the village awaiting her depar[illegible]

[illegible]

from Boguchárovo to w[illegible] cu[illegible] pied by our troops At the inn at Yankóvo he respectfully took leave of her for the first time permitting himself to kiss her hand

How can you speak so! he blushingly replied to Princess M ry s expressions of gratitude for her deliverance as she termed what had occurred Any police officer would have done as much! If we had had only peasants to fight we should not have let the enemy come so far said he with a sense of shame and wishing to change the subject I am only happy to have had the opportunity of making your acquaintance Good by Princess I wish you happiness and consolation and hope to meet you again in happier circumstances If you don t

He sat heavily and swayed limply on h br k bit horse.

"Whew whew whew! he wh tled — n h vard. H s f ce

down nto th arms f th Cossacks a u j tants ho tood eady t ss th m.

He pulled him elf together looked rou d screwing up his eyes gl ced t Prince An drew and, ev d tly n t recogn g h m m ed with his w ddl ng ga t t th porch "Whew wh w whe he whistled, nd a glanced t Pri e A drew A oft n oc curs th ld men t wa o l fter som ec ds that th imp es n p od ed by Pr ce A drew s f ce l nked t elf up w th Kut zo s remembra f h person l ty

Ah h w do y u d my dea prince? H w d d m dea boy Com l sa d he gl ci g wea ly d, d he tepped o th po ch whu h creaked u de h we ght. H b t ed h oat and sat d wn on be ch th po ch.

A d h w y u f ther

I erei ed n ws f h death yesterday re pl ed Prin And w b ptly

K tuzo looked t h m w th yes w d ope with d may d th n took ff h cap d crossed himself

M y the ki gd m f Hea n be h God ill be do t u ll H ghed deeply h s whol chest h g d wa l t f whil I l ed him nd respe ed h m nd ymp thize w th y w th ll my heart.

He embra ed P A drew p ess g h m t his fat b ea t d f som t m d d n l t him go. Wh n h leased h m Pr e Andrew saw that Ku uz ll bbv l p we e trembl g and that tears w n h eyes. H ghed d p essed on the be ch w th both hands t raise himself.

Com ! Com w h m w ll ha talk, sa d h

B t that m m De so no m m dat d by his pe rs than bv the nemy cam th j l purs p th ps f th po ch, desp t h ry wl p rs f th d j ta ts who tried p h m Ku zov his h ds till pressed th seat, gla ced t him gl mly D so ha g g hi n m n d th t h h d mmu cat t his

Serene H hness a matter of great impo tan e f r th r country s welfa e Kut zo looked u l a

try welta e v n fsov blushed l ke a g l (t was strange to see the col r r s in that shaggy b bulous t m worn face) d boldly began to expound h pl n of cutt g the e emy s l nes of c mmuni cat n b tween Sm lénsk and Vyázm Deníso came from th e p rts nd knew the country well His pl n seemed de dedly a good one es- — of m t w th

u pleasant t emerge from it. And f om that hut, wh le D niso was peak ng a general w tl

g neral

Kut swayed h head, a mucl as to sav How o e m n t de l w th t ll d n list ned to De so

I gi e my w rd f ho o as Wuss n of ficer sa d D so that I can bweak Na poleon s l ne of commun cat o

"Wh t rel t n a you t I ten l t Gen eral Kirl Andrée ch D n so z ked K t terrupt ng h m

H is my u cle you Sewene H h ess.

Ah we were frie ds sa d Kutu ov heer fully All right ll right fri nd, stay h re t the taff nd tomorrow we ll ha talk

W th nod t De íso he t rned away d p t u th ha d f th p pers Ko o n n h d brought him.

Would n t your Seren H gh es l ke to come d ? said th general on duty n d s- contented e th pl ns must be exami ed d several p pers ha e t be s ned.

An djutant came t d ann u ced that everyth g was n read ess w th n B t Kut zo ev d ntly d d n t w h to e ter that room till h wa d nga d H m d gr m ce

tell them t bri mall tabl o t here my d ar boy I ll look t them h s d h Don t go w y h dded turi to Pri e A drew who em ed h po h

You're also waiting for the commander in chief? said he They say he weceives evewy one thank God! It's awful with those sausage eaters! Ermólov had weason to ask to be pwomoted to be a German! Now p'waps Wussians will get a look in As it was devil only knows what was happening We kept wetweating and wetweating Did you take part in the campaign? he asked

I had the pleasure replied Prince Andrew not only of taking part in the retreat but of losing in that retreat all I held dear—not to mention the estate and home of my birth—my father who died of grief I belong to the province of *Smolénsk*

Ah? You're Pwince Bolkónski? Vewy glad to make your acquaintance! I'm Lieutenant Colonel Denísov better known as Váska said Denísov pressing Prince Andrew's hand and looking into his face with a particularly kindly attention Yes I heard said he sympathetically and after a short pause added Yes it's Scythian warfare It's all vewy well —only not for those who get it in the neck So you are Pwince Andwew Bolkónski? He swayed his head Vewy pleased Pwince to make your acquaintance! he repeated again smiling sadly and he again pressed Prince Andrew's hand

Prince Andrew knew Denísov from what Natásha had told him of her first suitor This memory carried him sadly and sweetly back to those painful feelings of which he had not thought lately but which still found place in his soul Of late he had received so many new and very serious impressions—such as the retreat from Smolénsk his visit to Bald Hills and the recent news of his father's death—and had experienced so many emotions that for a long time past those memories had not entered his mind and now that they did they did not act on him with nearly their former strength For Denísov too the memories awakened by the name of Bolkónski belonged to a distant romantic past when after supper and after Natásha's singing he had proposed to a little girl of fifteen without realizing what he was doing He smiled at the recollection of that time and of his love for Natásha and passed at once to what now interested him passionately and exclusively This was a plan of campaign he had devised while serving at the outposts during the retreat He had proposed that plan to Barclay de Tolly and now wished to propose it to Kutúzov The plan was based on the fact that the French line of operation was too extended and it proposed that instead of or concurrently with action on the front to bar the advance of the French we should attack their line of communication He began explaining his plan to Prince Andrew

They can't hold all that line It's impossible. I will undertake to bweak thwough Give me five hundwed men and I will bweak the line that's certain! There's only one way—guewilla warfare!

Denísov rose and began gesticulating as he explained his plan to Bolkónski In the midst of his explanation shouts were heard from the army growing more incoherent and more diffused mingling with music and songs and coming from the field where the review was held Sounds of hoofs and shouts were nearing the village

He's coming! He's coming! shouted a Cossack standing at the gate

Bolkónski and Denísov moved to the gate at which a knot of soldiers (a guard of honor) was standing and they saw Kutúzov coming down the street mounted on a rather small sorrel horse A huge suite of generals rode behind him Barclay was riding almost beside him and a crowd of officers ran after and around them shouting Hurrah!

His adjutants galloped into the yard before him Kutúzov was impatiently urging on his horse which ambled smoothly under his weight and he raised his hand to his white Horse Guard's cap with a red band and no peak nodding his head continually When he came up to the guard of honor a fine set of Grenadiers mostly wearing decorations who were giving him the salute he looked at them silently and attentively for nearly a minute with the steady gaze of a commander and then turned to the crowd of generals and officers surrounding him Suddenly his face assumed a subtle expression he shrugged his shoulders with an air of perplexity

And with such fine fellows to retreat and retreat! Well good-by General he added and rode into the yard past Prince Andrew and Denísov

Hurrah! hurrah! hurrah! shouted those behind him

— 1

still the same He was wearing the white Horse Guard's cap and a military overcoat with a whip hanging over his shoulder by a thin strap

— h t I fear I
ce
1.
I
grow used t my eg me d of
he fficers and I f ncy the men als l ke me I
hould be sorry t le e th regiment. If I de-
d e the ho r f be ng w th you bel eve
me

A shrewd k dly yet s btly dern e expres-
lit up Kutú podgy f ce He cut Bol
kó k h rt.

I m sorry f r I e d y u But you re r ght
eded
n t
are I

the w ld b d ers s rveu t y u do.
I emembe y u t Aust rl t I remember
ves I em mbe y u w th tl e st nd rdl sa d
K t zo d a flush f pleasure uffused
Pr e Andrew s f t th coll ct on

T k g h ha d nd draw ng h m down
ards Kut offe ed h ch k t be k ssed
d ga Pr ce Andrew n t ced tears n the
ld m n s eyes Th ugh Pr n e And ew knew
that K túz v te rs came ly nd th t he
was p rt cul ly tende t d co d rate of
h h l

I

m ssed y t Bu har st but I needed so e-
et d And cl g g th ubj ct, Kutú
zo bega t peak f the Tu k h w d the
pea th t h d be co l ded. Yes I h e
bee m ch bl med l d both f th t
ar d th p but everyth came t
he right t m T t t à p t à l q
t tt d A d th w m y d rs
l er her h we t o eturn g t tle
ed

thro h w th that w E ry h haste
b m e ha te less p ed Káme k w ld
h b l t f he had n t d ed H
rmed f rtresses w th th ty th u d men
It t d ff cult t capt f rt es b t t s
d ff cult t w camp gn F that n t t rm
g d tt ck g b t p t d t m
wa ted. Kám k e t sold ers t Rustch k

E eryth g comes t m t h m wh kn
b w t wa

but I only employed these two th ngs and took
mo e fortres es than Kámenski and m de tl e
Turk eat horsefle h! He swayed l s head.
And the Fre ch sh ll too belie e me" He
went on grow ng warmer and beat ng h s
chest I ll make them eat horseflesh! And
tears ga n d mmed his eyes.

But shan t we h e to ccept battle? re-
r k P r And ew t.

to d ? he a ked e dently e pe b
swer 'Well wl t do you wa t us to d l e
repeated and h s eye sl one w tl a deep sl rewd
ont nue I
w ll tell
I d ute
—l e ar

t cul ted the F ench pro erb d i e t ly
'Well good by my dea fellow remember
— eart I h e ur sorrow a d

Good by my de boy

Aga n he embraced d k ssed Pri ce An
dr w but b fo e the latter had left tl e room
h

P n e And w could n t l ave explai ed
how o why t was, b t fter that nterv ew
w th Kut zo he went back to h reg me t re-
ssu ed s to the g eral course of aff rs d
s t the man to wh m t h d been e tru ted
Th m e h re l ed the bs ce of ll per

d draw n conclu ns) nly the cap c ty
calmly to co templ t th course of e ts—
th mo reassured he was that everyth ng
w ld b s t h uld H w ll n t b g in
y pl n of h own He w ll n t d use o un
dertak nyth g th ght P nce And ew
—

th g tr ger d m e mportant than h s

Don t see it th t way h th tro bl
When in d bt my d f ll w d n h g

times on glancing that way he noticed behind that door a plump rosy handsome woman in a pink dress with a lilac silk kerchief on her head holding a dish and evidently awaiting the entrance of the commander in chief Kutuzov s adjutant whispered to Prince Andrew that this was the wife of the priest whose home it was and that she intended to offer his Serene Highness bread and salt Her husband has welcomed his Serene Highness with the cross at the church and she intends to welcome him in the house She s very pretty added the adjutant with a smile At those words Kutuzov looked round He was listening to the general s report—which consisted chiefly of a criticism of the position at Tsárevo-Zaymíshche—as he had listened to Denísov and seven years previously had listened to the discussion at the Austerlitz council of war He evidently listened only because he had ears which though there was a piece of tow in one of them could not help hearing but it was evident that nothing the general could say would surprise or even interest him that he knew all that could be said beforehand and heard it all only because he had to as one has to listen to the chanting of a service of prayer All that Denísov had said was clever and to the point What the general was saying was even more clever and to the point but it was evident that Kutuzov despised knowledge and cleverness and knew of something else that would decide the matter—something independent of cleverness and knowledge Prince Andrew watched the commander in chief s face attentively and the only expression he could see there was one of boredom curiosity as to the meaning of the feminine whispering behind the door and a desire to observe propriety It was evident that Kutuzov despised cleverness and learning and even the patriotic feeling shown by Denísov but despised them not because of his own intellect feelings or knowledge—he did not try to display any of these—but because of something else He despised them because of his old age and experience of life The only instruction Kutuzov gave of his own accord dur

lating to the recovery of payment from army commanders for green oats mown down by the soldiers when landowners lodged petitions for compensation

After hearing the matter Kutuzov smacked his lips together and shook his head.

Into the stove into the fire with it! I tell you once for all my dear fellow said he into the fire with all such things! Let them cut the crops and burn wood to their hearts content I don t order it or allow it but I don t exact compensation either *One can t get on*

his head

CHAPTER XVI

"WELL, THA—

the last of

and smooth

neck he moved toward the door with a more cheerful expression

The priest s wife flushing rosy red caught up the dish she had after all not managed to present at the right moment though she had so long been preparing for it and with a low bow offered it to Kutuzov

He screwed up his eyes smiled lifted her chin with his hand and said

Ah what a beauty! Thank you sweetheart!

He took some gold pieces from his trouser pocket and put them on the dish for her

Well my dear and how are we getting on? he asked moving to the door of the room assigned to him The priest s wife smiled and with dimples in her rosy cheeks followed him into the room The adjutant came out to the porch and asked Prince Andrew to lunch with him Half an hour later Prince Andrew was

book which he closed as Prince Andrew entered marking the place with a knife Prince Andrew saw by the cover that it was *Les Chevaliers du Cygne* by Madame de Genlis

Well sit down sit down here Let s have a talk said Kutuzov It s sad very sad But remember my dear fellow that I am a father to you a second father

Prince Andrew told Kutuzov all he knew of his father s death and what he had seen at Bald Hills when he passed through it

What what they have brought us to Kutuzov suddenly cried in an agitated voice evidently picturing vividly to himself from

I sent for you to keep you with me

"Another forfeit for a Gallicism," said a Russian writer who was present. "What pleasure is there to be is not Russian!

"You spare no one," continued Jul e to the young man w thout heeding the author re-mark.

"For cruelty—I am guilty and will pay ... I am prepared to pay ... n for the pleas- ... the truth. F r Gallicisms I

...

Va no, she said to the militia officer ... ou won't catch me. Speak of the sun nd you see its rays!" and she smiled amiably t Pierre "W were just talking of you, she said with the fa- ... natural to society woman. "We were saying that your regiment would be sure to be bet er than M mónov s.

"Oh, don t talk t me of m regiment, re- p ed Pierre, kissing his hostess hand nd tak ing seat beside her I am so sick of t.

"You will, of course, command t yourself?" said Julie directing ly sarcastic gl ce to- ward the militia officer.

The latter n Pierre s presence had ceased to be caustic, and his face expressed perp exity as to what Julie smile might mean. In sp te of his absent mindedness d good n ture Pi- erre perso al ... checked n t ... t ... him to his face.

"No, sa d Pierre with l ughing lance t his b g, stout body I should make too good target f the French, bes des I am fraid I should hardl be bl climb onto horse

Among thos whom Jul guests happened to choose ... p bout were the Rost vs.

I hear tha their affairs are n a ery bad wa said Julie And h is so unreasonable, the cou himself I mean The Razumovskis ... to buy his house nd his estat near Moscow but it drags on and on. He sks too much.

No, I think the sal will come off n a few da s, sa d someone. "Though t is madness to buy ... in Moscow now

"Why?" asked Julie. "You don t think Mos- cow is in danger?"

"Then wh are you leaving?"

I What question I am going because well, because everyon is going and besides— I am not Joan f Arc o an Amazon.

"W ll, of course f course Let m have som more strips of linen.

If he manages the business prope ly he w ll be abl to pay off ll his debts, said the mil tia officer speak n of Rostov

A kindl old man but not up to much. And wh do they t on so long n Moscow? They meant to leave for the country long ago. Na tal e is qu te well ... n now isn t she Jul e asked P erre w th a knowing smile.

"They re wait g for their younger son Pierre replied. He j ned O lénsk s Cos- sacks and went to Belaya Tserkov where the regiment is being f rmed. But now they have had him transferred to my regiment and re expecting him every day Th count wanted to leave long ago, but the countess won t on a accou t lea e Moscow till her son returns."

"I met them th day before yesterda at the Arkhárovs N tal e has recovered her looks d is brigh er She sar a son H w easil som peo e get o er everyth g

"Get over what inquired Pierre looking displeased.

Julie smiled.

"You know Count, such kn hts as you are onl found n M dame d Souza s no els."

"What knights. What do you mean de- manded Pierre blushing

"Oh, come m dear count. *C'est la f bl d tout Moscou. J vous ... ma paro e d'ho neur!"*

F rfe t, forfeit cried th mil tia officer

"All right, one can t talk—how tiresome

"What is the talk of all Moscow?" Pierre asked angrily rising to his feet.

"Come now Count, you know

"I don t know nything bout it," sa d Pi- erre

"I know you were friendly with N tal e and so bu I was always more friendl with V ra —that dear Véra.

No, madame Pierre continued n ton of displeasure, I have not taken on myself the role of N talie Rost va knight at all, nd have not been to their house f r nearl mon h. But I cannot understand th cruelty

Qu excuse ... ccuse sa d Jul e smiling and wa ing the lint triumphantly nd to have th la t word she promptly changed th subject. Do you know what I heard toda Poor Mary Bolkónskaya arrived in Moscow yesterda Do you know that she has lost her father?"

"Really? Where is she. I should lik very

I is t talk f all Moscow My word I d sure ou.

Who excuses himself, accuses himself.

own will—the inevitable course of events and he can see them and grasp their significance and seeing that significance can refrain from meddling and renounce his personal wish directed to something else And above all thought Prince Andrew one believes in him because he s Russian despite the novel by Genlis and the French proverbs and because his voice shook when he said What they have brought us to! and had a sob in it when he said he would make them eat horseflesh!

On such feelings more or less dimly shared by all the unanimity and general approval were founded with which despite court influences the popular choice of Kutuzov as commander in chief was received

CHAPTER XVII

After the Emperor had left Moscow life flowed on there in its usual course and its course was so very usual that it was diff

t and that the members of the English Club were also sons of the Fatherland ready to sacrifice everything for it The one thing that recalled the patriotic fervor everyone had displayed during the Emperor s stay was the call for contributions of men and money a necessity that as soon as the promises had been made assumed a legal official form and became unavoidable

With the enemy s approach to Moscow the Moscovites view of their situation did not grow more serious but on the contrary became even more frivolous as always happens with people who see a great danger approaching At the approach of danger there are always two voices that speak with equal power in the human soul one very reasonably tells a man to consider the nature of the danger and the means of escaping it the other still more reasonably says that it is too depressing and painful to think of the danger since it is not in man s power to foresee everything and avert the general course of events and it is therefore better to di

society to the second So it was now with the inhabitants of Moscow It was long since people had been as gay in Moscow as that year

Rostopchin s broadsheets headed by woodcuts of a drink shop a potman and a Moscow burgher called Karpushka Chigirin who— *having been a militiaman and having had rather too much at the pub—heard that Napoleon wished to come to Moscow grew angry abused the French*

the drink sh

gle began t

were read and discussed together with the latest of Vasili Lvovich Pushkin s *bouts rimés*

In the corner room at the Club members gathered to read these broadsheets and some liked the way Karpushka jeered at the French saying *They will swell up with Russian cabbage burst with our buckwheat porridge and choke themselves with cabbage soup They are all dwarfs and one peasant woman will toss three*

like th

It was had expelled all Frenchmen and even all foreigners from Moscow and that there had been some spies and agents of Napoleon among them but this was told chiefly to introduce Rostopchin s witty remark on that occasion The foreigners were deported to Nizhni by boat and Rostopchin had said to them in French *Rentrez en vous-mêmes entrez dans la barque et n en faites pas une barque de Charon* There was talk of all the government offices having been already removed from Moscow and to this Shinshin s witticism was added—that for that alone Moscow ought to be grateful to Napoleon It was said that Mamonov s regiment would cost him eight hundred thousand rubles and that Bezukhov had spent even more on his but that the best thing about Bezukhov s action was that he himself was going to don a uniform and ride at the head of his regiment without charging anything for the show

Julie was preparing to leave Moscow next day and was giving a farewell soiree

Bezukhov est ridicule but he is so kind and good natured What pleasure is there to be so *caustique?*

A forfeit! cried a young man in militia uniform whom Julie called *mon chevalier* and who was going with her to Nizhni

In Julie s set as in many other circles in Moscow it had been agreed that they would

Think it over get nt the barq a d take care not to make it a b q e of Charon

This is wh t his cajolery has brought us to! Barbara I á t ld me the mob nea ly killed her because she sa d something n French.

Oh, b t t s so You t ke everyth ng so t heart, sa d P erre and began l y ng out h s cards f r patie ce.

Altho gh that pat en e d d come out P erre did not jo n the army but rem ed in desert ed M scow er the same t te of agit t on irresol ti n a d larm y t t the same t me jo f lly pect ng someth n terr ble

Next day toward e en ng the pri cess set off m h m

other crim nal thin and p le stood near Judg i g by the r faces they were both Frenchmen W th a f ghtened and suffering look resem bl g that on the th n Frenchman s face Pierre pushed h s way n through the crowd.

"Wh t is t? Who is t? What is it for? he kept asking

But the attent on of the crowd—official k nerr neas nts and women y cen e th t rose frowned hrugged h s sh ulders a u e dently try g to appear firm began to pull on his j ck

of p ty as it seemed to P rre.

He s cook to some p nce.

he

Th w rse everyth g became especi lly his own ffa rs the b tter wa P erre plea ed d th more ev de t was t that the catastrophe h expected was ppro h g H rdly any e he k ew as l ft n t wn J l e had go e nd so had Pr cess Mary Of h tumate f ds ly the Rostó s rem d b t he d d not go to see th m.

To d tract h th ghts he dro e th t d y t the ll ge f Vo ntsó o t ee th great balloo Lepp ch wa n truct to destr y th foe d tr l b lloon th t w o go up ext day The b lloo wa n t y t dy but P err learned th t t wa be g co tructed by the Emp des The Emp ro h d wr t ten t Cou t Rost pchi s f ll ws

As soo as Lepp ch is ready get together crew f reliabl d in ll gen men f his ca d end co rier t General K túzov t l h m k w I ha inf rmed h m f th m

Please impress pon Lepp ch be ry ca ful here h desce d f th first t m h t h m not m k m k d f ll t th enemy ha ds. I is essen l f h m to comb his m ve ments w th those f th comm der h ef

O h way h m from V ro tsó s he w s p ss g th Bolót oe Pl ce P rr e g l rg cr wd ro d th Lób e Pl ce t pped d got t f his trap A Fre ch cook cu ed f be g py was be g flogged The flogg g wa ly just o er d t e ecut ner wa re leas g from the floggi g bench t ut man w h ed wh kers, bl ock gs d gre j cket wh was m g p teously An

ple began to laugh thers cont nued to watch n d m y the e ecut oner who was u dress g the th r m n

P erre ch ked his f ce puckered, nd he turned h t ly away we t b ck to h trap mut ter g som th g t h mself he went and took h s eat. As they dro e lo g he shuddered nd excl med several times so a dibly that the coachm n asked h m

Wh t is yo plea re?"

"Whe e ar y u go g shouted P erre to the m n who was dri g to Lubyá ka Street.

"To the Go ern r s as y u rdered n swered the co chman

"Fool! Id tl sh ted P rre abus g h s co chman— th g h rarely d d. H me I told you A d dr f t r blockhead! I mu t get way th ery d y he murmu ed to h mself

At the ght f th t rtu ed F e chm n nd th cr wd rr d g the Lóbnoe Pl c P erre h d so defi t ly m d up h m nd th t he could n l ger rema n Moscow nd w ld leav f th rmy that very day th t t seemed t h m that either he h d told the coachman th s o th t the man ought to have kn wn t f h mself

On each g h me P erre ga e orders to Evstáfey—his head co chm n who kn w e ery thi g, could d nythi g and was known to all

much to see her said Pierre

I spent the evening with her yesterday She is going to their estate near Moscow either today or tomorrow morning with her nephew

Well and how is she? asked Pierre

She is well but sad But do you know who rescued her? It is quite a romance Nicholas Rostóv! She was surrounded and they wanted to kill her and had wounded some of her people He rushed in and saved her

Another romance said the militia officer

Do you know I really believe she is *un petit peu amoureuse du jeune homme*

Forfeit forfeit forfeit!

But how could one say that in Russian?

CHAPTER XVIII

When Pierre returned home he was handed two of Rostopchín s broadsheets that had been brought that day

The first declared that the report that Count Rostopchín had forbidden people to leave Moscow was false on the contrary he was glad that ladies and tradesmen s wives were leaving the city There will be less panic and less gossip ran the broadsheet but I will stake my life on it that that scoundrel will not enter Moscow These words showed Pierre clearly for the first time that the French would enter Moscow The second broadsheet stated that our headquarters were at Vyázma that Count Wittgenstein had defeated the French but that as many of the inhabitants of Moscow wished to be armed weapons were ready for them at the arsenal sabers pistols and muskets which could be had at a low price The tone of the proclamation was not as jocose as in the former Chigírin talks Pierre pondered over these broadsheets Evidently the terrible stormcloud he had desired with the whole strength of his soul but which yet aroused involuntary horror in him was drawing near

Shall I join the army and enter the service or wait? he asked himself for the hundredth time He took a pack of cards that lay on the table and began to lay them out for a game of patience

If this patience comes out he said to himself after shuffling the cards holding them in his hand and lifting his head if it comes out it means what does it mean?

He had not decided what it should mean when he heard the voice of the eldest princess

in! he added to the princess

Only the eldest princess the one with the stony face and long waist was still living in Pierre s house The two younger ones had both married

Excuse my coming to you cousin she said in a reproachful and agitated voice You know some decision must be come to What is going to happen? Everyone has left Moscow and the people are rioting How is it that we are staying on?

On the contrary things seem satisfactory *ma cousine* said Pierre in the bantering tone he habitually adopted toward her always feeling uncomfortable in the role of her benefactor

Satisfactory indeed! Very satisfactory! Barbara Ivánovna told me today how our troops are distinguishing themselves It certainly does them credit! And the people too are quite mutinous—they no longer obey even my maid has

day now so what are we waiting for? I ask just one thing of you cousin she went on arrange for me to be taken to Petersburg Whatever I may be I can t live under Bonaparte s rule

Oh come *ma cousine*! Where do you get your information from? On the contrary

I won t submit to your Napoleon! Others may if they please If you don t want to do this

But I will I ll give the order at once

d at not to

But you have been misinformed said Pierre Everything is quiet in the city and there is not the slightest danger See! I ve just been reading He showed her the broadsheet Count Rostopchín writes that he will stake his life on it that the enemy will not enter Moscow

Oh that count of yours! said the princess malevolently He is a hypocrite a rascal who has himself roused the people to riot Didn t he

A little bit in love with the young man

fthef es ght a d gen us of the generals who twenty fifth and th t those begun on the
nol f h t rv w re the most mnl t

fied th n ny other post? And wi y w re e
f rts exhaust d a d s x th us nd men sacri
ficed to defend t t ll late t n ght on the
twenty fourth? A Coss ck patrol would l e
suffi ed to observe the enemy Th rdly as proof
that the po t on on wh ch the b ttle wa
fo ght h d ot been f reseen and th t tle
She árd no Redoubt was n t an d anced post
of that pos t n we h ve the f ct that up to the
twenty fifth Ba l y de Tolly a d B grat on
w re con i ced that the She á d o Red ubt
wa the *left fl k* f th pos t on and that Ku

Borod d the pr ed g battle t e
di wer f ght, there lso xists a d fi te
and ell k w b t qu te f l e co ept n
All the h t rian descr b th ff r as follows
Th Russ rmy they say n t etr t
f m Smolé k s ght o t fo it lf the be t
po t f g l g g me t d fo d
uch p t o t B d ó
Th Russ they s y fort fi d th p si
t d c the left of th h gh d
(f om Mo ow t Sm l nsk) d lm t t
ght gl t t f m B d t Ut ts t
th ery pl ce wher th b ttl was f ght
f t fi d

p t d t k t d the tue ty th t
t k d th h l R ss my wh h was
p t th field f B d ó
So the his ries y d t s ll q te wro g
as y e h ca es t look t th m tt r
ca eas ly co h mself
Th Russ d d t eek ut th best po-
t b t, th co trary d ri g th et t
passed ma y p t b tte tha B od ó
They d d t t p t ny f thes p t n
beca se K d d t w h t ccupy po-
t h had t h ms lf cl en b cau th
pop lar dema d f b ttl h d t yet ex
p essed tself t gly ugh d b caus
M l ád ch had t y t arri ed w th the m
l u d f m y th re so Th f ct is
that ther pos t they h d p ssed wer
tro ger d th t th pos t n t B d ó
(the wh e he b ttl wa f ght) far fr m
be g tr w m *p t o* th y
ther pot m ght fi d n th Russ Em
p by t k g p them m p t hazard.
N t ly d d th R ss n t f t fy th po-
t th fi ld f B od ó t the left f
d t ght gl t th h ghro d (that
th pos t n wh ch th b ttl took pl)
b t ever t ll th tw ty fifth of A gust 8 2
d d they th k that b ttle m ght b f ght
ther This was h wn first by th f ct th t
there w en chm ts th by the

much l ter when eports on the b ttle of B r
od nó we e w tt n at leisure, th t the ncorrect
and e trao d n ry statement wa ented
(p b bly to ju t fy the m stakes of a com
m nde n h ef who h d to be represe ted s
nf ll ble) th t the Shevárd no Redo bt an
d d post—whe n eal ty t was s m
ply f rt fied po t on the l ft fl k— d th t
th b ttle of Bo od nó w s f gl t by u on an
entre ched pos t p e usly selected where
s t wa f ught on q te u expect d pot
wh ch wa lmost e tre hed.
The ca e was e de tly th a pos t on w
sel cted l g the ri r Kol há—wl cl crosses
the h gh d n t t r ght gle but t n
cut gle—so th t the left fl k was at She
á d the ght fl k ne the llag of Nó-
o d the ter t B od ó t th conflu
e e of th ri rs K lochá d Vóy a
T ny e wh looks t the field of Bo o-
d ó w tho t th k g f h w the b ttle w
tu lly f ght th s positio p t cted by th
ri er K l chá p ts tself ob ous f n
rmy wh se bj ct w t p t my
f m d ci g l g th Smolé k d to
M c w
N poleon riding to Valué o on th twenty
f rth d d t (as the hi t ry book say h
d d) th pos t n of th Russ ns from Utitsa
to B d ó (h uld n th e n th t po-
ti n b cause t d d n t xist) d d he see
n dva d post of th Ru n army but
wh le pursu ng th Russ n reargua d he cam
upon th l ft fl k f the Ru n po t n—t
the Shevárd n Red ubt— nd u pectedly

Moscow—that he would leave that night for the army at Mozháysk and that his saddle horses should be sent ! ~ Th
be arrangec
tation Pier
next day to allow time for the relay horses to be sent on in advance

On the twenty fourth the weather cleared up after a spell of rain and after dinner Pierre left Moscow When changing horses that night in Perkhushkovo he learned that there had been a great battle that evening (This was the battle of Shevárdino) He was told that there in Perkhushkovo the earth trembled from the firing but nobody could answer his questions as to who had won At dawn next day Pierre was approaching Mozháysk

Every house in Mozháysk had soldiers quartered in it and at the hostel where Pierre was met by his groom and coachman there was no room to be had It was full of officers

Everywhere in Mozháysk and beyond it troops were stationed or on the march Cossacks foot and horse soldiers wagons caissons and cannon were everywhere Pierre pushed forward as fast as he could and the farther he left Moscow behind and the deeper he plunged into that sea of troops the more was he overcome by restless agitation and a new and joyful feel ng he h l ~ ~
was a
Slobó
sense of the necessity of undertaking something and sacrificing something He now experienced a glad consciousness that everything that constitutes men s happiness—the comforts of life wealth even life itself—is rubbish it is pleasant to throw away compared with something With what? Pierre could not say and he did not try to determine for whom and for what he felt such particular delight in sacrificing everything He was not occupied with the question of what to sacrifice for the fact of sacrificing in itself afforded him a new and joyous sensation

CHAPTER XIX

On the twenty fourth of August the battle of the Shevárdino Redoubt was fought on the twenty fifth not a shot was fired by either side and on the twenty sixth the battle of Borodinó itself took place

Why and how were the battles of Shevárdino and Borodinó given and accepted? Why was the battle of Borodinó fought? There was not the least sense in it for either the French or the Russians Its immediate result for the Russians was and was bound to be that we were brought nearer to the destruction of Moscow—which we feared more than anything in the world and for the French its immediate result was that they were brought nearer to the destruction of their whole army—which they feared more than anything in the world What the result must be was quite obvious and yet Napoleon offered and Kutuzov accepted that battle

If the commanders had been guided by reason it would seem that it must have been obvious to Napoleon that by advancing thirteen hundred miles and giving battle with a probability of losing a quarter of his army he was advancing to certain destruction and it must have been equally clear to Kutuzov that by accepting battle and risking the loss of a quarter of his army he would certainly lose Moscow For Kutuzov this was mathematically clear as it ! r ~ ~

my opponent has sixteen men and I have fourteen I am only one eighth weaker than he but when I have exchanged thirteen more men he will be three times as strong as I am

Before the battle of Borodinó our strength in proportion to the French was about as five to six but after that battle it was little more than one to two previously we had a hundred thousand against a hundred and twenty thousand afterwards little more than fifty thousand against a hundred thousand Yet the shrewd and experienced Kutuzov accepted the battle while Napoleon who was said to be a com m n l of ~ ~ ~

to end the campa gn by occupying Moscow as he had ended a previous campaign by occupying Vienna there is much evidence to the contrary Napoleon s historians themselves tell us that from Smolénsk onwards he wished to stop knew the danger of his extended position and knew that the occupation of Moscow would not be the end of the campaign for he had seen at Smolénsk the state in which Russian towns were left to him and had not received a single reply to his repeated announcements of his wish to negotiate

In giving and accept ng battle at Borodinó Kutuzov acted involuntarily and irrationally But later on to fit what had occurred the historians provided cunningly devised evidence

which th road ran. The sunsh ne from beh d
energy nto the cutti g nd

ing p to t, placed tone u uei s
treless hind wheels, a d began rranging the
breech-ba d o his l ttle horse.

One f the wounded, an old soldier with a bandaged arm who was following th cart on foot, caught hold f t with his sound hand and turned to look t P erre.

"I say fell w countryman! Will they set us down here r take us n to Moscow he asked.

Pierre was so deep in tho ght that he d d not hear th q estion H wa look ng now t th cavalry regiment that had m t the con oy of wounded, w t the cart by which he was standing, in wh ch two wounded men were sittin d ne was lyi g O e of those tt g p in the cart had p babl been wounded in t cheek. His whol head was wrapped in rags d cheek was swollen to th size of a baby head. His nose nd mouth were twisted to o e de. This soldie was looki g t the cathedral and cross g himself. Another ou lad, fair ha ed ecruit wh te as though here was no blood in his thin face looked t P erre kindly with fixed sm le. The third lay pron so that his fa e was not isible. The cavalry si gers were passi g close by

Ah lost q lost is my head so k en
Livi g in foreign land

they sang th ir soldiers dance song

As if respo din t them but w th different sort f merrime t, the metallic sound of the bells reverbera ed high bo d th hot rays f th su bathed th p of the ppos t l pe w th nother sort of merriment. B t beneath th sl pe, by th cart w th the wounded near th panti g l ttl n g where P erre stood, wa damp somber nd sad.

The soldier with th sw llen cheek looked gril th cavalry ngers.

Oh, the co combs h muttered reproachfully

I not th soldiers onl but I seen peasants today too. The peasa ts—even they ha to go said the sold er behind th cart, ddressi g P erre w th sad smile. "No distinctions mad nowadays. They wa t th whol natio to fall on them—in word, s Moscow They want to mak an end of t.

In p te of the obscurity of the sold er s words P erre understood what he wanted to say and nodded ppro al.

The road wa clear aga n P erre descen ded the hill and dro e on

He kept look n to either s de of the ro d fo f m liar f ces, but nly saw everywhere tl e unf miliar f ces of arious m l tary men of d fferent bra ches of the ser ce who all looked w th aston shment at h s wh te hat and green ta l coat.

H ng gone nearly three m les he at la t met n acqua ntance a d eagerly addressed him. This was one of the head army doctors. H was dri g t ward P erre n a co ered g s tt g bes d you g urgeon d o i reco n zi g P erre he told the Cossack wl o occup ed the dri er seat to pull up

Count Y ur e cell ncy how come you to be her " sked the docto

"Well you know I wanted to see

"Yes, yes, there w ll be someth ng to see. "

P erre got out d talked to the doct r ex pla n ng his ntention of tak g part n a bat tle.

Th doct r dvised h m t apply d rect to Kutuzo

"Why should you be God knows where out of sight duri g th battle he sa d, exchang ing glances with his you g con p n on Any how his Seren H gh ess kn ws you d will ece e you graciously That s what you must do.

Th doct seemed tired a d n hurry

"You think so Ah I lso wanted to ask you where our pos t on is exactly sa d P erre.

"Th pos t o repeated the doct "Well, that not my l e. Dri e past T tari ova I t f diggin is going n there. Go up th hillock d you ll see.

Can ne see from there? If you would

But th doctor interrupted h m d m ed toward his gi

I would go w th you but on my honor I m up to her — nd he po nted o his throat. I m gallop g t the commander of th corps. How do matters tand? Y u know Cou t, there'll be battl t morrow Out of n arm of hu dred thousa d we must expect t least tw ty thousand wounded, d w ha en t tr chers, or bunks, o dressers, o doct rs en u h f ex thousand. We ha t n thousand carts but we need other things as w ll—w must man e as best w can!

Th trange thou ht that of the thousands

for the Russians moved his army across the Kolochá And the Russians not having time to begin a general engagement withdrew their left wing from the position they had intended to occupy and took up a new position which had not been foreseen and was not fortified By crossing to the other side of the Kolochá to the left of the highroad Napoleon shifted the whole forthcoming battle from right to left (looking from the Russian side) and transferred it to the plain between Utítsa Semenovsk and Borodinó—a plain no more advantageous as a position than any other plain in Russia—and there the whole battle of the twenty sixth of August took pl c

ut hidden out on l

n ne

(ad begun the attack next morning no one would have doubted that the Shevárdino Redoubt was the left flank of our position and the battle would have taken place where we expected it In that case we should probably have defended the Shevárdino Redoubt—our left flank—still more obstinately We should have attacked Napoleon in the center or on the right and the engagement would have taken place on the twenty fifth in the position we intended and had fortified But as the attack on our left flank took place in the evening after the retreat of our rearguard (that is immediately after the fight at Gridneva) and as the Russian commanders did not wish or were not in time to begin a general engagement then on the evening of the twenty fourth the first and chief action of the battle of Borodinó was already lost on the twenty fourth and obviously led to the loss of the one fought on the twenty sixth

After the loss of the Shevárdino Redoubt we found ourselves on the morning of the twenty fifth without a position for our left flank and were forced to bend it back and hastily entrench it where it chanced to be

Not only was the Russian army on the twenty sixth defended by weak unfinished entrenchments but the disadvantage of that position was increased by the fact that the Russian commanders—not having fully realized what had happened namely the loss of our position on the left flank and the shifting of the whole field of the forthcoming battle from right to left—maintained their extended position from the village of Nóvoe to Utítsa and consequently had to move their forces from right to left during the battle So it happened that throughout the whole battle the Russians opposed the entire French army launched against our left flank with but half as many men (Po ski s ac on right fl distinct u course of the battle) So the battle of Borodinó did not take place at all as (in an effort to conceal our commanders mistakes even at the cost of diminishing the glory due to the Russian army and people) it has been described The battle of Borodinó was not fought on a chosen and entrenched position with forces only slightly weaker than those of the enemy but as a result of h loss of h s fought almost ly half c u l sav d ly cu s ve result but unthinkable to keep an army even from complete disintegration and flight

CHAPTER XX

ON THE MORNING of the twenty fifth Pierre was leaving Mozháysk At the descent of the high steep hill down which a winding road led out of the town past the cathedral on the right where a service was being held and the bells were ringing Pierre got out of his vel l l n n

(c t the day before The peasant drivers shouting and lashing their horses kept crossing from side to side The carts in each of which three or four wounded soldiers were lying or sitting jolted over the stones that had been thrown on the steep incline to make it something like a road The wounded bandaged with rags with pale cheeks compressed lips and knitted brows held on to the sides of the carts as they were jolted against one another Almost all of them stared with naive childlike curiosity at Pierre's white hat and green swallow tail coat.

Pierre's coachman shouted angrily at the convoy of wounded to keep to one side of the road The cavalry regiment as it descended the hill with its singers surrounded Pierre's carriage and blocked the road Pierre stopped being pressed against the side of the cutting in

h ch the road ran The sunshin from behind the hill did not pe etrate int the cutting and there t was cold d damp but bove P erre s head was the bri ht August sunsh ne nd the bells sounded merrily O e of the carts w th wou ded topped by the s de of the road close to P erre. The driver in his ba t hoes ran pant in p to t, placed st ne under o e of its tireless hi d wheels, nd began arranging the breech-ba d on his l ttle horse.

O f the wou ded, n old soldie w th a bandaged arm who was foll wing the cart on foot, ca ght hold f t with his sou d hand nd turned t look t P erre

I say fell w countryman! Will they set us down here or tak us on to Moscow?" he a ked.

P err was so deep th ught that h d d not hear th questio H wa look g now at the cavalry regim t that h d met the con oy of wounded, now t th cart by which he was standi g, wh ch two wounded men were ttin d was ly ng O of those tt g up the cart had probably been wounded in th cheek. His whole head was wrapped in rags d e cheek was w llen to th ze of baby head. His nose nd m uth were twisted to e ide. This soldie was looki g at the cathedral d cross g hims lf. An ther a o g l d, fa ha red recru t as wh te as tho gh th re was no blood n h s thin f ce looked t P rr kindly w th fixed sm le. Th third lay prone so that his f ce was n t ble. The cavalry gers were p ss g close by

Ah! t q t lost is my h d k en
Lon g f gn land

they san the soldiers da e so g

A f respo d them but w h differ t sort f merrim nt th m tall sou d of th bells reverberated h gh bo nd th h t rays f th b thed the t p f th oppos t l pe th t an ther sort f merriment. But beeath th l p by th ca t with th w unded ea the p t g l t len g wh re P erre stood, t was damp somber d sad.

Th soldier w th tl woll n cheek looked grily t the cavalry gers.

Oh, th co combs! he muttered reproach f lly

It t th soldiers nly b t I e seen peas is oday oo Th peasa ts—e n they ha to go sa d th sold er beh d th cart dd ess g P rr w th sad m le. No distu ct m d wad ys Th y wa t the whole t f ll n them— n w rd, t s Moscow! They w t t m ke end of t.

In p te of the obscurity of tl e sold er s words P erre understood what he wa ted to say nd nodded appro al.

The road was clear ga n P erre descended the hill nd dro e on

He kept look ng to e ther s de of the road fo f m l r f ces, but only saw e erywhere tl e unfamil ar faces of ari us m l tary men of diffe ent branches of the serv ce who all looked w th astonishment at h s wl te hat and green ta l co t.

H g gone nearly th ee m les he t l t m t n cqua tance and e gerly ddressed

l

the dri er s eat to p ll up

Count Your xcellency how come you to be here?" asked th doctor

"W ll you know I wanted to see

"Yes yes there w ll be somethi g to see

P erre got out nd talked to the doct r ex pl n ng hi ntent on of tak ng p rt in a b t tle.

The docto ad ised h m to apply d rect to Kutuz

"Why should you be God knows where out of sigl t duri g the battle? he sa d, exchang ing gl nces w th hi young compan on. A y h w his Ser e H ghness k ws you and w ll rece e y u graciously That s what you must d

Th doct r seemed ti ed and n hurry

"You th k so? Ah I lso wa ted to ask y u where ur pos ti n is exa tly? said P erre.

"The pos t peated th doct r Well that s not my l ne Dri p t T tarinova l t of diggi g is going on th re Go up th hill ock d y u ll ee.

Can e ee from th re? If you would

But th doct terrupted h m a d m ed t ward his gi

I w uld go w th you but on my hon I m p t her — nd he pointed to his throat. I m gall p g t the comm der of tl corps. H w do matt rs ta d Y u k ow Count, there ll be battl t m rrow O t of n rmy of hun dred thousa d w must e pect at l ast twenty th us nd w unded d w ha en t stretch rs o bunks, dressers, or doctors en gh f r six th usa d. We ha e t n th usa d carts but we need ther thi gs as well—w must man as best we can!

The stra ge tl ou ht that of th thousands

of men young and old who had stared with merry surprise at his hat (perhaps the very men he had noticed) twenty thousand were inevitably doomed to wounds and death amazed Pierre

They may die tomorrow why are they thinking of anything but death? And by some latent sequence of thought the descent of the Mozháysk hill the carts with the wounded the ringing bells the slanting rays of the sun and the songs of the cavalrymen vividly recurred to his mind

The cavalry ride to battle and meet the wounded and do not for a moment think of what awaits them but pass by winking at the wounded Yet from among these men twenty thousand are doomed to d e and they wonder at my hat! Strange! thought Pierre continuing his way to Tatárinova

In front of a landowner s house to the left of the road stood carriages wagons and crowds of orderlies and sentinels The commander in chief was putting up there but just when Pierre arrived he was not in and hardly any of the staff were there—they had go

t ne saw for the first time peasant militiamen in their white shirts and with crosses on their caps who talking and laughing loudly animated and perspiring were at work on a huge knoll overgrown with grass to the right of the road

Some of them were digging others were wheeling barrowloads of earth along planks while other stood about doing nothing

Two officers were standing on the knoll directing the men On seeing these peasants who were evidently still amused by the novelty of their position as soldiers Pierre once more thought of the wounded men at Mozháysk and understood what the soldier had meant when he said They want the whole nation to fall on them The sight of these bearded peasants at work on the battlefield with their queer clumsy boots and perspiring necks and their shirts opening from the left toward the middle unfastened exposing their sunburned collar bones impressed Pierre more strongly with the solemnity and importance of the moment than anything he had yet seen or heard

CHAPTER XXI

Pierre stepped out of his carriage and passing the toiling militiamen ascended the knoll from which according to the doctor the battlefield could be seen

It was about eleven o clock The sun shone somewhat to the left and beh

rarefied atmosphere

From above on the left bisecting that amphitheater wound the *Smolénsk* highroad passing through a village with a white church some five hundred paces in front of the knoll and below it This was Borodinó Below the village the road crossed the river by a bridge and winding down and up rose higher and higher to the village of Valuevo visible about four miles away where Napoleon was then stationed Beyond Valuevo the road disappeared into a yellowing forest on the horizon Far in the distance in that birch and fir forest to the right of the road the cross and belfry of the Kolochá Monastery gleamed in the sun Here and there over the whole of that blue expanse to right and left of the forest and the road smoking campfires could be seen and indefinite masses of troops—ours and the enemy s The ground to the right—along the course of the Kolochá and Moskvá rivers—was broken and hilly Between the hollows the villages of Bezzubova and Zakhárino showed in the distance On the left the ground was more level there were fields of grain and the smoking ruins of emenovsk which had been burned down could be seen

All that Pierre saw was so indefinite that neither the left nor the right side of the field fully satisfied his expectations Nowhere could he see the battlefield he had expected to find but only fields meadows troops woods the smoke of campfires villages mounds and streams and try as he would he could descry no military position in this place which teemed with life nor could he even distinguish our troops from the enemy s

I must ask someone who knows he thought and addressed an officer who was looking with curiosity at his huge unmilitary figure

May I ask you said Pierre what village that is in front?

Burdino isn t it? said the officer turning to his companion

Borodinó the other corrected him

The officer evidently glad of an opportunity for a talk moved up to Pierre

Are those our men there? Pierre inquired.

Yes and there further on are the French said the officer "There they are there you can see them

"Where Wh e? ked P erre
O e ca e them w th the n k d eye
Why the el
The ffi er po ted w th h s h nd to the m k ble th left bey nd th e nd the me (rn and se u e p es n th t P erre h d n t ced n m ny of tl e fac he had r t h face

e?
e

Ah urs! A d there? e t t d t the k ll n the d t nc w th b g t ee n t e ll g th t l y n a holl w wh r lso some campfires were m k g nd someth g bl k w bl

That J ga s d the offi er (It w s ster

th
smil f sat f t I can t ll y q clea
l ll ou en

the ll g f t of th m w e ch h Th t wh cro ses th K l há Y e d wn the e whe th w of h y a e ly g th h ll w the e th b dge Th t e t O ght fl nk e th —l e po ted h r ply t th ght f w y n the b ke gr u d— Tl t s wh e the M k á R d e h th w up th d ubts th ery t g nes The lef fl k h e th ffi p u d W ll y u e th t d ffic lt t pl Y t d y u left fl k the t Sl á d y u e whe the k b t w w h w thdrawn u left g— w t he d y u tl t l l ge d tl m k ? Th t S m k yes h e l po ed t R é k kn ll But the b tl w ll h dly be th e *Hu* h g m d h troop tl ts ly h w ll p b bly pas ro d tl ght f the Mosk á But h er t m y b m y m n w ll be m g t m rr w! h ma ked

A ld ly g t wl h d pp ch d th ffi er wh l he was g g tl e pl t had w t d l f l m fi h p k g b t this po t d tly n t l k g the ff er em k t rr pt d h m

G b m t be nt f sa d h tern ly

The ffi e pp d bashed th ugh he d rstood th m ght th nk f h w m y

men would be m ssing tomorrow but o ght not to speak of t.

W ell send number three comp ny aga n the off cer repl d hurr edly

And you re y u one of the doctors?

No I ecome n myo n answered Pierre d he went d wn the l ill aga n p s ng tl e m l t men

Oh those d mned fell ws! muttered the off er wh l ll wed l m hold g h s nose as he ran p st the men at w rk

The e they are br nging her om g The e they e Tl ey ll be here in a n ute es we e s ddenly heard say ng and fficers sold ers nd m l t men began run f rw rd along tl e r ad.

h b ll

rms e er ed F m bel nd tl u d f chu ch g g

Sold ers nd m l t am n ran b r l eaded p st P rre t va d tl p cess on

They a e b g ng he ou Protectress The Ibe n M ther f God! s me n cried

Th Sm lé k M the f G d an th r correct d h m

The m l t men both th e wh l d b e n th lla e d tl e wl h d been t wo k on the b ttery th ew down the r p des and Fall

bow d t the gr nd

At th umm t of th h ll th y t pp d w th tl e co th men wh h d b n h ld n t up by the l b d att ched t t we e rel e d by oth rs th cl t rs lt the c ers a d rs bega The hot ray f the un beat d nt d

n

himself (he was evidently a German) patiently awaited the end of the service which he considered it necessary to hear to the end probably to arouse the patriotism of the Russian people Another general stood in a martial pose crossing himself by shaking his hand in front of his chest while looking about him Standing among the crowd of peasants Pierre recognized several acquaintances among these notables but did not look at them—his whole ... was absorbed ... on the faces ... men who we ... As soon as th ... u chanters who were singing the service for the twentieth time that day began lazily and mechanic ... from ... and ... The ... nce as to an inviolable bulwark and protection there again kindled in all those faces the same expression of consciousness of the solemnity of the impending moment that Pierre had seen on the faces at the foot of the hill at Mozháysk and momentarily on many and many faces he had met that morning and heads were bowed more frequently and hair tossed back and sighs and the sound men made as they crossed themselves were heard

The crowd round the icon suddenly parted and pressed against Pierre Someone a very important personage judging by the haste with which way was made for him was approaching the icon

It was Kutuzov who had been riding round the position and on his way back to Tatárinova had stopped where the service was being held Pierre recognized him at once by his peculiar figure which distinguished him from everybody else

W ...

t ... walked with ... swaying gait into the crowd and stopped behind the priest He crossed himself with an accustomed movement ... touched th ... his white ... zov was B ... the presence of the commander in chief who attracted the attention of all the superior officers the militiamen and soldiers continued their prayers without looking at him

When the service was over Kutuzov stepped up to the icon sank heavily to his knees bowed to the ground and for a long time tried vainly to rise but could not do so on account of his weakness and weight His white head twitched with the effort At last he rose kissed the icon as a child does with naively pouting lips and again bowed till he touched the ground with his hand The other generals followed his example then the officers and after them with excited faces pressing on one another crowding panting and pushing scrambled the soldiers and militiamen

CHAPTER XXII

Staggering amid the crush Pierre looked about him

Count Peter Kirílovich! How did you get here? said a voice

Pierre looked round Borís Drubetskóy brushing his knees with his hand (he had probably soiled them when he too had knelt before the icon) came up to him smiling Borís was elegantly dressed with a slightly martial touch appropriate to a campaign He wore a long coat and like Kutuzov had a whip slung across his shoulder

A ...

... one Coss ... to fetch ... rug An ... ed him

The icon was carried further accompanied by the throng Pierre stopped some thirty paces from Kutuzov talking to Borís

He explained his wish to be present at the battle and to see the position

This is what you must do said Borís I will do the honors of the camp to you You will see everything best from where Count Bennigsen will be I am in attendance on him you know I'll mention it to him But if you want to ride round the position come along with us. We are just going to the left flank Then when we get back do spend the night with me and we'll arrange a game of cards Of course you know Dmítri Sergéevich? Those are his quarters and he pointed to the third house in the village of G rki

But I should like to see the right flank They say it's very strong said Pierre I should like to start from the Moskvá River and ride round the whole position

Well you can do that later but the chief thing is the left flank

Yes yes But where is Prince Bolkónski's regiment? Can you point it out to me?

"Prin e A drew s? We sh ll pass t and I ll and tl e group gathered r und h m.

A K t z v I gl

h m zov s

I m.

his Se ne H h ess w uld t but someo e persuaded h m You ee K vsá

str g

Th h K t h d d sm ssed ll un e es-

t da c co d ed y ng Pr n Drubet sk(y luabl m n

I tl h h comma d therewer twosharp-

K w ld b destroy d nd the pow p sst B gs en f K túz w n the battle t w uld be felt th t eryth g as

It was D

"How did th t fellow get here?" asked P erre.

"H s a creature that wriggles n anywl ere! was the n wer "He l as be n degraded y u kn w N w he wa ts to bob up aga n He s been pr po g some scheme o other nd has crawled i to the enemy p cket l ne at n ght. He s a bra e fellow"

P erre took off his hat and bowed respectfully to K tu ov

"I co cluded that if I reported to your Se re e H hness you m ght se d m away or say that you knew wh t I wa reporti g but th n I h uldn t lose nyth ng" Dól kho was saying

"Yes yes."

"B t if I were r ght I should be render ng serv e to my F therland for which I am ready t d e"

"Yes yes."

"And sh uld your Serene H ghness requ re a m n who w ll not pare h k n please think of me Perhaps I may p o e useful to y ur Se e H ghness"

"Yes Yes" Kut zov repeated, his l gh g ey n rr w g m e and mo e as l e looked at P erre

Just then Bo f w th his court erl k ad t nes tepped up to P err s de near Kut zov nd n a most n tural m nner without ra ng h e sa d t P erre as though continu n n nterrupt d n ers t n

"Th mil t h e put clean wh t sh rts

Af K y ár th rs whom P erre kn w cam p t h m d h had t tim t reply t ll th q est bout M w that w e ho d po h m to l t n to ll tha wa t ld h m Th f ces ll pessed m t n d pp he b t em d to P erre tl t th cause f th ement h wn n some f these f es lay ch fly n questi ns of perso l ess h m d h were wa occup d by h d ff t exp es he w n other f es — exp ess that poke t f p rsonal m t rs but f th u ersal q est f l fe d d h K t ced P err figure

thos w ds nd so t was.

"Wh t e you say g bout the m l t a?" he asked B f

"Pr p f r tom rrow y r Sere e H gh ness—f r death—they ha e put on clean sh rts"

"Ah w de f l m tchless people!" d Kut and he closed h eyes d swayed h s head "A m tchless people!" he epeat d w th gh

"So you w nt to smell gu powd r?" h sa d t P erre "Yes t pleasant sm ll I h e the h t be o e f y w f d r rs I l w ll? My q arters t yo serv ce

And as often happens with old people Kutuzov began looking about absent mindedly as if forgetting all he wanted to say or do

Then evidently remembering what he wanted he beckoned to Andrew Kaysárov his adjutant s brother

Those verses those verses of Márin s how do they go eh? Those he wrote about Gerákov Lectures for the corps inditing Recite them recite them! said he evidently preparing to laugh

Kaysárov recited Kutuzov smilingly nodded his head to the rhythm of the verses

When Pierre had left Kutuzov Dólokhov came up to him and took his hand

I am very glad to meet you here Count he said aloud regardless of the presence of strangers and in a particularly resolute and solemn tone On the eve of a day when God alone knows who of us is fated to survive I am glad of this opportunity to tell you that I regret the misunderstandings that occurred between us and should wish you not to have any ill feeling for me I beg you to forgive me

Pierre looked at Dolokhov with a smile not knowing what to say to him With tears in his eyes Dólokhov embraced Pierre and kissed him

Boris said a few words to his general and Count Bennigsen turned to Pierre and proposed that he should ride with him along the line

It will interest you said he

Yes very much replied Pierre

Half an hour later Kutuzov left for Tatárinova and Bennigsen and his suite with Pierre among them set out on their ride along the line

CHAPTER XXIII

From Górki Bennigsen descended the high road to the bridge which when they had looked at it from the hill the officer had pointed out as being the center of our position and where rows of fragrant new mown hay lay by the riverside They rode across that bridge into the village of Borodinó and thence turned to the left passing an enormous number of troops and guns and came to a high knoll where militiamen were digging This was the redoubt, as yet unnamed which afterwards became known as the Raévski Redoubt or the Knoll Battery but Pierre paid no special attention to it He did not know that it would become more memorable to him than any other spot on the plain of Borodinó

They then crossed the hollow to Semenovsk where the soldiers were dragging aw ... h ... t lo ... f ... de ... an ... , following a track freshly made by the artillery over the furrows of the plowed land and reached some *flèches* which were still being d ... lo ... wh ... the day before and where several horsemen could be descried The officers said that either Napoleon or Murat was there and they all gazed eagerly at this little group of horsemen Pierre also looked at them trying to guess which of the scarcely discernible figures was Napoleon At last those mounted men rode away from the mound and disappeared

Bennigsen spoke to a general who approached him and began explaining the whole position of our troops Pierre listened to him straining each faculty to understand the essential points of the impending battle but was mortified to feel that his mental capacity was inadequate for the task He could make nothing of it Bennigsen stopped speaking and noticing that Pierre was listening suddenly said to him

I don t think this interests you?

On the contrary it s very interesting! replied Pierre not quite truthfull ... r ... lef ... lo ... wood In the middle of the wood a brown hare with white feet sprang out and scared by the tramp of the many horses grew so confused that it leaped along the road in front of them for some time arousing general attention and laughter and only when several voices shouted at it did it dart to one side and disappear in the thicket After going through the wood for about a mile and a half they came out on a glade where troops of Tuchkov s corps were stationed to defend the left flank

Here at the extreme left flank Bennigsen

S N Márin an ... le camp to Alex ... der I was well kn wn f ... pa odies an ... mu ng verses G V Gerákov wa a captain in the army a teacher in the mil tary school a ... the auth ... of numerous patriotic works of very poor quality Márin s verse about him w

You w ll l ... g on u ting
And t d all ... d bo
L ct es f ... ll co p d ng—
Be a capt n ne ... e

—T

A ... l fe tre l m t—L. Tolstoy

talked great deal and w th much heat, and as it seemed to Pierre, ga e orders of great mil tary importa ce. In front of Tuchk s troops was som hi h ground n t occup ed by troops. Bennigsen lou l criticized this m t ke say in tha t was mad ess to lea e a he ht wh ch commanded th country arou d u occup ed and to place troops below t. Som of the gen erals exp essed the same opinion. On n par ticular declared w th martial heat that they were p t there t be sla htered. B n gsen n h wn uthority dered the troops to occu-

py

opinio but for that ery reason h couldn t understa d h w the man who p t them there behind the hill could ha made so gross nd palpabl blund r

P erre did not k w th t thes troops were not, as Be gsen upposed, put there t de fend the pos ti b t w e n conc aled po sitio as mbush that they hould not be seen d m ht be ble t trike n pproachi g enem expectedly B n gs n d d n t know this nd mo ed th troops f rward ccord ng to his n deas with ut mentio g th mat ter to the comma der in chi f.

CHAPTER XXIV

ON TH T BRI HT EVEN G of August Princ Andrew lay lean g n his elbow n b ken down shed n th ll g f Knya kó o t the further end f h regim t campm t. Th ugh gap in th b ken wall h could see bes d th wood n f n row f th rty ear-old birches w th th l wer bra hes lopped ff fi ld n which shocks of oats were stand g d som bushes nea wh ch rose th smok f campfires—the sold rs k ch ns. Narr w d b rd som d useless t ny h l f w seemed to him, Pri An drew th ev f battl f lt gita ed d ir tabl h had d n sev n years bef re t Aus erl tz.

H had ec ed d gi en th rders f ext da ha l d had n thi g mo to do. I t h ho gh s—h mplest clearest, d heref most rr bl tho ghts—would g him no pea H k ew tha tom rr w b l uld be th most errbl f ll h had tak part d f th first t me n his l fe th pos sib l f death p ese ed ts lf to him— t

n relation to ny worldly matter or w th ref erence to ts effect on thers but s mply n re lat on to h mself to his own soul— dly pl nly terribly and lmost s a certa nt And from the he ht of th s percept on ll that had p ev ously t rmented f preoccup ed h m suddenly became llum ned by a cold wh te l ght w thout shad ws w thout perspecti e and w th utdist nction foutl ne All l feappeared to h m l ke mag c l tern p ctures t wl ch he had long been gaz n b rt f ci l l ht through a glass. N w h sudd nly saw those b dly daubed p ctures n clear day l ht and w thout gl ss. "Yes yes There they are those f l e mages that gitated, enraptured a d t rmented me said he to h mself pass ng n rev ew the princi pal p ctures of the magic l ntern of l fe a d rega d g them n w n the cold wh t dayl ght of his lea percept on of death. "There they are those rudely p nted figures th t once seemed splend d and myster us. Glory the good f society l e f woman the Fatherl nd tself—h w mportant these p ctures ppeared to me w th what profound mean g they seemed t be filled And t all so mple p l nd crude n the cold wh te l ght f this morn ng which I feel is d wn o f r me The three great sorrows f h l f held h attent n n part cul r h l e f a woman his f th r death a d th French in as on wh ch had o er run half Russ Lo e that l ttle girl who seemed to me brimm g o e w th my t c fo ces Yes, deed, I lo ed her I mad roma t c pl ns of l e d happ ess w th her! Oh what a boy I was! he sa d l d b tterly Al m I bel eved n som deal lo e which was to keep her f thful t m fo the wh l yea of my bsence Like th gentle d n the f ble she was t p e part from me B t t was much mpler really It was all ery mpl nd horrible.

"Wh n m f ther built Bald Hills he thou ht th plac wa his his l nd hi his peasants. B t N poleon cam d swept him de un-

ed Th F therl d the destru ti n of Mos cow And t morrow I hall be killed, perh ps not e n by Fre chman but by one of our own men by sold er discharging musket lose m ear as o of them d d yesterday d th F ch w ll come nd tak me by h d

and heels and fling me into a hole that I may not stink under their noses and new conditions of life will arise which will seem quite ordinary to others and about which I shall know nothing I shall not exist

He looked at the row of birches shining in the sunshine with their motionless green and yellow foliage and white bark To die to be killed tomorrow That I should not exist That all this should still be but no me

And the birches with their light and shade the curly clouds the smoke of the campfires and all that was around him changed and seemed terrible and menacing A cold shiver ran down his spine He rose quickly went out of the shed and began to walk about

After he had returned voices were heard outside the shed Who s that? he cried

The red nosed Captain Timókhin formerly Dólokhov s squadron commander but now from lack of officers a battalion commander shyly entered the shed followed by an adjutant and the regimental paymaster

Prince Andrew rose hastily listened to the business they had come about gave them some further instructions and was about to dismiss them when he heard a familiar lisping voice behind the shed

Devil take it! said the voice of a man stumbling over something

Prince Andrew looked out of the [illegible] saw Pi[illegible]

[illegible] ice Andrew to meet people of his own set in general and Pierre especially for he reminded him of all the painful moments of his last visit to Moscow

You? What a surprise! said he What brings you here? This is unexpected!

As he said this his eyes and face expressed more than coldness—they expressed hostility which Pierre noticed at once He had approached the shed full of animation but on seeing Prince Andrew s face he felt constrained and ill at ease

I have come simply you know come it interests me said Pierre who had so often that day senselessly repeated that word interesting I wish to see the battle

Oh yes and what do the Masonic brothers say about war? How would they stop it? said Prince Andrew sarcastically Well and how s Moscow? And my people? Have they reached Moscow at last? he asked seriously

Yes they have. Julie Drubetskáya told me so I went to see them but missed them They have gone to your estate near Moscow

CHAPTER XXV

THE OFFICERS were about to take leave but Prince Andrew apparently reluctant to be left alone with his friend asked them to stay and have tea Seats were brought in and so was the tea The officers gazed with surprise at Pierre s huge stout figure and listened to his talk of Moscow and the position of our army round which he had ridden Prince Andrew remained silent and his expression was so forbidding that Pierre addressed his remarks chiefly to Timókhin the good natured battalion commander

So you understand the whole position of our troops? Prince Andrew interrupted him

Yes—that is how do you mean? said Pierre Not being a military man I can t say I have understood it fully but I understand the general position

Well then you know more than anyone else be it who it may said Prince Andrew

Oh! said Pierre looking over his spectacles in perplexity at Prince Andrew Well and what do you think of Kutuzov s appointment? he asked

I was very glad of his appointment that s all I know replied Prince Andrew

And tell me your opinion of Barclay de Tolly In Moscow they are saying heaven knows what about him What do you think of him?

Ask them replied Prince Andrew indicating the officers

Pierre looked at Timókhin with the condescendingly interrogative sm[illegible]

Why so? asked Pierre

Well to mention only firewood and fodder let me inform you Why when we were retreating from Sventsyán we dare not touch a st[illegible]k or a wisp of hay or anything You see we were going away so he would get it all [illegible] your excellency [illegible] again Timókhin turned to the prince But we daren t In our regiment two officers were cou[illegible]

Then why was it forbidden?

Timókh looked about n confu on not know g h t r h w to an wer such ques- tio P rre p t the same que t on to Pr ce A drew

"Wly so s ot to l y w ste the cou try we h d g t the emy sa d Pr nce

outfl k as they h d larg r l co ld not derst d th cr ed Pr n e An drew t hr ll c th t seemed t escape l m l ta ly he could n t underst nd first t me e were f ht ng

that u ess h d ncre ed u st e gu H de ed us t et e t d ll ou ff ts d losses we t f n th g H had no th ght f betray g us h t ed t do the b st h co ld he th gl t ut e eryth g a d th t is hy he su t bl He un u t ble n w just beca he pl ute e rytl ry th r ghly d ccurat ly s ery G rm n h s to How I e pl ? W ll y y u f tl r h Germ l t nd l pl d d let a d sat sfies you f tl equ m ts better th y could then t ll r ght to let h m serve B t I y f ther m rt lly k y u ll se d th l t way d ttend t y r f the d h d

co ld ers her d b pl d d n er but soo he d ge sh n d ne of h wnk B t y u Cl b th y h be m k h m t trat l Th y l de h m as tra t d th ly res lt w ll be th t fter ard h med f th f l cu t n they

ejo ed P err

I d t d rst d wh t mea t by k ll f l comm der pl ed P e Andrew cally

A k ll f l comm d ? epl ed P erre "Why e wh f es es ll o t ge ces d f es es th d rsary t

B t that s mpos bl d P ce A drew as f w m t e tled l g go

P err looked t h m rp e

And yet they say that war is l ke a game of chess he rem rked

Yes repl d Pr ce Andrew but w th tl s l ttle d ff rence that in chess you may tl k o r each m e as l ng as you please and are n t l m t d f r t me and w th th s d fferenc too that k ght s al ways str nger tl an a p wn n l t w p w s r e l ays stronger than one wl l n wa a b tt l on is sometimes str er th n a di n d somet mes we ker than a comp ny The relat e strength of bod es of troop can never be known to a y e Bel e e me h we t on f t ngs de pe ded o rrangement made by tl e t ff I hould be there mak ng arrangements but n st d f that I I a e th h nor to serve l ere in the reg me t w th these gentlemen and I con

eq pment or e e on numbers a u ca t f all on pos t o

But on what th ?

O the f l g tl at is in me a d h m he p nted t T m kh n an l n each sold er

Pr ce Andrew glan ed at T mókl n who looked at h s commande n al rm and bew l derment. In co trast t h f rme ret cent tac tur ty P ce A dr now seemed exc ted. H uld pp ently tr fra f om e p ess g the tho ghts tl at l d udd nly occurred to h m

A b ttle w n by those who firmly resol e t w n tl Why d d we lo e the b ttle t Au ter l tz? Tl e F cl losses we e almost equ l to o rs b t ry early we sa d to urs l es th t w were los g the b ttl nd w d d los it And we d so becau w h d n th g to f l t f r th e w wa t d to get away fr m the b ttle fi ld soon as we ould We e l t so l t us u d w ran If h d not d tl t t ll the e en g l n k ws h t m ght n t h h ppe d. But t m rrow we shan t y tl Y u talk bout u pos t o the left fl k we k d th r ht fl k too tended he w t on "Th t s ll e tl er s n th of tl k d B t wh t aw ts t m rr w? A h dred m ll n m t d l ances wh ch w ll b d ded th t t by tl fa t tl t u e th rs ru o do ot run nd th t th m o tl t m n k lle l b t ll th t b g d e t pe s t ly pl y Th f t s th t thos men w th wh m u h e r dden r u d tl po t n t nly d t h lp m t t rs but h der They nly concer ed w th th w p tty terests

At such a moment? said Pierre reproachfully

At such a moment! Prince Andrew repeated To them it is only a moment affording opportunities to undermine a rival and obtain an extra cross or ribbon For me tomorrow means this a Russian army of a hundred thousand and a French army of a hundred thousand have met to fight and the I ~

~

you like I will tell you that whatever happens and whatever muddles those at the top may make we shall win tomorrow s battle Tomorrow happen what may we shall win!

There now your excellency! That s the truth the real truth said Timókhin Who would spare himself now? The soldiers in my battalion believe me wouldn t drink their vodka! It s not the day for that! they say

All were silent The officers rose Prince Andrew went out of the shed with them giving final orders to the adjutant After they had gone Pierre approached Prince Andrew and was about to start a conversation v h n h I I ~

o zogen and C usen itz accompanied by a Cossack They rode close by continuing to converse and Prince Andrew involuntarily heard these words

Der Krieg muss in Raum verlegt werden Der Ansicht kann ich nicht genug Preis geben said one of them

Oh ja said the other *der Zweck ist nur den Feind zu schwachen so kann man gewiss nicht den Verlust der Privat Personen in Achtung nehmen*

Oh no agreed the other

Extend widely! said Prince Andrew with an angry snort when they had ridden past In that extend were my father son and sister at Bald Hills That s all the same to him! That s what I was saying to you—those German gentlemen won t win the battle tomorrow but will only make all the mess they can because they have nothing in their German heads but theories not worth an empty eggshell and haven t in their hearts the one thing needed tomorrow—that which Timókhin has They have yielded up all Europe *to him* and have now come to teach us Fine teachers! and again his voice grew shrill

So you think we shall win tomorrow s battle? asked Pierre

Yes yes answered Prince Andrew absently One thing I would do if I had the power he began again I would not take prisoners. Why take prisoners? It s chivalry! The French have destroyed my home and are on their way to destroy Moscow they have outraged and are outraging me every moment They m me I ~ so t sho v ut ut since they are my foes they cannot be my friends whatever may have been said at Tilsit

Yes yes muttered Pierre looking with shining eyes at Prince Andrew I quite agree with you!

The question that had perturbed Pierre on the Mozháysk hill and all that day now seemed to him quite clear and completely solved He now understood the whole meaning and importance of this war and of the impending battle All he had seen that day all the significant and stern expressions on the faces he had seen in passing were lit up for him by a new light He understood that latent heat (as they say in physics) of patriotism which w n I

g heartedly

Not take prisoners Prince Andrew continued That by itself would quite change the whole war and make it less cruel As it is we have played at war—that s what s vile! We play at magnanimity and all that stuff Such magnanimity and sensibility are like the magnanimity and sensibility of a lady who faints when she sees a calf being killed she is so kind hearted that she can t look at blood I u en n s e ~

t , t u fortunate an I so on It s all rubbish! I say chivalry and flags of truce in 1805 they humbugged us and we humbugged them They plunder other peoples houses issue false paper money and worst of all they kill my children and my father and then talk of rules of war and magnanimity to foes! Take no prisoners but kill and be killed! He who has come to this as I have through the same sufferings

Prince Andrew who had thought it was all

'The war must be extended widely I cannot sufficiently commend that view

Oh yes the only aim is to weaken the enemy so of course one cannot take into account the loss of private individuals

the sam to him whether o n t Mo cow was take Smolén k h d been w s sudde ly checked his p ch by an u expe ted cramp in his thro t. H p ced up and d wn few times n silenc b t h eyes gl tte ed fe er h ly d his l ps q ered he began pe k ng

If th e wa e I th s magn n m ty n war e sh uld go t war nly when t wa orth whil go g t c rt n death, s now Then ther wo ld t be war because Paul I i ch had offended M ch l I ánov ch A d when ther was war l ke th on it o ld be wa A d then the determ n t on of th troops w uld be qu t diffe ent. Then ll these *We s phal ans d Hess n wh m* N poleo is lead g w ld ot f llow h m nto Russia nd w sh ld t g to fight n Austria d Pruss w thout kn w n why W r ot rtesy b t the most h rrible th g n life d we u ht t u dersta d th t d n t play at wa We ght t cc pt this t rr ble ecess ty ternly d er ously It all l es n that get d of f l ehood nd l t wa b w r wa th f o

ess w f e? Wh t are th h b ts of th mil tary? Th m f war mu d th m thods f war are py g treach ry nd the en coura em t th ru of untry s h b t n n th

th highest ewa ds

'They meet, w hall me t tom rr w to murd th they k ll d m m t f th usa ds d th h h k g g ers es f h g killed so ma y peopl (they exagg ra the number) nd they ct ry ppo g th t them e people they h k lled th gr e the ch e men H w does God bo e look t them d h them e cl m d Pr A dew n shr ll p ci g e Ah my f nd th f la becom h d f m t l e. I e th t I ha begu t u dersta d too much A d t does t d for m taste f the tr f k wl edge f good d e l Ah well t t f lo g! h dd d.

'Howe er you re leepy and it s t me f r me to sleep Go back to Górki! s id Prince And ew suddenly

Oh n ! P erre repl ed look ng at Prince Andre th frightened compa s nate eyes.

Go go B f re a b ttle one m t h e one s sleep out, repe ted P nce Andrew

He came qu kly up to P erre nd embraced and k ssed h m

Good by be off he sh uted 'Whether we meet ga n o not and turn n way hurr edly l e ente ed the shed.

It was al eady dark d P erre could n t make out whether the express on of Pr nce *Andrew s l ce wa angry or tender*

For some time l e stood in l nce co de ng wl eth r he h uld f ll w h m o go away N he d es n t wa t t P erre c cl ded And I k w that th s our la t n eet g! H s ghed deeply nd rode b k to Go k

On e ente g the shed Prince And ew l y down on ru but he could not sleep

He closed his eyes One p cture ceeded a the t h s m g nat n O o e of t em he dwelt l g nd joyfully He dly ecalled an h m ted

ry t

eally had u d rstood ll she wanted t say But N tá h w not satisfi d th her own word h felt that th y did n t n ey the pas n t ly poet c feel g he h d e pe ed th t day d w hed t con y H w k

n t only und rstood her but t was ju t that n p tual fo ce th t ce ty that fra k ness f ul—th t ry so l of he h ch eemed t b fette ed by h body— t w th t

ything f the sort H nly I pretty nd f e h y u g girl w th wh m I d d

not deign to unite his fate And I? and he is still alive and gay!

Prince Andrew jumped up as if someone had burned him and again began pacing up and down in front of the shed

CHAPTER XXVI

ON AUGUST 25 the eve of the battle of Borodino M de Beausset prefect of the French Emperor s palace arrived at Napoleon s quarters at Valuevo with Colonel Fabvier the former from Paris and the latter from Madrid

Donning his court uniform M de Beausset ordered a box he had brought for the Emperor to be carried before him and entered the first compartment of Napoleon s

g

F

the tent remained at the entrance talking to some generals of his acquaintance

The Emperor Napoleon had not yet left his bedroom and was finishing his toilet Slightly snorting and grunting he presented now his back and now his plump hairy chest to the brush with which his valet was rubbing him down Another valet with his finger over the mouth of a bottle was sprinkling Eau de Cologne on the Emperor s pampered body with an expression which seemed to say that he alone knew where and how much Eau de Cologne should be sprinkled Napoleon s short hair was wet and matted on the forehead but his face though puffy and yellow expressed physical satisfaction Go on harder go on! he muttered to the valet who was rubbing him slightly twitching and grunting An aide de camp who had entered the bedroom to report to the Emperor the number of prisoners taken in yesterday s action was standing by the door after delivering his message awaiting permission to withdraw Napoleon frowning looked at him from under his brows

No prisoners! said he repeating the aide de camp s words They are forcing us to exterminate them So much the worse for the Russian army Go on harder harder! he muttered hunching his back and presenting his fat shoulders

All right Let Monsieur de Beausset enter and Fabvier too he said nodding to the aide de camp

Yes sire and the aide de camp disappeared through the door of the tent

Two valets rapidly dressed His Majesty and wearing the blue uniform of the Guards he went with firm quick steps to the reception room

De Beausset s hands meanwhile were busily engaged arranging the present he had brought from the Empress on two chairs directly in front of the entrance But Napoleo dressed an pidity that the surpris

Napoleon noticed at once what they were about and guessed that they were not ready He did not wish to deprive them of ure of not him to what Fabvier told him of the heroism and devotion of his troops fighting at Salamanca at the other end of Europe with but one thought—to be worthy of their Emperor—and but one fear—to fail to please him The result of that battle had been deplorable Napoleon made ironic remarks during Fabvier s account as if he had not expected that matters could go otherwise in his absence

I must make up for that in Moscow said Napoleon I ll see you later he added and summoned de Beausset who

bowed low with that courtly French bow which only the old retainers of the Bourbons knew how to mak

p

en

You have hurried here I am very glad Well what is Paris saying? he asked suddenly changing his former stern expression for a most cordial tone

Sire all Paris regrets your absence replied de Beausset as was proper

But though Napoleon knew that de Beausset had to say something of this kind and though in his lucid moments he knew it was untrue he was pleased to hear it from him Again he honored him by touching his ear

I am very sorry to have made you travel so far said he

Sire I expected nothing less than to find you at the gates of Moscow replied de Beausset

Napoleon smiled and lifting his head absentmindedly glanced to the right An aide-de-camp approached with gliding steps and offered him a gold snuffbox which he took

Yes it has happened luckily for you" he

sa d, rais g the ope snuffbox to h s nose. Y ar f nd of tra l nd n three d ys you ill see M w You sur ly d d not expect to see th t A at c cap tal Y u w ll ha e pleas- a t jo rney

De Bea sset bowed gratef lly t th s egard f r h ta te f r tra l (of wh ch l e had not ull th be awa)

Ha, what th ? ked Nap leon n t g that all the co rt rs we e look ng t some- th g co al d under cloth.

W th courtly dro tness de Be usset h lf t ed d w th t turn ng h s b ck to the Empero ret red tw tep tw tch g off th cl th t th sam time d d

A prese t to Y ur M jesty from the Em p ess.

It was portrait, p ted n b ght colors by Gérard, f the so bo e t N poleon by th da hter f th Empero of Au tri the boy h m f som easo e ery e called Th k g f R me

A ry p tty cu ly he ded boy w th look

h ther h d sc pt

Th gh w t clea wh t t l e rtist meant t exp ess b d p ct g th so-call d K g of R m p k g th ea th w th t k th lle- gory pp re tly m d o N poleon as t had d t ll wh h d seen t n P ri qu te

W th th ural cap ty f n Ital n f r cha m th exp ess f h f t w ll he drew ea t he po trat d ss med look f p t d ries. He f lt th t what h sa d d d d w uld b h t cal and t seemed t h m that t w ld n w be best f him— hose gra d u bl d h s t pl y k d b ll w th th t rrest l gl be—t ! tra th t gra de th m ples p rn l d ess H yes grew d m l m ed f rward gl ed ro nd t h r (h ch seemed pl ts lf d h m) nd sat do b f re th portra t At gle ges f m h m ev ry w t o t ptoe lea g th gr t ma t l m lf nd h emo- t

H g sat ll f wh le he t l ed—l m self t k w w ly—th h k pot f p t ep ese g h l hest l ht the portra t, rose d ecall d d Beausse d tl offi r on duty He ordered the portra t to be carried outs de his tent that the Old Guard stat oned round t m ght not be dep ed of the pleas- ure of see the ki g of Rome the son and he of their ad red mon rch

And wh le he was do ng M de Be usset tl e hono of b eakf t g w th h m they heard as

l'Empereu came tl ose ecstat c cr es

After breakf st N poleon in de Beausset s prese e d ctated his order of the day to the army

Sh t and energet he rem rked when l e had ead o r the proclamat n wh ch he had dictated tra ght off w thout correct o s. It ran

Sold ers This is th battl y h so l ged f V t ry depends n y It is essential f us t w ll gi us all w eed comf tabl q rters d peedy t rn t co try B h as y d d t Austerl tz Friedl d V l tsk d Smo- lénsk Let m test poster ty recall y ch ev ments this day w th p d Let t be sa d f ea l f y H was th great ba l bef Moscow

Bef e Moscow! epe ted Napoleon and n t g M d B us t who was so fo d of tra el to ccomp y h m on h r de h went out of the t nt to whe e th horses tood sad dled.

Y ur M jesty took nd! repl ed de Beaus- t t the n tat n t accomp y the Emper or he wanted t leep d d n t know h to d nd was fra d f do g so

But N poleon n dded t the tra eler a d de Beausset had to mount. Wh n N poleon cam out of the tent th h t of the Gua ds bef re l sons portra t grew t ll louder N poleo frown d

Take h m w y! he sa d po nt g w th a grac f lly m jest c gestu e to the po tra t. It too soo f h m t ee a f eld f b ttle

D Beauss t l ed h eyes bowed h s he d, d gl ed d eply t d cate h w prof u dly he al ed d comprehe d d the Emperor's w ds

CHAPTER XXVII

O n n n ı n o Au ust so h h to- ri t ll us N poleon sp t the wh l d y on h rs b k pect g th local t on der g pl ns s bm tted t h m b h m rsh l d perso lly g commands to h gen rals.

The original line of the Russian forces along the river Kolochá had been dislocated by the capture of the Shevárdino Redoubt on the twenty fourth and part of the line—the left flank—had been drawn back That part of the line was not entrenched and in front of it the ground was more open and level than elsewhere It was evident to anyone military or not that it was here the French should attack It would seem that not much consideration was needed to reach this conclusion nor any particular care or trouble on the part of the Emperor and his marshals nor was there any need of that special and supreme quality called genius that people are so apt to ascribe to Napoleon yet the historians who described the event later and the men who then surrounded Napoleon and he himself thought otherwise

x

the

no , o or shook his head dubiously and without communicating to the generals around him the profound course of ideas which guided his decisions merely gave them his final conclusions in the form of commands Having listened to a suggestion f om Davou l ~

to turr

it shou c w thout exp laining why not To a proposal made by C n C i

s

t u J ke of Elchingen (Ney) ventured to remark that a movement through the woods was dangerous and might disorder the division

Having inspected the country opposite the Shevárd no Redoubt Napoleon pondered a little in s lence and then indicated the spots where two batteries should be set up by the morrow to act against the Russian entrenchments and the places where in line with them the field artillery should be placed

After giving these and other commands he returned to his tent and the dispositions for the battle were written down from his dictation

These dispositions of wl ich the French historians write with enthusiasm and other historians with profound respect were as follows

At lawn tl e two n w l att ies est ll l l l r i g tl e n ht n the pl in occupi l l y tl l n e lt kmchl w ll open f e on tl e two opposi g l tte es of the enemy

At the same t me the comm nder of tl e a til lery of the 1st Corps General Pernetti with thirty cannon of Campan s division an l all tl e howitzers of Dessaix s and Friant s lwi i n will move f r ward open f re and overwhelm with sl ellf re the enemy s l attery against which will operate

24 guns of the artillery of the Guards
30 guns of Campan s livis n
and 8 guns of Friant s and Des aix s livisi ns

in all 62 guns

The comman ler of the artillery of the 3rd Corps General Fouché will place the howitzers of the 3r l an l 8th Corps sixteen in all on the fla ks of tl e l attery tl at is to boml ar l the entren h ment on the left v l ich will have f rty guns in all lirected aga n t it

General Sorl ier mi st l e rea ly at the f rst r ler to advance with all the howitzers of tl e Gr ar ls artillery against eitl er one or other of tl e en tren hments

Di ring the cannona le Pr nce Poniat w ki is t a lvance tl ough the v ood on the village an l t rn the enemy s posit on

General Campan will move thr ugl tl e wood to seize tl e f rst f rtification

After tl a lvance has l egun in tl is manner or lers will l e g en in accordance with tl e en emy s movements

The cann nade on the l ft flank will beg as soon as tl e guns of tl e r gl t wing are l ear l The sharpshooters of Mo an l s division n l of the v ce K ng livis on will open a heavy f re on see ing tl e att k comr en e on tl e right w ng

The vice King will occi py the village an l cro s by its three bridges a l an ing to the a ne he ght as Moran l s an l Gérard s d vi ions wl icl t n l r l is leadersl ip all l e li ect l agai s t tl e red t l t an l ome into l ne w tl the rest of tl f ces

All tl i mi st l e l ne i g oto l r (l t t s f ve o d et méthod) as fa s po il le se ta i ng troops in reserve

The Imp r l Camp near Mo háysk
Septeml er 6 1812

These dispositions which are very obscure and confused if one allows oneself to regard the arrangements without religious awe f his genius related to Napoleon s orders to deal with four points—four different r lers Not one of these was or coul l l e carried ut

In the disp osition it i sa d f rst *tl at tl e b t ter e place l on tl e spot cl o n by N p ol on witl tl e guns of Pe netti an l l ou l u l l u ere to come in line u tl tl em i 2 gu s i all u re to open f re an l l ow l lls o tl Ru sian flèches and redoubt* Tl s could n it

M rat —Tr

Tl e late of thi Fren l procl i t n l N w Styl n l co respon l to A g t 2 Ol l Styl —Tr

e done, as from the spots selected by Napoleon the projectiles did not carry to the Russian works, and those 102 guns shot into the air until the nearest commander, contrary to Napoleon's instructions, moved them forward.

The second order was that *Poniatowski, moving to the village through the wood, should turn the Russian left flank.* This could not be done and was not done, because Poniatowski, advancing on the village through the wood, met Tuchkov there barring his way, and could not and did not turn the Russian position.

The third order was *General Compans will move through the wood to seize the first fortification.* General Campan's division did not seize the first fortification but was driven back, for on emerging from the wood it had to reform under grapeshot, of which Napoleon was unaware.

The fourth order was *The Vice-King will occupy the village (Borodino) and cross by its three bridges, advancing to the same heights as Morand's and Gérard's divisions* (for whose movements no directions are given), *which under his leadership will be directed against the redoubt and come into line with the other forces.*

As far as one can make out, not so much from this unintelligible sentence as from the attempts the Vice-King made to execute the orders given him, he was to advance from the left through Borodino to the redoubt while the divisions of Morand and Gérard were to advance simultaneously from the front.

All this, like the other parts of the disposition, was not and could not be executed. After passing through Borodino the Vice-King was driven back to the Kolocha and could get no farther while the divisions of Morand and Gérard did not take the redoubt but were driven back, and the redoubt was only taken at the end of the battle by the cavalry (a thing probably unforeseen and not heard of by Napoleon). So not one of the orders in the disposition was, or could be, executed. But in the disposition it is said that, *after the fight has commenced, orders will be given in accordance with the enemy's movements,* and so it might be supposed that all necessary arrangements would be made by Napoleon during the battle. But this was not and could not be done, for during the whole battle Napoleon was so far away that, as appeared later, he could not know the course of the battle and not one of his orders during the fight could be executed.

CHAPTER XXVIII

MANY HISTORIANS SAY that the French did not win the battle of Borodinó because Napoleon had a cold, and that if he had not had a cold the orders he gave before and during the battle would have been still more full of genius and Russia would have been lost and the face of the world have been changed. To historians who believe that Russia was shaped by the will of one man—Peter the Great—and that France from a republic became an empire and French armies went to Russia at the will of one man—Napoleon—to say that Russia remained a power because Napoleon had a bad cold on the twenty-fourth of August may seem logical and convincing.

If it had depended on Napoleon's will to fight or not to fight the battle of Borodinó, and if this or that other arrangement depended on his will, then evidently a cold affecting the manifestation of his will might have saved Russia, and consequently the valet who omitted to bring Napoleon his waterproof boots on the twenty-fourth would have been the savior of Russia. Along that line of thought such a deduction is indubitable, as indubitable as the deduction Voltaire made in jest (without knowing what he was jesting at) when he saw that the Massacre of St. Bartholomew was due to Charles IX's stomach being deranged. But to men who do not admit that Russia was formed by the will of one man, Peter I, or that the French Empire was formed and the war with Russia begun by the will of one man, Napoleon, that argument seems not merely untrue and irrational, but contrary to all human reality. To the question of what causes historic events another answer presents itself, namely, that the course of human events is predetermined from on high—depends on the coincidence of the wills of all who take part in the events, and that Napoleon's influence on the course of these events is purely external and fictitious.

Strange as at first glance it may seem to suppose that the Massacre of St. Bartholomew was not due to Charles IX's will, though he gave the order for it and thought it was done as a result of that order; and strange as it may seem to suppose that the slaughter of eighty thousand men at Borodinó was not due to Napoleon's will, though he ordered the commencement and conduct of the battle and thought it was done because he ordered it; strange as these suppositions appear, yet human dignity—which tells me that each of us is, if not more

The original line of the Russian forces along the river Kolochá had been dislocated by the capture of the Shevárdino Redoubt on the twenty fourth and part of the line—the left flank—had been drawn back That part of the line was not entrenched and in front of it the ground was more open and level than else where It was evident to anyone military or not that it was here the French should attack It would seem that not much consideration was needed to reach this conclusion nor any particular care or trouble on the part of the Emperor and his marshals nor was there any need of that special and supreme quality called genius that people are so apt to ascribe to Napoleon yet the historians who described the event later and the men who then sur rounded Napoleon and he himself thought otherwise

Napoleon rode over the plain and surveyed the locality with a profound air and in silence nodded with approval or shook his head du biously and without communicating to the generals around him the profound course of ideas which guided his decisions merely gave them his final conclusions in the form of com mands Having listened to a suggestion f om Davout

to turn

it shoul

not To made by General Campan (who was to attack the *flèches*) to lead his divi sion through the woods Napoleon agreed though the so-called Duke of Elchingen (Ney) ventured to remark that a movement through the woods was dangerous and might disorder the division

Having inspected the country opposite the Shevárdino Redoubt Napoleon pondered a little in silence and then indicated the spots where two batteries should be set up by the morrow to act against the Russian entrench ments and the places where in line with them the field artillery should be placed

After giving these and other commands he returned to his tent and the disposit ons for the battle were written down from his d cta tion

These dispositions of wl ich the French his torians write with enthusiasm and other h s torians with profound respect were as follows

At dawn the two new l atter es est l l l ed lur ing tl e n ht on the pl in occ pied l y tl l r nce l l kmt hl will open f e on the two opposing l atter es of the enemy

At the same t me the comman ler of the artil lery of the 1st Corps General Pernetti with thirty cannon of Campan s division and all tl e l owitzers of Des aix s and Friant s divisions will move f r ward open f re an l overwl elm with sl ellf e the enemy s battery aga nst which w ll operate

24 guns of the artillery of the Guards
30 guns of Campan s liv sion
and 8 guns of Friant s and Dessaix s d vis ons

in all 62 guns

The commander of the a t ll ry l Corp r the of t men c vill have forty guns in all directe l aga nst it

General Sorl ier must l e ready at the f rst or ler to advan e w th all the howitzers of the Guar ls art llery against either one or otl er of the en trenchments

During the cannonade Prince Poni tow ki l to advance through the wood on the villa e an l t m the enemy po it on

Gene al Campan w ll move through tl e wood to se e the f rst fortif at on

After the a lvanc has l egi n in th s m n er or lers will be given in ac o lance with the en emy s movement

Tl e cannonade on the left flank will beg n s soon a the gun f the r gl w

ce on tl e r ght w g

The vic K ng will o cupy the village and cross by its three bridges ad nc ng to the same he gl t as Moran l s nd Gérard s l s o s which n ler his leadersh p w ll be l ecte l agai t tl e red ul t an l ome into l ne with tl e rest of the f rces

All th s mt t l e lo n good or ler (*l t l e f a av c o d e t méth d*) as far s possil le re taini g troops n reserve

The Imper al Camp near Mo l áysk
Septeml er 6 812

These dispositions which are very obscure and confused f one allows oneself to regard the arrangements without religious awe f h s genius related to Napoleon s orders to deal with four points—four d fferent orders Not one of these was or could be carried out

In the disposition it is sa d f rst *that tl e bat teries placed on tl e spot chos n by Naf l on with tl e guns of Pernetti a d Fou l ul el we e to come in l ne wtl tl em s 2 gu s in all were to open f e a d sho er l ll o t tl e Russ an flèches and edoubts* Th s could not

Murat —Tr

The l te of th Fren l p oclam ti n i N w Style and correspond to A g t 2 Ol l Styl —Tr

H vin finished his second glass of pu ch, w t to rest bef e th ser us bus

the evenin, he went t th gu the tent t three lock them ruing l udly blowing hi nose. H asked wh th th Russians had not w thdrawn d was t ld that the enemy fires were till n the sam pl ces. He nod ed pproval.

The dj ta t in ttenda ce came nto the tent.

"Well, Rapp d you think w shall do good business today N poleon asked h m.

"W tho t d bt, ire, repl ed Rapp

N poleo looked t him.

"Do you emember sire what you d d m the honor to say t Smolén k? co t nued Rapp "Th w is drawn d must be drunk.

N poleo frowned nd sat lent f r l ng m lea in his head n h hand.

"This poo army he sudd nly rema ked. "It has dimi ished greatly nc Smolé k. For tune is fra kl courtesan Rapp I have l ways sa d so and I m begi to experience it. B t th Guards, Rapp th Guards are in tact. h ema ked erroneously

"Yes, repl ed Rapp

N poleo ook l zen e, put t in his mouth, d gl ed t his watch. He was n t sleepy d t was till t early m rn It was impos bl to gi e further ders f the sake of killi g im for the rders had all been gi en d wer now be executed.

H th biscu ts nd been served out to he reg m ts f th Guards?" asked N poleo ernly

"Yes, e.

"Th rice too?"

Rapp pl ed that h had gi en th Emper or rder bo t th ri b N poleon book his head d ssatisf ct n if not bel eving that h der had bee executed. An tte d cam w th pu h. N poleo ordered n ther glass to be brought f Rapp d ilent pped his wn.

I ha thertast n sm ll, h remarked, ting his glass. "This cold is tiresome. They talk bout med cin —what is th good of med ci when t ca t cure cold Corvisart g m these l enges bu they d n t help t ll. What can doctors cure. O can t cure ything Our bod is ma h f l vi It is orga ized for that, t is t nature. Let lif go on n it unh ndered nd let it defend itself it w ll d m e than f you p ralyze t by encum ber ng t w th remed es. Our body i l ke a perfect wat h that should go for a cert in t me t wat hm ker ca not open it, he can only ad

t o of wh ch he was fond, N po eo and unexpectedly ga new one.

Do y u know Rapp what m l tary art i?" asked he It s the art of be t onger than the e emy at gi en moment. That s all

Rapp mad no r ply

"Tomorrow we shall ha e to deal w th Ku túz sa d N poleon We shall see! Do you remember at Braun u he commanded n army for three week d did not o ce mount horse to nspect his entrenchments. We hall see

He looked t h s watch. It was st ll only four o clock. He d d n t feel sleepy The punch was

n ght was da k nd damp sca ely per p bl m ture wa descending from abo e. Nea by the campfires wer d mly burn g mo g the F nch Guards and n the di tance those of the Russ n l e sh ne through th sm ke. Th weather was calm, nd the rustle nd tramp f the Fre ch troop al eady begi n g to m to take up their pos t ons wer clea ly udible.

N poleon walked about in front of his tent, looked at the fires and listened to these sou ds d as he was p ss g tall guardsman in a shaggy cap wh was stand ng sentinel before his t nt d had drawn himself up l ke bl ck p llar t ght of the Empero N poleon stopped in front of him.

"What year did you nter th serv ce?" he

The man answered the question.

Ah. O of the old ones Has your regi m t had its ric

It has, Your M jesty

N poleon nodded nd walked away

At half past fi e N poleon rod to the l l ge f Shevárdino.

It was growing l ght, the ky was clea g, n ly si gl cl ud lay n th east. Th b ndoned campfires were burnin themsel es out

at least not less a man than th
on—
the
dant

At the battle of Borodinó Napoleon shot at no one and killed no one That was all done by the soldiers Therefore it was not he who killed people

The French soldiers went to kill and be killed at the battle of Borodinó not because of Napoleon s orders but by their own volition The whole army—French Italian Germ
Polish
of the
blockn

use it was inevitable

When they heard Napoleon

the sight of the portrait of the boy piercing the terrestrial globe with a toy stick and just as they would have cried *Vive l Empereur!* at any nonsense that might be told them There was nothing left for them to do but cry *Vive l Empereur!* and go to fight in order to get food and rest as conquerors in Moscow So it was not because of Napoleon s commands that they killed their fellow men

And it was not Napoleon who directed the course of the battle for none of his orders were executed and during the battle he did not know what was going on before him So the way in which these people killed one another was not decided by Napoleon s will but occurred independently of him in accord with the will of hundreds of thousands of people who took part in the common action It *only seemed* to Napoleon that it all took place by his will And so the question whether he had or had not a cold has no more historic interest than the cold of the least of the transport soldiers

Moreover the assertion made by various writers that his cold was the cause of his dispositions not being as well planned as on former occasions and of his orders during the battle not being as good as previously is quite baseless which again shows that Napoleon s cold on the twenty sixth of August was unimportant.

The dispositions cited above are not at all worse but are even better than previous dispositions by which he had won victories His pseudo-orders during the battle were also no worse than formerly but much the same as usual These dispositions and orders only seem worse than previous ones bec
B
T
t seem very bad and every learned militarist criticizes them with looks of importance when they relate to a battle that has been lost and the very worst d
and
fill
whe

T ous drawn up by Weyrother for the battle of Austerlitz were a model of perfection for that kind of composition but still they were criticized—criticized for their very perfection for their excessive minuteness.

Napoleon at the battle of Borodinó fulfilled his office as representative of authority as well as and even better than at other

ence carried out his role of appearing to command calmly and with dignity

CHAPTER XXIX

On returning from a second careful inspection of the lines Napoleon remarked

The chessmen are set up the game will begin tomorrow!

Having ordered punch and summoned de Beausset he began to talk to him about Paris and about some changes he meant to make in the Empress household surprising the prefect by his memory of minute details relating to the court

He showed an interest in trifles joked about de Beausset s love of travel and chatted carelessly as a famous self confident surgeon who knows his job does when turning up his sleeves and putting on his apron while a patient is being strapped to the operating table "The matter is in my hands and is clear and definite in my head When the times comes to set to work I shall do it as no one else could but now I can jest and the more I jest and the calmer I am the more tranquil and confident you ought to be and the more amazed at my genius.

These puff f smoke d (stran e t say) L.e sound f th fir g produced th chief beau ty f t.. spectacle.

"P f"—suddenly a round compact cl ud of

g
d

"boom boom!" came the sou ds confirmi g at the eye had seen

Pierre gl ced rou d t the first cl ud, which he had seen s rou d compact ball nd n ts place alread wer b lloo of smok floating to on side and— p ff" (w th a paus)— p ff p f" three d then f ur more ppea ed nd then from each w th the same nterval— boom—boom boom!" came the fine, firm, precise so ds reply It seemed l thos smok cl d sometimes ran and som times

were co ti ually ppeari g followed by their solemn reports, while nearer till, in the hol low and woods, there burst from th muskets small cl dl ts th t had no time t becom balls, b t had th ir l ttl echoes n just the same way T akh-t -t -t kh!" came th fre quen cra kl f musketry but t was irregular nd feeb e in comparison w th th eports of the ca n.

P erre wished be there w th that sm ke, those sh ng bayo ts, that mo em t, nd those sounds. H turned to look t Kutuzov and his su t t compar hi mpress n with those f thers. They were all looki t th f ld l b ttl he was, d, as t seemed t him, with th same feel gs. All their f ces were ow shini g w th tha lat nt warmth of feeling P erre had ticed the day bef re nd had full derstood fter his talk w th Prince A drew

"Go, m dear f ll w go and Christ be th ou K uzo was sa in general ho tood bes d him n t taki g h eye from the ba tl fi ld.

H g ece ed this order th ge eral passed by P erre o his wa d wn th kn ll

"To th cross g sa d the general coldly nd sternly n repl t o of th taff who asked where he was go g

I'll go there too, I too thought P erre nd f llo ed t e general.

Th general mounted horse Cossack had brought him. P erre went his groom who was holding h horses and, asking which was the qu etest clambered onto it, se zed t by the mane, and turn n o t h s toes pressed his heel a n t t des and, feel g th t h s

CHAPTER XXXI

H IN DESCENDED the h ll the general after whom P erre was gall p ng turned sharply to

fro t f them o to th ri l t u t, e were sold ers everywhere ll w th the same pre-

trample them und r his h rse s hoofs.

"Why r de into the m ddle of th battal on o e of them sh uted at h m.

Another prodded his horse w th the butt end of musket and P erre, bend ng o er h saddlebow nd hardly ble to control his shy ng horse gall ped head of the soldiers where there was a free pace

There was a bridge ahead of h m, where other soldiers tood fir P erre rode up to them. W thout bei wa of t he had come to the bridge across th Kolochá between Górki nd Borodinó wh ch th F ench (havi g occup ed Borodinó) w re atta king n the first phase of th battle. Pierre saw that there wa bridge n front of h m nd th t sold ers were d ng something n both s des of t nd n the meadow mo g th rows of new-mown hay wh ch h had taken no notice of amid the sm ke of the campfires the d y bef re but desp te the incessa t firing go on there he had no idea that this wa th field f battle. H d d not notice the sound of th bullets whistl ng from every de the projectiles that flew over him, d d not see the enemy on the other d f th ri er d f l time did not n tice the killed d wo ded, th ugh many f ll near h m. He looked bo t h m w th mile which d d not lea e his fa e.

"Why that f ll w in fro t f th l ne shouted som bod t him gain

"To th l ft keep to th right the men sho ted t h m.

Pierre went to the right, nd unexpectedly

in the faint morning light

On the right a single deep report of a cannon resounded and died away in the prevailing silence Some minutes passed A second and a third report shook the air then a fourth and a fifth boomed solemnly near by on the right

The first shots had not yet ceased to reverberate before others rang out and yet more were heard mingling with and overtaking one another

Napoleon with his suite rode up to the Shevárdino Redoubt where he dismounted The game had begun

CHAPTER XXX

ON RETURNING to Górki after having seen Prince Andrew Pierre ordered h ... get the ... mornin ... hind a ... u given up to hi ...

Before he was thoroughly awake next morning everybody had already left the hut The panes were rattling in the ...

... pe ting pertinaciously while he shook Pierre by the shoulder without looking at him having apparently lost hope of getting him to wake up

What? Has it begun? Is it time? Pierre asked waking up

Hear the firing said the groom a discharged soldier All the gentlemen have gone out and his Serene Highness himself rode past long ago

Pierre dressed hastily and ran o ... porch O ... chec ... hind ... with ... by the clouds over the roofs of the street opposite on the dew besprinkled dust of the road on the ... the ho ... Pierre ... roar of ... adjutan ... by a Cossack passed by at a sharp trot

It s time Count it s time! cried the adjutant

Telling the groom to follow him with the horses Pierre went down the street to the knoll from which he had looked at the field of battle the day before A crowd of military men was assembled there members of the staff could be heard conversing in French and Kutúzov s gray head in a white cap with a red band was visible his gray nape sunk between his shoulders He was looking through a field glass down the highroad before him

Mo ... at ... ty ... orama he had admired from that spot the day before but now the whole place was full of troops and covered by smoke clouds from the guns and the slanting rays of the bright sun rising slightly to the left behind Pierre cast upon it ... mo ...

... p ... rama s ... u carved in some precious stone of a yellowish green color its un ... s ... n ...

... troops Nearer at hand glittered golden cornfields interspersed with copses There were troops to be seen everywhere in front and to the right and left All this was vivid majestic and unexpected but what impressed Pierre most of all was the view of the battlefield itself of Borodinó and the hollows on both sides of the Kolochá

Above the Kolochá in Bo ... ho ...

... a mist had spread which seemed to melt to dissolve and to become translucent when the brilliant sun appeared and magically colored and outlined everything The smoke of the guns mingled with this mist and over the whole expanse and through that mist the rays of the morning sun were reflected flashing back like lightning from the water from the dew and from the bayonets of the troops crowded together by the riverbanks and in Borodino A white church could be seen through the mist and here and there the roofs of huts in Borodino as well as dense masses of soldiers or green ... mm ...

... t ... jus as in the mist enveloped hollow near Borodino so along the entire line outside and above it and especially in the woods and fields to the left in the valleys and on the summits of the high ground clouds of powder smoke seemed continually to spring up out of nothing now singly now several at a time some translucent others dense which swelling growing rolling and blending extended over the whole expanse

work were separated from the rest by a trench everyo e experienced comm n and as it were f mily feelin f animati n.

" ~ ...

f
1

at him with curios ty

A young ro d faced officer quite a boy till ard evidently nly just out of the Cadet Col lege, who was zeal usly commandin, th two guns entrusted t him, ddressed P erre sternly

"Sir he sa d, permit me to ask you to stand as de. You must not be here.

The soldiers shook their heads disappro ingly as they looked at P erre. But when they had co vinced themsel es that this man n the hite hat was doin no harm, but ther sat q etly n the slope of th trench with a hy mil politel mak g way f th soldiers, paced p d d wn the battery under fire as calmly as if h were on boulevard, the r feel ing f hostil di trust gradu lly began to change to k dly d ban er n ymp hy such as soldiers feel f the dogs, cocks, goats, nd in general for the nimals that li e with

— P ...

l fun f him mo themsel es.

A sh ll tor p th earth two p ces from Pierre and h looked rou d with smile as h brushed from his cl thes some earth t had thrown p

A d how t you re n t afraid. really now red faced, broad houldered soldier asked P erre, w th grin that disclosed set f sou d, whit teeth.

Ar you fra d, hen?" sa d P erre.

"Wha lse do y u expect?" nswered the so dier "She has no mercy you k w! When s comes pl tering d wn out go your n nards. O can t help bei g afraid, he sa d laughin

Several f th men with bright kindly f ces, opped bes de P erre. They seemed n t to ha expected him to talk l ke ybody lse, and the discovery that h did so d l hted them.

It th bus ess of us soldiers. But in a gentleman wo derful There gentle ma for ou

"T your places er ed the young officer to the men gathered rou d P erre.

The young officer was ev dently exercisi g his duties for the first or second time and theref re treated both his super ors and the men w th great precis on nd f rmal ty

The boom ng cannonade a d the fus ll de of musketry were growing more intense over the whole field, especially to the left where Ba gration s *fl ches* were, but where P erre was the smoke of the firing made it almost im poss ble to dist guish nything Mo eo er his whole att ntion wa engrossed by watching the family circl —separated from all else —formed by the men in the battery His first unconscious feel ng of joyful an mation produced by the s ghts and sou ds of the battlefield was now replaced by nother especially s nce he had seen that sold er lying al e in the hayfi ld. Now seated on the slope of the trench, he observed the faces of those arou d him.

By ten o clock som twenty men had already been carr ed away from the b ttery two guns were mashed and cannon balls f ll mo e and m e frequently on the battery a d spent bullets buzzed nd wh tled around. But the men in th battery seemed n t to n tice this, d merry vo ces and jokes were heard on all des.

A l e on l houted a man as whistling shell ppro ched.

"N t this way! To the inf try! dded n other w th l ud laughter see ng the hell fly past a d fall nt the ranks of the upports.

Ar you bowing t friend, eh?" remarked an ther chaffing a peasant who ducked low as cannon ball flew over

Several sold ers gathered by the wall of the trench, lookin out to see what was happen ing in front.

"They withdrawn the front lin t has retired, said they po n g o er th earthw k.

Mind your own bus ness, n old sergeant shouted t them. If they e etired t because th re work f them to do farther back.

And th sergeant, taking o of th men b the shoulders ga e him a sho w th his knee. This was f ll wed by a burst of laughter

"To the fifth gun wheel t up cam shouts from o side.

"N w then, all together lik bargees rose the merry vo ces of those who were mo ing th gun.

Oh, she nearly knocked ur gentleman hat off cried th red fa ed humorist, how g his teeth and chaffin P erre. Awkward baggage

encountered one of Raévski s adjutants whom he knew The adjutant looked angrily at him evidently also intending to shout at him but on recognizing him he nodded

How have you got here? he said and gal loped on

Pierre feeling out of place there having nothing to do and afraid of getting in some one s way again galloped after the adjutant

What s happening here? May I come with you? he asked

One moment one moment! replied the adjutant and riding up to a

j y u come here Count? he asked with a smile Still inquisitive?

Yes yes assented Pierre

But the adjutant turned his horse about and rode on

Here it s tolerable said he but with Ba gratión on the left flank they re getting it frightfully hot

Really? said Pierre Where is that?

Come along with me to our knoll We can get a view from there and in our battery it is still bearable said the adjutant Will you come?

Yes I ll come with you replied Pierre looking round for his groom

It was only now that he noticed wounded men staggering along or being carried on stretchers On that very meadow he had rid den over the day before a soldier was lying athwart the rows of scented ha

out seeing the stern expres sion of the adjutant who was also looking that way he checked himself

Pierre did not find his groom and rode along the hollow with the adjutant to Raév ski s Redoubt His horse lagged behind the ad jutant s and jolted him at every step

You don t seem to be used to rid ng Count? remarked the adjutant

No it s not that but her action seems so jerky said Pierre in a puzzled tone

Why she s wounded! said the adju tant In the off foreleg above the knee A bul let no doubt I congratulate you Count on your baptism of fire!

Having ridden in the smoke past the Sixth Corps behind the artillery which had been moved forward and was in action deafening them with the noise of firing they came to a small wood There it was cool a

asked the adjutant on reaching the knoll

He was here a minute ago but has just gone that way someone told him pointing to the right

The adjutant looked at Pierre as if puzzled what to do with him now

Don t trouble about me said Pierre I ll go up onto the knoll if I may?

Yes do You ll see everything from there and it s less dangerous and I ll come for you

Pierre went to the battery and the adjutant rode on They did not meet again and only much later did Pierre learn that he lost an arm that day

The knoll to which Pierre ascended was that famous one afterwards known to the Russians as the Knoll Battery or Raévski s Redoubt and to the French as *la grande redoute la fa tale redoute la redoute du centre* around which tens of thousands fell and which the French regarded as the key to the whole po sition

This redoubt consisted of a knoll on three sides of which trenches had been dug Within the entrenchment stood ten guns that were being fired through openings in the earth work

In line with the knoll on both

erre had no notion that this spot on wh ch small trenches had been dug and from which a few guns were firing was the most important point of the battle

On the contrary just because he happened to be there he thought it one of the least sig nificant parts of the field

Having reached the knoll Pierre sat down at one end of a trench surrounding the battery and gazed at what was going on around him with an unconsciously happy smile Occasio ally he rose and walked about the battery still with that same smile trying not to obstruct the soldiers who were loading

enveloping the whole neigh borhood in powder smoke

In contrast with the dread felt by the in fantrymen placed in support here in the bat tery where a small number of men busy at their

The man wh h d been ordered to go for ammu u stumbled ga n t P erre

Eh, sir this is n pl e f r you sa d he and ra do n the sl pe

P rre ra fte him o d g the spot where th yo g offi er was s tt g

O e can n ball, a ther a d th rd flew er him, f ll g i fr nt bes de and beh nd him. P erre ran down th lop Whe e m I go g? he udd nly asked h m elf wh n he was lready ne r the green ammun t on wag o s. He h lted rresolut ly n t know ng hethe to r t rn g n S ddenly terr bl co cuss threw h m backw rds to th grou d. At the same ta t h was dazzled by a great flash of flame and mmed t ly a de fen ng roar crackl g nd wh tl ng made h s ears u I

Whe he came t h m elf he was s tt ng n th gr nd le n g on l h nd th mmu nitio wag h h d been pp o ch g no bo ds nd

erre the gr und utter g p I g u u p erci g cries

CHAPTER XXXII

BESIDE H MSELF w th t rro P err jumped up and ra back t th b ttery as t tl only f ge fr m th h rr rs that rr u ded h m. O ter g th earthw k h n t ed that the e ere m n d g som th g th but that h ts were be ng fi ed f m the b tt ry H h d tum to l e who the men w e He th th wall

tra g

B h had t tim t e l e that th colo- l h d bee killed th t the sold e sho ting Brothers! wa p soner d th t ther m had bee bay ted the b k bef re h eyes, f r hardly had h ru nt the e- do b bel th sall w f d p rsp g na bl u f rm ru hed n h m w d h d, h t g someth g I t ct ly gua d g ga t th hock—f they h d been run g oge h full peed bef e they saw e ther—P erre p t t his h ds nd seized th m (F ch ffi e) by the h ul w y

der with one hand and by the throat with the ther The ff cer dropp ng his sword se zed P erre by his coll r

F r some seconds they gazed w th fr ghtened eyes t on nothe s unfam l r f ces and both were perple ed at what they had done nd what they were to do next. Am I t ken pris oner o h ve I taken h m pr sone? each was th nking But the Fr nch fficer was evidently k he had been taken p

say someth ng wi e ju terr ble and low a cannon b ll wh stled and t seemed to P erre that the French officer s he d h d been torn off so sw ftly had he du ked t.

P erre too bent his head nd let h s l and

he reached the foot of the kn ll t e was a d nse crowd f Russ n old rs who stum- bl g tr pp ng up a d shout ng ran merr ly

made s ch feat poss ble t was the a tack wh ch he was s d t ha e thrown some St. George s Crosses he h d in his pocket nt the b ttery for th first soldiers to take who got the e)

Th F nch who had occup ed th b ttery fled nd our troops sh uting Hurrah pur sued them so far b y nd the batt ry th t t was d fficult to call them b ck.

The priso ers we e brought d wn from the b ttery and m ng them wa wounded F ench ge eral wh m the officers surrounded Crowds f w u d d—some known to P err nd some u known—Russian and French w th f ces d torted by uffering walked, crawled nd w e carried on tretchers from th battery P erre ga n w nt up ont the k ll whe e h h d pent er an h ur nd of th t f m ly ci le wh ch h d d h m as member he d d t fi d gl one Th e e m ny dead wh m he d d not k w but some he

he added reproachfully to a cannon b t t
stru k

I
ing o stooping low en tered the battery to carry away the wounded man

So this gruel isn t to your taste? Oh you crows! You re scared! they shouted at the mi litiamen who stood hesitating before the man whose leg had been torn off

There lads oh oh! they mimicked the peasants they don t like it at all!

Pierre noticed that after every ball that hit the redoubt and after every loss the liveliness increased more and more

As the flames of the fire hidden within come more and more vividly and r

I more and more intense glowed in the faces of these men

Pierre did not look out at the battlefield and was not concerned to know what was happen ing there he was entirely absorbed in watch ing this fire which burned ever more brightly and which he felt was flaming up in the same way in his own soul

At ten o clock the infantry that had been among the bushes in front of the battery and along the Kámenka streamlet retreated From the battery they could be seen running back past it carrying their wounded on their mus kets A general with h s suite came to the bat tery and after speaking to the colonel gave Pierre an angry look and went away again having ordered the infantry supports behind the battery to lie dov n so as to be less ex posed to f re After this from amid the ranks of infantry to the right of the battery came the sound of a drum and shouts of command and from the battery one saw how those ranks of infantry moved forward

Pierre looked over the wall of the trench and was particularly struck by a pale young officer v ho left n h

backwa

The r

io us of v ounded men and stretcher bearers came back from that direction Projectiles began to fall still more frequently in the battery Several men v ere lying about v ho had not been removed Around the cannon the men moved still more briskly and busily No one any longer took notice of I ierre Once or

I ter with a frowning face The young officer with his face still more flushed commanded the men more scrupulous ly than ever The soldiers handed up the charges turned loaded and d d th s w k

I
t
c shako ran up to his su perior

I have the honor to report sir that only eight rounds are left Are we to continue fr ing? he asked

Grapeshot! the senior shouted without answering the question looking over the wall of the trench

Suddenly something happened the young officer gave a gasp and bending double sat dov n on the ground like a bird shot on the v ing Everything became strange confused and misty in Pierre s eyes

One cannon ball after another v histled by and struck the earthwork a soldier or a gun Pierre who had not noticed these sounds be fore now heard nothing else On the right of the battery soldiers shouting Hurrah v ere running not forwards but backv ards it seemed to Pierre

A cannon ball struck the very end of the earthwork by which he was standing, crumbling down the earth a black ball flashed before his eyes and at the same instant plumped into something Some militiamen v ho v ere enter ing the battery ran back

All with grapeshot! shouted the o ffcer

The sergeant ran up to the off r

r e w he asked for) that there v ere no more charges

The scoundrels! What are they doing? shouted the officer turn ng to I erre

The officer s face was red and perspiring and his eyes glittered under his frowning brow

Run to the reserves and bring up the am munition boxes! he yelled angrily avoi ing Pierre v ith h s eyes and speaking to his men

I ll go said Pierre

The off cer without answering him strode across to the opposite side

Don t f re Wa t! he shouted.

l t oot r l it re l e ng

lt Borod ó—the b lge had been retaken by the R ss s nd burn d in the very sk rm l at h ch P erre h d be p es nt at the beg n n of th b ttle

A adj ta t gall ped up fr m the *flèch* w th pale d f hte ed f e nd ep rt d h t the r ttack l ad been re

l s h y

bru sed O the b s of thes trust rthy epo t N poleon ga e h o d rs wh ch h d ther b en executed before l e ga them r could n t be nd we e not e cuted

Th m rsh l d ge erals who w e n rer th fi ld of b ttle but l ke Napoleon d d

pl ce whe e the balls ar u bo t tl e r supe rs l cated i the ba k grou l re f rmed them d l ougl t th m un l r d c pl ne an l under the infl ence of th t l s ipl ne led them back to tl e o e f fre wl e e under the nfluei ce of fea of l atl th y l t tl e r d c pl e nd rusl ed about ac cord n to the chan ep ompt ngs of the throng

CHAPTER XXXIV

N and Mu nd

But eir

c trary to wh t h d alw y PP f rmer b ttles nstead of the ews tl ey e p cted f th e emy s fl gl t these or le ly m es etu ned the ce d rgan ed nd terr f d mob The ge eral re f rn ed tl em but tl numbers c n t ntly d cre s l In the s m ddl of th day Murat ent h a ljut nt to N p leo to dem nd re nfo cements

N p leon t at the foot of the kn ll d nk n n h wh n Murat djutant gall ped

th o d s s

bef e th m, som t n ru h d b k so e t mes f rward d tl ca lry d h d th ut d rs p rs t f th fly g Russ In th way t ca lry eg m ts gall ped th gl the Sem k h ll w d oon th y h d th t p f tl l turn d und d gall p l f ll peed b k ga Th n l try m ed n tl e m way som t mes ru qu th pl es th n thos they de ed t g t All ders t h d wh n t m tl gu wl en t s d n f try t hoot h rs en to d d n the n

st nd h s w rds

Re f c m nts l th ught N poleon to f rom t

tl at t n t noon yet and I d n t yet e my chessbo d clearly Go!

d rs f t g l own t ba le h t t k l t dea est t —h wn l f — l t m mes ms th t

thes movements f rwa d a d b ckwa d d d

were b g l ught red

N pol a d ha g ummo ed C l cou t and Be th er began talk to then bout m tters u ect d w th the b ttle

In th m dst f tl n rsat o l l wa beg g t t est N poleon B tl e eyes t rned to look at g neral w th a su t h was gall p ng t wa d th knoll on l ther g

Pierre ran down the slope once more

Now they will stop it now they will be horrified at what they have done! he thought aimlessly going toward a crowd of stretcher bearers moving from the battlefield

But behind the veil of smoke the sun was still high and in front and especially to the left near Semenovsk something seemed to be seething in the smoke and the roar of cannon and musketry did not diminish but even increased to desperation like a man who straining himself shrieks with all his remaining strength

CHAPTER XXXIII

THE CHIEF ACTION of the battle of Borodinó was fought within the seven thousand feet between Borodinó and Bagratión s *flèches* Beyond that space there was on the one side a demonstration made by the Russians with Uvárov s cavalry at midday and on the other side beyond Utitsa Poniatowski s collision with Tuchkóv but these two were detached and feeble actions in comparison with what took place in the center of the battlefield On the field between Borodinó and the *flèches* beside the wood the chief action of the day took place on an open space visible from both sides and was fought in the simplest and most artless way

The battle began on both sides with a cannonade from several hundred guns

[illegible]

leon was standing the *flèches* were two thirds of a mile away and it was more than a mile as the crow flies to Borodinó so that Napoleon could not see what was happening there especially as the smoke mingling with the mist hid the whole locality The soldiers of Dessaix s division advancing against the *flèches* could only be seen till they had entered the hollow that lay between them and the *flèches* As soon as they had descended into that hollow the smoke of the guns and musketry on the *flèches* grew so dense that it covered the whole approach on that side of it Through the smoke glimpses could be caught of something black —probably men—and at times the glint of bayonets But whether they were moving or stationary whether they were French or Russian could not be discovered from the Shevárdino Redoubt.

The sun had risen brightly and its slanting rays struck straight into Napoleon s face as, shading his eyes with his hand he looked at the *flèches* The smoke spread out before them, and at times it looked as if the smoke were moving at times as if the troops moved Sometimes shouts were heard through the firing but it was impossible to tell what was being done there

Napoleon standing on the knoll looked through a field glass and in its small circlet saw smoke and men sometimes his own and sometimes Russians but when he looked again with the naked eye he could not tell where what he had seen was

He descended the knoll and began walking up and down before it

Occasionally he stopped listened to the firing and gazed intently at the battlefield

But not only was it impossible to make out what was happening from where he was standing down below or from the knoll above on which some of his generals had taken their stand but even from the *flèches* themselves—in which by this time there were now Russian and now French soldiers alternately or together dead wounded alive frightened or maddened—even at those *flèches* themselves it was impossible to make out what was taking place There for several hours amid incessant cannon and musketry fire now Russians were seen alone now Frenchmen alone now infantry and now cavalry they appeared fired fell collided not knowing what to do with one another screamed and ran back again

From the battlefield adjutants he had sent out and orderlies from his marshals kept galloping up to Napoleon with reports of the progress of the action but all these reports were false both because it was impossible in the heat of battle to say what was happening at any given moment and because many of the adjutants did not go to the actual place of conflict but reported what they had heard from others and also because while an adjutant was riding more than a mile to Napoleon circumstances changed and the news he brought was already becoming false Thus an adjutant galloped up from Murat with tidings that Borodinó had been occupied and the bridge over the Kolochá was in the hands of the French The adjutant asked whether Napoleon wished the troops to cross it? Napoleon gave orders that the troops should form up on the farther side and wait But before that order was given —almost as soon in fact as the adjutant had

of enemy eagles a d tand rds cannon and stores and M rat h d only begged le e to loose th ca alry t gath r in the b ggage wa o So t h d been t Lod Mare go Ar col Jen A t rl tz W gram and so on B t ow som thi g trange was happen g to his troop

Desp te n s f the capture of the *flèche* h me. n t

l

e ced the art al

d ject d, d they all h nn d one another s eyes—only de Beau set c uld f l to grasp the mea g f what was h ppen g

B t N poleo w th h l ng xper ence of bat l not

army

Wh h r hı m d er th wh le f wh h not

to eal d dep es the f es ar u d n m

l cky cid t that might dest y h m oc curred t l is m d. Th Rus m ght f ll h l ft w g m ght b k thr u h h c n ter h h ms lf m ght be k lled by tray can n ball. All tl was poss ble In f rmer b tles h had ly con d ed th pos b l t es f ess b t w numerabl unlucky cha es p es ted th msel es d h exp cted

lat h m, b t th f l that h arm dr ps po les d l mp l ke rag nd the h rr f dabl destru ti n es h m n his h lpless es

Th that th Russ w e tta k g th l f fl k f th F e h army ar used th t horr N poler He s t l tly o camp tool bel w th kn ll w th head bowed d lbows h k es. Berth er pp ched d ggested th t they h uld rid l g the l e to ascertai th pos t of aff irs.

Wh t? Wh t do y u say? asked Napoleon

Yes tell them t b ng me my h rse

He mounted and rode toward Semenovsk.

Am d the powder moke slowly d spers ng o er the whole p ce thr ugh which Napoleon rode h rses and men were ly ng n pools of blood s gly o in heap Neither N p leo nor ny of his g nerals h d ever befo e seen such horrors or so many sla n in such a small

Th r of guns that had not ceased for

e

d

The Russ

Semen k llage nd ts kn ll and th r guns boomed incessantly al g the r l e nd sent

ans N poleon stopp d h s h se

upposed to be d ected by

on h m d from ts l ck of su cess this aff r fo the first t me seemed to h m unnecessary nd horr ble

On of the ge erals ode up to N pol on d entured t ffe to lead th Old Gu rd nto ct o Ney nd Berth er st nd g near N poleon e ch nged looks d m led c n temptu usly t th gene al se eles offer

N p leon bowed l s head nd rema ned si l nt a l ng time

At e ght hundr d leagues from F ce I w ll n t h e my Guard dest yed! h d and turn ng his horse ode b ck to Shevárd no

CHAPTER XXXV

O TH RUG-CO ERED B NCH where P erre h d een him the m g t Kut zo h gr y h d hang g h hea y body relax d H ga e n ders but only assent d t r dis t d f m wh t th rs suggested.

Yes yes d that he repl d to v us p posals Yes yes g dear boy and ha e a look, h w uld y to e o nother of th se bout h m o N d n t we d bette w tl

ested n th mport of the w ds poken but

horse It was Belliard Having dismounted he went up to the Emperor with rapid strides and in a loud voice began boldly demonstrating the necessity of sending reinforcements He swore on his honor that the Russians were lost if the Emperor would give another division

Napoleon shrugged his shoulders and continued to pace up and down without replying Belliard began talking loudly and eagerly to the generals of the suite around him

You are very fiery Belliard said Napoleon when he again came up to the general In the heat of a battle it is easy to make a mistake Go and have another look and then come back to me

n

fr

up

Now then what do you want? asked Napoleon in the tone of a man irr ing

on

on

v a ngry gesture

The adjutant bent his head affirmatively and began to report but the Emperor turned from him took a couple of steps stopped came back and called Berthier

We must give reserves he said moving his arms slightly apart Who do you think should be sent there? he asked of Berthier (whom he subsequently termed that gosling I have made an eagle)

Send Claparède s division sire replied Berthier who knew all the divisions regiments and battalions by heart

Napoleon nodded assent

The adjutant galloped to Claparède s division and a few minutes later the Young Guards stationed behind the knoll moved forward Napoleon gazed silently in that direction

No! he suddenly said to Berth e t

co venience and delay in stopping Claparède and sending Friant now the order was carried out exactly Napoleon did not notice that in regard to his army he was playing the part of a doctor who hinders by his medicines—a role he so justly under

I c a

From all sides adjutants continued to arrive at a gallop and as if by agreement all said the same thing They all asked for reinforcements and all said that the Russians were holding their positions and maintaining a hellish fire under which the French army was melting away

Napoleon sat on a campstool wrapped in thought

M de Beausset the man so fond of travel having fasted since morning came up to the Emperor and ventured respectfully to suggest lunch to His Majesty

I hope I may now congratulate Your Majesty on a victory? said he

Napoleon silently shook his head in negation Assuming the negation to refer only to the victory and not to the lunch M de Beausset ventured with respectful jocularity to remark that there is no reason for not havin lunch when one can get it

Go away

ly and n

A bea

ecstasy b u ausset s face and he glided away to the other generals

Napoleon was experiencing a feeling of depression like that of an ever lucky gambler who after recklessly flinging money about and always winning suddenly just when he has calculated all the chances of the game finds that the more he considers his play the more surely he loses

His troops were the same his generals the same the same preparati ns had been made the same dispositions and the same proclamation *courte et énergique* he himself was still the same he knew that and knew that he was now even more experienced and skillful than before Even the enemy was the same as at Austerlitz and Friedland—yet the terrible stroke of his arm had supernaturally become impotent

All the old methods that had been unfailingly crowned with success the concentration of batteries on one point an attack by reserves to break the enemy s line and a cavalry attack by the men of iron all these methods had already been employed yet not only was there no victory but from all sides came the same news of

forcer

ing ba

among s o troops

Formerly after he had given two or three orders and uttered a few phrases marshal a adjutants had come galloping up with congratulations and happy faces announcing the trophies taken the corps of prisoners bundles

m hat as said to him. Wolzogen not cing the ld gentleman amtat n said with a smile

"I ha e n t considered t r ght to co ceal from your Seren H hness what I ha e seen The troops are in compl t disorde

"I u ha e seen You ha e seen? Kutu zov shouted frown ng a d ris n quickly he went p t W lzogen

How h w dar you he sh uted, choki a d makin a threat ning gesture rm H w da e you

W lzoge was bo t t m ke a r jo nder but Kutuzo nterrupted h m.

"Th enemy has been repulsed on the left and d feated n the right fl nk. If you ha seen amiss, sir do not allow yourself to say what you don t k ow Be so good as to rid to General Barclay nd nf rm him of my firm inte tio to ttack the e emy t morrow said K tuzov ternly

All were l t, nd the only sou d audibl was the hea y breathi g f th p nu g old general.

"They are repulsed everywh re fo which I tha k God d ur bra e army! The enemy is beat d t morrow we shall dri e him from the sacred soil of Russ sa d Kutuzov cross g himself, and h suddenly sobbed as his eyes filled w th tears.

W lzogen, shrugg g his shoulders nd curl g his l ps, tepped s lently as de mars h g t th ld gentleman s co ce ted stup dity

Ah, her h is, my hero sa d Kutuzo to portly handsom dark h red ge eral who was just ascendi g the k ll

Th was Raévski who had pe t th whol da t the most importa part of th fi ld of Borodi ó

Raévsk eported that th troops were firmly holdi th grou d d that th F nch no lo ger en ured t tack.

After heari g him, Kut zo sa d n French "Then yo d n t th nk, *I k m thers* that we must retreat?

O th co trary your H ghness, in nde cis ctions t is lways th most ubborn ho emain ctors, epl ed Raévski and n my op io

Kaysáro Kutuzov called t his djutant. "S t dow and writ out the order of th day fo tomorrow And you he cont nued ddress i g nother ride along the l ne nd n nounce th t t morrow we ttack.

Wh le Kutu ov was talk g to Raé ski and dictat the rder of the day W lzogen re turned from B clay and said that General Barcl y w shed to h e writt n confirm tion of the order the field marshal had gi en.

Kutuzo w thout looking at Wol ogen ga e direction f th order to be written out wh ch th former commander n ch ef toa o d personal respons b l ty very judiciously w hed to recei e.

And by means of that myster ous i defin ble bond wh ch ma nta n throughout n army n nd th same temper known as the sp rit of the arm a d wh ch const tutes the ch ef s new of war Kutuzo s words, his order f r a b ttle next day mmediat ly becam kn wn from one end of the army to th other

It was far from being the sam words o the same order that reached the farthest links of that chain The tales p ss from mouth to mouth t different nds f the army d d n t ev n resemble what Kutuzo had said but the sense of his words pread everywhere because what h said was n t the outcom of cunn ng calculati ns but of a feel ng that lay n the commander n chief's soul as n that of every Russ n

And n learn ng that t m rrow they were to ttack the enemy and hearing from th h ghest quarters confirmation f what they wanted to bel eve th exhausted, wa er g men felt comforted and inspirited.

CHAPTER XXXVI

PR CE A DREI REG IENT was amo g the reserves wh ch t ll fter n o clock were tat ned in cu beh d Sem novsk, under hea y artil lery fire Toward two o clock the re ment, ha g already lost mo e than two hu dred men wa m ed forward nt trampled oat field in the gap between Sem o sk d the Kn ll Battery wher thousands of men per ished that day d n which an ntense con centrated fire from several hundred enemy gun was di ected between o nd two o clock.

W th ut moving from that spot o fir n l shot th egime t her lost nother third of ts men From n front nd especi lly f m the right, n th unl fu smoke the gun boomed, and out of the mysterious do ma n of sm k that o erlay th whol p ce in front, quick hissing can on balls and sl w

rather in something else—in the expression of face and tone of voice of those who were reporting By long years of military experience he knew and with the wisdom of age understood that it is impossible for one man to direct [illegible] others strug[illegible] hat the result [illegible] e orders of a commander in chief nor the place where the troops are stationed nor by the number of cannon or of slaughtered men but by that intangible force called the spirit of the army and he watched this force and guided it in as far as that was in his power

Kutuzov s general expression was one of concentrated quiet attention and his face wore a strained look as if he found it difficult to master the fatigue of his old and feeble body

At eleven o clock they brought him news that the *flèches* captured by the French had been retaken but that Prince Bagratión was wounded Kutuzov groaned and swayed his head

Ride over to Prince Peter Ivánovich and find out about it exactly he said to one of his adjutants and then turned to the Duke of Wurttemberg who was standing behind him

Will Your Highness please take command of the first army?

Soon after the duke s departure—before he could possibly have reached Semenovsk—his adjutant came back from him and told Kutúzov that the duke asked for more troops

Kutuzov made a grimace and sent [illegible]

[illegible] could not spare at such an important mom[illegible]

[illegible] zov smiled

Wait a little gentlemen said he The battle is won and there is nothing extraordinary in the capture of Murat Still it is better to wait before we rejoice

But he sent an adjutant to take the news round the army

[illegible]

Kutuzov guessing by the sounds of the battle and by Scherbínin s looks that the news was bad rose as if to stretch his legs and taking Scherbínin s arm led him aside

Go my dear fellow he said to Ermólov and see whether something can t be done

Kutuzov was in Górki near the center of the Russian position The attack directed by Napoleon against our left flank had been several times repulsed In the center the French had not got beyond Borodinó and on their left flank Uvárov s cavalry had put the French to flight

Toward three o clock the French attacks ceased On the faces of all who came from the field of battle and of those who stood around [illegible]

[illegible] General Wolzogen the man who when riding past Prince Andrew had said the war should be extended widely and whom Bagratión so detested rode up while Kutuzov was at dinner Wolzogen had come from Barclay de Tolly to report on the progress of affairs on the left flank The sagacious Barclay de Tolly seeing crowds of wounded men running back and the disordered rear of the army weighed all the circumstances concluded that the battle was lost and sent his favorite officer to the commander in chief with that news

Kutuzov was chewing a piece of roast chicken with difficulty and glanced at Wolzogen with eyes that brightened under their puckering lids

Wolzogen nonchalantly stretching his legs approached Kutuzov with a half contemptuous smile on his lips scarcely touching the peak of his cap

He treated his Serene Highness with a somewhat affected nonchalance intended to show that as a highly trained military man he left it to Russians to make an idol of this useless old man but that he knew whom he was dealing with *Der alte Herr* (as in their own set the Germans called Kutuzov) is making himself very comfortable thought Wolzogen and looking severely at the dishes in front of Kutuzov he began to report to the old gentleman the position of affairs on the left flank as Barclay had ordered him to and as he himself had seen and understood it

All the points of our position are in the enemy s hands and we cannot dislodge them for lack of troops the men are running away and it is impossible to stop them he reported

Kutuzov ceased chewing and fixed an astonished gaze on Wolzogen as if not understanding

"Look o tl came a frightened cry from a
— I'k a b d whirring n rap d fl ht

l

The h rse terro infected the m
Lie down cried the adjutant throwing himself flat n the ground.
Pri c A drew hes tated. The mok g hell spun lik top between h m nd th p ostrate djutant, near a w rmwood plant b tween the field nd the mead w
Can thi be death? th ught Prince An drew looking w th quite new en us glance t the grass, the w rmwood nd the treamlet f smok th t curled up fr m the rotati g black ball I ca t, I do not wi h to d e I love life—I l e this grass th s ea th, this ir H th ght this nd t th ame tim remembered that people were looking t h m
It shamef l l he said to the djutant. "What
He did not fi h peaking At n nd the sam moment cam th sound of n explo n histle f pl ters as from b eak g win- d w fram a uffocati g smell of powder d Prince A drew started to n de ra ng his arm, d f ll n his chest. Se eral offi ers ran up to him. F om th ghts d f h bdom n blood was w lling t mak ng l rg ta n on the grass.
The mil tiamen with tr tchers who were called p tood behi d th fficers Pri ce An- drew lay n hi chest w th hi f in th grass breath g hea ly d n ly
"What you wa t g f ? Come l ng!
The peasa ts we t p and took h m by his shoulders d legs but h m ned p teously d, excha g g looks they t him down n.
P ck him up l ft him, t s all th same! cr ed someo
They a took him by th h ulders and la d h m th tretcher
Ah God My God! What is t? Th t m- ch? Tha means death! My God! — o es mo th offi ers w heard say g
It flew hair b eadth past my ear sa d th dj ta t
Th peasa ts djust g th tretch to their houlders, tarted hurr edly al g th p th they had trodden down to th dressi g ta tion.

Keep in step! Ah those peasants shouted an officer seizing by their shoulders nd checking the peasants who w re walki g unevenly nd jolt g the stretcher
Get nto step F dor I say Fed r! sa d the foremost peasant.
Now that s right! sa d the one beh nd joy- fully when he had got to tep
"Your ex ellency! Eh Prince! sa d the trembl ng vo ce of T mókh n ho h d run up and was looki g down on the stretcher
Prince And ew pened his eyes and looked up at the speaker from the tretcher to wh ch h s head had sunk deep and aga n his eyel ds drooped.

The mil tiamen carr ed Prince Andrew to ood wh e wagons ted ed g on and horses we ta were eati g o ts from their mo able troughs a d sparr ws flew down and pecked the gra ns th t f ll Som crows scenting blood, fl w among the birch tr es caw ng mp ti ntly Around th t nts o er m re than fi e acres blood sta ned men n vari u garbs tood sat o lay Around th wounded stood crowds of sold er stretche be rs w th dismal and ttent ve faces wh m the officers keep ng order tr ed n vain t dri e from the sp t. Disregard ng the officers orders, th sold rs tood l n ng ga nst the stret hers d gaz g ntently as if try ng t comp ehend the difficult problem f what was tak g pl befo e them. From w

vodka. Some were d liri us Prince Andrew s bearers stepp g er th wounded who had not y t been bandaged, took him as a regi mental commander clo up to o of th tents and th re t pped waiting nstruct on Pri ce Andrew op ed his eyes nd f r a lo g time could n t m k out what was go ng on ar und him. H remembered the mead w the w rmwood, the fi ld th whirl ng bl ck ball and hi sudden rush of pass onate l of life. Two tep from him lean g against a bra ch and talk g loudly d attracting gen eral ttention stood tall ha dsome, black haired noncommissioned officer with ban-

whistling shells flew unceasingly At times as if to allow them a respite a quarter of an hour passed during which the cannon balls and shells all flew overhead but sometimes several men were torn from the regiment in a minute and the slain were continually being dragged away and the wounded carried off

With each fresh blow less and less chance of life remained for those not yet k… regim… hundr… men w… one and the same mood All alike were taciturn and morose Talk was rarely heard in the ranks and it ceased altogether every time the thud of a successful shot and the cry of stretchers! was heard Most of the time by their officers order the men sat on the ground One having t… shak… ing… bin… ween his palms polished his bayonet another fingered the strap and pulled the buckle of his bandolier while another smoothed and refolded his leg bands and put his boots on again Some built little houses of the tufts in the plow… …of wounded when rows of stretchers went past when some troops retreated and when great masses of the enemy came into view through the smoke no one paid any attention to these things But when our artillery or cavalry advanced or some of our infantry were seen to move forward words of approval were heard on all sides But the liveliest attention was attracted by occurrences quite apart from and unconnected with the battle It was as if the minds of these morally exhausted men found relief in everyday commonplace occurrences A battery of artillery was passing in front of the regiment The horse of an ammunition cart put its leg over a trace Hey look at the trace horse! Get her leg out! She ll fall Ah they don t see it! came identical shouts from the ranks all along the regiment Another time general attention was attracted by a small brown dog coming heaven knows whence which trotted in a preoccupied manner in front of the ranks with tail stiffly erect till suddenly a shell fell close by when it yelped tucked its tail between its legs and darted aside Yells and shrieks of laughter rose from the whole regiment But such distractions lasted only a moment and for eight hours the men had been inactive without food in constant fear of death and their pale and gloomy faces grew ever paler and gloomier

Prince Andrew pale and gloomy like everyone in the regiment paced up and dow… the be… of the… bowed… back There was nothing for him to do and no orders to be given Everything went on of itself The killed were dragged from the front the wounded carried away and the ranks closed up If any soldiers ran to the rear they returned immediately and hastily At first Prince Andrew considering it his duty to rouse the courage of the men and to set them an example walked about among the ranks but he soon b… …on avoiding the contemplation of the horrors of their situation He walked along the meadow dragging his feet rustling the grass and gazing at the dust that covered his boots now he took big strides trying to keep to the footprints left on the meadow by the mowers then he counted his steps calculating how often he must walk from one strip to another to walk a mile then he stripped the flowers from the wormwood that grew along a boundary rut rubbed them in his palms and smelled their pungent sweetly bitter scent. Nothing remained of the previous day s thoughts He thought of nothing He listened with weary ears to the ever recurring sounds distinguishing the whistle of flying projectiles from the booming of the reports glanced at the tiresomely familiar faces of the men of the first battalion and waited Here it con… this o… …over But this one has hit! And again he started trying to reach the boundary strip in sixteen paces A whizz and a thud! Five paces from him a cannon ball tore up the dry earth and disappeared A chill ran down his back Again he glanced at the ranks Probably many had been hit—a large crowd had gathered near the second battalion

Adjutant! he shouted Order them not to crowd together

The adjutant having obeyed this instruction approached Prince Andrew From the other side a battalion commander rode up

"Look o t came a frightened cry from a soldier a d, like bird whirring in rap d flight and alightin n the ground shell dropped th little oise w thin tw teps of Prince Andrew and close to th battal on commander s horse. The horse first, regardless of whether t was right rong to show fear norted reared almost throwing th major and galloped as de. The horse terr r infected the men.

Li down cried th adjutant throw ng himself flat the ground.

Prince Andrew hes tated. The sm kin shell spun like a t p between him and the prostrate djutant, near a wormwood plant between the field and the meadow

"Can this be death th ught Prince Andrew looking w th quite new envi us glance — —

air. He thought this, a d at the same tim remembered that peopl wer looking t him.

It sham ful, sir! he said to the djutant. "What

He did not finish speaking At e and th sam moment came th sound f an explos on wh tl f sp ters as from b eak ng window fram uffocati smell of powder nd Prince Andrew started to one de, rais g his arm, d fell his hest. Several officers ran up to him. F m the right s de f h s bdomen blood was wellin o t making large tain on the grass.

The militiam with tretchers who were called up stood beh d th fficers. Pri ce Andrew lay n his chest w th h face the grass breathing heavily d n sily

"What are you wa g f ? Com lon !

The peasants w t up and took him by his shoulders d legs but h moa ed p teously and, excha ging looks, they set him down ain.

Pick him p lift him, t all th same! cried someo

They ain took him by the sh ulders and laid him th stretcher

Ah, God My God What is t? The stomach. That means death! My God! — ces among th offi ers were heard sa ing

It flew hair breadth past my ear said the adjutant.

Th peasa ts, djustı g th tretch t th shoulders, tarted hurr edly al ng th p th they had trodden down to th dressi g ta tion.

Keep in step! Ah those peasants shouted an officer seizi g by their shoulders and checki g the peasants who were walking unevenly nd jolt g the stretcher

Get nto tep Fedo I say F dor! sa d the foremost peasant.

"Now th t s right! sa d the one behind joy— n

aid the

I run up

Prince Andrew ope ed h eyes nd looked up at the speaker from the stretcher into wh ch his head had sunk deep and gain his eyel ds drooped.

The mil tiamen carr ed Prince Andrew to the dressi g station by the wood, where wagons were stat o ed. The dress g station cons ted of three t nts w th fl ps turned b ck p tched at the edge of birch wood. In the wood, wa ons and horses were standing The horses were eati g o ts from their mo able troughs nd sparrows flew down and pecked the gra ns that fell Som crows scenting blood, flew mong th birch trees caw g impatiently Arou d th tents, o er m re than fi e cres blood stained men n vari us garbs stood, sat, o lay Around the wou ded stood crowds of sold er tretcher bearers w th dismal and attenti e faces, whom the officers keep ng order tr ed n va n to dri e from th spot. Dis egarding the officers orders, the soldiers stood lean ng

the tents cam n w l ud ngry cries and n w plaintive groans. Occas onally dressers ran out to f tch water o to po t out thos who were to be bro ght n next. Th wounded m n waiting th ir turn outs d the te ts groaned, sighed, wept, creamed swo e o asked for vodka. Some were deliri us. Prince Andrew bearers, tepp g o er the wounded who had not y t been b ndaged, took him as a regi mental commander close up to o f the tents and th re st pped, awa ting instructi ns. Pri ce Andrew p ned his eyes and f a l g tim could n t make ut what was go ng o around him. H remembered the meadow the w rmwood, the field th whirl g black

haired n ncommissioned officer with a ban

whistling shells flew unceasingly At times as if to allow them a respite a quarter of an hour passed during which the cannon balls and shells all flew overhead but sometim
men were
and the sl
away and t u carried off

With each fresh blow less and less chance of life remained for those not yet k
regimen
hundre
men w one and the same mood All alike were taciturn and morose Talk was rarely heard in the ranks and it ceased altogether every time the thud of a successful shot and the cry of stretchers! was heard Most of the time by their officers order the men sat on the ground One having t
shal
ing
bin ween his palms polished his bayonet another fingered the strap and pulled the buckle of his bandolier while another smoothed and refolded his leg bands and put his boots on again Some built little houses of the tufts in the plowed ground or plaited baskets from the straw in the cornfield All seemed fully absorbed in these pursuits When men were killed or wounded when rows of stretchers went past when some troops retreated and when great masses of the enemy came into view through the smoke no one paid any attention to these things But when our artillery or cavalry advanced or some of our infantry were seen to move forw
of

unconnected with the battle It was as if the minds of these morally exhausted men found relief in everyday commonplace occurrences A battery of artillery was passing in front of the regiment The horse of an ammunition cart put its leg over a trace Hey look at the trace horse! Get her leg out! She ll fall Ah they don t see it! came identical shouts from the ranks all along the regiment Another time general attention was attracted by a small brown dog coming heaven knows whence which trotted in a preoccupied manner in front of the ranks with tail stiffly erect till suddenly a shell fell close by when it yelped tucked its tail between its legs and darted as de Yells and shrieks of laughter rose from the whole regiment But such distractions lasted only a moment and for eight hours the men had been inactive without food in constant fear of death and their pale and gloomy faces grew ever paler and gloomier

Prince Andrew pale and gloomy like every one in the regiment paced up a
the
of t
bow behind his back There was nothing for him to do and no orders to be given Everything went on of itself The killed were dragged from the fro

n ample walked about among the ranks but he soon

bent on avoiding the contemplation of the horrors of their situation He walked along the meadow dragging his feet rustling the grass and gazing at the dust that covered his boots now he took big strides trying to keep to the footprints left on the meadow by the mowers then he counted his steps calculating how often he must walk from one strip to another to walk a mile then he stripped the flowers from the wormwood that grew along a boundary rut rubbed them in his palms and smelled their pungent sweetly bitter scent. Nothing remained of the previous day s thoughts He thought of nothing He listened with weary ears to the ever recurring sounds, distinguishing the whistle of flying projectiles from the booming of the reports glanced at the tiresomely familiar faces of the men of the first battalion and waited Here it comes this one is coming our way again he thought listening to an approaching whistle in the hidden region of smoke One another! Again! It has hit He stopped and looked at the ranks No it has gone over But this one has hit! And again he started trying to reach the boundary strip in sixteen paces A whizz and a thud! Five paces from him a cannon ball tore up the dry earth and disappeared A chill ran down his back Again he glanced at the ranks Probably many had been hit—a large crowd had gathered near the second battalion

Adjutant! he shouted Order them not to crowd together

The adjutant having obeyed this instruction approached Prince Andrew From the other side a battalion commander rode up

in the mere consciousness of life—returned to his memory not merely as something past but as something present.

The doctors were busily engaged with the wounded man the shape of whose head seemed familiar to Prince Andrew; they were lifting him up and trying to quiet him.

"Show it to me.... Oh, ooh.... Oh! Oh, ooh!" his frightened moans could be heard, subdued by suffering and broken by sobs.

Hearing those moans Prince Andrew wanted to weep. Whether because he was dying without glory or because he was sorry to part with life, or because of those memories of childhood that could not return, or because he was suffering and others were suffering and that man near him was groaning so piteously—he felt like weeping childlike, kindly, and almost happy tears.

The wounded man was shown his amputated leg stained with clotted blood and with the boot still on.

"Oh! Oh, ooh!" he sobbed, like a woman.

The doctor who had been standing beside him, preventing Prince Andrew from seeing his face, moved away.

"My God! What is this? Why is he here?" said Prince Andrew to himself.

In the miserable, sobbing, enfeebled man whose leg had just been amputated, he recognized Anatole Kurágin. Men were supporting ... of

close, and painfully connected with me," thought Prince Andrew, not yet clearly grasping what he saw before him. "What is the connection of that man with my childhood and my life?" he asked himself without finding an answer. And suddenly a new unexpected memory from that realm of pure and loving childhood presented itself to him. He remembered Natásha as he had seen her for the first time at the ball in 1810, with her slender neck and arms and with her frightened happy face ready for rapture, and love and tenderness for her, stronger and more vivid than ever, awoke in his soul. He now remembered the connection that existed between himself and this man who was dimly gazing at him through tears that filled his swollen eyes. He remembered everything, and ecstatic pity and love for that man overflowed his happy heart.

Prince Andrew could no longer restrain himself and wept tender loving tears for his fellow men for himself, and for his own and their errors.

"Compassion, love of our brothers, for those who love us and for those who hate us, love of our enemies; yes, that love which God preached on earth and which Princess Mary taught me and I did not understand—that is what made me sorry to part with life, that is what remained for me had I lived. But now it is too late. I know it!"

CHAPTER XXXVIII

THE TERRIBLE SPECTACLE of the battlefield covered with dead and wounded, together with the heaviness of his head and the news that some twenty generals he knew personally had been killed or wounded and the consciousness of the impotence of his once mighty arm, produced an unexpected impression on Napoleon who usually liked to look at the killed and wounded, thereby he considered, testing his strength of mind. This day the horrible appearance of the battlefield overcame that strength of mind which he thought constituted his merit and his greatness. He rode hurriedly from the battlefield and returned to the Shevárdino knoll where he sat on his campstool his sallow face swollen and heavy, his eyes dim, his nose red, and his voice hoarse, involuntarily listening, with downcast eyes to the sounds of firing. With painful dejection he awaited the end of this action in which he regarded himself as a participant and which he was unable to arrest. A personal, human feeling for a brief moment got the better of the artificial phantasm of life he had served so long. He felt in his own person the sufferings and death he had witnessed on the battlefield. The heaviness of his head and chest reminded him of the possibility of suffering and death for himself. At that moment he did not desire Moscow or victory or glory (what need had he for any more glory?). The one thing he wished for was ... when h

to strengthen the fire on the Russian troops crowded in front of Knyazkóvo Napoleon had assented and had given orders that news should be brought him of the effect those batteries produced.

An adjutant came now to inform him that the fire of two hundred guns had been concentrated on the Russians, as he had ordered, but that they still held their ground.

daged head He had been wounded in the head and leg by bullets Around him eagerly listening to his talk a crowd of wounded and stretcher bearers was gathered.

We kicked *him* out from there so that he chucked everything we grabbed the King himself! cried he looking around him with eyes that glittered with fever If only reserves had come up just then lads there wouldn t have been nothing left of him! I tell you surely

Like all the others near the speaker Prince Andrew looked at him with shining eyes and experienced a sense of comfort But isn t it all the same now? thought he And what will be there and what has there been here? Why was I so reluctant to part with life? There was something in this life I did not and do not understand

CHAPTER XXXVII

ONE OF THE DOCTORS came out of the tent in a bloodstained apron holding a cigar between the thumb and little finger of one of his small bloodstained hands so as not to smear it He raised his head and looked about him but above the level of the wounded men He evidently wanted a little respite After turning his head from right to left for some time he sighed and looked down

All right immediately he replied to a dresser who pointed Prince Andrew out to him and he told them to carry him into the tent

Murmurs arose among the wounded who were waiting

It seems that even in the next world only the gentry are to have a chance! remarked one

Pr n e An l

naked bleeding human bodies that seemed to fill the whole of the low tent as a few weeks previously on that hot August day such bodies had filled the dirty pond beside the Smolénsk road Yes it was the same flesh the same *chair à canon* the sight of which had even then filled him with horror as by a presentiment

There were three operating tables in the tent. Two were occupied and on the third

they placed Prince Andrew For a little while he was left alone and involuntarily witnessed what was taking place on the other two tables. On the nearest one sat a T

Cossack judg

beside him

and a specta a doctor was cutting into his muscular brown back

Ooh ooh ooh! grunted the Tartar and suddenly lifting up his swarthy snub-nosed face with its high cheekbones and baring his white teeth he began to wriggle and twitch his body and utter piercing ringing and prolonged yells On the other table round which many people were crowding a tall well fed man lay on his back with his head thrown back His curly h

of his l

Andre

chest t m down One large white plump leg twitched rapidly all the time with a feverish tremor The man was sobbing and choking convulsively Two doctors—one of whom was pale and trembling—were silently doing something to this man s other gory leg When he had finished with the Tartar whom they covered with an overcoat the spectacled doctor came up to Prince Andrew wiping his hands

He glanced at Prince Andrew s face and quickly turned away

Undress him! What are you waiting for? he cried angrily to the dressers

His very first remotest recollections of childhood came back to Prince Andrew s mind when the dresser with sleeves rolled up began hastily to undo the buttons of his clothes and undressed him The doctor bent down over the wound felt it and sighed deeply Then he made a sign to someone and the torturing pain in his abdomen caused Prince Andrew to lose consciousness When he came to himself the splintered portions of his thighbone had been extracted the torn flesh cut away and the wound bandaged Water was being sprinkled on his face As soon as Prince Andrew opened his eyes the doctor bent over kissed him silently on the lips and hurried away

After the sufferings he had been enduring Prince Andrew enjoyed a blissful feeling such as he had not e

n the mere conscious ess of l fe—r turned to us memory not me ely as something p t b t someth p esent

Th doct rs were bus ly engaged with the o nded ma th hap of whose he d seemed familiar to Prince Andrew they were l fting him p d tryi g to qu t h m.

"Sho tt me. Oh ooh Oh! Oh, ooh! his frighte ed m ans could be heard subd ed by suffen g and broken by sobs

Heari g those mo n P nce Andrew w nted t eep Wh ther becaus h was dying with

most happy tears

The ou ded man was hown his mputat ed leg ta ned with cl tted blood and w th the boot till on.

Oh Oh, ooh! h sobbed, like woman.

The doct who had been ta di bes d him, p eve tin Prince Andrew from see his face, mo ed way

My God What this. Why is h here. sa d Pri e A drew to himself.

I th miserabl sobb g, nfeebled man hose le had just been mputa ed, h recog ed A tol Kurágin. Men were pportin

closely d pa nfull co nected w th me, thought Prince Andrew not yet clearly grasping wha he saw bef him. "Wha is th connectio l tha man w th my childhood and my life. he asked himself w thout findi n answer And ddenly ew unexpected memory from that realm f pure d loving childhood presented tself to him. H remembered N tásha as he had seen her fo the first time t th ball in 8 with her ender neck nd arms and th f ened happ face ready for rapture, d love and endernes for her tronger and more nd than ever woke his soul. H now remembered the connection tha existed between himself and this man who was dimly gaz ng him through tears tha filled his sw l len eyes. H remembered everything, and ec stati p ty nd love for tha man overflowed h happy heart.

Princ Andrew could no longer restrain himself and wept tender loving tears for his fellow men f r h mself and f r h s own a d the r errors.

Compass on lo e of our brothers for those who lo e us and f tho e who hate us love of God n eached ht me made me sorry to part t re ma ed fo me had I lived. But now t is too late. I kn w t!

CHAPTER XXXVIII

The terrible pectacle of the battlefield covered w th dead nd wo nded, together with th hea ness of h s head nd the new that some twenty generals he knew personally had been killed o wo ded, nd the consciou ness of the impotence of h s o ce m ghty arm, produced an unexpected mpress n on Napoleon who usually l ked to look t the k lled and w unded, thereby he con dered testi g his str ngth of mi d. This day the horrible ppearance f the b ttlefield ercame that strength of mind which he thought constitut ed his merit nd his greatness. He rode hurried ly from the battl field nd returned t the Shevárdino kn ll where he sat on his campstool his sall w face sw llen nd hea y his eyes dim, his nose red, nd h vo ce h arse, n ol ta rily listen g, w th d wncast eyes to th sounds

felt in his own person the sufferi gs nd death h had w tnessed on the b ttlefield. The heavi ness of his head nd chest remi ded him of the possibil ty of sufferi g d death f r himself. At that moment he did not desire Moscow o victory gl ry (what need had he fo any more glory) The thi g he wished for was rest, tranquill ty nd freedom. But when he

to trengthen th fire n the Russian troops crowded n fro t of K yazkóvo N poleon had assen ed and had gi en orders that news sh uld be brought him of the effect those batteries produced.

An djuta t cam n w to f rm him that the fir of two hundred guns had been concen trated on th Russ ans, as he had ordered, but that they till h ld th ir ground.

Our fire is m

still they hold (

They want u Napoleon in a hoarse voice

Sire? asked the adjutant who had not heard the remark

They want more! croaked Napoleon frowning Let them have it!

Eve

did no

only b it was expected of him was being done And he fell back into that artificial realm of imaginary greatness and again—as a horse walking a treadmill thinks it is doing something for itself—he submissive ly fulfilled the cruel sad gloomy and inhuman role predestined for him

And not for that day and hour alone were the mind and conscience darkened of this man on whom the responsibility for what was happen ing lay more than on all the others who took part in it Never to the end of his life could he understand goodness beauty or truth or the significance of his actions which were too con trary to goodness and truth too remote from everything human for him ever to be able to grasp their meaning He could not disavow his actions belauded as they were by half the world and so he had to repudiate truth goodness and all humanity

Not only on that day as he rode over the battlefield strewn with men killed and maimed (by his will as he believed) did he reckon as he looked at them how many Russians there were for each Frenchman and deceiving him self find reason for rejoicing in the calculation that there were five Russians for every French man Not on that day alone did he write in a letter to Paris that the battlefield was superb because fifty thousand corpses lay there but even on the island of St Helena in the peace ful solitude where he said he intended to de vote his leisure to an account of the great deeds he had done he wrote

The Rus n w r h d l I ave l een the most popular war of mod m times t wa a of good sense f r re l nterests f r the tranq llity nd secu ity of all it was pu rely pac f c an l con rva tive

It as a war f r a great cause the end of un certainties and the beginn ng of sec rity A n w ho zon an l n w labors were op ng out f ll of well be ng and p osper ty for ll The Europe n system wa alre ly f n led all tl at r ai ed was to organ e it

Sat fed on these great po nts a l w th tran q ill ty everyw l ere I too sl ld l a e l d my *Congress* and my *Holy All ance* Those ideas were stolen from me In that reunion of great sovere gns we shoul l have di cussed our interests l ke one family and have rendered account to the peoples as clerk to master

Europe would in tl is way soon l ave l een in fact but one people and anyone who traveled anyw here would have found himself always in the common fatherlan l I should have deman led the freedom of all navigal le rivers f r everybody that the seas should be common to all and tl at the great stand ng arm es shoul l be reduced hence forth to mere gu ar ls for the sovereigns

On returning to France to the bo om of the g eat strong magnif cent peaceful and glorious fatherland I should have p oclaimed her frontiers immi tal le all future wars purely *d fe si e* all aggran l zeme it *a it t i l* I sho ıl l have as sociated my son in tl e Empire my *d tato h p* would have l een f nished a l re m

an t e nat ons!

My le sure then an l my ol l ge ı ould have l een les ted in company with the Empress and luring tl e royal apprent ceship of my son i leis r ly v siting w th o r own horses and l ke a tru country couple e ery corne f r ece v

Napoleon predestined by Providence for the gloomy role of executioner of the peo ples assured himself that the aim of his actions had been the peoples welfare and that he could control the fate of millions and by the employment of power confer benefactions

Of fo hun l e l tho an l men wl cro ed the V stula he w ote fı tl e of

h

r

iar

my as ti d mpo ed of

D ıt l Belgian men f om th

Rhin

m

Di

n l l es and f rty tl o l who pok F h The Ru an xped t on t l ly ost France les than f fty th an l m tl e Ru an rmy n ıt retr t from V ll to Mos w lost n the vari u l attles f times m

tl an tl e F

th li es of

of col l an l

f om Mosc

a ff red f u tl t

l y tl tl t t reached Vilna it n mbe ed only f fty tl t l an l at Kal sch less th n eigl teen

tl o n l

He imagi ed that the war w th Russ a came bo t by his will and the h rrors th t occurred d d n t tagger his soul He boldly took the b l ty for what happ ned nd h

bo per t than Hess ns nd Bavari ns

CHAPTER XXXIX

SEVERA TENS OF THO SA DS of the sla n l y n di erse postures nd ar us un f rms on th fiel s d mead ws bel ngi to th D vyd v famil d t th crow e fs—those fi lds nd meado s wher f hundreds f years the peasa ts f Borod ó Go k Shevárd no and Sem sk had ped the r harvests nd pas- he

m of ari us arms w nued u ed, th f ght ed l es dragged themsel es m nd b ck ls ex their nt n ed to fire.

O er th wh l field p ev u ly so ga ly bea tiful w th th gl tter l b y nets nd cl ud lets f sm k n th m rn g u ther n w prea d a mi t f d mp nd m k d tra g cid m ll f saltpete and blood. Cl uds gath ered d dr ps fra been to f ll n the dead d w unded n th l htened h us ed, d hes tat m as f t sa E ugh m n! En ugh Cease beth k y urs l es! What ar d g

T th m n of both des l k w rn ut by a t f food d est t began equ lly t p- pea d bt f l wh th they h ld co u u l ht th ll the f es ex p essed hes tat n d th quest n aros n every so l F what f wh m must I k ll d be k lled Y u ma go nd k ll wl m please, b I d w nt to do so nym

B g this th u ht had p ed n ery so l A y mom t hes m might ha e bee se ed w th horr t wh t they w do- g d m ght h hrown p everyth g and ru wa wher

B tl h ward th d f the b ttl th men f l ll tl h rr f wha tl ey wer do- g tho gl hey w uld h been gl d to lea ff som omp h bl mys eri us po er o t ed t trol them d they ll b h p h harges l ded, med and appl ed the match though only one art l ed out of every three and

l t e n

by the will of ma t who go erns men nd wo lds continued.

Anyo e looking at the d sorganized re r of the Russ n army would ha e sa d that f only the F ench m de one more sl ht effort it would d sappear and any ne looking at the r r of the French army w uld ha e sa l that the Russ ns need only m ke one more sl t effort and the Fr nch would be destroyed But ne ther the Fr nch n r the Russ ns m de th t eff rt, and the flame of b ttle burned slowly out.

The Russ ans d d not make that eff t be cause they we e not ttack ng the French At the beginn ng of the battle they stood block n the way to Moscow nd they st ll d d so at the end of th b ttle at the beg nn n But e e had the aim f the Rus n been to dri e tl e F ench from tl e r pos tions they could n t ha e made this l st effo t, f r all the Ru s n troops had been brok n up the e wa no p rt of the Russ n army that had n t uffe ed i the b ttle nd though still hold ng tl e pos t n they had lost ONE HALF f tl e r rmy

Th F ench with the mem ry of ll the r f rmer cto es during fifteen years w th tl assuran e of N poleon s n ncib l ty tl th consciousness that they h d captur d p t f the b ttlefield nd had l st only qu rte f their me d t ll had their Gua ds nt ct tw nty thousa d st ng might ea ly h e m d th t ff rt. Th F nch wh had ttacked the Russ n rmy n ord to dri e t fr m ts pos t n ought to ha e mad th t ffo t f lo g as the Russ n continued to block th ro d t Moscow as bef re the m of th F ch had n t been atta ned nd ll the r ff rts nd l sses we n ain B t the Fren h did n t make that effort. Some histori n s th t Napoleon need o ly ha e used h Old Guards who wer ntact, and th battle wo ld ha e been won. To peak of what w uld h

n t g e h G ds n t because h d d n t want to but because o ld n t be d ne All the gen rals, officers, d sold ers f the F nch

Our fire is mowing them down by rows but still they hold on said the adjutant

They want more! said Napoleon in a hoarse voice

Sire? asked the adjutant who had not heard the remark

They want more! croaked Napoleon frowning Let them have it!

Even before he gave that order the thing he did not desire and for which he gave the order only because he thought it was expected of him was being done And he fell back into that artificial realm of imaginary greatness and again—as a horse walking a treadmill thinks it is doing something for itself—he submissively fulfilled the cruel sad gloomy and inhuman role predestined for him

And not for that day and hour alone were the mind and conscience darkened of

wh

in

p ct u ot his life could he understand goodness beauty or truth or the significance of his actions which were too contrary to goodness and truth too remote from everything human for him

te truth goodness and all humanity

Not only on that day as he rode over the battlefield strewn with men killed and maimed (by his will as he believed) did he reckon as he looked at them how many Russians there were for each Frenchman and deceiving himself find reason for rejoicing in the calculation that there were five Russians for every Frenchman Not on that day alone did he write in a letter to Paris that the battlefield was superb because fifty thousand corpses lay there but even on the island of St Helena in the peaceful solitude where he said he intended to devote his leisure to an account of the great deeds he had done he wrote

The Ru n war houl l la e l e n tl e mo t popu la war of mo lern times it w a war of good sen e f r real inte ests f r the tranq ull ty nd secu r ty of all it was pu rely p cif an l on rva t ve

It w a a war for a great cause the end of uncerta nt es and tl e beg nn g of ec i ty A new l o i on an l new labors we e p n ng out full of well being an l p ospe ity fo ll The Eu op n ystem was lready fo n led all tl t re n ned was to organ e t

Sat f ed on these great po ts an l w tl tranq llity everywl ere I too should l ave h d my

C

st

fa e e account to the peoples as clerk to master

Europe would in tl is way soon have been in fact l ut one people and

an

c

fr

th n n to all and that the great stan ling arm es should l e redu ced henceforth to mere guar ls for the sovere gns

On returning to France to the bosom great st

fatherl

mmi t ie s e all aggrandi ement ant nati nal I should l have as so iated my s n in the Empi e my d ct t rsh p would have l een f nished

y old age wou ld l a e l een levote l in con pany with the Empres a l du ring the royal apprent cesl p of my s n to le surely vi iting witl ou r ou n l orses an l l ke a tru e country coupl e ery corner of tl e Empire e eiv ng ompla nt redress ng w ongs a l scat tering pu blic l uildings and benefact ons on all les and verywhere

Napoleon predestined by Providence for the gloomy role of executioner of the peoples assured himself that the aim of his actions had been the peoples welfare and that he could control the fate of millions and by the employment of power confer benefactions

Of f u r l un lred thou an l m n who c os ed tl e Vi tula he w te furtl e of

h

a

my

D t tle Rhi e t dmontese Swi G nevese T ans Rom inl l itant of the Tl irty eco l M l i ry Di i o of B me of H mbu g an l so on u t l led a ely a l n l an l forty tl o s n l wl o spok Fre l The R n xpe l ti n ct l ly ost Fran less tl an fifty th l m tl e Ru an my in t etr t from Viln t Mos w lost in th r o l attles fou times m n en th n tl e F nch r ny tl e l urn ng of M scow cost the li es of hu n lred tl an l Ru wl o l ed of ol la l w nt n tl woo l f lly l it m r l from Mos t the O l r tl e Ru an army also uffered f t tl eve ty f tl s n s tl at l y tl tl e t m t ea l ed Viln it n the ed ly fifty th u n l a l at Kal sch les tl an eighteen thou n l

Book Eleven 1812

*

CHAPTER I

n n l e m n

nto disco u u us eleme ts a l .ll k wn so-called soph m of the c e t con s t th that Ach lles could ne cat h p w th t rt e h wa f llow ng n sp te of the f ct th t he tra led te t mes f t a tl e t t e By the t me A h lles h s co e ed the d t th t p rated h m f om the t rto se

l e n

seemed t th ts sol bl I t d (that A h lles ld n o rt ke th t t) resul ed fro n th h t m t n was b trarily d ded to t co t u ele m ts herea the m t n both of A h lles d l the e w co t nu u

B) d pu g m ll r n l m ller eleme t of mot w nly ppro h sol t n f th p bl m b t e l t O ly whe we ha dm ted th co pt n of th f n te l m ll d th esul geom t cal pro gres w h mm rat o f one tenth d h f u d th um of th s progress n fi y d w ca h solut n I th prob lem.

A modern bra h f m themat cs h ng h es d the rt f l l g w th the nf tely m ll ca n w y eld solut n tl r m e mplex problems of mot n wl ch used to ppe sol bl

Th modern bra cl f m them t cs, un k wn t the cie t when deal g w th problems f m *t n adm ts th co cept* *f* l fi t ly mall d so co f rm t the h f n d t f m t n (bsol te cont u ty) d thereby corrects th nev table erro

h m n m nd cannot avo d when

) f s rt e

from others th u h the an t c t e g g to y e c t f r one e ent ln ys fl s un t rruptedly from n ther

Tl e econ l method s t con d r the c t o of some one m n— k or comm nd er— eq lent to the sum of ma y nd d u l w ll wl ereas th um of nd du l ll ne er e p essed by the ct ty of a ngle h to c person ge

H t rical sc nce in t e lea r to dr e re t truth cont u lly t kes sm ller n l m ll r un ts f r n t B c l we e sm ll tl e un t t takes we feel th t t take y un t d nnect d from otl ers, or to s s me *b* g g of any pl en me on or to y th t tl e w ll of m y me t e pressed b the ct of ny one h tor c perso ge is n t lf f l

It n eds no cr t cal e e t n t red ce utter l) to l nt y deduct drawn f m l t ry It merely necessary to elect so e larger or s n ller u t th subj ct f ob ervatu — cr t sm h s e ry ri ht t do g that wh te un t h t ry observes m t always be rb trar ly lected

O ly by t k ng nfin tes mally m ll u ts f b ers t n (th d fferent l of l t ry *th e th d dual* tende cies of men) d tt g t tl e art f tegrat g th m (th t fi l g the f thes f n tes n l) can we h pe t rr e t tl e l ws f h t ry

army knew it could not be done because the flagging spirit of the troops would not permit it

It was not Napoleon alone who had experienced that nightmare feeling of the mighty arm being stricken powerless but all the generals and soldiers of his army whether they had taken part in the battle or not after all their experience of previous battles—when after one tenth of such efforts the enemy had fled—experienced a similar feeling of terror before an enemy who after losing HALF his men stood as threaten

of the ba

French a

victory which is defined by the capture of pieces of material fastened to sticks called standards and of the ground on which the troops had stood and were standing but a moral victory that convinces the enemy of the moral superiority of his opponent and of his own impotence was gained by the Russians at Borodino The French invaders like an infuriated animal that has in its onslaught received a mortal wound felt that they were perishing but could not stop any more than the Russian army weaker by one half could help swerving By the impetus gained the French army was still able to roll forward to Moscow but there without further effort on the part of the Russians it had to perish bleeding from the mortal wound it had received at Borodinó The direct consequence of the battle of Borodinó was Napoleon s sens

on which at Borodino for the first time the hand of an opponent of stronger spirit had been laid

th h the collis n h d depr ved t of ll ts l e.

Th R ss s retr ated e ghty m l s—to be yo d Mosco — d th F nch rea hed M s-cow and th e came t t ndst ll For fi e ar w not n le b ttl

l

l

they m de a d sh f the K b (aft r ctory—f at Málo-Y lá ets the field f confl ct ga n rem ned th irs) thout dertak g gle s r u b ttle they fled ll m rap dly b k t Sm lé k bey nd Smol k bey d the Ber n beyond V ln d farther still

O thee f the tw nty th f August K t zo d the wh le Russ n rmy er con ed that th b ttl f Borod ów ct ry K t o po ted so to the Emp o H ga e ct o fin h

ev ry n who h d take p t n the tle k ew t

B t ll th t even g d next d y port came aft r ther of u he d-of losses f th loss f h lf the army nd f esl b ttl p ed phy cally mposs ble

It mp bl t g b ttl bef nf r mat ha l been coll ted th w u ded gath ered the ppl es f mmu u epl n hed, th l eck ed p new ffi ers p-po ted pl thos wh h d been k lled d bef th men had h d food nd le p A d mea h le th ry n t m g fter the b t l he F n l army d ced of tself po th R carr ed f rw d by the f f ts wn m me tum ow eem gly creased rse p po t n t th quar f th d ta e f m ts m Ku w h was t tack ext day d th wh le rmy des ed to d so B t t mak n tt ck the wish t do so t ff t th mu t lso be poss b l ty f do g t d th t pos b lity did n t t. l mpos ble n t retreat day m ch d th th sam way t wa mpos-bl no e eat n ther nd th d day m h d la t, the first of S ptember h the rmy d ew nea Moscow—desp t the gth f the feel g th h d n ll ra ks—th f ce of ci cumsta es compelled t t et bey d Mosc w A d th troops e tired mo l t day ma ch, d b n d ed Moscow t th nemy

For people ccustomed to th nk that pl ns of campa gn and b ttles a e made by ge erals —as any one of us s tt g er a map n his study m y im g ne how he w uld h e r ra ged th t gs in th or that battle—the ques t them el es Why d d Kut

[e s h t

certa n numb r of troops o l u de n erta n kn wn local ty nd beg n o pl n f ms m g en m me t. A comma der n ch f is ne er deal g w th the *b g* g of y e ent—the pos t on f om wh ch e lwa s co templat t. Th commander n ch ef s ways n the m dst of er es f sh ft n ev t nd so l n can t ny m ment o d r the wh l mp t f an e nt th t i occurr ng M ment by m ment th e e t s mp rc pt bly sh p tself nd t e ry m ment of th n t nu us un nterrupted h p ng of e nts the commander n h ef s n th m dst of a most compl pl y f t gues w rr es co t gen cies uth r t es projects, coun el th eats d decepti ns d nt nu lly obl ged to ply l ed l m

F li nd th t som body tu lly ubm tted s ch a proposal to h m B t c mm d n ch ef esp lly t d fficult m m t h l w ys bef e h m n t n p oposal b t d m lta eou ly And all these p posal b ed n strategies d t ct es co trad ct e ch ther A commander n h ef' bu ess it w uld em is mply t choose o f these p jects But e th t he can t do E ts d t m

th F ch t e. An der must be g en him t ce that ta t. And the o d t e-tre t carr es us p t th turn to th K l ga road. And f er the d j ta t comes the com missary ge eral k i g wher th to es t

tur
me ... their customary pursuits hasten from one side of Europe to the other plunder and slaughter one another triumph and are plunged in despair and for some years the whole course of life is altered and presents an intensive movement which first increases and then slackens What was the cause of this movement by what laws ...

Th...
befor...
men ... in the city of Paris calling these sayings and doings the Revolution then they give a detailed biography of Napoleon and of certain people favorable or hostile to him tell of the influence some of these people had on others and say that is why this movement took place and those are its laws

But the mind of man not only refuses to believe this explanation but plainly says that this method of explanation is fallacious because in it a weaker phenomenon is taken as the cause of a stronger The sum of human wills produced the Revolution and Napoleon and only the sum of those wills first tolerated and then destroyed them

But every time there have been conquests there have been conquerors every time there has been a revolution in any state there have been great men says history And indeed human reason replies every time conquerors appear there have been wars but this does not prove that the conquerors caused the wars and that it is possible to find the laws of a war in the personal activity of a single man Whenever I look at my watch and its hands point to ten I hear the bells of the neighboring church but because the bells begin to ring when the hands of the clock reach ten I have no right to assume that the movement of the bells is caused by the position of the hands of the watch

Whenever I see the movement of a locomotive I hear the whistle and see the valves opening and wheels turning but I have no right to conclude that the whistling and the turning of wheels are the cause of the movement of the engine

The peasants say that a cold wind blows in late spring because the oaks are budding and really every spring cold winds do blow when the oak is budding But though I do not know what causes the cold winds to blow when the oak buds unfold I cannot agree with the peasants that the unfolding of the oak buds is the cause of the cold wind for the force of the wind is beyond the influence of the buds I see only a coincidence of occurrences such as happens with all the phenomena of life and I see that however much and however carefully I observe the hands of the watch and the valves and wheels of the engine and the oak I shall not discover the cause of the bells ringing the engine moving or of the winds of spring To do that I must entirely change my point of view and study the laws of the movement of steam of the bells and of the wind History must do the same And attempts in this direction have already been made

To study the laws of history we must com...

... infinitesimally small elements by which the masses are moved No one can say in how far it is possible for man to ...

... and that as yet ...

... kings commanders and ministers and propounding the historians own reflections concerning these actions

CHAPTER II

The forces of a dozen European nations burst into Russia The Russian army and people avoided a collision till Smolénsk was reached and again from Smolénsk to Borodinó The French army pushed on to Moscow its goal its impetus ever increasing as it neared its aim just as the velocity of a falling body increases as it approaches the earth Behind it were seven hundred miles of hunger stricken hostile country ahead were a few dozen miles separating it from its goal Every soldier in Napoleon s army felt this and the invasion moved on by its own momentum

The more the Russian army retreated the more fiercely a spirit of hatred of the enemy flared up and while it retreated the army increased and consolidated At Borodin a collision took place Neither army was broken up but the Russian army retreated immediately after the collision as inevitably as a ball recoils after colliding with another having a ...

result b t th b ttle would st ll n t t ke pl c It would t take place becaus the command ers n t mer ly all r cogn zed the pos t on to be mpos ble b t n th ir con rsat o s er sn g wh t would h ppen fter its om

to be dec ded a d these con ersat ons ar u d h m wh ch were s um n too f ee a cl a acter mu t be stopped

He called the most important gen rals to h

ng

CHAPTER IV

THE COUNCI OF WAR began to assemble at two in the afternoon n the better nd oom er part of And ew Sa ostyán s hut The men w m n a d ch ldren of tl e l rge peasant fam ly cr wded t the b ck room cros the p s ge Only Malásha, And ew s s x ye r-old grandd ht whom h Serene H ghness l d p tted and t wh m he had g en a lump of ugar wh le d k g h tea, em ned o the f th b k e n th l wer room. Ma

k ew ll.

Be gsen who h d ch en the pos t on warmly d pl yed his Russ n p tr t m (Ku t m ld t l st n to this w th ut w n n) by t that Moscow must b defended.

Sp rr w H ll w tho t g g b ttle t eeded t cl m the su cess h w or l batd re t gi n to clea h m elf f the

q es h heard ply f m ny e l r e q est f l m w w H e l eally l l wed N poleo t reach M cow and when

d t ld B gs n to ssue d rs? O w t ea l er ll? Wh n wl n wa tl is t rr bl ff decided? Mos w must be b d d. Th rmy must t eat d the order to d so mu t be g To gi e th t terr bl o der seemed h m eq l t t es n th com d f th rmy A d n t nly d d h l e po er to wh ch he wa cu t med (h h ours ded t Pr Pro ó k u der hom h had served Tu key galled h m) b t h as co d th t he wa destı ed to sa Ru d tha that w why a t the Emper w h d by the w ll f the peopl h h d be h se comm der h ef He wa ed that he l e co ild m nt n c mma d f th rmy n thes d fficult ci m es d that n ll tl w ld he l e co ld e co terth cibl N poleo w th-ou fea d he w h rr fed t the th u ht f th ler h had t ssue. B t so neth g had

nto the room a d at d wn o t d benches n th corner under th c n Grand d d h m elf a M lá h her own m nd called Kut o sat p rt n d k corner be h d the o n H t, unk d ep n f ld g rmch nd cont ually cleared h thro t d pulled at the coll f hı co t wh ch th gh t wa unbutton d still eemed to p nch h neck Th who entered went up one by one t the field m rshal he pres ed the h ds of some d odded to thers. His d j tant Kaysáro was bout t draw back tl curta of th w nd w f ci Kutuz but the l tter mo ed his h d gril d K ysá ov unders ood that h s S ren Hi hness did n t h his f ce to b

Round th pea t deal table on wl h l y m ps pl n pencil d p pers so m ny peo- pl gathe ed th t th d l es b ought n th b nch nd put t bes de th table Ermo- l K ysá d Toll wh had j t rr ed t d wn n th be ch In the f most pl e mmed tely u de th con t Barcl y de T lly l h gl f h d merg to h b ld

be taken and the chief of the hospitals asks where the wounded are to go and a courier from Petersburg brings a letter from the sovereign which does not admit of the possibility of abandoning Moscow and the commander in chief's rival the man who is undermining him (and there are always not merely one but several such) presents a new project diametrically opposed to that of turning to the Kaluga road and the commander in chief himself needs sleep and refreshment to maintain his energy and a respectable general who has been overlooked in the distribution of rewards comes to complain and the inhabitants of the district pray to be defended and an officer sent to inspect the locality comes in and gives a report quite contrary to what was said by the officer previously sent and a spy a prisoner and a general who has been on reconnaissance all describe the position of the enemy's army differently People accustomed to misunderstand or to forget these inevitable conditions of a commander in chief's actions describe to us for instance the position of the army at Fili and assume that the commander in chief could on the first of September quite freely decide whether to abandon Moscow or defend it whereas with the Russian army less than four miles from Moscow no such question existed When had that question been settled? At Drissa and at Smolénsk and most palpably of all on the twenty fourth of August at Shevárdino and on the twenty sixth at Borodino and each day and hour and minute of the retreat from Borodino to Fili

CHAPTER III

WHEN ERMÓLOV having been sent by Kutuzov to inspect the position told the field marshal that it was impossible to fight there before Moscow and that they must retreat Kutuzov looked at him in silence

Give me your hand said he and turning it over so as to feel the pulse added You are not well my dear fellow Think what you are saying!

of his carriage and sat down on a bench by the roadside A great crowd of generals gathered round him and Count Rostopchin who had come out from Moscow joined them This brilliant company separated into several groups who all discussed the advantages and disadvantages of the position the state of the army the plans suggested the situation of Moscow and military questions generally Though they had not been summoned for the purpose and though it was not so called they all felt that this was really a council of war The conversations all dealt with public questions If anyone gave or asked for personal news it was done in a whisper and they immediately reverted to general matters No jokes or laughter or smiles even were seen among all these men They evidently all made an effort to hold themselves at the height the situation demanded And all these groups while talking among themselves tried to keep near the commander in chief (whose bench formed the center of the gathering) and to speak so that he might overhear them The commander in chief listened to what was being said and sometimes asked them to repeat their remarks but did not himself take part in the conversations or express any opinion After hearing what was being said by one or other of these groups he generally turned away with an air of disappointment as though they were not speaking of anything he wished to hear Some discussed the position that had been chosen criticizing not the position itself so much as the mental capacity of those who had chosen it Others argued that a mistake had been made earlier and that a battle should have been fought two days before Others again spoke of the battle of Salamanca which was described by Crosart a newly arrived Frenchman in a Spanish uniform (This Frenchman and one of the German princes serving with the Russian army were discussing the siege of Saragossa and considering the possibility of defending Moscow in a similar manner) Count Rostopchin was telling a fourth group that he was prepared to die with the city train bands under the walls of the capital but that he still could not help regretting having been left in ignorance of what was happening and that had he known it sooner things would have been different A fifth group displaying the profundity of their strategic perception discussed the direction the troops would now have to take A sixth group was talking absolute nonsense Kutuzov's expression grew more and more preoccupied and gloomy From all this talk he saw only one thing that to defend Moscow was a *physical impossibility* in the full meaning of those words that it was so utterly impossible that if any senseless commander were to give orders to fight confusion would

and country rder retreat.

After that the ge erals began to disperse with the so emn ty and circumspect silen of peopl who are leav after a f neral.

Some f the generals, in l w t nes d n a strain very different from the way they had spoken durin the council communicated somet n t their commander n chi f.

M lisha who had lo been expected for supper climbed carefully backwards down from the ven her bare l ttle feet catch n t its projectu ns, and l pp n between the legs f th generals sh darted out f the room.

When h had dism ssed th general Kutú zov sat lo tim with h lbows on the t e, thi ki always f the same terrible q estio When when d d th band nment of Mosco becom ev tabl When was that done which settled the matter And who was to blam f t

I d d not expect this, sa d h to his dju ta Sch eider when th l tter cam n late that ht. I did n t expect this I d d not t k this would happen.

"You should take some est, your Serene Highness, eplied Schn der

B t no They shall eat horseflesh et, like th Turks exclaimed Kutuzo w thout reply ng, striki g the tabl w th his podgy fist. "They shall too f nl

CHAPTER X

AT TH T ERY TIME, circumstances ev n more important than trea with ut ba tl., nam l th evacua ion nd b rn n of Moscow Rost pch n who is u uall ep esen ed as be g th to ator f that event, ed n altogether d fferen man e from Ku uzo

Af er th ba tl of Borod nó th band n ment nd burn of Moscow wa as nevi tabl h retreat f th rm bey nd Moscow w thou fi h

E ery Rus n m ht ha p ed cted t, not b easo b t b th feel mplan ed n each f d our f thers.

Th sam th g hat took pl ce n Moscow had happened ll th wn nd ll ges on Rus ia so l beg nn with Sm l k without th p rt cip ti f Coun Ros pch d his broadsheets. Th peopl wa ed th en em ernedl d d n t t bec m ex ed ca mo to p eces b t faced ts fa feel withi th tre gth find what would do th t mos diff cu. moment. And as soo the nem drew nea th wealthy classes went way ba don ng th ir property whil the poorer rema ned and burned and destroyed what was l ft.

The consciousness that this would be so and would always be so was and is present in the R ian. And a consc usness of

n S z Those who a ready n July and at the beg nning of Augu t howed th t they expected this. Thos who went away tak what they could nd ban d n ng the r houses nd h lf their bel ings did so from the l tent patr otism wh ch exp esses tself n t by phra es o by gi on ch ldren to sa the f therl nd and im l unnatural expl ts, but unobtrus l imply organically and therel re n th way that always produces th most powerful re sults.

"It is disgraceful to run away from dan er onl cowards are running awa from Moscow they were told. In his broadsheets Rostopch n impressed on them that to lea e Moscow was ham ful They were ash med to be called cowards ashamed to leave but still they left, know n t had to be d ne. Why did they go It impossibl to suppose th t Rost pch n had scared them by his accounts of horr rs N poleo had committed in conquered c untr es. The first peopl t g away wer the rich educated people who knew qu te well that V nn nd Berl n had remained intact nd that dur ing N poleon occupati n the inhab tants had spent their time pleasantly n the com p ny of th charmi Frenchmen wh m th Russians, nd especially th Russian lad es th n l ked so much.

They went wa because for Russ n there could be no question as to wh ther th gs would go well ll under French rul n Moscow It was out f th questi n to be u der F ench rule t would be th worst thing that could happen They went way even bef re th battl of Borodi ó and till more rap dly fter t, desp t Rostopch n calls t d f d Moscow o th nn u cement of hi ntenti n t tak th wo der w rking con of th Iber

fight N poleo d that they must go wa sorry as they were t band n th ir property

ed on his stomach On the other side sat Count Ostermann Tolstc y seemingly absorbed in his own thoughts His broad head with its bold features and glittering eyes was resting on his hand Raévski twitching forward the black hair on his temples as was his habit glanced now at Kutuzov and now at the door with a look of impatience Konovnitsyn s firm hand some and kindly face was lit up by a tender sly smile His glance met Malásha s and the expression of his eyes caused the little girl to smile

They were all waiting for Bennigsen who on the pretext of inspecting the position was finishing his savory dinner They waited for him from four till six o clock and did not be gin their deliberations all that time but talked in low tones of other matters

Only when Bennigsen had entered the hut did Kutuzov leave his corner and draw toward the table but not near enough fo
th

I
tion ussia s ancient and sacred capital without a struggle or are we to defend it? A prolonged and general silence followed There was a frown on every face and only Kutuzov s angry grunts and occasional cough broke the silence All eyes were gazing at him Malásha too looked at Granddad She was nearest to him and saw how his face puckered he seemed about to cry but this did not last long

Russia s ancient and sacred capital! he suddenly said repeating Ben

I

r u s an (He lurched his heavy body forward) Such a question cannot be put it is senseless! The question I have asked these gentlemen to meet to discuss is a military one The question is that of saving Russia Is it better to give up Moscow without a battle or by accepting battle to risk losing the army as well as Moscow? That is the question on which I want your *opinion* and he sank back in his chair

The discussion began Bennigsen did not yet consider his game lost Admitting the view of Barclay and others that a defensive battle at Fili was impossible but imbued with Rus sian patriotism and the love of Moscow he proposed to move troops from the right to the left flank during the night and attack the French right flank the following day Opin ions were divided and arguments were ad vanced for and against that project Ermolov Dokhturov and Raévski agreed with Bennig sen Whether feeling it necessary to make a sacrifice before abandoning the capital or guided by other personal considerations these generals seemed not to und
co
es
ab generals however un derstood it and leaving aside the question of Moscow spoke of the direction the army should take in its retreat Malásh

I
s u und and Longcoat as she termed Bennigsen She saw that they grew spiteful when they spoke to one another and in her heart she sided with Granddad In the midst of the conversation she noticed Granddad give Benn subtle
rand
h set
nnigsen suddenly reddened and paced angrily up and down the room What so affected him was Kutuzov s calm and quiet comment on the *advantage or disadvantage of Bennigsen s proposal to move troops by night from the right to the left flank to attack the French right wing*

Gentlemen said Kutuzov I cannot ap prove of the count s plan Moving troops in close proximity to an enemy is always danger ous and military history supports that view For instance Kutuzov seemed to reflect searching for an example then with a clear naive look at Bennigsen he added Oh yes take the battle of Friedland which I think the count well remembers and which was not fully successful only because our troops were rearranged too near the enemy

There followed a momentary seem

T
quer at there was no more to be said

During one of these pauses Kutuzov heaved a deep sigh as if preparing to speak They all looked at him

Well gentlemen I see that it is I who will have to pay for the broken crockery said he and r ng slowly he moved to the table Gen tlemen I have heard your view
w

The pri ce tried t comfort her but Hélène as if quit distraught, sa d throu h her tears that there was nothing to prevent her marry ng that there were preced nts (there were up to that time ery few but she mentioned N poleon and some other exalted person ges) that sh had never been her husband wife, and that he had been sacrificed.

But th law religion sa d the prince, aready yieldi g

"Th law relion n What ha e they been invented for if they can t arrange that? said H lè e.

The prince was urprised that so simpl an idea had not occurred to him nd he applied for dvice to th holy brethren of th Societ f Jesus, with whom he was on ntimate terms.

A few days later t n of those enchant ng fetes which H lène ga e at her country house

rob court wa presented to her and the garden by the light f th illum n tions and to the sound f musi talked to her f r lo time of th l f God, f Chri t, f the Sacred Heart, and f the consolati ns the one tru Catholic religion aff rds in this wo ld nd th ext. Hélèn was t uched, nd more than once tears rose t her eyes nd t those of Mon eur d J bert and th ir vo ces trembled. A dance for which her partner cam to seek her put an end to her discourse w th her future *d cteu d science* but th next even ng M ns eur d Jobert cam to see H lène when she was alone, and fter that often came gain

On da h ook th coun ess to Roman Catholi church, where h knelt d wn before th altar t wh ch h was led. The enchant ng, middle- ged Frenchman la d h ha d n her head nd, as he herself fterward described t sh felt somethi lik f esh breez wafted t her soul. I was explained to her that this was *la gr*

After that l g frocked bbé was brought to her Sh confessed to him d h bsol ed her from her sins. Next day he rece ed box ontai g th Sacred Host, whi h was left t her house for her t partak of. A few days later H lèn learned w th pleasure that sh had now been dmitted to the tru Cath l c Chur h nd that n few days the P pe himself would hear f her nd would send her certa document.

All that was done around her and to her at this time, all the ttention devoted to her by so many clever men and expressed in such pleasant, refined ways, and the state of dovelike purity she was n w n (he wore only wh te dresses and wh t ribbon *all that t me*) ga e her pleasure but he plea ure d d not ... moment to forget her aim. And

ous operat ons necessary to ... husband sh uld be performed. In her view the a m of e ery rel g n was mer ly to preserv certa n propriet es while aff rding satisfaction to human desires. And w th this aim n o e of her talks w th her F ther Co fessor she n ted on an n wer to the question n ho far was h bound by her marriage

They were sittu g n th twil ght by win d w n the draw g room. Th scent of fl wers cam n t th window H lèn wa wearing a white dress transparent over her houlders and bosom. Th bbé well fed man w th plump lean-sha n ch n pleasant firm mouth and whit hands meekly f lded on his knees, sat lose to H lèn nd w th subtl smil on his l p nd peaceful look of del ht t her beauty occas nally glanced t her f ce s he plained his op n on the ubject. Hélèn w th an uneasy smile looked t his curly hai

part, by enterin the married state w thout faith n th religious significance of marri ge

cu g? A enial, o mortal s ? A ven l sin

Lay member of the Society f Jesus.

to destruction They went away without think ing of the tremendous significance of that im mense and wealthy city being given over to destruction for a great city with wooden build ings was certain when abandoned by its in habitants to be burned They went away each on his own account and yet it was only in con sequence of their going away that the momen tous event was accomplished that will always remain the greatest glory of the Russian peo ple The lady who afraid of being stopped by Count Rostopchin s orders had already in

parte s servant was really simply ... carrying out the great work which saved Russia But Count Rostopchin who now taunted those who left Moscow and now had the govern ment offices removed now distributed quite useless weapons to the drunken rabble now had processions displaying the icons and now forbade Father Augustin to remove icons or the relics of saints now seized all the private carts in Moscow and on one hundred and thirty six of them removed the balloon that was being constructed by Leppich now hinted that he would burn Moscow and related how he had set fire to his own house now wrote a proclamation to the French solemnly upbraid ing them for having destroyed his Orphanage now claimed the glory of having hinted that he would burn Moscow and now repudiated the deed now ordered the people to catch all spies and bring them to him and now re proached them for doing so now expelled all the French residents from Moscow and now allowed Madame Aubert Chalmé (the center of the whole French colony in Moscow) to re main but ordered the venerable old postmas ter Klyucharev to be arrested and exiled for no particular offense now assembled the people ... and now

gate now declared that he wou ... the fall of Moscow and now wrote French verses in albums concerning his share in the ... man did not understand the mean

... feat and like a child he made spo ... mentous and unavoidable event—the abandon ment and burning of Moscow—and tried with his puny hand now to speed and now to stay the enormous popular tide that bore him along with it

CHAPTER VI

HELENE having returned with the court from Vilna to Petersburg found herself in a difficult position

In Petersburg she had enjoyed the special protection of a grandee who occupied one of the highest posts in the Empire In Vilna she had formed an intimacy with a young foreign prince When she returned to Petersburg both the magnate and the prince were there and both claimed their rights Hélène was faced by a new problem—how to preserve her intimacy with both without offending either

What would have seemed difficult or even impossible to another woman did not cause the least embarrassment to Countess Bezukhova who evidently deserved her reputation of being a very clever woman Had she attempted concealment or tried to extricate herself from her awkward position by cunning she would have spoiled her case by acknowledging her self guilty But Hélène like a really great man who can do whatever he pleases at once as sumed her own position to be correct as she sincerely believed it to be and that everyone else was to blame

The first time the young foreigner allowed himself to reproach her she lifted her beauti ful head and half turning to him said firmly

That s just like a man—selfish and cruel! I expected nothing else A woman sacrifices her self for you she suffers and this is her reward! What right have you monseigneur to demand an account of my attachments and friendships? He is a man who has been more than a father to me! The prince was about to say some thing but Hélène interrupted him

Well yes said she it may be that he has other sentiments for me than those of a father ... t my door ... uld repay ... monsei ... intimate feelings I render account only to God and to my conscience she concluded laying her hand on her beautiful fully expanded bosom and looking up to heaven

You won t deign to demean yourself by marrying me you said Hélène beginnin to cry

benned fingers. "Tell me as you would a sister what I ought to do. Which of the two?"

Bilibin wrinkled up th kin over hi eyebrows and pondered, with a smile on his l ps.

"You are not taking m un wares, you know," said he. As tru friend, I ha thought and thought again about your aff ir Y u see f you marry th prince —he meant th younger man— nd he crooked one finger ou I rever lose chance of marrying the other and you will disp ease the court bes des. (Y u know there is som kind of connecti n) But f you marry the old count you will mak his last days ha py and as wid w f the Grand the prince would no l ver be mak n a m sall ance by marrying you," and Bilibin smoothed out his forehead.

"That tru friend sa d Hélène beaming and again touchin Bil bin s sleeve. "But I lo them, you know and d n t want t distress either of them. I would gi my lif for the happiness of them both.

Bilibin shrugged his shoulders, as much as to sa that not even h could h lp in that difficulty

U ... maît esse femme That what is called putting things squarel Sh would l k to be married t all three t th same time, thought he

But tell me, how will your husband look t matter?" Bilibin asked, his reputation being so well established that h d d no fear to ask so naive q estion "Will h agree?"

"Oh, h loves m so sa d Hélèn who fo some reason imagi ed that P erre too l ed her H will do anythi g f me.

B bin puckered hi skin in preparation for something witty

"Even d vorce ou?" said he.

Hélè lau ed.

Amo those who ventured t d ubt the pr fab f th p posed marriage was Hé len mother Pri cess Kura ina. Sh was continually tormen ed by jealousy of her daughter nd n w t t jealous co erned sub- ... daughter's early one morning so as to find her alone.

Having listened to her mother s objecti ns, Hélène smiled blandly and iron call

But t says plainly" 'Whosoever shall marry her that is divorced sa d the old princess.

"Ah Maman n d t s pas d bêt s s V us n comprenez rien D ns ma posit n j des ... dero s" sa d Hélène chan n from Russian h always felt that her case did not sound quit clear into French wh ch suited t better

But, my dear

"Oh, Mamma how is it you don t understand that th H ly F ther who has the right to grant dispensations

Just then the l dy compan n who l ved with Hélène came n to nnounce that H s H hness was n the ballroom and wished to see her

N d tes-l q e j e veu pas l o q j suis f rieus co t e lu parce q l m a m q é parole" — " sa d d rt

sied. The youn man who had er ter u too no n tice of her Th princess nodded to her daughter and sidled out of th room.

"Yes, she is right, thought the old princess, all her con ction diss pated by the ppear ce I H Highness. "Sh is right, but how is t that we in our irrecoverable yo th did not k ow t. Yet t is so imple, she th ught as she got into her carriage.

B th beginning of August Hélène affairs were clearly defined and she wrot a letter to her husband—who as sh imagined, lo ed l er ery much— nform him of her tent n to marry N N nd of her having embraced the on true faith, and askin him to carry out all th f rmalities necessary f divorce, which would be explained to him by th bearer of the letter

And so I pray God have you, my friend, in His holy and powerful keeping—Y friend Hélène.

ber d gh showed her ext th Gospel hich (t seemed to him) plainl f rb ds remarriage hi th husband is al ve.

Armed w th these arguments, wh ch p peared to her unanswerabl she dro to her

A masterly woman.

"Oh, Mamma, don talk nonsense! Y u don t understand anything In m position I have obligations.

N tell him I don wish to see him, I am furious with h m f not keeping his word me.

"Coun ess there is mercy for every sin.

But suddenly Hélène who was getting bored said with one of her bewitching smiles But I think that having espoused the true religion I cannot be bound by what a false religion laid upon me

The director of her conscience was astounded at having the case presented to him thus with the simplicity of Columbus egg He was delighted at the unexpected rapidity of his pupil s progress but could not abandon
ficeof –

I
said and began refuting his spiritual daughter s arguments

CHAPTER VII

HÉLÈNE UNDERSTOOD that the question was very simple and easy from the ecclesiastical point of view and that her directors were making difficulties only because they were apprehensive as to how the matter would be regarded by the secular authorities

So she decided that it was necessary to prepare the opinion of society She provoked the jealousy of the elderly magnate and told him what she had told her other suitor that is she put the matter so that the only way for him to obtain a right over her was to marry her The elderly magnate was at first as much taken aback by this suggestion of marriage with a woman whose husband was alive as the younger man had been but Hélène s imperturbable conviction that it was as simple and natural as marrying a maiden had its effect on him too Had Hélène herself shown the least sign of hesitation shame or secrecy her cause would certainly have been lost but not only did she show no signs of secrecy or shame on the contrary with good natured naïveté she told her intimate friends (and these were all Petersburg) that both the prince and the magnate had proposed to her and that she loved both and was afraid of grieving either

A rumor immediately spread in Petersburg not that Hélène wanted to be divorced from her husband (had such a report spread many would have opposed so illegal an intention) but simply that the unfortunate and interesting Hélène was in doubt which of the two men she should marry The question was no longer whether this was possible but only which was the better match and how the matter would be regarded at court There were it is true some rigid individuals unable to rise to the height of such a question who saw in the project a desecration of the sacrament of marriage but there were not many such and they remained silent while the majority were interested in Hélène s good fortune and in the question which match would be the more advantageous Whether it was right or wrong to remarry while one had a husband living they did not discuss for that o

t

c

to Moscow who had come to Petersburg that summer to see one of her sons allowed herself plainly to express an opinion contrary to the general one Meeting Hélène at a ball she stopped her in the middle of the room and amid general silence said in her gruff voice So wives of living men have started marrying again! Perhaps you think you have invented a novelty? You have been forestalled my dear! It was thought of long ago It is done in all the brothels and with these words Márya Dmítrievna turning up her wide sleeves with her usual threatening gesture and glancing sternly round moved across the room

Though people were afraid of Márya Dmítrievna she was regarded in Petersburg as a buffoon and so of what she had said they only noticed and repeated in a whisper the one coarse word she had used supposing the whole sting of her remark to lie in that word

Prince Vasíli who of late very often forgot what he had said and repeated one and the same thing a hundred times remarked to his daughter whenever he chanced to see her

Hélène I have a word to say to you and he would lead her aside drawing her hand downward I have heard of certain projects concerning you know Well my dear child you know how your father s heart rejoices to know that you You have suffered so much But my dear child consult only your own heart That is all I have to say and concealing his unvarying emotion he would press his cheek against his daughter s and move away

Bilíbin who had not lost his reputation of an exceedingly clever man and who was one of the disinterested friends so brilliant a woman as Hélène always has—men friends who can never change into lovers—once gave her his view of the matter at a small and intimate gathering

Listen Bilíbin said Hélène (she always called friends of that sort by their surnames) and she touched his coat sleeve with her white

There was not room to be had t the inn they were ll occup ed. P erre went ut nto the yard and, co ering himself up head and all, la down in his carriage.

CHAPTER IX

SCARCELY HAD PIERRE la d his head on the pillow before h felt himself fall g asleep, but suddenl almost w th the distinctness of reality he heard the *boom boom boom* f fir the thud f projectiles, groans nd cries, d feeling d s l d

through th gatewa splashi g throu the mud, and talked t the nnkeeper Abo e Pierre head som pigeons, distu bed by the movement h had mad n sittin up fluttered under the dark roof f the penthouse. Th courtyard was permeated by a tron peaceful smell of table yards, d lightful to Pierre t that moment. H could see the clear starry k between th dark roofs f two pent houses.

"Tha k God, there is no more of that he thoug t, coveri p his head gain. Oh, what terribl thin is fear a d how shamefully I yielded t t But they *they* were steady and calm all the time t th end thought he.

They in P erre m nd, were th soldiers, those ho had been t th battery those who had given him food, nd those who had prayed before the co *They* those strange men h had not previously known ood out clearly and sharpl from everyo lse.

"T be sold er just soldier thought Pierre as h f ll as eep t enter commun l lif complet l to be imbued b what makes them what they are. Bu how cast off all the superfluous, dev l h burden of m outer ma There wa time when I could h e don t. I could hav ru wa from my father as I wa ed to. Or I m ght ha e been sent serv as sol er f er the du l w th D l kho And the memory f th di er t the English Cl b en h had challenged D l khov flashed through P err m d, d h n h remembered h ben fa t Torzh k And now

P erre. "Yes, he d ed and I did n t know he was li e. H w sorry I am that he d ed nd how glad I am that he is al ve aga n On o e s de of the table sat Anatole Dolokhov Nesvitski, Deniso nd others like them (n his dream the category to which these men belonged was as clearly defined in his m nd as the category of those he termed *they*) nd he heard those people, Anatol and Dolokho hout nd ing loudly yet throu h th ir houtin the vo ce of hi benefact r was heard speaking all the time and the sound of his words was as w ghty and un nterrupted a the booming on the battlefield but pleasant and comf rting P erre did not u derstand what his benefactor was sa but he knew (the catego es of thou hts were lso qu te dist nct n his dream) that h wa talki of goodness nd the poss b l ty of be g what *they* were. And *they* w th their imple, kind, firm faces surrou ded h ben fact on ll s des. B t thou h they were kindly they did not look at P erre nd d d not know h m. Wish to speak and to ttract th r ttentio he got up but t that moment hi legs grew cold and bare.

He felt ashamed, and with one arm covered h legs from wh ch his cloak had in f ct sl pped. F a m ment as h was rearran n his cloak P erre opened his eyes nd saw the sam pent house roofs, posts, nd yard, but now they were ll bluish, l t up d glittering with frost or dew

It dawn thought P erre "But th t not what I want. I want to hear nd u derstand m benef ct r s words. Aga n h co ered himself up with hi cloak but now ne ther the lodge n his benefact r was there. There were only th u hts clearl expressed n words, thou hts th t someo e was utterin o that he h mself wa f rmul u

Afterwards when he recalled those thou hts P erre was co ced that someone outsid h mself had poken them, th ugh the impressions of that d had evoked them. He had never t seemed t him been ble to th nk d express hi tho hts l k that when wake.

"To endure war th most difficult ubordinati n of man freedom to th law of God," th vo ce had sa d. "Simplicit is ubmission to the w ll of God you ca not escape from H m.

be It is my benefactor Bu h died thought sesses ll. If there were n suffering man would

This letter was brought to Pierre s house when he was on the field of Borodinó

CHAPTER VIII

TOWARD THE END of the battle of Borodinó Pierre having run down from Raévski s battery a second time made his way through a gully to Knyazkóvo with a crowd of soldiers reached the dressing station and seeing blood and hearing cries and groans hurried on still entangled in the crowds of soldiers

The one thing he now desired with his whole soul was to get away quickly from the terrible sensations amid which he had lived that day and return to ordinary conditions of life and sleep quietly in a room in his own bed He felt that only in the ordinary conditions of life would he be able to understand himself and all he had seen and felt But such ordinary conditions of life were nowhere to be found

Though shells and bullets did not whistle

suffering exhausted and sometimes strangely indifferent faces the same blood the same soldiers overcoats the same sounds of firing which though distant now still aroused terror and besides this there were the foul air and the dust

Having gone a couple of miles along the Mozháysk road Pierre sat down by the roadside

Dusk had fallen and the roar of guns died away Pierre lay leaning on his elbow for a long time gazing at the shadows that moved past

and sat up He had no idea how long he had been there In the middle of the night three soldiers having brought some firewood settled down near him and began lighting a fire

The soldiers who threw sidelong glances at Pierre got the fire to burn and placed an iron pot on it into which they broke some dried bread and put a little dripping The pleasant odor of greasy viands mingled with the smell

And who may you be? one of them suddenly asked Pierre evidently meaning what Pierre himself had in mind namely If you want to eat we ll give you some food only let us know whether you are an honest man

I I said Pierre feeling it necessary to minimize his social position as much as possible so as to be nearer to the soldiers and better understood by them By rights I am a militia officer but my men are not here I came to the battle and have lost them

There now! said one of the soldiers

Another shook his head

Would you like a little mash? the first soldier asked and handed Pierre a wooden spoon after licking it clean

Pierre sat down by the fire and began eating the mash as they called the food in the cauldron and he thought it more delicious than any food he had ever tasted As he sat bending greedily over it helping himself to large spoonfuls and chewing one after another his face was lit up by the fire and the soldiers looked at him in silence

Where have you to go to? Tell us! said one of them

To Mozháysk

You re a gentleman aren t you?

Yes

And what s your name?

Peter Kirílych

Well then Peter Kirílych come along with us we ll take you there

In the total darkness the soldiers walked with Pierre to Mozháysk

with the soldiers quite forgetting that his inn was at the bottom of the hill and that he had already passed it He would not soon have remembered this such was his state of forgetfulness had he not halfway up the hill stumbled upon his groom who had been to look for him in the town and was returning to the inn The groom recognized Pierre in the darkness by his white hat

Your excellency! he said Why we were beginning to despair! How is it you are on foot? And where are you going please

Oh yes! said Pierre

The soldiers stopped

So you ve found your folk? said one of them Well good by Peter Kirílych—isn t it

Good by Peter Kirílych! Pierre heard the other voices repeat

Good by! he said and turned with his groom toward the inn

I ought to give them something! he thought and felt in his pocket No better not! said another inner voice

Tl ere not a room t be l l at the inn they e e ll c uped P erre went out ı t the yard and e ı g h ms lf up head a d all lay d n h s carr ge

CHAPTER IX

SCA E Y H D PIERRE l d h head on the p l l bef e l e felt l mself f ll g asleep b t dde ly lmost w th the d tı ctness f re-l ty he l a d tl e *b m b om b om* of fr g th tl ud f p oject le gr s nd cr es d smelled blood a d po de a d feel ng [h rr a d d ead of d atl se d h m T lled

h

l

m d a d t lked t

P rre l ad some p ge n d turbed by tl e m ment he h d ad ı tt g up fl tt ed d r th d k oof f the penth use The

h es

'Th nk God the n m of th t' he th ght, e g up h he d agan Oh h t terr ble th ng fe d h h me fully I y eld d t ıtl B t they *they* we e ste dy d calm ll the t me t the nd tl ght he

They P erre m d we e th sold ers those ho h d be t th b ttery th who h d g h m food d those wh h d pray l l el e the con *Th* y th e st nge men he had ot p e ly kno t l out cl rly d sh ply f m e ery el

'T b ld er ju t ld er! th ught P rr he fell asleep to e ter c mmu l l l ompl t ly t b mb ed by wh t makes tl m wh t th y re B t h w t off ll th pe fl d l h bu den f my t r m ? Th e w t me when I uld h e d t I ld h e r ay f om my f th r I ted t O I m ght h been tt rve sold ft th d el w tl D l kh

r

P f sol m m et g f the l dge p e d ll to l m d lt w t k ng pl t the E gl l Cl b d meo e n r nd d to h m sat t th e d f th t ble Yes th t h l lt my b f ct But l d ed! th ht

P erre Yes he d ed and I d d not know l e wa al ve How sorry I am th t he d ed an l w glad I a n tl at l e ıs al e gain! On one h de of the table sat A atole Dólokl ov Nes-s t ski De fso and others l ke tl em (n h s dream tl e category to wl ch these men be-l nged was as cle rly def ned ın h m n l as the categ ry of those he termed *tl ey*) and l e he rd tl se people An tole an l Dólokl o sl uting ds gı g lo lly yet tl rougl tl e r sh ut g the v ce of h s be ef ct r was l eard spe king all the t me n l the soun l of his wor l wa as we ghty and u nterrupte l a the boom ng o the b ttlef el l but pleas nt a l comf ting Pierre d d not u derst d wl at h ben fact r as sayı g but he knew (tl e h ht we e also q te d st nct

u o u

th u h they were kı dly they d d t look at P rre a d d d n t kn w h m W sl to speak nd to ttract the r attent on he got up but at tl at mo ne t h s legs grew c ld and bare

He f lt l med and w th o e rm co e ed h l k h d f ct l pped

d v

It dawn tho l t P rre But th t s not h t I w nt I wa t to hear a d understand my b nef to s w d Aga n he co ered h m elf up w th l s l k but w e the tl e lodge no h benef t r wa there There w e nly th ughts cle rly e pres ed ın w d th ht th t som e w utte g or that he h m elf w s f rm l t g

Aft rv ds when he called th thoughts P err w co ced th t s m o e outs de h mself h l p ke them th gh the mp es-n f th t day l d e oked them H h d ne t med t h m bee able to th k d exp ess h th gl ts l ke th t whe w ke

'T e d e w them t d ff ult ubor d t f m n f ced m t th l of God the l l d S mpl ty s subm n to th w ll of G d y u t pe f m H m A d *tl ey* e mple *Tl ey* d n t t lk b t ct The sp k n w l l er but the unspoken s g ld n M can be m te of n th g wh le he f rs d th b th wh does not f t p s-ses es ll If th ewere n uffe g man v ould

This letter was brought to Pierre s house when he was on the field of Borodinó

CHAPTER VIII

TOWARD THE END of the battle of Borodinó Pierre having run down from Raévski s battery a second time made his way through a gully to Knyazkóvo with a crowd of soldiers reached the dressing station and seeing blood and hearing cries and groans hurried on still entangled in the crowds of soldiers

The one thing he now desired with his whole soul was to get away quickly from the terrible sensations amid which he had lived that day and return to ordinary conditions of life and sleep quietly in a room in his own bed He felt that only in the ordinary conditions of life would he be able to understand himself and all he had seen and felt But such ordinary conditions of life were nowhere to be found

Though shells and bullets did not whistle over the road along which he was going still on all sides there was what there had been on the field of battle There were still the same suffering exhausted and sometimes strangely indifferent faces the same blood the same soldiers overcoats the same sounds of firing which though distant now still aroused terror and besides this there were the foul air and the dust

Having gone a couple of miles along the Mozháysk road Pierre sat down by the road side

Dusk had fallen and the roar of guns died away Pierre lay leaning on his elbow for a long time gazing at the shadows that moved past him in the darkness He was continually imagining that a cannon ball was flying toward him with a terrific whizz and then he shuddered and sat up He had no idea how long he had been there In the middle of the night three soldiers having brought some firewood settled down near him and began lighting a fire

The soldiers who threw sidelong glances at Pierre got the fire to burn and placed an iron pot on it into which they broke some dried bread and put a little dripping The pleasant odor of greasy viands mingled with the smell of smoke Pierre sat up and sighed The three soldiers were eating and talking among themselves taking no notice of him

And who may you be? one of them suddenly asked Pierre evidently meaning what Pierre himself had in mind namely If you want to eat we ll give you some food only let us know whether you are an honest man

I I said Pierre feeling it necessary to minimize his social position as much as possible so as to be nearer to the soldiers and better understood by them By rights I am a militia off

Another shook his head

Would you like a little mash? the first soldier asked and handed Pierre a wooden spoon after licking it clean

Pierre sat down by the fire and began eatin the mash as they called the food in the cauldron and he thought it more delicious than any food he had ever tasted As he sat bending greedily over it helping himself to large spoonfuls and chewing one after another his face was lit up by the fire and the soldiers looked at him in silence

Where have you to go to? Tell us said one of them

To Mozháysk

You re a gentleman aren t you?

Yes

And what s your name?

Peter Kirílych

Well then Peter Kirílych come alon with us we ll take you there

In the total darkness the soldiers walked with Pierre to Mozháysk

with the soldiers quite forgetting that his inn was at the bottom of the hill and that he had already passed it He would not soon have remembered this such was his state of forgetfulness had he not halfway up the hill stumbled upon his groom who had been to look for him in the town and was returning to the inn The groom recognized Pierre in the darkness by his white hat

Your excellency! he said Why we were beginning to despair! How is it you are on foot? And where are you going please

Oh yes! said Pierre

The soldiers stopped

So you ve found your folk? said one of them Well good by Peter Kirílych—isn t it

Good by Peter Kirílych! Pierre heard the other voices repeat

Good by! he said and turned with his groom toward the inn

I ought to give them somethin ! he thought and felt in his pocket No better not! said another inner voice

Ther as not oom to be had at the nn they e e ll occup ed. P err w nt out into th yard d co er g h m elf up head and ll, lay d n n his carr ge.

CHAPTER IX

SCARCELY H. PIERRE l d h head on th p l low bef e he felt h ms lf fall a leep but sudd nl almost w th the di t ct es f re alty h heard the *b om boom bo m* of fir ng th th d f p ject les gro ns nd cries d po der and a feel g led h s qu l sed the bo e m d, and talked

P err head some p eo d t rbed by the mo emen he had made n s tt up fluttered under the da k roof f th p nthouse The hol courtvard was permeated by str pe f l m ll f stable yards del l tful t P erre t that moment. He could ee the clear tarry ky between th dark roof of tw pent houses.

"Th k God ther n m e of th tl he thought, co eri up h s h d aga n Oh what terr ble th g fea d how hame fully l y elded t t But they *they* wer teady d calm all the t me to th nd tho ght he.

They P erre m nd, w th sold ers those h h d been t th b ttery those wh had g h m food nd th e wh h d prayed bef the n *They* those tra ge m n h had t prev usly k wn stood out clearly d sharply from ery lse

"T be sold ju t sold er thought P err h f ll asle p t en mmunal l f compl t l to be mbued by wh t makes them wha they re But l w cas ff ll the perfl u d l h bu d f my uter m n? Ther wa t m when I could h d n t. I ld h run way from my f ther as I a ted t O I m ght h be t to erve sold fter th d l w tl D l kh

A d th memory f th d nner t the E gl h Cl b h l h d ch ll ed D l kh flashed hrou h P erre m d d tl l mem bered h be f ct t T rzh k A d n w p f solem meet g f h l dge p se ed self h m d It w t k g pl t th E gl l Cl b d someo e near nd dear h m sat t the e d f h table Yes th t s h l It my be f ct But h d ed th u ht

P erre "Yes he d ed and I d d not know he was l e Ho sorry I am that l e d ed and how gl d I am that l e is al e ga ! On one s de of the t ble sat Anatole Dól kl o Nes vitski Deniso and others like tl em (n h s dream the categ ry to wh ch these men be l nged was as clea ly defi ed in h m nd as the category of those l e termed *they*) nd he heard those people Anatole a d Dólokho sh ut ng nds g g l udly yet throu h the r shout ng the v e of h s benefact r wa heard peak g ll the t me nd the so nd of h s w ds w s as we gl ty d uninterrupted a the boom ng on the battlefield but pleasant nd comfort g P erre d d ot underst nd what wa say g but he knew (the t nct odness were. faces es. But look at thou h they we e k uy t j u P rre and d d not kn w h m W l n to speak d t attract the r ttent he got up but t th t m m nt h legs gre cold and bare

H felt hamed and w th one rm co ered h legs f m wh ch his clo k h d n f ctsl pped. Fo m me t h a rra g g h clo k P err op ed his eyes nd saw the me pent house roof p ts nd yard but now th y were ll blu sh l t up and gl ttering w th fro t or dew

It dawn thou ht P erre But th t s n t wh t I wa t. I wa t to l ear nd u d rst d my b n f cto s wo ds Aga he co red him elf up w th h cl ak but n w e th r the lod e n his benef ct r wa there There were only th ughts clea ly p es ed n word th ht th t someo e w utte g or that he h m lf w f rmul t g

Aft rw ds when h recalled thos thou hts P rr w con nced that someo e outs de h mself had pok n them thou h the mpres on of th t d y h d evoked th m He had ever t emed t h m be n able to th nk and exp ess h th l ts l ke that when awake

"To nd wa th m t d fficult subo d t f man f eed m t th l w of God,

g lde M ca b m t u h h fears death but h who does n t f ar t pos sesses all If ther were n suffer m n would

not know his limitations would not know himself The hardest thing [Pierre went on thinking or hearing in his dream] is to be able in your soul to unite the meaning of all To unite all? he asked himself No not to unite Thoughts cannot be united but to *harness* all these thoughts together is what we need! Yes one *must harness* them *must harness* them! he repeated to himself with inward rapture feeling that these words and they alone expressed what he wanted to say and solved the question that tormented him

Yes one must harness it is time to harness

Time to harness time to harness your excellency! Your excellency! some voice was repeating We must harness it is time to harness

It was the voice of the groom trying to wake him The sun shone straight into Pierre s face He glanced at the dirty innyard in the middle of which soldiers were watering their lean horses at the pump while carts were passing out of the gate Pierre turned away with repugnance and closing his eyes quickly fell back on the carriage seat No I don t want that I don t want to see and understand that I want to understand what was revealing itself to me in my dream One second more and I should have understood it all! But what am I to do? Harness but how can I harness everything? and Pierre felt with horror that the meaning of all he had seen and thought in the dream had been destroyed

The groom the coachman and the innkeeper told Pierre that an officer had come with news that the French were already near Mozhaysk and that our men were leaving it

Pierre got up and having told them to harness and overtake him went on foot through the town

The troops were moving on leaving about ten thousand wounded behind them There were wounded in the yards at the windows of the houses and the streets were crowded with them In the streets around carts that were to take some of the wounded away shouts curses and blows could be heard Pierre offered the use of his carriage which had overtaken him to a wounded general he knew and drove with him to Moscow On the way Pierre was told of the death of his brother in law Anatole and of that of Prince Andrew

CHAPTER X

On the thirtieth of August Pierre reached Moscow Close to the gates of the city he was met by Count Ro on

) t asks you to come to him at once on a very important matter

Without going home Pierre took a cab and drove to see the Moscow commander in chief

Count Rostopchin had only that m

n nd come for orders Vasilchikov and Platov had already seen the count and explained to him that it was impossible to defend Moscow and that it would have to be surrendered Though this news was being concealed from the inhabitants the officials—the heads of the various government departments—knew that Moscow would soon be in the enemy s hands just as Count Rostopchin himself knew it and to escape personal responsibility they had all come to the governor to ask how they were to deal with their various departments

As Pierre was entering the reception room a courier from the army came out of Rostopchin s private room

In answer to questions with which he was greeted the courier made a despairing gesture with his hand and passed through the room.

While waiting in the reception room Pierre with weary eyes watched the various officials old and young military and civilian who were there They all seemed dissatisfied and uneasy Pierre went up to a group of men one of whom he knew After greeting Pierre they continued their conversation

late

now for anything

But you see what he writes said another pointing to a printed sheet he held in his hand

That s another matter That s necessary for the people said the first

What is it? asked Pierre

Oh it s a fresh broadsheet

Pierre took it and began reading

His Seren H gl nes l s p sed tl ro gh M l dy k n o ler t j n t p w th tl e troops m towa l l m a l l s t ken p a st ong pos t wl e tl e en y will n t soon tt k l m l rty eigl t gu s witl am t it n l a been ent l im from l e a l l s Seren H gl ness say l will lefen l Moscow t tl e la t l p of l lo l a l f even rea ly t f gl t in tl e treets Do not be upset

brot..ers that th law courts are closed things has to be p in uer and w will deal with ıl laıms ın ur wn way When th tım comes I h ll wan both own d peasant l ds d will ra se t. cry da two beforeh nd b t they re n t wan ed yet so I h ld m pea e. An a will be useful, hunting spea bad, b three-pronged fork will be bes f ll Frenchman is no hea er than sheaf f rye. Tomorrow af er dinner I hall tak th Iberian con f th M ther f God to th wounded ın th Catherin Hosp tal where w will ha som wa er blessed. Tha will help them to get well q ıcker I too m w ll now on f my eyes was sore b now I am on th look t with both.

"B t mil tary men have t ld me that t ıs imposs ble t fi ht n th town said P erre, and that th pos tı n

"Well of course That what we were say ıng, repl ed th first peaker

And what does h mean by O e of my eyes was sore bu w I m on the look ut with both?" asked P erre.

"Th count had ty repl ed the djuta t smilıng, and wa ery much pset when I told him peopl had com t ask what was the matter with him. By th by Count, h dded ddenly ddress n P erre with mile w heard that you h fam ly troubles nd that the countess, ur w f

"I have heard th P erre repl ed unco cerned! Bu wh t ha e you heard?"

Oh, well, u know people often ın ent thı gs. I ly say wha I heard.

B what did y u hear

Well, they sa co tinued the djuta t with th sam smile, that th ountess, your wife, ıs preparing to go broad. I expect t s nonsense.

er offi ıal a German wearın cross round his neck, pproached the speaker

It s a compl cated tory you know sa d the djutant. "That p oclamat on appeared bout two m ths ago The cou t was ın formed f t. He ga e rders to n est gate the matter Gab l Ivá ov ch here made the ın quiries. The proclamat n h d p ssed through exactly ty three hands. He a ked one From

ret t From so-and-so He went

trader

a ked h m, Wh ga e ıt you And the po t ıs that we knew whom he had t from. He could only ha had t from the Postma ter But evidently they had come to some understand g He repl ed 'From no one I made ıt up myself They threat ned nd quest oned him, but he tu k to th t I made t up myself. And so t was reported to the count, who sent f r th m n 'From whom d I ou get the procla mat on I wrote t myself Well you know the count, sa d th djuta t cheerfull w th a mile f pride. "h fl red up dreadfully— nd just think of the f ll w udacity ly and obstın cy

And the count wa ted h m to say t was from Klyuchare ? I understand! sa d P erre.

N t t all rejo ned the djutant n dısma Klyucha had his own s n to nswer f r w tho t that d th t ıs why he has been banished. But th po nt ıs that the count was much an oyed. How c uld you ha e writt n t yourself said h d h took up the H mburg *Gazette* that was lying on th table.

t yourself but

bl peasa t o erco t, with b g no beard d ev b ws d rudd fa e.

H Tha tradesman th ıs say he the estaura keeper Vereshchagin. Perhaps ou ha hea d f ha affaır w th th proclamation

Oh so that ıs Vereshchagı sa d P erre, lo k th firm calm face of th old man nd seek ng v ndication f his being tra

"Tha h h mself tha th f ther f h f ll w who wrote th procl mation sa d th djuta t. "Th youn man prison d I expect will go hard with him.

An ld gentleman wearın star and anoth-

n ead an p pers, I made t up myse If that so you e a tra or nd I'll ha you tr ed, d you'll be hanged Say fr m whom y u had t. I ha e seen no p pers, I mad t up myself. And tha was th end of t. Th cou t had th father fetched, but the fellow tuck t. He was sent f r tr al nd con demned to hard l bo I bel eve. Now th fa ther has com t ınterced f him. B t h a good f nothı g lad! Y u know that sort of tradesman so dandy nd lad k ller He ttended som lectures somewhere nd ma ınes that the dev l ıs no match f him. That th sort of fell w h ıs. His father keeps cook shop here by th Ston Bridge, and you know

not know his limitations would not know himself The hardest thing {Pierre went on thinking or hearing in his dream} is to be able in your soul to unite the meaning of all To unite all? he asked himself No not to unite Thoughts cannot be united but to *har ness* all these thoughts together is what we need! Yes one *must harness* them *must har ness* them! he repeated to himself with in ward rapture feeling that these words and they alone expressed what he wanted to say and solved the question that tormented him

Yes one must harness it is time to harness

Time to harness time to harness your ex cellency! Your excellency! some voice was re peating We must harness it is time to har ness

It was the voice of the groom trying to wake him The sun shone straight into Pierre s face He glanced at the dirty innyard in the middle of which soldiers were watering their lean horses at the pump while carts were passing out of the gate Pierre turned away with re pugnance and closing his eyes quickly fell back on the carriage seat No I don t want that I don t want to see and understand that I want to understand what was revealing itself to me in my dream One second more and I should have understood it all! But what am I to do? Harness but how can I harness every thing? and Pierre felt with horror that the meaning of all he had seen and thought in the dream had been destroyed

The groom the coachman and the innkeep er told Pierre that an officer had come with news that the French were already near Moz haysk and that our men were leaving it

Pierre got up and having told them to har ness and overtake him went on foot through the town

The troops were moving on leaving about ten thousand wounded behind them There were wounded in the yards at the windows of the houses and the streets were crowded with them In the streets around carts that were to take some of the wounded away shouts curses and

of the death of his brother in law Anatole and of that of Prince Andrew

CHAPTER X

ON THE THIRTIETH OF AUGUST Pierre reached Moscow Close to the gates of the city he was met by Coun Ro

We h

said the

particular He asks you to come to him at once on a very important matter

Without going home Pierre took a cab and drove to see the Moscow commander in chief

Count Rostopchin had only that mornin

or officials who had been summoned or had come for orders Vasilchi kov and Platov had already seen the count and explained to him that it was impossible to de fend Moscow and that it would have to be sur rendered Though this news was being con cealed from the inhabitants the officials—the heads of the various government departments —knew that Moscow would soon be in the en emy s hands just as Count Rostopchin himself knew it and to escape personal responsibility they had all come to the governor to ask how they were to deal with their various depart ments

As Pierre was entering the reception room a courier from the army came out of Rostop chin s private room

In answer to questions with which he was greeted the courier made a despairing gesture with his hand and passed through the room

While waiting in the reception room Pierre with weary eyes watched the various officials old and young military and civilian who were there They all seemed dissatisfied and uneasy Pierre went up to a group of men one of whom he knew After greeting Pierre they con tinued their conversation

If they re sent out and brought back again later on it will do no harm but as things are now one can t answer for anything

But you see what he writes said an other pointing to a printed sheet he held in his hand

That s another matter That s necessary for the people said the first

What is it asked Pierre

Oh it s a fresh broadsheet

Pierre took it and began reading

His S ene Highnes I a pa ed tl gl M I ly k In o le to jo p w th tl e troops m tow r l h m n l I t ke i p a t g pos i wl ere tl e enemy will n t soon atta k l im To ty e ght gi n w tl ammun t n have been e t l im from l ere a I I Serene H gl ness says l w ll d fen l Mosc w to tl e l t lr p of l lood an l is even rea ly t fgl t in tl e streets Do n t be pect

Pierre dressed hurriedly and n tead of g ng to see them, ent t the b ck porch nd out thro h th gate.

From that time till th e d f the destruc tio f Moscow n o e f Bezukho s household, desp te all th arch they made saw Pierre gain knew where he was.

CHAPTER XII

The Rostó s remained in Mosco till the first f September th t s, till the ev of th en emy s entry into the city

After Pétya had j ed Obolénski reg m t f Cossa ks d l ft f r Bélaya Tse k here that regiment was f rmi the countess

both f them m ht be killed ... sons f one f her cqu ntances truck her that s mmer for the first time w th cruel clear ess. She tried t get N ch las back d w hed go herself t jo n Pétya o to g t him n p po tme t somewhere Petersburg but n ther f these pro ed pos bl Pétya c uld n t turn unless his regim nt d d so or unless he wa tra ferred to n th er m t on ctı e serv ce N ch las was somewher w th th army d h d t sent w d ce his last letter n hich h had gi en a d ta led ccount of h s ... Mary Th countess d d

ear Moscow Th h Pétya would ma n u the serv ce this tran fer w uld gi th countess the consol ti n f ing t least ne of her so u der her g nd h hoped t ar ra g ma ers f her Pétya so n t l t him go wa but lwa g h m ppo ted to places wh he could n t poss bly tak part b ttle. As l g N ch l l n was n danger the countess mag ned th t h l ed her first born m ha ll her other childr n d even eproached hers lf f t but wh n her gest th scapegra e wl had been b d lesso wa l ay break g things n th h use nd mak g h m lf nuisance to everybody that n b-nosed Pétya w th his merry bl ck eyes d f esh osy cheeks where sof down was jus beg g to show—when h wa thrown m d those b dreadful cru l wh were f ht g somewh bout some th g and pparently find ng pleasure in it—then h mother thou ht she l ed l m more much mo e than all l er otl er childrei The nearer tl e time came f P tya to r turn the mo e u easy grew the countess She began to th nk she w uld n ver l e to see such happi ness The presence of Sónya of her bel ed Nátash o even of her husb nd rr tated l er What do I nt w th them? I ant no one b t P ty she thought.

At the end of August the Rost vs ece ved an ther letter f om N cholas. He wrote from the p o in e of Vorónezh where he had been ent to p ocure r mou ts but that letter d d not et the countess t ease. Know ng that one son w out of danger she became the mo e an us bout Pétya

Though by the twent th of Augu t nearly all the Rostó s acqu intances h d l ft Moscow and th ugh e rybody tried to persu de the countess t g t away as qu ckly as poss ble h w uld n t hear of lea g before her treas u e h r d ed Pétya returned. On the t enty ghth of A gust he rri ed The p ss nate tenderness with wh ch h mothe rece ed h m d d n t plea the s xteen yea -old off cer Thou h he concealed f m h m her i tent on of keep ng h m under her win Pétya guessed he des gn nd nstun ti ely fea ng that he m ht gi w y t emot n when w th her—m ght "become w m n h as he termed t to h mself—he treated her coldly av ded her ...

Ow g t th count customary careless ess n th g wa eady f r th ir departure by th tw nty-e ghth of August d the carts th t were to come fr m th ir Ryazán nd Moscow estates to em th ir h us h ld bel n ngs d d n t arri e till the th rt eth

From the twe ty-e hth till the th rty first ll M scow wa n bustl nd mm ti n E ery d y th usands f men wou ded t Bo o- d ó w re bro ght n by the D orogomíl gate d tak n to ar us p rts of M co and thousa ds f carts con eyed th nhab t nts d th possess s ut by th oth r gates. I p te f Ros pchi s bro dsheets be cause of them ndep ndently of them th tra est d most contradictory rum rs we curr t n th town Som sa d th t no ne as to be ll wed t lea the city others on the contrary said that ll th con had be t k n ut f the churches d erybody wa to be

there was a large icon of God Almighty painted with a scepter in one hand and an orb in the other Well he took that icon home with him for a few days and what did he do? He found some scoundrel of a painter

CHAPTER XI

In the middle of this fresh tale Pierre was summoned to the commander in chief

When he entered the private room Count Rostopchin puckering his face was rubbing his forehead and eyes with his hand A short

rre

aid

Rostopchin as soon as the short man had left the room *We have heard of your prowess* But that s not the point Between ourselves *mon cher* do you belong to the Masons? he went on severely as though there were something wrong about it which he nevertheless intended to pardon Pierre remained silent I am well informed my friend but I am aware that there are Masons and Masons and I hope that you are not one of those who on pretense of saving mankind wish to ruin Russia

Yes I am a Mason Pierre replied

There you see *mon cher! I* expect you know that Messrs Sperânski and Magnitski have been deported to their proper place Mr Klyucharev has been treated in the same way and so have others who on the plea of building up the temple of Solomon have tried to destroy the temple of their fatherland You can understand that there are reasons for this and that I could not have exiled the Postmaster had he not been a harmful person It has now come to my knowledge that you lent him your carriage for his removal from town and that you have even accepted papers from him for

munication with men of that stamp and to leave here as soon as possible

But what did Klyucharev do wrong Count? asked Pierre

That is for me to know but not for you to ask shouted Rostopchin

If he is accused of circulating Napoleon s

o

ind

There we are! Rostopchin shou at Pierre louder than bef re frowning suddenly Vereshchágin is a renegade and a traitor who will be punished as he deserves said he with the vindictive heat with which people speak when recalling an insult But I did not summon you to discuss my actions but to give you advice—or an order if you prefer it I beg you to leave the town and break off all communication with such men as Klyucharev And I will knock the nonsense out of anybody —but probably realizing that he was shouting at Bezuk

and I haven t time to be polite to everybody who has business with me My head is sometimes in a whirl Well *mon cher* what are you doing personally?

Why nothing answered Pierre without raising his eyes or changing the thoughtful expression of his face

The count frowned

A word of friendly advice *mon cher* Be off as soon as you can that s all I have to tell you Happy he who has ears to hear Good by my dear fellow Oh by the by! he shouted through the doorway after Pierre is it true that the countess has fallen into the clutches of the holy fathers of the Society of Jesus?

Pierre did not answer and left Rostopchin s room more sullen and angry than he had ever before shown himself

When he reached home it was already getting dark Some eight people had come to see him that evening the secretary of a committee the colonel of his battalion his steward his major domo and various petitioners They all had business with Pierre and wanted decisions from him Pierre did not understand and was not interested in any of these questions and only answered them in order to get rid of these people When left alone at last he opened and read his wife s letter

They the soldiers at the battery Prince Andrew killed *that old man* *Simplicity* is submission to God Suffering is necessary the meaning of all one must harness my wife is getting married One must forget and understand And going to his bed he threw himself on it without undressing and immediately fell asleep

When he awoke next morning the major domo came to inform him that a special messenger a police officer had come from Count Rostopchin to know whether Count Bezukhov had left or was leaving the town

A dozen persons who had business with Pierre were awaiting him in the drawing room

The es and footstep of the m ny serv ants d of th pe ts who had c me w th the carts resou ded s they h uted to one an other n the y rd d n the h u e The count h d be o t n em n ng The c untess h d h adache br ght by ll the n e and turn l d wa ly g l wn n the new s tting room w th a nega comp es on h r head.

m he h d g n to s t a

hands the o

m) hich l e had wo n t her f rst Petersburg ball.

N tásha wa ash m d f d ng noth ng when

to be p ck d t e u u

D nyá h y u p ckl Y u w ll w n t you dea ? A d when Du yá h w ll gly p m sed to d t ll f h N tásha t d wn on the floo took h old ball d es nd fell to r e qu t l t d t wh t ought t ha occup d h thoughts w She was us d f m her r er by th talk f th m ds the ext oom (which was th rs) d by the sou d f th hurr d footst p g ng t the b k po ch N tá h got p d look d o t f the w d w A en rm usly l g w f carts f ll f w unded m n h d t pped n th tr et

Th h usek ep th old nurse the ooks oachme m d footm post l n nd scull s tood t the gat ta g t th ded.

N tásh throw g clean pock t handker h f her h nd h ld g n d of t n

p le young off cer wl l y ns de Natásha mo ed a few step f rward nd stopped l yly ull hold ng her h ndker h ef and l ster ed to wl at the hous keeper w s say g

'Then y u l a n body n M scow? he w s say ng You wo ld be m re comf table somewhe e n l u e n ours f in tance the f m ly are le ng

I d n t kno f t w uld be allowed re pl ed the ffce n a w ak o ce Here s o r omm nd ng ffi er a k him and he p nted to tout m jor who was walk g b ck along the street p st the row of ca ts

Natá h gla ced w th fr ghtened eyes at the face of the w nded officer a d at once v ent t meet the maj

May the w unded men stay n ou l ouse? she a ked.

The majo ra sed h l and to h s cap w th a sm le

'Wh ch one d you want M am elle? s d he screw g up h eyes a d m l ng

N tásh qu etly epe ted her quest on and he f ce and whole ma n r we e so er ous th ugh h w t ll h ld ng the ends of her handke ch ef that th maj r ceased sm l ng d after some r fl t n— f co s der g n how far th th ng was po ble—repl ed n tl e affirm t e

Th m he sa d

offi

'They m y He ys they m y l wh pe ed N tásha

Th cart n wh ch the fficer l y was tu ned t the Rost s y rd and do ens f carts w th w u d d men began t th n tat of th t w f lk to tu n into th y ds nd t dr w up t th entra ces of the houses n Po káy Street N tá h w ev d ntly pl d t b de l g with n w pe ple o ts d the d nary tun f he l fe. She nd Mávra Kuz min ch tr ed to get m ny of the w unded as pos ble nt the y rd

Y ur P p must b t ld th ugh sa d Má ra K zm h

Ne er m nd never m d wh t d es t mat te ? F e d y w ca m nt th dr g oom. They can ha ll ou h lf of tl h use

'There ow y u g l dy y u do tak th gs t y u h d E en f w put them i t th w the m oom o the nurs room w m t ask perm ss n.

ordered to leave Some said there had been an other battle after Borodino at which the French had been routed while others on the contrary reported that the Russian army h
stro
whi
Thr ispered that Augustin had been forbidden to leave that traitors had been seized that the peasants were rioting and robbing people on their way from Moscow and so on But all this was only talk in reality (though the Council of Fili at which it was decided to abandon Moscow had not yet been held) both those who went away and those who remained behind felt though they did not show it that Moscow would certainly be aban doned and that they ought to get away as quickly as possible and save their belongings It was felt that everything would suddenly break up and change but up to the first of September nothing had done so As a criminal who is being led to execution knows that he must die immediately but yet looks about him and straightens the cap that is awry on his head so Moscow involuntarily continued its wonted life though it knew that the time of its destruction was near when the conditions of life to which its people were accustomed to submit would be completely un

tio
ab ous activities The head of the family Count Ilyá Rostóv continually drove about the city collecting the current rumors from all sides and gave superficial and hasty orders at home about the preparations for their departure

The countess watched the things being packed was dissatisfied with everything was constantly in pursuit of Pétya who was always running away from her and w

packed But of late Sónya had been particularly sad and silent Nicholas letter in which he mentioned P

I was never pleased at Bolkónski s engage ment to Natásha said the countess but I al ways wanted Nicholas to marry the princess and had a presentiment that it would happen What a good thing it would be!

Archbishop of Moscow —TR.

Sonya felt that this was true that the only possibility of retrieving the Ro
by N
the
ter her grief or perhaps just because of it she took on herself all the difficult work of directing the storing and pack ing of their things and was busy for whole days. The count and countess turned to her when they had any orders to give. Pétya and Natá sha on the contrary far from helping their parents were generally a nuisance and a hin drance to everyone Almost all day lon the house resounded with their running feet their cries and their spontaneous laughter They laughed and were gay not because there was any reason to laugh but because gaiety and mirth were in their hearts and so everythin that happened was a cause for gaiety and laughter to them Pétya was in high spirits be cause having left home a boy he had returned (as everybody told him) a fine young man be cause he was at home because he had left Bé laya Tsérkov where there was no hope of soon taking part in a battle and had come to Mos cow where there was to be fighting in a few days and chiefly because Natásha whose lead he always followed was in high

because she had someone to adore her the adoration of others was a lubricant the wheels of her machine needed to make them run freely—and Pétya adored her Above all they were gay because there was a war near Moscow there would be fighting at the town gates arms were being given out everybody was escaping—going away some where and in general something extraordinary was happening and that is always exciting especially to the young

CHAPTER XIII

ON S

out or moved about and the mirrors and pictures had been taken down There were trunks in the rooms and hay wrapping paper and ropes were scattered about The peasants and house serfs carrying out the things were treading heavily on the parquet floors The yard was crowded with peasant carts some loaded high and already corded up others still empty

n from the storeroom. A third case was needed and servants had gone to fetch it.

"S ra, wa t b t—w 'll p ck everythi g n to these," said N tásha.

"You ca t, Miss, we have tried to," said the butler's assistant.

"N ait mi te please

And N tásha began rap dly taking out of the case d hes d plates wrapped n p per

"Th dishes must go in here mo g the carpets, s d she.

"Wh t mercy if we can get the carpets alone to three cases, said the butler ass t

"Oh, wa t, please And N tá ha began rapidl d deftly sort out the th ngs. These aren t needed, sa d h putt n as de som p es f Kiev ware. "These— es, these must go among the carpets she sa d, r ferr to the Sa h na dishes

"Don t, N tá ha Lea t lon W 'll get it all pa ked, urged Sónya reproachfully

"What young l dy she s rema ked the majord mo

B t N tásha wo ld not gi e n. Sh turned everything out d began qu ckly rep cking, deciding that th nferior Russian carpets nd unnecessary crockery should not be taken at all. When everyth g h d been tak n out of the cases, they recommenced p cking nd t turned ou that when th heaper th gs not worth tak g had ea l all been rejected, the valuabl ones reall did all go nt the two cases. Onl the l d of the case conta n n the carpets would n t sh t d wn A few mo things migh ha been tak n ut, bu N tá a s ed ha g her own wa She packed, repa ked pressed, mad th bu ler's ta t d Pé a—whom sh had drawn into the busi ess of packin —press on the lid, and mad desperat eff rts herself.

"Tha enough, N tásha, sa d Só ya. I see ou wer r ht, bu jus take out the top on

I cried N tásha, w th o e ha d hol d ba k th hair tha hun over her per pirin fa wh l w th th o her he pressed dow th carpets. Now press Pétya Press, V lich p es hard he cr ed.

Th carpets y lded d th l d closed. N tasha lapp g her hands, screamed with delight d ears f ll from h er eyes. But thi only la ted mome t Sh once set o w rk afresh nd they now trus ed her completely The ou was not ngry even when they told him tha N tásha had oun ermanded an order f his nd the servants now came to her to ask whether a cart was sufficiently loaded and whether t m ght be corded up Thanks to N tásha direct ons the work now went on expedit ously unnecessary th ngs were left, nd the most aluable packed a comp ctly as pos s b

th

p

th count, ha n put off the

next morn ng w nt to bed

Sonya and Natásha lept n the s tin room w thout undress ng

That n ght another wounded man was dri en down th Po arskáya and Má ra Kuz min hna who was standing t the gat had h m brought nto th Rostó s yard. Mávra

d

at

wo

ng

and

We

don t expect t get him hom a e house of our own in Moscow but t lo wa from here, and there nobody l ng in t.

Do us the honor to come in there s p enty of everything in the master house. Come n, said Mávra Kuzmín chna. Is he ery ill?" he asked.

Th attenda t mad a hopeless gesture.

"W don t expect t get him hom We must ask the docto

A d the ld servant got d wn from the box and w nt up to th cart.

All ri ht said the doctor

The old servant returned to the *lèche* looked into t, hook his head disconsolately t ld the driver to turn nto th yard and topped bes d Mávra Kuzmín chna.

O Lord Jesus Christ! she murmured.

She invited them to take the wounded man into the house.

"The masters won t object she said.

But they had to vo d carrying the man upstairs, nd so they took him nto the wing nd put him n th room that had been M dame Schoss

This wounded man was Prince Andrew Bolkónski.

Well I ll ask "

N

toc

roc s a smell of vinegar and Hoffman s drops

Are you asleep Mamma?

Oh what sleep—r said the countess waking up just as she was dropping into a doze

Mamma darling! said Natásha kneeling by her mother and bringing her face close to her mother s I am sorry forgive me I ll never do it again I woke you up! Mávra Kuzmínichna has sent me they have brought some wounded here—officers Will you let them come? They have nowhere to go I knew you d let them come she said quickly all in one breath

What officers? Whom have they brought? I don t understand anything about it said the countess

Natásha laughed and the countess too smiled slightly

I knew you d give permission so I ll tell them and having kissed her mother Natásha got up and went to the door

In the hall she met her father who had returned with bad news

We ve stayed too long! said the count with involuntary vexation The Club is closed and the police are leaving

Papa is it all right—I ve invited some of the wounded into the house? said Natásha

Of course it is he answered absently "That s not the point I beg you not to indulge in trifles now but to help to pack and tomorrow we must go go go!

And the count gave a similar order to the major domo and the servants

At dinner Pétya having returned home told them the news he had heard He

t unu a call two or three days in advance the order had certainly already been given for everyone to go armed to the Three Hills tomorrow and that there would be a big battle there

The countess looked with timid horror at her son s eager excited face as he said this She realized that if she said a word about his not going to the battle (she knew he enjoyed the thought of the impending engagement) he would say something about men honor and the fatherland—something senseless masculine and obstinate which there would be no contradicting and her plans would be spoiled and so hoping to arrange to leave before then and take Pétya with her as their protector and defender she did not answer him but after dinner called the count aside and implored him with tears to take her away quickly that very night if possible With a woman s involuntary loving cunning she who till then had not shown any alarm said that she would die of fright if they did not leave that very night Without any pretense she was now afraid of everything

CHAPTER XIV

Madame Schoss who had been out to visit her daughter increased the countess fears still more by

dealer s u

by that st

cause of a drunken crowd rioting in front of the shop She had taken a cab and driven home by a side street and the cabman had told her that the people were breaking open the barrels at the drink store having received orders to do so

After dinner the whole Rostóv household set to work with enthusiastic haste packing their belongings and preparing for their departure The old count suddenly setting to work kept passing from the yard to the house and back again shouting confused instructions to the hurrying people and flurrying them still more Pé

own

her

serv s ran noisily about the house and yard shouting and disputing Natásha with the ardor characteristic of all she did suddenly set to work too At first her intervention in the business of packing was received skeptically Everybody expected some prank from her and did not wish to obey her but she resolutely and passionately demanded obedience grew angry and nearly cried because they did not heed her and at last succeeded in making them believe her Her first exploit which cost her immense effort and established her authority

cases were standing open in the ballroom one almost full up with crockery the other with carpets There was also much china standing on the tables and still more was being brou t

A medicine much used in Russia —Tr.

M trena Timoféevna who had been her l dy s ma d before her marria d now perf rmed sort f chief gendarme s d ty f her came to say that M dame Schoss was much offe ded and t e you g lad es summer dresses could not b left behind. On quiry the countess learned that M dame Schoss was offe ded be cause her tru k had bee taken d wn from its cart, d all the loads were be ng un rded and t e luggage taken t f th carts to make room for w unded m n wh m the cou t n the simplicity f his heart had ordered that they should take w th them. The countess sent f her husband.

"What is this, my dea ? I hear that the luggage is bein unlo ded.

"You k l e I wa ted to t ll y u Countess dear an officer came t me to ask for f w carts for th w unded. After ll, ours are things that can be bou ht but th nk what bein lef behi d means t them Really now in our own yard—w asked them n our sel es and there ar officers amon them. You know I thi k, my dear let them be taken where th hurry?"

The coun poke tim dl as he lways did when talkin f m ey matters. Th cou tess was customed t this t p ecursor of news f something detrimental t the ch l dren terests, such as the building of new gallery conservat ry th nau urat n of privat theater orchestra. Sh was accustomed always to oppose an thi n unced in that timid to d cons dered t her duty to do so.

She assumed her d lefully subm ss man er and said her husband Listen t me, Count. u ha mana ed matters so that w are gettin nothi f th house and now you wish to throw way all our—all th h ld en propert } sa d urself that w ha a h ndred thousa d rubles worth of things in the house. I do consent, my dear I d n t Do as you please It the government s bus ness to look f er th ounded they kn w that. Look the Lopukhins oppos they cleared o t everything w days go That what other peo pl d l ly w who ch fools. If you ha no p ty n me, ha som f the chil dren.

Flourishi g his arms n despair th count lef th room w tho epl g

"P pa wha you do n that I asked N ta ha, who had f ll wed him to her mother room.

"N h g What bus ess is t of yours?" muttered the count angrily

But I heard sa d Natá ha. "Why does M mma object?

"What bus ness is t of yours cried the cou t.

Natásha stepped up to the w ndow and pon dered.

P p ! Here s Berg com g to see us said he looking out of the w ndow

CHAPTER XVI

Berg the Rostó s son n law wa al eady a colon l wearing the orders of Vladimir nd Anna nd he t ll filled the qu et and agreeabl post of assistant t the head of the staff of the ass sta t commander of the first di is n of the Second Army

On the first of September he had come to Moscow from the army

He had noth g to do n Moscow but he had noticed that e eryone n the rmy was a k g fo lea e to is t Moscow and had som th ng to do there. So he con dered t necessary to ask f lea e of absenc f r fam ly nd domestic easons.

Berg drove up to h f ther n law s house in his spruce l ttle trap w th a p r of leek roans exactl l k those of erta n princ He looked attenti ely at the carts n the a d nd while go ng up to th porch took out a clean pocket ha dkerchief nd tied knot n i.

From the nteroom Berg ran w th smooth h draw ng room

Health t a um lik this said the o t. Come, tell us the news I th army etreatin or w ll there be nother battl

God Alm ghty alo can decide the f te of our fatherland P p sa d Berg "Th army is burn g with pir t of her sm nd the leaders, so to say ha now assembled n coun cil. No one kn ws what comin B t n ge eral I can tell you P p that uch a hero c pirit, the truly antiqu al of the Russ an army which they—which t (h corrected himself) "has hown o di pla ed n the b ttle

the commanders far f om ha n to urge th men on or anythi g of that kind, ould hardly

CHAPTER XV

MOSCOW'S LAST DAY had come It was a clear bright autumn day a Sunday The church bells everywhere were ringing for service just as usual on Sundays Nobody seemed yet to realize what awaited the city

Only two things indicated the social condition of Moscow—the rabble that is the poor people and the price of commo

y were mingled had gone early that morning to the Three Hills Having waited there for Rostopchin who did not turn up they became convinced that Moscow would be surrendered and then dispersed all about the town to the public houses and cookshops Prices too that day indicated the state of affairs The price of weapons of gold of carts and horses kept rising but the value of paper money and city articles kept falling so that by midday there were instances of carters removing valuable goods such as cloth and receiving in payment a half of what they carted while peasant horses were fetching five hundred rubles each and furniture mirrors and bronzes were being given away for nothing

In the Rostovs staid old fashioned ho

ree out of their huge retinue disappeared during the night but nothing was stolen and as to the value of their possessions the thirty peasant carts that had come in from their estates and which many people envied proved to be extremely valuable and they were offered enormous sums of money for them Not only were huge sums offered for the horses and carts but on the previous evening and early in the morning of the first of September orderlies and servants sent by wounded officers came to the Rostovs yard and wounded men dragged themselves there from the Rostovs and from neighboring houses where they were accommodated entreating the servants to try to get them a lift out of Moscow The major domo to whom these entreaties were addressed though he was sorry for the wounded resolutely refused saying that he dare not even mention the matter to the count. Pity these wounded men as one might it was evident that if they were given one cart there would be no reason to refuse another or all the carts and one's own carriages as well Thirty carts could not save all the wounded and in the general catastrophe one could not disregard oneself and one's own family So thought the major-domo on his master's behalf

On waking up that morning Count Ilyá Rostóv left his bedroom softly so as

ng gown In the yard stood the carts ready corded The carriages were at the front porch The major-domo stood at the porch talking to an elderly orderly and to a pale young officer with a bandaged arm On seeing the count the major domo made a significant and stern gesture to them both to go away

Well Vasílich is everything ready asked the count and stroking his bald head he looked good naturedly at the officer and the orderly and nodded to them (He liked to see new faces)

We can harness at once your excellency

Well that's right As soon as the countess wakes we'll be off God willing! What is it gentlemen? he added turning to the officer Are you staying in my house?

The officer came nearer and suddenly his face flushed crimson

Count be so good as to allow me for God's sake to get into some corner of one of your carts! I have nothing here with me I shall be all right on a loaded cart

Before the officer had finished speaking the orderly made the same request on behalf of his master

Oh yes yes yes! said the count hastily I shall be very pleased very pleased Vasílich you'll see to it Just unload one or two carts Well what of it do what's necessary said the count muttering some indefinite order

But at the same moment an expression of warm gratitude on the officer's face had already sealed the order The count looked around him In the yard at the gates at the window of the wings wounded officers and their orderlies were to be seen They were all looking at the count and moving toward the porch

Please step into the gallery your excellency said the major-domo What are your orders about the pictures

The count went into the house with him repeating his order not to refuse the wounded who asked for a lift

Well never mind some of the things can be unloaded he added in a soft confidential voice as though afraid of being overheard

At nine o'clock the countess woke up and

"What the matt w th you? Who are they? What d you wa t?

"Why th w unded! It mposs ble M m- n It m str us! N M mm darl g t ot the th g Please forgi e me darl ng M mma wh t does it matter what we take ay? O ly look wh t s g n on in the yard M mma! It mpos ble!

The count tood by the w d wand l tened th ut t n r d. S ddenly he sn ffed a d p th f ce close t the w ndow

Th co tess gla ed t he daughte saw h fa e f ll f h me for her mother saw her mat d u derstood why her hu band did tturnt look thern nd hegl nced d quite disco certed

Oh d as y u l'ke! Am I h der g any t once

ay

Y u k w I d t u d rsta d bout sa u she dr pp g her eyes sh mef cedly

Th eggs the eggs re teach ng the h n m ttered the t th ugh tears of j y d h embra ed h s f wh was gl d t hide her look f sh m n h b east.

P p ! M mma! M y I e t t? M y I? asked N tásh "W w ll st ll take ll the m t essary th gs.

The co t odded ff rm t ly and N tásh t th rap d p c t wh ch h us d t ru wh pl y g t t g ra through the b ll room t th teroom d downstairs nt the yard.

Th rvants gather d d N tásh but co ld t b l ev th t g rder sh b ught them t l th t h ms lf, n h w fe m f rmed the der t g e up ll th carts t th w d d d tak th trunks to the t oom Wh they derstood th t der the serv ts t t w k t thi ew ta k w th plea d eal I l ger med trange th m b t th trary t e m d th o ly th h t co ld b d just qu t of h b f t had med tran t h h w d d h ld be left be h l i h goods cart d way b t th t h d seem d h ly th d

Tl wh l h h ld as f to ton f n t h d t soo er et eagerly t k t th ew ta k f pl g th w ded n the ts Tl w ded dragg d them el es t f th room d tood w th p le b t happy f ou d th carts. Th ews th t carts w e to be h d spread to the ne ghbo ing hou es f m wh ch wounded men began to come nto the Ro tó s yard. Many of tl e wounded sked them not to unl d the carts but only to let them s t on the top of the th gs But the work of unlo ding once st rted could n t be arrest d It eemed not to matter whether all only h lf the tl ngs were left beh nd Cases full of ch n bro zes p ctures nd m rrors th t h d been so carefully p cked the n ght bef re n w l y about the yard a d st ll they went on sea ch ng f r and find ng poss bili ties of unlo d ng this or that and lett g tl e unded h e an ther nd yet an ther cart.

"We can t ke four mor men sa d the steward "They can h e my trap or el e what is t become of them?

Let th m h e my wardrobe cart sa d the cou tess. Dunyá ha can go w th me the carr ge

They unlo ded the ward obe ca t d sent t t t ke wou ded men f om a house two doors off The whole househ ld serv nts n clud d was b ght and an m ted. N tásha was in tate of raptu ous e citement sucl as he had not known f r a l ng t me

Wh t could w f ten thi onto? asked th erva ts try n to fix trunk on the n rro footbo d b h nd a carr age. "We mu t keep t least o e cart

Wh t s n t? sked N tásha.

The cou t s books.

Lea t. Va l ch w ll put t way It not w t d

The ph et n va full of peopl nd there w s d ubt a to whe Count Peter could t

On the bo Y u ll ton the box w n t you Pétya? cr ed N tásh

Sóny too wa busy ll th s t m but the m of h ff rts was qu te d ffere t f m N t

much t ken way w th them as poss ble.

CHAPTER XVII

BEFO TWO O'CLOCK n the aft rnoon th Ros tó s f ur carr ge p ck d full d th the h rses h rnessed tood t the front doo One by th cart w th the w unded h d m ed t f th yard.

Th lé h n wh ch Pr ce A d ew was be- gtak n ttra ted Só ya ttent on as t p ssed th f nt po ch W th th h lp of a m d he was rra g g t f the countes n th h h gh co ch that stood t th ntra

restrain those those yes those exploits of antique valor he went on rapidly Gen eral Barclay de Tolly risked his life everywhere at the head of the troops I can assure you Our corps was stationed on a hillside You can im agine!

And Berg related all that he remembered of the various tales he had heard those days Na tásha watched him with an intent gaze that confused him as if she were trying to find in his face the answer to some question

Altogether such heroism as was displayed by the Russian warriors cannot be imagined or adequately praised! said Berg glancing round at Natásha and as if anxious to conciliate her replying to her intent look with a smile Rus sia is not in Moscow she lives in the hearts of her sons! Isn t it so Papa? said he

Just then the countess came in from the sit ting room with a weary and dissatisfied expres sion Berg hurriedly jumped up kissed her hand asked about her health and swaying his head from side to side to express sympathy re mained standing beside her

Yes Mamma I tell you sincerely that these are hard and sad times for every Russian But why are you so anxious? You have still time to get away

I can t think what the servants are about said the countess turning to her husband I have just been told that nothing is ready yet Somebody after all must see to things One misses Mitenka at such times There won t be any end to it

The count was about to say something but evidently restrained himself He got up from his chair and went to the door

At that moment Berg drew out his handker chief as if to blow his nose and seeing the knot in it pondered *shaking his head sadly and sig nificantly*

And I have a great favor to ask of you Pa pa said he

Hm said the count and stopped

I was driving past Yusupov s house just now said Berg with a laugh when the stew ard a man I know ran out and asked me whether I wouldn t buy something I went in

how we had a dispute about it (At the men

And it s such a beauty! It pulls out and has a secret English drawer you know! And dear Véra has long wanted one I wish to give her a surprise you see I saw so many of those peas ant carts in your yard Please let me have one, I will pay the man well and

said Berg Only I so wanted it for dear Véra s sake

Oh go to the devil all of you! To the devil the devil the devil I cried the old count My head s in a whirl!

And he left the room The countess began to cry

Yes Mamma! Yes these are very hard times! said Berg

Natásha left the room with her father and, as if finding it difficult to reach some decision first followed him and then ran downstairs

Pétya was in the porch engaged in giving out weapons to the servants who were to leave Moscow The loaded carts were still standing in the yard Two of them had been uncorded and a wounded officer was climbing into one of them helped by an orderly

Do you know what it s about? Pétya asked Natásha

She understood that he meant what were their parents quarreling about She did not answer

It s because Papa wanted to give up all the carts to the wounded said Pétya Vasílich told me I consider

I consider Natásha suddenly almost shout ed turning her angry face to Pétya I consider it so horrid so abominable so I don t know what Are we despicable Germans?

Her throat quivered with convulsive sobs and *afraid of weakening and letting the force* of her anger run to waste she turned and

tive The count pipe in hand was pacing up and down the room when Natásha her face t and

med

You can t possibly have ordered it!

Berg and the countess looked at her per plexed and frightened The count stood still at the window and listened

Mamma it s impossible see what is going on in the yard! she cried They will be left!

pulled up th door was shut, somebody was se t for a tra el g case and the countess lea ed t a d sa d what sh had t sa Then Efim del beratel doffed his hat and began crossi himself Th post lion and ll th oth er servants did th same. Off n God s n m said Efim, pu u g on his hat. "Start Th postilio tarted th horses the off pol h rse tugged t his collar the h gh spri gs creaked, and the body f th coach swayed. The foot ma pra o to th box f the m vi co ch which jolted as passed ut of the yard onto the uneven roadway th other h cles jolted in their turn, and the process n of carriages moved p the treet. In the carriages the *calè h* d th pha ton all crossed themsel es as they passed the church oppos te the house Those who were to rema n n Moscow walked either d of the ehicles seeing th trav lers ff.

Rarely had N tásha experienced so joyful a feeling as now tti n the carria bes de th cou tess d gazin t the l wly eced wall f f rsak n gitated Moscow Occas on all h leaned t f the carriage w dow and looked b ck and th f rward t th l n train f o ded n fr t f them. Almost t th head f the l h could see th raised hood f Pri c A d ew l *h* Sh did n t kn w who was t, but each t m he looked t the process her eyes sought that *c l h* She knew t was right in front.

[illegible]

Mamma screamed Natásha I'll stake my head it s he I assure you Stop st p she cried to the coachman

But the coachman could not st p for from the Meshchán ki Street came mo e cart nd carr ages, and the Rostó s ere be g sho ted at to mo n and not block the way

In fact, however th ugh now much farther off than before the Rostó s ll saw P erre—o someone extra rdin rily l ke him—in a coach man s coat, go g down th street w th head be t and a serious f ce bes de a small beard less old man who looked l ke a footman That old man noticed face thrust out of the car riage w nd w gazi g t them and respectfully t uching P erre s elbow sa d someth g to h m and pointed to the carriage. P erre ev dently e grossed in th u ht, could not at first under tand him. At length when he had understood and looked n the direction th old man d cated he recognized Natásha nd f llowing his first mpulse tepped nstantly and rap dly toward th coach. But having taken a d n tep he seemed to emember som th n nd topped.

N tásha face, lean ng out of the w nd w beamed with quizzical kindl ness.

P ter Kirilovich, come here We ha e rec ognized you This is wonderful she cried, holdi ut her hand to him. "What ar you

and carts f rmed two ro s breast.

As they wer go round the S kharev wa ter t er N ta ha, who wa quis ti ely and alertl scruti izi g th peopl dr ing walk g past, dd l cried out n joyful urprise:

Dear m M mma, Són a, look, t h !

Who Who

Look Yes m w rd, t Bezukh l said N tásha p her head u of the car iage d tar g tall t ut man n coach-man lo g oat, who f m his manner of walk d mo was ev dently gentleman in d sgu se d ho was pas under the arch f th S kharev tower ccompan ed by small, sallow fa ed beardless ld ma n fri coat.

Yes, t eall is Bezukho in coachma coat with q eer looki g old boy Really sa d N tá ha. look, look!

N t not he. How can you talk *such non sense?*"

countess in a urprised and commiseratin t ne.

"What? What. Why Don t ask me said P err and looked round t N tásha whose radiant, happy express n—of wh ch h was consci us w th ut lookin t her—filled him with enchantment.

Ar y u ema nin in Moscow then P err hes tated.

In Moscow he sa d n quest nin tone. "Yes, in Moscow Goodby!

Ah, if only I wer a man I d certainly tay with y u. H w pl ndid sa d N tásha. Mam ma f you'll let me, I'll tay

P erre gl n ed bsently t N tásha and was about to say something, but th countess inter rup ed him.

You were t th battle we heard.

"Yes, I was. P err answered. "There will be an ther b ttl tom rrow he began but Natásha interrupted him.

Whose *calèche* is that? she inquired lean ing out of the carriage window

Why didn t you know Miss? replied the maid The wounded prince he spent the night in our house and is going with [illegible]

[illegible]

ski [illegible] mai [illegible]

Sónya jumped out of the coach and ran to the countess The countess tired out and al ready dressed in shawl and bonnet for her journey was pacing up and down the drawing room waiting for the household to assemble for the usual silent prayer with closed doors before starting Natásha was not in the room

Mamma said Sónya Prince Andrew is here mortally wounded He is going with us.

The countess opened her eyes in dismay and seizing Sónya s arm glanced around

Natásha? she murmured

At that moment this news had only one sig nificance for both of them They knew their Natásha and alarm as to what would happen if she heard this news stifled all sympathy for the man they both liked

Natásha does not know yet but he is go ing with us said Sónya

You say he is dying?

Sónya nodded

The countess put her arms around Sónya and began to cry

The ways of God are past finding out! she thought feeling that the Almighty Hand hitherto unseen was becoming manifest in all that was now taking place

Well Mamma? Everything is ready What s the matter? asked Natásha as with animated face she ran into the room

Nothing answered the countess If ev erything is ready let us start.

And the countess bent over her reticule to hide her agitated face Sónya embraced Na tásha and kissed her

Natásha looked at her inquiringly

What is it? What has happened?

Nothing No

Is it something very bad for me? What is it? persisted Natásha with her quick intuiti on

Sónya sighed and made no reply The count Pétya Madame Schoss Mávra Kuzmí nichna and Vasílich came into the drawing room and having closed the doors they all sat down and remained for some moments silently seated without looking at one an other

The count was the first to rise and with a loud sigh crossed himself before the icon All the others did the same Then the count em braced Mávra Kuzmínichna and Vasílich who were to remain in Moscow and while they caught at his hand and kissed his shoulder he patted their backs lightly with some vaguely affectionate and comforting words The count ess went into the oratory and there Sónya found her on her knees before the icons that had been left here and there hanging on the wall (The most precious ones with which some family tradition was connected were being taken with them)

In the porch and in the yard the men whom Pétya had armed with swords and daggers with trousers tucked inside their high boots and with belts and girdles tightened were taking leave of those remaining behind

As is always the case at a departure much had been forgotten or put in the wrong place and for a long time two menservants stood one on each side of the open door and the carriage steps waiting to help the countess in while maids rushed with cushions and bundles from the house to the carriages the *calèche* the pha eton and back again

They always will forget everything! said the countess Don t you know I can t sit like that?

And Dunyásha with clenched teeth with out replying but with an aggrieved look on her face hastily got into the coach to rearrange the seat

Oh those servants! said the count sway ing his head

Efím the old coachman who was the only one the countess trusted to drive her sat perched up high on the box and did not so much as glance round at what was going on be hind him From thirty years experience he kne [illegible] der [illegible] hin [illegible] it was said he would be stopped once or twice more while they sent back to fetch something that had been forgotten and even after that he would again be stopped and the countess herself would lean out of the window and beg him for the love of heaven to drive carefully down the hill He knew all this and therefore waited calmly for what would happen with more pa tience than the horses especially the near one the chestnut Falcon who was pawing the ground and champing his bit At last all were seated the carriage steps were folded and

He was a ery clever man but has n w gro n q te feeble as y ur ho or sees sa d Gerás m. 'Will you step nto the tudy?' P erre nodded. As twassealed up so t ha ma ned, b t Sophia D nfl n ga e orders that f any ne sh uld com from y u they wer to ha e the books

P erre went nto that gloomy tudy wh ch he had ntered w th such trep dat n in h s benefactor l f time. The room du ty nd un to ched s ce the death of J ph Bazdéev was n w even gloom er

Gerás m p ed e f the hutters nd left the room on tiptoe P erre went rou d th t d pp ched th cupboard n wh ch the man scr pts were k pt d took out what had e be n e f th m t mporta t, the holy f h l es f th o d r Th s was the auth ntic Scotch Acts w th B dé notes nd pl na t H sat down t the du ty wr t g table d h g l d the manu cr pts bef h m

Gerá m looked ca t usly o u / several t mes d w P rr lw ys tt g n th m tt ude

t hea h m.

I the cabma be di ch rg d y ur h n

Oh yes! sa d P err us h m lf nd ris g hurr edly Look h re h dded tak ing Gerás m by but n f his co t d look g d wn t th ld man w th m st h n g d ecsta yes I say d y u kn w that

to d wh t I ask y u

Yes y ur ll cy pl ed Gerásim.

W ll y ha e som th g to eat?

N b I w t som th g l e. I want peas- l th d pist l d P err u ex p ctedly bl h g

Yes y ex ll cy sa d Gerá m fter l k g f m m nt.

bed mad p f h m ther

Gerá m, be g ers t wh n h t me had seen m y tra ge th gs epted P erre s tak ng up h s res dence in the h use w thout surpr se and s emed ple sed to ha e someone to wait on That s me even ng—w thout e en asking h mself what they were wanted for—he p ocured coachm n s co t and cap for P erre and prom d to get him the p stol next day M kár Alexée ch came tw ce that e en ng huffl g al ng in h s gal shes as far as the door and t pped nd looked ingrat t ngly at P rre. But as soon as Pierre turned toward h m he wrapped h s dressin gown ou d h m w th a hamef ced and angry look and hurr ed way It wa when P err (wea ng the co ch man s co t wh ch Ge á im had p oc red for h m and had d s nfe ted by steam) was on his w y w th the old man t buy the p stol at the S khare m rket that he met the R stóvs.

CHAPTER XIX

KUTUZOV'S ORDER to r treat throu h Moscow to the Ryazán ro d was issued t n ght on the first of September

The first troop started at on e a d du ng the n ght they m rcl d sl wly nd steadily w th ut hurry At dayb eak however th se ne the town at the D ogomilo br dge saw head of th m masses f sold ers cr wd g nd hurrying cross tl e b dge ascendin on th oppos te de nd bl ck ng the str ets d lleys whil e dless mas es of troops we e be r g down on them fr m beh nd nd n un aso g hurry and l rm o rcame them They all rushed forward to the br dge onto t nd to the f ds and the bo ts Kutu o h mself had dr en round by side streets to the other s de of Moscow

By t n o clo k in th m rn g f the s co d f September only th r guard ema d in the Do ogom'l suburb where they had m pl oom. The ma n army was on the other de of M cow bey d t.

At that ery time t ten n the morn ng of th e nd of September N p leon was t nd ng amo g hi troop on the Poklónny H ll look g t th p n rama sp d out b f e him. F m th tw nty th of August to the cond of September th t s f m the b ttle of B od nó to th ntry of the F ench to M scow d g th wh l f that g t t ng mem orabl week, the had b n th extra di nary ut mn weather that lways c mes as a surp ise wh n the un hangs l w and g es m e heat than n p g when ev ryth g hi es so b ghtly n the e cl ar atmospher th t the eyes mart wh n the l ngs ar tr ngth ed nd refreshed by nhal g the aromatic

But what is the matter with you Count? You are not like yourself

Oh don t ask me don t ask me! I don t know myself Tomorrow But no! Good by good by! he muttered It s an awful time! and dropping behind the carriage he stepped onto the pavement

Natásha continued to lean out of the window for a long time beaming at him with her kindly slightly quizzical happy smile

CHAPTER XVIII

FOR THE LAST TWO DAYS ever since leaving home Pierre had been living in the empty house of his deceased benefactor Bazdéev This is how it happened

When he woke up on the morning after his return to Moscow and his interview with Count Rostopchín he could not for some time make out where he was and what was expected of him When he was informed that among others awaiting him in his reception room there was a Frenchman who had brought a letter from his wife the Countess Hélène he felt suddenly overcome by that sense of confusion and hopelessness to which he was apt to succumb He felt that everything was now at an end all was in confusion and crumbling to pieces that nobody was right or wrong the future held nothing and there was no escape from this position Smiling unnaturally and muttering to himself he first sat down on the sofa in an attitude of despair then rose went to the door of the reception room and peeped through the crack returned flourishing his arms and took up a book His major domo came in a second time to say that the Frenchman who had brought the letter from the countess was very anxious to see him if only for a minute and that someone from Bazdéev s widow had called to ask Pierre to take charge of her husband s books as she herself was leaving for the country

Oh yes in a minute wait or no! No of course go and say I will come directly Pierre replied to the major-domo

But as soon as the man had left the room Pierre took up his hat which was lying on the table and went out of his study by the other door There was no one in the passage He went along the whole length of this passage to the stairs and frowning and rubbing his forehead with both hands went down as far as the first landing The hall porter was standing at the front door From the landing where Pierre stood there was a second staircase leading to the back entrance He went down that staircase and out into the yard No one had seen him But there were some carriages waitin

was being looked at he behaved like an ostrich which hides its head in a bush in order not to be seen he hung his head and quickening his pace went down the street

Of all the affairs awaiting Pierre that day the sorting of Joseph Bazdéev s books and papers appeared to him the most necessary

He hired the first cab he met and told the driver to go to the Patriarch s Ponds where the widow Bazdéev s house was

Continually turning round to look at the rows of loaded carts that were making their

the joyful feeling of a boy escaping from school

row everyone would be sent out beyond the Three Hills gates and a great battle would be fought there

Having reached the Patriarch s Ponds Pierre found the Bazdéevs house where he had not been for a long time past He went up to the gate Gerásim that sallow beardless old man Pierre had seen at Torzhók five years before with Joseph Bazdéev came out in answer to his knock

At home? asked Pierre

Owing to the present state of things Sophia Danílovna has gone to the Torzhók estate with the children your excellency

I will come in all the same I have to look through the books said Pierre

Be so good as to step in Makár Alexéevich the brother of my late master—may the kingdom of heaven be his—has remained here but he is in a weak state as you know said the old servant.

Pierre knew that Makár Alexéevich was Joseph Bazdéev s half insane brother and a hard drinker

Yes yes I know Let us go in said Pierre and entered the house

A tall bald headed old man with a red nose

went away along the passage.

Having learned that there were many charitable institutions in Moscow he mentally decided that he would shower favors on them all. He thought that, as in Africa he had to put on burnoose and sit in a mosque, so in Moscow he must be beneficent like the Tsars. And in order finally to touch the hearts of the Russians—and being like all Frenchmen unable to imagine anything sentimental without a reference to *ma chère, ma tendre, ma pauvre mère*—he decided that he would place an inscription on all these establishments in large letters: "This establishment is dedicated to my dear mother." Or no, it should be simply: *Maison de ma Mère*," he concluded. "But am I really in Moscow? Yes, here it lies before me, but why is the deputation from the city so long in appearing?" he wondered.

Meanwhile an agitated consultation was being carried on in whispers among his generals and marshals at the rear of his suite. Those sent to fetch the deputation had returned with the news that Moscow was empty, that everyone had left it. The faces of those who were conferring together were pale and perturbed. They were not alarmed by the fact that Moscow had been abandoned by its inhabitants (grave as that fact seemed), but by the question how to tell the Emperor—without putting him in the terrible position of appearing ridiculous—that he had been waiting the boyars so long in vain, that there were drunken mobs left in Moscow but no one else. Some said that a deputation of some sort must be scraped together, others disputed that opinion and maintained that the Emperor should first be carefully and skillfully prepared, and then told the truth.

"He will have to be told all the same," said some gentlemen of the suite. "But, gentlemen . . ."

The position was the more awkward because the Emperor, meditating upon his magnanimous plans, was pacing patiently up and down before the outspread map, occasionally glancing along the road to Moscow from under his lifted hand with a bright and proud smile.

"But it's impossible . . ." declared the gentlemen of the suite, shrugging their shoulders but not venturing to utter the implied word—*le ridicule* . . .

At last the Emperor, tired of futile expectation, his actor's instinct suggesting to him that the sublime moment having been too long drawn out was beginning to lose its sublimity, gave a sign with his hand. A single report of a signaling gun followed and the troops, who were already spread out on different sides of Moscow, moved into the city through the Tver, Kalúga, and Dorogomílov gates. Faster and faster vying with one another they moved at the double or at a trot, vanishing amid the clouds of dust they raised and making the air ring with a deafening roar of mingling shouts.

Drawn on by the movement of his troops Napoleon rode with them as far as the Dorogomílov gate, but there again stopped and, dismounting from his horse, paced for a long time by the Kámmer Kollézski rampart, awaiting the deputation.

CHAPTER XX

MEANWHILE Moscow was empty. There were still people in it, perhaps a fiftieth part of its former inhabitants had remained, but it was empty. It was empty in the sense that a dying queenless hive is empty.

In a queenless hive no life is left though to a superficial glance it seems as much alive as other hives.

The bees circle round a queenless hive in the hot beams of the midday sun as gaily as around the living hives; from a distance it smells of honey like the others, and bees fly in and out in the same way. But one has only to observe that hive to realize that there is no longer any life in it. The bees do not fly in the same way, the smell and the sound that meet the beekeeper are not the same. To the beekeeper's tap on the wall of the sick hive, instead of the former instant unanimous humming of tens of thousands of bees with their abdomens threateningly compressed, and producing by the rapid vibration of their wings . . . honey and venom, and the warm whiffs of crowded life, comes an odor of emptiness and decay mingling with the smell of honey. There are no longer sentinels sounding the alarm with their abdomens raised, and ready to die in defense of the hive. There is no longer the measured quiet sound of throbbing activity like the sound of boiling water, but diverse discordant sounds of disorder. In and out of the hive long black robber bees smeared with honey fly timidly and shiftily. They do not sting, but crawl away from danger. Formerly

"My dear, my tender, my poor mother."
House of my Mother.

autumn air when even the nights are warm and when in those dark warm nights golden stars startle and delight us continually by falling from the sky

At ten in the morning of the second of September this weather still held

The brightness of the morning was magical Moscow seen from the Poklónny Hill lay spaciously spread out with her river her gardens and her churches and she seemed to be living her usual life her cupolas glittering like stars in the sunlight

The view of the strange city with its peculiar architecture such as he had never seen before filled Napoleon with the rather envious and uneasy curiosity men feel when they see an alien form of life that has no knowledge of them This city was evidently living with the full force of its own life By the indefinite signs which even at a distance distinguish a living body from a dead one Napoleon from the Poklonny Hill perceived the throb of life in the town and felt as it were the breathing of that great and beautiful body

Every Russian looking at Moscow feels her to be a mother every foreigner who sees her even if ignorant of her significance as the mother city must feel her feminine character and Napoleon felt it

Cette ville asiatique aux innombrables églises Moscou la sainte La voilà donc enfin cette fameuse ville Il était temps said he and dismounting he ordered a plan of Moscow to be spread out before him and summoned Lelorgne d Ideville the interpreter

A town captured by the enemy is like a maid who has lost her honor thought he (he had said so to Tuchkóv at Smolénsk) From that point of view he gazed at the Oriental beauty he had not seen before It seemed strange to him that his long felt wish which had seemed unattainable had at last been realized In the clear morning light he gazed now at the city and now at the plan considering its details and the assurance of possessing it agitated and awed him

But could it be otherwise he thought Here is this capital at my feet Where is Alexander now and of what is he thinking? A strange beautiful and majestic city and a strange and majestic moment! In what light must I appear to them! thought he thinking of his troops Here she is the reward for all those fainthearted men he reflected glancing at those near him and at the troops who were approaching and forming up One word from me one movement of my hand and that ancient capital of the Tsars would perish But my clemency is always ready to descend upon the vanquished I must be magnanimous and truly great But no it can t be true that I am in Moscow he suddenly thought Yet here she is lying at my feet with her golden domes and crosses scintillating and twinkling in the sunshine But I shall spare her On t[illegible]

[illegible] which Alexander will feel most painfully I know him (It seemed to Napoleon that the chief import of what was taking place lay in the personal struggle between himself and Alexander) From the height of the Krémlin—yes there is the Krémlin yes—I will give them just laws I will teach them the meaning of true civilization I will make generations of boyars remember their conqueror with love I will tell the deputation that I did not [illegible] war that [illegible] and that in Moscow I will accept terms of peace worthy of myself and of my people I do not wish to utilize the fortunes of war to humiliate an honored monarch Boyars I will say to them I do not desire war I desire the peace and welfare of all my subjects However I know their presence will inspire me and I shall speak to them as I always do clearly impressively and majestically But can it be true that I am in Moscow? Yes there she lies

Qu on m amène les boyars said he to his suite

A general with a brilliant suite galloped off at once to fetch the boyars

Two hours passed Napoleon had lunched and was again standing in the same place on the Poklonny Hill awaiting the deputation His speech to the boyars had already taken definite shape in his imagination That speech was full of dignity and greatness as Napoleon understood it

He was himself carried away by the tone of [illegible] which Russian notables and his own would mingle He mentally appointed a governor one who would win the hearts of the people

That Asiatic city of the innumerable churches holy Moscow! Here it is then at last that famous city It was high time

Bring the boyars to me

ts passages w th bundles. Tradesmen and their assistants (f whom there were but few) moved bout am the sold ers quite bewildered. They unlocked th ir shops nd locked them p gain and themsel es carried goods away w th the help f their assistants. On the square in fro t of the Bazaar were drummers beatin the muster call. But the roll of the drums did n t make the looti g soldiers ru in the directi n of the drum as f rmerly but mad them, n the contrary run farther a Amo the sold ers in the shops and passages some men were to be seen in gray coats, with closely sh en heads. Two officers, one th scarf over his un f rm a d mounted on lea dark-gray horse th other n an overcoat d n foot, tood t the corner of the Ilyi ka Street, talking A third officer galloped up t them.

"Th general rders them all to be dri n out t o e, with ut f il. This is outrageous Half th m n have dispersed.

"Where are you off to Where he sho ted t three nf ntrymen w thout muskets who, holdi up th skirts f th ir overcoats, were lipp ng past him o th Bazaar passage. "S op o rascals

B t how ar you go to t p them. replied another officer "There no gettin them o ether Th arm should push on before th es bolt, that all

H w can e push on They are tuck there wedged n th brid and d n t m e. Shouldn t we pu cord n round to p event th rest from ru n ng way

"Com go n there nd drive them out! shou ed th se officer

Th officer in th scarf dismoun ed, called up drummer and w t with him t the arcade. Some soldiers tarted runn ay in gro p A shopkeeper w th red pimples on his cheek nea th nose d calm, persistent, calculati press n his plump face, hurriedl d os entatiously pproached the officer w n g his arms.

"Y ur hono sa d h Be so good as to pro ect us W won grudge trifles you are welcom to nythi g—we shall be del ghted Pra I'll fetch p ece f cl th t nce for such ho rabl gentlema or even two p eces with pleas re. Fo w feel how t is but wha ll this—sheer robbery! If you please could not guards be placed if nly to let us close th shop.

Several shopkeepers crowded round the officer

Eh what twaddle! sa d one of them a th n, tern looking man "When one s head gone o e doesn t weep for one s hair! Take what any of you l ke And flourish h arm energetically he turned s deways to the officer

It s ll very well f r you I an S doryeh, to talk, said the first tradesman nrily Please step n de your honor!

"T lk indeed cried the thin one. "In my three shops here I ha e a hu dred thousand rubles worth of goods. Can they be sa ed when the army has go e Eh, what people Aga nst God s might our hands can t fi ht.

Come ins d your hon r! repeated the first tradesman bowing

The officer stood perplexed and his face showed ndecis on.

It not my bus ness he exclaimed and strod on quickly down one of the pa sages.

From one open shop came the sound of blows and vituperation and just as t e officer came up to t a man n gray coat w th a sha en head was flung out ol ntly

This man bent d uble rushed pa t the tradesman and the officer The officer pounced on the soldiers who w re n the shops, but t that mom nt fearful screams reached them from the huge crowd on the Moskva brid e nd th officer ran out into the square

screams came.

Th officer mounted his h rse nd rode f er him. When he reached th bridge he saw two unlimbered guns, the nfantry cros n the bridge, several verturned carts, and frightened and lau hin f ces among the troops. Bed th cannon a cart was stand n t which two horses were harnessed. Four borzois w th collars were press lose t the wheels. Th cart was loaded high, nd t the very t p beside child s chair w th ts legs in the ir sat peasant woman utteri p ercin nd desperate shri ks. He was t ld by his fell w officers that the screams of th crowd and th shr ks of th woman were due to the fact that General

Prisoners ho had been released from jail.—Tr.

crushin one ther upsetting carts and

only bees laden with honey flew into the hive and they flew out empty now they fly out laden The beekeeper opens the lower part of the hive and peers in Instead of black glossy bees—tamed by toil clinging to one another s legs and drawing out the wax with a ceaseless hum of labor—that used to hang in long clusters down to the floor of the hive drowsy shriveled bees crawl about separately in various directions on the floor and walls of the hive Instead of a neatly glued floor swept by the bees with the fanning of their wings there is a floor littered with bits of wax excrement dying bees scarcely moving their legs and dead ones that have not been cleared away

The beekeeper opens the upper part of the hive and examines the super Instead of serried rows of bees sealing up every gap in the combs and keeping the brood warm he sees the skillful complex structures of the combs but no longer in their former state of purity All is neglected and foul Black robber bees are swiftly and stealthily prowling about the combs and the short home bees shriveled and listless as if they were old creep slowly about without trying to hinder the robbers having lost all motive and all sense of life Drones bumblebees wasps and butterflies knock awkwardly against the walls of the hive in their flight Here and there among the cells containing dead brood and honey an angry buzzing can sometimes be heard Here and there a couple of bees by force of habit and custom cleaning out the brood cells with efforts beyond their strength laboriously drag away a dead bee or bumblebee without knowing why [illegible]

intent In a third place a crowd of bees crushing one another attack some victim and fight and smother it and the victim enfeebled or killed drops from above slowly and lightly as a feather among the heap of corpses The keeper opens the two center partitions to ex [illegible]

mystery of generation he sees hundreds of dull listless and sleepy shells of bees They have almost all died unawares sitting in the sanctuary they had guarded and which is now no more They reek of decay and death Only a few of them still move rise and feebly fly to settle on the enemy s hand lacking the spirit to die stinging him the rest are dead and fall as lightly as fish scales The beekeeper closes the hive chalks a mark on it and when he has time tears out its contents and burns it clean

So in the same way Moscow was empty when Napoleon weary uneasy and morose paced up and down in front of the Kámmer Kollézski rampart awaiting what to his mind was a necessary if but formal observance of the proprieties—a deputation

In various corners of Moscow there still remained a few people aimlessly moving about following their old habits and hardly aware of what they were doing

When with due circumspection Napoleon was informed that Moscow was empty he looked angrily at his informant turned away and silently continued to walk to and fro

My carriage! he said

He took his seat beside the aide de camp on duty and drove into the suburb Moscow deserted! he said to himself What an incredible event!

He did not drive into the town but put up at an inn in the Dorogomílov suburb

The *coup de théâtre* had not come off

CHAPTER XXI

THE RUSSIAN TROOPS were passing through Moscow from two o clock at night till two in the afternoon and bore away with them the wounded and the last of the inhabitants who were leaving

The greatest crush during the movement of the troops took place at the Stone Moskvá and Yauza bridges

While the troops dividing into two parts when passing around the Kremlin were thronging the Moskvá and the Stone bridges a great many soldiers taking advantage of the stoppage and congestion turned back from the bridges and slipped stealthily and silently past the church of Vasíli the Beatified and under the Borovítski gate back up the hill to the Red Square where some instinct told them they could easily take things not belonging to them Crowds of the kind seen at cheap sales filled all the passages and alleys of the Bazaar But there were no dealers with voices of ingratiating affability inviting customers to enter there were no hawkers nor the usual motley crowd of female purchasers—but only soldiers in uniforms and overcoats though without muskets entering the Bazaar empty handed and silently making their way out through

ı
ıe

r
st
d

she bo g as he w h m ut.
S y g h he d d sm l ng as f amused t h mself th ffice ran almo t t tr t th gh the deserted treets tow rd tl e Ya za h d t rtake h reg ment

known y ung off c r

CHAPTER XXIII

FRO I AN FI IS IED HOU E n th V rsá ka the gr d floo f wh h was a dramsh p ~ O h hes

er dru k nd p e O e a ta ıa ha d l d cl n blue t was tand g er th thers H f e w th ts fine stra ght ose ld h b en h dsome h d t not be f h th mp es d tw tch g l ps d d ll gloomy fi d yes E d tly possessed by som d h tood o er those who w g g d solem ly d jerk ly fl h d bo tl h ds l wh te rm w th the

I th m dst f th so g cr es were hea d d fight g d blows n th passag nd po h Th tall lad w ed h arm.

Stop tl he ex l med perempto ly "Ther fight lads! A d t ll ll g up his leev h went t to the po ch.

Th factory ha ds f ll wed h m. These me wh u der th leadersh p f the tall l d wer dr kı g th dramsh p that m rn g had b ght th p bl can som kıns f om the f ct ry d f this had had dr k erved them. Th bl cksm ths fr m ghbo g smithy hea ng the sounds of re elry ın the ta ern and s ppos ng ıt t h e been br ken ınto shed to force the way n too and a f ht ın the porch had resulted

The publ can w s fight ng o e of the sm ths t the door a d wh n the kmen c ne out the sm th wre ch ng hımself free from the ta er k eper fell face d wnward on the pa e m nt.

An ther m th trıed t ente the doorway p es ng aga n t the publ can with h s ch st

The lad w th the tu n d up lee e ga e the sm th a blow n the f ce nd cr ed w ldly 'They re fightı g u l d

At th t mome t the f rst sm th g t up and scratcl g h bru ed face t make t l l ed h uted n te rful ce P l ce Mu d rl

They e k lled ma lads!

Oh grac us me a n an beat n to death— k lled cr amed a wom n com n t of gat clos by

A crowd g ther d round the blood ta ned sm th

H n t y u robbed people en ugh—t k ng the l t h ts? d o e dd es ng th publ can Wh t h e y u k lled m n f y u th ef?

The tall l d stand g n the p h tu ed his blea ed eyes f m the publ can to the sm th and b ck g n as ıf cons derı g whom he o ght t f ght now

M de er he h ted sudde ly to tl e publ can B nd h m l ds!

I d es y y u w ld l k to bı d me! l ut d the p bl can push ng away the men dvancı g o h m d n tch g h s cap from hı he d h fi g t th gro nd

As f th ct n h d me mysterı us a d men cı g gn ficance th w kmen urround ı g the publ can p u ed ın ndecıs n

I kn w the l w ery well mates! I ll take th matter to th capta n of pol ce Y u th k I w t g t to h m? R bbery ıs n t per tt d to ybody n waday l houted th publ can p k up his cap

Com al g th l Come al n the the publ can d th tall yo g f ll w repe ted o e fter the other d they mo ed up tl e t eet togethe

Th bloodsta d m th went bes de them. The factory ha ds d other f llowed b

shouting and squeezing desperately had cleared off the bridge and the troops were now moving forward

CHAPTER XXII

MEANWHILE the city itself was deserted There was hardly anyone in the streets The gates and shops were all closed only here and there round the taverns solitary shouts or drunken songs could be heard Nobody drove through the streets and footsteps were rarely heard The Povarskáya was quite still and deserted The huge courtyard of the Rostóvs house was littered with wisps of hay and with dung from the horses and not a soul was to be seen there In the great drawing room of the house which had been left with all it contained were two people They were the yard porter Ignát and the pageboy Míshka Vasílich s grandson who had stayed in Moscow with his grandfather Míshka had opened the clavichord and was strumming on it with one finger The yard porter his arms akimbo stood smiling with satisfaction before the large mirror

Isn t it fine eh Uncle Ignát said the boy suddenly beginning to strike the keyboard with both hands

Only fancy! answered Ignát surprised at the broadening grin on his face in the mirror

Impudence! Impudence! they heard behind them the voice of Mávra Kuzmínichna who had entered silently How he s grinning the fat mug! Is that what you re here for? Nothing s cleared away down there and Vasílich is worn out Just you wait a bit!

Ignát left off smiling adjusted his belt and went out of the room with meekly downcast eyes

Aunt I did it gently said the boy

I ll give you something gently you monkey you! cried Mávra Kuzmínichna raising her arm threateningly Go and get the samovar to boil for your grandfather

Mávra Kuzmínichna flicked the dust off the clavichord and closed it and with a deep sigh left the drawing room and locked its main door

Going out into the yard she paused to consider [illegible]

She heard the sound of quick footsteps in the quiet street Someone stopped at the gate and the latch rattled as someone tried to open it

Mávra Kuzmínichna went to the gate

Who do you want?

The count—Count Ilyá Andréevich Rostóv

And who are you?

An officer I have to see him came the reply in a pleasant well bred Russian voice

Mávra Kuzmínichna opened the gate and an officer of eighteen with the round face of a Rostóv entered the yard

They have gone away sir Went away yesterday at vespertime said Mávra Kuzmínichna cordially

The young officer standing in the gateway as if hesitating whether to enter or not clicked his tongue

[illegible]

[illegible] sympathetically examining the familiar Rostóv features of the young man s face his tattered coat and trodden-down boots

What did you want to see the count for? she asked

Oh well it can t be helped! said he in a tone of vexation and placed his hand on the gate as if to leave

He again paused in indecision

You see he suddenly said I am a kinsman of the count s and he has been very kind to me As you see (he glanced with an amused air and good natured smile at his coat and boots) my things are worn out and I have no money so I was going to ask the count

Mávra Kuzmínichna did not let him finish

Just wait a minute sir One little moment said she

And as soon as the officer let go of the gate handle she turned and hurrying away on her old legs went through the back yard to the servants quarters

While Mávra Kuzmínichna was running to her room the officer walked about the yard gazing at his worn-out boots with lowered head and a faint smile on his lips What a pity I ve missed Uncle! What a nice old woman Where has she run off to? And how am I to find the nearest way to overtake my regiment which must by now be getting near the Rogózhsk gate? thought he Just then Mávra Kuzmínichna appeared from behind the corner of the house with a frightened yet resolute look carrying a rolled up checked kerchief in her hand While still a few steps from the officer she unfolded the kerchief and took out of it a white twenty five ruble assignat and hastily handed it to him

If his excellency had been at home as a

e

fávra
hrist
sa d

sh bo ng a h saw him
S a) g his head a d smil ng as f amused
h ms lf the ffice ran alm t t tr t
uza

osed
ely
cted
the

unknown young officer

CHAPTER XXIII

FROM A UNFI I ED HO SE n th Varvárka th gro d floo f wh ch was dramsh p

great ff rt, e dently n t because they is u to b t because they wanted t sh w they were dru k and on p e On tall fai haired lad cl blu co t, was sta di er th thers H f w th ts fi e tra ght ose w ld h e bee h dsom had t n t been f h th n omp essed tw tch g l ps d dull gloomy fixed eyes E dently possessed b some dea he tood o er thos who were g g nd solem ly d jerkily flour ished bove th ir heads l wh t rm w th the lees turned up t th lbow try g u tu rall p ead ut his d rty fi gers The l eve f his coa kept sl pp g d wn nd h always carel lly rolled t up ga n w th h l ft hand as f t wer most mpo ta t that th ewy h rm h was fl urish g h uld be ba e I the m dst f th song cries wer heard, d fight g d blows th passag and po ch The tall lad w ved hi arm.

"S op h excl med peremptorily "There s fight, lads! A d ll oll g up his sleeve, h wen o t to th po ch.

The factory ha ds f ll wed him. These men who under th leadersh p of the tall l d wer drink g n th dramshop that m rn g had brou ht th publ can som k ns from the f ctory d f this had had drink served them. The bla ksmiths from n ghbori g smithy hea g the sounds of revelry n the tavern and suppos ng t to h e been broken to wished to fo e the way n too nd a fi ht in the po ch had resulted

The publ can wa fi ht ng one of the sm ths t the door a d when the orkmen cam out the m th wr n h g h mself f e fr m the ta rnkeeper f ll f ce d wnw rd the p e ment.

An ther smith tried to enter the doorw y p ess g aga n t the publ can w th hi chest

The l d w th the turned up slee e ga e tl e m th blow n th fa e a d cr ed w ldly They fi htu g us l ds!

At th t moment the first sm th got up and, cratch g h bru ed f ce to make it bleed sh uted n a t arful o e Pol ce Mu de

They e k ll d m n l ds!

Oh graci us me man b ten to death— killed cre med w man com n ut of gat clos by

A cro d gathered round the bloodsta ned m th

H en t you robbed people enou h—t k ng their la t h rts sa d a o ce dd ess g th publ can Wh t ha e you k lled ma fo y u th f?

Th tall l d, ta di g n the porch tu ed his bleared eyes f m the publ can to tl sm th and b ck ga n as f cons dering wh m he u ht t fight n

Murdere h shouted sudde ly to tl e publ can B nd h m lads

I dares y you ould l k t b d me! sh ted th publ ca push g way the men d anci n h m d sn tch g hi cap from h s head h fl g t on the gr u d

As f this ct n h d some mysteri us a d men cing gn ficanc the w rkmen surround g the publ can p used n ndecis on.

I kn w the l w ery well mates! I ll take the mat er to th captain of pol c You th nk I w n t get t h m Robbery n t perm tted to nybody n wad y! h uted th publ can p ck n up his cap

Com lon th ! Come lo then the publ can nd th tall you g f ll w ep ted n afte th other nd they m ed up the treet tog ther

Th bloodsta ed mith went bes de them. The f ct ry h ds nd others followed be-

w rn-out, gloomy faced bootmakers, wear ng

a thin ... frowning brows and a straggly beard was saying

he s
the ... now that he s brought us to this pass he s made off

On seeing the crowd and the bloodstained man the *workman ceased speaking and with* eager curiosity all the bootmakers joined the moving crowd

Where are all the folks going?

Why to the police of course!

I say is it true that we have been beaten?

And what did you think? Look what folks are saying

Questions and answers were heard Th...

a
o ... s ... ully attracting general attention to himself It was around him that the people chiefly crowded expecting answers from him to the questions that occupied all their minds

He must keep order keep the law that s what the government is there for Am I not right good Christians? said the tall youth with a scarcely perceptible smile He thinks there s no government! How can one do without government? Or else there would be plenty who d rob us

Why talk nonsense? rejoined voices in the crowd Will they give up Moscow like this? *They told you that for fun and you believed* it! Aren t there plenty of troops on the march? Let *him* in indeed! That s what the government is for You d better listen to what people are saying said some of the mob pointing to the tall youth

By the wall of China Town a smaller group of people were gathered round a man in a frieze coat who held a paper in his hand

An ukáse they are reading an ukáse! Reading an ukáse! cried voices in the crowd and the people rushed toward the reader

The man in the frieze coat was reading the broadsheet of August 31 When the crowd collected round him he seemed confused but at the demand of the tall lad who had pushed his way up to him he began in a rather tremulous voice to read the sheet from the beginning

Early tomorrow I shall go to his Serene Highness he read (*Sirin Highness* said the tall fellow with a triumphant smile on his lips and a frown on his brow) to consult with him to act and to aid the army to exterminate these scoundrels We too will take part the reader went on and then paused ("Do you see ... s
going to c...
in destro...
tors to the ... I will come back to dinner and we ll set to work We will do completely do and undo these scoundrels

The last words were read out in the midst of complete silence The tall lad hung his head gloomily It was evident that no one had understood the last part In particular the words I will come back to dinner evidently displeased both reader and audience The people s minds were tuned to a high pitch and this was too simple and needlessly comprehensible—it was what any one of them might have said and therefore was what an ukáse emanating from the highest authority should not say

They all stood despondent and silent The tall youth moved his lips and swayed from side to side

We should ask him ... that s he himself

Yes ask him indeed! ... Why not? He ll explain ... voices in the rear of the crowd were suddenly heard saying and the general attention turned to the police superintendent s trap which drove into the square attended by two mounted dragoons

The superintendent of police who had gone that morning by Count Rostopchin s orders to burn the barges and had in connection with that matter acquired a large sum of money *which was at that moment in his pocket* on seeing a crowd bearing down upon him told his coachman to stop

What people are these? he shouted to the men who were moving singly and timidly in the direction of his trap

What people are these? he shouted again receiving no answer

Your honor ... replied the shopman in the frieze coat your honor in accord with the proclamation of his highest excellency the count they desire to serve not sparing their lives and it is not any kind of riot but as his high...

or ...
su...
his coachman

The crowd halted pressing around those who had heard what the superintendent had

s d d looki g at the d parting trap

The supen te de t of pol ce turned round t that moment w th a sca ed look said some- thin to his coachma nd his horses creased th ir speed.

It a fra d, lads! Le d the way to him himself! sh ted the tall youth Don t let him go lads Let h m nswer us Keep h m! shouted differ nt vo ces, nd the people dashed in pursuit f th trap

F ll n the superint ndent of pol ce nd talki g l dly the crowd went n the d rect on f the Lubyá ka Stre t.

"Ther n w th gentry nd merchants h ve go way d left us to peri h Do they think we're dogs?" es n the crowd were heard sayin more d more frequently

CHAPTER XXIV

O THE EVE. I. G of the first f September after his interv w w th K tuzo Count Rostopchin had re urned to Moscow m rt fied d f fended because h had n t be n n ted to t tend th co cil f war d because Kutuzo had paid tt ti n to his offer t take part th defense f the city amazed also t the novel tlook evealed to h m at the camp which treated the tra quill ty f th cap tal d its p tri u fers as t mer ly ec ndary b t q te rr leva d u mportant matters. D tressed offended a d surprised by ll this

repe tedly says th t I e wa tl en actu ted by two mpo tant cons derat ons to ma nta tranqu ll ty in Moscow and expedite the de p rture of the nhabitants If one a cepts th s ... t on appea ir

... ndles ... ffices ... es re ... la s

m ed? Iole ... O n d o ly adm t th t ... act n

... we e ... a qu l

tants we e lea g t and the retre t g troo we e fill ng it. Why h uld that cause the masses to r t?

Ne ther in Moscow nor anywhe e in Rus a d d anyth ng resembl g n nsurrect n ever occur when the nemy entered a town M re

...

rov This l ter eq ested the count to nd pol ffi ers to gu d th troop thro h th town as the rmy was retreati g to th Ryazan oad bey d Moscow This was n t n ws to Rostopchi He had known that M scow ould be band ed t merely nce his n ters ew th p es us d y w th Kutuzo on the P kl y Hill b t er th b ttl of Borodi ó f ll th g rals who came t Mosc w fter tha battl had sa d u m usly tha t was imposs bl t fight ther battl d th the go ernm t p operty had been emo ed every ght nd half the hab ta ts h d l ft the ci y w th Rost pchin own perm io Y ll th sam thi f rmati n hed d rr tated th co ming as d d the f rm I umple n w th n der from K to nd rece ed t n ght break n hu bea ty leep

When la er his mem rs Co t Rostopchin expl ed h tion t this t m h

h ts had tak n st p to rem e ll the h ly el cs, the gu p wder mu t on nd m ey nd h d told th popul t n pl nly th t the town w uld b b d ed.

h d n imag t on been pl y n the role of d ector f th pop la f el ng of the heart of Russ a. N t o ly d d t eem t h m (as to all dm is rat rs) that h co trolled th t rn l cu n of Moscow nh b tants but he also

overalls and long tattered coats

He should pay folks off properly a thin workingman with frowning brows and a straggly beard was saying

But he s sucked our blood and now he thinks he s quit of us He s been misleading us all the week and now that he s brought us to this pass he s made off

On seeing the crowd and the bloodstained man the workman ceased speaking and with eager curiosity all the bootmakers joined the moving crowd

Where are all the folks going?

W

I

And ... you think? Look what folks are saying

Questions and answers were heard The ... hear ...

drop

Tl

ance

on t

I ... the questions that occupied all their minds

He must keep order Keep the law that s what the government is there for Am I not right good Christians? said the tall youth with a scarcely perceptible smile He thinks there s no government! How can one do without government? Or else there would be plenty who d rob us

Why talk nonsense? rejoined voices in the crowd Will they give up Moscow like this? They told you that for fun and you believed it! Aren t there plenty of troops on the march? Let *him* in indeed! That s what the government is for You d better listen to what people are saying said some of the mob pointing to the tall youth

By the wall of China Town a smaller group of people were gathered round a man in a frieze coat who held a paper in his hand

An ukáse they are reading an ukáse! Reading an ukáse! cried voices in the crowd and the people rushed toward the reader

The man in the frieze coat was reading the broadsheet of August 31 When the crowd col ... d ... nd h ...

Early tomorrow I shall go to his Serene Highness he read (Serin Highness said the tall fellow with a triumphant smile on his lips and a frown on his brow) to consult with him to act and to aid the army to exterminate these scoundrels We too will take part the reader went on and then paused (Do you see shouted the youth victoriously he s going to clear up the whole affair fo ...

... completely do and undo these scoundrels

The last words were read out in the midst of complete silence The tall lad hung his head gloomily It was evident that no one had understood the last part In particular the words I will come back to dinner evidently displeased both reader and audience The people s minds were tuned to a high pitch and this was too simple and needlessly comprehensible—it was what any one of them might have said and therefore was what an ukáse emanating from the highest authority should not say

They all stood despondent and silent The tall youth moved his lips and swayed from side to side

We should ask him that s he himself

Yes ask him indeed! Why not? He ll explain voices in the rear of the crowd were suddenly heard saying and the general attention turned to the police superintendent s trap which drove into the square attended by two mounted dragoons

The superintendent of police who had gone that morning by Count Rostopchin s orders to burn the barges and had in connection with that matter acquired a large sum of money which was at that moment in his pocket on seeing a crowd bearing down upon him told his coachman to stop

What people are these? he shouted to the men who were moving singly and timidly in the direction of his trap

What people are these? he shouted again receiving no answer

Your honor ... replied the shopman in the frieze coat your honor in accord with the proclamation of his highest excellency the count they desire to serve not sparing their lives and it is not any kind of riot but as his highest excellence said

ordc

supe

his c

The crowd halted pressing around those who had heard what the superintendent had

d look g t the dep rt ng trap d

the p ed.

Its fra d l ds! Lead the w y to him himself h t d the tall youth Don t let him go l ds Let h m swer us! Keep h m! sho ted diffe nt e nd the people dashed in pursuit f th trap

F ll g the s perintende t of pol c nd talk g l dly the cr wd we t n the d rect on f th Lubyá ka Stre t.

"Ther now the gentry nd merchants h e go e a ay d left us to p r h Do they th nk re dogs ces n the crowd wer heard say g m a d mo e f equently

CHAPTER XXIV

ON THE EVE c f the first f September fter his t r s ew w th K t o Cou t Rost pchín had returned t Moscow m rt fied a d of f ded because he h d not be n n ted to at tend the c l f war d because Kut had p d tt t n t his offer to take p rt th defense f the city am ed lso t the novel t look e ealed t h m t the camp h h treated the tra qu ll ty of the cap tal d its p tri t fer as n t mer ly econdary b t q t rrele a t nd un mportant matters. D tres ed offended nd urpr d by ll this Rostopchí had turned to Mo cow Afte

Th letter req ested th count to s nd pol ffi ers t gu de the troop thr u h the to as the rmy was retreati g to the Ryazán oad bey d Moscow Th was n t news to R t pchí He had kn w that Moscow o ld be b nd ed t merely n his in ers ew th p es s d y w th Kutuzo n the P kló y Il ll but ever nce the b ttl f Borod ó f ll th gen ls wh cam to Moscow f that b ttl h d d n m usly hat t as mposs ble to fi ht oth b ttl d e th th g ernme t p perty had been em ed ry n ght d half th nhab ta ts h d l ft th city w th Rostopch n own perm Yet ll th me this nf rmat tr ished d rr tated the cou t, comi g d th f rm f mple n t w th der from K t zo d ed t n ght break g h beauty leep

When l ter h s mem rs Cou t Ros t pchí expl ed h tio t th t me he repeatedly says th t he was th en actuated by two mport nt cons derat s to ma ntain h de

f

w

"To preserve the tranqu ll ty u

h we e bundles ff ces es re mo d lo e u e pla n Count Ro topch n One need only dm t th t publ c tranqu ll ty is in d nger and any a tion finds a ju tificati n

All the horr rs of the r gn f terr r were based only on sol citude for publ c tranqu l l ty

On wh t th n w s Count Rostopch in s fear for the tranqu ll ty f Mo c w b sed in 1812?

masses to r t?

Ne th in M cow n r anywhere in Ru a d d anyth ng resembl ng n nsurrect n ever occur when the nemy nt red to vn M re

he ts had taken t ps to em e ll th holy l cs th gunp wde mu t and money nd h d t ld th popul t n pla nly th t th t wn w uld be b nd ed.

h d n im g t n be n pl y ng the r l of d ect of th popul f l g of the heart of Russ a. N t only d d t seem to h m (to ll dm trators) th t h contr lled thee ternal acti ns of Moscow h b tants b t h also

thought he controlled their mental attitude by means of his broadsheets and posters written in a coarse tone which the people despise in their own class and do not understand from those in authority Rostopchin was so pleased with the fine role of leader of popular feeling and had grown so used to it that the necessity of relinquishing that role and abandoning Moscow without any heroic display took him unawares and he suddenly felt the ground slip away from under his feet so that he positively did not know what to do Though he knew it was coming he did not till the last moment wholeheartedly believe that Moscow would be abandoned and did not prepare for it The inhabitants left against his wishes If the government offices were removed this was only done on the demand of officials to whom the count yielded reluctantly He was absorbed in the role he had created for himself As is often the case with those gifted with an arden

c mentally to this new position of affairs

All his painstaking and energetic activity (in how far it was useful and had any effect on the people is another question) h

ply directed

own feeling

But when e assumed their true historical character when expressing hatred for the French in words proved insufficient when it was not even possible to express that hatred by fighting a battle when self confidence was of no avail in relation to the one question before Moscow when the whole population streamed out of Moscow as one man abandoning their belongings and proving by that negative action all the depth of their national feeling then the role chosen by Rostopchin suddenly appeared senseless He unexpectedly felt himself ridiculous weak and alone with no ground to stand on

When awakened from his sleep he received that cold peremptory note from Kutuzov he felt the more irritated the more he felt himself to blame All that he had been specially put in charge of the state property which he should have removed was still in Moscow and it was no longer possible to take the whole of it away

Who is to blame for it? Who has let things come to such a pass? he ruminated Not I of course I had everything ready I had Moscow firmly in hand And this is what they have let it come to! Villains! Traitors! he thought, without clearly defining who the villains and traitors were but feeling it necessary to hate those traitors whoe

to blame

in which

All that night Count Rostopchin issued orders for which people came to him from all parts of Moscow Those about I

t as sent for instructions From the Consistory from the Senate from the University from the Foundling Hospital the Suffragan has sent asking for information What are your orders about the Fire Brigade? From the governor of the prison from the superintendent of the lunatic asylum All night long such announcements were continually being received by the count

To all these inquiries he gave brief and angry replies indicating that orders from him were not now needed that the whole affair carefully prepared by him had now been ruined by somebody and that that somebody would have to bear the whole responsibility for all that might happen

Oh tell that blockhead he said in reply to the question from the Registrar's Department that he should remain to guard his documents Now why are you asking silly questions about the Fire Brigade? They have horses let them be off to Vladimir and not leave them to the French

Your excellency the superintendent of the lunatic asylum has come what are your commands?

My commands? Let them go away that's all And let the lunatics out into the town When lunatics command our armies God evidently means these other madmen to be free

In reply to an inquiry about the convicts in the prison Count Rostopchin shouted angrily at the governor

Do you expect

ions—h

lease ther

Your

prisoners

shot

CHAPTER XXV

Toward nine o'clock in the morning when the troops were already moving through Moscow nobody came to the count any more F

instructions. Those who were able to get away were go f the r own ccord, those who remained behi d decided for themsel es what t ey must d

Th co nt ordered his carriage that he m ht drive t Sokól ki and sat n his tudy w th folded ha ds morose sall w nd taciturn

I q t and untroubled t mes t seems to every dm trat r that t only by his f forts that th wh l pop l t n under h s rule kept goin nd this consci usness of be-

s

as t rm arises d th sea beg n to hea e

suddenly the dm trat nstead t ppear ing ruler d a source f power becomes an insign fica t useless, feeble man

Rostopchin f lt this, d it was thi wh ch exasperated him

The pen t de t of pol c wh m the crowd had pped, w t n t ee h m t the sam time as djutant who nf rmed th co t that th h rses wer harnessed. They were both pal d th uperi tendent of pol fter reporti that he h d executed the nstructi h had rec ed f rmed th cou t that immense crowd had collected in th urtyard d wished t ee him.

W thout sa g word Ros pch rose nd wa ked hastil t his l ht, l ur us drawing room, en th balco doo took hold of th handl let go ga d w t to th wind from wh h he had better ew f th hol cr wd. Th tall l d wa tandin in fro t, fl uri hi h rm d say g something with m look. Th bloodsta ned smith ood bes d him with gloomy f e. A dro e f vo ces as ud ble throu h th closed w n-dow

I m carriage read ked Rost pchin stepp ng back from th wind w

It is, ur excell cy epl ed the djutant. Ros opch ga o the balcony doo

B wha do they want h asked the u perintendent f pol e

"Your excellency they say they ha got ready accordi g t your orders, t go ga nst the French, and they shouted someth ng about treachery But t s a tu bulent cro d your excell cy—I hardl man ed to get ay from it. Y ur cellency I enture to uggest

Y u may go. I don t need you to tell me wh t to d excla med Rost pchin ngr l

He stood by the b lcony door look t the crowd.

"This s wh t they ha e done w th Russ Th what they ha e d n w th me tho ght he full of n rrep ess ble fury that welled up w th n h m ga nst the someo e to wh n hat A often s m s object

on wh ch to e t t. Here t that ob the dregs of the people he thought a h gazed at the crowd this rabble they h r u ed by the f lly They want ct m he thou ht a he looked t the tall l d flourish h arm. And th th u ht occurred to h m ju t because he h mself des red ctim someth on wh h to ent hi rage.

Is the carriage read he sked ga n

Yes, our excelle cy What your o ders about Vereshchá n He wa t n t the po ch sa d the djut t.

Ah excl med Rostopchin f stru k by n u e pected recollect n.

And rap dl pen n the doo he went resolut ly out onto the b lcony The talk n in

ly nd t ut

com out to you n m m nt but we mu t first settl w th the ll n We must pu h th vill n who ha caused the ru n of Moscow W t f me

And the count tepped br kl ba k nto th room nd lammed th doo beh d h m.

sayi g as f repro g o e noth f r th r la k of confidence

A f w minutes l ter n officer cam hurried ly ut of th front doo ga e n order nd the dragoons f rmed up n l n Th crowd mo ed eagerly from the balcon t ward the po ch. Rostopchi com g out ther w th qui k gry teps, looked hast ly round as if seek ng someo e.

"Where is h h quired. A d as h poke he saw a youn man com round the corner

of the house between two dragoons He had a long thin neck and his head that had been half shaved was again covered by short hair This young man was dressed in a threadbare blue cloth coat lined with fox fur that had once been smart and dirty hempen convict trousers over which were pulled his thin dirty trodden-down boots On his thin weak legs were heavy chains which hampered his irresolute movements

Ah! said Rostopchin hurriedly turning away his eyes from the young man in the fur lined coat and pointing to the bottom step of the porch Put him there

The young man in his clattering chains stepped clumsily to the spot indicated holding away with one finger the coat collar which chafed his neck turned his long neck twice this way and that sighed and submissively folded before him his thin hands unused to work

For several seconds while the young man was taking his place on the step the silence continued Only among the back rows of the people who were all pressing toward the one spot could sighs groans and the shuffling of feet be heard

While waiting for the young man to take his place on the step Rostopchin stood frowning and rubbing his face with his hand

Lads! said he with a metallic ring in his voice This man Vereshchágin is the scoundrel by whose doing Moscow is perishing

The young man in the fur lined coat stooping a little stood in a submissive attitude his fingers clasped before him His emaciated young face disfigured by the half shaven head hung down hopelessly At the count s first words he raised it slowly and looked up at him as if wishing to say something or at least to meet his eye But Rostopchin did not look at him A vein in the young man s long thin neck swelled like a cord and went blue behind the ear and suddenly his face flushed

All eyes were fixed on him He looked at the crowd and rendered more hopeful by the expression he read on the faces there he smiled sadly and timidly and lowering his head shifted his feet on the step

He has betrayed his Tsar and his country he had gone over to Bonaparte He alone of all the Russians has disgraced the Russian name he has caused Moscow to perish said Rostopchin in a sharp even voice but suddenly he glanced down at Vereshchágin who continued to stand in the same submissive attitude As if inflamed by the sight he raised his arm and addressed the people almost shouting

Deal with him as you think fit! I hand him over to you

The cro d —
closer an
another b
phere to ... to stir and to await something unknown ...
ble was bec
ing in front
taken place l
open eyes and mouths straining with all their strength and held back the crowd that was pushing behind them

Beat him! Let the traitor perish and not disgrace the Russian name! shouted Rostopchin Cut him down I command it

Hearing not so much the words as the angry tone of Rostopchin s voice the crowd moaned and heaved forward but again paused

Count! ...
voice of Ver...
mentary sile... Count! One God is above us both He lifted his ...

He did not finish what he wished to say

Cut him down! I command it shouted Rostopchin suddenly growing pale like Vereshchágin

Draw sabers! cried the dragoon officer drawing his own

Another still stronger wave flowed through the crowd and reaching the front ranks carried it swaying to the very steps of the porch. The tall youth with a stony look on his face and rigid and uplifted arm stood beside Vereshchágin

Saber him! the dragoon officer almost whispered

And one of the soldiers his face all at once distorted with fury struck Vereshchágin on the head with the blunt side of his saber

Ah! cried Vereshchágin in meek surprise looking round with a frightened glance as if not understanding why this was done to him A similar moan of surprise and horror ran through the crowd O Lord! exclaimed a sorrowful voice

But after the exclamation of surprise that had escaped from Vereshchágin he uttered a plaintive cry of pain and that cry was fatal The barrier of human feeling strained to the

utmost that had held the crowd n check sud denly b ke The cr me had begun and must now be completed The pl nt e m n of re proach wa drowned by the threatent g a d ery roar f th crowd Lik the s enth nd l twa e that shatt rs a h p th t l t rr s t ble a e b rst from the rear nd reached the fro t ra ks, carry g th m off tl e r feet nd engulfi th m all The dragoon was bout t r peat his bl w Ve eshchágin w th cry of h rror co er h shead w th h h nd ra led t ard the crowd The tall y th g nt wh m he st mbled e ed h s th n neck th his ha ds nd ell w ldly fell w th h m un der th feet of th press n struggl n crowd

Some beat nd t t V resh l d n others t the tall y th And th scream of those that e b g trampled nd of tl ose who tr ed t rescue the t ll l d only ncrea ed the fury f tl crowd. It a l ng t me bef re th lragoo co ld extr cate the bleed ng th beate lmost to death. And f a l ng t m desp te the feve h l te th wh ch the m b tried t e d th w k th t h d been be gu those wh e h tt g throttl g d tear g t V esl há w re u ble to k ll h m f the crowd pressed from ll s des g as e mass w tl th n in th ce te l re ler g t mpos ble f r them th r to k ll h m let h m go

O l wh n th t m ea ed t struggle nd h cr es h l t l -drawn me u ed leath rattl l l th crow l ro d l pros trat bl ed g corpse bee raj dly t ch ge pl es. Ea h e cam p gl ced t wl t h d been lo l th h rr rep o cl nd as to l m t p l ed b k a

O Lord The peopl e l k w ld bea tsl ll w ld h be l e ces n th crowd co ld be heard g Q e y u g f ll w oo tha b en m ch t so Wh t me d th y say l e t th rigl t ne

ll w t th l t n ? O Lord A l th ther ha been beat n too—tl ey say h ea ly d e f r Ol th peopl A t the fra d l g? d the sam mob w look g w th pa ed distress at h dead body w th t s l g tl n h lf-se ed eck d ts l d f ce ta ed w th blood d d t

A p k g pol ce officer con der g the p esence l corpse in his e cellency court yard unseemly told tl e dragoons to take it ay Two lragoons took it by its d storted legs and dragged t l ng tl e ground The gory l ead w th its lon

hurr ed steps a d be t head not k ow g where an l wl y al the p ssage le d g to the rooms on the ground floo The count s f ce was wh te nd l e co ld not control the fe e h tw tcl g of h l wer j w

Th s way you e celle cy Where are Th w please sa d a

d cated. At the back entrance stood his e e crow l a u l

n u e so

When they r ched the Mya nit k Street a d could no lo ge l ear the sh ut of tl e m b th cou t bega t rep t He remem bered w th l ss t fact n the g t t o t a d fea he h d betrayed bef l s bord ates. The m b t terr ble—d g ut e l e sa d to l mself F e l Tl ey are l ke l es hom n th g but flesh can] pe e Count! One God t bo e u botl l —V esl cl á n s w rds s dde ly recurred to l d a d reeable sl ra l wn h l ck But th s a only a n nentary feel an l Count Rost pcl in sm led l d f lly t h mself I l d oth r d t es th u ht he Th people h d t be pp ed M y th tums ha e pe shed d are pe h g f the publ c good — n l he bega th k ng f h s soc al dut es to l f m ly d to the c ty entru ted t h m nd f h m elf— t l m elf s Theodore Vasilye ch Rost p hin (he fa c ed th t Theodore V lye h Rost p hin as sacr fi h m elf f the publ good) b t l ms lf s go rn tl p esent t of th city nd of the Tsa ll d l been s mply Theod V il ye h my course f t on would ha e been qu te d ffer t but t v my duty t s fe guard my l fe and d g ty comma der n h f

Ligl tly sway g on tl e fl x ble sp gs f h carri ge and n lo ger hear g the terrible

of the house between two dragoons He had a long thin neck and his head that had been half shaved was again covered by short hair This young man was dressed in a threadbare blue cloth coat lined with fox fur that had once been smart and dirty hempen convict trousers over which were pulled his thin dirty trodden-down boots On his thin weak legs were heavy chains which hampered his irresolute movements

Ah! said Rostopchín hurriedly turning away his eyes from the young man in the fur lined coat and pointing to the bottom step of the porch Put him there

The young man in his clattering chains stepped clumsily to the spot indicated holding away with one finger the coat collar which chafed his neck turned his long neck twice this way and that sighed and submissively folded before him his thin hands unused to work

For several seconds while the young man was taking his place on the step the silence continued Only among the back rows of the people who were all pressing toward the one spot could sighs groans and the shuffling of feet be heard

While waiting for the young man to take his place on the step Rostopchín stood frowning and rubbing his face with his hand

Lads! said he with a metallic ring in his voice This man Vereshchágin is the scoundrel by whose doing Moscow is perishing

The young man in the fur lined coat stooping a little stood in a submissive attitude his fingers clasped before him His emaciated young face disfigured by the half shaven head hung down hopelessly At the count s first words he raised it slowly and looked up at him as if wishing to say something or at least to meet his eye But Rostopchín did not look at him A vein in the young man s long thin neck swelled like a cord and went blue behind the ear and suddenly his face flushed

All eyes were fixed on him He looked at the crowd and rendered more hopeful by the expression he read on the faces there he smiled sadly and timidly and lowering his head shifted his feet on the step

He has betrayed his Tsar and his country he had gone over to Bonaparte He alone of all the Russians has disgraced the Russian — — I I is caused Moscow to perish said -

tinued to stand in the same su —

tude As if inflamed by the sight he raised his arm and addressed the people almost shouting

Deal with him as you think fit! I hand him over to you

The crowd remained silent and only pressed closer and closer to one another To keep one another back to breathe in that stifling atmosphere to be unable to stir and to await something unknown uncomprehended and terrible was becoming unbearable Those standing in front who had seen and heard what had taken place before them all stood with wide open eyes and mouths straining with all their strength and held back the crowd that was pushing behind them

Beat him! Let the traitor perish and not disgrace the Russian name! shouted Rostopchín Cut him down I command it

Hearing not so much the words as the angry tone of Rostopchín s voice the crowd moaned

,

is above us both He lifted his head and again the thick vein in his thin neck filled with blood and the color rapidly came and went in his face

He did not finish what he wished to say

Cut him down! I command it shouted Rostopchín suddenly growing pale like Vereshchágin

Draw sabers! cried the dragoon officer drawing his own

Another still stronger wave flowed through the crowd and reaching the front ranks carried it swaying to the very steps of the porch The tall youth with a stony look on his face and rigid and uplifted arm stood beside Vereshchágin

Saber him! the dragoon officer almost whispered

— t It once

not understanding why this was do

A similar moan of surprise and horror ran through the crowd O Lord! exclaimed a sorrowful voice

But after the exclamation of surprise that had escaped from Vereshchágin he uttered a plaintive cry of pain and that cry was fatal The barrier of human feeling strained to the

Troops ere st'll cr wd n t the Ya za b e. It wa h t. Kut z dejected and lo m sat o be ch by the b d e toy with his h p the sa d wh n a lèche

onl th rmy rema ed.

"Thi s would h e b en d ffe t f your Sere e H h ess had n t t ld m th t you ould t b d n M w w th t other battle all th s ould t ha e happe ed he said.

K t looked t R t pchín as f not gra p h t was sa d to h m h was try g to ead som th g pecul wr tte t th t mo ment the f ce f th m n addres g h m. Rost pch grew co fus d nd became s le t. K l htly hook h he d d not tak h p trat gaze f m Rost pchín s fa m ttered softl

"N I shall n t gi e up Moscow w th t a battl

Wh th K t wa th k g of someth entirely d ffer t wh h pok th w rds tered th m purpos ly k w them to be mea less t rate Rost pchín made repl d h t ly l ft h m. And tra ge t sa h

t carts th t blocked the way

CHAPTER XXVI

T AND R O CLOCK n the fternoo Mur t troops e teri g Moscow In fr trode d tachme t f W rttemberg hussars d be hind them rode th K g of N ples h mself comp ed by a mer us u te.

Abou th m ddl f th A bát Street nea th Church f th M racul us Icon of St. N h las M rat hal ed t a t new from th d ed det chment t the co dit n n wh ch they had f d th c tad l, l K ml

Ar d M rat gathered group of those ho had ema ed in Mosc w They all tared m d bew lderment t th tra e lo g ha ed omma der dressed up feathers d gold.

" I th h Tsa h mself? H t bad k w es ld be l ea d say g

A erp er rod p t the gr p

"T k ff y cap y cap t These wo ds went from to ther n the cr wd.

The interp eter ddressed n old porter and ked f it was f to the K émlin The porter

M rat pp o ched th terp eter and told h m to k he e the Russ n rmy was One f the R n u derstood wh t w asked nd several ces at once began an wer th terp ter A F e ch office et m g from the d anced detachm t, rode up to Murat a d r po ted that th gates of the ta

u ge uemen n h s u te, ordered four l ght gun t be mo ed f rward to fire at the gates

Th gu emerged at a tr t from the column f llow g Murat d ad anced up the Arbát. When they eached the end of the V o d zhen ka Street they halted a d drew up n the Square Sev ral F ch ffi ers s perı te ded the pl c ng of the gu d looked t the Krémlin throu h field glasses

Th bell n the Krémli n were ri ging f r espers nd this sou d tr ubled the Fr nch. They

uots g o t from u der the gate as soon as n officer nd men began to run towa d t. A general who was tand g by the guns sh uted some w rds f command to the ffic a d the latter ran back ga n w th his m

Tl e so d of th ee mo e hots came from the gate

O shot truck a F ench sold er s foot, and fr m beh d the screen came the strange sou d f a f w o ces h uti I stantly as t a w d of comma d the exp ess on of cheerful seren ty o th f es f th F nch general of fi ers and men cha ged t o e of determ ned co e trated ead ness f tr fe nd uffer g To ll of them fr m the marshal to the least soldier th t pl ce was n t th V d zhenka M khaváy K táfy Street, n the T o tsa G t (pl es f m l ar in Moscow) b t a new battlefield wh ch w uld prob bly pr sa u ry A d all mad eady f th t b ttle Th cr es f m the gates ceased Th gu were d a ed the rt ll rym bl w th ash ff th ir l nstocks nd an officer ga e th word Fire! This was f ll wed by two whistling

sounds of the crowd Rostopchin grew physically calm and as always happens as soon as he became physically tranquil his mind devised reasons why he should be mentally tranquil too The thought which tranquillized Rostopchin was not a new one Since the world began and men have killed one another no one has ever committed such a crime against his fellow man without comforting himself with this same idea This idea is *le bien public* the hypothetical welfare of other people

To a man not swayed by passion that welfare is never certain but he who commits such a crime always knows just where that welfare lies And Rostopchin now knew it

Not only did his reason not reproach him for what he had done but he even found cause for self satisfaction in having so successfully contrived to avail himself of a convenient opportunity to punish a criminal and at the same time pacify the mob

Vereshchágin was tried and condemned to death thought Rostopchin (though the Senate had only condemned Vereshchágin to hard labor) he was a traitor and a spy I could not let him go unpunished and so I have killed two birds with one stone to appease the mob I gave them a victim and at the same time punished a miscreant

Having reached his country house and begun to give orders about domestic arrangements the count grew quite tranquil

Half an hour later he was driving with his fast horses across the Sokólniki field no longer thinking of what had occurred but considering what was to come He was driving to the Yauza bridge where he had heard that Kutuzov was Count Rostopchin was mentally preparing the angry and stinging reproaches he meant to address to Kutuzov for his deception He would make that foxy old courtier feel that the responsibility for all the calamities that would follow the abandonment of the city and the ruin of Russia (as Rostopchin regarded it) would fall upon his doting old head Planning beforehand what he would say to Kutuzov Rostopchin turned angrily in his *calèche* and gazed sternly from side to side

The Sokólniki field was deserted Only at the end of it in front of the almshouse and the lunatic asylum could be seen some people in white and others like them walking singly across the field shouting and gesticulating

One of these was running to cross the path of Count Rostopchin s carriage and the count himself his coachman and his dragoons looked with vague horror and curiosity at these released lunatics and especially at the o ... ning ...

le[illegible]

he was [illegible]

Rostopc[illegible] something in a hoarse voice and making signs to him to stop The lunatic s solemn gloomy face was thin and yellow with its beard growing in uneven tufts His black agate pupils with saffron yellow whites moved restlessly near the lower eyelids

Stop! Pull up I tell you! he cried in a piercing voice and again shouted something breathlessly with emphatic intonations and gestures

Coming abreast of the *calèche* he ran beside it

Thrice have they slain me thrice have I risen from the dead They stoned me crucified me I shall rise shall rise [illegible]

[illegible] Go fas[illegible] faster! he cried [illegible]

The c[illegible]

horses

Rostop[illegible] heard the insane despairing screams growing fainter in the distan[illegible]

[illegible] at

Recent as that mental picture was Rostopchin already felt that it had cut deep into his heart [illegible]

ly that [illegible]

not pa[illegible]

ory wo[illegible]

ever mo[illegible] cruelly and painfully to the end of his life He seemed still to hear the sound of his own words Cut him down! I command it

Why did I utter those words? It was by some a[illegible]

[illegible] face of the dragoon who dealt the blow the look of silent timid reproach that boy in the fur lined coat had turned upon him But I did not do it for my own sake I was bound to act that way The mob the traitor the public welfare thought he

rections from the Krémlin into which they had first marched. The cavalry on entering mer chant house that had been abandoned and find... there stabl m re than ufficient f their horses went all the sam to the next house hich seemed t them better Many of t em ppropriated several h uses chalked their names them, and quarreled and even f ught w h ot er companies f r them. Befo e they had had tim to secure quarters the sold ers ran out into the treets to see the city and, hearing that everythin had been band ned, rushed to pl es where valuables were t be had for t e tak The officers f ll wed to check the soldiers and wer nvoluntarily drawn into do ng th same In Carriage R w carriages had been l ft n the hops, nd g nera s flocked there to select l hes and coaches f r themselves. The few nhab ta ts who had remained inv ted commandin officers to th ir h uses, hop ng ther by to secure themselves from being plundered. There were masses of wealth and there seemed no d to t. All around the quarters occup ed by th F e ch wer other regio still unexpl ed nd u occup ed where t ey tho ght, y t greater riches might be found. A d Moscow engulfed th army ever deeper and deeper Wh water is pilled on dry grou d both th dry ground nd th water disappear and mud esults and n the sam

Square nd cook themselves meals tw ce a day In peacetime it is only necessary to b llet troops n the villa es of ny di tr ct nd the number creases. of fire n town where fore gn troops are quar u. epat o- tum feroc deR st pch and the barbarity of the French were not to bl me n the matter Moscow was set on fire by the sold ers p pes kitchens, and campfires, and by the careless ness of enemy sold ers occupying houses they did not own. E en f there was any arson (which is ery doubtful, f r no one had any reason to burn the houses— n ny case a troublesome nd dangerous thing to do) arson cannot be egarded as the cause, f r the same thing would ha happened w th ut y t c ndiarism

However tempting t m ght be f r the Fre ch to blame Rostopchin ferocity d f r Russians to blame the scoundrel Bonaparte o l ter on to place an hero torch in th hands of their own people, t is imposs ble not to see that there could be no such direct cause of the fire, f Moscow had to burn as every illa e factory or house mu t burn wh ch is left by ts owners and in which stran ers re llowed to li and cook the porrid, Moscow was burned by ts inhab tants, t tru but by

t wealth cit

Th F ench ttributed the Fire of Moscow *pa ri tum feroce d R t pch* the Rus ia to the barbar ty f the French. In eality however t was not, nd could n t be possibl to expla th burnin of Moscow by making any d dual or y group of people respo ble f t Moscow wa burned because found tself in pos ti n n which y own built f wood wa bou d to burn, quit part from whether t had, had not, hun dred and thirty fenior fir engi es. Deserted Moscow had to burn as ev tably as heap f ha ngs has to burn on which parks co ti u l f ll for several days. A town built of wood, her sca ly day passes w tho t conflagra ions hen th house owners are n es dence nd polic f ce p esent, cannot help burning hen ts nhab ta ts ha e left t nd is occup ed by soldiers ho moke p pes, mak campfires f the Sena e chairs n the Senate T Ros opchin ferocious patriotism.

inhab tants abandoned t d d d not welcome the French w th bread and salt no brin them th keys f the city

CHAPTER XXVII

THE ABSORPTION of th F ench by Moscow ra diating starwise as t did, o ly reached the quarter where P err was stay n by th eve n g of th second of September

After the last two days spent in sol tude and unusual circumstan es P erre was n a state borderi g on nsan ty H was completel bsessed by one persistent thou ht. He did not kn w how o when this thou ht had taken such possess on f him, but h remembered othi of the past, understood noth of th p esent, d all h saw and heard p- pea ed to him l ke dream.

H had left hom nl to escape th ntrica e ta gl of l fe dema ds th t enmeshed h m, and which n hi prese t condition h was unabl to unra el. He had gon t Joseph Alexeevich house n th plea of sortu g th

sounds of canister shot one after another The shot rattled against the stone of the gate and upon the wooden beams and screens and two wavering clouds of smoke rose over the Square

A few instants after the echo of the reports resounding over the stone built Kremlin had died away the French heard a strange sound above their head Thousands of cro

u came a solitary human cry from the gateway and amid the smoke appeared the figure of a bareheaded man in a peasant s coat He grasped a musket and took aim at the French Fire! repeated the officer once more and the reports of a musket and of two cannon shots were heard simultaneously The gate was again hidden by smoke

Nothing more stirred behind the screens and the French infantry soldiers and officers advanced to the gate In the gateway lay three wounded and four dead Two men in peasant coats ran away at the foot of the wall toward the Známenka

Clear that away! said the officer pointing to the beams and the corpses and the French soldiers after dispatching the wounded threw the corpses over the parapet

Who these men were nobody knew Clear that away! was all that was said of them and they were thrown over the parapet and removed later on that they might not stink Thiers alone dedicates a few eloquent lines to their memory These wretches had occupied the sacred citadel having supplied themselves with guns from the arsenal and fired (the wretches) at the French Some of them were sabered and the Krémlin was purged of their presence

Murat was informed that the way had been cleared The French entered the gates and began pitching their camp in the Senate Square Out of the windows of the Senate House the soldiers threw chairs into the Square for fuel and kindled fires there

Other detachments passed through the Krémlin and encamped along the Moroséyka the Lubyánka and Pokróvka Streets Others quartered themselves along the Vozdvízhenka the Nikólski and the Tverskóy Streets No masters

Though tattered hungry worn out and reduced to a third of their original number the French entered Moscow in good marching order It was a weary and famished but still a fighting and menacing army But it remained an army only until its soldiers had dispersed into their different lodgings As soon as the men of the various regiments began to disperse among the wealthy and deserted houses the army was lost forever and there came into being something nondescript neither citizens nor soldiers but what are known as marauders. When five weeks later these same men left Moscow they no longer formed an army They were a mob of marauders each carrying a quantity of articles which seemed to him valuable or useful The aim of each man when he left Moscow was no longer as it had been to conquer but merely to keep what he had acquired Like a monkey which puts its paw into the narrow neck of a jug and having seized a handful of nuts will not open its fist for fear of losing what it holds and therefore perishes the French when they left Moscow had inevitably to perish because they carried their loot with them yet to abandon what they had stolen was as impossible for them as it is for the monkey to open its paw and let go of its nuts Ten minutes after each regiment had entered a Moscow district not a soldier or officer was left Men in military uniforms and Hessian boots could be seen through the windows laughing and walking through the rooms In cellars and storerooms similar men were busy among the provisions and in the yards unlocking or breaking open coach house and stable doors lighting fires in kitchens and kneading and baking bread with rolled up sleeves and cooking or frightening amusing or caressing women and children There were many such men both in the shops and houses—but there was no army

Order after order was issued by the French commanders that day forbidding the men to disperse about the town sternly forbidding any violence to the inhabitants or any looting and announcing a roll call for that very evening But despite all these measures the men who had till then constituted an army flowed

l

persses u ... as soon as it reaches rich pastures so did the army disperse all over the wealthy city

No residents were left in Moscow and the soldiers—like water percolating through sand—spread irresistibly through the city in all di-

epless hts p s ed on a hort sofa w thout bed n —all this kept him tate of e ite ment borderi g o san ty

It was tw o clock in the aft rnoon Th French had already e te ed Moscow P erre knew this, b t n tead f ct heonly th u ht bout his dertaki go o e ts m nutest h f cv h d d not g of w th y en and

"Yes I f r the sake I ll I mu t d t or perish! he th ght. "Yes I will appro ch d th sudden! w th p stol o dag ger B t that is ll th sam I It s not I but th hand f Prov d ce that p ishes thee I hall say th ght h m g wh th would n hen k ll N poleon Well then take me d e ecut m he we t peak ng to himself d bow g h s h d w th sad but firm exp ess

Whil P err sta d n the m ddl of the room, was talk t h mself this way the h h esh ld p-

seeing P err h grew confused t first, but not ti emb rrassment n P erre fa e im mediat ly grew bold d taggeri g on hi thi legs d a ed t the middl of the room.

"They e fright ed he sa d o fide t ally h rse ce. I say I won t urre der I say Am I n t ht.

He paused d th s dde ly see g the p l the tabl ed w th u expected rap d d ra o t t th rrid

Gera m d th po ter who had f ll wed M kár Alexées ch, t pped him th est bu d tr ed to tak the p tol from h m. P err com ut to th corrid looked w th p ty d ep ls n t th half-crazy old man. M kár Alexées ch frown g w th exer tion h ld to th p l nd screamed h rse- l es dently w th som her fancy n h head.

"T arms Boa d them No o han t get it, h yelled.

"Th will d plea that w ll d H the good en—please t le g Please plea ed Gerá m, try g caref lly to teer M kár Alexées ch by th lbows back to th door

Wh r you? Bon parte! shouted M kár Alexées ch.

w ht s r Come to your room t l t See

this h uted M ka nd h t the p tol Bo rd them

Catch hold! whispered Gerásim to the porter

They se ed *Makár Alexées ch by the arm* nd dragged h m t the doo

Th est bule wa filled w th the d sco dant sou ds of a struggle and of a tipsy h rse c

Suddenly a fresh sound a p ercing fem n n scream e erberated fr m th porch nd the cook came runn ng to the est bule.

It them Grac ous hea n O Lo d four of them h rsem n! she cried

Gerás m nd the po ter let M ká Ale é ev ch go d n the now s lent corridor the sound of everal h nds knocki g t the front door could be heard.

CHAPTER XXVIII

PIERRE, ha g decided that unt l he had ca r ed o t h des gn he w uld d cl se ne ther hi d nity nor his kn wledg of F ench stood at the half-open doo f the corr d intend n t co ceal himself soon as th Fre ch e tered. But the French ntered and still P erre did n t retire— n rresistibl cur os ty kept him ther

There were two of them. O e wa n fficer — t ll soldi ly handsom man—the other

th entra ce d loud ce of command rdered them to put up the horses H d n that, th officer l ft g hi lbow w th a mart gesture str ked h mustach nd l ht ly to ched h hat.

B j l ompagn sa d h ga ly m l d look g bout h m.

No n ga e ny reply

Vous êtes l b the officer asked Gerásim.

Gerás m gazed t the offi er w th n alarmed and quiring look.

Good day everybod

Are yo th master here.

deceased s books and papers only in search of rest from life s turmoil For in his mind the memory of Joseph Alexéevich was connected with a world of eternal solemn and calm thoughts quite contrary to the restless confusion into which he felt himself being drawn He sought a quiet refuge and in Joseph Alexéevich s study he really found it When he sat with his elbows on the dusty writing table in the deathlike stillness of the study calm and significant memories of the last few days rose one after another in his imagination particularly of the battle of Borodinó and of that vague sense of his own insignificance and insincerity compared with the truth simplicity and strength of the class of men he mentally classed as *they* When Gerásim roused him from his reverie the idea occurred to him of taking part in the popular defense of Moscow which he knew was projected And with that object he had asked Gerásim to get him a peasant s coat and a pistol confiding to him his intentions of remaining in Joseph Alexéevich s house and keeping his name secret Then during the first day spent in inact on nd ~

t

i Bonaparte s more than once vaguely presented itself But the idea that he *L russe Besuhof* was destined to set a limit to the power of the *Beast* was as yet only one of the fancies that often passed through his mind and left no trace behind

When having bought the coat merely with the object of taking part among the people in the defense of Moscow Pierre had met the Rostóvs and Natásha had said to him Are you remaining in Moscow? How splendid! the thought flashed into his mind that it really would be a good thing even if Moscow were taken for him to remain there and do t

I ... in any way behind *them* Pierre went to the Three Hills gate But when he returned to the house convinced that Moscow would not be defended he suddenly felt that what before had seemed to him merely a possibility had now become absolutely necessary and inevitable He must remain in Moscow concealing his name and must meet Napoleon and kill him and either perish or put an end to the misery of all Europe—which it seemed to him was solely due to Napoleon

Pierre knew all the details of the attempt on Bonaparte s life in 1809 by a German student in Vienna and knew that the student had been shot And the risk to which he would expose his life by carrying out his design excited him still more

Two equally strong feelings drew Pierre irresistibly to this purpose The first was a feeling of the necessity of sacrifice and suffering in view of the com non ~

that

twen

thick ... and had now caused him to run away from his home and in place of the luxury and comfort to which he was accustomed to sleep on a hard sofa without undressing and eat the same food as Gerásim The other was that vague and quite Russian feeling of contempt for everything conventional artificial and human—for everything the majority of men regard as the greatest good in the world Pierre had first experienced this strange and fascinating feeling at the Slobóda P

... s any worth has so only by reason of the joy with which it can all be renounced

It was the feeling that induces a volunteer recruit to spend his last penny on drink and a drunken man to smash mirrors or glasses for no apparent reason and knowing that it will cost him all the money he possesses the feeling which causes a man to perform actions which from an ordinary point of view re

From the very day Pierre had experienced this feeling for the first time at the Slob... Palace he had been continuously under its influence but only now found full satisfaction for it Moreover at this moment Pierre was supported in his design and prevented from renouncing it by what he had already done in that direction If he were now to leave Moscow

the p

ment

Mosc ... ecome not merely meaningless but contemptible and ridiculous and to this Pierre was very sensitive

Pierre s physical condition as is always the case corresponded to his mental state The unaccustomed coarse food the vodka he drank during those days the absence of wine and cigars his dirty unchanged linen two almost

"You will be called when you are wanted" he said.

The soldiers went out again and the orderly, who had meanwhile had time to visit the kitchen, came up to his officer.

"Captain, there is soup and a leg of mutton in the kitchen," said he. "Shall I serve them up?"

"Yes, and some wine," answered the captain.

CHAPTER XXIX

When the French officer went into the room with Pierre the latter again thought it his duty to assure him that he was not French and wished to go away, but the officer would not hear of it. He was so very polite, amiable, good

— — ar

to

—

the first room they entered. To Pierre's assurances that he was not a Frenchman, the captain, evidently not understanding how anyone could decline so flattering an appellation, shrugged his shoulders and said that if Pierre absolutely insisted on passing for a Russian let it be so, but for all that he would be forever bound to Pierre by gratitude for saving his life.

Had this man been endowed with the slightest capacity for perceiving the feelings of others, and had he at all understood what Pierre's feelings were, the latter would probably have left him, but the man's animated obtuseness to everything other than himself disarmed Pierre.

"A Frenchman or a Russian prince incognito," said the officer, looking at Pierre's fine though dirty linen and at the ring on his finger. "I owe my life to you and offer you my friendship. A Frenchman never forgets either an insult or a service. I offer you my friendship. That is all I can say."

There was so much good nature and nobility (in the French sense of the word) in the officer's voice, in the expression of his face and in his gestures, that Pierre unconsciously smiled in response to the Frenchman's smile, and pressed the hand held out to him.

"Captain Ramball of the 13th Light Regiment, Chevalier of the Legion of Honor for the affair on the seventh of September," he introduced himself, a self-satisfied irrepressible smile puckering his lips under his mustache. "Will you now be so good as to tell me with whom I have the honor of conversing so pleas-

antly instead of being in the ambulance with that maniac's bullet in my body?"

Pierre replied that he could not tell him his name and, blushing, began to try to invent a name and to say something about his reason for concealing it, but the Frenchman hastily interrupted him.

"Oh, please!" said he. "I understand your reasons. You are an officer... a superior officer perhaps. You have borne arms against us. That is not my business. I owe you my life. That is enough for me. I am quite at your service. You belong to the gentry?" he concluded with a shade of inquiry in his tone. Pierre bent his head. "Your baptismal name, if you please. That is all I ask. Monsieur Pierre, you say... Excellent! That's all I want to know."

When the mutton and an omelet had been served and a samovar and vodka brought, with some wine which the French had taken from a Russian cellar and brought with them, Ramballe invited Pierre to share his dinner, and himself began to eat greedily and quickly like a healthy and hungry man, munching his food rapidly with his strong teeth, continually smacking his lips, and repeating — Excellent! Delicious! His face grew red and was covered with perspiration. Pierre was hungry and shared the dinner with pleasure. Morel, the orderly, brought some hot water in a saucepan and placed a bottle of claret in it. He also brought a bottle of kvass, taken from the kitchen... The beverage was already

...faction of his hunger and the wine rendered the captain still more lively and he chatted incessantly all through dinner.

"Yes, my dear Monsieur Pierre, I owe you a fine votive candle for saving me from that maniac... You see, I have bullets enough in my body already. Here is one I got at Wagram" (he touched his side) "and a second at Smolensk"—he showed a scar on his cheek—"and this leg which as you see does not want to march, I got that on the seventh at the great battle of la Moskwa. *Sacré Dieu!* It was splendid. That deluge of fire was worth seeing. It

Quartier quartier logement! said the officer looking down at the little man with a condescending and good natured smile *Les français sont de bons enfants Que diable! Voyons! Ne nous fâchons pas mon vieux* added he

looking around and meeting Pierre s eyes Pierre moved away from the doo

Again the officer turned to Gerásim and asked him to show him the rooms in the house

Master not here—don t understand me you said Gerásim trying to render his words more comprehensible by contorting them

Still smiling the French officer spread out his hands before Gerásim s nose intimating that he did not understand him either and moved limping to the door at which Pierre was standing Pierre wished to go away and conceal himself but at that moment he saw Makár Alexéevich appearing at the open kitchen door with the pistol in his hand With a

turned round and at the same moment Pierre threw himself on the drunkard Just when Pierre snatched at and struck up the pistol Makár Alexéevich at last got his fingers on the trigger there was a deafening report and all were enveloped in a cloud of smoke The Frenchman turned pale and rushed to the door

Forgetting his intention of concealing his

You are not wounded? he asked

I think not answered the Frenchman feeling himself over But I have had a lucky escape this time he added pointing to the

curred said Pierre rapidly quite forgetting the part he had intended to play He is an unfortunate madman who d d not know what he was doing

The officer went up to Makár Alexéevich and took him by the collar

Makár Alexéevich was standing with parted lips swaying as if about to fall asleep as he leaned against the wall

Brigand! You shall pay for this said the Frenchman letting go of him We French are merciful after victory but we do not par lon traitors he added with a look of gloomy d nity and a fine energetic gesture

Pierre continued in French to persuade the officer not to hold that drunken imbecile to account The Frenchman listened in silence with the same gloomy expression but suddenly turned to Pierre with a smile For a few seconds he looked at him in silence His handsome face assumed a melodramatically gentle expression and he held out his hand

You have saved my life You are French said he

For a Frenchman that deduction was indubitable Only a Frenchman could perform a great deed and to save his life—the life of M Ramballe captain of the 13th Light Regiment

felt it necessary to disillusion him

I am Russian he said quickly

Tut tut tut! Tell that to others said the officer waving his finger before his nose and smiling You shall tell me all about that presently I am delighted to meet a compatriot Well and what are we to do with this man he added addressing himself to Pierre as to a brother

Even if Pierre were not a Frenchman having once received that loftiest of human appellations he could not renounce it said the officer s look and tone In reply to his last question Pierre again explained who Makár Alexéevich was and how just before their arrival that drunken imbecile had seized the loaded pistol which they had not had time to recover from him and begged the officer to let the deed go unpunished

The Frenchman expanded h s chest and made a majestic gesture with his arm

You have saved my l fe! You are French. You ask his pardon? I grant it you Le d tl at man away! said he quickly and energetically and taking the arm of Pierre whom he had promoted to be a Frenchman f r saving h s l fe he went with him into the room

The soldiers in the yard hearing the shot came into the pas ge asking what had happened and expressed their readiness to punish the culprits but the officer sternly checked them

Q arters quarters lodg gs! The French are good fellows Wh t the devil! There don t let us be cross ol l fell w!

"Y w ll be called n wl en you are wanted he sa d.

The sold ers w t o t aga n nd the or ler l ho h d mea wh le l d t me to s t the kit hen came up t h ff cer

Capt the e s so p a d a leg of mutton n the k tche s d h Sh ll I s rve them p

Yes, nd me w n answe ed the captain.

CHAPTER XXIX

WHEN THE FRENCH FFICER we t into the room with P erre th l tte aga n th ught t his duty t assure h m th t he was n t F e ch a d hed t g wa but the fficer would n t hear f t. He wa so ery pol te m ble good

th first oom they e tered I o l rres assura ces that he wa ot a F enchm the captai de tly n t underst d g how a y e co ld decl e so fl tte g n pp ll t shrugged hi sho lders and sa d th t if P erre bsol tely ted n p g fo R n let t be so b t f r ll that he w ld be f r ever bound t P erre b grat tude f r s v g h life

H d this man been d wed w th th l ght est cap city f p ce g th feel ngs of oth ers, d h d h t ll nd rstood wh t P rres feel gs were the l tte w uld p bably ha e l ft him b t th m m ted obtus ess to everyth othe th h ms lf d sarmed P err

A F chm o Russ a p i ce ncog to d the ffi r look g t P err s fi th h dirty l e d t tl g on h fin ger I w my l f t y u a d off y u my frie d hip A F chm n er f gets th nsul rv ce I off y u myf nd h p Th t is all I ca say

Th e was som ch good t nd n b l ty (th F ench se I thew d) n tl ffice the p ess n f h f e d n h gest res, that P rr u usly m l g espo se to th F e l n m le p essed th h d held t to l m

Capta n R ml ll f tl 3th Light Re ment Che l f th Le n f H f th ff th e th f Sept mb h trod ced himself self sat fied rrep ess bl m l p ke g his lip u d r h mut h W ll y w be so good t t ll m w th h m I ha e th h of con ers so pleas a tly stead of be ng in the ambulance w th th t man c s bullet n my body?

P erre repl ed that he could not tell h m l n mean l blush ng began to try to in ent a n me d to say som thing about his re son fo co ceal ng t but the Frenchman h st ly i terrupted h m

Oh please! sa d he I understand your reasons. You are an off cer a super r off cer perh ps. You h e borne arms against us. Th t not my bus ess I owe you my l fe That e ugh f r me I am qu te at you serv ice Y t bel ng t the gentry? he con luded rv his tone P erre be t a e.

When the mutt n a d an omelet i u been served nd a samo ar nd odka b ou ht w th me w ne wh cl the Fre ch h d t ken f m Russ n c ll r a d bro ght w th tl em Ram balle n ted P erre t h re his d n er nd h mself began to eat greed ly and qu ckly like he lthy and hu gry man munch ng l s food rap dly w th h strong teeth co t ually

h red the d ner with plea u e M rel the ord rly brou ht some h t w ter in a saucepan d pl ced bottle f cl ret n t. He also

f t n of h hu ger d the w rendered the capta st ll mo e l ely a d h chatted n ess tly all thro gh d nner

Yes my dea M eu P erre I owe you fi ot e ca dle f s ng m from that

th leg wh ch as y u see does not want to m ch I got th t on th th t the gr t b ttle f l M k wa *S cré D* It was plen d d Th t del g of fi wa w rth se ng It

Quartier quartier logement! sa l th of fice lo
de
çai
Ne
cla u and silent Gerásim on the shoulder Well does no one speak French in this establishment? he asked again in French looking around and meeting Pierre s eyes Pierre moved away from the doo

Again the officer turned to Gerásim and asked him to show him the rooms in the house

Master not here—don t understand me you said Gerásim trying to render his words more comprehensible by contorting them

Still smiling the French officer spread out his hands before Gerásim s nose intimating that he did not understand him either and moved limping to the door at which Pierre was standing Pierre wished to go away and conceal himself but at that moment he saw Makár Alexéevich appearing at the open kitchen door with the pistol in his hand With a madman s cunning Makár Alexéevich eyed the Frenchman raised his pistol and took aim

Board them! yelled the tipsy man trying to press the trigger Hearing the yell the officer turned round and at the same moment Pierre threw himself on the drunkard Just when Pierre snatched at and struck up the pistol Makár Alexéevich at last got his fingers on the trigger there was a deafening report and all were enveloped in a cloud of smoke The Frenchman turned pale and rushed to the door

Forgetting his intention of concealing his knowledge of French Pierre snatching away the pistol and throwing it down ran up to the officer and addressed him in French

You are not wounded? he asked

I think not answered the Frenchman feeling himself over But I have had a lucky escape this time he added pointing to the lim o l n!

,

culteu said Pierre rapidly quite forgetting the part he had intended to play He is an unfortunate madman who did not know what he was doing

The officer went up to Makár Alexéevich and took him by the collar

Makár Alexeevich was standing with parted lips swaying as if about to fall asleep as he leaned against the wall

Brigand! You shall pay for this said the Frenchman letting go of him We French are merciful after victory but we do not pardon traitors he added with a look of gloomy dignity and a fine energetic gesture

Pierre continued in French to persuade the officer not to hold that drunken imbecile to account The Frenchman listened in silence with the same gloomy expression but suddenly turned to Pierre with a smile For a few seconds he looked at him in silence His handsome face assumed a melodramatically gentle expression and he held out his hand

You have saved my life You are French said he

For a Frenchman that deduction was indubitable Only a Frenchman could perform a great deed and to save his life—the life of M Ramballe captain of the 13th Light Regiment —was undoubtedly a very great deed

But however indubitable that conclusion and the officer s conviction based upon it Pierre fel

t to others said the officer waving his finger before his nose and smiling You shall tell me all about that presently I am delighted to meet a compatriot Well and what are we to do with this man he added addressing himself to Pierre as to a brother

Even if Pierre were not a Frenchman having once received that loftiest of human appellations he could not renounce it said the officer s look and tone In reply to his last question Pierre again explained who Makár Alexéevich was and how just before their arrival that drunken imbecile had seized the loaded pistol which they had not had time to recover from him and begged the officer to let the deed go unpunished

The Frenchman expanded h chest and made a majestic gesture with his arm

You have saved my life! You are French You ask his pardon? I grant it you Le d that man away! said he quickly and energet c lly and taking the arm of Pierre whom he h l promoted to be a Frenchman for saving h s life he went with him into the room

The sold ers in the yard hearing the sl t came into the p ge a king what had happened and expressed the readiness t pun h the culprits but the officer sternly checked them

Quarters quarters lodgings! The French are good fellows What the devil! There don t let us be cross ol l fellow!

The captai had their sen or sergeant called m, and in tern o ce a ked h m to what reg ment he bel ved, who was h command ng officer a d by wh t r ght he allowed h mself to claim quarters that were already occup ed. The German wh knew l ttle French, an wered t... tw first questi n by gi the n mes of his regim t d of h s comma d g officer b t in epl t the th d quest on wh ch he d d not understa d sa d troduci broken French to his own Germa that he was the quartermaster f the egime t d his commander had rdered h m to occupy ll the houses o e after an ther P err who knew German tra l ted what the German sa d to the captain and ga e the capta n eply t the Wurttemberg hussar n German When he had derstood what was sa d to h m, th German bmitted and took his men el ewhere. The captai we t t into th porch nd ga some orders lo d ce

Wh he returned t the room P erre was ti g th same pl e befo w th his head in his ha ds. H s f exp essed ffer n H reall was uffer g t that mom nt. When the capta we t t nd h was l ft lone, suddenly he came t h mself nd ealized the po tio he was l wa n that Moscow had been taken tha th happy conqu rors were masters in t and wer patro iz g h m. Pai ful

glasses f e h had drunk nd th tio with this good natured man had destr yed th mood f entrated gloom n wh ch he had pent th las few day nd wh h was es- ... Th n ...

h f lt f bodi tha he would not car y out h tenti n. H truggled gainst th con less f his weakness bu dimly felt that h could t er m t nd tha his former gloomy fram f m nd co ern engeance kill and self-sacr fice, had been dispersed lik dust by co tact w th th first man h met.

Th capta turned to th room, limp n sl htly d whistl g tune.

Th F enchma chat er which had p ev ously mused P erre n w repelled him. Th tun h was whistl , his gait, and th gestur

w th wh ch he tw led h s mu tache all now seemed offen e I w ll go away mmed tely I won t say another word to h m th u ht P erre He tl u ht this but st ll sat in the same pl ce. A strange feel ng of weakness t ed h m t th spot he w shed to get up and go away but could n t do so

The capta n on the other hand seemed ery cheerful He p ced up and d wn the room tw ce His eyes sh e and h s mustache tw tched as f he were m l n to h mself at some mus ng th u ht.

"The l nel of those Wurttembergers s de l ghtful he suddenl sa d. He s German but n ce fell w ll the same B t he s a German He sat d wn fac ng P erre. By the way you kn w Germa then

P erre looked t h m n lence.

"What s the German f r h lter?"

"Shelter P erre repeated. "The German f h lter *Unterk ft*

H w do you say it the capta n a ked qu ckly and d ubtfully

U t k ft P erre repeated.

O t koff sa d th capta n nd looked t P erre f some seconds w th l u h ng eyes. These Germans are first rate fools don t you th nk so M ns eur P err e he c l ded.

"W ell let ha e ther bottle f this Mos ow Bo deaux hall we Mo l w ll warm u up nothe l ttle bottle. Mo l he called out ga ly

M l brou ht ca dles and bottle of w ne The capta n looked t P erre by th candle- l ht d was ev dentl truck b the tro bled ... n n fa e. Ramballe

P erre. Pe haps th tat f ll rs

P err did n t nswer but looked cordially n the F enchman e es whose express on of mpathy wa pleas n to h m.

H estly w thout peak of what I owe ou I feel f ndship f you. Can I do n thi g f you? Dispose f me. It is f l f and death. I say t w th my hand n my heart sa d h triki g his chest.

"Tha k u said P erre

Th capta n gazed nt ntly t him as h had do e when h learned that hel er was *U terk ft* n German d his fa e uddenly brigh ened.

Well n that case I drink to our fri nd

was a tough job you set us there my word! You may be proud of it! And on my honor in spite of the cough I caught there I should be ready to begin again I pity those who did not see it

I was there said Pierre

Bah really? So much the better! You are certainly brave foes The great redoubt held out well by my pipe! continued the Frenchman And you made us pay dear for it I was at it three times—sure as I sit here Three times we reached the guns and three times we were thrown back like cardboard figures Oh it was beautiful Monsieur Pierre! Your grenadiers were splendid by heaven! I saw them close up their ranks six times in succession and march as if on parade Fine fellows! Our King of Naples who knows what's what cried Bravo! Ha ha! So you are one of us soldiers! he added smiling after a momentary pause So much the better so much the better Monsieur Pierre! Terrible in battle gallant with the fair (he winked and smiled) that's what the French are Monsieur Pierre aren't they?

The captain was so naively and good humoredly gay so real and so pleased with himself that Pierre almost winked back as he looked merrily at him Probably the word gallant turned the captain's thoughts to the state of Moscow

Apropos tell me please is it true that the women have all left Moscow? What a queer idea! What had they to be afraid of?

Would not the French ladies leave Paris if the Russians entered it? asked Pierre

Ha ha ha! The Frenchman emitted

m

sh

P

Paris—the capital of the world Pierre finished

it

ga y eyes

Well if you hadn't told me you were Russian I should have wagered that you were Parisian! You have that I don't know what that

he ap

I

said Pierre.

Oh yes one sees that plainly Paris! A man who doesn't know Paris is a savage You can tell a Parisian two leagues off Paris is Talma la Duchénois Potier the Sorbonne the boulevards and noticing that his conclusion was weaker than what had gone before he added quickly There is only one Paris in the world You have been to Paris and have remained Russian Well I don't esteem you the less for it

Under the influence of the wine he had drunk and after the days he had spent alone with his depressing thoughts Pierre involuntarily enjoyed talking with this cheerful and good natured man

To return to your ladies—I hear they are lovely What a wretched idea to go and bury themselves in the steppes when the French army is in Moscow What a chance those girls have missed! Your peasants now—that's another thing but you civilized people you ought to know us better than that We took Vienna Berlin Madrid Naples Rome Warsaw all the world's capitals We are feared but we are loved We are nice to know And then the Emperor he began but Pierre interrupted him

The Emperor Pierre repeated and his face suddenly became sad and embarrassed is the Emperor ?

The Emperor? He is generosity mercy justice order genius—that's what the Emperor is! It

you I

ther

I

I at he wanted—when I saw

that I

you k

and I

mon e the greatest man of the ages past or future

Is he in Moscow? Pierre stammered with a guilty look

The Frenchman looked at his guilty face and smiled

No he will make his entry tomorrow he replied and continued his talk

Their conversation was interrupted by the cries of several voices at the gate and by Morel who came to say that some Württemberg hussars had come and wanted to put up their horses in the yard where the captain's horses were This difficulty had arisen chiefly because the hussars did not understand what was said to them in French

The famo tragedian Talma the actress Duchén the comedian Potier.—Tr.

something path t c a d touching in all this.

H m fi shed h tale about the en hant L Polish lady th capta n asked P erre I he had ever experienced a s milar mpulse to sacrifice himself for l e and a feel n of en y of the legitimate husb nd

Challen ed by this quest n P erre raised h s head nd f lt eed t e press the thoughts that filled his m d. He began t expl n that he understood l e f r a women somewh t differently He sa d th t all h s l f he h d loved a d till l ed onl one woman nd that she could ever be his.

T sa d the capta

pecially theref abo himself.

Whe he had ea hed this po t, P erre asked th captai wh ther he u derstood that.

Th captai mad ges ur gn fy g that even f he d d t u derstand t he begged Pierre to co ti e.

Plato l ve cloud h muttered.

Wh ther t wa the w e h had dru k, r mpulse f frank ess the th u ht that this man d d not d ever would kn w any f those who pl yed p t n h t ry o whether wa ll these th gs together something loose ed P erre t gue Speak g th ck ly d w th farawa look n h sh n n eyes, h ld the wh le tory f h l f h marri g N tasha l f h bes fr nd her betrayal f him d all his wn mpl l t n w th her Urged by R mball q es o h lso told hi h had t first co ealed—his own position and e en h am

P err t ry the

l ft th t h t ema ed ther co ceal g h m d ta n

When t was l n ght they w nt out together int th treet. The n ht was warm and l ght. T th l f f th h use n th P kró k fire gl ed—th first of those that wer be g Moscow T th ght d h l p th ky wa th kl of th wan ng moon d oppos te to t hu that bright com t whi h was co ected n P rre heart w th h

lo e. At the gate stood Gerás m the cook, and two Frenchmen The r l ughter and the r mu tually incomprehens ble remarks n two l n gu ges could be heard. They were look g at the glow seen in the town

Th re was n th g terrible in the one small d sta t fir n the mmense city

Ga g t the l gh tarry sky at the moon at the comet a d t the gl w from the fire, P erre expe enced a joyf l emot on "There n w how good t is, what more does one need thou ht he. And uddenly remembering h s nt nt n he grew d zzy a d felt so fa nt that h le ned aga nst the fence to sa e h mself from fall ng

W th ut tak ng lea e of h new frie d P rre left the gat w th unstead steps nd return n t h s room lay d wn on the sofa nd mmed tely fell asleep

CHAPTER XXX

THE GLOW of the first fire that began on the second of S ptember was watched from the vari us roads by th fug t e Mu co tes nd by the r treati g troops w th many d fferent feel gs.

The Rostó p rty spe t the n ht at Myt h ch fourteen m les from Moscow The had tarted so l te on the first f September the road had bee so blocked by h clesa d tr oops, so m ny th gs h d be n f rgotten f wh h erva ts were ent back that they h d decided t spend th t n ght t pl c three m les out of Moscow The ne t morn g they woke l te nd wer aga n delayed so lte that they o ly

o lock

nd cam o t to th porches

the first n ht n the same yard s th Rostó Th co tes said sh had been un ble to close her eyes on co nt of his moan ng nd t My tishch he mo ed to w rse h t mply t be farther w y from the wo ded ma

In t e da k ess of the n ht o e of th ers ts n t ced, bo th high body of co ch ta d n bef re the po ch, the small glow of

ship! he cried gaily filling two glasses with wine

Pierre took one of the glasses and emptied it Ramballe emptied his too again pressed Pierre s hand and leaned his elbows on the table in a pensive attitude

Yes my dear friend he began such is fortune s caprice Who would have said that I should be a soldier and a captain of dragoons in the service of Bonaparte as we used to call him? Yet here I am in Moscow with him I must tell you *mon cher* he continued in the sad and measured tones of a man who intends to tell a long story that our name is one of the most ancient in France

And with a Frenchman s easy and naive frankness the captain told Pierre the story of his ancestors his childhood youth and manhood and all about his relations and his financial and family affairs *ma pauvre mère* playing of course an important part in the story

But all that is only life s setting the real thing is love—love! Am I not right Monsieur Pierre? said he growing animated Another glass?

Pierre again emptied his glass and poured himself out a third

Oh women women! and the captain looking with glistening eyes at Pierre began talking of love and of his love affairs

There were very many of these as one could easily believe looking at the officer s handsome self satisfied face and noting the eager enthusiasm with which he spoke of women Though all Ramballe s love stories had the sensual character which Frenchmen regard as the special charm and poetry of love yet he told his story with such sincere conviction that he alone had experienced and known all the charm of love and he described women so alluringly that Pierre listened to him with curiosity

It was plain that *l amour* which the Frenchman was so fond of was not that low and simple kind that Pierre had once felt for his wife nor was h om

th

sp

he

the

which the Frenchman worshiped consisted principally in the unnaturalness of his relation to the woman and in a combination of incongruities giving the chief charm to the feeling

Thus the captain touchingly recounted the story of his love for a fascinating marquise of thirty five and at the same time for a charming innocent child of seventeen daughter of the bewitching marquise The conflict of magnanimity between the mother and the daughter ending in the mother s sacrificing herself and offering her daughter in marriage to her lover even now agitated the captain though it was the memory of a distant past Then he recounted an episode in which the husband played the part of the lover and he—the lover—assumed the role of the husband

suands eat sauerkraut and the young girls are too blonde

Finally the latest episode in Poland still fresh in the captain s memory and which he narrated with rapid gestures and glowing face was of how he had saved the life of a Pole (in general the saving of life continually occurred in the capta

trusted to hir

de cœur) wh

service The captain was happy the enchanting Polish lady wished to elope with him but prompted by magnanimity the captain restored the wife to the husband saying as he did so I have saved your life and I save your honor! Having repeated these words the captain wiped his eyes and gave himself a shake as if driving away the weakness which assailed him at this touching recollection

Listening to the captain s tales Pierre—as often happens late in the evening and under the influence of wine—followed all that was told him understood it all and at the same time followed a train of personal memories which he knew not why suddenly arose in his mind While listening to these love stories his own love for Natásha unexpectedly rose to his mind and going over the pictures of that love in his imagination he mentally compared them with Ramballe s tales Listening to the story of the struggle between love and duty Pierre saw before his eyes every minutest detail of his last meeting with the object of his love at the Sukharev water tower At the time of that meeting it had not produced an effect upon him—he had not even once recalled it But now it seemed to him that that meeting had had in it something very important and poetic

Peter Kirílovich come here! We have recognized you he now seemed to hear the words she had uttered and to see before him her eyes her smile her traveling hood and a stray lock of her hair and there seemed to him

something pathetic and touching in all this.

Having finished his tale about the enchanting Polish lady, the captain asked Pierre if he had ever experienced a similar impulse to sacrifice himself for love and feel no of envy of the legitimate husband.

Challenged by this question Pierre raised his head and felt a need to express the thoughts that filled his mind. He began to explain that he understood love for women somewhat differently. He said that in all his life he had loved and still loved only one woman and that she could never be his.

"Tiens!" said the captain.

Pierre then explained that he had loved this woman from his earliest years but that he had not dared to think of her because she was too young, and because he had been an illegitimate son without a name. Afterwards when he had received a name and wealth he dared not think of her because he loved her too well, placing her far above everything in the world, and especially therefore above himself.

When he had reached this point, Pierre asked the captain whether he understood that.

The captain made a gesture signifying that even if he did not understand it he begged Pierre to continue.

"Platonic love, clouds..." he muttered.

Whether it was the wine he had drunk, or an impulse of frankness, or the thought that this man did not, and never would, know any of those who played a part in his story, or whether it was all these things together, something loosened Pierre's tongue. Speaking thickly and with a faraway look in his shining eyes, he told the whole story of his life: his marriage, Natásha's love for his best friend, her betrayal of him, and all his own simple relations with her. Urged by Rambal's questions he also told what he had at first concealed—his own position and even his name.

More than anything else in Pierre's story the captain was impressed by the fact that Pierre was very rich, had two mansions in Moscow, and that he had abandoned everything and not left the city but remained there concealing his name and station.

When it was late at night they went out together into the street. The night was warm and light. To the left of the house on the Pokróvka a fire glowed—the first of those that were beginning in Moscow. To the right and high up in the sky was the sickle of the waning moon and opposite to it hung that bright comet which was connected in Pierre's heart with his love. At the gate stood Gerásim the cook and ... the rumbling ... gat the glow seen in the ...

There was nothing terrible in the one small distant fire in the immense city.

Gazing at the high starry sky, at the moon, at the comet, and at the glow from the fire, Pierre experienced a joyful emotion. "There, now how good it is, what more does one need?" thought he. And suddenly remembering his intention he grew dizzy and felt so faint that he leaned against the fence to save himself from falling.

Without taking leave of his new friend Pierre left the gate with unsteady steps and returning to his room lay down on the sofa and immediately fell asleep.

CHAPTER XXX

THE GLOW of the first fire that began on the second of September was watched from the various roads by the fugitive Muscovites and by the retreating troops with many different feelings.

The Rostóv party spent that night at Mytíshchi, fourteen miles from Moscow. They had started so late on the first of September, the road had been so blocked by vehicles and troops, so many things had been forgotten for which ... had were again delayed so often that they only got as far as Great Mytíshchi. At ten o'clock that evening the Rostóv family and the wounded traveling with them were all distributed in the yards and huts of that large village. The Rostóvs' servants and coachmen and the orderlies of the wounded officers, after attending to their masters, had supper, fed the horses, and came out into the porches.

In a neighboring hut lay Raévski's adjutant with a fractured wrist. The awful pain he suf... the first night in the same yard as the Rostóvs. The countess said she had been unable to close her eyes on account of his moaning, and at Mytíshchi she moved to a worse hut simply to be farther away from the wounded man.

another fire One glow had long been visible and everybody knew that it was Little Mytish chi burning—set on fire by Mam noy s Cos sacks

But look here brothers there s another fre! remarked an orderly

All turned their attention to the glow

But they told us Little Mytishchi had been set on fire by Mamonov s Cossacks

But that s not Mytishchi it s farther away

Look it must be in Moscow!

Two of the gazers went round to the other side of the coach and sat down on its steps

It s more to the left why Little Mytishchi is over there and this is right on the other side

Several men joined the first two

See how it s flaring said one That s a fre in Moscow either in the Sushchévski or the Rogózhski quarter

N

tin

flu

C ... terentich the count s valet (as he was called) came up to the group and shout ed at Mishka

What are you staring at you good for noth ing? The count s ill be calling and there s nobody there go and gather the clothes to gether

I only ran out to get some water said Mishka

But what do you think Daniel Teréntich? Doesn t it look as if that glow were in Mos cow? remarked one of the footmen

Daniel Teréntich made no reply and again for a long time they were all silent The glow spread rising and falling farther and farther still

God have mercy It s windy and dry said another voice

Just look! See what it s doing now O Lord! You can even see the crows flying Lord have mercy on us sinners!

They ll put it out no fear!

Who s to put it out? Daniel T ...

... the

white his voice faltered and he gave way to an old man s sob

And it was as if they had all only waited for this to realize the significance for them of the glow they were watching Sighs were heard words of prayer and the sobbing of the count s old valet

CHAPTER XXXI

THE VALET returning to the cottage informed the count that Moscow was burning The count donned his dressing gown and went out to look Sónya and Madame Schoss who had not yet undressed went out with him Only Natá sha and the countess remained in the room Pétya was no longer with the family he had gone on with his regiment which was makin for Tróitsa

The countess on hearing that Moscow was on fire began to cry Natásha pale with a fixed look was sitting on the bench under the icons just where she had sat down on arrival and paid no attention to her father s w...! She was listening to the ceaseless moaning of th ...

fr

... now she said to her cousin evi dently wishing to distract her mind

But Natásha looked at her as if not under standing what was said to her and again fixed her eyes on the corner of the stove She had been in this condition of stupor since the morn ing when Sónya to the surprise and annoy ance of the countess had for some unaccount able reason found it necessary to tell Natásha of Prince Andrew s wound and of his being with their party The countess had seldom been so angry with anyone as she was with Sónya Sónya had cried and begged to be for given and now as if trying to atone for her fault paid unceasing attention to her cousin

Look Natásha how dreadfully it is burn ing! said she

What s burning? asked Natásha Oh yes Moscow

And as if in order not to offend Sónya and to get rid of her she turned her face to the window looked out in such a way that it was evident that she could not see anything and again settled down in her former attitude

But you didn t see it!

Yes really I did Natásha replied in a voice that pleaded to be left in peace

Both the countess and Sónya understood that naturally neither Moscow nor the burn ing of Moscow nor anything else could seem of importance to Natásha

The count returned and lay down behind the partition The countess went up to her daughter and touched her head with the back of her hand as she was wont to do when Natá

ha was ill th n t ched her f ehe d w th her Lps f t feel wh ther she was fe ert h, a d finall kissed her

"Y re cold. Y u re trembl ng all o er Y d bett r l e d wn sa d th countess.

Lie do ? All r ght, I w ll I ll I e down at once sa d N tá ha

When N tásha had been t ld th t m rn ng that Prince A dr w a ser ously w u ded and was tra eli w th th r party she had t ~ her wa h go-

still be t ld th sam All the way he had sat mo less in corner of the co ch w th w de ope eyes, d the p ess on n them wh ch th co tess knew so well d fea ed so m h d ow h sat the same way on the bench here h h d seated herself on arri ng Sh was pl someth g nd ther dec d g or had al eady decided someth g n her m d. Th co tes knew th but wh t t m ght be sh did not k d th larmed a d to m ted her

"N tásha dress darl g l d wn on my bed.

A bed had bee mad n bedstead f th countes ly M dame Schos d the two gi ls were to leep som hay on the floor

"N M mma I w ll l e d wn here the floo N tásha epl ed rr t bly d h w t to th d w d p ed t. Th u h th ope d w the moans f the djutant could be heard mo e di t ctly Sh p t her head out into the damp ght ir nd the co tess saw her l m eck shak w th sobs d thr bb against the w d w fram N tá h k ew t was not Pri e A dr w wh was m g Sh knew Pri ce A drew was n the sam ya d as themsel es d in part l th hut cross the passa e b th dreadf l essa t m g mad her sob Th countes excha ged look th So ya.

Li d wn darli g l e d wn my p t said th co ess softly touching N tásha h ul ders. Come, lie d n

Oh, yes I ll l d wn ce sa d N tásha. d be a hurr edl undres tugg g t th tapes f her pet oat.

Wh h h d thro n off her dress nd p t on dress J ck t sh sat d wn w th her foot u ler her on the bed that h d been made up n the floor je ked l er th n and rat er l front and began re

hab t but he eyes it ci I fi edly before he When her to let for the n ht was fin hed she sank gently onto the heet pread o er the hay n the s de nea est the doo

N tá ha yo d better l e i the m d lle sa d Sónya.

I ll stay here muttered N tá ha Do l e d wn she a ded crossly nd bu ed her f ce n the p ll w

The cou tess M dame Schos nd Só ya undres ed h tly nd l y down Tl e small l mp n front of the con was th o ly l ght

the n e of people h ut g t ta ern Ma mó Cossacks h d t up across the treet d the dj tant s uncea g moans could st ll be hea d.

F al g time N tá ha l tened ttent ely to the sou ds th t reached her f m i de and outs de th room d d d not m e. F rst she hea d her mothe pray g ds gh g and th cre king f her bed u de h r then Madame Scl ss f m l ar wh tl ng o nd Só as g tl b eath g Th n the co tes called to N tásha. Natásha d d n t swer

I thi k she s asleep M mm sa d Só ya sof ly

Afte h rts le ce the co tess spoke aga n but this time no o e repl ed

Soo ft r th t N tá l I d h m the e n b eath g N tá h d d n t m e th gh her l ttle b foot, tl ust o t from u d th qu lt, was grow cold on th ba floo

A l to celebrate t ry o er ev ry body cr k t ch rped n crack n the w ll. A cock crowed f off and ther repl ed nea by The h t g th ta rn h d died dow ly th *m n g of th djutant* as heard. N tásh sat up

So ya re y u leep? M mm sh whispered.

N epl ed N tá ha os l wly d carefully crossed h rs lf a d tepped cauti usly on th cold nd d ty floo th her sl m supple bar f t. Th boards f the floo cre ked. St pp cauti ly f mo foot t th other sh ran l ke k tt n th few step t th doo

and grasped the cold door handle

It seemed to her that something heavy was beating rhythmically against all the walls of the room it was her own heart sinking with alarm and terror and overflowing with love

She opened the door and stepped across the threshold and onto the cold damp earthen floor of the passage The cold she felt refreshed her With her bare feet she touched a sleeping man stepped over him and opened the door into the part of the hut where Prince Andrew lay It was dark in there In the farthest corner on a bench beside a bed on which something was lying stood a tallow candle with a long thick and smoldering wick

From the moment she had been told that morning of Prince Andrew s wound and his presence there Natásha had resolved to see him She did not know why she had to she knew the meeting would be painful but felt the more convinced that it was necessary

All day she had lived only in hope of seeing him that night But now that the moment had come she was filled with dread of what she might see How was he maimed? What was left of him? Was he like that incessant mo

when she saw an indistinct shape in the corner and mistook his knees raised under the quilt for his shoulders she imagined a horrible body there and stood still in terror But an irresistible impulse drew her forward She cautiously took one step and then another and found herself in the middle of a small room containing baggage Another man —Timókhin—was lying in a corner on the benches beneath the icons and two others—the doctor and a valet—lay on the floor

The valet sat up and whispered something Timókhin kept awake by the

and nightcap The valet s sleepy frightened exclamation What do you want? What s the matter? made Natásha approach more swiftly to what was lying in the corner Horribly unlike a man as that body looked she must see him She passed the valet the snuff fell from the candle wick and she saw Prince Andrew clearly with his arms outside the quilt and such as she had always seen him

He was the same as ever but the feverish color of his face his glittering eyes rapturously turned toward her and especially his neck delicate as a child s revealed by the turn-down collar of his shirt gave him a peculiarly innocent childlike look such as she had never seen on him before She went up to him and with a swift flexible youthful movement dropped on her knees

He smiled and held out his hand to her

CHAPTER XXXII

Seven days had passed since Prin

ure in-jured were in the doctor s opinion sure to carry him off But on the seventh day he ate with pleasure a piece of bread with some tea and the doctor noticed that his temperature was lower He had regained consciousness that morning The first night afte

asked to be taken out and given some tea The pain caused by his removal into the hut had made him groan aloud and again lose consciousness When he had been placed on his camp bed he lay for a long time motionless with closed eyes Then he opened them and whispered softly And the tea? His remembering such a small detail of everyday life astonished the doctor He felt Prince Andrew s pulse and to his surprise and dissatisfaction found it had improved He was dissatisfied because he knew by experience that if his patient did not die now he would do so a little later with greater suffering Timókhin the red nosed major of Prince Andrew s regiment had joined him in Moscow and was being taken along with him having been wounded in the leg at the battle of Borodinó They were accompanied by a doctor Prince Andrew s valet his coachman and two orderlies

They gave Prince Andrew some tea He drank it eagerly looking with feverish eyes at the door in front of him as if trying to understand and remember something

I don t want any more Is Timókhin here? he asked

Timókh

Mine sir? All right But how about you?

Prince Andrew again pondered as if trying to remember something

Couldn t one get a book? he asked

What book?

"The Gospels I haven t one

The doctor promised to procure it for him

and bega t a k how he was feel ng Pr nce A drew a w red ll h quest ons relucta tly b reaso bly and the a d he nted a

ufyi g flesh th t came from the w

"Th e t got e Ple get t f me nd p t t d me f ra mom t he ple ded n p teous ce

Th d cto we t nto the p ssage t w h h s ha ds.

"You fell ws l e con cien d h to the valet wh was pou g w t r e h s ha ds Fo just em ment I d d t look ft er y It ch p n y u k w that I d h w h can be t.

By the Lord Jesus Ch t I tho ght we h d p t som th g u d h m! d the al t

The first t m P n e And ew u derstood he he as d what w the m tte w th h m d emembe ed b g w d d d how when h k d t be carr ed t the hut fter h h h d t pp d t Myt(h h Aft er gr g c f ed f m p wh le be g

the mb lan st u n whe t th s ght f the ffe gs of m h d l ked th n w th hts h d me t h m wh ch p m sed him h pp ess. A d those th ghts th gh gu d defi e ra possess d h s so l. He m mb d th t h h d w new so

him d turned h m er ga n nfus d h th ghts d he h cam to h mself th d t m t as th mpl t t ll ess f th ght. E rybody l m a l p g A cr cket ch ped fr m cr ss th p ss g som wa h u d g g the t eet cockr ches rustled n th table o the con and the wall d b g fly flopped t the

he d of the bed and around the candle beside h m th w ck of wh ch was charred and had h ped itself l ke a mushroom.

H s m d was not in a normal state A

quence of th hts or eve ts on wh h t t l whol attent o A he lth y man can te r l mself away from tl e deepest reflect n to say a c l word to someone who comes n nd can th n return ga n t h s own tl u ht But Prince A d ew m d as n t t a rm l state n th t respect All the powers of h m d were m re ct e a d clearer tl n e er but they cted apart f om h w ll Mo t l erse th ghts and mages occup ed l im multa e ou ly At t mes h s bra n uddenly beg n to w k th a go le rnes nd depth it had ne e re ched wl en he w s n h lth but s l de ly n the m dst of its w o k t w uld tu n to some u e p ted dea d he h d not the tre gth t tu t ba k aga n

Yes a new h pp ess w s revealed to me of wh ch man can t be d pri ed he th ught as he l y th sem l rk ess of the qu et l ut ga g fi edly bef e h m w tl fe erish w de op n eyes A h pp ness ly ng bey nd m te l f ces o ts de th m te l nflue ces tl at act o m n— h pp ess of th soul alo e tl e h pp es of l g Every m n can under ta d t b t to co e e t a d enj t was p ss l le o ly for God. B t how d d God en j n th t l w? A d why w the Son ?

A ds dde ly the equ c f these thoughts b ke off d Pr ce A d ew h d (w th t kn w g wh ther it w s a delu n or real ty)

h f bo e the ery m ddle of t some tr ge ry truct e was be g ere t d t of sle d n dles o pl ters to th so d of th wh p d mu c. He felt that he h d to b l e ca f lly (th gh t was d ff cult) so th t th ry stru t re h uld ot coll p e but

lf Wh le l t g t th s wh p nd f el g tl n t of th s draw g out d th stru t of th edifi f n edle he lso saw by gl mp es red h lo r d the ca dle d he d the rustle f the cockr ches

and the buzzing of the fly that flopped against his pillow and his face Each time the fly touched his face it gave him a burning sensation and yet to his surprise it did not destroy the structure though it knocked against the very region of his face where it was rising But besides this there was something else of importance It was something white by the door—the statue of a sphinx which also oppressed him

But perhaps that s my shirt on the table he thought and that s my legs and that is the door but why is it always stretching and drawing itself out and piti piti piti and ti ti and piti piti piti ? That s enough please leave off! Prince Andrew painfully entreated someone And suddenly thoughts and feelings again swam to the surface of his mind with peculiar clearness and force

Yes—love he thought again quite clearly But not love which loves for something for some quality for some purpose or for some reason but the love which I—while dying—first experienced when I saw my enemy and yet loved him I experienced that feeling of love which is the very essence of the soul and does not require an object Now again I feel that bliss To love one s neighbors to love one s enemies to love everything to love God in all His manifestations It is possible to love someone dear to you with human love but an enemy can only be loved by divine love That is why I experienced such joy when I felt that I loved that man What has become of him? Is he alive?

When loving with human love one may pass from love to hatred but divine love cannot change No neither death nor anything else can destroy it It is the very essence of the soul Yet how many people have I hated in my life? And of them all I loved and hated none as I did her And he vividly pictured to himself Natásha not as he had done in the past with nothing but her charms which gave him delight but for the first time picturing to himself her soul And he understood her feelings her sufferings shame and remorse He now understood for the first time all the cruelty of his rejection of her the cruelty of his rupture with her If only it were possible for me to see her once more! Just once looking into those eyes to say

Piti piti piti and ti ti and piti piti piti boom! flopped the fly And his attention was suddenly carried into another world a world of reality and delirium in which something particular was happening In that world some structure was still being erected and did not fall something was still stretching out and the candle with its red halo was still burnin and the same shirtlike sphinx lay near the door but besides all this something creaked there was a whiff of fresh air and a new white sphinx appeared standing at the door And that sphinx had the pale face and shining eyes of the very Natásha of whom he had just been thinking

Oh how oppressive this continual delirium is thought Prince Andrew trying to drive that face from his imagination But the face remained before him with the force of reality and drew nearer Prince Andrew wished to return to that former world of pure thought but he could not and delirium drew him back into its domain The soft whispering voice continued its rhythmic murmur something oppressed him and stretched out and the stran[illegible]e face was before him Prince Andre[illegible] coll[illegible]ed [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]lunged into water he lost consciousness When he came to himself Natásha that same living Natásha whom of all people he most longed to love with th[illegible]

[illegible] Natásha and he was not surprised but quietly happy Natásha motionless on her knees (she was unable to stir) with frightened eyes riveted on him was restraining her sobs Her face was pale and rigid Only in the lower part of it someth ng quivered

Prince Andrew sighed with relief smiled and held out his hand

You? he sa d How fortunate!

With a rapid but careful movement Natásha drew nearer to him on her knees and taking his hand carefully bent her face over it and began kissing it just touching it lightly with her lips

Forgive me! she whispered raising her head and glancing at him Forgive me!

I love you said Prince Andrew

Forgive [illegible]

Forgive what [illegible]e asked

Forgive me for wh[illegible]t I have done faltered Natásha in a scarcely audible broken whisper and began kissing his hand more rapidly just touching it with her lips

I love you more better than before [illegible] Prince Andrew lifting her face with his hand

so as to look to her eyes.

Those eyes, filled w th happy t ars, gazed at h m timidl compass n tely nd with joyous love. Natásha s thin pale face w th ts sw llen lips, was more than plain— t was dreadful. But Prince A drew d d ot see that he saw her s n eyes wh ch were beautiful They heard the sound of vo ces behind them.

Peter the valet, who wa now w de wake,

his bed. Please go way madam

At that m me t a ma d sent by the countess ho had ouced her daughter bsence knocked t th doo

Like somn mbul t aroused from her leep N tá ha went t f the room nd, return n to her h t, f ll sobb her bed.

From that tim duri g all the rest of the Ros óvs journey t every h lti g place nd herever they pe ght, N tásha never lef the ounded Bolkónski and th doct r had t dmit that h had t expected from young girl e ther su h firmness uch kill in ursing wounded m n

Dreadful as th cou tess magi ed t would be hould Prince Andrew di n her daughter arms duri th journey—as, j dging by what t doctor sa d, t se med m ght easil h ppen —sh uld n t ppose N tá h Th u h w th the intimacy w established between th wounded man and N tá ha th thought oc curred that should h eco er their former n gagem ould be enewed n one—lea t of all N tasha and Pri And ew— poke of thi th unsettled q est n f life and death wh ch hung t l er Bolk n k b o er ll Russia, sh t t all other cons derat ns.

CHAPTER XXXIII

ON THE THIRD SEPTE ER P erre woke l te. His head was chi g th clothes n which h h d ept w thou u dress f lt uncomf rt bl his bod d his mind h d dim con scious ess f someth ng ham ful h h d d n t e day bef Tha som th ham ful was his esterday conversati n w th Captain Ramball

It was leven b the clock but t seemed peculiarl da k ut f doors. P err rose rubbed his eyes, d see g th pistol w th an e gra ed stock wh ch Gerás m had replaced on the wr t ng t ble he remembered where he was and what l y bef re him that ery day

Am I not too l te? he thought. No probably *he* won t m ke his entry nto Moscow befo e noon

P erre d d n t allow h mself to reflect on what l y bef re h m, but hastened to act.

After arrangi g h clothes h took the pistol and wa bout to go o t. But t then oc curred to h m f r the first t me that he erta n ly could n t carry the weapon in his hand through the treets It wa d fficult t h de uch b g p t l even under h w de coat. He could

when pla n g h s des g t once come to the conclus on that the ch f mistak made by th student in 1809 had been to try to k ll N poleon w th a d gger But as

blunt j gged d gger n green sheath wh h h h d bou ht t the S kharev market w th

meeti g the captai and p ssed o t nto the treet.

The co fl grat t wh ch he had looked w th so mu h nd fference th eve bef re had greatly ncreased durin t e n ht. M s cow was o fire n sev ral pl ces. The bu ld ngs n Carr ge Row across th ri er n the Baza nd th Po arskóy as w ll as the barges on th Mosk á Ri nd th t mber ya ds by th Dorogomilo B d e were ll blaze.

P err way led thro gh d tree to th Po arsk y d from there to th church of St. N chol s on the A bát, wher h h d l be fo decided that the deed should be d e The gates f mos of the h uses were locked d th shutters up Th streets nd lanes were deserted. Th wa full of m ke and th smell of burn n N w and th n h m t Rus an w th nx ous nd t m d f ces, and Fre ch m n w th ai n t f the city but of th camp walkin n the middle of the streets. Both th Russ an and th F ch looked at P err w th surp ise. Bes des hi hei ht d toutness and th strange mo ose look of suf

and the buzzing of the fly that flopped against his pillow and his face. Each time the fly touched his face it gave him a burning sensation and yet to his surprise it did not destroy the structure, though it knocked against the very region of his face where it was rising. But besides this there was something else of importance. It was something white by the door—the statue of a sphinx, which also oppressed him.

"But perhaps that's my shirt on the table" he thought, "and that's my legs and that is the door but why is it always stretching and drawing itself out, and piti piti piti and ti ti and piti piti piti ... That's enough please leave off!" Prince Andrew painfully entreated someone. And suddenly thoughts and feelings again swam to the surface of his mind with peculiar clearness and force.

"Yes—love" he thought again quite clearly "But not love which loves for something, for some quality, for some purpose or for some reason but the love which I—while dying—first experienced when I saw my enemy and yet loved him. I experienced that feeling of love which is the very essence of the soul and does not require an object. Now again I feel that bliss. To love one's neighbors to love one's enemies to love everything, to love God in all His manifestations It is possible to love someone dear to you with human love but an enemy can only be loved by divine love. That is why I experienced such joy when I felt that I loved that man. What has become of him? Is he alive?

"When loving with human love one may pass from love to hatred, but divine love cannot change. No, neither death nor anything else can destroy it. It is the very essence of the soul Yet how many people have I hated in my life? And of them all I loved and hated none as I did her" And he vividly pictured to himself Natasha, not as he had done in the past with nothing but her charms which gave him delight, but for the first time picturing to himself her soul. And he understood her feelings her sufferings shame, and remorse. He now understood for the first time all the cruelty of his rejection of her the cruelty of his rupture with her "If only it were possible for me to see her once more Just once looking into those eyes to say ..."

"Piti-piti-piti and ti-ti and piti-piti-piti boom" flopped the fly ... And his attention was suddenly carried into another world, a world of reality and delirium in which something particular was happening In that world some structure was still being erected and did not fall something was still stretching out, and the candle with its red halo was still burning and the same shirtlike sphinx lay near the door but besides all this something creaked, there was a whiff of fresh air and a new white sphinx appeared, standing at the door And that sphinx had the pale face and shining eyes of the very Natasha of whom he had just been thinking

"Oh, how oppressive this continual delirium is" thought Prince Andrew trying to drive that face from his imagination. But the face remained before him with the force of reality and drew nearer Prince Andrew wished to return to that former world of pure thought, but he could not, and delirium drew him back into its domain. The soft whispering voice continued its rhythmic murmur something oppressed him and stretched out, and the strange face was bef[ore him] ...

all his stre[ngth]

he moved ...

ringing in his ears a dimness in his eyes, and like a man plunged into water he lost consciousness. When he came to himself Natásha, that same living Natasha whom of all people he most longed to love with this new pure divine love that had been revealed to him was kneeling before him. He realized that it was the real living Natasha and he was not surprised but quietly happy Natásha motionless on her knees (she was unable to stir) with frightened eyes riveted on him was restraining her sobs Her face was pale and rigid. Only in the lower part of it something quivered.

Prince Andrew sighed with relief smiled, and held out his hand.

"You?" he said. "How fortunate!"

With a rapid but careful movement Natasha drew nearer to him on her knees and taking his hand carefully bent her face over it and began kissing it just touching it lightly with her lips

"Forgive me" she whispered raising her head and glancing at him. "Forgive me"

"I love you" said Prince Andrew

"Forgive ...!"

"Forgive what?" he asked.

"Forgive me for what I have done" faltered Natasha in a scarcely audible broken whisper and began more rapidly kissing his hand more rapidly just touching it with her lips

"I love you more better than before" said Prince Andrew lifting her face with his hand

h eyes.

ı
t
, a m r tha pl n— t ш
n ce A drev d d n t ee th t he s w l er
ng eyes wh ch ere b t ful Th y heard
he so d f o es beh d them
d u ke

hi bed Plea e go way m d m!
At th t m me t a m d se t by th c untess
h had n t d her d ght s abs ce
k ocked t th doo

From th t t me dur g ll th est of th
Rostó s jo rney t ev ry h lt ng pl e nd
herever they pe t n ght N tá h never
left th ded B lkón k d the docto
had t dmut th t h had n t pected f om a
yo g g l ther ch firmnes o u h k ll n
rs w d d m n
Dr df l as th co ntess mag ed t w uld
be h ld P A d ew d e n h r da ht s
h wl t

ded m n d N tá h th th ght oc
curred that h ld h th f rmer en
— — of

Russ h t ut ll othe con d rat n

CHAPTER XXXIII

O TI THIRD O S PTE ER P rre w ke l te
H h d was ch g he cl thes n wh ch he
h d l pt w th t d ess n f lt u mf t
tl his body d h m d h d d m n
sc ess f som th g h m ful he h d d n
th day bef Th t som th g h mef l was
h yesterd y co ers t w th C ptai Ram
b ll
It w leve by th l k b t t em d
pecul ly d k ut f doors P rr
rubbed h yes d see g th p t l w th n

engra ed stock which Gerá m had replaced
n the wr t ng table he rem mbered where he
ob-
be
f e noon
P erre d d n t allow l mself to r flect on
wh t l y before h m but l a te ed to act
After rrang g h clothes l e took the p s-
tol and was bout to go o t But t then oc
curred t h m f r the f rst t me that he certa n
ly could not carry th we p n n l hand
through th streets It wa d fficult to h de su h
b g p st l e n un ler h w de coat He could
— ed h s belt or u der l

wl en pl nn g l s des g t e t u e u
on ome to tl e c cl n tl t the cl ef
m t ke m de by th st de t n 1809 l d bee
to try to k ll Nap leon w tl a d gger But s
carry g o t l

— n gree l eath wi ti

me t g the capt a d p ssed out nto the
tre t
h d looked

gs n Carr g Row acr th r er n the
Baza nd the l o rskóy as w ll as the b ges
on th M k á R e nd th t mber y ds by
the D g mil B dge w e ll bl
P rr w y l d th gh de st e t to tl e
P arskóy nd f m ther to the cl u ch of St.
N ch l s the A bát wh he l d l be
f d cided th t the d ed h ld b d Tl
gate f most of the h u es we e l ked d
th hutt rs up Tl street nd l es wer
dese ted. Th w full f m k d the
m ll f burn ng N w nd th n he met Rus-
n w than u nd t m d f ces and French
m w th ai t f the c ty but of the
camp w lk g n th middl of the st e ts
B th the Russ d tl F h looked t
P err w th surp is Bes des h h ht nd
t ut ess d the tra n o os look of uf

fering in his face and whole figure the Russians stared at him because they could not make out to what class he could belong The French followed him with astonishment in their eyes chiefly because Pierre unlike all the other Russians who gazed at the French with fear and curiosity paid no attention to them At the gate of one house three Frenchmen who were explaining something to some Russians who did not understand them stopped Pierre asking if he did not know French

Pierre shook his head and went on In another side street a sentinel standing beside a green caisson shouted at him but only when the shout was threateningly repeated and he heard the click of the man s musket as he raised it did Pierre understand that he had to pass on the other side of the street He heard nothing and saw nothing of what went on around him He carried his resolution within himself in terror and haste like something dreadful and alien to him for after the previous night s experience he was afraid of losing it But he was not destined to bring his mood safely to his destination And even had he not been hindered by anything on the way his intention could not now have been carried out for Napoleon had passed the Arbát more than four hours previously on his way from the Dorogomílov suburb to the Krémlin and was now sitting in a very gloomy frame of mind in a royal study in the Kremlin giving detailed and exact orders as to measures to be taken immediately to extinguish the fire to prevent looting and to reassure the inhabitants But Pierre did not know this he was entirely absorbed in what lay before him and was tortured—as those are who obstinately undertake a task that is impossible for them not because of its difficulty but because of its incompatibility with their natures—by the fear of weakening at the decisive moment and so losing his self esteem

Though he heard and saw nothing around him he found his way by instinct and did not go wrong in the side streets that led to the Povarskóy

As Pierre approached that street the smoke became denser and denser—he even felt the heat of the fire Occasionally curly tongues of flame rose from under the roofs of the houses He met more people in the streets and they were more excited But Pierre though he felt that something unusual was happening around him did not realize that he was approaching the fire As he was going along a footpath across a wide-open space adjoining the Povarskóy on one side and the gardens of Prince Gruzínski s house on the other Pierre suddenly heard the desperate weeping of a woman close to him He stopped as if awakening from a dream and lifted his head

By the side of the path on the dusty dry grass all sorts of household goods lay in a heap featherbeds a samovar icons and trunks. On the ground beside the trunks sat a thin woman no longer young with long prominent upper teeth and wearing a black cloak and cap This woman swaying to and fro and muttering something was choking with sobs Two girls of about ten and twelve dressed in dirty short frocks and cloaks were staring at their mother with a look of stupefaction on their pale frightened faces The youngest child a boy of about seven who wore an overcoat and an immense cap evidently not his own was crying in his old nurse s arms A dirty barefooted maid was sitting on a trunk and having undone her pale colored plait was pulling it straight and sniffing at her singed hair The woman s husband a short round shouldered man in the undress uniform of a civilian official with sausage shaped whiskers and showing under his square set cap the hair smoothly brushed forward over his temples with expressionless face was moving the trunks which were placed one on another and was dragging some garments from under them

As soon as she saw Pierre the woman almost threw herself at his feet

Dear people good Christians save me help me dear friends help us somebody she muttered between her sobs My girl My daughter! My youngest daughter is left behind She s burned! Ooh! Was it for this I nursed you Ooh!

Don t Mary Nikoláevna! said her husband to her in a low voice evidently only to justify himself before the stranger Sister must have taken her or else where can she be? he added

Monster! Villain! shouted the woman angrily suddenly ceasing to weep You have no heart you don t feel for your own child Another man would have rescued her from the fire But this is a monster and neither a man nor a father! You honored sir are a noble man she went on addressing Pierre rapidly between her sobs The fire broke out alongside and blew our way the maid called out Fire! and we rushed to collect our things We ran out just as we were This is what we

ha e brought away The con and my dowry bed all the rest ı lost. We se zed the hildre B t n t Katie! O h! O Lor ll

d an he began to sob My ch ld my dear on ! B rned b rned

But here was she left?" asked Pierre

From the express on f h n m ted f ce th oman saw th t th m n m ght help her

Oh, dear sı e cr ed, e ng h m by the legs. "My be efact r et my hea t t ease Aniska, go yo h rrid g l h wh m the wayl sh cried t the m d an grıl open ng her mouth d t ll farth r e po n h l ng teeth.

Show me th way how m I lll d t gasped P erre rap dly

Th dirty maidserva t tepped from beh nd the tru k p t up he pl t s hed, nd went her sh rt, b fe t l g the p th P erre felt as f he had come b ck t l fe f er heavy

to death our tre sure Kat e my precious little m ssy Ooh! lamented *Aniska* who at the ght of the fre f lt th t she too mı t g ve ex p ess o to her feel ngs.

the roof nd arou d wh ch swarmed a crowd of Fren hmen At first Pierre d l n t real e wh t these men who ere dragg ng someth out we e bout but see ng before him a Frenchm n h tt g a peasant w th a blunt sa ber and tryi g to take fr m h m a fo fur coat he vaguely understood that loot g was go n n the e but he had no t me t d ell on that idea

The ounds of crackl ng d the d n of f ll ng walls a d cre l gs the wl tle d h f the fl mes the exc ted shouts f the people a d th s ght of the sway gsm ke n w gather

clo ds f bl k sm ke To gues of fl me here and there broke th ou h th t clo d A great umber of people cr wded f t of the n l grau l th m ddl f th stre t tood F ch g ral say g someth t th e aro d hum P err ccomp ed by th m d as d a cin t th pot wher th g neral stood b t the F e h ld ers t pped h m.

O pass pas cr ed ce.

"This ay u le, cr ed the g l We'll pass throu h th de treet, by the N kul l

P err turned b k g g p g w nd th t k p up w th her Sh ran cross the treet, turned d wn d t eet to th left d pass g thre l uses t rned t ya d th n ht.

Its her close by sa d he d ru cross th ya d p ed gate ood n fence d, topp po ted t t h m sm ll oode f th h use wh ch was bur g b htly d fierc ly O f ts des h d f ll n ther was fir d b ht flames ssued from the p gs f th vi d ws d fr m der th oof.

A P rr passed thro gh th f e gat he l ped by h t nd lu t ly t pped

Wh ch is t? Which yo hou e? he asked.

Ooh! a led th g l po g t th w g "That t, that as ur lodging You burned

can t p s

gold n fish scales creep ng l g tl e walls) nd the l eat a d mok d rap d ty of mo- t prod ced o P erre th usu l a mat n

st ll t d g wl en just bo e l l e l he heard e eral o ces sho t g a d the a cra k soun l nd the rin f someth g l ea y f ll g cl se bes de h m

P rr looked up and s w t w dov of the l rg h use s me Fre chmen w l o ha l j t th wn out the drawer of a l est filled w th m t l rt cles Other F en h ld rs ta l g bel went p t tl e drawer

"Wh t does th f llow want h ted on f th m ferr g t P erre

"There ch ld n th t house H en t you n cl ld cr ed P rre.

n th draw mo ed th te gly t ard him.

A ch ld h uted F e hm f m bo e I d l h som th g sq l ng n the gard n Perhap t his brat that the f ll w look

ing for After all one must be human you know

Where is it? Where? said Pierre

There! There! shouted the Frenchman at the window pointing to the garden at the back of the house Wait a bit—I m coming down

And a minute or two later the Frenchman a black eyed fellow with a spot on his cheek in shirt sleeves really did jump out of a window on the ground floor and clapping Pierre on the shoulder ran with him into the garden

Hurry up you others! he called out to his comrades It s getting hot

When they reached a gravel path behind the house the Frenchman pulled Pierre by the arm and pointed to a round graveled space where a three year-old girl in a pink dress was lying under a seat

There is your child! Oh a girl so much the better! said the Frenchman Good by Fatty We must be human we are all mortal you know! and the Frenchman with the spot on his cheek ran back to his comrades

Breathless with joy Pierre ran to the little

yell and run away Pierre however seized her and lifted her in his arms She screamed desperately and angrily and tried with her little hands to pull Pierre s hands away and to bite them with her slobbering mouth Pierre was

to throw the child down and ran with her to the large house It was now however impossible to get back the way he had come the maid Aniska was no longer there and Pierre with a feeling of pity and disgust pressed the wet painfully sobbing child to himself as tenderly as he could and ran with her through the garden seeking another way out

CHAPTER XXXIV

Having run through different yards and side streets Pierre got back with his little burden to the Gruzinski garden at the corner of the Povarskóy He did not at first recognize the place from which he had set out to look for the

here from the fire with their be [illegible]
were several French soldiers in a variety of clothing Pierre took no notice of them He hurried to find the family of that civil servant in order to restore the daughter to her mother and go to save someone else Pierre felt that he had still much to do and to do quickly Glowing with the heat and from running he felt at that moment more strongly than ever the sense of youth animation and determination that had come on him when he ran to save the child She had now become quiet and clinging with her little hands to Pierre s coat sat on his arm gazing about her like some little wild animal He glanced at her occasionally with a slight smile He fancied he saw something pathetically innocent in that frightened sickly little face

He did not find the civil servant or his wife where he had left them He walked among the crowd with rapid steps scanning the various faces he met Involuntarily he noticed a Georgian or Armenian family consisting of a very handsome old man of Oriental type wearing a new cloth covered sheepskin coat and new boots an old woman of similar type and a young woman That very young woman seemed to Pierre the perfection of Oriental beauty with her sharply outlined arched black eyebrows and the extraordinarily soft bright color of her long beautiful expressionless face Amid the scattered property and the crowd on the open space she in her rich satin cloak with a bright lilac shawl on her head suggested a delicate exotic plant thrown out onto the snow She was sitting on some bundles a little behind the old woman and looked from under her long lashes with motionless large almond shaped eyes at the ground before her Evidently she was aware of her beauty and fearful because of it Her face struck Pierre and hurrying along by the fence he turned several times to look at her When he had reached the fence still without finding those he sought he stopped and looked about him

With the child in his arms his figure was now more conspicuous than before and a group of Russians both men and women gathered about him

Have you lost anyone my dear fellow? You re of the gentry yourself aren t you? Whose child is it? they asked him

Pierre replied that the child belonged to a woman in a black coat who had been sitting there with her other children and he asked whether anyone knew where she had gone

[illegible] said an
[illegible] casant
[illegible] ercy!

h...ed his customary bass.

"The Anfero N sa d the woman "They left m t.. mornin That must be either Mary Nikolaevna o th Ivi o l

H says oma d M ry N k laevna s lady remarked house erf.

"Do you know her Sh thin with lo teeth, sa d P erre.

"That M ry Nik laevna They went n- sd t.. garden when these wol es swooped down, said the woman po t ng to the Fre ch soldiers.

"O Lord, ha e mercy added the deacon.

"Go over that wa they e there. It he She kept lamentin and cry co tinued the woman. It's she. Here this way!

But P erre was not listening t th w man H had for some seco ds been tently watching what was going on few teps way He was lookin t the Armenia f mily d at two French soldiers who had g n p to them. On of these nimbl little ma was wear g b ue oat tied round th waist w th rope. H had ghtcap on his head d his feet were bare. Th ther whose ppearance p r ticularly struck P err was l lank, u d shou dered, fair ha red ma l w his m e ments and with a di t expres n of f ce. H wo woman loose gown f frieze bl e trousers, and large torn Hessian boots. The l barefooted Frenchman n th bl co t wen p t the Arm nia d, sa some- thing immediat ly seized the old ma by h legs and t.. ld man began pullin off his boots. The ther in the frieze gown topped in fro t f the bea tiful Armenia girl d with his hands hi pockets tood tari g at her mot less d ilent.

Here, take the child sa d P erre peremp- toril and hurriedl to th woman hand t.. litl girl t her Gi her back t them gi her back h almost h uted, p ti g the chi.d, wh began scream o th gr nd a d gai looki g t th F chman and the Armenian family

The ld man was alread ting barefoot. Th littl F enchman had secured his second boot and was slappin e boot gain t th other Th ld ma as say g someth n a ce broken b sobs, but P erre caught but glimpse f this his whol t t n was di rected to th F enchman n th frieze gown ho mean hil swayin l wl from d t d had drawn nearer t h oung woma nd takin his ha ds fr m his pockets had seized her by th eck.

Th beaut f l Armenia still sat motionless a d n the same tt tude w th her lo l es droop n a if she d d not see r feel what the sold er wa do to her

Wh le P erre was runn the few teps that separated h m from the Frenchman the t ll mara der n the fr eze gown was l e dy tea g from her neck the eckl ce the yo n Armenian was weari a d th o n wom an clut hi g t her neck screamed p erc ingly

Let that woman al e excla med P erre hoarsely in furi us vo ce seiz the sold er by his ro nd shoulders nd throw l m as d

The sold er fell got up a d ran wa B t his comrade throw d wn the boot d draw his sword mo ed threaten l to- ward P erre.

Voyo pas d bêtises!" he cried.

P erre was su h tran port of ra e that he rem mbered oth n d hi st ength creased te f ld. He rushed t the ba efooted Frenchma d bef re the latter had t me to draw his swo d, k ocked h m off h s feet d hammered h m w th h s fi ts. Sho ts f ap- pro al were h rd from the crowd aro n l d t the sam moment mou ted patr l of Fre h Uhl ppeared from round the corner Th Uhlan came up t a trot to P erre d the F en hman d urro ded them. P erre e- membered n th n of what happened fter that. He only emembered beat someo nd be beaten d fi lly feel that his hands were bound d that cr wd of F en h sold ers tood around h m d were search him.

Lieuten nt, h has dagger were the first wo ds P err u derstood.

Ah, weapo sa d th officer d turned to th ba efooted sold er who had been ar res ed w th P erre. All right, you can tell all bo t t th court mart l. Then he turned to P erre Do u peak F ench

P erre looked ar d h m w th bloodsh t eyes and did not repl H f probabl looked ery terr ble f the of cer sa d someth a whi per d f ur m e Uhlan l ft the ranks d pl ed themsel es on both s des f P err

"Do you peak French the officer ked gain keep g t distance from P erre Call the interpreter

A l ttle ma n Rus n ci ilian cl thes rod o t from th ranks nd by his cl thes nd

Look here no nonsense

manner of speaking Pierre at once knew him to be a French salesman from one of the Moscow shops

He does not look like a common man said the interpreter after a searching look at Pierre

Ah he looks very much like an incendiary remarked the officer And ask him who he is he added

Who are you? asked the interpreter in poor Russian You must answer the chief

I will not tell you who I am I am your prisoner—take me! Pierre suddenly replied in French

Ah ah! muttered the officer with a frown Well then march!

A crowd had collected round the Uhlans Nearest to Pierre stood the pockmarked peasant woman with the little girl and when the patrol started she moved forward

Where are they taking you to you poor dear? said she And the little girl the little girl what am I to do with her if she s not theirs? said the woman

What does that woman want? asked the officer

Pierre was as if intoxicated His elation increased at the sight of the little girl he had saved

What does she want? he murmured. She is bringing me my daughter whom I have just saved from the flames said he Good by And without knowing how this aimless lie had escaped him he went along with resolute and triumphant steps between the French soldiers

The French patrol was one of

the incendiaries who according to the general opinion which had that day originated among the higher French officers were the cause of the conflagrations. After marching through a number of streets the patrol arrested five more Russian suspects a small shopkeeper two seminary students a peasant and a house serf besides several looters But of all these various suspected characters Pierre was considered to be the most suspicious of all When they had all been brought for the night to a large house on the Zubov Rampart that was being used as a guardhouse Pierre was placed apart under strict guard

Book Twelve 1812

*

CHAPTER I

IN PETE CR at tl t t me mpl c ted truggl b g c rr ed n w th gre ter h t th e e tl e h l c t le between tl part es f R myá tse the Fr cl Máry Fé d o the T é ch nd tl e d ned us l by th b g f tl ecou t d n s But the calm l r u l fe f Petersburg con c rned ly bout ph t ms nd r fl t n f eal l f we t n ts ld w y a d m de t h d ex ept by great effo t t e l e the d ger d the d fficult pos t n of the Rus s peopl Tl ere tl m r c pt n d h lls th m F cl theat the me n terests d n e terests nd in trigues u l O ly n the ery h ghest c r d the were esses The — w e f

th h uld ll be em ed har u thi gs bel these n uti ns had l ead be p ked up Th Emp ess Elisabeth, h wev wh ked what n tructi n she o ld be pleased gi —w h her character s t R p tri m had epl ed that he ld g no d ecti n bou tate in tu t f tha wa th ff f th so er n b t f h personall was erned h would be th la to qu t Petersburg

At A P l na on th twenty-sixth of A us th erv da f th ba tl f Borodinó ther as soiree, the chi f fea ur of wh ch wa to be th eading f let er fr m His Lord h p th Bishop when sending th Emperor f t Venerab Serg us l was ga ded as model of ecclesiastical p trioti loquen e. Prince Vas l himself famed for hi locution wa to ead t. (H used to ead t the Empress') The art of his eading was up posed to lie in ing out th words quite in dependent tuer mea ng, n loud nd s gs g o e altern t g l et een a despair a l and tender m rmur o tl at th wo l fell qu te at ran lo on or e word at d tl e on n ther Th s read ng s wa al d ex ha l h r A but Ann Pá l m not ye s e lom he wanted n h r d aw ng room d l not let the ead n beg n but w u d up tl e sp ns of general c n ers t n

The n ws of tl day n Petersburg w the ll ess of Cou tes Bez kho a She had f llen ll unexpe tedly a few day pre ously had m ssed se l gather s of wl cl he was usu lly th rn ment d was sa d t be rece n no o e and tead f the cel brated Pe tersburg doct rs wl u u lly atte ded her h l entrusted herself t some Ital n doctor wl o was treat her in some new nd u usu l way

They ll knew ery well that the encl ant countes ll es arose fr m an con en n e result fr m marry g two hu ba ds at the sam t m d that the Italian s cu e con t ed n emov uch n enc but n Anna P lovn s p esence o e da ed t th k of th e n ppear t kn t

"They say the poo co tes is ery ll The docto sa t is pe to

A gin Oh that terr bl ill es

"They say th t the ls e c c led tha ks to th d the w d g was epeated w th great satisf cti n

"Th ld cou t p th t c they say He cr ed l ke child wh n th docto told h m th case was dan erous.

Oh t w uld be terr ble loss h s n en chanti w man

"You are peak f th poo c u tess sa d Anna Pá l com g up just then I sent to ask for news nd hear that h l t

the better Oh she is certainly the most charm ing woman in the world she went on with a smile at her own enthusiasm We belong to different camps but that does n t prevent my very un

cius Anna Páv lovna was somewhat lifting the veil from the secret of the countess malady an unwary young man ventured to express surprise that kno the wh ie needies

Your information may be better than mine Anna Pávlovna suddenly and venomously re torted on the inexperienced young man but I know on good authority that this doctor is a very learned and able man He is private phy sician to the Queen of Spain

And having thus demolished the young man Anna P vlovna turned to another group where Bilibin was talking about the Austrians hav ing wrinkled up his face he was evidently pre paring to smooth it out again and utter one of his mots

I think it is delightful he said referring to a diplomatic note that had been sent to Vi enna with some Austrian banners captured from the French by Wittgenste n the hero of Petropol as he was then called in Petersburg

What? What's that? asked Anna Pávlovna securing silence for the mot which she had heard before

And Bilibin repeated the actual words of the diplomatic dispatch which he had himself composed

The Emperor returns these Austrian ban ners said Bilibin friendly banners gone astray and found on a wrong path and his brow became smooth again

Charming charming! observed Prince Vasili

The path to Warsaw perhaps Prince H p polyte remarked loudly and unexpectedly Ev erybody looked at him not understanding what he meant Prince Hippolyte himself glanced around with amused surprise He knew no more than the others what his words meant During his diplomatic career he had more than once noticed that such utterances were re ceived as very witty and at every opportunity he uttered in that way the first words that en tered his head It may turn out very well he thought but if not they ll know how to ar range matters And really during the awk ward silence that en ued that insufficiently pa triotic person entered whom Anna Pávlovna had been waiting for and wished to convert and she smiling and shaking a finger at Hip polyte invited Prince Vasili to th

Gracious Sovereign and Emperor! Prince Vasili sternly declaimed look ng round at h s au dience a if to inquire whether anyone had any thing to say to the contrary But no one said any thing Mo cow our ancient capital the New Jeru salem receives her Christ —he placed a s ll n emphasis on the word her— a a m ther rece ves her zealous sons nto her arms and thr gh the gathering mists foreseeing the brilliant glory of thy rule ings in exultation Ho anna Blessed is He that cometh!

Prince Vasili pronounced these last words in a tearful voice

Bilibin attentively examined his nails and many of those present appeared intimidated as if asking in what they were to blame Anna Pávlovna whispered the next words in advance like an old woman muttering the prayer at Communion Let the bold and insolent Goli ath she whispered

Prince Vasili continued

Let the bold and insolent G liath from the borders of Fran e en o pa the realms of Ru a w th d ath Humble Fa th the sling of the Ru n Dav d shall s ddenl s

to M jesty I grieve that my wa ing t e yo r me to Hea the j t Majesty

What force! What a style! w s tter

su t of the battle to be fought in a few days

You will see said Anna Pávlovna th t to morrow on the Emperor's birthday we shall receive news I have a favorable presentiment!

CHAPTER II

ANNA PÁVLOVNA'S presentiment was n f ct ful filled Next d y during the service at the p lace church in honor of the Emperor's birthday Prince Volk nski was called out of th hurch and received a d sp tch from Prince Kut z v

twa Kutúzo report tter from Tatári
h d of the battle Kutúz wrote

l
t

l

f the v t ry m t t t f e l
ood
c
e en
spoke f N poleon s h ng bee t ed of
h depo t o n l of the ch ce of e t l r
f r Fran e
It is ery l fficult f e ent t be effect l
the re l st e th n l co l lete ess m l the
rom l ce e

m h n the f ct th t the n ws l ta t
th Emp ro b rth l y on the f ct of the

l

d f the ff aga l nt ly e nter l
tou d gl l t K áy d the E
rybody k ew l m the E p ro l ked h m n l
he y g n l t est g Th t l y e e y
e met th tl w l
Wh t a w d f l ned l J t l g
the rs B t wh t l ss K táy l H w
sorry I am

fe t g N poleo
B t t d y es rr ed fr tl y
d th p bl mood gr u The
t rs uffe ed becau f tl ffe g the
u p ca ed l Emp ror
F cy tl L p po t l th y
l d f t ll K t tl y l l
l l d y b f l y co dem d l as

w rd g f ev ryth g c n p ed t
mak l t rsb g ty d y
te r ble p ece f w lded Co ntess

Hélène Bezúkho a ha l s l lenly l e l of tl t
terr ble mal ly t ha l been so agreeable t
ment o Off cially at l rge gath er gs e er
o ie sa l tl t C ntess Bezúkh a l a l l ed f
terr l le att k of a g n pect r l t n n
t te c r les leta l we e t ent ed l l
te t hys t l of the Q e S

r l tl at l er l l n l to v l c
(that wretched p ofl gate Pierre) l l t r
n t l f
st
tl t
rnel
I r n e Va
p n tl e lt l t b t tl e l tt rl l l ed
s l letters fro t tle u f t n te lec d

r ble! Wl t p t l r tl e L l
nt K t l zo s a tra t r l I r e V lt
l r g the s ts of con l le ce l l l l
l of

ytl ng el e fr m a bl l n l le l t l
m n
w co ll

f ll g co mu cat n s rece e l l o
Co nt l o t pcl f t
l l K t l l l t th bro gl t m l t

t ed ll wl l l tl hes f y est rs
l l ll f ll tl my l l h le ry l g re
m ed l l f t weep
th f t f my f h l l
On ce ng tl l sp tcl the E per r sent
P nce V lk k t K t l t tl e f ll
g cr pt
l l M h l ll l l l S ce tl t ty

tle better Oh she is certainly the most charming woman in the world she went on with a smile at her own enthusiasm We belong to different camps but that does not event my very un

ina Páv

I was somewhat lifting the veil from the secret of the countess malady an unwary young man ventured to express surprise th kno the who remedies

Your information may be better than mine Anna Pávlovna suddenly and venomously retorted on the inexperienced young man but I know on good authority that this doctor is a very learned and able man He

to another group where Bilibin was talking about the Austrians having wrinkled up his face he was evidently preparing to smooth it out again and utter one of his mots

I think it is delightful he said referring to a diplomatic note that had been sent to Vienna with some Austrian banners captured from the French by Wittgenstein the hero of Petropol as he was then called in Petersburg

What? What's that? asked Anna Pávlovna securing silence for the mot which she had heard before

And Bilibin repeated the actual words of the diplomatic dispatch which he had himself composed

The Emperor returns these Austrian banners said Bilibin friendly banners gone astray and found on a wrong path and his brow became smooth again

Charming charming! observed Prince Vasili

The path to Warsaw perhaps Prince Hippolyte remarked loudly and unexpectedly Everybody looked at him not understanding what he meant Prince Hippolyte himself glanced around with amused surprise He knew no more than the others what his words meant During his diplomatic career he had more than once noticed that such utterances were received as very witty and at every opportunity he uttered in that way the first words that entered his head It may turn out very well he thought but if not they ll know how to arrange matters And really during the awkward silence that ensued that insufficiently pa

triotic person entered whom Anna Pávlovna had been waiting for and wished to convert and she smiling and shaking a finger at Hippolyte invited Prince Vasili to

But no one said anything Moscow our ancient capital the New Jerusalem receives Christ —he placed a sudden emphasis on the word — as a mother receives her zealous sons into her arms and through the gathering mist foreseeing the brilliant glory of thy rule sings in exultation Hosanna Blessed is he that cometh

Prince Vasili pronounced these last words in a tearful voice

Bilibin attentively examined his nails and many of those present appear as if asking Pávlovna wh like an old muttering the prayer at Communion Let the bold and insolent Goliath she whispered

Prince Vasili continued

Let the bold and insolent Gol —

What force! What a style! was uttered

the result of the battle to be fought in a few days

You will see said Anna Pávlovna that tomorrow on the Emperor's birthday we shall receive news I have a favorable presentiment!

CHAPTER II

Anna Pávlovna's presentiment was in fact fulfilled Next day during the service at the palace church in honor of the Emperor's birthday Prince Volkónski was called out of the church and received a dispatch from Prince Kutuz

offers m more than my nemies suppose, said the Emperor grow g m re and more ani — — h t should t ever be orda ned by D —

means t my comma d I shall et J — I grow t here (h po ted halfway d wn his chest) d g d eat potatoes with the mean est I m peasa ts rathe than gn the disgrace I my co try a d of my beloved people hose sacrifices I know how to appreciate.

H uttered these words in n gitated voce th Empero suddenl turned away s f to h d from M chaud th tears that rose to his eyes, d ent the further end of his st dy H vin stood there few moments he strode back to M ch d nd pressed h s arm bel w t. Ibow with o us mo em t. The Emperor mild d ha dsom f ce wa flushed and his eyes gleamed with resol t n nd anger

Col l M ha d d n t f rget what I say you here perhaps we may ecall t w th pleasure someday \ poleon o l sa d the Emperor to ch hi b east. "We can o lo ger both rei ogether I ha e learned o know him, d h will t dec m y more

And th Empero paused, w th fro vn.

When h heard these w rd and saw th ex pres io f firm resoluti n n the Empero eyes, M haud—q q t ger russ d cœ t d'âm — t that solemn m ment felt himself nrap'ured by all that he had heard (h used f erwards sa) d ga e ex p ess n to his wn feel ngs nd those of the Russian peopl whose epresentati e he con si ered himself to be, n th f llowi g words

"Sire sa d h "Your M jesty is thus moment gn th gl ry f th n ti and th salvatio f Europe

W th an clin tion f the head the Emper or dism ssed him.

CHAPTER IV

I TURAL for us who wer not livi in those da to ima that when half Russia had been co q ered and th nhab tants were — —

themsel es sa their f therl d, o weeping ver ts downfall. Th tales d descriptions f that time w tho t excep n speak only of the self sacrifice p tri t c devotion despa r grief and the hero m of the Rus ns. But t wa not eally so It appears so to us be cause we see only the g neral historic i terest of that time nd do not see all the perso al human nterests that people had. Yet in real ty those person l terests of the moment so mucl transcend the general nterests th t tl ey al ways prevent the publ c nterest from be felt or even not ced. Most of the people at that time pa d no attent n to the general progress of events but were guided only by the r pr ate nterests d they were the very people whose acti ties at that period were most useful.

Those who tr ed to u dersta d the general course of eve ts d to take part n it by elf sacr fice and hero sm were the most useles members of society they saw everyth upside down d ll they d d f the comm n good turned out t be useless and foolish—l'ke P erre s and M mon s reg ments wh ch loot ed Russ an llages nd the l nt the y u lad es prepared nd that never reached the wo ded, and so on E en those f nd of in tellectu l talk nd of express g their feel who discussed Russ a posit on t the time in luntarily introduced to the con ersat n e ther a hade of pretense a d f lsehood or use less co demn ti n and nger directed aga nst people ccused of ctions no one could possibly be guilty of. In hist ri events the rule fo b ddi g us t eat of the fru t of the Tree of K wledge is specially ppl cable. O ly un consci us ct n bears fru t and he wh pla s a part in n historic event nev u derstand ts s n ficance. If he tries to ealiz t his efforts ar fru tless.

The mo e closely man was engaged n tl e eve ts then taki place in Russia the less d d h realize their gn fica ce In Petersburg nd n th pro ces at distance from Moscow lad es d gentlem n in mil tia u forms, wept f Russ d ts cient cap tal nd talked of self-sacrifice and so on b t n th my wh ch etured beyo d Moscow ther was l ttl talk thought of Moscow and when they cau ht ight f ts burned ru s no on swore to be en ed the F ch but they thou ht bout th ir next p th next quar t rs of M treshka the a dière, d like matters.

A the war had ca ht him n the service N ch las Rost took close nd prol ged part in th d fense of his co ntry but d d so casually w tho t any aim t self-sacrifice nd he theref re looked t what was go n on in

ninth of August I have received no communication from you yet on the first of September I received from the commander in chief of Moscow via Yaroslávl the sad news that you with the army ha e le t
yourself
me an l
am sendi
Lónski to eai fio n you the situat on of the army and the reasons that have induced you to take this melancholy decision

CHAPTER III

NINE DAYS after the abandonment of Moscow a messenger from Kutuzov reached Petersburg with the official announcement of that event This messenger was Michaud a Frenchman who did not know Russian but who was *quoique étranger russe de cœur et d âme* as he said of himself

The Emperor at once received this messenger in his study at the palace on Stone Island Michaud who had never seen Moscow before the campaign and who did not know Russian yet felt deeply moved (as he wrote) when he appeared before *notre très gracieux souverain* with the news of the burning of Moscow *dont les flammes éclairaient sa route*

Though the source of M Michaud s chagrin must have been different from that which caused Russians to grieve he had such a sad face when shown into the Emperor s study that the latter at once asked

Have you brought me sad news Colonel?

Very sad sire replied Michaud lowering his eyes with a sigh The abandonment of Moscow

Have they surrendered my ancient capital without a battle? asked the Emperor quickly his face suddenly flushing

Michaud respectfully delivered the message Kutuzov had entrusted to him which was that it had been impossible to fight before Moscow and that as the only remaining choice was between losing the army as well as Moscow or losing Moscow alone the field marshal had to choose the latter

The Emperor listened in silence not looking at Michaud

Has the enemy entered the city? he asked

Yes sire and Moscow is now in ashes I left it all in flames replied Michaud in a decided tone but glancing at the Emperor he was frightened by what he had done

Though a fo e gn r R ian in l t l oul
Our most grac us sov re gn
Whose fl mes ill m ned l t ro te

The Emperor began
ra
st
fro
an
fir

I see Colonel from all that is happening that Providence requires great sacrifices of us

I am ready to submit myself in all things to His will but tell me Michaud how did you leave the army when it saw my ancient capital abandoned without a battle? Did you not notice discouragement?

Seeing that his most gracious ruler was calm once more Michaud also grew calm but was not immediately ready to reply to the Emperor s direct and relevant question which required a direct answer

Sire will you allow me to speak frankly as befits a loyal soldier? he asked to gain time

Colonel I always require it replied the Emperor Conceal nothing from me I wish to know absolutely how things are

Sire! said Michaud with a subtle scarcely perceptible smile on his lips having now prepared a well phrased reply sire I left the whole army from its chiefs to the lowest soldier without exception in desperate and agonized terror

How is that? the Emperor interrupted him frowning sternly Would misfortune make my Russians lose heart? Never

Michaud had only waited for this to bring

it s ould allow yourself to be persuaded to make peace They are burning for the combat declared this representative of the Russian nation and to prove to Your Majesty by the sacrifice of their lives how devoted they are

Ah! said the Emperor reassured and with a kindly gleam in his eyes he patted Michaud on the shoulder You set me at ease Colonel

He bent his head and was silent for some time

Well then go back to the army he said drawing himself up to his full height and addressing Michaud with a gracious and majestic gesture and tell our brave men and all my good subjects wherever you go that when I have not a soldier left I shall put myself at the head of my beloved nobility and my good peasants and so u e the l t resources of my empire It still

turning on the weather and mutual acquaintances, now turned in Moscow then from and Napoleon.

The society gathered together at the governor's was the best in Vorónezh.

There were a great many ladies and some of Nicholas' Moscow acquaintances, but there were no men who could at all vie with the cavalier of St. George, the hussar remount officer, the good-natured and well-bred Count Rostóv. Among the men was an Italian prisoner, an officer of the French army, and Nicholas felt that the presence of that prisoner enhanced his own importance as a Russian hero. The Italian was, as it were, a war trophy. Nicholas felt this, it seemed to him that everyone regarded the Italian in the same light, and he treated him cordially, though with dignity and restraint.

As soon as Nicholas entered in his hussar uniform, diffusing around him a fragrance of perfume and wine, and had uttered the words "better late than never" and heard them repeated several times by others, people clustered around him, all eyes turned on him, and he felt at once that he had entered into his proper position in the province—that of a universal favorite: a very pleasant position, and intoxicating after his long privations. At post stations, inns, and in the landowners' manor houses, maidservants had been flattered by his notice, and here too at the governor's party there were (as it seemed to Nicholas) an inexhaustible number of pretty young women, married and unmarried, impatiently awaiting his notice. The women and girls flirted with him and, from the first day, the old people concerned themselves to get this fine young daredevil of a hussar married and settled down. Among these was the governor's wife herself, who welcomed Rostóv as a near relation and called him "Nicholas."

Catherine Petróvna did actually play valses and écossaises and dancing began, in which Nicholas still further captivated the provincial society by his agility. He particularly free manner of dancing even surprised them all. Nicholas was himself rather surprised at the way he danced that evening. He had never danced like that in Moscow and would even have considered such a very free and easy manner improper and in bad form, but here he felt it incumbent on him to astonish them all by something unusual, something they would have to accept as the regular thing in the capital though new to them in the provinces.

All the evening Nicholas paid attention to a blue-eyed, plump and pleasing little blonde, the wife of one of the provincial officials. With the naïve conviction of young men in a merry mood that other men's wives were created for them, Rostóv did not leave the lady's side and treated her husband in a friendly and conspiratorial style, as if without speaking of it they knew how capitally Nicholas and the lady would get on together. The husband, however, did not seem to share that conviction and tried to behave morosely with Rostóv. But the latter's good-natured naïveté was so boundless that sometimes even he involuntarily yielded to Nicholas' good humor. Toward the end of the evening, however, as the wife's face grew more flushed and animated, the husband became more and more melancholy and solemn, as though there were but a given amount of animation between them and as the wife's share increased the husband's diminished.

CHAPTER V

NICHOLAS SAT leaning slightly forward in an armchair, bending closely over the blonde lady and paying her mythological compliments with

outlines of his legs in their well-fitting Hessian boots, Nicholas told the blonde lady that he wished to run away with a certain lady here in Vorónezh.

"Which lady?"

"A charming lady, a divine one. Her eyes (Nicholas looked at his partner) are blue, her mouth coral and ivory; her figure (he glanced at her shoulders) like Diana's."

The husband came up and sullenly asked his wife what she was talking about.

"Ah, Nikíta Iványch!" cried Nicholas, rising

The husband smiled gloomily, the wife gaily. The governor's good-natured wife came up with a look of disapproval.

"Anna Ignátyevna wants to see you, Nicholas," said she, pronouncing the name so that Nicholas at once understood that Anna Ignátyevna was a very important person. "Come, Nicholas! You know you let me call you so?"

"Oh, yes, Aunt. Who is she?"

"Anna Ignátyevna Malvíntseva. She has heard from her niece how you rescued her. Can you guess?"

... the state of Russia he would have said that it was not his business to think about it that Kutuzov and others were there for that purpose but that he had heard that the regiments were to be made up to their full strength that fighting would probably go on for a long time yet and that things being so it was quite likely he might be in command of a regiment in a couple of years time

As he looked at the matter in this way he learned that he was being sent to Voronezh to buy remounts for his division not only without regret at being prevented from taking part in the coming battle but with the greatest pleasure—which he did not conceal and which his comrades fully understood

A few days before the battle of Borodinó Nicholas received the necessary money and warrants and having sent some hu...

... months continuously in an atmosphere of campaigning and war—can understand the delight Nicholas felt when he escaped from the region covered by the ...

... camp—he saw villages with peasants and peasant women gentlemen's country houses fields where cattle were grazing posthouses with stationmasters asleep in them he rejoiced as though seeing all this for the first time What for a long while specially surprised and delighted him were the women young and healthy without a dozen officers making up to each of them women too who were pleased and flattered that a passing officer should joke with them

In the highest spirits Nicholas arrived at night at a hotel in Voronezh ordered things he had long been deprived of in camp and next day very clean shaven and in a full dress uniform he had not worn for a long time went to present himself to the authorities

The commander of the militia was a civilian general an old man who was evidently pleased with his military designation and rank He received Nicholas brusquely (imagining this to be characteristically military) and questioned him with an important air as if considering the general progress of affairs and approving and disapproving with full right to do so Nicholas was in such good spirits that this merely amused him

From the commander of the militia he drove to the governor The governor was a brisk little man very simple and affable He indicated the stud farms at which Nicholas might procure horses recommended to him a horse dealer in the town and a landowner fourteen miles out of town who had the best horses and promised to assist him in every way

You are Count Ilyá Rostov's son? My wife was a great friend of your mother's We are at home on Thursdays—today is Thursday so please come and see us quite informally said the governor taking leave of him

Immediately on leaving the governor's Nicholas hired post horses and taking his squadron quartermaster with him drove at a gallop to the landowner fourteen miles ...

... state of mind everything went well and easily

The landowner to whom Nicholas went was a bachelor an old cavalryman a horse fancier a sportsman the possessor of some century-old brandy and some old Hungarian wine who had a snuggery where he smoked and who owned some splendid horses

In very few words Nicholas bought seventeen picked stallions for six thousand rubles—to serve as he said as samples of his remounts After dining and taking rather too much of the Hungarian wine Nichola...

... over abominable roads in the brightest frame of mind continually urging on the driver so as to be in time for the governor's party

When he had changed poured water over his head and scented himself Nicholas arrived at the governor's rather late but with the phrase better late than never on his lips

It was not a ball nor had dancing been announced but everyone knew that Catherine Petróvna would play valses and the *éco...ase* on the clavichord and that there would be dancing and so everyone had come as to a ball

Provincial life in 1812 went on very much as usual but with this difference that it was livelier in the towns in consequence of the arrival of many wealthy families ...

... spirit and the ... small talk instead of

see I never told this to nyone and never will, only to you.

The governor wif pressed his elbow gratefully

"You know So ya my cous n I love her and promised to marry her and w ll do so. So you see there ca be no question bout— said Nicholas incoherently and blush

"M dear bo what wa to look t t You know So ya has nothing nd ou yourself sa your Papa s fairs are in very bad wa And what bout your mother It would kill her that or thing And what sort of l f would it be for So ya—I s s g l w th heart? Your mother in despair and ou all ruined. No, my dear yo and S ya ought to understand that.

Nicholas remained sile t. It comforted him to hear these arguments.

All th same A t, t is imposs ble he rejoined with h, after short pause Besides, would th princess ha e me And bes des, she is now in mourning How can one think of it?"

"But you don t suppose I m go ng to get ou married t once There is always right way f doing things repl ed the go erno wife.

"What matchmaker ou are Aunt said Nicholas, kissing her pl mp l ttl ha d.

CHAPTER VI

On reaching Moscow after her meet ng with Rostó Pri cess Mary had f und her nephew there with his tutor nd letter from Prince Andrew giving her nstructions how o get to her Aunt Mal intseva V ro ezh. That feeling ki t temptation which had t rmen ed her during her f ther ll ess, nce his death, nd especiall ce her meeti w th Rosto was smothered by arrangem nts for th jour ney nx ety bou her brother settlin n a new hous meeting ew peopl and end ing to her ephew education. Sh was sad. Now f er month passed n qu et sur roundings, s l l more and mo e deepl the loss f her father wh ch wa ssoc ed n her mind with th ru n f Russia. She was agita ed nd incessa l ortured by th thought of th dangers wh ch her brother the onl n uma person now rema n, to her was ex posed. She was worri d too b t her nephew educa ion for which sh had always f lt her self incompe ent, bu t depths f her soul s fel peac — pea ari from con scious ess l having stifled those personal dreams and hopes tha had been on the point of awaken ng w th n her a d were related to her meeting w th Rost v

Th day fter her p rty the governor s w fe came to see M l intseva nd, after discuss ng her plan w th the u t, rema ked that though under present circumsta ces formal betrothal was, of course n t to be thought of all the same the young people m ght be brought together nd could get to know o nother M l intseva expressed ppro al and the go erno s wife began to peak f Rostó n Mary presence prais n him and tell how h had — wa men-

tranquill t was destroyed, and desires doubts, self reproach, and hopes reawoke.

During the two days that elapsed bef re Rost called, Princess Mary continually thought of how she ought to beha to h m. F t she decided not to come to the drawing room when h called to see her unt—that t would n t be proper for her n her deep mourn to rece e s t rs, th n he thought this would be rude after what he had done fo her th en t occurred to her that her unt nd th go er no s w f had tentions concern ng herself and Rost —their looks d words t times seemed to co firm this uppos tion—then he told herself that o l he w th her ful na ture could think this of them they could ot forget that tua ed as he was, wh le t ll wear ing deep mourn g, uch matchmaking would be n nsult t her nd to her father memory Assumi that she d d go down to see h m, Pri cess Mary ima ned th word h would sa o her and what he would sa to f m, a d

But when on Sunda after church the foot man announced n th drawing room that Count Rostov had called, the princess showed no co fusion, o l light b ush suffused her cheeks d her eyes lit up with new nd ra dia t l ht.

"You ha met him, Aunt said sh n a calm ce unabl herself t understa d that h could be outwardly so calm and na ural.

Wh n Rostó entered the room th princess dropped her eyes f an instant, as f to give th tor tim to greet her un and th n just Nicholas turned to her she raised her head and met his look w th hining eyes. W th a

I rescued such a lot of them' said Nicholas

Her niece Princess Bolkónskaya She is here in Vorónezh with her aunt Oho! How you blush Why are ?

Not a bit! Please don t Aunt!

Very well very well! Oh what a fellow you are!

The governor s wife led him up to a tall and very stout old lady with a blue headdress who had just finished her game of cards with the most important personages of the town This was Malvíntseva Princess Mary s aunt on her mother s side a rich childless widow who always lived in Vorónezh When Rostóv approached her she was standing settling up for the game She looked at him and screwing up her eyes sternly continued to upbraid the general who had won from her

Very pleased *mon cher* she then said holding out her hand to Nicholas Pray come and see me

Af f a d

knew of Prince Andrew who also was evidently no favorite of hers the important old lady dismissed Nicholas after repeating her invitation to come to see her

Nicholas promised to come and blushed

stand

When he had parted from Malvíntseva Nicholas wished to return to the dancing but the governor s little wife placed her plump hand on his sleeve and saying that she wanted to have a talk with him led him to her sitting room from which those who were there immediately withdrew so as not to be in her way

Do you know dear boy began the governor s wife with a serious expression on her kind little face that really would be the match for you would you like me to arrange it?

Whom do you mean Aunt? asked Nicholas

I will make a match for you with the prin

What a charming girl she is really! And she is not at all so plain either

Not at all replied Nicholas as if offended at the idea As befits a soldier Aunt I don t force myself on anyone or refuse anything he said before he had time to consider what he was saying

Well then remember this is not a joke!

Of course not!

Yes yes the governor s wife said as if talking to herself But my dear boy among other things you are too attentive to the other the blonde One is sorry for the husband really

Oh no we are good friends with him said Nicholas in the simplicity of his heart it did not enter his head that a pastime so pleasant to himself might not be pleasant to someone else

But what nonsense I have been saying to the governor s wife! thought Nicholas suddenly at supper She will really begin to arrange a match and Sónya ? And on taking leave of the governor s wife when she again smilingly said to him Well then remember! he drew her aside

But see here to tell you the truth Aunt

What is it my dear? Come let s sit down here said she

Nicholas suddenly felt a desire and need to tell his most intimate thoughts (which he would not have told to his mother his sister or his friend) to this woman who was almost a stranger When he afterwards recalled that impulse to unsolicited and inexplicable frankness which had very important results for him it seemed to him—as it seems to everyone in such cases—that it was merely some silly whim that seized him yet that burst of frankness together with other trifling events had immense consequences for him and for all his family

You see Aunt Mamma has long wanted me to marry an heiress but the very idea of marrying for money is repugnant to me

Oh yes I understand said the governor s wife

But Princess Bolkónskaya—that s another matter I will tell you the truth In the first place I like her very much I feel drawn to her and then after I met her under such circumstances—so strangely the idea often occurred to me 'This is fate' Especially if you remember that Mamma had long been thinking of it but I had never happened to meet her before somehow it had always happened that we did not meet And as long as my sister Natásha wa gaged to her brother it was of course out of the question for me to think of marrying her And it must needs happen that I should meet her just when Natásha s engagement had been broken off and then everything So you

m and he fte tho ght bout her B t he n th ght bo t her s he h d th ught of n w h m

CHAPTER VII

h tl f B d nó

d o ly f m the G tt d h o d fi t ew f h m p p d (so N chol s h d h h d n t n he ga l mself) to et ff sear h f P n A d ew

Wh h e ed th n w of the b ttle f Bo od ó d th b d nme t of M sc w Rostó was t se d w th desp g r the des e f g y f l g f tl t k d, b t everyth n n Vo ó e h dd nly seemed t h m d ll d u esom d h e per en d d fi t f l g f h m d kward Th co rs t n h heard f w h w

gry th h servant d squ dr n qu termas t

A few days bef h dep rtur a p cial th k t wh h N h las was p es nt, held th cath dral f th Rus n c tory H tood l ttl beh d the g n nd h ld l mself w th m l t ry d corum th gh th erv e med t gr t ar ty of bj ts. Wh n th erv wa the go ern f be k ed h m to h

H y u see he p ess? he k d d cat g w h m ment f her he d l dy ta d g th ppos e d bey nd the h

Nicl olas mmed ately rec gn zed Pr ncess Mary not so much by the pr f le he saw under h t by the feel ng f sol c tude t ——

bef e lea i g the chu u

N chol looked at her f c th surp e It w the s m f ce he l ad seen before tl ere

te y r

o ol rrow p ayer and h pe in it As h d o curr d before wl en she w s prese t N *cho*la went up t her w th ut wait ng to be k o m w fe and n t ask

g p both her sorrow and he joy

"The e is e th ng I wanted t tell you

G *tt* a h s col l

The p ncess looked t h m not grasp g wh t h was s y ng but chee ed by th e pres n of regretful symp thy on his f ce

And I h e known so m y cases f a pl n te wound (the G *ett* s d it wa shell) e the p g f tal at on o be g very sl ght cont nued N h l s We must hope f th be t a d I m su e

Pri es M ry t rrupted h m

Oh th t w uld b so d e d he began d p e nt d by g cat o f m fi h g he b t he head w th mo eme t as gra ef l as ev ryth ng he d d h p ese ce d look g up at h m grateful lly w nt o t f llow g he unt.

Th t even g N ch las d d not g ut but tay d t hom t settle some acc ts w th th h rse d l rs Wh n he had f nish d th t bus es t was l dy *too l te t* go ywhe e but t ll too ly t g to bed and f l g t me he p d up d d wn the oom efl t ing on h l fe a th her ely d d

Pri es M ry h d made n greeable im p ss n n h m when h h d m t her n Smo lé k pr vince His ha g cou ter d her n h pt n l cumsta ces and his m ther ha g t n t m m nt oned her to h m as good m t h h d d wn his p rt cul tt t n to her Wh n h met her gain in

movement full of dignity and grace she half rose with a smile of pleasure held out her slender delicate hand to him and began to speak in a voice in which for the first time new deep womanly notes vibrated Mademoiselle Bourienne who was in the drawing room looked at Princess Mary in bewildered surprise Herself a consummate coquette she could not have maneuvered better on meeting a man she wished to attract

Either black is particularly becoming to her or she reall ...
my having not
and grace! the

Had Princes
at that momer ... re
surprised than Mademoiselle Bourienne at the change that had taken place in herself From the moment she recognized that dear loved face a new life force took possession of her and compelled her to speak and act apart from her own will From the time Rostóv entered her face became suddenly transformed It was as if a light had been kindled in a carved and painted lantern and the intricate skillful artistic work on its sides that previously seemed dark coarse and meaningless was suddenly shown up in unexpected and striking beauty For the first time all that pure spiritual inward travail through which she had lived appeared on the surface All her inward labor her dissatisfaction with herself her sufferings her strivings after goodness her meekness love and self sacrifice—all this now shone in those radiant eyes in her delicate smile and in every trait of her gentle face

Rostóv saw all this as clearly as if he had known her whole life He felt that the being before him was quite different from and better than anyone he had met before and above all better than himself

Their conversation was very simple and unimportant They spoke of the war ...

... to change the ...

... ing the conversation as soon as her aunt mentioned Andrew Evidently she could speak of Russia s misfortunes with a certain artificiality but her brother was too near her heart and she neither could nor would speak lightly of him Nicholas noticed this as he noticed every shade of Princess Mary s character with an ob-

... extraordinary being Nicholas blushed and was confused when people spoke to him about the princess (as she did when he was mentioned) and even when he thought of her but in her presence he felt quite at ease and said not at all what he had prepared but what quite appropriately occurred to him at the moment

When a pause occurred during ...
d
re ... asking whether he would like to be an hussar He took the bo ...

s ... boy she loved in the arms of the man she loved Nicholas also noticed that look and as if understanding it flushed with pleasure and began to kiss the boy with good natured playfulness

As she was in mourning Princess Mary did not go out into society and Nicholas did not think it the proper thing to visit her again but all the same the governor s wife went on with her matchmaking passing on to Nicholas the flattering things Princess Mary said of him and vice versa and insisting on his declaring himself to Princess Mary For this purpose she arranged a meeting between the young people at the bishop s house before Mass

Though Rostóv told the governor s wife that he would not make any declaration to Princess Mary he promised to go

As at Tilsit Rostóv had not allowed himself to doubt that what everybody considered right was right so ...
gle between
own sense o
sion to circumstances he chose the latter and yielded to the power he felt irres ...

... to declare his feelings to Princess Mary And he knew that he would never act basely But he also knew (or rather felt at the bottom of his heart) that by resigning himself now to the force of circumstances and to those who were guiding him he was not only doing nothing wrong but was doing something very very important—more important than anything he had ever done in his life

After meeting Princess Mary though the course of his life went on externally as before all his former amusements lost their charm for

I wo ld be too p f I m to think th t I might be cause f sorrow disco d th f m il tha has been so good t m (h wro) d m lov has no im b t th h ppiness f those I love so N ch l I beg y t con der y rself free and t be ass ed th t i p f everyth g on ca lov y m tha does

Y x Só

Both letters were wr tten fr m Tró tsa The oth from th ountess described th la t days Moscow th d p rture th fire and the destruct n of ll their pr perty In this letter th co tes also ment ned that P ce A drew a mo the w unded tra el g with them h state was ery crit cal but the docto said th re was w mo e h p Só ya d N tásha were urs n h m

Next day N h la took his m ther l tt

Nichola sudde y beca e

th the p n es as f they were r l t ns

Th f ll w day h saw Pr cess M ry ff m her journey to Yaroslá l d few days later l ft jo n his regim nt.

CHAPTER VIII

So YA S LETTER wr t en f m T ó tsa which had come as n wer t N hol prayer was prompted by th th th u ht of gett N h la married to he es occup ed the old oun ess m d m nd m Sh knew that S yawa th chi f bsta l t thi happen nd S ya l f the cou es h use h d grown ha der d harder especially after th y had recei ed l f m N ch las t ll g of h meeti g w th Pr ess Mary n Bo u háro-

Th co tes l t no occas l p of mak humil g cru l llu ons o Sónya.

P few day bef they l ft Moscow moved d excited by ll th t was g she called Só to her d. tead f e p oa h nd mak dem ds her ea full mpl ed her o sacr fi herself d pay all that h f m ly had d f her by b eak ff her engagem t w th N h las

I hall be peace till u p mise m this.

S burst to hy t cal tears d repl ed hrou h her sobs that h w ld d anythi g d p p ed for ythi bu ga n ctual p m se d co ld n bri herself to dec d d what wa dem ded of her She m st sacr fi l erself f th fam ly that had ea ed d bro ht her p To sacr fi her self f r others was Sónya s hab t. Her pos t on in the house was such that o ly by sacr f ce could she show he w rtl and she wa cus- tomed to th s and lo ed do ng t. B t n all her f rmer a ts f elf-sacrifice h h d been hap- hey ra sed her in l er own de h r dm re w tl ey th n nyth g t w t d h r to sacr f e the ery th that con st tuted the whol reward fo her elf-sacr fice nd th wl ol mean n of her l fe And for the first t me he felt b tterness aga n t those wl o h d been her benef ct rs o ly to t rtu e her them m re p infull she f lt jealous of N tá ha who h d never exper enced nyth ng of tl s sort had never needed to sacr fce herself but mad others sacr fic themsel es f r her I yet was bel ed by everybody And f r the first t me Só y felt that out of her pure qu et l e f N ch las pass te feel g was begin n ng t grow up wh ch wa str ger than p cipl rt e o rel g n Under tl e fl e e of this feel g S ya whose l fe of d pe de e had ta ght her l tar ly t be secr t e ha n wered th u tes n vague g eral d esol ed

he heard of P And ew p esence n th

N tásh lo ed n o e but Pri c And ew a d had never ceased to l h m. Sh k ew that be thrown together a under u l ter rible cumsta ces they w uld a fall n l w th o nother d that N h las would the n t be ble to marry P es M ry as they w uld be w th n th p l b ted degr es of affi ty Desp t ll tl terr of what had h ppe ed d those last da d d the first day of the jo rney th feel that P ov de ce was ters n g n her person l aff rs cheered So y

At th T ó tsa m nastery the Rost s first b k th ir j urney f wh l day

Three la g ooms were as gned to them n the m n tery l ost lry of wh ch was oc cup ed by Pr n Andrew The w u ded man

Vorónezh the impression she made on him was not merely pleasing but powerful Nicholas had been struck by the peculiar moral beauty he observed in her at this time He was however preparing to go away and it had not entered his head to regret that he was thus depriving himself of chances of meeting her But that day s encounter in church had he felt sunk deeper than was desirable for his peace of mind That pale sad refined face that radiant look those gentle graceful gestures and

the expression of a higher spiritual life (that was why he did not like Prince Andrew) and he referred to it contemptuously as philosophy and dreaminess but in Princess Mary that very sorrow which revealed the depth of a whole spiritual world foreign to him was an irresistible attraction

She must be a wonderful woman A real angel! he said to himself Why am I not free? Why was I in such a hurry with Sónya? And he involuntarily compared the two the lack of spirituality in the one and the abundance of it in the other—a spirituality he himself lacked and therefore valued most highly He tried to picture what would happen were he free How he would propose to her and how she would become his wife But no he could not imagine that He felt awed and no clear picture presented itself to his mind He had long ago pictured to himself a future with Sónya and that was all clear and simple just because it had all been thought out and he knew all there was in Sónya but it was impossible to picture a future with Princess Mary because he did not understand her but simply loved her

Reveries about Sónya had had something merry and playful in them but to dream of Princess Mary was always difficult and a little frightening

How she prayed! he thought. It was plain that her whole soul was in her prayer Yes that was the prayer that moves mountains and I am sure her prayer will be answered Why don t I pray for what I want? he suddenly thought What do I want? To be free released from Sonya She was right he thought remembering what the governor s wife had said

Besides I don t love her—not as I should O God! release me from this dreadful inextricable position! he suddenly began to pray Yes prayer can move mountains but one must have faith and not pray as Natásha and I used to as children that the snow might turn into sugar—and then run out into the yard to see whether it had done so No but I am not praying for trifles now he thought as he put his pipe down in a corner and folding his hands placed himself before the icon Softened by memories of Princess Mary he began to pray as he had not done for a long time Tears were in his eyes and in his throat when the door opened and Lavrushka came in with some papers

Blockhead! Why do you come in without being called? cried Nicholas quickly changing his attitude

From the governor said Lavrushka in a sleepy voice A courier has arrived and there s a letter for you

Well all right thanks You can go!

Nicholas took the two letters one of which was from his mother and the other from Sónya He recognized them by the handwriting and opened Sónya s first He had read only a few lines when he turned pale and his eyes opened wide with fear and joy

No it s not possible! he cried aloud

Unable to sit still he paced up and down the room holding the letter and reading it He glanced through it then read it again and then again and standing still in the middle of the room he raised his shoulders stretching out his hands with his mouth wide open and his eyes fixed What he had just been praying for with confidence that God would hear him had come to pass but Nicholas was as much astonished as if it were something extraordinary and unexpected and as if the very fact that it had happened so quickly proved that it had not come from God to whom he had prayed but by some ordinary coincidence

This unexpected and as it seemed to Nicholas quite voluntary letter from Sónya freed him from the knot that fettered him and from which there had seemed no escape She wrote that the last unfortunate events—the loss of almost the whole of the Rostóvs Moscow property—and the countess repeatedly expressed wish that Nicholas should marry Princess Bolkónskaya together with his silence and coldness of late had all combined to make her decide to release him from his promise and set him completely free

th myster ou fulfillm nt he had ju t een of her is. n.\ w that she k ew that the re al I \ tásha rel t s w th Pr nce \ d w \ m m rrs Pri

t

marnan mous deed— nt rrupted se t urs by the tears that d mmed her l ty bl ck eyes—she te that t uch letter the rr al I hich had so mazed \ ch las.

CHAPTER IX

THE O FICER A D SOLDIERS wh had arrested P erre treated him w th hostil ty but yet w th respect, in the guardh us t wh h h wa taken. I th ir tutude t ward h m could st'll be f t both ncerta nty as to who h m ht be —perhaps ery mporta t person— nd hostil ty as a result of th ir ece t personal confl ct w th him.

B t hen th ouard was rel es ed next morn P erre felt that fo th new guard—both officers and men—h as t terest g as b had bee t his capt rs nd n f ct th guard f th seco d da d d ot recogn e this bi sto t man peasant co t the o ous person wh had f ght so desperat ly w th the marauder nd th co oy d had uttered those solemn w rds bout sa child they saw in him nly No. of the captured Rus sia s. arrested d d tai ed f some reason b rder f the H her Command. If they noti ed anyth rema kabl bout P err t was l his unab shed med tat con entra tio d th htf l ess, d th way he pok Fre ch, which tru k them urpri ngly good. I sp t f this he was pl ced th day w th th ther arrested uspects, the ep ra room he had occup ed was equired by an ucer

All the Russians *confined* w th P erre were men f th lowest cl ss nd recogn zi him as gentlema they all o ded h m m es pecially he pok French. P erre f lt sad t hearing them *mak* f n of him.

Tha eve he learned hat ll thes pris oners (b probably amo th m) w re to be tried f endiari m. On th third day h was taken w th th others t h use wher F ench ge eral w th wh mu tach sa w th two lo f d th F chmen w th scarves th arms. W th th prec n d d fi t es cus mary n dd ess n p iso rs, d wh h is pposed to p ecl d human frailty

P erre l ke the others was quest ed s to who he was where he had been w th what object, a d so on

These quest ns l'ke questio s put at tri l gen rally left the esse ce of the m tter s de h t ut the poss b'l ty of that essence s be ng revealed nd were des gned only to f rm h n el throu h wh ch the judges wished the n ers of the ccused to fl w so s t lead to

m ed nd the w te could flow to w e. e e f lt moreo e what the accu ed alwa s feel t their trial perplex ty as to why these quest n w re put to h m. He h d feel n th t it was only out of *condescen n or a k d f ci l ty* that th s dev ce f pl cing a chann l was em pl yed. He knew he wa n these men s power that only by force had they bro ght h m there that f rce al ne ga e them the r ht to de mand nswers to the quest ns, a d th t the sole object of that ssembly was t i culp te h m. And so as they had th power and wish t nculp t h m, thi expedi nt of an nqu ry a d trial seemed un ecessary It was e de t that ny nswer would l d to con ction When asked what he was d ng when he was arrested P erre pl ed in rather tragic man ner that he was estori g t ts p re ts a ch ld h had sa ed f om th flames. Why had he fought the marauder? P erre answered th t he was protecti g w man d that to pro tect woman who was be g ulted was the duty f every man that They terrupted him f th was not t th po nt. Why was he n the yard of burn ng hous where w tnesses h d een him. H repl ed that he had gone out to see what was happen n Moscow Again they nterrupted him they h d n t asked where h was go g but why h wa fo nd near the fire. Who was he? they asked, epea their *first* quest n which he had de l ed t n w A a n he repl ed th t he could ot nsw r t.

Put th t d wn that s bad very bad," rnly rema ked th general w th the white mustach d red flushed f

O the f urth day fires broke out on the Zubo ki rampart

P rre d thirteen others were mo ed to th coach house of a mercha t house near the Crimea bridge. On h way throu h the treets P erre felt tifled by th moke wh ch seemed to han er th whole city F res were

1

was much better that day and Natásha was sit ting with him In the next room sat the count and countess respectfully conversing with the prior who was calling on them as old acquaint ances and benefactors of the monastery Són ya was there too tormented by curiosity as to what Prince Andrew and Natásha were talking about She heard the sound of their voices through the door That door opened and Na tásha came out looking excited Not noticing the monk who had risen to greet her and was drawing back the wide sleeve on his right arm she went up to Sónya and took her hand

Natásha what are you about? Come here! said the countess

Natásha went up to the monk for his bless ing and he advised her to turn for aid to God and His saint

he

the [illegible]

Sonya will he live? she asked Sónya how happy I am and how unhappy! Són ya dovey everything is as it used to be If only he lives! He cannot because because of and Natásha burst into tears

Yes! I knew it! Thank God! murmured Sónya He will live

Sónya was not less agitated than her friend by the latter s fear and grief and by her own personal feelings which she shared with no one Sobbing she kissed and comforted Natá sha If only he lives! she thought Having wept talked and wiped away their [illegible]

[illegible]

Prince Andrew was lying raised high on three pillows His pale face was calm his eyes closed and they could see his regular breath ing

O Natásha! Sónya suddenly almost screamed catching her companion s arm and stepping back from the door

What? What is it? asked Natásha

It s that that said Sonya with a white face and trembling lips

Natásha softly closed the door and went with Sónya to the window not yet understanding what the latter was telling her

You remember said Sónya with a solemn and frightened expression You remember when I looked in the mirror for you at Otrádnoe at Christmas? Do you remember what I saw?

Yes yes! cried Natásha opening her eyes wide and vaguely recalling that Sónya had told her something about Prince Andrew whom she had seen lying down

You remember? Sónya [illegible]

[illegible] that he had his eyes closed and was covered just with a pink quilt and that his hands were folded she concluded convincing herself that the details she had just seen were exactly what she had seen in the mirror

She had in fact seen nothing then but had mentioned the first thing that came into her head but what she had invented then seemed to her now as real as any other recollection She not only remembered what she had then said—that he turned to look at her and smiled and was covered with something red—but was firmly convinced that she had then seen and said that he was covered with a pink quilt and that his eyes were closed

Yes yes it really was pink! cried Natásha who now thought she too remembered the word pink being used and saw in this the most extraordinary and mysterious part of the prediction

But what does it mean? she added medita tively

Oh I don t know it is all so strange re plied Sónya clutching at her head

A few minutes later Prince Andrew rang and Natásha went to him but Sónya feeling unusually excited and touched remained at the window thinking about the strangeness of what had occurred

They had an opportunity that day to send letters to the army and the countess was writ ing to her son

Sónya! said the countess raising her eyes from her letter as her niece passed Sónya won t you write to Nicholas? She spoke in a soft tremulous voice and in the weary eyes that looked over her spectacles Sónya read all that the countess meant to convey with these words Those eyes expressed entreaty shame at having to ask fear of a refusal [illegible]

Yes Mamma I will write said she

Sónya was softened excited and touched by all that had occurred that day especially by

of ttering d To h m Da out was not mer ly F h g n al b t a man t rous f r his cru lty Look g t h s old f e a he sat l ke tern l oolm st r who was p ep red to wait hile f r ns e P rr felt that every t ta t of del y n ght cost h m h l fe but he d d t k w h t to y He d l t ture to repeat wh t he h d sa d t l first ex m t y t t d scl h ra k d pos u a da g us d embarrass g So he

P err

Th ch ll that had b e ru g d wn P rre b k ow e ed his head as n a v e

"I ca t k w m General I ha e nev er seen y u

He s Russ n py D out nterrupted ddress g th g eral wh was p ese t b t h m P rr h d n t t ced

D t t rned y W th an unexp ted everberat h c P erre rap dly be ga

N m se gneu h sa d udde ly e member g t l D t wa d k N m n se m ur y ca t l known me I m mil t ff er d h n t qu tted Mo w

Y mez sked D t

Bezukh

d th lo k sa ed P e. Apart f m d t f d l w th t look est bl hed hu ma rel b t e th tw m At th t m m t m mber of th s p ed d m l tl h both tl m d d they re ed tl t tl w b t tl c l ldr n of h ty d er b tl rs

At tl first gl wh D th d ly ra sed l head from l e p p rs wher h m aff rs d l es e l cated by umbers P err m l cum ta d D ut co ld ha h t l m w tl t bu d l is co sc e w th e l deed but w l w n h m h m be H r fl t d f mo m t

H ca y h m th t y u t ll th truth sa d D t ldly

P erre remembered R mb ll nd med h m nd h s reg me t and the street where the house v s

You a e n t wh t you say returned Da vo t

I a trembl ng falter g ce P erre bega addu ng p oofs of the truth of h s st tement

But t th t moment n lj tant entered and repo ted someth ng to D vo t

D out br htened p t the news tl e d jut nt br ught d began butt ng up h s un f rm It seemed that he had q te forgotten P rre

When the adjutant em nded l m of the priso er he j rked h head n P erre s d c t w th frown a d o dered him to be led way B t wl re they ere to take l m P erre

F eld

He turned his head d saw th t the adju t nt w putt ng a tl er q est on to D o t

Yes of course! epl ed D out b t what th yes meant P erre d d n t kn

P err co ld n t fterwa ds remembe h w h we t whetl r t w fa o v h ch d ec t n H f cult es wer qu te numbed, he st p fied nd n t eing n th g a u d l

the m tl comm ss n tl t l d f rst m ed l m—n t ne of tl em l d l ed to o ev de tly ld h e d e t. It not D ut who l d looked at l m t t so l uman a w y I a ther moment D ut w uld h l ed th t h was do g wro g b t just then th dj t t l d come n a d nt rr pted h m Th lj t t, lo had e de tly l d no e l te t th gh he m ht ha e refra d f m c m g Tl en who as e ecut g h m k ll g l m dep g h m of l fe—l m P erre w th all h mem es p rat ns l pes and th gl t? Who w d g tl And P rre felt th t t w s o e

It was tem— concurr f ci cum t n es

A sy t m of som sort w k ll g l m—P erre—dep g h m f l fe of e eryth n ann h l t g h m.

CHAPTER XI

FRO PR S CHER ATOV h use the pris- o ers we e led t ght d th V rgi F eld t tl e l ft of the nery as f as kitch n

visible on all sides He did not then realize the significance of the burning of Moscow and looked at the fires with horror

He passed four days in the coach house near the Crimean bridge and during that time learned from the talk of the French soldiers that all those confined there r t

I so uiers Evidently for them the marshal represented a very high and rather mysterious power

These first days before the eighth of September when the prisoners were had up for a second examination were the hardest of all for Pierre

CHAPTER X

ON THE EIGHTH OF SEPTEMBER an officer—a very important one judging by the respect the guards showed him—entered the coach house where the prisoners were This officer probably someone on the staff was holding a paper in his hand and called over all the Russians there naming Pierre as the man who does not give his name Glancing indolently and indifferently at all the prisoners he ordered the officer in charge to have them decently dressed and tidied up before taking them to the marshal An hour later a sou d of

c tang low as on the day when Pierre had been taken from the guardhouse on the Zubovski rampart but rose through the pure air in columns No flames were seen but columns of smoke rose on all sides and all Moscow as far as Pierre could see was one vast charred ruin On all sides there were waste spaces with only stoves and chimney stacks still standing and here and there the blackened walls of some brick houses Pierre gazed at the ruins and did not recognize districts he had known well Here and there he could see churches that had not been burned The Krém

c ugin glittered brightly and its bells were ringing particularly clearly These bells reminded Pierre that it was Sunday and the feast of the Nativity of the Virgin But there seemed to be no one to celebrate this holiday everywhere were blackened ruins and the few Russians to be seen were tattered and frightened people who tried to hide when they saw the French

It was plain that the Russian nest was ruined and destroyed but in place of the Russian order of life that had been destroyed Pierre unconsciously felt that a quite different firm French order had been establisl l c

, ere escorting him and the other criminals he felt it in the looks of an important French official in a carriage and pair driven by a soldier whom they met on the way He felt it in the merry sounds of regimental music he heard from the left side of the field and felt and realized it especially from the l of

t | ice with dozens of other men and it seemed that they might have forgotten him or confused him with the others But no the answers he had given when questioned had come back to him in his designation as the man who does not give his name and under that appellation which to Pierre seemed terrible they were now leading him somewhere with unhesitating assurance on their faces that he and all the other prisoners were exactly the ones they wanted and that they were being taken to the proper place Pierre felt himself to be an insignificant chip fallen among the wheels of a machine whose action he did not understand but which was working well

He and the other prisoners were taken to the right side of the Virgin s Field to a large white house with an immense garden not far from the convent This was Prince Shcherbatov s house where Pierre had often been in other days and which as he learned from the talk of the soldiers was now occupied by the marshal the Duke of Eckmühl (Davout)

They were taken to the entrance and led into the house one by one Pierre was the sixth to enter He was conducted through a glass gallery an anteroom and a hall which were familiar to him into a long low study at the door of which stood an adjutant

Davout spectacles on nose sat bent over a table at the further end of the room Pierre went close up to him but Davout evidently consulting a paper that lay before him did not look up Without raising his eyes he said in a low voice

Who are you

Pierre was silent because he was incapable

Pierre was no longer able to turn away and close his eyes. His curiosity and agitation, like that of the whole crowd, reached the highest pitch at this fifth murder. Like the others this fifth man seemed calm: he wrapped his loose cloak closer and rubbed one bare foot with the other.

When they began to blindfold him he himself adjusted the knot which hurt the back of his head; then when they propped him against the bloodstained post, he leaned back and not ...

movement.

Probably a word of command was given and was followed by the reports of eight muskets, but try as he would Pierre could not afterwards remember having heard the slightest sound of the shots. He only saw how the workman suddenly sank down on the cords that held him, how blood showed itself in two places, how the ropes slackened under the weight of the hanging body, and how the workman sat down, his head hanging unnaturally and one leg bent under him. Pierre ran up to the post. No one hindered him. Pale, frightened people were doing something around the workman. The lower jaw of an old Frenchman with a thick mustache trembled as he untied the ropes. The body collapsed. The soldiers dragged it awkwardly from the post and began pushing it into the pit.

They all plainly and certainly knew that they were criminals who must hide the traces of their guilt as quickly as possible.

Pierre glanced into the pit and saw that the factory lad was lying with his knees close up to his head and one shoulder higher than the other. That shoulder rose and fell rhythmically and convulsively, but spadefuls of earth were already being thrown over the whole body. One of the soldiers, evidently suffering, shouted gruffly and angrily at Pierre to go back. But Pierre did not understand him and remained near the post, and no one drove him away.

When the pit had been filled up a command was given. Pierre was taken back to his place, and the rows of troops on both sides of the post made a half turn and went past it at a measured pace. The twenty-four sharpshooters with discharged muskets, standing in the center of the circle, ran back to their places as the companies passed by.

Pierre gazed now with dazed eyes at these sharpshooters who ran in couples out of the circle. All but one rejoined their companies.

"That will teach them to start fires," said one of the Frenchmen.

Pierre glanced round at the speaker and saw that it was a soldier who was trying to find some relief after what had been done, but was not able to do so. Without finishing what he had begun to say he made a hopeless movement with his arm and went away.

CHAPTER XII

After the execution Pierre was separated from the rest of the prisoners and placed alone in a small ruined and befouled church.

Toward evening a noncommissioned officer entered with two soldiers and told him that he had been pardoned and would now go to the barracks for the prisoners of war. Without understanding what was said to him Pierre got up and went with the soldiers. They took him to the upper end of the field where there were some sheds built of charred planks, beams, and battens, and led him into one of them. In the darkness some twenty different men surrounded Pierre. He looked at them without understanding who they were, why they were there, or what they wanted of him. He heard what they said but did not understand the meaning of the words and made no kind of deduction from or application of them. He replied to questions they put to him but did not consider who was listening to his replies, nor how they would understand them. He looked at their faces and figures but they all seemed to him equally meaningless.

From the moment Pierre had witnessed those terrible murders committed by men who did not wish to commit them, it was as if the mainspring of his life, on which everything depended and which made everything appear alive, had suddenly been wrenched out and everything had collapsed into a heap of meaningless rubbish. Though he did not acknowledge it to himself, his faith in the right order

garden in which a post had been set up Beyond that post a fresh pit had been dug in the ground and near the post and the pit a large crowd stood in a semicircle The crowd consisted of a few Russians and many of Napoleon s soldiers who were not on duty—Germans Italians and Frenchmen in a variety of uniforms To the right and left of the post stood rows of French troops in blue uniforms with red epaulets and high boots and shakos

The prisoners were placed in a certain order according to the list (Pierre was sixth) and were led to the post Several drums suddenly began to beat on both sides of them and at that sound Pierre f l

[illegible] nau to happen should happen quickly Pierre looked round at his fellow prisoners and scrutinized them

The two first were convicts with shaven heads One was tall and thin the other dark shaggy and sinewy with a flat nose The third was a domestic serf about forty five years old with grizzled hair and a plump well nourished body The fourth was a peasant a very handsome man with a broad light brown beard and black eyes The fifth was a factory hand a thin sallow faced lad of eighteen in a loose coat

Pierre heard the French consulting whether to shoot them separately or two at a time In couples replied the officer in command in a calm voice There was a stir in the ranks of the soldiers and it was evident that they were all hurrying—not as men hurry to do something they understand but as people hurry to finish a necessary but unpleasant and incomprehensible task

A French official wearing a scarf came up to the right of the row of prisoners and read out the sentence in Russian and in French

Then two pairs of Frenchmen approached the criminals and at the officer s command took the two convicts who stood first in the row The convicts stopped when they reached the post and while sacks were being brought looked dumbly around as a wounded beast looks at an approaching huntsman One crossed himself continually the other scratched his back and made a movement of the lips resembling a smile With hurried hands the soldiers blindfolded them drawing the sacks over their heads and bound them to the post

Twelve sharpshooters with muskets stepped out of the ranks with a firm regular tread and halted eight paces from the post Pierre turned away to avoid seeing what was goin to happen Suddenly a crackling rolling noise was heard which seemed to him louder than the most terrific thunder and he looked round There was some smoke and the Frenchmen were doing something near the pit with pale faces and trembling hands Two more prisoners were led up In the same way and with similar looks these two glanced vainly at [illegible]

[illegible] s going to happen to them They could not believe it because they alone knew what their life meant to them and so they neither understood nor believed that it could be taken from them

Again Pierre did not wish to look and again turned away but again the sound as of a frightful explosion struck his ear and at the same moment he saw smoke blood and the pale scared faces of the Frenchmen who were again doing something by the post their tremblin hands impeding one another Pierre breathing heavily looked around as if asking what it meant The same question was expressed in all the looks that met his

On the faces of all the Russ an [illegible]

[illegible] s i who! flashed for an instant through his mind

Sharpshooters of the 86th forward! shouted someone The fifth prisoner the one next to Pierre was led away—alone Pierre did not understand that he was saved that he and the rest had been brought there only to witness the execution With ever growing horror and no sense of joy or relief he gazed at what was taking place The fifth man was the factory lad in the loose cloak The moment they laid hands on him he sprang aside in terror and clutched at Pierre (Pierre shuddered and shook himself free) The lad was unable to walk They dragged him along holding him up under the arms and he screamed When they got him to the post he grew quiet as if he suddenly understood something Whether he understood that screaming was useless or whether he thought it incredible that men should kill him at any rate he took his stand at the post waiting to be blindfolded like the others and like a wounded animal looked around him with glittering eyes.

what sin h dded qu ckly and as h
t
t
your house"

No, I went to look t the fire and they arrested m there d tried me n ncend arr

"Where t ere l there nju tic put in the littl man.

A d have ou been here l n P erre ked as h m ched th last of the potat

I It wa la t Su l y they took me out of hosp tal Moscow

"Wh are you soldier th n

"Yes, we are sold rs of th Apsh ron regi ment. I wa dyi of fever W w n t told

eud tl wi h g t make t eas er for l to ddress h m. They call me l ttl f lcon n the room t. H w e to l elp feel g sad Mosc w–sh th mother f cit es. H can on see ll th nd n t feel sad B t the m got gna th cabbage y t d es f rst th t hat th ld f lk u ed to t ll u he dded rapidl

"What. What di l you say ked P erre.

"Who l sa d Kara ácv l say th ngs h p pen not w pl n but God judges h e pl ed, th k tha h wa repeat what he had sa d bef re. d mmedi t l co t nued

"W ll d you ha you f m l estat ur? A d hou So you ha e bund n th n? A d houses f And u ld par nts, re they t ll l ng h ked

And tho h wa too dark f P erre to see, h f l ha pp essed m l of kindl ess p ckered he sold l p h put hese q es ions. H seemed gr e ed tha P erre had pa ts. espec ll tha h h d n m ther

A w f fr nsel m ther n law f wel com b tl ere dea as o e wn mother sa d h W ll d ha you l ttle ones h w o k re

Aga P err negati n wer seemed to d ess h m nd h h ed dd

N er mind Y re yo n f lk yet nd please God m y till ha some. Th great thing l n harmo y

But t s all the same no I erre coul l not help say no

Ah, my dear f llow! rejo ed Karatáev never decl ne a pr son or a beggar s sack

He eated h m elf mo e comfortably and coughed e lently prepa g to t ll lon t ry

"Well my dear fellow I was t ll l n at home h began "We h d a well to-do hom tead plenty of land we peas nt l ed well d ou house wa one to th nk God f r When Fathe nd e went out mow n there were seven of us. We l ed well We we e real peas ts. It so h ppened

A d Pl t n K ratáev t ld a l ng st ry of l he h d gone to someon s copse to take wood how he h d been cau ht by the keeper had been tr ed flogged nd sent to serve a a sold e

"W ll l d nd a sm l ch ged the ton of h o e we tl u ht t wa a m f rtune but t turned out bless If t had not been f r my s n my brothe w uld ha e had to go a soldi r But he my you ger brother had fi l ttle o es while I you see only left w fe beh nd. W h d a l ttle g l but God took h bef re I w nt sold I come home on – ook nd e o

brothers way earn g wages nu u) u l th oungest t home. F ther h says All my ch ldren are the sam to me t hurts the same whi hever fi er g ts b tt n. But f Pl tón h d t been h ed f a sold er M cl el wo ld h e h d to go. He called us ll to h m and w ll you bel eve t pl ced us n f nt of the cons. M cl el he says, come here d bow down to his feet and you, youn wom n you bow d wn too d you gra dch ldren also bow d wn bef e h m! Do you under ta d h says. That h w t is, dear fellow F te looks f head. But w are always ju l g that not w ll–that n t r ght! Our l k is lik water n dragnet you pull t t nd t bulges, but when you e drawn t out t s empty! That s how t s.

And Platón shifted his seat n the traw After short len e he rose.

"Well, I th k you must be sleepy sa d he and bega rap dly cross ng himself nd repeat g

Lord Jesus Chri t holy S nt N ch la Frola nd La ra! Lord Jesus Chri t h ly Saint N h las, Frol and Lavra Lord Jesus Chri t ha m rcy on us d sa us h co cluded,

ing of the universe in humanity in his own soul and in God had been destroyed He had experienced this before but never so strongly as now When similar doubts had assailed him before they had been the result of his own wrongdoing and at the bottom of his heart he had felt that relief from his despair and from those doubts was to be found within himself But now he felt that the universe had crumbled before his eyes and only meaningless ruins remained and this not by any fault of his own He felt that it was not in his power to regain faith in the meaning of life

Around him in the darkness men were standing and evidently something about him interested them greatly They were telling him something and asking him something Then they led him away somewhere and at last he found himself in a corner of the shed among men who were laughing and talking on all sides

Well then mates that very prince *who* some voice at the other end of the shed was saying with a strong emphasis on the word *who*

Sitting silent and motionless on a heap of straw against the wall Pierre sometimes opened and sometimes closed his eyes But as soon as he closed them he saw before him the dreadful face of the factory lad—especially dreadful because of its simplicity—and the faces of the murderers even more dreadful because of their disquiet And he opened his eyes again and stared vacantly into the darkness around him

Beside him in a stooping position sat a small man of whose presence he was first made aware by a strong smell of perspiration which came from him every time he moved This man was doing something to his legs in the darkness and though Pierre could not see his face he felt that the man continually glanced at him On growing used to the darkness Pierre saw that the man was taking off his leg bands and the way he did it aroused Pierre's interest

Having unwound the string that tied the band on one leg he carefully coiled it up and immediately set to work on the other leg glancing up at Pierre While one hand hung up the first string the other was already unwinding the band on the second leg In this way having carefully removed the leg bands by deft circular motions of his arm following one another uninterruptedly the man hung the leg bands up on some pegs fixed above his head Then he took out a knife cut something closed the knife placed it under the head of his bed and seating himself comfortably clasped his arms round his lifted knees and fixed his eyes on Pierre The latter was conscious of something pleasant comforting and well rounded in these deft movements in the man's well- ... — and eve ... the man

You've seen a lot of trouble sir eh the little man suddenly said

And there was so much kindliness and simplicity in his singsong voice that Pierre tried to reply but his jaw trembled and he felt tears rising to his eyes The little fellow giving Pierre no time to betray his confusion instantly continued in the same pleasant tones

Eh lad don't fret! said he in the tender singsong caressing voice old Russian peasant women employ Don't fret friend—suffer an hour live for an age! that's how it is my dear fellow And here we live thank heaven without offense Among these folk too there are good men as well as bad said he and still speaking he turned on his knees with a supple movement got up coughed and went off to another part of the shed

Eh you rascal! Pierre heard the same kind voice saying at the other end of the shed So you've come you rascal? She remembers Now now that'll do!

And the soldier pushing away a little dog that was jumping up at him returned to his place and sat down In his hands he had something wrapped in a rag

Here eat a bit sir said he resuming his former respectful tone as he unwrapped and offered Pierre some baked potatoes We had soup for dinner and the potatoes are grand!

Pierre had not eaten all day and the smell of the potatoes seemed extremely pleasant to him ... — ... e it ... her ...

He took a potato drew out his clasp knife cut the potat ... int ... es on the palm of his hand sprinkled some salt on it from the rag and handed it to Pierre

The potatoes are grand! he said once more Eat some like that!

Pierre thought he had never eaten anything that tasted better

Oh I'm all right ... d he ... but why ... they shoot those poor fellows? The last one was hardly twenty

Tss tt ... said the little man ... what

ta l fe he called h s pe sa t e stence The p erb l h ch h s talk was f ll were f th most p rt t the co rse d inde e t u s soldiers mpl y but th e folk y es

nat he had s d n a p e us occa on yet both uld be ht He l ked to talk d he talked ll d rn h s spee h w th terms f endearment nd w th f lk y gs h ch P rre th ht he nt d l ms lf b t the ch ef charm f h talk l y i th f ct that the com mo est ts—somet mes just ch s P erre had t es ed th t tak n t e of them—ass med i k ratáe s speech a ch racter of solem fit es He l ked to hear the f lk tales f the sold rs u ed to tell of n e g (they e al ys the s m) b t m t of ll he l k d t hea t es f r l l fe He w uld sm le j yf lly whe l te g t s ch t r es d h

u b t th e th wh m he h ppened t be H l d h t —
F
P
t
sc

m
sa

se
h
g y d t h m n erra ds But t P erre he l ys m ed h t h h d se med th t first ht n u f th m ble d d t r l p rso ficat n of the p t f mpl ty d tr th
Pl t k ratá k w th by heart ex ept h pray rs Wh n h bega t \

F
F call h t he h d sa d m m t bef j t he c uld pe t to P err the w d ll f t s g t a d b h t d my l t u k curred n t b t h pok d t g n m g

could be g t out of t He d d not and could n t underst d the me n g of wo ds ap rt fr m th eir cont t Every word and act on of

t ken sep rat ly

CHAPTER XIV

W n PRINCESS MARY heard f om N chol s th t her br th r wa v th the Ro tó s at Yaro-slá l she at o ce prepared t go th ere n p te of h u t s ff t to d ssu de he — d ot me ly t g l rself b t to t ke he n phe v th h W ethe t wer d fficult o e sy pos s ble o mp ble she d d t ask a d d d ot want t kn w t was her duty ot o ly h rself to be near her br the wh as perhaps dy g but t d e eryt l g poss ble to t ke h s

i o t c de the l j urn y t h d d too dange s f her d h n
I few days P ce s M ry wa re dy t t rt Her equ p ges were the h f m

I

o t ke th h L p tsk Ryazá Vladím nd Sh y wa very lo g nd P t h rses were n t erywh e ob-t bl ery d ff cult a d ea Ryazán where the F e ch w sa d t l h w th msel es w e d g us
D
B
nts w
of p
th n
her T
f

then bowed to the ground got up sighed and sat down again on his heap of straw Thats the way Lay me down like a stone O God and raise me up like a loaf he muttered as he lay down pulling his coat over him

What prayer was that you were saying? asked Pierre

Eh? murmured Platón who had almost fallen asleep What was I saying? I was praying Don t you pray?

Yes I do said Pierre But what was that you said Frola and Lavra?

Well of course replied Platón quickly the horses saints One must pity the animals too Eh the rascal! Now you ve curled up and got warm you daughter of a bitch! said K táev

agai

So [illegible] screaming came from somewhere in the distance outside and flames were visible through the cracks of the shed but inside it was quiet and dark For a long time Pierre did not sleep but lay with eyes open in the darkness listening to the regular snoring of Platón who lay beside him and he felt that the world that had been shattered was once more stirring in his soul with a new beauty and on new and unshakable foundations

CHAPTER XIII

TWENTY THREE SOLDIERS three officers and two officials were confined in the shed in which Pierre had been placed and where he remained for four weeks

When Pierre remembered them afterwards they all seemed misty figures to him except Platón Karatáev who always remained in his mind a most vivid and precious memory and the personification of everything Russian kindly and round When Pierre saw his neighbor next morning at dawn the first impression of him as of something round was fully confirmed Platón s whole figure—in a French overcoat girdled with a cord a soldier s cap and bast shoes—was round His head was quite round his back chest shoulders and even his arms which he held as if ever ready to embrace something were rounded his pleasant smile and his large gentle brown eyes were also round

Platón Karatáev must have been fifty judging by his stories of campaigns he had been in told as by an old soldier He did not himself know his age and was quite unable to determine it But his brilliantly white strong teeth which showed in two unbroken semicircles when he laughed—as he often did—were all sound and good there was not a gray hair in his beard or on his head and his whole body gave an impression of suppleness and especially of firmness and endurance

His face despite its fine rounded wrinkles had an expression of innocence and [illegible]

[illegible] what he had said or was going to say and consequently the rapidity and justice of his intonation had an irresistible persuasiveness

His physical strength and agility during the first days of his imprisonment were such that he seemed not to know what fatigue and sickness meant Every night before lying down he said Lord lay me down as a stone and raise me up as a loaf! and every morning on getting up he said [illegible]

get

had

he o

out a moment s delay for some work just as children are ready to play directly they awake He could do everything not very well but not badly He baked cooked sewed planed and mended boo [illegible]

at

he

tr

[illegible] the birds evidently giving vent to the sounds in the same way that one stretches oneself or walks about to get rid of stiffness and the sounds were always high pitched mournful delicate and almost feminine and his face at such times was very serious

Having been taken prisoner and allowed his [illegible]

[illegible] s former peasant habits

A soldier on leave—a shirt outside breeches he would say

He did not like talking about his life as a soldier though he did not complain and often mentioned that he had not been flogged once during the whole of his army service When he related anything it was generally some old and evidently precious memory of his Chris

The peasants wear their [illegible] breeches whereas a soldier [illegible] —Tr

drawing room wh re So ya was talking to Mademoiselle Bour enne The countess ca ressed the boy and th old count came n nd welcomed the p incess H had changed ery

in life.

In sp te f her des e t see her b ther as soo as poss ble nd l e exat n that t th moment when ll he wanted was to see him they should be try ng to enterta n he nd pretending to adm e her ephew the p ncess not ced ll that wa go g on r und her nd f lt the ecess ty of ubmitt g fo a t me to this ew rder f th gs which h had entered. She k ew t t be necessary nd though t wa ha d f he he was n t e ed w th these people.

"This is my n ece, sa d the cou t, ntrodu gSó ya—"Y ud n t kn wher Princes ?"

Princess Mary turned to Sónya d try ng to stifl the hostile feel th t ose n her toward the girl h kissed her But he felt oppressed b the f ct th t th mood f everyo e ar d her was so f r from what was n her own heart.

Wher h h sked ga dd ess g them ll

He is d wnstairs N tásh is w th him swered Só ya flush g W ha nt to ask. I thi k y u must be t red Prin ess

Tears f exatu n h wed themsel es Princess Mary eyes. She turned way nd wa bout to ask th countess ga n h w to go to him, when h ht mpetuous d eem ly bu ya t ps wer heard t the doo Th p ess looked rou d nd saw N ta ha m ng lmost ru —th t N tásha wh m h had l ked so l tle t h meet g Moscow lo g e

B t ha dl had the p ess looked t N tásha fa bef he eal ed that her was eal mrad h gr f nd consequently fr d. Sh ran t meet he embraced her d bega to cry h h ulder

A soo as N tásha u g th head f Pri ce A drew' bed, heard f P ess M ry m l she softly l f his room d hast ed to

ed f ce wh n she ran nto the

th t of lo e—boundless lo e f r him for her and f all that wa near t the man she lo ed nd of p ty suffe ng for others and pass n ate des re to g e herself entirely to help n th m. It was pla n that at that m ment the e was in Natásh s heart no thought of herself r of her wn relat n w th Pr nce Andrew

Princes M ry with her acute sen ibil ty understood all th s t the first gl n e at Natá sha f ce and wept n her sh ulder w th sor rowful pleasure

Come come to h m Mary sa d Natásh leadi her nto the other room.

Princess Mary raised her head dr ed her eyes, nd turned to N tá ha. She felt th t from her sh would be ble to understand a d learn everythi g

How he began her question but t pped sh t.

She f lt th t wa imposs ble to ask or to answer n words. N tásha s f cea d eyes ould h to t ll her all more clearly nd p ofoun l ly

N tásha was gaz ng t her but seemed fra d nd n doubt whether to say ll he knew or n t he seemed to feel that before those lum n us eyes wh ch pen trated into the ery d pths of he heart, t was mposs ble n t to ll the whole truth wh ch he sa And sud d nly N tásha l ps tw tched, u ly wri kles

hers lf d d n t tru t

But how his w und What is his g neral cond t n

Y u, you will ee was ll N tásl could say

They sat l ttl whil downstairs nea h room till they had left ff cryi g d were ble t go to h m w th calm faces

H w has h wh l ll ess g n I t lo ce he grew wors ? Wl en d d this happen Pr es Mary qu ed.

N tasha told he that t first there had be n da ger f m h fever h d t n d tl p n h uffered b t t T tsa th t had p ssed d th doct h d ly been fra d f gan gren Th t da er h d also passed. When they eached Yaroslá l th w d had begun to feste (N tá h k ew all bout u h thi gs

been the happiest of her life Her love for Rostóv no longer tormented or agitated her It filled her whole soul had become an integral part of herself and she no longer struggled against it Latterly she had become convinced that she loved and was beloved though she never said this definitely to herself in words She had become convinced of it at her last interview with Nicholas when he had come to tell her that her brother was with the Rostóvs Not by a single word had Nicholas alluded to the fact that Prince Andrew s relations with Natásha might if he recovered be renewed but Princess Mary saw by his face that he knew and thought of this

Yet in spite of that his relation to her—considerate delicate and loving—not only remained unchanged but it sometimes seemed to Princess Mary that he was even glad that the family connection between them allowed him to express his friendship more freely She knew that she loved for the first and only time in her life and felt that she was beloved and was happy in regard to it

But this happiness on one side of her spiritual nature d d no ...

... t the more possible for her to give full play to her feeling for her brother That feeling was so strong at the moment of leaving Voronezh that those who saw her off as they looked at her careworn despairing face felt sure she would fall ill on the journey But the very difficulties and preoccupations of the journey

... ary thought only of the journey itself for getting its object But as she approached Yaroslávl the thought of what might await her there—not after many days but that very evening—again presented itself to her and her agitation increased to its utmost limit

The courier who had been sent on in advance to find out where the Rostóvs were staying in Yaroslávl and in what condition Prince Andrew was when he met the big coach just entering the town gates was appalled by the terrible pallor of the princess face that looked out at him from the window

I have found out everything your excellency the Rostóvs are staying at the merchant Brónnikov s house in the Square not far from here right above the Vólga said the courier

Princess Mary looked at him with frightened inquiry not understanding why he did not reply to what she chiefly wanted to know how was her brother? Mademoiselle Bourienne put that question for her

How is the prince? she asked

His excellency is staying in the same house with them

Then he is alive thought Princess Mary and asked in a low voice How is he?

The servants say he is still the same

What still the same might mean Princess Mary did not ask but with an unnoticed glance at little seven year-old Nicholas who was sitting in front of her looking with pleasure at the town she bowed her head and did not raise it again till the heavy coach rumbling shaking and swaying came to a stop The carriage steps clattered as they were let down

The carriage door was opened On the left there was water—a great river—and on the right a porch There were people at the entrance servants and a rosy girl with a large plait of black hair smiling as it seemed to Princess Mary in an unpleasantly affected way (This was Sónya) Princess Mary ran up the steps This way this way! said the girl with the same artificial smile and the princess found herself in the hall facing an elderly woman of Oriental type who came rapidly to meet her

et vous connais depuis longtemps

Despite her excitement Princess Mary realized that this was the countess and that it was necessary to say something to her Hardly knowing how she did it she contrived to utter a few polite phrases in French in the same tone as those that had been addressed to her and asked How is he?

The doctor says that he is not in danger said the countess but as she spoke she raised her eyes with a sigh and her gesture conveyed a contradiction of her words

Where is he? Can I see him—can I? asked the princess

One moment Princess one moment my dear! Is this his son? said the countess turning to little Nicholas who was coming in with Dessalles There will be room for everybody this is a big house Oh what a lovely boy!

The countess took Princess Mary into the

My h... I l... e you n... I have known y u a lo g t... e

Th conversation was cold and d connect ed and continually broke off

"Mary came by way f Ryazán sa d Natá

Really he sked.

"They t ld her that all Moscow has been burned down d th t

N tásh t pped. It wa mposs ble to t lk. It was plain th t he was m king n eff rt to l s te b t could ot d so

"Yes, they say t s burned, he sa d It a great p ty d h gazed stra ght befo e h m abse tly trok g h m tache w th h s fin rs.

A d so you ha e met Cou t N cl l Mary? Prince A drei uddenly d e dent ly ishi g t peak pleasa tly to them He wrot here th th took a great l k n to you h t simply nd calmly e de tly un abl dersta d ll the complex ficance h ords had f l people If y u l ked him too t w ld be good th fo y u t get married, h dded rather m re qu kly as f plea ed t ha f u d w rds h had

He looked at her attent ely

I t about N chol s? he asked.

Princess Mary nodded her head, weep ng but he

M ry you know the Gosp

broke off

'Wh t d d you say?

Noth ng You mustn t cry l e e he sa d lookin at her w th the same cold e press n

e cry l e under ht th t f ther l feand

W th a gr at ff t t e u u from the r po nt of ew

t y ur F ther leeu u u t

f el gs ll th se dea th t see so p to us ar cess ry We cannot understa d o e an ther nd he rem ned s lent

wa even He

l h d l possessed all the f culties t h d better or

gl ced t N tásha

N tásha wh felt h gl n e d d not look at her All th w e n d nt.

A drew w uld you l k Princess M ry sudd ly sa d t mbl n o w uld you like t ee l ttl N h l ? He lways talk g bo t y

Pri ce A d w m led just percept bly d for th first tim but Pr cess M ry who k w h f so ll saw w th h rro th t h d d n t sm l th pl as affecti n f his son b t hq g n l ro y becau h th ht th as try wh h bel ed o be tl l t m f g h m

"Yes, I h ll b ry gl d t ee h m. I h qu w ll

Wh l ttl N cl l wa brought t Pr A drew oom h looked t h f ther w h frigh ened eyes, b t did cry b cau no e lse a cry g Pri ce A d ew kissed h m d e d tl did k w wh t say t him.

Wh N ch l h d be n led way Pri ess Mary a w t up t her brother k ssed h m d bl t res ra her t rs y lo ger bega cry

g h he d n t her he began t cry

Aft that he o ded Dessalles d the cou tess who ca essed h m d e ther sat al ne o cam t m dly t P ncess M ry o t N tá h f wh m he seemed en f nde th n of l unt, nd l t them qu etly nd h ly

When Pri ess M ry had l ft Pr nce An d w he f lly u derstood wh t N tá h s face

soul to th t Et rn l nd Unf th m bl whose presence bo the dy g man was n w so e t d t.

as festering) and the doctor had said that the festering might take a normal course Then fever set in but the doctor had said the fever was not very serious

n

said

kno

I ι s tunner? asked the princess

No it s not that but worse You will see O Mary he is too good he cannot cannot live because

CHAPTER XV

When Natásha opened Prince Andrew s door with a familiar movement and let Princess Mary pass into the room before her the princess felt the sobs rising in her throat Hard as she had tried to prepare herself and now tried to remain tranquil she knew that she would be unable to look at him without tears

The princess understood what Natásha had meant by the words two days ago *this* suddenly happened She understood those words to mean that he had suddenly softened and that this softening and gentleness were signs of approaching death As she stepped to the door she already saw in imagination Andrew s face as she remembered it in childhood a gentle mild sympathetic face which he had rarely shown and which therefore affected her very strongly She was sure he would speak soft tender words to her such as her father had uttered before his death and that she would not be able to bear it and would burst into sobs in his presence Yet sooner or later it had to be and she went in The sobs rose higher and higher in her throat as she more and more clearly distinguished his form and her short sighted eyes tried to make out his features and then she saw his face and met his gaze

He was lying in a squirrel fur dressing gown on a divan surrounded by pillows He was thin and pale In one thin translucently white hand he held a handkerchief while with the other he stroked the delicate mustache he had grown moving his fingers slowly His eyes gazed at them as they entered

On seeing his face and meeting his eyes Princess Mary s pace suddenly slackened she felt her tears dry up and her sobs ceased She suddenly felt guilty and grew timid on catching the expression of his face and eyes

n

In the deep gaze that seemed to look ~

ε

ι

He kissed his sister holding her hand in his as was their wont

How are you Mary? How did you manage to get here? said he in a voice as calm and aloof as his look

Had he screamed in agony that scream would not have struck such horror into Princess Mary s heart as the tone of his voice

And have you brought little Nicholas? he asked in the same slow quiet manner and with an obvious effort to remember

How are you now? said Princess Mary herself surprised at what she was sayin~

That my dear you must ask the doctor he replied and again making an evident effort to be affectionate he said with his lips only (his words clearly did not correspond to his thoughts)

Merci chère amie d être venue

Princess Mary pressed his hand The pressure made him wince just perceptibly He was silent and she did not know what to say She now understood what had happened to him two days before In his words his tone and especially in that calm almost antagonistic look could be felt an estrangement from everything belonging to this world terrible in one who is alive Evidently only with an effort did he understand anything living but it was obvious that he failed to understand not because he lacked the power to do so but because he understood something else—something the living did not and could not understand—and which wholly occupied his mind

There you see how strangely fate has brought us together said he breaking the silence and pointing to Natásha She looks after me all the time

Princess Mary heard him and did not understand how he could say such a thing He the sensitive tender Prince Andrew how could he say that before her whom he loved and who loved him! Had he expected to live he could not have said those words in that offensively cold tone If he had not known that he was dying how could he have failed to pity her and how could he speak like this in her presence? The only explanation was that he was indifferent because something else much more important had been revealed to him

Thank you for coming my dear

The conversati n was cold and disconnect ed and co tinually broke off

"Mary came by way of Ryazán said N tá ha

Prince Andrew did n t n tice that he called his sister M ry nd nly fter call ng her so n his presence did N tásha n tic t herself.

Really he asked.

"They told her that all Moscow has been burned down nd that

N tásha st pped. It was mposs ble t talk. It was plai that he was makin an ff rt t lis ten, b t could n t d so

a k d It a

wrote her that h took great

h e t simply nd calmly ev dentl un ble to understand all th complex gn ficance his words had for l ving people. If y u liked him too t would be good th f ou to get marr ed, h dded rather m re qu kl as if pleased t havi g found w rds he had lo bee seeking

Prin ess Mary heard hi w rds but they had no meani g f her except as p oof of how far ay h now was fr m everythi g li ng

"Why talk f m he said quietly nd glan ed t N tásha.

N tásha, who f lt her glance d d n t look at her All three wer gain il nt.

A drew would you lik Princess Mary suddenly said in trembl n o w uld you like t see l ttl N ch las H is always talkin bo t yo

Pri A drew sm led just perceptibly and for the first time, but Pri cess Mary who knew hi fa so w ll saw w th horr that h did n t smil w th pleasur affection f his so b w th qu et, gentl iron because h thought th was trying what h bel eved to be th las means f ar us g h m.

"Yes, I hall be ery glad to see him. Is h qu w ll.

When li tl N cholas wa b ught into Pri ce A drew room h looked t hi father with frigh ened eyes, but did n cry because no one lse was crying Pri ce A drew kissed him and ev d tl did no know wha to say to him.

Wh Nichola had been led way Pri cess Mary ga n wen up to her brother kissed him, d un bl to restrain her tears any longer began to cry

H looked t her ttent ely

Is t about N ch olas? he asked.

Princess Mary nodded her head, weep ng

but he Mary you know the Gosp broke off

What d d you y

Nothi g You mu tn t cry here he s d looki g at her with the same cold express n

When Princess Mary began to cry he u der stood that she was cry n t the tho ht that l ttle N cholas would be left w thout a father W th great eff t he tr ed to eturn to l fe a d to see th ngs from th ir po nt of ew

Yes to them t mu t eem sad he thou ht. But how mple it s.

"The f wl of th r sow n t, ne ther do they eap yet your F ther feedeth them," he sa d to h m lf nd w hed to say t Princess M ry but n they w'll take t the r own way they w n t u derstand They can t understand that all those feel ngs they prize so— ll our feel gs ll those dea that seem so mport nt to us, e u ssary W ca n t understand on other nd he rema ed s lent.

Pri ce Andrew s l ttle son was seven He could scar ely ead, d knew nothing After that day h l ed thr ugh many things gain g kn wled observat and expe ence but had he possessed ll the f culties he fterwards cquired he could n t ha e had a better or m e p found understa di of the mean f th scene he had w tnessed between h f

who had com out w th him nd looked shyly t her w th his beaut ful tho htful eyes then hi upl fted rosy upper l p trembled and lean g his head a n t her h began t cry

After th t h o ded Dessalles nd the u es who ca essed him d e ther sat al ne o came tim dly t P cess Mary o to N tá ha of wh m he seemed even f nder than f his unt, and cl ng to them quietly and shyly

When P ncess M ry had left Prince An drew he fully understood what N tásha s face had told her Sh d d n t speak y mo e to N tásha f h pes of savi g his life. She took

presence bo e the dying man was now so evi dent.

CHAPTER XVI

NOT ONLY did Prince Andrew know he would die but he felt that he was dying and was already half dead He was conscious of an aloofness from everything earthly and a strange and joyous lightness of existence Without haste or agitation he awaited what was coming That inexorable eternal distant and unknown—the presence of which he had felt continually all his life—was now near to him and by the strange lightness he experienced almost comprehensible and palpable

Formerly he had feared the end He had twice experienced that terribly tormenting fear of death—the end—but now he no longer understood that fear

He had felt it for the first time when the shell spun like a top before him and he looked at the fallow field the bushes and the sky and knew that he was face to face with death When he came to himself after being wounded and the flower of eternal unfettered love had instantly unfolded itself in his soul as if freed from the bondage of life that had restrained it he no longer feared death and ceased to think about it

n

u cj y he penetrated into the new principle of eternal love revealed to him the more he unconsciously detached himself from earthly life To love everyt

I

I u ore imbued he became with that principle of love the more he renounced life and the more completely he destroyed that dreadful barrier which—in the absence of such love—stands between life and de

ut after the night in Mytíshchi when half delirious he had seen her for whom he longed appear before him and having pressed her hand to his lips had shed gentle happy tears love for a particular woman again crept unobserved into his heart and once more bound him to life And joyful and agitating thoughts began to occupy his mind Recalling the moment at the ambulance station when he had seen Kurágin he could not now regain the feeling he then had but was tormented by the question whether Kurágin was alive And he dared not inquire.

His illness pursued its normal physical course but

said

two da

the las u struggle between life and death in which death gained

It was evening As usual after dinner he was slightly feverish and his thoughts were preternaturally clear Sónya was sitting by the table He began to doze Suddenly a feeling of happiness seized him

Ah she has come! thought he

And so it was in Sónya's place sat Natásha who had just come in noiselessly

Since she had begun looking after him he had always e

of her n

placed s

dle fron and was knitting a stockin

She had learned to knit stockin

s o it there is som

u y see the thoughtful profile of her drooping face She mo

r

u y with a supple and exact movement picked up the ball and regained her former position

He looked at her without moving and saw that she wanted to draw a deep breath after stooping but refrained from doing so and breathed cautiously

At the Tróitsa monastery they had spoken of the past and he had told her that if he lived he would always thank *God* for his wound which had brought them together again but after that they never spoke of the future

Can it or can it not be? he now thought as he looked at her and listened to the light click of the steel needles *Can fate have brought me to her so strangely only for me to die?* *Is it possible that the truth of life has been revealed to me only to show me that I have spent my life in falsity? I love her more than anything in the world! But what am I to do if I love her?* he thought and he involun

tarily groaned, from a habit acquired du g his sufferin~s.

O hear g th t sound N tásha put d wn th stock n lean d nearer t him nd sud de ly n tici h s hin ng eyes stepped l ght ly p to him and bent o er h m.

"Y u ar n t asleep

~ ~ol t u a l ng t me

that

that

h ne

th rapturous j y

N tásha I lo you too much! More than anything in th ld.

And I! —She turned way f r an instant. "Wh too much she asked.

"Why too m ch? W ll hat d you th k h t d y feel n y u soul y ur

mo t m em t.

H remai ed lent whil

H good t w uld bel nd taking her ha d h kissed t.

N tá ha f lt happy d agitated b t t e emembered th t thi w uld n t d and th t h had to b qu et.

B t you ha n t lept. h sa d repress- ng her j "Try t leep pleas !

H p essed her h d nd rele sed t. nd h t ba k t th candle d t d n ~ain her f rmer pos t n. Tw h turned nd looked h m. nd l er eyes met his beami

her Sh set h rself task n her ocki d esol ed t t turn rou d t ll t was fin hed.

~~~

death. H fel himself earer t t.

Lo Wha l h thou ht.

Lo h ders dea h Lo e is l fe. All every thi g that I dersta d. I understand o ly because I l e. E eryth is everyth n ex ts ly because I l e. E eryth is un ed by l e. Lo is God. d to di mean that I particle f lo hall re urn t th general d eternal source. These thou hts seemed to h m comf rting B t they wer o ly th ghts. Somethin~ was lack g them, they were n t clear they wer too one-s dedly personal and

~~~ ag ta

om he

nd un

l ins

talke l

They

Pr n e

tri al

b t he

cont nu d to spe k surp s b u y empty

hes ner

on

He

t.

E erythi g u p t ueu or

wa not n t me to lock t. He went and tr ed

~~ f d to m e a d l e

wor

He

wa s ed by n ag ear

w the f ar of death. It tood b h nd the door But just wl en he wa clums ly creep g to- ward the door th t dre df l someth ng on the othe d wa lready press ng ~a nst it d f c ts way n Someth g not hu m n—d ath—wa break g n through that doo d had to be k pt out. He e ed the doo m k g final eff rt t hold t b k—to lock t was no l ~er poss ble—b t hi eff rts wer weak d l msy nd the door pushed fr m b hind by that t rror ope ed d closed ~a n

Onc aga n t pushed from uts de His last uper hum n ff rts we e ~ain nd both hal es f t l e doo nois lessly op ned It entered a d t was de th nd Pri e A drew d ed.

But t the nst nt I died Prin e A drew e membered that h was asl p a d t tl ery nstant he died, ha ng made n eff t h aw ke.

"Yes t was death! I died— nd w k up Yes, death is n wak g! And ll at t

him.

Wh w ki g cold persp rat h mov d on th d N tásh w nt up nd asked him what wa th m tter He did n t nswer and looked t her stra g ly n t under sta di g

Th t was wh t had h ppe ed to him two days bef re Princess Mary arri al. From that

day as the doctor expressed it the wasting fever assumed a malignant character but what the doctor said did not interest Natásha she saw the terrible moral symptoms which to her were more convincing

From that day an awakening from life came to Prince Andrew together with his awakening from sleep And compared to the duration of life it did not seem to him slower than an awakening from sleep compared to the duration of a dream

There was nothing terrible or violent in this comparatively slow awakening

His last days and hours passed in an ordinary and simple way Both Princess Mary and Natásha who did not leave him felt this They did not weep or shudder and during these last days they themselves felt that they were not attending on him (he was no longer there he had left them) but on what rem [illegible]

[illegible] em and t[illegible]

[illegible] one another about him They felt that they could not express in words what they understood

They both saw that he was sinking slowly and quietly deeper and deeper away from them and they both knew that this had to be so and that it was right

He confessed, and received communion everyone came to take leave of him When they brought his son to him he pressed his lips to the boys and turned away not because he felt it hard and sad (Princess Mary and Natásha understood that) but simply because he thought it was all that was required of him but when they told him to bless the boy he did what was demanded and looked round as if asking whether there was anything else he should do

When the last convulsions of the body which the spirit was leaving occurred Princess Mary and Natásha were present

Is it over? said Princess Mary when his body had for a few minutes lain motionless growing cold before them N[illegible] which reminded her most nearly of him—his body

Where has he gone? Where is he now?

When the body washed and dressed lay in the coffin on a table everyone came to take leave of him and they all wept

Little Nicholas cried because his heart was rent by painful perplexity The countess and Sónya cried from pity for Natásha and because he was no more The old count cried because he felt that before long he too must take the same terrible step

Natásha and Princess Mary also wept now but not because of their own personal grief they wept with a reverent and softening emotion which had taken possession of their souls at the consciousness of the simple and solemn mystery of death that had been accomplished in their presence

Book Thirteen 1812

*

CHAPTER I

Ma mind can t grasp th causes of events in their compl teness, b t the des e t find those ca ses is impla ted n man s soul. And who t co siders the mult pl city nd om pexity f the co d t ns ny on of which taken separately may eem to be the cause he snatches t the first ppro m t n to a cause that seems t h m ntell gible d sa s Th s is the cause I hist cal events (where the actio f men are th ubject of observation) the first and most p mit approximat n to present tself wa th will of the gods nd aft er that, the will f those wh tood n th most promi ent pos ti —the heroes f hist ry But we eed ly pen trate to th essence of ny histori event—which lies in th ctivity of the general mass f m n who take part n t—t be co vinced that th will f the historic hero does not co trol th ct n of the mass but is tself co tinually co trolled. It may seem to be matter f indifferen whether u der stand the mea ing of hist rical events this wa or that, et there is th sam difference between ma wh sa s tha the people of the West mo ed th Eas because N poleon wished t d ma who sa that th happened because t had to happen as there between those who declared that th earth was tatı ary d th th plan ts m ed round d those wh dmitted tha they d d n t know wha pheld th earth bu knew ther wer laws directi g ts m eme t and that of th other pla ets. Ther is, nd can be n cause f h t rical event except th ne cause f all causes. But ther ar laws directing events, and som of these laws are kn wn to hil w ar consci us of thers we cannot comp hend. The discovery f these laws onl possibl wh n we ha quit band ed th emp find the cause in th will f som man, jus as the d sco ery f th laws f th motio f th planets wa poss bl only when men bandoned th con eptı n of the fixity f th earth.

The historian cons der that, next to the battl f B rod nó and the occup t n of Moscow by the nemy and ts destruct n by fire the most important episod of the war of 8 2 was the mo em nt of the Russ an army from the Ryazán to the Kaluga road nd to the T rutino camp—the so-called flank march across the Krásnaya Pakhrá Ri er They ascribe th gl ry of that achievement of gen us to d fferent men nd d spute a to wh m the … nclud

m litary wri ers, nd following them ou e con der thi flank march to b the prof u d concepti n of some on man who sa ed Russia and destroyed N poleon. In the first pl c it is hard to u derstand wh e the profundity and gen us of this m ement lay f r not much mental ff rt was needed to see that the best pos ti n for an army wh n t is n t be g t tacked is whe e there are most pro on a d even dull boy of thirteen could ha guessed that th best pos ti n f r an army fter ts retreat from Moscow in 8 2 was on the Kal ga road. So t imposs ble t u derstand by what reasonin th hi torians rea h the conclus n … A d

flank *march had* t been preceded, accom p *n*ed *o f* ll wed by ther circumstances, m ght ha proved rui us to the Russ n and salutary f th French. If th po u n f the Russ *n army really be*gan t impro e from th time f that march, t does not t all foll w that th march was th cause f t.

Th t flank march might n t *only* ha failed t gi e any ad antage t th Russian army but m ght n ther circumstances ha e led to ts destruct n Wh t would ha e happe ed had Moscow n t burned d wn If Murat had t lost ght f the Russians If N poleon had

not remained inactive? If the Russian army at Krásnaya Pakhrá had given battle as Bennigsen and Barclay advised? What would have happened had the French attacked the Russians while they were m

I
t
I attacked them at Smolénsk? What would have happened had the French moved on Petersburg? In any of these eventualities the flank march that brought salvation might have proved disastrous

The third and most incomprehensible thing is that people studying history deliberately avoid seeing that this flank march cannot be attributed to any one man that no one ever foresaw it and that in reality like the retreat from Filí it did not suggest itself to anyone in its entirety but resulted—moment by moment step by step event by event—from an endless number of most diverse circumstances and was only seen in its entirety when it h d

Russian commanders was the one naturally suggesting itself namely a direct retreat by the *Nízhni* road In proof of this there is the fact that the majority of the council voted for such a retreat and above all there is the well known conversation after the council between the commander in chief and Lanskoy who was in charge of the commissariat department Lanskóy informed the commander in chief th
for the most
Tula and Ry
treated on Ni
from its suppl by the broad river Oká which cannot be crossed early in winter This was the first indication of the necessity of deviating from what had previously seemed the most natural course—a direct retreat on Nízhni Novgorod The army turned more to the south along the Ryazán road and nearer to its supplies Subsequently the inactivity of the French (who even lost sight of the Russian army) concern for the safety of the arsenal at T and especially the advantages of drawing nearer to its supplies caused the army to turn still further south to the Tula road H
by a fc
Pakhr
remain at Podolsk and had no thought of the Tarutino position but innumerable c r um stances and the reappearance of French troops who had for a time lost touch with the Russians and projects of giving battle and above all the abundance of provisions in Kal province
to the so
Kaluga r which was between the roads along which those supplies lay Just as it is impossible to say when it was decided to abandon Moscow so it is impossible to say precisely when or by whom it was decided to move to Tarutino Only when the army had got there as the result of innumerable and varying forces did people begin to assure themselves that they had desired this movement and long ago foreseen its result.

CHAPTER II

THE FAMOUS FLANK MOVEMENT merely consisted in this after the advance of the French had ceased the Russian my
tinually re
vaders dev

If instead of imagining to ourselves commanders of genius leading the Russian army we picture that army without any leaders it could not have done anything but make a return movement toward Moscow describing an arc in the direction where most provisions were to be found and where the country was richest

That movement from the Nízhni to the Ryazán Tula and Kaluga roads was so natural that even the Russian marauders moved in that direction and demands were sent from Petersburg for Kutuzov to take his army that way At Tarutino Kutuzov received what was almost a reprimand from the Emperor for having moved his army along the Ryazán road and the Emperor's letter indicated to him the very position he had already occupied near Kaluga

Having rolled like a ball in the direction of the impetus given by the whole campaign and by the battle of Borodinó the Russian army—when the strength of that impetus was exhausted and no fresh push was received—assumed the position natural to it

Kutuzov's merit lay not in any strategic maneuver of genius as it is called but in the fact that he alone understood the significance of what had happened He alone then understood the meaning of the French army's inactivity he alone continued to assert that the battle of Borodinó had been a victory He alone—who as

comma der in ch ef m ght h e bee e pected to be eager to atta k—empl y d his l ole strength to estra n the Ru s n army from useless e a eme ts.

The b t w u ded at B r d ó was ly ng here the flee g h nter h d left h m but wh ther he was st ll al hethe he was stro g a d me ly ly g low the hunter d d t k w S ddenly the b t wa heard to moa

The m of th t w u ded be st (the French army) wh ch b trayed ts *cal m t u* to d t o a th e d g f Laur t n to Ku — f p ac

th h th y we m an gles

M LE PRI CE K UT UZ l m d g

t the French st t oned at Tarut no the news of e sy ucce ses gained by pea *ants* a d guer rilla troops o er the Fr nch the envy a oused by th s the des re f r re enge th t l y in the h a t of every Ru s n as lo g as the French (ho e ll) a d m con

as sub tanti l cha ge n the rel t e tie nd n d ance h d become s e table An l t once as cl ck beg s to strike nd cl me a soon as the m n te h nd h s c mpleted a full circle th cha ge was shown by an n cre sed a t ty s h rr ng and ch m ng in the h gl er pheres

CHAPTER III

TI E RUSSIAN AR Y was commanded l y Kutu

Moscow O ber 5 8

K t zo repl ed I h ld b cursed by posterity e e I looked on the u t r of a ttlem t f y sort. *S h the p t p t f my t* B t h cont nued t xe t ll h po rs t estra n his troop fr m at ta k

D g th m th th t th F ch t o ps e p ll gi g M scow and the Russ n troops were q etly camped t T rut n a ch ge had tak pl e th el t estr gth f the t rm es—both p t d n num ber— es lt f wh ch th up ty l d passed t th Ru d Th ugh th co d u d mbers f the F ch army we e u k to h R ss so n th t ch e oc rred th e d f tt ck g n h w d tself by tl ss g s Th n e La t m th b d of po- t T *rut* the ep ts m g f m ll des f the t ty nd d der of th F ch th fl w f cr ts t u g m ts h fi e we th th l g est th R sold rs h d j yed nd the mp t nce t d h t they h d b ss mbled f wh ch usually ho ts lf n n rmy th t h been est g cu ty t wh t th F e ch my so l g lost ght f wa d g tl bold es tl h ch tpo ts n w sc ted cl se up

st ll n u h nds t was appro ed by the st ff d c pted a bas s fo ct o Kut v ly r pl ed th t mo me ts arra ed f m d ta ew eal ysd fficult t e ecute S f esh n t uct ns w e s t fo th solu t n f d ff cult es that m ght be e cou t ed s w ll f e h people wl were to w tch Ku t s t ons and rep t upon th m

B s d th s the whole t ff of the Ru n rmy wa n w reorgan ed The posts left t by B gr t ón ho h d been killed a d by B cl y who h d gone away n d dgeon h d t be f lled Very se u n d t n w g n t tl e quest n wheth t w ll be b tter t put A n B s pl e d B D o n the c nt ry t put D in A pl nd n— s f nyth g m e th A B s t f t on d pend d n th

As esult of the h t l ty between K t ov and Ben gs n l Ch ef of St ff the prese ce of fid t l rep es nt t es of the Emp r r d tl e tr n f rs m tl n usu lly c m pl cated pl y f part es g g on m g the t ff f the army A w d m n g B D w s u d rm ng C d so *on* n ll p ble comb n t o d pe m tat I ll th pl tt gs tl ubj t of ntr gue w gen rally the c d ct of the w wh ch ll tl e e n n b l d tl y w direct g but th f f f the wa went on d pe dently f ll m

as it had to go that is never in the way people devised but flowing always from the essential attitude of the masses Only in the highest spheres did all these schemes crossings and interminglings appear to be a true reflection of what had to happen

Prince M chael Ilariónov chl (wrote the Emperor on the second of October in a letter that reached Kutuzov after the battle at Tarút no) Since September 2 Moscow has been in the hands of the enemy Your last reports were written on the twentieth and during all th s t me not only has no action been taken against the enemy or for the relief of the anc ent capital l ut accord ng to your last report you have eve r
—

c
c c s moving on the Petersburg road Another corps of several th ou and men is mo ing on Dmitrov A thir l has advanced along the Vla lím r road and a fourth ratl er considerable detachment is stationed bet veen Ri za and Mo h'ysk Napoleon himself v as in Mo cov as late as the tv enty f fth In view of all thi informa t on v hen the enemy has scattered his forces in large detachments and with Napoleon and h s G ards in Moscow s it po s ble that tl e enemy s forces confronting you are so con ideral le a not to allow of your taking the offens ve? On the contrary he is probably pursu ng you v th d tach ment or at most with an army corps mi ch v eaker than th
seem that avai
you might ad
and
trea
of tl
the ı u (tl er
tov ns in the interior You will l e respons l le if the enemy is able to d rect a force of any i e aga nst Petersl urg to tl reaten thi cap tal in v hich it l as not l een poss l le to reta n many troops for tl the army entr sted to you and acting with resolt t on an l energy you ha e ample mean to avert th s fresh calam ty Remember tl at you ha e st ll to ans r to our offended co ntry for the loss of Moscow You have e peri en ed my read ness to rev rd you Th

ı y to and ju st fy us in expecting

But by the time this letter v hich proved that the real relation of the forces had already made itself felt in Petersburg v as dispatched Kutuzov had found himself unable any longer to restrain the army he commanded from attacking and a battle had taken place

On the second of October a Cossack Shapoválov who was out scouting killed one hare and wounded another Following the wounded hare he made his way far into the forest and came upon the left flank of Murat s army encamped there without any precautions The Cossack laughingly told his comrades how he had almost fallen into the hands of the French. A cornet hearing the story informed his commander

The Cossack was sent for and questioned. The Cossack officers wished to take advantage of this chance to capture some horses but one of the superior officers who was acquainted with the higher authorities reported the incident to a general on the staff The state of things on the staff had of late been exceedingly strained Ermólov had been to see Bennigsen a few days previously and had entreated him to use his influence with the commander in chief to induce him to take the offensive

If I did not know you I should think you did not v ant what you are asking for I need only advise anything and his Highness is sure to do the opposite replied Bennigsen

The Cossack s report confirmed by horse patrols who were sent out was the final proof that events had matured The tightly coiled spring v as released the clock began to v hirr and the chimes to play Despite all his supposed power his intellect his experience and his knowledge of men Kutuzov—having taken into consideration the Cossack s report a note from Bennigsen who sent personal reports to the Emperor the wishes he supposed the Emperor to hold and the fact that all the generals expressed the same wish—could no longer check the inevitable movement and gave the order to do what he regarded as useless and harmful —gave his approval that is to the accomplished fact

CHAPTER IV

BENNIGSEN S NOTE and the Cossack s information that the left flank of the French s u n guarded were merely final indications that it v as necessary to order an attack and it v as fixed for the fifth of October

On the morning of the fourth of October Kutuzov signed the d pos tions Toll re d them to Ermolov asking h m to attend to the further arrangements.

All right—all right I haven t time just now replied Ermólov and left the hut

The disposit ons drawn up by Toll were very

good. As in the Austerlitz d pos ti ns t was written—th h n t in German this t me

"The F rst Column w ll ma ch here nd here the Seco d Column w ll march there a d there, d so nd on p per ll these co umns arri ed t the r pl ces at the ppo ted time and destro ed the enemy E erythin had been dmirabl thou ht ut as is usual n dis pos ns, d as is always th case not a s le co umn reached ts pl ce at the ppo nted time.

Wh n the necessary number of cop es of the disposti ns had been p epared a office was summo ed and sent t del r them to Ermó lov to deal with. A you g ffice f the H rse Guards, K t zo s ord ly pleased t the im porta ce f the miss n entrusted t h m went to Ermol s quarters.

Go way said Ermól s orderly

Th officer f the H rse Guards w nt to a general th whom Ermól was f en to be found.

N d the general out too

Th offi er m u ting his horse rode off to someone else

N h gone o t.

"If ly they d n t make me respons ble f r this delay What nuisa ce t is thou ht the icer d he od round th wh le camp One ma sa d he had een Ermól nd p t w th some ther generals others sa d h must ha e returned hom The ffice earched till six clock th even w thout ev n stop p to eat. Ermólov wa n where t be f u d and no k ew where h was Th officer sna ched littl food t comrad nd rode to the a guard to fi d M l rád ch. Milorádo ch too was way but her h was told that he had go e o ball t Ge eral Ki k and that Ermól was p ob bly there too.

"B t where is t?

"Wh there, o er t Echk n sa d Cos sack officer po t t cou try house in the far d ta

"What, ts d ur l e?"

"They e p t two eg m ts as utposts nd they ha ing uch p ee ther t wfull T o ba d three sets of gers

Th offi er rode o t bev nd our l nes t Echkino While still t d ta h heard as h rode the merry so nds f soldier dance son proceed from th h use

I h mead th mead ws h heard, comp ed by wh l d he sou d f *torb* drowned every w d then by

shouts These sou ds made his sp rits rise but t th same t me he was afraid that he would be blamed fo not ha i g executed sooner the mportant orde entrusted to him. It was al eady past e ht o clock He d smounted nd went up to the porch of a large country hous wh h had rem ned ntact between the Russian nd Fre ch forces. In the refreshme t room nd the h ll footm n were bustl ng

Ermól b impos g figure. They all d the r co ts unbutto ed nd were standing n a sem circle w th flushed and mated f ces lau h n loudly In the middle of th room sh rt handsome g neral w th a ed f ce wa dancing the *trep k* with m ch p rit and ag l ty

H ha ha! Bra o N cholas Iványch! H ha ha

Th fficer felt that by arri ng with mpo tant orders at such a moment h was doubly to blam a d h would ha e preferred to a t but o e of the generals esp ed h m and hea ng what h had come about, nf rmed Ermó lo

Ermól came f rward with frown on his face and hearin what th officer had to say took the p pers from him w tho t w rd.

You think he we t off ju t by cha ce sa d comrade who wa on the taff that even t th officer of th H rse Guards referring t Ermól It was trick. It was d e on pu pose to get Kon nitsyn to tr ble. You'll see what mess there ll be t morrow

CHAPTER V

NEXT AY the decrep t Kutúzo having gi en orders to be called early said his prayers, dressed, d w th n unpleasa t consciou ness of ha to d ect battle he d d n t pp o e of got nto his *c l h* d dro from Leta shó ka (vill e three nd half miles from Tarutin) t th pl ce wher th ttacki column were to meet. He sat n th *l h*

u noticed ca alrymen lead the r h rses to water cros th ro d al wh ch he was dri g K t zo looked t them search n ly

stopped his carriage and inquired what regiment they belonged to They belonged to a column that should have been far in front and in ambush long before then It may be a mistake thought the old commander in chief But a little further on he saw infantry regiments with their arms piled and the soldiers only partly dressed eating their rye porridge and carrying fuel He sent for an officer The officer reported that no order to advance had been received

How! Not rec Kutuzov began but checked himself immediately and sent for a senior officer Getting out of his *calèche* he waited with drooping head and breathing heavily pacing silently up and down When Eykhen the officer of the general staff whom he had summoned appeared Kutuzov went purple in the face not because that officer was to blame for the mistake but because he was an object of sufficient importance fo h n

-

u threatening him with his hands shouting and loading him with gross abuse Another man Captain Brózin who happened to turn up and who was not at all to blame suffered the same fate

What sort of another blackguard are you? I ll have you shot! Scoundrels! yelled Kutuzov in a hoarse voice waving his arms and reeling

He was suffering physically He the commander in chief a Serene Highness who everybody said possessed powers such as no man had ever had in Russia to be placed in this position—made the laughingstock of the whole army! I needn t have been in such a hurry to pray about today or have kept awake thinking everything over all n ght thought he to himself When I was a chit of an officer no one would have dared to mock me so and now ! He was in a state of physical suffering as if from corporal punishment and could not avoid expressing it by cries of anger and distress But his strength soon began to fail him and looking about him conscious of having said much that was amiss he again got into his *calèche* and drove back in s lence

His wrath once expended did not return and blinking feebly he listened to excuses and self justifications (Ermolov did not come to

cuted next day And once more Kutúzov had to consent

CHAPTER VI

Next day the troops assembled in their appointed places in the evening and advanced during the night It was an autumn night with dark purple clouds but no rain The ground was damp but not muddy and the troops advanced noiselessly only occasionally a jin lin of the artillery could be faintly heard The men were fo

their pipe

to prevent

of the und ing heightened its charm and they marched gaily Some columns supposing they had reached their destination halted piled arms and settled down on the cold ground but the majority marched all n ht and arrived at places where they evidently should not have been

Only Count Orlóv Denísov with his Cossacks (the least important detachment of all) got to his appointed place at the right time This detachment halted at the outskirts of a forest on the path leading from the village of Stromílova to Dmítrovsk

Toward dawn Count Orlóv Denísov who had dozed off was awakened by a deserter from the French army being brought to him This was a Polish sergeant of Poniatowski s corps who explained in Polish that he had come over because he had been slighted in the service that he ought long ago to have been made an officer that he was braver than any of them and so he had left them and wished to pay them out He said that Murat was spendin the night less than a mile from where they were and that if they would let him have a convoy of a hundred men he would capture him alive Count Orlóv Denísov consulted his fellow officers.

The offer was too tempting to be refused Everyone volunteered to go and everybody d vised making the attempt After much d sput ing and arguing Major General Grékov with two Cossack regiments decided to go with the Polish sergeant

Now remember said Count Orlóv Denísov to the sergeant at parting if you have been lying I ll have you hanged like a dog but if it s true you shall have a hundred gold pieces!

ppeared nto the forest, a d Cou t Orló Den so ha in seen Grék off returned sh en from the freshness of the early dawn d excited b what he had undertaken on his own respo bil ty a d be an look n t the h lece t e

directio b t th u h the column wo u i e ber ble quit f r ff they w e not to be seen It seemed t the count th t th gs were be n to tir n the F ench camp and his keen-s hted djutant confirmed this.

Oh, t is really too l te said Cou t Orlóv look n t the camp

As f happens when someo e we h e trus ed is l er bel re our eyes, t udden l seemed quite clear d b ous t him that t serjeant was n impost that he h d l ed and that th wh l Russ n tta k would be ruined by th bs ce f those two egim nts w ch h w uld lead way hea n only knew here. How could o capture ommander in chi f from amo ch mass of troop !

I am sure that rascal wa lyi , sa d the count.

"They ca st ll be called b ck sa d o e of his su t wh l ke Count O ló felt di trustful f th d enture wh n h looked t the n em camp

Eh. Really wh t d you th nk? Should we let them go n o t?

"W ll h e them f tched back?

F h them back, f tch them back sa d Co t O ló w th udd n d t rm tion look ing his watch. It will be too l te It is qu te l ht.

A d th djuta t gall ped thr u h the f rest f er Grék When G éko returned Co t O ló Deniso excited both b the b d ed temp d b nly wa t g the I try column that till did n ppea as ll by the pro m ty f the nemy resol ed t dva ce. All his men f lt th sam excite-men

M t he comm nded n wh per The m took their pl es nd cros ed themsel es. "F rward, w th God d

Hurrah- h h reverbera ed n th f rest, d th Cossa k comp n es rail th ir la es d d a ci g o I nother as f poured t f sack da hed ga ly cross th brook toward th camp

O e despera fright ed ell f m h first French soldi who saw th Cossa ks, d ll who w re n the camp undressed and only just wak ng up ran off in ll direct ons, abandon ng cann ns mu kets and h rses.

Had th Cossack pursued the French w th out heed n wh t was behi d nd round them they would h e captured Murat and eryth there That was what the officers des red. But t wa imposs ble to make the Cossacks bud e when once they had got booty and prisoners N e of them listened to orders. F fteen hund ed prisoners and thirty-e ht guns w re taken on the spot, bes des standards nd (what eemed most mportant to the Cos- h d h l ke

themsel es— d t wa on this that the Cossacks all bus ed themsel es.

Th F ench ot be n farther pursued began to reco er themsel es they f rmed into detachme ts nd began fir ng O ló De iso till wa t g f r the other column to arri e d anced n further

Meant me a co d g t the dispos t o s wh ch sa d th t th F rst Column will march nd so on the f ntry f the bel ted column commanded by B nn sen nd directed by Toll h d tarted due order nd as always h p p n ha l got somewhere, but n t to the r appo nted pl ces. A lways happens the m n tart g heerfully began to halt murmurs w re heard there was a s nse of co fus on and finally b ckward mo em nt. Adjutants nd ge rals gall ped bout, h uted, grew ngry quarreled, sa d they had com quite wro and we l t ga e vent t a l ttl buse nd t l t ga e t ll up and ent f rwa d simply to get somewhere 'W shall get somewhere o other And they d d ndeed get somewhere th h not to th ir ri ht pl ces few e en tually even got t the right pl ce but too l te to be of ny use d only t me t be fired t. T ll who n th b ttl pl yed the part f W yrother t Austerl tz, gall ped as- d usly fr m pl ce to pl c findi e ery thin up d d wn everywhere. Thus h tumbled n Bago ut s corp n a wood when t was al eady broad d yl ht th h the corps hould l g bef h jo ed O ló Deniso Ex cited nd exed by the failur d uppos n that someon must be respon bl f t, Toll

also upset by all the delay confusion and cross purposes fell into a rage to everybody s surprise and quite contrary to his usual character and said disagreeable things to Toll

I prefer not to take lessons from anyone but I can die with my men as well as anybody he said and advanced with a single division

Coming out onto a field under the enemy s fire this brave general went straight ahead leading his men under fire without considering in his agitation whether going into action now with a single division would be of any use or no Danger cannon balls and bullets were just what he needed in his angry mood One of the first bullets killed him and other bullets killed many of his men And his division remained under fire for some time quite uselessly

CHAPTER VII

Meanwhile another column was to have attacked the French from the front but Kutuzov accompanied that column He well knew that nothing but confusion would come of this battle undertaken against his will and as far as was in his power held the troops back He did not advance

He rode silently on his small gray horse indolently answering suggestions that they should attack

The word *attack* is always on your tongue but you don t see that we are unable to execute complicated maneuvers said he to Milorá [illegible]

can be done now! he replied to someone else

When Kutuzov was informed that at the French rear—where according to the reports of the Cossacks there had previously been nobody—there were now two battalions of Poles he gave a sidelong glance at Ermólov who was behind him and to whom he had not spoken since the previous day

You see! They are asking to attack and making plans of all kinds but as soon as one gets to business nothing is ready and the enemy forewarned takes measures accordingly

Ermólov screwed up his eyes and smiled faintly on hearing these words He understood that for him the storm had blown over and that Kutuzov would content himself with that hint

He s having a little fun at my expense said Ermólov softly nudging with his knee Raévski who was at his side

Soon after this Ermólov moved up to Kutuzov and respectfully remarked

It is not too late yet your Highness—the enemy has not gone away—if you were to order an attack! If not the Guards will not so much as see a little smoke

Kutuzov did not reply but when they reported to him that Murat s troops were in retreat he ordered an advance though at every hundred paces he halted for three quarters of an hour

The whole battle consisted in what Orlóv Denísov s Cossacks had done the rest of the army merely lost some hundreds of men uselessly

In consequence of this battle Kutuzov received a diamond decoration and Bennigsen some diamonds and a hundred thousand rubl [illegible]

the staff

That s how everything is done with us all topsy turvy! said the Russian officers and generals after the Tarutino battle letting it be understood that some fool there is doing things all wrong but that we ourselves should not have done so just as people speak today But people who talk like that either do not know what they are talking about or deliberately deceive themselves No battle—Tarutino Borodinó or Austerlitz—takes place as those who planned it anticipated That is an essential condition

A countless number of free forces (for nowhere is man freer than during a battle where it is a question of life and death) influence the course taken by the fight and that course never can be known in advance and never coincides with the direction of any one force

If many simultaneously and variously directed forces act on a given body the direction of its motion cannot coincide with any one of those forces but will always be a mean—what in mechanics is represented by the diagonal of a parallelogram of forces

If in the descriptions given by historians especially French ones we find their wars and battles carried out in accordance with previously formed plans the only conclusion to be drawn is that those descriptions are false

The battle of Tarutino obviously did not attain the aim Toll had in view—to lead the troops into action in the order prescribed by the dispositions nor that which Count Orlóv Denisov may have had in view—to take Murat prisoner nor the result of immediately de-

trovin the h le corps,wh ch Pen msen and others may h e had in ew n r the m of the fficer who w hed t go to ct n to d s- ti guish h mself n that of the Cossack who wa ted mo e booty tha l e g t a d so o But if the m f th b ttle wa wh at ctu lly re ulted a d what all the Ru ia s of that day des ed—to dr e the F e ch t of Russ d destroy th rmy— t qu te clear that the battle of Tarutı j t because of its co gruities was ex ctl what w wa ted t that sta of the camp gn It w uld be d ff cult d even mposs ble to mag y result mo e opport tha the ctual t ome of th b t le. W th a mi mum f ff rt nd n gn f

Ava ce n exposure of the weak es of the French, d the adm trat o of th t hock which N poleo s army had only awa ted to begin ts fl ght.

CHAPTER VIII

NAPOLEON E TERS MOSCOW fter th b llia t victory d la M kow ther can be no d bt about th ctory f the battl fi ld ema n th ha ds f the F e ch. The Ru r t t and ba d ther e t cap tal Moscow abou d g p rms mu t d incalculable wealth N poleo h ds The Rus ia army o ly half th n th of the F ch, does not mak gl ttempt t ttack f whole mo th. N poleo pos t on is most br llia If ca e th fall f R s- army th d bl ts tr gth d destroy t egotia e d a tageous pea o case f a r fusal mak men m e on P ers- burg or even, the case f everse ret rn to Sm l nsk V l ema Moscow in short, pe ial g w uld seem be equired t eta th brill pos t th F ench h ld t that t m F that, o ly ery impl and ea y teps w essary ot to allow the troop to loot, to p epa w ter cloth —of wh ch ther was uffi Mos- cow f th wh l rm — d m thod cally to collect th p ov of wh ch (cco d g to th F nch hi to ia) ther were en u h Moscow to pply the wh le army f months. Yet N poleo th t grea est f ll gen uses who the hi to declar had con tr l f th arm took f these t ps

He ot merely d d no h f th k d b t on th co trary h used hi power to select th most fool sh and ruinous f ll th courses open to h m. Of all that Napoleon m gl t have do e w ter g in Moscow ad a ci on Petersburg or on Nizl n Nó gorod or ret ing by a m re northerly or more southerly r ute (say by the road Kut z afterward took) noth g more stup d or d sastrou can be im ag ned than what h e actually d d. He rem ined n Mosc w t ll Oct ber letti g the troops plu der the c ty then l es tat ng wh ether to lea e a garr so beh d h m he qu tted Mos- cow approa hed Kut zov w th out jo b t th turned to th e r gh t a d rea hed Málo- Y roslá et aga n w tho t ttempt n to b eak thro h a d take the ro l Kut zov took but et r n tead to M l ásk long th e dev tated Smolé k ro d Noth mo e stup d than th t co ld ha e been dev sed or m e d sa trou f r the army s th e sequ l howed. H d N poleo m been to dest oy h arm the most sk lf l trateg t could ha dly ha e dev sed y ser es of act on that would so com- plet ly ha e accompl hed that purpose i de pende tly of a yth n the Russian rmy m ht do

N poleon th ma of gen us d d th P t t say that he dest oyed h s army because h wished to r because he wa ery tup d, w uld be u j t a to say that h e had brought h s troops to Moscow because he w hed to nd be cause h wa ery lever a d gen s.

In both ca es h perso l act t ha ng no mo e fo th th e person l act ty of ny sold er mer ly co ncided w th the laws that gu ded the eve t.

Th h qu te f lsely ep esent Na poleo f cul es ha weakened n Mos- w d d so ly because th e results d d ot ju fy h s ct on He employed ll h b l ty d tren th to do the best h co ld f h mself d h army as h e had d n p ev us- ly d s l d d bsequently n 813 H t t t that tim was o less a to d th n t w Egypt Italy Au t d n Pru W do t k w f erta n n how f h gen us was g e Egypt—where f ty ur es looked dow po h gra deur

of whole corps w h ut fi ht d of f r tresses w th eg mu ncl German to cognize h ge th nly pl t on of th w carr d o n Germa y B t we thank God, ha e n need to ecognize his gen

also upset by all the delay, confusion, and cross-purposes, fell into a rage to everybody's surprise and quite contrary to his usual char

l

I ... a single division

Coming out onto a field under the enemy's fire, this brave general went straight ahead leading his men under fire without considering in his agitation whether going into action now with a single division would be of any use or no. Danger, cannon balls, and bullets were just what he needed in his angry mood

... y

CHAPTER VII

MEANWHILE ANOTHER COLUMN was to have attacked the French from the front, but Kutuzov accompanied that column. He well knew that nothing but confusion would come of this battle undertaken against his will, and as far as was in his power held the troops back. He did not advance.

He rode silently on his small gray horse, indolently answering suggestions that they should attack.

The ...
but you c
complic
dovich who asked permission to advance.

We couldn't take Murat prisoner this morning or get to the place in time, and nothing can be done now! he replied to someone else.

When Kutuzov was informed that at the French rear—where according to the reports of the Cossa
body—there
he gave a sid
behind him and to whom he had not spoken since the previous day.

You see! They are asking to attack and making plans of all kinds, but as soon as one gets to business nothing is ready and the enemy forewarned takes measures accordingly.

Ermólov screwed up his eyes and smiled faintly on hearing these words. He understood that for him the storm had blown over and that Kutuzov would content himself with that hint.

He's having a little fun at my expense, said Ermólov softly, nudging with his knee Raevski who was at his side.

Soon after this Ermólov moved up to Kutúzov and respectfully remarked:

It is not too late yet, your Highness—the enemy has not gone away—if you were to order an attack! If not, the Guards will not so much as see a little smoke.

Kutuzov did not reply, but when they reported to him that Murat's troops were in retreat he ordered an advance, though at every hundred paces he halted for three quarters of an hour.

The whole battle consisted in what Orlóv-Denísov's Cossacks had done, the rest of the army merely lost some hundreds of men uselessly.

In consequence of this battle Kutuzov received a diamond decoration, and Bennigsen some diamonds and a hundred thousand rubles, others also received pleasant recognitions corresponding to their various grades, and following the battle fresh changes were made in the staff.

That's how everything is done with us, all topsy-turvy! said the Russian officers and generals after the Tarutino battle, letting it be understood that some fool there is doing things all wrong but that we ourselves should not have done so, just as people speak today. But people who talk like that either do not know what they are talking about or deliberately deceive themselves. No battle—Tarutino, Borodinó, or Austerlitz—takes place as those who planned it anticipated. That is an essential condition.

A countless number of free forces (for nowhere is man freer than during a battle, where it is a question of life and death) influence the course taken by the fight, and that course never can be known in advance and never coincides with the direction of any one force.

If many simultaneously and variously directed forces act on a given body, the direction of its motion cannot coincide with any one of those forces, but will always be a mean—what in mechanics is represented by the diagonal of a parallelogram of forces.

If in the descriptions given by historians, especially French ones, we find their wars and battles carried out in accordance with previously formed plans, the only conclusion to be drawn is that those descriptions are false.

The battle of Tarutino obviously did not attain the aim Toll had in view—to lead the troops into action in the order prescribed by the dispositions, nor that which Count Orlóv-Denísov may have had in view—to take Murat prisoner, nor the result of immediately de-

n ms d

t

y

d

e

d troy th rmy— t qu
b ttl f Tarut n j t because of ts ncon
gru t e w s e ctly wh t w s w nted at th t
ta e f the camp g It v o ld be d fficult
a de n mpos ble to mag neany esultm re
oppo t th n th a t al t m of th b t
tl W th m mum f effo t d s g fi
ca t l e desp te th gre t st c fus th
most mpo ta t results f th wh le c mp gn
tta d th tr t on fr m r tre t to
d a expo u f th we kne s of the
F e h d the dm n t at o of th t sh ck
h ch N pol rmy h d only w ited to
beg ts fl ght

CHAPTER VIII

N PO O NTERS Mo ow fte the brill nt
tory *d la M k w* th e can b no do bt
ab t th t ry f th b ttlef ld rem n
the h d f th F e h Th Ru a et e t
a d b d th ci t capt l Mosc w
bo d g p m m n t o d
cal l ble w lth s n N poleo s h nd

rmy w th d bl ts t gth nd de t oy
t eg t te d nt ge u pe n ca e
f ar f l m ke me g m e Pet rs
b g e e the ca e f e r t u n
t Sm lé k Vil rem n M c
h t p l g u w uld eem t be
eq d to et the b ll nt po t n the
F h held t th t t m F th t o ly ery
s mple d y tep w ne es ry n t t
ll w th t oop t l t t p p w te
cl th g—of wh h the w uff nt M s-
w f th wh le my— nd m th d c lly t
colle t th p n f wh ch (d g t
th F ch h) th we gh n
Mos w t pply th wl l my f s x
m h Y t N p leo th t gre t f ll
g es wh th h d l e h d n
tr l f th rmy t kn f th e t p
H t m ely d d h g f th k d but
th trary h u ed h p w t el t the
m t fool h d u f ll the s s

pen to him Of all th t Nap leon m ght have
done winte ng n Mosc w ad ancing on
Petersbu g or n Nizhn Nó gorod or returning
by a more northerly or more soutl erly route
(ay by the r d Kut z v afterwa ds took)
notl ng more st p d or d sastrous can be im
agined than what he actually d d He rema ned
n M o t ll O t ber letting the tro p
pl nder the c ty then l es tat ng wl ether to
le e a garr s n behind h m he qu tted Mos
c w pp oached Kut ov w th ut j n g b t
tle tu ned to tl e r ght and rea hed Málo-
Y roslá ets ga n w th ut attempt ng to break
th ough a d t ke the r ad Kutu v took but
ret rtng n tead to M zl áy k alo g the dev
a t ted Smolé sk r ad N tl ng m re stup d
th n tl t o ld ha e be n d vi ed or more
d rous for tl e rmy a tl e equel showed

d

N p leon the m n of gen us d d th l But
t s y th t he destroyed h army b ca e he
w hed t becau e h w s erystup d w uld
be a unju t to s y that he had b gl t l s
ad d be

ny sold e merely c ncided w th tl l ws
th t gu ded th e nt

The h t r s qu te f l ly epresent Na
p l n f ult es as h g weake ed n Mos
w a d do o ly becau e the re ults d d
ot j t fy h a tons He mpl yed ll h
b l ty a d t gth t do th best h could fo
h m elf d h s rmy s he h dd e p e us-
ly d s h d d subs que tly in 8 3 H c
t ty t tl t t me w s n less t nd g tl an
t w n Egypt n It ly n Austr d in
P us W d n t kn v f rta n n how
f h g u was g u e Egypt— he e
f ty ntur looked down upon h gr nd u
—f h great explo ts ther re ll t ld us by
F nchmen W can t ccurately est m te h
ge u n Au tr Pru s f we h e to
d wou nf rm t n f m F h G rm n
d the mpr hen ble urr der
f wh l p w th t fight g nd f for
tr e w th ut g mu t cl e Germ n
to g h g us the only e pl t on
f the w carr ed n n Germ y B t ve
th nk God h n need to ec gn e h gen

ius in order to hide our shame We have paid for the right to look at the matter plainly and simply and we will not abandon that right

His activity in Moscow was as amazing and as full of genius as elsewhere Order after or der and plan after plan were issued by him from the time he entered Moscow till the time he left it The absence of citizens and of a dep utation and even the burning of Moscow did not disconcert him He did not lose sight either of the welfare of his army or of the do ings of the enemy ^ ^f ^
ple of Russia
Paris or of
cerning the terms of the anticipated peace

CHAPTER IX

WITH REGARD to military matters Napoleon immediately on his entry into Moscow gave General Sabastiani strict orders to observe the movements of the Russian army sent army corps out along the different roads and charged Murat to find Kutuzov Then he gave careful directions about the fortification of the Krém lin and drew up a brilliant plan for a future campaign over the whole map of Russia

With regard to diplomatic questions Napo- leon summoned Captain Yákovlev who had been robbed and was in rags and did not know how to get out of Moscow minutely explained to him his whole policy and his magnanimity and having written a letter to the Emperor Alexander in which l con l k

i g s ui atty explained his views and his magnanimity to Tutólmin he dispatched that old man also to Petersburg to negotiate

With regard to legal matters immediately after the fires he gave orders to find and exe cute the incendiaries And the scoundrel Ros- topchin was punished by an order to burn down his houses

ment issued

INHABITANTS OF MOSCOW!

Your mi fort es ar c uel l t His Majesty the Emperor an l Ki g des res to arrest tl eir co rse

tion chosen from among yo rselves will form your municipality or city government It will t ke care of you of your needs and of your welfare Its meml ers will be distingui l ed l y a red ribbon v orn across the shoulder and the mayor of the city will wear a white l elt as well But when r ot on duty they will only wear a red ribbon ro n l the left arm

The city police is established on its former foot ing and better order already prevails in co se quence of its activity The government has ap po nte l two commi aries general or ch efs of police and twenty commis aries or capt ins of wards have l een appointed to the different wards of the city You will recognize tl em by the wl te ribbon they will wear on the left arm Se ral churches of lifferent denomination are open an l di i e service is p rformed in them unhin lered. Your fellow cit zens are returning every day t their homes and or lers have l een given that they should f nd in them tl e help an l protect on due to their misfortun s These are tl e n eas ures the governm
rel c
nece
should it po ble forget the misf rtunes you l a e suffered l uld entertain the h pe of a less cruel fate shoul l l ecerta n that inevital le and ignomin ious death awaits tho e who n ake any attempt on your persons or on what remains of your prop erty an l f n lly that you should not dou l t that these will l e safeguar led since sucl is tl e will of the greatest and m st just of monarcl s Sol l ers an l cit s of whatever nat on y u may l e re estal l h n

civ l a tl orit es and your tears will soon cease to flow!

With regard to suppl es for the army Napo- leon decreed that all the troops in turn shoul l enter Moscow *à la marau le* to obtain provi sions for themselves so that the army m ght have its future provided for

With regard to religion Napoleon or lered the priests to be brought back an l services to be again performed in the churches

With regard to commerce and to p ro ision ing the army the following as placarded everywhere

PROCLAMATION

You peac f l inl al ta t of Moscow arti n

As looters

m that they are respected. A y lence t them hel His

He v s ted the Foundl ng Hospital and all w n the orpha s sa ed by h m to k ss h s wh te hands gra ou ly co ersed w th Tutólm n Then as Thiers eloquently recounts he or dered h s sold ers to be p id i forged Russ an mo ey wh cl he h d prepa ed Ra n the use of these mean by an ct worthy of h mself and of the French army he let rel f be d s- tributed to those who h d been burned out. But s food was too pr ci us to be gi en t f gners wh were for the most p rt ene- m es Napoleon preferred to supply them w th m n y with wh ch to purch e food f om out s de and h d paper rubles d tr buted to tl m

W th ef renc to rmy d scipl ne orders wer cont nually be g sued to nfl ct severe pun hme t f the n nperf rm ce of m l tary d t es nd t s ppress robbery

CHAPTER X

BUT STRA G TO SAY all these mea u es efforts d pl ns—wh ch w re not at ll worse than others issued n s m lar circum tances—d d n t affect the es ence of the matt r but l ke the h nds of clock det ched from the mech n m swu abo t n n rb trary nd a mless way w th ut gag ng the cogwheels

W th fe nc to the m l t rys de—the plan of camp gn—th t w k f genu of wh ch Th ers ma ks th t His g u ne er de m profo d m k llf l

peasa ...

eighbo hood f Moscow m y w th t y da ger bring th ir ppl es f ll k ds t w ppo ed m rkets f h h is th M kh áya S t d th th th Pro isio M rk t ( ) S h

Wednesday f each week re ppo ed th h t mark t da d t th t d fficien umber f troops will be ta oned l h h ghro d T esda d Sat d ys ch d ta es from th to n as to p ec th ca ts (4) S m l meas es ill be taken th t peasa ts w h thei carts d h rses m y meet w h h dra ce h t m jo rney (5) S eps will mmed ly be taken to re-establ h rd ry trad g

Inh b tants f th ci y d ill ges d yo w

fift e th f Oct ber—that pl n never wa r could b e ecuted f r t wa qu te out of

Lay yo espect d fiden t his fee d d no del y t w th us

W th the bj ct f ra g th pirits of th troop d f th people ews were n ta tly h ld d ewa d d tr b t d Th Em per od thr gh the t ts t comf rt the hab ta ts d, desp e h p eoccup ti w th ta ff rs h m lf is ted the thea ers tha er established by hi der

I eward t ph l th py th gr test ir t f crown d heads N poleo lso d d ll n h power H ca sed h w d M d m M t be cribed n th h t ble t tu u ther by mb te der fil l ff ct n w th th m jesti benev l f m narch.

l fied) wa to h e b en razed to the gr u d p ed qu t u eless The m g of the Krém l n nly h lped t wa d fulfill g N poleon s w h th t t sh uld be bl wn up wh n he l ft Mos w—as ch ld wants the floo on h h h h hurt h mself t b beaten The pursu t of the Russ n rmy abo t wh ch N poleon was so con erned p od ed n unh rd-of re ult. Th Fre ch g erals l t t ch w th the Russ n army f ty th us nd m n d co di g t Th ers t was o ly e entually fou d, l k los p n by th k ll— d pp ntly the ge us—of Murat.

W th fer to d pl m cy all N poleon rg m ts to his m gna m ty d just ce both t Tutólm n d t Yák les (whose chi f co ern was to obtain great o t and

conveyance) proved useless Alexander did not receive these envoys and did not reply to their embassage

W

cuti

Mo

With regard to administrative matters the establishment of a municipality did not stop the robberies and was only of use to certain people who formed part of that municipality and under pretext of preserving order looted Moscow or saved their own property from being looted

With regard to religion as to which in Egypt matters had so easily been settled by Napoleon s visit to a mosque no results were achieved Two or three priests who were found in Moscow did try to carry out Napoleon s wish but one of them was slapped in the face by a French soldier while cond

up the church That night the doors were again broken open the padlocks smashed the books mutilated and other disorders perpetrated

With reference to commerce the proclamation to industrious workmen and to peasants evoked no response There were no industrious workmen and the peasants caught the commissaries who ventured too far out of town with the proclamation and killed them

As to the theaters for the entertainment of the people and the troops these did not meet with success either The theaters set up in the Krémlin and in Posnyakóv s house were closed again at once because the actors and actresses were robbed

Even philanthropy did not have the desired effect The genuine as well as the false paper money which flooded Moscow lost its value The French collecting booty cared only for gold Not only was the paper money valueless which Napoleon so graciously distributed to the unfortunate but even silver lost its value in relation to gold

But the most amazing example of the ineffectiveness of the orders given by the authorities at that time was Napoleon s attempt to stop the looting and re-establish discipline

This is what the army authorities were reporting

Looting continues in the city despite the decrees against it Order is not yet restored and not a single merchant is carrying on trade in a lawful manner The sutlers alone venture to trade and they sell stolen goods

The neighborhood of my ward continues to be pillaged by soldiers of the 3rd Corps who not satisfied with taking from the unfortunate inhabitants hiding in the cellars the little they have left even have the ferocity to wound them with their sabers as I have repeatedly witnessed

Nothing new except that th

ong force—October 11

The Emperor is extremely displeased that despite the strict orders to stop pillage parties of marauding Guards are continually seen returning to the Krémlin Among the Old Guard disorder and pillage were renewed more violently than ever yesterday evening last night and today The Emperor sees with regret that the picked soldiers appointed to guard his person who should set an example of discipline carry disobedience to such a point that they break into the cellars and stores containing army supplies Others have disgraced themselves to the extent of disobeying sentinels and officers and have abused and beaten them

The Grand Marshal of the palace wrote the governor complains bitterly that in spite of repeated orders the soldiers continue to commit nuisances in all the courtyards and even under the very windows of the Emperor

That army like a herd of cattle run wild and trampling underfoot the provender which might have saved it from starvation disintegrated and perished with each additional day it remained in Moscow But it did not go away

It began to run away only when suddenly seized by a panic caused by the capture of transport trains on the Smolénsk road and by the battle of Tarutino The news of that battle of Tarutino unexpectedly received by Napoleon at a review evoked in him a desire to punish the Russians (Thiers says) and he issued the order for departure which the whole army was demanding

Fleeing from Moscow the soldiers took with them everything they had stolen Napoleon

too

on sc

army

yet

all tl

rema ked that t was ery good th g s tho e vehicles co ld be used to carry p o s o s the sick and the u ded.

Th pl ght l the whole army resembled that of o ded m l wh ch feels it pe h and does n t kn w wh t t s do ng To

a

rustle rushes tra ght t th h te s g s f rward d b ck a a d hast its own end. N poleo der p es ur from l whole army did the same th The ru tle of the battl l Tarutu fr ht ed tl e bea t a d t rushed f rward o t th hunte gun re cl ed him, turned back, d fi lly—l k ny w ld beast—ra back l th most d sad a ta geous d d gerous p th where the old c nt wa familiar

Dur g th wh le f th t p r od N poleon ho seems to us t h e b n the le d r of ll thes m em ts— th figu h ad of hip may seem t sa a e t gu de the es el— cted lik child who h ld co ple of str s ins d carriage thinks he dr g t.

CHAPTER XI

EARLY THE R I of the xth of Oct ber

legs that jumped bou h m Th l ttle do li ed in th ir shed, leep bes d Karatáev t ht t som t mes m d excurs n into th town b t l ays t rned a n P b bly t had er had n wner nd t t ll bel nged to body d h d n m Th F e ch called t Azor th soldier wh told t es call d t Femgálk h ra áev d th rs called t Gray som times Fl bb Its l ck f mast name, eve f b ed y d fi t col r did t seem tr bl th bl -gray dog n th lea t. Its furry ta l ood up firm d und plume ts b d legs erved t so ll th t uld ft gra full l ft h d leg nd run ery eas ly d qu kly th legs as f disda t se ll f E ryth g pleased t. Now t w uld ll ts b k, lp g w th del ht, w b k th n w th th u hful l mporta d n w f l bou pl y w th ch p f wood raw

P rr tt by n w co ted of d rty torn hirt (the ly emn n of hi f rmer clothin) p ir f soldi tr us rs wh ch by

Karatáe s ad ce he t ed w th string round the nkles f r warmtl nd pe sant coat and cap Phys cally he had cha ged much during th s m He no lo er seemed stout though he

calm and n matedly l rt s

Th f rmer l kness wh ch had hown tself ev n n h ey s was now epl ced by n ener get c ead ness for act on nd res stance His fe t were bare.

P erre first looked d n the fiel l across wh ch eh cles nd horsemen we e pass th t m rn ng then t the d tance acro s the r er then t the do who was pretend g to be h t h s

E ry t me he looked t h b re fee a e f mated s lf sati f t on fl tted across his f ce The ght f them rem nded h m of ll he h d exp enced nd learned dur g these weeks nd this ecoll ct n wa pleasant to h m

For som days th w tl er had been calm nd clea w th sl ght frosts n the morn what call d n old w es summ

In th sunsh n th w warm d th t warmth wa p ticul ly pleasant th the n g rat f esh ess of the m rn g f ost st ll n tl e ir

O erythi g—far nd ea —l y the m c cry tal gl tte een only t that time of utumn The Sparro H ll we s bl n the distance w th the ll e the church nd th l rge wh te h u The bare trees the sa d the b cks d oofs f the houses th gre n hu ch p re nd th corners of the wh t h use in the di t ce

h rt p p n hi mouth came f m b h d corn of th hed nd ppro ch d P err th fri dly w nk.

"What unsh M n ur Kirill! (Th

name for Pierre) Eh? Just like spring!

And the corporal leaned against the door and offered Pierre his pipe though whenever he offered it Pierre always declined it

To be on the march in such weather he began

Pierre inquired what was being said about leaving and the corporal told him that nearly all the troops were starting and there ou ... be an o ... lóv or ... was d ... he told the corporal that something should be done about him The corporal replied that Pierre need not worry about that as they had an ambulance and a permanent hospital and arrangements would be made for the sick and that in general every thing that could happen had been foreseen by the authorities

Besides Monsieur Kiril you have only to say a word to the captain you know He is a man who never forgets anything Speak to the captain when he makes his round he will do anything for you

(The captain of whom the corporal spoke often had long chats with Pierre and showed him all sorts of favors)

You see St Thomas he said to me the other day Monsieur Kiril is a man of educa tion who speaks French He is a Russian sei gneur who has had misfortunes but he is a man He knows what s what If he wants any thing and asks me he won t get a refusal When one has studied you see one likes education and well bred people It is for your sake I mention it Mons eur Kiril The other day if it had not been for you that affair would have ended ill

And after chatting a while longer the cor poral went away (The affair he had alluded to had happened a few days before—a fight be tween the prisoners and the French soldiers in which Pierre had succeeded in pacifying his comrades) Some of the prisoners who had heard Pierre talking to the corporal immedi ately asked what the Frenchman had said While Pierre was repeating what he had been told about the army leaving Moscow a thin sallow tattered French soldier came up to the door of the shed Rapidly and timidly raising his fin gers to his forehead by way of greeting he asked Pierre whether the soldier Platoche to whom he had given a shirt to sew was in that shed

A week before the French had had boot leather and linen issued to them which they had given out to the prisoners to make up into boots and shirts for them

Ready ready dear fellow! said Karatáev coming out with a neatly folded shirt

Karatáev on account of the warm weather and for convenience at work was wearing only trousers and a tattered shirt as black as soot His hair was bound round workman fashion with a wisp of lime tree bast and his round face seemed rounder and pleasanter than ... I sai ... smil ... the shirt he had sewn

The Frenchman glanced around uneasily and then as if overcoming his hesitation rapid ly threw off his uniform and put on the shirt. He had a long greasy flowered silk waistcoat next to his sallow thin bare body but no shirt He was evidently afraid the prisoners looking on would laugh at him and thrust his head into the shirt hurriedly None of the prisoners said a word

See it fits well! Platón kept repeating pulling the shirt straight

The Frenchman having pushed his head and hands through without raising his eyes looked down at the shirt and examined the seams

You see dear man this is not a sewing shop and I had no proper tools and as they say one needs a tool even to kill a louse said Platón with one of his round smiles obviously pleased with his work

It s good quite good thank you said the Frenchman in French but there must be some linen left over

It will fit better still when it sets to your body said Karatáev still admiring his handi work You ll be nice and comfortable

Thanks thanks old fellow But the bits left over? said the Frenchman again and smiled He took out an assignat ruble note and gave it to Karatáev But give me the pieces that are over

Pierre saw that Platón did not want to un derstand what the Frenchman was saying and he looked on without interfering Karatáev thanked the Frenchman for the money and went on admiring his own work The French man insisted on having the pieces returned that were left over and asked Pierre to trans late what he said

What does he want the bits for? said Kara táev They d make fine leg bands for us Well never mind

And Karatáev with a suddenly changed and

at th t had fo merly seemed so important. It d d
n w occur t h m to th k of Russ a or the

—— ~ l

I

ı ı

d w to t.

"There look at that sa d Karataev w yi g his head. People sa d they we n t Ch st ans b t they too h es ul It s h t the old folk used t say As e tu g hand n op n ha d, a dry h ds cl se He s n ked but yet he s gi e t back.

Karatá m l d th ughtfully d wa lent hile look t the p eces

B t tl ey ll make gra d leg b ds dear fne d, he aid nd went back i t the shed

CHAPTER XII

F ur EEKS h d p ssed s ce P erre h d been taken pri er d tho h tl e F ench h d f fered t mo e him from the me s t the of fi ers hed, h h d tayed the shed where he was first p t.

In burned a d devastated M cow P err experie ed lm t th extrem l m ts of pri va io m ca dure but th k to his phy cal tre gth d he lth f wh ch h h d till the b u co sci us d th nks espec l ly t the f ct th t th pr t n came so gradually that t was mpo bl to y when they bega h e du ed h p n t nly l htly b j yf lly A d just t th t m he bta d th tra quill ty nd ea f m d he had f rmerly t t e ch He h d lo so ght d ff t w y th t tra q ll ty l m d, that er harm y wl ch h d so m p essed h m th sold ers t the b ttl of Bo rod ó H h d so ht t pl l thr py n Freemaso ry th d ss p t ns of t wn l fe w her feats f lf cr fi nd n roma t l e f N tá h h h d ht t by easo g— d all thes qu ts d e p ments h d fa led h m A d n w w th t th k g bo t t he had f d that pe ce nd n er h rm y o ly thro gh th h rr f death thr h p u n d th o h wh t h o n ed K ratá

Those d eadf l m m ts l had l ed through t th execut ns h d as t w f ever washed way f m h m g t d memory th g tat g tl l ts d f l gs

ngles and e en rid culous H a ger w i s w fe and n ety that h s name sho ld not be sm rched n w seemed n t merely tri l but e en mus ng Wh t concern as t of h that s m l ere or other that woma s lead ng th l fe she preferred Wh t d d t matter to nybody a d espec ally to h m whethe o not they fo d out that th r pr sone s n me w s Count B zukho ?

He n w often remembe ed h s con ers t on w th P ce Andrew a d quite agreed with h m though he u derstood Prince A d ew s

u ll

any ment l reservat o The bse ce of ffe

p ess Here a d o fo th first t me l e f lly pp e ted the joyme t of eat g when l e w ted t e t d k g wl n he wanted to d k sleep g h n he wanted t l ep of w rmth when he wa cold of talk g to a f l l w ian when h w hed to talk d to hea h man Th s t f t nof o es needs—good food lea l ness a d f ed m—now th t he was d p ed of ll th e med to P erre t co t tute pe fect h pp es d the cho e f o cup t th t f h w y of l f —now th t th t ch e was so estr t d—s med t h m uch n easy m tt th th f rgot th t up fl ty f th comfo ts of l fe destroys all joy n t fy g n n eds wh le gre t f eed m n th ch of oc p t n— ch fr ed m s h s w lth h s ed c t n and h so l po t n h d g en h m l own l fe—s just wl t m k th ch ce of o up t n in solubly difficult and destr ys the des re nd

possibility of having an occupation

All Pierre s daydreams now turned on the time when he would be free Yet subsequently and for the rest of his life he thought and spoke with enthusiasm of that month of captivity of those irrecoverable strong joyful sensations and chiefly of the complete peace of mind and inner freedom

[illegible] and saw the cupolas and crosses of the New Convent of the Virgin still dark at first the hoarfrost on the dusty grass the Sparrow Hills and the wooded banks above the winding river vanishing in the purple distance when he felt the contact of the fresh air and heard the noise of the crows flying from Moscow across the field and when afterwards light gleamed from the east and the sun s rim appeared solemnly from behind a cloud and the cupolas and crosses the hoar frost the distance and the river all began to sparkle in the glad light—Pierre felt a new joy and strength in life such as he had never before known And this not only stayed with him during the whole of his imprisonment but even grew in strength as the hardships of his position increased

That feeling of alertness an [illegible]

[illegible] at the shed With his knowledge of languages the respect shown him by the French his simplicity his readiness to give anything asked of him (he received the allowance of three rubles a week made to officers) with his strength which he showed to the soldiers by pressing nails into th [illegible] the [illegible] his [illegible] out [illegible] seemed to them incomprehensible) he appeared to them a rather mysterious and superior being The very qualities that had been a hindrance if not actually harmful to him in the world he had lived in —his strength his disdain for the comforts of life his absent mindedness and simplicity— here among these people gave him almost the status of a hero And Pierre felt that their opinion placed responsibilities upon him

CHAPTER XIII

THE FRENCH EVACUATION began on the night between the sixth and seventh of October kitchens and sheds were dismantled carts loaded and troops and baggage trains started

At seven in the morning a French convoy in marching trim wearing shakos and carrying muskets knapsacks and enormous sacks stood in front of the sheds and animated French talk mingled with curses sounded all along the lines

In the shed everyone was ready dressed belted shod and only awaited the order to start The sick soldier Sokolóv pale and thin with dark shadows round his eyes alone sat in his place barefoot and not dressed His eyes prominent from the emaciation of his face gazed inquiringly at his comrades who were paying no attention to him and he moaned regularly and quietly It was evidently not so much his sufferings that caused him to moan (he had dysentery) as his fear and grief at being left alone

Pierre girt with a rope round his waist and wearing shoes Karatáev had made for him from some leather a French soldier had torn off a tea chest and brought to have his boots mended with went up to the sick man and squatted down beside him

You know Sokolóv they are *not* all going away! They have a hospital here You may be better off than we others said Pierre

O Lord! Oh it will be the death of me! O Lord! moaned the man in a louder voice

I ll go and ask them again directly said Pierre rising and going to the door of the shed.

Just as Pierre reached the door the corporal who had offered him a pipe the day before came up to it with two soldiers The corporal and soldiers were in marching kit with knapsacks and shakos that had metal straps and these changed their familiar faces

The corporal came according to orders to shut the door The prisoners had to be counted before being let out

Corporal what will they do with the sick man? Pierre began

But even as he spoke he began to doubt whether this was the corporal he knew or a stranger so unlike himself did the corporal seem [illegible] —

[illegible] corporal frowned at Pierre s words and uttering some meaningless oaths slammed the door The shed became semidark and the sharp rattle of the drums on two sides drowned the sick man s groans

There it is! *It* again! said Pierre to himself and an involuntary shudder ran down his spine In the corporal s changed face in

t.e sound of his voice n the sturr n d deaf e.n.r noise of the drums he recogn zed that mrvterious, callous force wh ch compelled peo-p e against th ir w'll to kill th ir fell w men—tat f rce th effect f wh ch he had w t essed during the executi ns. To fear or to try to es-cape that force t ddress entreat es or exho tations to those who served as ts tool was use-less. P erre knew this n w One had t wa t nd endure. He did n t gain go to the s ck man, nor turn to look t him, but tood frown ing by the door f the hut.

When that doo was opened nd the pris-oners, cro dm ag nst ne ther l'k flock of sheep, sq eezed to th exit, P rr pushed his wa f rward d approached th t ery cap-tain who as th corporal had assured him was ready to do ything f him. Th capta n was also in marchin kit, d on his cold face p-peared that same t wh ch P err had ecog nized in th corporal words d n the roll of t. drums.

Pass pass n the captain reiterated, frowni g sternl d lookin t th prisoners wh thro ged past him.

Pierre went up t him, though h knew his ttempt ould be va n.

"What now th officer asked with cold look as if t recognizing P erre.

P erre told him bout the ck man

"He'll manage to walk, devil take him said t. captain. "Pass on pass n! he continued witho t looki g t P erre

"B t h is dri P erre gain began.

"Be so good sho ted the captain, frown-ing angril

Dr m-da-d -dam d m-d m rattled the drums, and P err derstood that this mysteri ous f rr *complet* l co trolled these m n and tha t wa ow useless to sa y more

The S erpriso ers wer sep rated from th so diers and told t march n fro t. There were bout thirty offi ers, w th P rre am g them, and bou three hundred m n.

Th offi ers wh had com from th other sheds wer all strangers to P err nd m ch bet er dressed tha he. They looked t him and t his shoes mistrustfully as t l en Not far fr m him walked *f t majo w th* sal low bloa ed, ry fa who was wearin Ka tin dress grown t ed rou d w th tow l and ho er d tl enjo ed the espect of hi f llow priso ers. He kept o hand n which he clasped his t bacco po ch. ns d th bosom f his dress g gown d held th tem of his pe firmly with th ther *Panting* and puffing, the majo grumbled nd growled at everybody because he tho ght he was be n pushed a d that they were all hurry n when they had no-where to hurry to nd were all urprised at someth when there was noth g to be ur p ised at. Another thin l ttle officer was peak to every ne conjecturi g where they were n w be g taken and how f they w uld get that day An official n felt boots and wear n commissari t un f rm ra round from s de t s de and gazed at the ru n of Moscow loudly nnounci g his observat ons as to wh t had been burned down nd what this or that part of the city was that they could see. A third officer who by his ccent was P le d sp ted

is St. N cholas or St. Blas us You see i u d down and there s n end of t. What a e you push n f r? Isn t the road w de en u h said he turn ng to a man behind him who was not push n him at ll.

Oh oh, h What ha they d ne the priso ers on one d d an ther were heard saying as they gazed on th charred ru ns. "All beyond there e and Z bo a d n the Krém-l Just look! There not half of t left. Yes I told you—the whol quarter beyo d the ri er nd so t is.

"Well, ou know t burned so what s the use of talki g sa d the major

As they passed near church n the Khamó n'ki (e of the few u burned quarters of Moscow) th whol *mass of prisoners suddenly* started t on s d nd exclamati ns f horror and disgust were heard.

Ah th villa ns What h th ns Yes dead, dead, so he is. And meared w th some-th

P erre too drew nea the church where the

d d h f und that this was th bod of man, set upr ht gainst the palings w th ts face meared w th soot.

Go o ! What th devil Go on! Thirty thousa d devils! th con y guards began curs nd th French sold ers, w th fresh irulenc dro way w th their wo ds the crowd f prisoners who were gazing t th dead man

CHAPTER XIV

THROUGH THE CROSS STREETS of the Khamóvni ki quarter the prisoners marched followed only by their escort and the vehicles and wag ons belonging to that escort but when they reached the supply stores they came among a huge and closely packed train of artillery min gled with private vehicles

At the bridge they all halted waiting for those in front to get across From the bridge they had a view of endless lines of moving bag gage trains before and behind them To the right where the Kaluga road turns near Nes kuchny endless rows of troops and carts stretched away into the distance These were troops of Beauharnais corps which had start ed before any of the others Behind along the riverside and across the Stone Bridge were Ney s troops and transport

Davout s troops in whose charge were the prisoners were crossing the Crimean bridge and some were already debouching n ~
x
(
1 o scow and reached the Ka luga road when the vanguard of Ney s army was already emerging from the Great Ordynka Street

When they had crossed the Crimean bridge the prisoners moved a few steps forward and halt ed and again moved on and from all sides ve hicles and men crowded closer and closer to gether They advanced the few hundred paces that separated the bridge from the Kaluga road taking more than an hour to do so and came out up on the square where the streets of the Transmoskvá ward and the Kaluga road converge and the prisoners jammed close to gether had to stand for some hours at that cross way From all s des like the roar of the sea were heard the rattle of wheels the tramp of feet and incessant shouts of anger and abuse Pierre stood pressed against the wall of a charred house listening to that noise which mingled in his imagination with the roll of the drums

To ~

Look there those are furs they exclaimed Just see what the blackguards have looted There! See what that one has behind in the cart Why those are settings taken from some icons by heaven! Oh the rascals! See how that fellow has loaded himself up he can hardly walk! Good lord the
gr
s
fi o

That s right hit him on the snout—on his snout! Like this we shan t get away before evening Look look there Why that must be Napoleon s own See what horses! And the monograms with a crown! It s like a portable house That fellow s dropped his sack and doesn t see it Fighting again A woman with a baby and not bad looking either! Yes I dare say that s the way they ll let you pass. Just look there s no end to it Russian wenches by heaven so they are! In carriages —see how comfortably they ve settled them selves!

Again as at the church in Khamóvniki a wave of general curiosity bore all the prisoners forward onto the road and Pierre thanks to his stature saw over the heads of the others what so attracted their curiosity In three car riages involved among the munition carts cl se ly squeezed together sat women with rou ed faces dressed in glaring colors who were shout ing something in shrill voices

From the moment Pierre had recognize l the ~~

s t i i tun nor these women hurrying away nor the burned ruins of Moscow All that he now witnessed scarcely made an impress on on him—as if his soul making ready for a hard struggle refused to re ce e impressions that might weaken it

The women s vel cles drove l y Behind them came mo e ~
carriages
more sol

Pierre d d not see the people as individuals but saw their movement

All these people and horses se me l driven forward by some invisible power During the hour Pierre watched them they all came flow ing from the different street with one id the same desire to get on quickly they all jostled one another began to grow angry and to fight wh te teeth gleamed frowns fr n ned ever the same words of abuse flew from s de to s de and all the faces bore the same sw gg ingly reso lute and coldly cruel expression that had struck Pierre that morning on the corporal s face when the drums were beating

It was not till nearly evening that the officer commanding the escort collected his men and

th h ts a d q arrels forced h way in am the b ggage tra ns nd the p s ners hemmed n lls des emerged onto the Ka l ga ro d

They marched very qu ckly w thout est ng d halted nly he th un began to et Th baggage carts d ew up cl se togethe and th me began to p epare f r the r n ght s rest. They ll ppe ed ery a d diss t fied Fo lo g time o ths gry h ts a d fi l t could be heard f m lls des A carr ge th t f llowed the esco t ra t to one of th carts d k ocked hol n t w th ts pole Se eral soldiers ra t wa d the cart from d fferent s des some beat the carri ge h rses on their heads, turn them d others f ught m g thems l es d P erre aw th t one Germ w s b dly ded n the head by s d.

sam feel of u pleasa t waken g f m the hurry d eag rness t push on th t h d se ed them t th tart. O ce t a st ndst'll they ll seem d t u dersta d th t they did n t y t k here they we e g g d th t much that as p f l and d ffi ult wa ted them on th journey

Dur g th h lt the esco t tre ted the p s ers e w rse th n th y had d e at the tart. It was h that th p iso ers f the first time c ed h rseflesh f th me t rat n F m the ff er down t th l west ld e they ll h ed wh t m d l ke perso l p te g t ch f the p so ers, n u pected tra t to the f rmer f dly l t s

This p t crea d t ll m e he on call ing er th ll f p so rs t wa f nd that n th bustl f le g M w o e Ru n sold er h h d p t ded t suffer f m l c, had escap d. P erre saw F hma be t Russ sold er cru lly f tray g too far fr m th d d heard h f d the capta ep m d d th t n t t m t l comm ss ed fficer n o t f he escape f the R T th omm d fficer excus th t tl p so er wa ll d ould t walk tl ff pl ed th t the der to hoot tl os who l g d b l d P rre f lt that h t f tal f wh ch h d crusl ed h m dur g th ex cut bu wh ch

st engthened n h s soul a power of l fe independent of it.

He t h s supper of bu kwheat soup with h rs flesh and chatted w th h s comrades

Ne th r P erre nor any of the others spoke of wh t they h d seen n Moscow r of tl e o ghness of the r tr tment by tl e French or of the order to shoot them wh cl h d bee an nou ced to them As if in re ct on aga nst tl e worsen g of the pos t on they we e all par ticula ly an mat d d gay They sp ke of pe son l r m ences of musi g cenes they h d w tnessed d r g the camp gn and avo d ed all t lk of the r p esent s tuat on

swayed tra gely in the gray ha e It grew l g t The even g wa end g but the n ght had not yet come P erre got up a d left h new com p n ns cross g bet een tl campf es to the othe de of th ro d wh e he had bee told the commo sold er p so ers we e st t oned H ted to talk t them On the r ad he w stopped by a F encl sent el wh o de ed l m b k.

P erre t rned b ck not to h s compan by th campf re b t t n u harnessed cart

l ghte could mean

H h h l l ughed P erre A d he d l d to h mself "The sold e d d not l t me p ss They took me and shut me up They h ld m capt e What m ? M ? My mm tal soul? H h h l H h h l d he l ughed till tears tarted to h eyes

A m n got up d came to see wh t th s queer b g fell w wa l ugh g t ll by h m lf P erre stopped l u hi g got up t farth vay f om th qu t e m nd looked u d h m

Th h g dles b c that h d p evi ly sou ded w th the crackl g f campfi es a d the es f m ny men h d grown q t, th ed campfires were gr w p l d dy g d wn H gh up the l ght ky hu g the f ll moon F ests d f elds b nd tl e camp un een b f wer now vis bl n th d s-

tance And farther still beyond those forests and fields the bright oscillating limitless distance lured one to itself Pierre glar e l ~ the sky ar^d depths ⁄ me and it ᵤ₆ ierre And they caught all that and put it into a shed boarded up with planks! He smiled and went and lay down to sleep beside his companions

CHAPTER XV

IN THE EARLY DAYS of October another envoy came to Kutuzov with a letter from Napoleon proposing peace and falsely dated from Moscow though Napoleon was already not far from Kutuzov on the old Kaluga road Kutuzov replied to this letter as he had done to the one formerly brought by Lauriston saying that there could be no question of peace

Soon after that a report ^ t

s at Forminsk and that being separated from the rest of the French army they might easily be destroyed The soldiers and officers again demanded action Generals on the staff excited by the memory of the easy victory at Tarutino urged Kutuzov to carry out Dórokhov s suggestion Kutuzov did not consider any offensive necessary The result was a compromise which was inevitable a small detachment was sent to Forminsk to attack Broussier

By a strange coincidence tl k t

t Dokhturov whom no one had described to us as drawing up plans of battles dashing about in front of regiments showering crosses on batteries and so on and who was thought to be and was spoken of as undecided and undiscerning—but whom we find commanding wherever the position was most difficult all through the R ~ F from Aust k —

men to defend the town against Napoleon s whole army In Smolénsk at the Malákhov Gate he had hardly dozed off in a paroxysm of fever before he was awakened by the bombardment of the town—and Smolénsk held out all day long At the battle of Borodin when Bagratión was killed and nine tenths of the men of our left flank had fallen and the full force of the French artillery fire was directed against it the man sent there was this same irresolute and undiscerning Dokhtúrov—Kutuzov hastening to rectify a mistake he had made by sending someone else there first And the quiet little Dokhtúrov rode thither and Borodinó became the greatest glory of the Russian army Many heroes have been described to us in verse and prose but of Dokhturov scarcely a word has been said

It was Dokhtúrov again whom they sent to Forminsk and from there to Málo-Yaroslávets the place where the last battle with the French was fought and where the obvious disintegration of the French army began and we are told of many geniuses and heroes of that period of the campaign but of Dokhturov nothing or very little is said and that dubiously And this silence about Dokhturov is the clearest testimony to his merit

It is natural for a man who does not understand the workings of a machine to imagine that a shaving that has fallen into it by chance and is interfering with its action and tossing about in it is its most important part The man who does not understand the construction of the machine cannot conceive that the small connecting cogwheel which revolves quietly is one of the most essential parts of the machine and not the shaving which merely harms and hinders the working

On the tenth of October when Dokhturov had gone halfway to Forminsk and stopped at the village of Aristovo preparing faithfully to execute the orders he had received the whole French army having in its convulsive movement reached Murat s position apparently in order to give battle—suddenly without any reason turned off to the left onto the new Kaluga road and began to enter Forminsk where only Broussier had been till then At that time Dokhturov had under his command besides Dorokhov s detachment the two small guerrilla detachments of Figner and Seslávin

On the evening of October 11 Seslávin came to the Aristovo headquarters with a French guardsman he had captured Th r

a the whole army had left Moscow four days previously Th t same evening a house serf who had come from B sk said he had seen an immense army entering the town Some Cossacks of Dokhtú

— no ted ha g s ghted tl e
d t
dent
ngle
army
ed d
tu ov
— b
w ll ng t u dertake any a t o t

t

F th p rpose capable fhce is
ti was chose wh was t xpl n the
whol ff r by w rd f m uth bes des d l
— — n lk

h rses.

CHAPTER XVI

h d

Bolkho it o ched L t he k fter ne
o l ck t n ght. D mo t g t a c tt g on
whos w ttle fe h g g bo d EN RAL
s d throw ng down h s e n h en
te d d k p g

The ge e l n d ty qu ckl It ery m
p rt tl d he t som o wh h d en

B t th ery mp t t fr m G ner l
D kht ro d B lkh ft n t ng th
p doo wh ch he h d f nd by f el g n
th d k.

Th de ly had g e bef him nd
bega w k g som body

Y h y h n l A re

Wh ? Wh t th t? F m wh m? cam a
l py

F m D kht d f m Alexéy P t ó
h. N p leo is t F rmi k d B lkh vi
t ble t n th dark wh w p k
g b t gu ss g by th e th t t w n t
k ltsyn

Th man who had *wakened* yawned and
—
mbl g
s th s is

only a rumor

He e the d p tch sa d Bolkhovit nov

My orders are t g e t at o ce to the gen
eral on duty

Wa t moment I ll l ght a candle You
d m ed rasc l whe e do y u lways h de it?

The o de ly wa st k ng a l gt t a u u
bin n was f mbl g for s meth ng on the
candlest ck.

Oh the nasty bea ts! s d he w th d sgust.

By the l ght of th sparks Bolkho it n s w
Shche bi n y uthful f e as he l eld the
candle d the f ce of n ther man who was
st ll l ep This was Ko o nitsyn

When the fl me of the ulphur spl nters
h l n fi t blue and

and looked t the mes enger B lkh it o
w s besp tte ed ll over w th mud a d h d
sme red h s f ce by w p ng t w th his slee e

Who g the rep rt? nqu red Sl cher
bin t k n the en elop

Th news el able s d B lkhovit ov
P soners Co cks nd the sco ts ll s y the
same th ng

Th re noth ng t be d ne we ll h e to
w k h m s d Shch bin ng d go g

And n f t th he d in the n ghtcap w s
l ft d at nce On K o nitsyn h nds me
r l te f th che ks flushed by f er
th e t ll em n d f r n nsta t a f aw y
dr my e p n remote from p e t f
f b t th n he *udd nly t ted* d h
f e med its h b tu l calm d fi m p
p e

W ll wh t s it? F m whom? he a ked
mmed tely but w thout h rry bl nk g t
th l ght

Wh l l t n g to the officer p t K no
nitsyn b k th l d e d th d sp tch
H rdly had he d o before h l wer d h s

tance And farther still beyond those forests and fields the bright oscillating limitless distance lured one to itself Pierre glanced up at the sky and the twinkling stars in its faraway depths And all that is me all that is within me and it is all I! thought Pierre And they caught all that and put it into a shed boarded up with planks! He smiled and went and lay down to sleep beside his companions

CHAPTER XV

IN THE EARLY DAYS of October another envoy came to Kutuzov with a letter from Napoleon proposing peace and falsely dated from Moscow though Napoleon was already not far from Kutuzov on the old Kaluga road Kutuzov replied to this letter as he had done to the one formerly brought by Lauriston saying that there could be no question of peace

Soon after that a report was r

n

seen at Formínsk and that being separated from the rest of the French army they might easily be destroyed The soldiers and officers again demanded action Generals on the staff excited by the memory of the easy victory at Tarutino urged Kutuzov to carry out Dórokhov s suggestion Kutuzov did not consider any offensive necessary The result was a compromise which was inevitable a small detachment was sent to Formínsk to attack Broussier

By a strange coincidence this t

khturov whom no one had described to us as drawing up plans of battles dashing about in front of regiments showering crosses on batteries and so on and who was thought to be and was spoken of as undecided and undiscerning—but whom we find commanding wherever the position was most difficult all through the Russo-French wars from Austerlitz to the year 1813 At Austerlitz he remained last at the Augezd dam rallying the regiments saving what was possible when all were flying and perishing and not a single

Smolénsk at the Malákhov Gate he had hardly dozed off in a paroxysm of fever before he was awakened by the bombardment of the town—and Smolénsk held out all day long At the battle of Borodin when Bagratión was killed and nine tenths of the men of our left flank had fallen and the full force of the French artillery fire was directed against it the man sent there was this same irresolute and undiscerning Dokhtúrov—Kutúrov hastening to rectify a mistake he had made by sending someone else there first And the quiet little Dokhturov rode thither and Borodinó became the greatest glory of the Russian army Many heroes have been described to us in verse and pro

turov sc

It was

Formínsk o-Yaroslávets the place where the last battle with the French was fought and where the obvious disintegration of the French army began and we are told of many geniuses and heroes of that period of the campaign but of Dokhtúrov nothing or very little is said and that dubiously And this silence about Dokhtúrov is the clearest testimony to his merit

I

stai

tha it has fallen into it by chance and is interfering with its action and tossing about in it is its most important part The man who does not understand the construction of the machine cannot conceive that the small connecting cogwheel which revolves quietly is one of the most essential parts of the machine and not the shaving which merely harms and hinders the working

On the tenth of October when Dokhturov had gone halfway to Formínsk and stopped at the village of Aristóvo preparing faithfully to execute the orders he had received the whole French army having in its convulsive movement reached Murat s position apparently in order to give battle—suddenly without any reason turned off to the left onto the new Kaluga road and began to enter Formínsk where only Broussier had been till then At that time Dokhturov had under his comma

be

gr

to

gu he had captured The

was there and the whole army had left Moscow four days previously That same evening a house serf who had come from Borovsk said he had seen an immense army entering the town Some Cossacks of Dokhtu

no th. O the o e hand the French had oc cu ed Moscow O the other Kutuzo felt assured with all his bein that the t rrible blow into which h d all the Russ n h d put their whole trength must ha e been mo tal. B t ma y case proof wer needed he had waited wh le month f r them d grew more impatient the l ger he wa ted. Ly n o his bed duri g those sleepless n hts he did just what he reproached those you ger gen erals f r d H imagined ll sorts of pos sib co tingencies, just like th younger men but th this difference that he saw th usands of co tingencies nstead of two three and based thin n them. Th l nger he thought the m re conti gencies p esented themsel es. H imagi ed all sorts of mo e ments of the N poleon army as a whol or in sections—agai st P tersburg, or gainst him, or t o tflank him. H thought too of the poss bil ty (which h feared most f all) that N poleo m ht fi ht him w th his own weapon d rema n n Moscow waiting him. K tuzo even imagined that N poleon army might turn back through Medyn nd Yukh nó but th on thi h could no f esee was what happened—the insane, convuls e stampede f N poleo army duri its first eleven days f er lea in Moscow stamped hich mad poss bl what Kutuzov had not yet even dared t think f—the complete ex termination f th French. D okh report bout Brouss er di is n th guerrillas e ports f distress in N poleo army rum rs f prep rations f lea in Moscow all con firmed th suppos ti n that th F ench army was beaten d p epari for fl ght. But these were nl suppos ti ns, which seemed im portant to th youn er men b t no to Kutu zov W th his sixty years experi ce h knew what val e to ttach to rumors, knew how pt peopl who desire thin are t group ll ew so that ppears to confirm what they desire, and he k ew h w readily n uch cases they omi all th t makes f th co trary And th more h desired th less h all wed him self to belie t. Thi questi bso bed all his mental powers. All else was to him only lif cust mary routi e. T uch customary routi bel nged his co ersati n w th th staff, th letters h wrot from Tarutı o o M dam d Sta l, th readi g of no els, the distributio f wards, his correspondence with Petersburg d so n. B th destru tion f th French, which h al n f esaw was his heart s desire.

On the n ht of the eleventh of October he l y lean ng on his arm nd th nk ng of that.

There was tir in the next room and he heard the step f Toll Ko o nitsyn and B lkhovit n

Eh who s there? Come in come n! What news th field marshal called out to them

Wh l a footman was l ghting candle Toll commun cated the ubstance of the news.

Who b u ht t a ked Kut w th a look which when the candle was l t, struck Toll by its cold severity

Th re can be no doubt bout it, you H h- ness.

Call h m n call him here

Kutuzo sat up w th one leg hanging down fr m the bed and hi b p unch estu ga n t the other wh ch was doubled u der him. H screwed up hi seei g eye t crutin the messe ger m re carefully as f w h g to read n his fa e what p eoccup ed his own mind.

"T ll me, tell me, friend sa d he to Bolk hovitino n his low ged vo ce as he pulled together th shirt which gaped open on his chest, com nearer— earer What news ha e you b ou ht me Eh. That N poleon has left Moscow? Ar you ure Eh

Bolkh t ga d tailed account from the beginn g of ll h had been t ld to re port.

"Speak qu ck qu cker! Don t torture me Kutuzo nterrupted him.

ed him. H tr ed to say som thi b t his e ddenly puckered and wrinkled he wa ed his rm t Toll d turned the oppos e s de of the room, t th rner darkened by the on th t hu g there.

O Lord, my Creato Th u has hea d ou pra er said h n tremulous ce w th f lded ha ds. Russ is sa ed. I thank Thee, O Lord d h wept.

CHAPTER XVIII

FROM THE TI E he recei ed this news to the end of the campaign all Kutur ti ty was directed t ward estrain n his troops, by thority by guile and by entreaty from us less tta ks, ma euvers, encounters w th th perishing enemy Dokh uro went to Málo-Yarosla ts, but Kutuzov l ered w th the ma n rm d ga e rders f the evacua ti n f Kal ga—a etreat beyond which town

legs in their woolen stockings to the earthen floor and began putting on his boots Then he took off his nightcap combed his hair over his temples and donned his cap

Did you get here quickly? Let us go to his Highness

Konovnitsyn had understood at once that the news brought was of great importance and that no time must be lost He did not consider or ask himself whether the news was good or bad That did not interest him He regarded the whole business of the war not with his intelligence or his reason but by something else There was within him a deep unexpressed conviction that all would be well but that one must not trust to this and still less speak about it but must only attend to one s own work And he did his work giving his whole strength to the task

Peter Petróvich Konovnitsyn like Dokhturov seems to have been included merely for propriety s sake in the list of the so called heroes of 181 —the Barclays Raévskis Ermólovs Plátovs and Milorádoviches Like Dokhturov he had the reputation of being a man of very limited capacity and information and like Dokhturov he never made plans of battle but was always found where the situation was most difficult Since his appointment as general on duty he had always slept with his door open giving orders that every messenger should be allowed to wake him up In battle he was always under fire so that Kutuzov reproved him for it and feared to send him to the front and like Dokhturov he was one of those unnoticed cogwheels that without clatter or noise constitute the most essential part of the machine

Coming out of the hut into the damp dark night Konovnitsyn frowned—partly from an increased pain in his head and partly at the unpleasant thought that occurred to him of how all that nest of influential men on the staff would be stirred up by this news especially Bennigsen who ever since Tarutino had been at daggers drawn with Kutúzov and how they would make suggestions quarrel issue orders and rescind them And this premonition was disagreeable to him though he knew it could not be helped

And in fact Toll to whom he went to communicate the news immediately began to expound his plans to a general sharing his quarters until Konovnitsyn who listened in weary silence reminded him that they must go to see his Highness.

CHAPTER XVII

Kutuzov like all old people did not sleep much at night He often fell asleep unexpectedly in the daytime but at night lying on his bed without undressing he generally remained awake thinking

So he lay now on his bed supporting his large heavy scarred head on his plump hand with his one eye open meditating and peering into the darkness

Since Bennigsen who corresponded with the Emperor and had more influence than anyone else on the staff had begun to avoid him Kutuzov was more at ease as to the possibility of himself and his troops being obliged to take part in useless aggressive movements. The lesson of the Tarutino battle and of the day before it which Kutúzov remembered with pain must he thought have some effect on others too

They must understand that we can only lose by taking the offensive Patience and time are my warriors my champions thought Kutuzov He knew that an apple should not be plucked while it is green It will fall of itself when ripe but if picked unripe the apple is spoiled the tree is harmed and your teeth are set on edge Like an experienced sportsman he knew that the beast was wounded and wounded as only the whole strength of Russia could have wounded it but whether it was mortally wounded or not was still an u ... de ...

su ... t the wound was mortal But he needed further proofs and it was necessary to wait

They want to run to see how they have wounded it Wait and we shall see! Continual maneuvers continual advances! thought he What for? Only to distinguish themselves! As if fighting were fun They are like children from whom one can t get any sensible account of what has happened because they all want to show how well they can fight But that s not what is needed now

And what ingenious maneuvers they all propose to me! It seems to them that when they have thought of two or three contingencies (he remembered the general plan sent him from Petersburg) they have foreseen everything But the contingencies are endless

The undecided question as to whether the wound inflicted at Borodinó was mortal or not had hung over Kutúzov s head for a whole

h d—was too remote nd the r immed ate goal a Sm lén k toward wh ch ll the r des es and h pes en rm u ly nte s fi d n th mass urged th m o It wa not th t they k ew th t m ch food and fresh troops aw t ed them Sm lénsk n r th t they we e told w f th co trary the r upe i r ffic rs and

sel es d pushed n to Sm lénsk t a prom ed l d.

Com g t nt the h gh o d the F e ch fled w th s rp e rgy and u he d-of rap d ty t rd the go l th y h d fi d on Bes des the mm mpul e h ch bou d the hol cr d f F ench nt m ss and suppl d them w th ce ta e ergy there w s th ca b d g th m t gethe —the r gr t n mb rs As w th the phy cal law of

Ea h f th m des ed noth g mo e th n t g e h ms lf p p er to escap f m all th h rr nd mis ry but on the e ha d th f e of th s mm n ttract on to Sm lé k the goal d w each of th m n the sam d ct th the h nd n army to p co ld t urrend to c mp ny nd th gh the F ch l d tl ms l f ry con e t pp rt n ty t d t h tl em sel es d t rre der n th l htest d e t pret t ch p t ts d d n t lw y u Th ry n mbers d th cr wd d d sw ft m m t d p ed them f that p ss b l ty d ender d t t o ly d ff ult b t mp ss ble f th R n t t p th s m m t t h ch the F ch we e d ect g ll th ir e rgies Bey d ce ta n l m t n me h cal d rupt f th body uld l sten the p oces f d mpo t n

A l mp of w ca t be m lt d tan taneously There is a certa n l m t of t me in less th n h ch no am unt of heat can melt the n w O the contrary the gre ter the l eat the more sol d f d tl e remai i g s o v be come

Of the Russ a comma ders Kut o alone understood thi When the fl ght of the Frencl rmy alo g tl Sm lénsk r ad became well de f eseen on the

t gu h them el es t cut ff to se e t captu e a d to o ertl row tl e French and all clamo ed for ct

Kut zo al e used all hi power (nd such power i ry l m ted i the case of ny c m m nde n ch ef) t p e ent n tt ck

He c uld n t tell them what v e say now Wl y fght why bl ck the ro d los ng ur own men d i h m nly l ghter g unf r t te wretcl es? What s th u e of th t l en th d f the r rmy h n elted aw y n the ro d fr m M co v t Vyáz a w tl ut ny b ttle? B t dra g f m h s ged v d m wh t they could und rst d he t ld them of the g lde b dge and th y l ugl ed at and la de d l m fl g ng th msel s on rend d l t

two French co ps nd by w y ol repo t g the te t n to Kut v they se t h m a bl k sl et of p pe n an en el pe

And try s Kut m ght t estra n the t oop our men tt ked try t bar the d l f nt y egm ts w are t ld ad an ed to the tt ck th mus and w tl d um b t g d k lled and lost thous d f m n

But th y d d not cut off o o e th ow ny body and th Fre ch army clos g up mo firmly t th d ng co t n d while ste d ly melt g aw y to p rsue ts f tal path to Smo lén k.

seemed to him quite possible

Everywhere Kutuzov retreated but the enemy without waiting for his retreat fled in the opposite direction

Napoleon's historians describe to us his skilled maneuvers at Tarutino ~

into the rich southern provinces

But not to speak of the fact that nothing prevented him from advancing into those southern provinces (for the Russian army did not bar his way) the historians forget that nothing could have saved his army for then already it bore within itself the germs of inevitable ruin How could that army—which had found abundant supplies in Moscow and had trampled them underfoot instead of keeping them and on arriving at Smolénsk had looted provisions instead of storing them—how could that army recuperate in Kaluga province which was inhabited by Russians such as those who lived in Moscow and where fire had the same property of consuming what was set ablaze?

That army could not recover anywhere Since the battle of Borodinó and the pillage of Moscow it had borne within itself as it were the chemical elements of dissolution

The members of what had once been an army—Napoleon himself and all ... old ~

... on of the hopelessness of which they were all more or less vaguely conscious

So it came about that at the council at Málo-Yaroslávets when the generals pretending to confer together expressed various opinions all mouths were closed by the opinion uttered by the simple minded soldier Mouton who speaking last said what they all felt that the one thing needful was to get away as quickly as possible and no one not even Napoleon could say anything against that truth which they all recognized

But though they all realized that it was necessary to get away there still remained a feeling of shame at admitting that they must flee An external shock was needed to overcome that shame and this shock came in due time It was what the French called *le Hourra de l'Empereur*

Ho a wa the cheer the Russian troops gave when charg ng the enemy —Tr

The day after the council at Málo-Yaroslávets Napoleon rode out early in the morning amid the lines of his army with his suite of marshals and an escort on the pretext of inspecting the army and the scene of h ~

... ly nearly captu ed h ~

... army the booty on which the Cossacks fell Here as at Tarutino they went after plunder leaving the men Disregarding Napoleon they rushed after the plunder and Napoleon managed to escape

When *les enfants du Don* might so easily have taken the Emperor himself in the midst of his army it was clear that there was nothing for it but to fly as fast as possible along the nearest familiar road Napoleon with his forty year-old stomach understood that hint not feeling his former agility and boldness and under the influence of the fright the Cossacks had given him he at once agreed with Mouton and issued orders—as the historians tell us—to retreat by the Smolénsk road

That Napoleon agreed with Mouton and that the army retreated does not prove that Napoleon caused it to retreat but that the forces which influenced the whole army and directed it along the Mozhdysk (that is the Smolénsk) road acted simultaneously on him also

CHAPTER XIX

A MAN IN MOTION always devises an aim for that motion To be able to go a thousand miles he must imagine that something good awaits him at the end of those thousand miles One must have the prospect of a promised land to have the strength to move

The promised land for the French during their advance had been Moscow during their retreat it was their native land But that native land was too far off and for a man going a thousand miles it is absolutely necessary to set aside his final goal and to say to himself "Today I shall get to a place twenty five miles off where I shall rest and spend the night" and during the first day's journey that resting place eclipses his ultimate goal and attracts all his hopes and desires. And the impulses felt by a single person are always magnified in a crowd

For the French retreating along the old Smolensk road the final goal—their native

heroic feelings) nd the whole nnumerable multitude of s ch peasa ts, did not bring their hay to Moscow f the high price offered them, but burned it instead.

Let us imagi e two men wh ha e come out to fight d el w th rap ers accordi g to all th rules f the art f fenci g The fenc n ha gone on for some time suddenly o e of the combata ts, feeling hims lf w unded nd understa din that the matter is n joke but concerns his lif throw down his rap er and seizing the first cudgel th t comes to hand

chivalry nd, desiri to con eal the f cts of the case, insisted that h had gai ed hi vic tory with the rap er ccording to all the rules of art. O e can imagi what confus n and obscurity would esult from such n ccount of the d el.

The fencer who dema ded contest ccord to the rules f fe cing wa the French army his ppo ent who threw way th rap er and sna ched p th cudgel was the Russian people those who try t explain the matter according to th rules f f ci g are the historians who ha described the event.

— — — k wa beran

d nd the renewed treat, the burnin of Moscow th capture f marauders, th seizure of transports, d th guerrilla war were all d partures from th rules.

N po eon felt this, and from the time he took up th correct fenci titud in Moscow a d in tead f his pponent rap er saw cudgel raised bo his head he did n t cease to complai Ku uzo and to the Emperor Alexander tha th wa was bein carried on trary to ll th rules—as if there were y rules for kill ng people. In p of the compla ts f th French as to th nonobservance of the rules, sp t f the fact that to som highl pla ed Russians t seemed rather disgra ef l to fi ht with th cudgel d they wanted to assume pose *en q art o t er* cordin to all th rules, d to mak an dro t thrust *en prim* and so —th cud el of th peopl wa was lif ed with ll ts menacin nd majestic strength, d withou consulti g tas es or rules nd regardless of ny thing lse, t rose and fell w th tup d impac ty but consistently and belabored the French till the whole nvas n had perished.

And t is well f r a people who do not—as th French d d n 1813—salute a cord g t all the rules of art, and present the h lt of the r rap er gracefully and pol tely hand t to their magn n mous conquero but at the m ment of trial w thout a k ng wh t rules others have adopted n s mila cases s mply nd eas ly p ck up the first cudg l that comes to h nd and trike w th t till the feel ng of resentment and revenge n the r soul yields to a feeling of con tempt nd compassion.

CHAPTER II

O E OF THE MOST obvious a d dvantageous departures from the so-called laws of war is the action of scattered group aga nst men pressed together n mass. Such ction always occurs in wars that take on a n tion l character In uch ct ns nstead of two crowds opposi g each ther the men disperse attack s gly run way when ttacked by stronger fo ces but ga n ttack when pportun ty ffers. This wa d ne by th guerrillas in Spa n, by the moun tain tribes in th Caucasus and by th Russians n 8

Peopl ha e called this kind of war guer rilla warfare nd assum that by so call g it they ha e expla ed its mea g But such a war does not fit in under ny rule and d rectly opposed to a well known rule f tact cs which is ccepted as infall ble. That rule says that an ttacker should co centrate his forces in order to be tron er than his opponent t th m ment f co flict.

Guerrilla war (always successful as hist ry show) directly nfri ges that rule.

This contrad ct n arises fr m th fact that mil tary sci n e assumes the strength of n rmy to be dentical w th ts numbers. Mil tary scienc say that th m re troops the greater th tr gth. *Le gro b t ll ns ont toujou s*

Fo military science to say this is l ke d fining momentum mechan cs by fer nce to the mas nly tat that momenta are equal o unequal to each other imply because the masses in ol ed are equal o unequal

M mentum (quantity of motio) is the product of mass d elocity

In military affairs th trength of n army is th p oduct of its mas d som unkn wn x.

Military scien see n history numer abl instances of the fact that th ize of any

Large ba talions are always ictorious.

Book Fourteen: 1812

*

CHAPTER I

The battle of Borodinó with the occupation of Moscow that followed it and the flight of the French without further conflicts is one of the most instructive phenomena in history

All historians agree that the external activity of states and nations in their conflicts with one another is expressed in wars and that as a direct result of greater or less success in war the political strength of states and nations increases or decreases

Strange as may be the historical account of how some king or emperor having quarreled with another collects an army fights his enemy's army gains a victory by killing three five or ten thousand men and subjugates a kingdom and an entire nation of several millions all the facts of history (as far as we know it) confirm the truth of the statement that the greater or lesser success of one army against another is the cause or at least an essential indication of an increase or decrease in the strength of the nation—even though it is unintelligible why the defeat of an army—a hundredth part of a nation—should oblige that whole nation to submit An army gains a victory and at once the rights of the conquering nation have increased to the detriment of the defeated An army has suffered defeat and at once a people loses its rights in proportion to the severity of the reverse and if its army suffers a complete defeat the nation is quite subjugated

So according to history it has been found from the most ancient times and so it is to our own day All Napoleon's wars serve to confirm this rule In proportion to the defeat of the Austrian army Austria loses its rights and the rights and the strength of France increase The victories of the French at Jena and Auerstädt destroy the independent existence of Prussia

But then in 1812 the French gain a victory near Moscow Moscow is taken and after that with no further battles it is not Russia that ceases to exist but the French army of six hundred thousand and then Napoleonic France itself To strain the facts to fit the rules of history to say that the field of battle at Borodinó remained in the hands of the Russians or that after Moscow there were other battles that destroyed Napoleon's army is impossible

After the French victory at Borodinó there was no general engagement nor any that were at all serious yet the French army ceased to exist What does this mean? If it were an example taken from the history of China we might say that it was not an historic phenomenon (which is the historians' usual expedient when anything does not fit their standards) if the matter concerned some brief conflict in which only a small number of troops took part we might treat it as an exception but this event occurred before our fathers' eyes and for them it was a question of the life or death of their fatherland and it happened in the greatest of all known wars

The period of the campaign of 1812 from the battle of Borodinó to the expulsion of the French proved that the winning of a battle does not produce a conquest and is not even an invariable indication of conquest it proved that the force which decides the fate of peoples lies not in the conquerors nor even in armies and battles but in something else

The French historians describing the condition of the French army before it left Moscow affirm that all was in order in the Grand Army except the cavalry the artillery and the transport—there was no forage for the horses or the cattle That was a misfortune no one could remedy for the peasants of the district burned their hay rather than let the French have it

The victory gained did not bring the usual results because the peasants Karp and Vlas (who after the French had evacuated Moscow drove in their carts to pillage the town and in general personally failed to manifest any

... There were some that adopted all the ... methods nd had nf ntry art ll ry ... and the comforts of l fe Others con ... so. l f Cossack cavalry There were ... small scrat h gro ps f foot nd horse and ... of peasants a d land w ters th t re- ... ned unkno n. A sacrist n commanded one ... prison

passed he the part s themse ... at t...o n bold ess, feared every m ute to be surrounded nd captured b the French nd had the f rests w thout u sad ll n hardly daring t d smount n l lwa s e pect ing to be pursued. B the e d f O t be th kind of warfare had t ken d fi te h pe t ha becom leart ll what could be t red against th French nd what could not Now ... the comm d rs of det hm nt w th staffs, and mo accord t rules at a d s- ta ce from the French, still rewarded n ny t...s as imposs bl The small ba ds th t h d started their act t es l g bef re d h d l read bserved the Fre ch closely con dered ... comm ders of the

of t... guerrilla nthus sm. S nce ea l ing h d h party h d been n the mo All ... lo he had been wat h g from th f est tha ... th h ghroad l rre F n h ... f cavalry bagga d R n p son ers separa ed from th rest f th rm wh h ... as learned from p es d priso ers— ... un er trong escort t Sm l nsk Be- s... Deniso nd D...l kh (wh lso led small party d m ed n D n so n t) th comma ders f some l rg d n w th t... lso k w f this con o d D n so exp essed t, were sharp n g th teeth f t. Two f th command rs f l rge part es— P l d the ther Germ n— nt n vitatio t De iso lmost mul neou l re- q est h m t p w th th d is t tta k th con o

... bwother I ha gwown mu hes m se...f sa d D so n read n thes docu- me ts, d he wro the German that de- sp te his heartfelt des re t serve unde so ...l nt and renowned a general he h d to f rgo that plea ure because he ... lready un ler the command of the Polish general To the P...l h general he repl ed to the same effect, inform in h m that he was already under the com mand of the Germ n

Ha ... rranged m tters thus, De so a l Dólokho intended w thout report ng n at ters to the h her command to attack and seize th t con o with the r own m ll f rces. On October 22 it was mo ing from the llage of M kúl o to that of Shámshe o. T the left of the road between M kúl o and Shámshe o th re were l rge forests, exten l n in some pl ces up to the road itself thou h in others a m le or more back from it. Through these forests D nīso nd his part rode ll lay somet mes keep ng well back n them n l so et mes com n to the ery edge but ne er los n s ht of the mo F ench. Th t m rn

Cossa ks f Den so s party h l s ed nd carr ed off nt the forest two wagons loa led w th ca alry saddles, wl ch had tu k n the mud not far from M kúl no where the f rest ran clos to the ro d S nce then and unt l n n the part ha l wat l ed the mo e me t f the Fren h w thout tt k g It as necessary t l t the Fren h read Shámsl evo qu etl w tho t l rm n th m and then fter jo n ng Dól kho who was to co e t l t eve- n to con ultat on t wat hm hut n the forest less th n a m le from Shámshe o to surpr se th French t d wn f ll n l ke n ...l n l on the heads from two des, and ro t n l capture then all t one blow

In th r rear more th n a m le fron M ku l no where th f rest came r ht up to the road x Cossa ks were pos ed to repo t f ny fresh columns of French shoul l show them- l es.

Beyond Shám hevo, Dólokho was to ob rve th road n the sam way to fi d out t wh t dist ce there were other French troops. They reck ned th t the con o h d fifteen hun lred m n D nīso h d two hund ed nd Dól kho m gl t h e man more but the d par t of umbers d d n t d ter D niso All th t he now wanted to kn w wa wh t troops thes were d to learn th t he ha l to capt re a tongu —that s, man from the nem col umn That m rn atta k n the wagon had been mad so h ul th t the Frenchm n w h the wago h d ll been k lled l a l ttle drumm bo h d been taken al e nd l wa tragel he ould tell them noth n l fin e bout the troops n that column

army does not coincide with its strength and that small detachments defeat larger ones obscurely admits the existence of this unknown factor and tries to discover it—now in a geometric formation now in the equipment employed now and most usually in the genius of the commanders But the assignment of these various meanings to the factor does not yield results which accord with the historic facts

Yet it is only necessary to abandon the false view (adopted to gratify the heroes) of the efficacy of the directions issued in wartime by commanders in order to find this unknown quantity

That unknown quantity is the spirit of the army that is to say the greater or lesser readiness to fight and face danger felt by all the men composing an army quite independently of whether they are or are not fighting under the command of a genius in two- or three line formation with cudgels or with rifles that repeat thirty times a minute Men who want to fight will always put themselves in the most advantageous conditions for fighting

The spirit of an army is the factor which multiplied by the mass gives the resulting force To define and express the significance of this unknown factor—the spirit of an army—is a problem for science

This problem is only solvable if we cease arbitrarily to substitute for the unknown x itself the conditions under which that force becomes apparent—such as the commands of the general the equipment employed and so on—mistaking these for the real significance of the factor and if we recognize this unknown quantity in its entirety as being the greater or lesser desire to fight and to face danger Only then expressing known historic facts by equations and comparing the relative significance of this factor can we hope to define the unknown

Ten men battalions or divisions fighting fifteen men battalions or divisions conquer—that is kill or take captive—all the others while themselves losing four so that on the one side four and on the other fifteen were lost. Consequently the four were equal to the fifteen and therefore $4x=15y$ Consequently $x/y=15/4$ This equation does not give us the value of the unknown factor but gives us a ratio between two unknowns And by bringing variously selected historic units (battles campaigns periods of war) into such equations a series of numbers could be obtained in which certain laws should exist and might be discovered

The tactical rule that an army should act in masses when attacking and in smaller groups in retreat unconsciously confirms the truth that the strength of an army depends on its spirit To lead men forward under fire more discipline (obtainable only by movement in masses) is needed than is needed to resist attacks But this rule which leaves out of account the spirit of the army continually proves incorrect and is in particularly striking contrast to the facts when some strong rise or fall in the spirit of the troops occurs as in all national wars

The French retreating in 1812—though according to tactics they should have separated into detachments to defend themselves—congregated into a mass because the spirit of the army had so fallen that only the mass held the army together The Russians on the contrary ought according to tactics to have attacked in mass but in fact they split up into small units because their spirit had so risen that separate individuals without orders dealt blows at the French without needing any compulsion to induce them to expose themselves to hardships and dangers

CHAPTER III

THE SO CALLED PARTISAN WAR began with the entry of the French into Smolénsk

Before partisan warfare had been officially recognized by the government thousands of enemy stragglers marauders and foragers had been destroyed by the Cossacks and the peasants who killed them off as instinctively as dogs worry a stray mad dog to death Denis Davydov with his Russian instinct was the first to recognize the value of this terrible cudgel which regardless of the rules of military science [illegible]

On August 24 Davydov s first partisan detachment was formed and then others were recognized The further the campaign progressed the more numerous these detachments became

The irregulars destroyed the great army piecemeal They gathered the fallen leaves that dropped of themselves from that withered tree —the French army—and sometimes shook that tree itself By October when the French were fleeing toward Smolénsk there were hundreds of such companies of various sizes and char

up to Denisov and handed him a sodden envelope.

"From the general," said the officer. "Please excuse its not being quite dry."

Denisov, frowning, took the envelope and opened it.

"There, they kept telling us: 'It's dangerous, it's dangerous,'" said the officer, addressing the esaul while Denisov was reading the dispatch. "But Komaróv and I"—he pointed to the Cossack—"were prepared. We have each of us two pistols.... But what's this?" he asked, noticing the French drummer boy. "A prisoner? You've already been in action? May I speak to him?"

"Wostóv! Petya!" exclaimed Denisov, having run through the dispatch. "Why didn't you say who you were?" and turning with a smile he held out his hand to the lad.

The officer was Pétya Rostóv.

All the way Pétya had been preparing himself to behave with Denisov as befitted a grown-up man and an officer—without hinting at their previous acquaintance. But as soon as Denisov smiled at him Pétya brightened up, blushed with pleasure, forgot the official manner he had been rehearsing, and began telling him how he had already been in a battle near Vyázma and how a certain hussar had distinguished himself there.

"Well, I am glad to see you," Denisov interrupted him, and his face again assumed its anxious expression.

"Michael Feoklítych," said he to the esaul, "this is again fwom that German, you know. He"—he indicated Pétya—"is serving under him."

And Denisov told the esaul that the dispatch just delivered was a repetition of the German general's demand that he should join forces with him for an attack on the transport.

"If we don't take it tomowwow, he'll snatch it fwom under our noses," he added.

While Denisov was talking to the esaul, Pétya—abashed by Denisov's cold tone and supposing that it was due to the condition of his trousers—furtively tried to pull them down under his greatcoat so that no one should notice it, while maintaining as martial an air as possible.

"Will there be any orders, your honor?" he asked Denisov, holding his hand at the salute and resuming the game of adjutant and general for which he had prepared himself, "or shall I remain with your honor?"

"Orders?" Denisov repeated thoughtfully. "But can you stay till tomowwow?"

"Oh, please... May I stay with you?" cried Pétya.

"But, just what did the genewal tell you? To weturn at once?" asked Denisov.

Pétya blushed.

"He gave me no instructions. I think I could," he returned, inquiringly.

"Well, all wight," said Denisov.

And turning to his men he directed a party to go on to the halting place arranged near the watchman's hut in the forest, and told the officer on the Kirghiz horse (who performed the duties of an adjutant) to go and find out where Dólokhov was and whether he would come that evening. Denisov himself intended going with the esaul and Pétya to the edge of the forest where it reached out to Shámshevo to have a look at the part of the French bivouac they were to attack next day.

"Well, old fellow," said he to the peasant guide, "lead us to Shámshevo."

Denisov, Pétya, and the esaul, accompanied by some Cossacks and the hussar who had the prisoner, rode to the left across a ravine to the edge of the forest.

CHAPTER V

THE RAIN HAD STOPPED, and only the mist was falling and drops from the trees. Denisov, the esaul, and Pétya rode silently, following the peasant in the knitted cap who, stepping lightly with outturned toes and moving noiselessly in his bast shoes over the roots and wet leaves, silently led them to the edge of the forest.

He ascended an incline, stopped, looked about him, and advanced to where the screen of trees was less dense. On reaching a large oak tree that had not yet shed its leaves, he stopped and beckoned mysteriously to them with his hand.

Denisov and Pétya rode up to him. From the spot where the peasant was standing they could see the French. Immediately beyond the forest, on a downward slope, lay a field of spring rye. To the right, beyond a steep ravine, was a small village and a landowner's house with a broken roof. In the village, in the house, in the garden, by the well, by the pond, over all the rising ground, and all along the road uphill from the bridge leading to the village, not more than five hundred yards away, crowds of men could be seen through the shimmering mist. Their un-Russian shouting at their horses which were straining uphill with the carts, and

Denísov considered it dangerous to make a second attack for fear of putting the whole column on the alert so he sent Tíkhon Shcherbáty a peasant of his party to Shámshevo to try and seize at least one of the French quartermasters who had been sent on in advance

CHAPTER IV

It was a warm rainy autumn day The sky and the horizon were both the color of muddy water At times a sort of mist descended and then suddenly heavy slanting rain came down

Denísov in a felt cloak and a sheepskin cap from which the rain ran down was riding a thin thoroughbred horse with sunken sides Like his horse which turned its head and laid its ears back he shrank from the dri

rode an *esaul* Denísov's fellow worker also in felt cloak and sheepskin cap and riding a large sleek Don horse

Esaul Lovâyski the Third was a tall man as straight as an arrow pale faced fair h

yet at first glance at the *esaul* and Denísov one saw that the latter was wet and uncomfortable and was a man mounted on a horse while looking at the *esaul* one saw that he was as comfortable and as much at ease as always and that he was not a man who had mounted a horse but a man who was one with his horse a being consequently possessed of twofold strength

A little ahead of them walked a peasant guide wet to the skin and wearing a gray peasant coat and a white knitted cap

A little behind on a poor small lean Kirghiz mount with an enormous tail and mane and a bleeding mouth rode a young officer in a blue French overcoat

Beside him rode an hussar with a boy in a tattered French uniform and blue cap behind him on the crupper of his horse The boy held on to the hussar with cold red hands and raising his eyebrows gazed about him with surprise This was the French drummer boy captured that morning

Behind them along the narrow sodden cut up forest road came hussars in threes and fours and then Cossacks some in felt cloaks some in French greatcoats and some with horse cloths over their heads The horses being drenched by the rain all looked black whether chestnut or bay Their necks with their wet close clinging manes looked strangely thin Steam rose from them Clothes saddles reins, were all wet slippery and sodden like the ground and the fallen leaves that strewed the road The men sat huddled up trying not to stir so as to warm the water that had trickled to their bodies and not admit the fresh cold water that was leaking in under their seats their knees and at the back of their necks In the midst of the outspread line of Cossacks two wagons drawn by French horses and by saddled Cossack horses that had been hitched on in front rumbled over the tree stumps and branches and splashed through the water that lay in the ruts.

Denísov's horse swerved aside to avoid a pool in the track and bumped his rider's knee against a tree

Oh the devil! exclaimed Denísov angrily and showing his teeth he struck his horse three times with his whip splashing himself and his comrades with mud

Denísov was out of sorts both because of the rain and also from hunger (none of them had eaten anything since morning) and yet more because he still had no news from Dólokhov and the man sent to capture a tongue had not returned

There'll hardly be another such chance to fall on a tra
tack them by
other day on
will snatch the prey from under our noses thought Denísov continually peering forward and hoping to see a messenger from Dólokhov

On coming to a path in the forest along which he could see far to the right Denísov stopped

There's someone coming said he

The *esaul* looked in the direction Denísov indicated

There are two an officer and a Cossack. But it is not presupposable that it is the lieutenant colonel himself said the *esaul* who was fond of using words the Cossacks did not know

The approaching riders having descended a decline were no longer visible but they reappeared a few minutes later In front at a weary gallop and using his leather whip rode an officer disheveled and drenched whose trousers had worked up to above his knees Behind him standing in the stirrup trotted a Cossack The officer a very young lad with a broad rosy face and keen merry eyes galloped

A captain of Cossacks.

up to Denisov nd handed h m sodden en velope.

From th general, sa d the fficer Plea e excuse ts not be n qu e dry

Denisov frown g took th en elope nd opened t.

"There they kept t ll us It dangerous t dangerous, sa d the officer add ess ng the esaul whil D iso was read g th dispatch. B t Komaró a d I —h po nted to the Cossa k— ere p epared. We ha e each of us two pist ls. B t what this he asked, noticin the French drummer boy A prisoner Y e alread been ct n M I speak t him.

Rostó P tya excl med D niso ha ing run through th d pat h. "Wh d dn t ou sa who you were d turn w th smile he held out his ha d t th lad.

Th fficer as P tya Ros ó

All the wa P tya h d been prepari l imself t beha e w th De iso befi ted grown up ma nd n officer—w th u h t t ir previous cqua ta But as soon Deniso sm led t h m P tya bright ned p b ushed with pleasure f rgot th official man er he had been rehears nd began tell him how h had already been n battl ea Vyazma nd how certa n hussa had distin guished himself there.

"Well, I am glad t see you Deniso ter rupted h m, d his f a n ssumed ts anxious exp ess n

Micha l Feokl y h, sa d he t th sa l this is a fw m that German u k w H —h dicated P tya— is servin under him.

A d De iso t ld th sa l tha the dispatch just d l ed was repe t n [th Ger man general dema d tha h hould jo n f rces il him f ta k o th tran port.

If w do tak moww w h ll n tch fw m der ur oses, h dded.

Whil De so wa talk the sa l P tya—abashed by Den sov cold t d ppos g tha was d to th co d t n of his trousers—furti ly tried t pull them down under his grea oat so that no o should notice t, h l ma n m rtial n r as possible.

"Will there be ny d rs your h no h asked De iso holdi his ha d h sal t and esumi g th gam f dj ta d g neral f which h had p epared himself shall I rema w th h

"Orders? Denisov epeated tho gh f lly "But can you stay t ll tom wwow?"

"Oh please M y I stay w th you cried Pétya.

"But, ju t what d d the genewal tell you? To weturn t once?" asked Deniso

Pétya blushed.

"He ga e me no nstruct ons. I think I could he returned nqu ri ly

"Well ll wi ht, sa d Denísov

And turn g to his men he directed a party to go on to the halun pl ce arranged near the wat hm n s hut in the fo est nd t ld the officer on th K rghí horse (who performed th duties of n dj tant) to go nd find out where Dolokhov was and whether he would come that even Deníso h mself ntended go w th the l nd P tya to the edge of the f est where t reached out to Shámshevo to ha e look at the part of th French b ouac they were to ttack next day

"W ll old fellow said he to the peasant gu de, "lead us to Shámsh o

Deniso Petya nd the hussa who had the prisoner rode t the left cross a ravine to the edge of the f rest.

CHAPTER V

THE RAIN HAD STOPPED nd nly the mist was f lli g nd dr ps f om the trees. D iso the sa l d Pétya rod lently f llow g the peasant n th k tted cap who stepp ng l ghtl w th o tturned toes and m no se lessly n his bast hoes er th roots d wet lea es, ilently led them to the edge of the f rest.

H sce ded n ncl ne, st pped looked bout h m, nd dvanced to where the screen of trees was less dense O reach g large oak tree that had n t yet shed ts lea es he topped nd becko ed mysteriously t them w th his hand.

D iso d Pétya rode up to him. From the pot where the peasant was tand they could see th French. Immediately beyond th f rest, o downward l pe l y fi ld of p rye. To th right, beyond teep ra wa a mall ll ge nd a l d wner s h use w th a broken roof. In th ll ge in the house in the gard by the well, by th po d, o er all th is n gr u d d all al ng th road uphill from th b dge leading to the v llage n t more than fi e hundred ya ds way crowd of m could be seen throu h th shimmer g m t. Th ir un Rus ian sho tin t their horses which were stra ng uphill w th th carts and

Denísov considered it dangerous to make a second attack for fear of putting the whole column on the alert so he sent Tíkhon Shcherbáty a peasant of his party to Shámshevo to try and seize at least one of the French quartermasters who had been sent on in advance

CHAPTER IV

It was a warm rainy autumn day The sky and the horizon were both the color of muddy water At times a sort of mist descended and then suddenly heavy slanting rain came down

Denísov in a felt cloak and a sheepskin cap from which the rain ran down was riding a thin thoroughbred horse with sunken sides Like his horse which turned its head and laid its ears back he shrank from the driving rain

fellow worker also in felt cloak and sheepskin cap and riding a large sleek Don horse

Esaul Lovávski the Third was a tall man as straight as an arrow pale faced fair haired with narrow light eyes and with calm self satisfaction in his face and bearing Though it was impossible to say in what the peculiarity of the *horse and rider lay yet at first glance at the esaul* and Denísov one saw that the latter was wet and uncomfortable and was a man mounted on a horse while looking at the *esaul* one saw that he was as comfortable and as much at ease as always and that he was not a man who had mounted a horse but a man who was one with his horse a being consequently possessed of twofold strength

A little ahead of them walked a peasant *guide wet to the skin and wearing a gray* peasant coat and a white knitted cap

A little behind on a poor small lean Kirghiz mount with an enormous tail and mane and a bleeding mouth rode a young officer in a blue French overcoat

— 1 1 n a

on to the hussar with cold red hands and raising his eyebrows gazed about him with surprise This was the French drummer boy captured that morning

Behind them along the narrow sodden cut up forest road came hussars in *threes* and *fours* and then Cossacks some in felt cloaks some in French greatcoats and some with horse *cloths* over their heads The horses being *drenched by the rain all looked black whether* chestnut or bay Their necks with their wet close clinging manes looked strangely thin Steam rose from them Clothes saddles reins were all wet slippery and sodden like the ground and the fallen leaves that strewed the road The men sat huddled up trying not to stir so as to warm the water that had trickled to their bodies and not admit the fresh cold water that was leaking in under their seats *their knees and at the back of their necks In* the midst of the outspread line of Cossacks two wagons drawn by French horses and by saddled Cossack horses that had been hitched on in front rumbled over the tree stumps and branches and splashed through the water that lay in the ruts

A captain of Cossacks

Denísov s horse swerved aside to avoid a pool in the track and bumped his rider s knee against a tree

Oh the devil! exclaimed *Denísov angrily* and showing his teeth he struck his horse three times with his whip splashing himself and his comrades with mud

Denísov was out of sorts both because of the rain and also from hunger (none of them had eaten anything since morning) and yet more *because he still had no news from Dólokhov* and the man sent to capture a tongue had not returned

There ll hardly be another such chance to fall on a transport as today It s too risky to attack them by oneself and if we put it off till another day one of the big guerrilla detachments will snatch the prey from under our noses thought Denísov continually peering forward hoping to see a messenger from Dólokhov

On coming to a path in the forest along which he could see far to the right Denísov stopped

There s someone coming said he

The *esaul* looked in the direction Denísov indicated

There are two an officer and a Cossack But

1 1 utenant

as fond

now

The approaching riders having descended a decline were no longer visible but they reappeared a few minutes later In front at a weary gallop and using his leather whip rode *an officer disheveled and drenched* whose trousers had worked up to above his knees Behind him standing in the stirrups trotted a Cossack The officer a very young lad with a broad rosy face and keen merry eyes galloped

up to De isov and hand d h m a sodden en velope.

From th g eral sa d tl e fficer Ple e excuse is n t b ng qu t dry

Deniso f n g took the e el pe nd pened t

"There they kept t ll g us It s dangerous da ge us, sa d th ffi e ddres ng th esa l whil De iso wa read ng th dis p tch. B t K maró a d l —he p ted t th Cossa k— er p ep ed We h e eacl fust p t l B t wh t th h ked touci g the F e h drummer boy A pris er? Yo e al eady bee ct on? M y I speak t h m

"Wostó Péty l ex l m d Deniso h ing ru thro h the d p t h Why d dn t y u say h y u w e d t n g w th smile h held t h ha d t the l d

The ff cer as P tya R tó

All the way P ty had been p par l im sell t beha w th De f b fitt d gr wn up ma d ffi e —w ll ut l t t their p ev qua ta e B t as oon De iso smiled t h m P ty br ght ed p blushed w th plea ur forgot tl offic l m n er he had b h rs g d bega ll him h w he had l eady been n b ttl n r Vyázma d h w c rta n hussar l d d st gu hed hims lf the

"W ll l m gl d t s y u Deniso ter rupted h m d h f e ga ssumed ts us exp ess

M cha l Feokllty ch sa d h t th l th is ga fw m tl t G rm y u k w H —he d ted Pét) — ers g u d h m.

A d D iso t ld he l that tl d p h just d l e ed w ep t t f th Ger ma g eral dem d th t h h uld j f es tl h m f tt k o th tra port.

II e d tak moww w l ll h f m d u es l dd d

Wh l D iso w t lk to th l P ya— b hed l y D so ld t d ppos g th t t wa d t the co d t n f h tr users—f t ly t ed t p ll th m d n der h grea oa so that o ne l ld no- t, hil m ta g m l n as poss bl

"Will th be y d rs y l he sked D iso l ld h h d t tl sal e nd es m g tl gam f dj d g n eral f which h had p p ed l ms lf shall I em w th y h

Orders? De iso p ted l gh f lly

But can you stay t ll tomowwow?

Ol please May I tay with you? cried Pétya

But ju t w h t d d the genewal tell you? To w turn t once? asked Denisov

Petya blushed

H gave me no nstruct ons I th k I co ld? he etu ned qu ly

Well ll w ht sa d De isov

And turn ng to h men he directed a p ty to go n t the h lt ng pl ce rra ged ne r tl e wat l man hut n the f rest nd t ld the offi er on the K ghi horse (who perf rmed tl dut es of an dj t nt) to go nd fi d out where Dólokho was and hether he w uld me th t e e g Deniso h m elf intended go g th th es l d P tya t the edge of the f est wher t eached ut to Shám h t h look t the p rt of tl e F ench b ou c they were t tt k ext d y

Well ld fell w sa d he to the peasant gu d le d us to Sl ám he

D niso Péty nd the es l ccomp n ed l y some Co sa k d the hus who had the p sone rode to th left across ra ine to the ed e of the forest.

CHAPTER V

peasant th k tted cap wl tepp g l ghtly w th uttur d toes d mo g o se les ly h s bast shoes e th roots d wet l es le tly led them t th edge of the f est.

He as e ded n cl e st pped looked bout l m nd d a ced to where the scr n f tr es w less d n e O re ch g a large oak tree th t l d not y t sl ed its lea es l e pped d beck ed m) te ly t them w tl h h nd

D n so nd Pétya ode up t h m Fr m the pot wh the peas nt wa ta d g they could ee th F e ch. Immed t ly b y d the f rest d wnward l pe l y field of p g rye T th r ght b y d a teep ra e a a m ll ll g nd l nd wner h use w th a b k n oof In the ll g the h us n the ga d n by th w ll by th p d o e ll tle is g gro nd d all al ng th ro d uphill from th b dge lead t th llag n t m e th n fi hu d d yards way cr wd of m uld b e n thro h th h mm g m t The u Russ n ho t th horses wh h were tra ng uph ll w th tl carts nd

their calls to one another could be clearly heard

Bring the prisoner here said Denisov in a low voice not taking his eyes off the French

A Cossack dismounted lifted the boy down and took him to Denisov Pointing to the French troops Denisov asked him what these and those of them were The boy thrusting his cold hands into his pockets and lifting his eyebrows looked at Denisov in affright but in spite of an evident desire to say all he knew gave confused answers merely assenting to everything Denisov asked him Denisov turned away from him frowning and addressed the *esaul* conveying his own conjectures to him

Pétya rapidly turning his head looked now at the drummer boy now at Denisov now at the *esaul* and now at the French in the village and along the road trying not to miss anything of importance

Whether Dolokhov comes or not we must seize it eh? said Denisov with a merry sparkle in his eyes

It is a very suitable spot said the *esaul*

We ll send the infantwy down by the swamps Denisov continued They ll cweep up to the garden you ll wide up fwom there with the Cossacks —he pointed to a spot in the forest beyond the village— and I with my hussars fwom here And at the signal shot

The hollow is impassable—there s a swamp there said the *esaul* The horses would sink We must ride round more to the left

While they were talking in undertones the crack of a shot sounded from the low ground by the pond a puff of white smoke appeared then another and the sound of hundreds of seemingly merry French voices shouting together came up from the slope For a moment Denisov and the *esaul* drew back They were so near that they thought they were the cause of the firing and shouting But the firing and shouting did not relate to them Down below a man wearing something red was running through the marsh. The French were evidently firing and shouting at him

Why that s our Tíkhon said the *esaul*

So it s It is!

The wascal! said Denisov

He ll get away! said the *esaul* screwing up his eyes

The man whom they called Tíkhon having run to the stream plunged in so that the water splashed in the air and having disappeared for an instant scrambled out on all fours all black with the wet and ran on The French who had been pursuing him stopped

Smart that! said the *esaul*

What a beast! said Denisov with his former look of vexation What has he been doing all this time?

Who is he? asked Pétya

He s our *plastun* I sent him to capture a tongue

Oh yes said Pétya nodding at the first words Denisov uttered as if he understood it all though he really did not understand anything of it

Tíkhon Shcherbáty was one of the most indispensable men in their band He was a peasant from Pokróvsk near the river Gzhat When Denisov had come to Pokróvsk at the beginning of his operations and had as usual summoned the village elder and asked him what he knew about the French the elder as though shielding himself had replied as all village elders did that he had neither seen nor heard anything of them But when Denisov explained that his purpose was to kill the French and asked if no French had strayed that way the elder replied that some more-orderers had really been at their village but that Tíkhon Shcherbáty was the only man who dealt with such matters Denisov had Tíkhon called and having praised him for his activity said a few words in the elder s presence about loyalty to the Tsar and the country and the hatred of the French that all sons of the fatherland should cherish

We don t do the French any harm said Tíkhon evidently frightened by Denisov s words We only fooled about with the lads for fun you know! We killed a score or so of more-orderers but we did no harm else

Next day when Denisov had left Pokróvsk having quite forgotten about this peasant it was reported to him that Tíkhon had attached himself to their party and asked to be allowed to remain with it Denisov gave orders to let him do so

Tíkhon who at first did rough work laying campfires fetching water flaying dead horses and so on soon showed a great liking and aptitude for partisan warfare At night he would go out for booty and always brought back French clothing and weapons and when told to would bring in French captives also Denisov then relieved him from drudgery and began taking him with him when he went out on expeditions and had him enrolled among the Cossacks

An unmounted sharpshooter —Tr.

Tikho d.d n t like ndi g and always went on foot ever laggi beh nd the cavalry H was armed with musketoon (wh ch he car ed rather as joke) a p ke and an x wh ch h h used as wolf uses t te th w th equ l ese p ckin fleas out of ts fur or crunch n k bo es. T'khon w the equal ccuracy would p t logs with blows t arm length o h ld the head f the ax would cut th n l ttle pe cars poons. In D n so s p rty he held peculiar and except n l pos t n When anything part cularly d fficult o nasty h d to be do —to push a cart ut of the mud w th on shoulders, pull a h rse out f a wamp by its tail skin t. l k m n th F ench o walk more than thirty m les n day—every body po ted la h ly t Tikh n

"I on t hurt that dev l—he trong as a horse ther sa d of him.

Once Frenchman T'kh n was try g t capture fired p l t him ndsh thim n the fleshy part f th b k. That w u d (wh ch Tikh treated ly w th nternal and exter

Hall mat er ga n G u twist th Cossa ks would b nte him. And d makin f es,

wounded h seld m brou n prison

He was th bra es d mos useful m n n the part f und m pportun t es f ta k no cap ured k lled more Frenchm n d co sequ ntly h was m d the b ffoo f all th Cossacks and hussars nd will gly ep ed that rol w h had been sent by D n so rn gh to Shámshevo to cap ure n But whether becaus h had t been co en to tak only on French ma or because h had lep through th n ht, he had crept b day nto som bushes right mon th F ch nd D niso had w essed from bo had been d ected by them.

CHAPTER VI

A er l for som time w th the sa l bo ex da tta k wh ch n w eei g how ea they wer to th Fre ch, he seemed t ha d fi t l dec ded o D niso turned his horse d rod b k

w my lad w 'll go d ge dwy h sa d to Pé ya

A they pproached th wat hh use D nisov st pped pee in into the fo est. Am n the trees man w th l n legs and long s n trees a short j cket ba t shoes and ht ler ed d e

Den so he hastily u bushes rem ed h s sodden h t by ts floppy br m nd pproached his commander It was T'kh n H s nkled nd pockma ked f ce and n rro l tl eyes be med with self satisfied merr me t. He l fted h head l h nd gazed t D niso f repress n l u h

"Well where d d you disappea to n qu red Deniso

Wher did I d sappear to I went to get F enchmen nswered T'kh n boldly a d h rr edly n husky but melod us bass vo ce.

Why d d ou push yourself n there by d h h u ss W ll why h n t u t ken

Oh I took one ll right sa d T l on

Where he

" u ee I took h m first thi t dawn T'kh n cont ued p ead out h fl t feet w th outturned toes n the bast sl oes I took h m nt th f est. Th n I he n good nd th nk I ll go nd fetch l'k l ro

You e Wh t wo ue— t s ju t s I thou ht. sa d Deniso to th s ! Why d dn t you b w that o e

"What wa the good f br n h m T'kh n nterrupted hastily nd r l — tl t on wouldn t ha d f you. A f I d n t

l ghtly) Com l ng to th col el I sa u. He tarts ll nd udd nly there we e f ur f them They rushed t m w th the l tl w rds. So I went f them w th my ax this way 'What re ou up t says I Chri t be w th u h uted Tikhon wa hi arms w th n ery scowl and throw n ut h s chest.

Yes, we saw from th hall h w you took to your heels through the puddles said th sa l scr w up his gl tteri eyes.

Pétya b dly wa ted t la h but n t ced that they ll refra ed f m l u h H

turned his eyes rapidly from Tíkhon s face to the *esaul s* and Denísov s unable to make out what it all meant

Don t play the fool! said Denísov cough ing angrily Why didn t you bwing the first one?

Tíkhon scratched his back with one hand and his head with the other then suddenly his whole face expanded into a beaming foolish grin disclosing a gap where he had lost a tooth (that was why he was called Shcherbáty—the gap toothed) Denísov smiled and Pétya burst into a peal of merry laughter in which Tíkhon himself joined

Oh but he was a regular good for nothing said Tíkhon The clothes on him—poor stuff How could I bring him? And so rude your honor! Why he says I m a general s son my self I won t go! he says

You are a bwute! said Denísov I wanted to question

But I questioned him said Tíkhon He said he didn t know much There are a lot of us he says but all poor stuff—only soldiers in name he says Shout loud at them he says and you ll take them all Tíkhon concluded looking cheerfully and resolutely into Denísov s eyes

I ll give you a hundwed sharp lashes—that ll teach you to play the fool! said Denísov severely

But why are you angry? remonstrated Tíkhon just as if I d never seen your French men! Only wait till it gets dark and I ll fetch you any of them you want—three if you like

Well let s go said Denísov and rode all the way to the watchhouse in silence and frowning angrily

Tíkhon followed behind and Pétya heard the Cossacks laughing with him and at him about some pair of boots he had thrown into the bushes

When the fit of laughter that had seized him at Tíkhon s words and smile had passed and Pétya realized for a moment that this Tíkhon had killed a man he felt uneasy He looked round at the captive drummer boy and felt a pang in his heart But this uneasiness lasted only a moment He felt it necessary to hold his head higher to brace himself and to question the *esaul* with an air of importance about tomorrow s undertaking that he might not be unworthy of the company in which he found himself

The officer who had been sent to inquire met Denísov on the way with the news that Dólokhov was soon coming and that all was well with him

Denísov at once cheered up and calling Pétya to him said Well tell me about yourself

CHAPTER VII

PÉTYA HAVING LEFT his people after their de parture from Moscow joined his regiment and was soon taken as orderly by a general com manding a large guerrilla detachment From the time he received his commission and espe ci

ta

be

at u grown up and in a perpetual ecstatic hurry not to miss any chance to do something really heroic He was highly delighted with what he saw and experienced in the army but at the same time it always seemed to him that the really heroic exploits were being per formed just where he did not happen to be And he was always in a hurry to get where he was not

When on the twenty first of October his gen eral expressed a wish to send somebody to Denísov s detachment Pétya begged so pite ously to be sent that the general could not re fuse But when dispatching him he recalled Pétya s mad action at the battle of Vyázma where instead of riding by the road to the place to which he had been sent he had galloped to the advanced line under the fire of the French and had there twice fired his pistol So now the general explicitly forbade his taking part in any action whatever of Denísov s That was why Pétya had blushed and grown confused when Denísov asked him whether he could stay Before they had ridden to the outskirts of the forest Pétya had considered that he must carry out his instructions strictly and return at once But when he saw the French and saw Tíkhon and learned that there would certainly be an attack that night he decided with the

1

that Denísov was a hero the *esaul* a hero and Tíkhon a hero too and that it would be shame ful for him to leave them at a moment of dif ficulty

It was already growing dusk when Denísov

rough shelters in the glade and were kindling glowing fires in a hollow of the forest where

the French could not see th smoke I the passage I the small wat hhouse Cossack w h eeves rolled up was chopp ng some mutton I the room three officers of Deniso band ere con erung doo nto tabl t p Pétya took off his wet cl thes, ga them to be dried and nce began help g the fficers to fix up t dinner table.

In ten mi tes th table was read nd a napkin spread t. On the table were odka flask of rum, white bread, roast mutton n l salt

tting t tabl w th th officers nd tearn the fat savory mutt w th h hands, down which the grease tri kled, Pétya was n n ecstatic childish tate of lo f r all men d consequently f confid nce that others l ed him in th sam way

"So then what d you th k V l Dmi trich?" said h t Den so It s ll ht my staying day w th you A d t wa t f repl he nswered h wn quest n You see I was told to fi d out—well I m fi d n out. O ly d let me to the ry t the chief I d n t want reward. B t I wa t

P tya clenched his teeth d looked around throw back his head nd fl u ish g h arms.

I t the ewy chi f Deniso epeated with smile.

Onl please l t m command someth n so that I may really command P tya w nt on. "What would t be to ou Oh, ou wa t knife h sa d turn t n offi er h wished t cut himself p ece f mu

And he ha ded h m his clasp kn f Th officer dmired t.

Please keep t. I ha e eral l ke t. sa d P tya, blushi g Hea en I wa q te f getting h udd nl cried. I ha som ra rs, fi es u kn w eedless o es. W have ew tler and h ha u h cap tal th ngs. I bo ght t n pounds. I m used to someth g sweet. W uld ou l k som ?

nd P tya ran u h passage t his Cos sa k d bro ht ba k some bags which contained bout fi po ds f rais ns. H e some, ge tlemen h som

W wa t coffeepot, d you h asked the sa l. I bought cap tal o e from ur sutler H has plendid things. And h very honest, that th ch f thi g I'll be ur to send to you. Or perhap your fl nts ar ing out, are worn ut—that happens sometimes, you know I ha brought som with me here they are —and he showed a ba — a hu dred fl nts. I bought them ery cheap. Plea e take as many s you want, o ll f y u l ke.

Then suddenl dismayed lest he h d sa d too much P t a st pped and blushed.

H tried to remember whether he h d not d ne nyth else that was foolish. And running o er the events of the day he remembered the Fren h drummer boy It cap tal f us here but wh t of h m Wher h e they p t him Ha e they fed h m H en t they hurt his feel ngs he tho ht. But ha caught himself saying too m ch about the fl nts I e was now afra d to peak out

I might sk he thought but they ll say H bo himself nd so he p t es the bo I ll how them tomorrow whether I m a bo W ll t seem odd f I k P tya tho lt. W ll never mind and mmed tely blush g nd look nx ously t the officers to see f they ppeared ron cal h sa d

M I call n that bo who was t ken p soner nd gi e l im something to eat Per h ps

Yes, he poor l ttle fellow sa d D n sov wh ev d ntly saw n th shameful n th rem nd Call h m n H nam is V cent Bosse H h m f t l ed.

I'll call him said Pétya

Yes, yes, call him. A poo l ttle fellow" D niso repeated.

Pétya was ta d t the doo hen Deniso said this. H l pped n between the officers cam close t Deniso nd sa d

hut.

Boss V cent Pétya cr ed, st pp out side th doo

"Who do you want, ked o ce n th darkness.

P a repl ed that he wa ted the F ench l d who h d been captured that da

Ah Vesénn sa d Cossa k

V cent, the boy s name, had lread been cha ged b th Cossa ks to l y (ern l) nd nto l y b the peasants and sold rs. In both these daptat n th referen to prin (v) matched the impression made by the o n lad.

H is warming h mself there by th bon fire. H Vesé ya Vese va —Vesenn l u h g vo ces were heard call n to one a other n the darkness.

He s a smart lad said an hussar standing near Pétya We gave him something to eat a while ago He was awfully hungry!

The sound of bare feet splashing through the mud was heard in the darkness and the drummer boy came to the door

Ah c est vous! said Pétya *Voulez vous manger? N ayez pas peur on ne vous fera pas de mal* he added shyly and affectionately touching the boy s hand *Entrez entrez*

Merci monsieur said the drummer boy in a trembling almost childish voice and he began scraping his dirty feet on the threshold

There were many things Pétya wanted to say to the drummer boy but did not dare to He stood irresolutely beside him in the passage Then in the darkness he took the boy s hand and pressed it

Come in come in! he repeated in a gentle whisper Oh what can I do for him? he thought and opening the door he let the boy pass in first

When the boy had entered the hut Pétya sat down at a distance from him considering it beneath his dignity to pay attention to him But he fingered the money in his pocket and wondered whether it would seem ridiculous to give some to the drummer boy

CHAPTER VIII

THE ARRIVAL OF DÓLOKHOV diverted Pétya s attention from the drummer boy to whom Denísov had had some mutton and vodka given and whom he had had dressed in a Russian coat so that he might be kept with their band and not sent away with the other prisoners Pétya had heard in the army many stories of Dolokhov s extraordinary bravery and of his cruelty to the French so from the moment he entered the hut Pétya did not take his eyes from him but braced himself up more and more and held his head high that he might not be unworthy even of such company

Dolokhov s appearance amazed Pétya by its simplicity

Denísov wore a Cossack coat had a beard had an icon of Nicholas the Wonder Worker on his breast and his way of speaking and everything he did indicated his unusual position But Dólokhov who in Moscow had worn a Persian costume had now the appearance of a most correct officer of the Guards He was clean shaven and wore a Guardsman s padded coat with an Order of St George at his buttonhole and a plain forage cap set straight on his head He took off his wet felt cloak in a corner of the room and without greeting anyone went up to Denísov and began questioning him about the matter in hand Denísov told him of the designs the large detachments had on the transport of the message Pétya had brought and his own replies to both generals Then he told him all he knew of the French detachment

That s so But we must know what troops they are and their numbers said Dolokhov It will be necessary to go there We can t start the affair without knowing for certain how many of them there are I like to work accurately Here now—wouldn t one of these gentlemen like to ride over to the French camp with me? I have brought a spare uniform

I I I ll go with you! cried Pétya

There s no need for you to go at all said Denísov addressing Dólokhov and as for him I won t let him go on any account

I like that! exclaimed Pétya Why shouldn t I go?

Because it s useless

Well ... m

cause

me w

Why not? Dólokhov answered absently scrutinizing the face of the French drummer boy Have you had that youngster with you long? he asked Denísov

He was taken today but he knows nothing I m keeping him with me

Yes and where do you put the others? inquired Dólokhov

Where? I send them away and take a receipt for them shouted Denísov suddenly flushing And I say boldly that I have not a single man s life on my conscience Would it be difficult for you to send thirty or thwee hundwed men to town under escort instead of staining—I speak bluntly—staining the honor of a soldier?

That kind of amiable talk would be suitable from this young count of sixteen said Dólokhov with cold irony but it s time for you to drop it

Why I ve not said anything! I only say that I ll certainly go with you said Pétya shyly

But for you and me old fellow it s time to drop these amenities continued Dolokhov as if he found particular pleasure in speaking

Ah it s you! D yo want someth ing to e t? Don t be f l th y won t hurt you

Come in come in

Thank y u sir

of this subject which irritated Den so N w wt ha e you kept this lad he w nt on way me his head. Because you are sorry f I m B t k w those rece pts of y urs You send hundred m n way and thirty get there There's eithe starve get k lled. So n t it all the sam ott se d th m

The sa l scre g up h l ht-col ed eyes, nodded ppro gl

"That n t the po nt. I m not go t d cuss t. matte I d n t w h to take t on my conscience. You say they ll d e All w ght. Only not by my f ult!

Dól kho began lau hi g

"Wh hast ld them n t to captu m these twenty times er? But f they d d cat h me Ld d trin me up t n pen tree, and y u th all y ur chi alry just the same He paused. H ev r we must g t to wo k Tell the Cossack t fetch my k t. I h e two F ench f rms n t. Well ey u com n w th me h asked P tya.

"I Yes yes certa ly cried P tya blush ing almost t tears d gl ncing t D niso

While Dól kh h d been disput w th Denisov what h uld be d e w th prisoners, Pétya had cem e f lt wkward nd estless b t gain he had o t me grasp fully what they ere talkin bout. If grown up dis tinguished me th k so t mu b necessary and right, th ght h But bov ll Deniso must t dar to imagin that I'll bey him nd that he ca der m bout. I will certa nly go the French camp w th Dól kh If h can, so can I

And t ll Deniso persuas ns. P tya re pl ed th t h oo wa cu med o d every n how and that

e citement rode by I s d

If we re ca ht I n t be taken al e I ha e a p st I h spered he

I Russ n sa d Dól kho in a

The blooc i e gra ped h s p t I

La cier du 6 m repl ed D l kl o ne the h t n n nor sl ck n h s horse p e

The bl ck figure of ent nel tood n the bridge

M t d o d

Dól kho re ned n h s horse and ad a ced t walk.

D t do c l l l G a d e t le a ked.

M t d ord e repeated the ent n l bar rin the way and not eply ng

Q du officier f t sa d less t l l d m d t pas le m t d'o d e cr ed D l kho uddenly flaring up nd r d n trai ht at th ent nel. *J ous d m de le c l el it ci*

And w thout wa t n f n n we from the entinel who h d st pped de Dólokho rod up the ncl ne t walk.

N tic the bl ck outline of m n cro the road Dól kh topped h m nd qu red where the comm nder and officers w e. The

I

s

of which Fr nch talk could be r e u d th campfires Dól kh v turned t th court

erta ly w ll go so d n t h der m said n It will only make th ngs w rse.

CHAPTER IX

Ha ng put o F ch grea coats nd hakos, P tya nd Dol kho rod th clear g from h ch De iso had reconn red th F nch camp d em rg g from the f rest n p ch da k ess they descended nto th h llow On reach g th bot om Dól kho t ld the Cos sa ks comp him t w t h m there nd rod t q k trot l g th road th bridge. Pé ya his heart n his mo th w th

small cauldron u g

sold r n a peaked cap nd blue erco t l t up by the fi e was kneel g bes d t turr ng its cont nts w th ramrod.

Wh goes th re

La cers f h 6 h Regimen

Pass rd.

"T ll m is Col el Gera d here

When fficer is mak g his ro d sen els don sk h m f th passw rd. I m a ki yo f th colon l is here

Oh he s a hard nut to crack said one of the officers who was sitting in the shadow at the other side of the fire

He ll make them get a move on those fel lows! said another laughing

Both fell silent peering out through the darkness at the sound of Dolokhov s and Petya s steps as they advanced to the fire lead ing their horses

Bonjour messieurs! said Dolokhov loud ly and clearly

There was a stir among the officers in the shadow beyond the fire and one tall long necked officer walking round the fire came up to Dolokhov

Is that you Clement? he asked Where the devil ? But noticing his mistake he broke off short and with a frown greeted Dolokhov as a stranger asking what he could do for him

Dolokhov said that he and his companion were trying to overtake their regiment and addressing the company in general asked whether they knew anything of the 6th Regi ment None of them knew anything and Petya thought the officers were beginning to look at him and Dolokhov with hostility and suspi cion For some seconds all were silent

If you were counting on the evening soup you have come too late said a o

i that night

He handed the horses over to the soldier who was stirring the pot and squatted down on his heels by the fire beside the officer with the long neck That officer did not take his eyes from Dólokhov and again asked to what regiment he belonged Dolokhov as if he had not heard the question did not reply but lighting a short French pipe which he took from his pocket began asking the officer in how far the road before them was safe from Cossacks

Those brigands are everywhere replied an officer from behind the fire

D l kl ov remarked that the C ss ck

i (h) one repl ed

Well now he ll come away Pétya thought every moment as he stood by the campfire lis tening to the talk

But Dolokhov restarted the conversat on

C od day gentlemen

which had dropped and began putting direct questions as to how many men there were in the battalion how many battalions and how many prisoners Asking about the Russian prisoners with that detachment Dólokhov said

A horrid business dragging these corpses about with one! It would be better to shoot such rabble and burst into loud laughter so strange that Petya thought the French would immediately detect their disguise

i n

t cer whom they could not see (he lay wrapped in a great o

l

l orses

Will they bring our horses or not? thought Pétya instinctively drawing nearer to Dólok hov

The horses were brought

Good evening gentlemen said Dólokhov

Pétya wished to say Good night but could not utter a word The officers were whispering together Dolokhov was a long time mounting his horse which would not stand still then he rode out of the yard at a footpace Pétya rode beside him longing to look round to see whether or no the French were running after them but not daring to

Coming out onto the road Dólokhov did not ride back across the open country but through the village At one spot he stopped and listened Do you hear? he asked Pétya recognized the sound of Russian voices and saw the d k f

their camp

the bridge

sentinel w without saying a word paced mo rosely up and down it then they descended into the hollow where the Cossacks awaited them

Well now good by Tell D nisov at the first shot at daybreak said D lokhov and was about to ride away but Pétya seized hold of him

Really! he cried you are such a hero! Oh how fine how splend d! How I love you!

All right all right! said D lokhov But Petya did not let go of h m and D lokhov saw through the gloom that Petya was bending to ward him and wanted to k ss him Dolokhov kissed him laughed turned h s horse and van ished int the d rkness

CHAPTER X

I RETUR ED to the watchman hut, P tya fou d De iso n the passage. He was wa u g Petya s r turn st t of agitat on anxiety d self rep ch for ha ng l t him go.

"Tha k God he ex l med Yes th nk God. h repeated l t n t P tya s raptur ous ccount. "But, d 'I take you I ha en t 'ept because f you! Well th nk God. Now h do n. We can t ll get a n p before morn ing

n sa d P tya I d n t ant to —

da

Th n, n tici that D iso was asleep he rose and w t o t f doors

It as till quit dark uts de. Tl e rain wa ——

the d in campfi e gleamed red. N t all u Cossacks d hussars wer asleep here and there, amid the sou ds of fall g drop and the m ching f th h rses nea by could be heard low ces which eemed to be whi per m

P tya cam t, pe ed nto the d kness, nd went up to th wagon Someone was r ng under them, nd around them tood sad dled horses mu ch g their oats. I th da k Petya recognized his wn h rse, wh ch h called Karab kh th ugh was f Ukra ian b eed, nd went p t

"W ll, Karabákh! W ll do som ery o-morrow sa d he n ffing ts nostril nd kiss-ng

"Wh aren t you leep sa d Cossack ho was tt g d wagon

Y ah Likhache —isn tha ou nam Do you kn w I ha ly just come b ck W ve been to the French camp

And P tya ga th Cossack deta'led ou t not ly f his ride b t lso f his object, nd h he nsidered t better risk his life tha to ct just yhow

Well y u should get some sleep now sa d the Cossack.

No I am used t tl sa d Pétya I say aren t the fl ts n your p st ls w rn out? I br ght som w th me Don t you wa t ny? You can ha e some

Tl e Cossa k bent f rward from under the wagon to get closer look at Pétya

Because I m ccust med t d n e ery th accurately sa d Pétya "Some fellows do th ngs just yhow w thout preparat on and tl n tl ey re sorry f r t afterwards I don t l ke th t.

Just so sa d the Cossack

Oh yes nother th ng Please, my dear — — saber fo me? It s nd the you do

t t

Of cours I can

L kh h got up rummaged n his pack, d soon Pétya heard th warl ke sound of steel n whetst He cl mbed o to the wagon d sat on ts edge The Cossack was sh rpen g th saber under the wagon

I s y! Are the l ds sl ep asked Pétya.

"Some d som aren t—l k us.

"W ll and that boy?

Vesén y Oh h s thrown himself d wn th n th passage F t leep fter his f gl t. H was th t gl d

After that Pétya rem ed s lent f long time l en ng to the sou ds. H h rd foot tep n th darkness d a black figure p- pea ed.

"What are you sharpen asked a man com ng up to the wagon

"Why this gentleman saber

Th t s ht, sa d th ma wh m Pétya took to be n hussar "Was the cup l ft here

"There by the wheel!

Th hussa took th cup

It mu t be dayl ht soo sa d he ya n n and w t way

P tya o ght to ha e kn wn that he wa n f rest w tl D niso guerrill b nd less ——

who h d me f the cup was n hussar who wanted dri k b t l e ther knew nor wanted t k w anyth g f ll this. He was

Karabakh d trict in th so hern Ca cas famous for ts breed f horses.—TR.

in a fairy kingdom where nothing resembled reality The big dark blotch might really be the watchman s hut or it might be a cavern leading to the very depths of the earth Perhaps the red spot was a fire or it might be the eye of an enormous monster Perhaps he was really sitting on a wagon but it might very well be that he was not sitting on a wagon but on a terribly high tower from which if he fell he would have to fall for a whole day or a whole month or go on falling and never reach the bottom Perhaps it was just the Cossack Likhachev who was sitting under the wagon but it might be the kindest bravest most wonderful most splendid man in the world whom no one knew of It might really have been that an hussar came for water and went back into the hollow but perhaps he had simply vanished—disappeared altogether and dissolved into nothingness

Nothing Pétya could have seen now would have surprised him He was in a fairy kingdom where everything was possible

He looked up at the sky And the sky was a fairy realm like the earth It was clearing and over the tops of the trees clouds were swiftly sailing as if unveiling the stars Sometimes it looked as if the clouds were passing and a clear black sky appeared Sometimes it seemed as if the black spaces were clouds Sometimes the sky seemed to be rising high high overhead and then it seemed to sink so low that one could touch it with one s hand

Petya s eyes began to close and he swayed a little

The trees were dripping Quiet talking was heard The horses neighed and jostled one another Someone snored

Ozheg zheg Ozheg zheg hissed the saber against the whetstone and suddenly Petya heard an harmonious orchestra playing some unknown sweetly solemn hymn Pétya was as musical as Natásha and more so than Nicholas but had never learned music or thought about it and so the melody that unexpectedly came to his mind seemed to him particularly fresh and attractive The music became more and more audible The melody grew and passed from one instrument to another And what was played was a fugue—though Pétya had not the least conception of what a fugue is Each instrument—now resembling a violin and now a horn but better and clearer than violin or horn—played its own part and before it had finished the melody merged with another instrument that began almost the same air and then with a third and a fourth and they all blended into one and again became separate and again blended now into solemn church music no

t ... urched forward It s in my ears But perhaps it s music of my own Well go on my music! Now!

He closed his eyes and from all sides as if from a distance sounds fluttered grew into harmonies separated blended and again all mingled into the same sweet and solemn hymn Oh this is delightful! As much as I like and as I like! said Pétya to himself He tried to conduct that enormous orchestra

Now softly softly die away! and the sounds obeyed him Now fuller more joyful Still more and more joyful! And from an unknown depth rose increasingly triumphant sounds Now voices join in! ordered Petya And at first from afar he heard men s voices and then women s The voices grew in harmonious triumphant strength and Pétya listened to their surpassing beauty in awe and joy

With a solemn triumphal march there mingled a song the drip from the trees and the hissing of the saber *Ozheg zheg zheg* and again the horses jostled one another and neighed not disturbing the choir but joining in it

Petya did not know how long this lasted he enjoyed himself all the time wondered at his enjoyment and regretted that there was no one to share it He was awakened by Likhachev s kindly voice

It s ready your honor you can split a Frenchman in half with it!

Petya woke up

It s getting light it s really getting light! he exclaimed

The horses that had previously been invisible could now be seen to their very tails and a watery light showed itself through the bare branches Petya shook himself jumped up took a ruble from his pocket and gave it to Likhachev then he flourished the saber tested it and sheathed it The Cossacks were untying their horses and tightening their saddle girths

And here s the commander said Likhachev

Denisov came out of the watchman s hut and having called Pétya gave orders to get ready

CHAPTER XI

T E ME rap dly p ked ut the r horses n th sem d k ess t ht ned the r ddl g ths d f rmed comp es De isov tood by the watchm n hut g ng f l d rs Tl e in fantry f the det chment p d alo g tl e d th t ees feet g e rse de d n to m t. H cold ater wa all l w d h eye we e p rt cula ly b ll t Cold h ers ran d vn h p a d h s wh l body pul ed rhythm cally

W ll sev wyth g w dy? ask d D nlso "B g the h rses

Th h rses we e brought D nl o wa gry th the C ssack becau the ddl girths e too l ck repro ed h m nd m t d Pétya put h f t the t rrup His horse by hab t m d s [t n p h leg but P tya l ped q ckly nt the ddle u n sc us f h s we ht d tur g t look t the h sars t rt g the d rkness bel d him rode p t De iso

"Vasil Dmitr ch ntru t m with ome com miss Plea e [God ke l sa d he

D iso med t h e f g tt n Pétys ry ex t H tur d t gl n t h m. l ask e th g f y u he d ter ly t bey m d not l e y elf [w d y her

He d d n t s y ther w d t Pétya but od l ll th w y Wh n they h d com t the edge f th f re t t wa t bly gr g l ght e th fel l. D ni t lk d n h pers w th th l d tl Co k rod p t P ty d De iso Wh n th y had ll r dd by De iso t l ed h l rse nd ode d th h ll Sl pp g o t th l un hes d l d g th h rses desc d d w th th ders t th ra Péty od b d Denl so tl p lsa n f h body con tly n crea g It wa g g l ght d l gl te b t them t t ll h d d t t bj t H g ea hed th lley D look d b k d odded t Cossa k bes d l m

"Th gn ll sa d h

Th Co sa k ra ed h rn d h t ra g t I ta t th t mp f h rs gall p- g f rw rd wa h d h t cam f m arı des d th m h ts

At tl f rst so d f tr mpl g hoofs d

P t a l shed l h rse and loo e g

Fren hm n ere runn o t cros tl e r ad O e of them fell in tl e mud under h l orse s feet

Co cks e e cr d n ab ut a h t bu y w th someth g F om the m d t f tl t cr w l te rble cre m r e P ty galloped up an l the first tl he s w was the p l f ce an l trembl g j w of a F e ch m n clutch g tl e l ndle f l n e that h d been med t him

Hurrah! Lads! ours! l outed P tya a d g g r n to l s x ted horse he gal l l tl e illage stre t

F chm n l d al e ly f llen "Too l te ga nl fi l ed th ugh Péty nd a d l e

is ted tl e n gl t befo w th Dólokh Il e F en l er m k g ta d the beh d a wattl f nc n a ga d n th kly o rgrown th bush d w re fi g t the Coss cks ho cr wded t tl e gat way Throu h tl e

p to l m

W t? H rrah h l l sh uted Pétya nd w tl out p u g m ment gall p d to th pl e when e cam tl e d of fi g l he tl e sm ke w tl ck t

A lley l d dsom bull ts l tled p t wh l tl rs pl hed t someth ng Th Coss k d Dól kl gall ped ft Péty t tl e gat w y f tl e courtya d. In the den wa e g mok some f the F e ch thr w d wn tl e rms d n out f the bu h t m t th Co ks wh l others ra down th l ll t wa d tl e p d Péty s

galloping along the courtyard but instead of holding the reins he waved both his arms about rapidly and strangely slipping farther and farther to one side in his saddle His horse having galloped up to a campfire that was smoldering in the morning light stopped suddenly and Pétya fell heavily on to the wet ground The Cossacks saw that his arms and legs jerked rapidly though his head was quite motionless A bullet had pierced his skull

After speaking to the senior French officer who came out of the house

ty who lay mot

Denisov who was riding toward him

Killed? cried Denisov recognizing from a distance the unmistakably lifeless attitude—very familiar to him—in which Pétya s body was lying

Done for! repeated Dólokhov as if the utterance of these words afforded him pleasure and he went quickly up to the prisoners who were surrounded by Cossacks who had hurried up We won t take them! he called out to Denísov

Denisov did not reply he rode up

already gone white

I am used to something sweet Raisins fine ones take them all! he recalled Pétya s words And the Cossacks looked round in surprise at the sound like the yelp of a dog with which Denísov turned away walked to the wattle fence and seized hold of it

Among the Russian prisoners rescued by Denísov and Dólokhov was Pierre Bezúkhov

CHAPTER XII

DURING THE WHOLE of their march from Moscow no fresh orders had been issued by the French authorities concerning the party of prisoners among whom was Pierre On the twenty second of October that party was no longer with the same troops and baggage trains with which it had left Moscow Half the wagons laden with hardtack that had traveled the first stages with them had been captured by Cossacks the other half had gone on ahead Not one of those dismounted cavalrymen who had marched in front of the prisoners was left they had all disappeared The artillery the prisoners had seen in front of them during the first days was now replaced by Marshal Junot s enormous baggage train convoyed by Westphalians Behind the prisoners came a cavalry baggage train

From Vyázma onwards the French army which had till then moved in three columns went on as a single group The symptoms of disorder that Pierre had noticed at their first halting place after leaving Moscow had now reached the utmost limit

The road along which they moved was bordered on both sides by dead horses ragged men who had fallen behind from various regiments continually changed about now joining the moving column now again lagging behind it

Several times during the march false alarms had been given and the soldiers of the escort had raised their muskets fired and run headlong crushing one another but had afterwards reassembled and abused each other for their causeless panic

These three groups traveling together—the cavalry stores the convoy of prisoners and Junot s baggage train—still constituted a separate and united whole though each of the groups was rapidly melting away

Of the artillery baggage train which had consisted of a hundred and twenty wagons not more than sixty now remained the rest had been captured or left behind Some of Junot s wagons also had been captured or abandoned Three wagons had been raided and robbed by stragglers from Davout s corps From the talk of the Germans Pierre learned that a larger guard had been allotted to that baggage train than to the prisoners and that one of their comrades a German soldier had been shot by the marshal s own order because a silver spoon belonging to the marshal had been found in his possession

The group of prisoners had melted away most of all Of the three hundred and thirty men who had set out from Moscow fewer than a hundred now remained The prisoners were more burdensome to the escort than e

ngry

soldiers should have to stand and guard equally cold and hungry Russians who froze and lagged behind on the road (in which case the order was to shoot them) was not merely incomprehensible but revolting And the escort

s f frad m the gre us f t tl ey tl emsel es e em f g g ay t tl e p ty they felt f tl e p ners nd s rend r ther wn pl l t st ll rs t eate l tl em tl p tcul m e es nd se e ty

n mool l wl le tl sold ers f tl e

ll a d r w y b t t y the F h a d l ot.

Tl rran em nt d pt d he they sta t ed th t the ffcer p so rs sh l l be kept f tl e re t h l l ng s n e been

O e k ratá ga n f ll ll w th tl e fev r he h d s ffer d f om n th l osp tal n M nd l gre grad lly we k P erre kept y f h m P d d n t k hy b t c k ratáev h d beoun t gr ke t l d t l n eff t t g ne h m W l n l d d l h d the s bdued m w th h h k ratáe g rally l y d n at tl l lu g pl ce d wh l e melled tl e d em t g f m h m wl h w no t tha b f P erre m ed f r the y d d d t th k b ut l m

Wl l mp ed n the h d P erre h l l d t w tl h s tell ct b t w th h

l

th t ll h pp es t l m p b t f p ft ty A d du g tl es l t h w k f tl m cl h h d le rred st ll ther w s l e ryt uth—tl t n th g th w ld t rr l le H h d l d tl t there d wl h m th n

rth w l d g w g ll lled wl le tl l w w rm g d tl h l l d p t t gl t d g l es l e l d ff ed j t h d l w wl e l w lked w tl b re f t tl t co ed w tl so es—l f tg ha h l g f ll p es H d o d tha he l had marr ed l w f —of l s w

free w ll as t l a l seemed to l m—l e l a l been no more fre tl an n w when tl ey locked h m p at n gl t n a t ble Of all th t he h mself s bse q ently termed h s suffer n s but wh cl t tl e t me l e scarcely felt tl e worst wa the st te of h s ba e raw and cab overed feet (Tl e l esle l w s appet z ng and n t r sl g the ltp ter fl or of the gunpowder thev us d n te d f s lt w s e e pleasant tl e e v a n great cold t w lw y wa m lk g tl d st me nd at ght there were the rme l l ard

Afte th se o d d y s u a a t xam n l l f et l y tl e ca npfi e though t it uld be mp s ble t alk on tl em b t l en erybo ly got up l e went along l mp g d wl en l e l ad warmed up walked itl ut fe l the p th ugl t n f t l f et e em re te r bl to look t tl n bef re H we er l e d d t look at tl em n w but th gl t of otl e th gs

O ly n d d P erre re l ze the full stre tl of l fe m n nd th s g p er l e l a f tra f r g l atte n on fr m ne th t tl e wl ch l ke th l ty al of bo l tl t all w s upe fl te m to bl w ff l n tl e pres u e e ceed a ce t l m t.

He d d n t e a d d d n t he hot tl ey l t the pr soners wl l g ed b h d tl ugl m etl n lu d ed pe st el tl t w y He d d n t tl k of k ratáe l o gre e k

pe de t f tl t p t h d t e to d h ms lf w re tl e joyful nd comf rt tl ughts n e n e d m gs that came t h m

CHAPTER XIII

At t ay th twenty nd f O t b P rre w s g ph ll l the muddy l p p y d look g t h feet d t the l

galloping along the courtyard but instead of holding the reins he waved both his arms about rapidly and strangely slipping farther and farther to one side in his saddle His horse having galloped up to a campfire that was smoldering in the morning light stopped suddenly and Pétya fell heavily on to the wet ground The Cossacks saw that his arms and legs jerked rapidly though his head was quite motionless A bullet had pierced his skull

After speaking to the senior French officer who came out of the house with a white handkerchief tied to his sword and announced that they surrendered Dólokhov dismounted and went up to Pétya who lay motionless with outstretched arms

Done for! he said with a frown and went to the gate to meet Denísov who was riding toward him

Killed? cried Denísov recognizing from a distance the unmistakably lifeless attitude—very familiar to him—in which Pétya s body was lying

Done for! repeated Dólokhov as if the utterance of these words afforded him pleasure and he went quickly up to the prisoners who were surrounded by Cossacks who had hurried up We won t take them! he called out to Denísov

Denísov did not reply he rode up to Pétya dismounted and with trembling hands turned toward himself the bloodstained mud bespattered face which had already gone white

I am used to something sweet Raisins fine ones take them all! he recalled Pétya s words And the Cossacks looked round in surprise at the sound like the yelp of a dog with which Denísov turned away walked to the wattle fence and seized hold of it

Among the Russian prisoners rescued by Denísov and Dólokhov was Pierre Bezúkhov

CHAPTER XII

During the whole of their march from Moscow no fresh orders had been issued by the French authorities concerning the party of prisoners among whom was Pierre On the twenty second of October that party was no longer with the same troops and baggage trains with which it had left Moscow Half the wagons laden with hardtack that had traveled the first stages with them had been captured by Cossacks the other half had gone on ahead Not one of those dismounted cavalrymen who had marched in front of the prisoners was left they had all disappeared The artillery the prisoners had seen in front of them during the first days was now replaced by Marshal Junot s enormous baggage train convoyed by Westphalians Behind the prisoners came a cavalry baggage train

From Vyázma onwards the French army which had till then moved in three columns went on as a single group The symptoms of disorder that Pierre had noticed at their first halting place after leaving Moscow had now reached the utmost limit

The road along which they moved was bordered on both sides by dead horses ragged men who had fallen behind from various regiments continually changed about now joining the moving column now again lagging behind it

Several times during the march false alarms had been given and the soldiers of the escort had raised their muskets fired and run headlong crushing one another but had afterwards reassembled and abused each other for their causeless panic

These three groups traveling together—the cavalry stores the convoy of prisoners and Junot s baggage train—still constituted a separate and united whole though each of the groups was rapidly melting away

Of the artillery baggage train which had consisted of a hundred and twenty wagons not more than sixty now remained the rest had been captured or left behind Some of Junot s wagons also had been captured or abandoned Three wagons had been raided and robbed by stragglers from Davout s corps From the talk of the Germans Pierre learned that a larger guard had been allotted to that baggage train than to the prisoners and that one of their comrades a German soldier had been shot by the marshal s own order because a silver spoon belonging to the marshal had been found in his possession

The group of prisoners had melted away most of all Of the three hundred and thirty men who had set out from Moscow fewer than a hundred now remained The prisoners were more burdensome to the escort than even the cavalry saddles or Junot s baggage They understood that the saddles and Junot s spoon might be of some use but that cold and hungry soldiers should have to stand and guard equally cold and hungry Russians who froze and lagged behind on the road (in which case the order was to shoot them) was not merely incomprehensible but revolting And the escort

says (he was great s e) — n t l t h m t n d wh le th y we e jud ng what ng nd a ther fill g n the p pers all n due f rm—th tho t es I m an—time pas ed. The flair reached th Ts r After wh le the Tsar decree came t et the merchant free d gi e h m mpensat on th t had been arded The p per arri ed nd they began to look f the ld m n Wher is the old man ho has bee uff g i c tly d n A p per h s me from the Tsa ! so they began look g f h m h e Karatáe lowe j w trembled "but God h d l eady forg e him—h wa dead! That h w t w s dear fell w ! Karatáev concl ded d sat f r a l time s l t gaz bef e him w th sm le.

A d P erre so l was d mly b t j yfully filled t by the tory tself but by ts mysteri us gnifica ce by th raptu us j y th t l t p Karatáev f ce as h t ld t nd th myst c s gnifica e f that joy

CHAPTER XIV

A pl sudde ly cried v ce.

A pleasa t f el g of ex teme t nd an ex pectat f som th g j yful nd solemn was roused mo the sold rs f th c oy nd the p iso ers. F m ll s des cam h uts f c mma d, nd f m th l ft came sm rtly dressed cavalrym n on good h rses p ss g th priso ers t t t. Th express n on ll fa es h wed th te n peopl feel t th pp ch of th n uth rity Th priso rs th ged togeth nd wer pushed ff the ro d. Th y f rm d p

"Th Empero ! Th Empero ! Th M shal! Th D k d hardly h d the leek cavalry p ed bef re carr g drawn by gray h rses rattled by P rr ca ght gl mpse f m th e -cornered h t w th tra q l look n h handsom plump wh fa e. It wa f the marshals. His eye f ll n P err large d t k g figure nd the expressi w th wh ch he f wned and looked "T yo pla es w y P rre thought he detected symp thy and a des e to con e l th t symp thy

The general in ch rge of the tores galloped after the carr age w th a red and fr ghtened f ce wh pp g up h s sk nny horse Se eral officers formed a gr up and s me soldiers crowded round them. Their faces all looked excited nd worr ed.

"What d d he say? What d d he say? Pierre he rd them a k

Wh le th m rsh l was passing the p ison ers h d huddled togethe n a crowd, nd P erre saw Karatáev wh m he had not yet een that morn g He sat n h s sh rt o erco t lean ga t b rch tree On his f ce be — h d w rn t pres on of qu et solemn ty

Karatáe looked at P erre w th h s kindly ound eyes now filled w th t rs ev dently w h ng h m to c m nea that he m ght say som th ng t l m. B t P erre was n t suffi ciently ur of himself He mad as f he d d not n ti e that look nd m ed ha t ly away

When th p soners ga n went f rward P err looked r u d. K ratáev wa still s tti g at the s d f the o d under the b rch t ee nd tw *Fr chmen were talk g o er h s head.* P err d d n t look u d ga n but went limp ng up the h ll

F m *behi d, whe* K ratáev h d been s t ti g cam the s und of a sh t P erre heard t pl nly b t t that mome t he remembered th t he h d n t yet fi hed k n g up *how* many t ges t ll rem ed to Smolé k— cal cul t n he h d begun bef re the marshal w nt by And he aga n tarted reck n ng Two F e ch sold rs ran past P rre on of wh m carried l wered d m k g gun. They both looked p le nd n the exp ess n n th f es—o e f them gl nced tim dly t P err —there was som th ng res mbl wh t l had een n the f f the y g s ldier t th execut P err looked t th sold er a d remembered th t two d ys b f e that man h d burned his h rt while drying t t th fi and how they h d l hed t him.

B h d h m, whe e Karatá h d been t t g the dog bega to h wl "What tup d beast! Why is t h wl g? tho ht P erre

on the carrion The dog was merrier and sleeker than it had been in Moscow All around lay the flesh of different animals—from men to horses—in various stages of decomposition and as the wolves were kept off by the passing men the dog could eat all it wanted

It had been raining since morning and had seemed as if at any moment it might cease and the sky clear but after a short break it began raining harder than before The saturated road no longer absorbed the water which ran along the ruts in streams

Pierre walked along looking from side to

then go on! Felt harder!

It seemed to him that he was thinking of nothing but far down and deep within him his soul was occupied with something important and comforting This something was a most subtle spiritual deduction from a conversation with Karatáev the day before

At their yesterday's halting place feeling chilly by a dying campfire Pierre had got up and gone to the next one which was burning better There Platón Karatáev was sitting covered up—head and all—with his greatcoat as if it were a vestment telling the soldiers in his effective and pleasant though now feeble voice a story Pierre knew It was already past midnight the hour when Karatáev was usually free of his fever and particularly lively When Pierre reached the fire and heard Platón's voice enfeebled by illness and saw his pathetic face brightly lit up by the blaze he felt a painful prick at his heart His feeling of pity for this man frightened him and he wished to go away but there was no other fire and Pierre sat down trying not to look at Platón

Well how are you? he asked

smile on his pale emaciated face and a particularly happy light in his eyes you see brother

Pierre had long been familiar with that story Karatáev had told it to him alone some half dozen times and always with a specially

as he told it communicated itself also to Pierre The story was of an old merchant who lived a good and God fearing life with his family and who went once to the Nízhni fair with a companion—a rich merchant

Having put up at an inn they both went to sleep and next morning his companion was found robbed and with his throat cut A bloodstained knife was found under the old merchant's pillow He was tried knouted and his nostrils having been torn off all in due form as Karatáev put it he was sent to hard labor in Siberia

And so brother (it was at this point that Pierre came up) ten years or more passed by The old man was living as a convict submitting as he should and doing no wrong Only he prayed to God for death Well one night the convicts were gathered just as we are with the old man among them And they began telling what each was suffering for and how they had sinned against God One told how he had taken a life another had taken two a third had set a house on fire while another had simply been a vagrant and had done nothing So they asked the old man What are you being punished for Daddy?—I my dear brothers said he am being punished for my own and other men's sins But I have not killed anyone or taken anything that was not mine but have only helped my poorer brothers I was a merchant my dear brothers and had much property And he went on to tell them all about it in due order I don't grieve for myself he says God it seems has chastened me Only I am sorry for my old wife and the children and the old man began to weep Now it happened that in the group was the very man who had killed the other merchant Where did it happen Daddy? he said When and in what month? He asked all about it and his heart began to ache So he comes up to the old man like this and falls down at his feet You are perishing because of me Daddy he says It's quite true lads that this man he says is being tortured innocently and for nothing I he says did that deed and I put the knife under your head while you were asleep Forgive me Daddy he says for Christ's sake!

Karatáev paused smiling joyously as he gazed into the fire and he drew the logs together

And the old man said God will forgive you we are all sinners in His sight I suffer for my own sins and he wept bitter tears Well and what do you think dear friends? Karatáev continued his face brightening more

sel es,b t as they passed Dólokho who ge tly sw tched his boots w th h whip a d watcl ed tem th cold glas y eyes that boded n good they became lent. On the ppos te de tood Dolokhov Cossack, count ng th priso rs and marki g off each hu d ed w th a chalk lire the gate.

How ma y Dólokh ked th Cossack.

"Th sec d h dred r pl ed th Cos- sack.

F le filez!" Dol kho kept sa g ha dopted this expres from th Fr nch nd hen his eyes m t those of the priso ers they flas ed with cru l l ght.

D iso b eheaded d w th gloomy face, walked beh d som Co sa ks who were carri g th body of Pétya Rostó to h le that had been d the garden.

CHAPTER XVI

AFTER TH TWE TY EIGHTH F OCT ER when th frosts began the fl ght of th French as- sumed till m re tragic character with men freezing or roast g them l es to de th t the campfires, whil carriages with peopl dressed in furs co t ued to dri e p t, carry g way the property that had been tolen by th Em pero k gs, d d kes but th process f th fli t d d tegrati n f th F ench army ent essentually bef

F om Moscow t Vyázma the F ench rmy I seventy three th usand m n n t eck ning the Guards (who d d nothi duri g th whol war b t p llage) wa reduced t th rty ho

arm m lted wa d peri hed t th sam rate from Moscow to Vyázma from V ázma to Smol k, f om Sm lénsk to th Berezina d from th Ber t V l — ndependently of th grea er lesser ten t f th cold the pursuit, th barri of th way n other p rticula d u Bet d Vyázma th Fren h army tead of mov n th ee col m huddled together to o e ma d so ent to th nd. Berth er wro t his Em- peror I know how f comma d offi ers l ow themsel es to di erg from the truth in describ g th conditi of n rm) nd th hat h said.

I deem m d to report You M jesty th ituation of the various corps I ha had occasion

Get along get along'

t bserv d ring d fferent tages f th l t tw three days m rch. They re lmost disbanded. Sca cely quarter f the sold rs emain with th tanda ds f th regiments th hers go ff by themsel es different direct ns h ping t fi d food and escape discipline. In gen ral they regard Sm lén k as th pl ce where they h pe t eco er D ring th las few days ma y f th men h e been een t throw ay thei cartridges d th arms. I ch tat f fla rs whatever) It m t pl may be th terest f Y M jesty service dem ds that th rm h ld be rallied t f ll be freed from in

pplied th troops will l ger be u w l in case f an engagement.

N ember 9 twenty miles from Sm lén k.

Afte stagger g to Smolénsk which eemed to them pr mised la d, th F ench, search ng fo food, k lled e an ther sacked th ir own st es and when everythin had been plundered fled farther

They ll we t w thout knowing wh ther or why they wer go g Still less did that gen us N poleon know t, f no ne ssued any orders t h m But st ll he nd those bout him tai ed their ld hab ts wrote com- mands l tters eports nd orders of the day called n ther *si m cousi pri ce d'E km hl d N pl* and so n But these o ders nd reports wer o ly on p per n th- n n them wa cted upon f they could n t be carr ed out nd thou h they ent tled one a ther M jest es H gh esses o Cous ns they ll felt that they were m serabl wretches who h d d much ev l fo wh ch they h d now to p And though they p t ded to be co erned bout th army each was thi king only of h mself nd of how to get way qu ckly and sa hims lf.

CHAPTER XVII

THE O E IE TS f th Russ d French armies dur g th camp n fr m Moscow back to th N em n were l k those n game f Russian bl dma bluff, n which tw pla rs are bl df lded d on of them oc cas n lly s l ttle bell to f rm th ca cher f h wh eabo ts F rst h ri gs his bell fearlessly but when h gets to tight

CHAPTER XV

THE STORES the prisoners and the marshal s baggage train stopped at the village of Shámshevo The men crowded together round the campfires Pierre went up to the fire ate some roast horseflesh lay down with his back to the fire and immediately fell asleep He again slept as he had done at Mozháysk after the battle of Borodinó

Again real events mingled with dreams and again someone he or another gave expression to his thoughts and even to the same thoughts that had been expressed in his dream at Mozháysk

I fa

ch

An , ol

sciousness of the divine To love life is to love God Harder and more blessed than all else is to love this life in one s sufferings in innocent sufferings

Karatáev! came to Pierre s mind

And suddenly he saw vividly before him a long forgotten kindly old man who had given him geography lessons in Switzerland Wait a bit said the old man and showed Pierre a globe This globe was alive—a vibrating ball without fixed dimensions Its whole surface consisted of drops closely pressed together and all these drops moved and changed places sometimes several of them merging into one sometimes one dividing into many Each drop tried to spread out and occupy as much space as possible but others striving to do the same compressed it sometimes destroyed it and sometimes merged with it

That is life said the old teacher

How simple and clear it is thought Pierre How is it I did not know it before?

God is in the midst and each drop tries to expand so as to reflect Him to the greatest extent And it grows merges d sappears from the surface sinks to the depths and again emerges There now Karatáev has spread out and disappeared Do you understand my child? said the teacher

Do you understand damn you? shouted a voice and Pierre woke up

He lifted himself and sat up A Frenchman who had just pushed a Russian soldier away was squatting by the fire engaged in roasting a piece of meat stuck on a ramrod His sleeves were rolled up and his sinewy hairy red hands with their short fingers deftly turned the ramrod His brown morose face with frowning brows was clearly visible by the glow of the charcoal

It s all the same to him he muttered turning quickly to a soldier who stood behind him. Brigand! Get away!

And twisting the ramrod he looked gloomily at Pierre who turned away and gazed into the darkness A prisoner the Russian soldier the Frenchman had pushed away was sitting near the fire patting something with his hand Looking more closely Pierre recognized the blue gray dog sitting beside the soldier wagging its tail

Ah he s come? said Pierre And Plat— he began but did not finish

Suddenly and simultaneously a crowd of memories awoke in his fancy—of the look Platón had given him as he sat under the tree of the shot heard from that spot of the dog s howl of the guilty faces of the two Frenchmen as they ran past him of the lowered and smoking gun and of Karatáev s absence at this halt —and he was on the point of realizing that Karatáev had been killed but just at that instant he knew not why the recollection came to his mind of a summer evening he had spent with a beautiful Polish lady on the veranda of his house in Kiev And without linking up the events of the day or drawing a conclusion from them Pierre closed his eyes seeing a vision of the country in summertime mingled with memories of bathing and of the liquid vibrating globe and he sank into water so

ı

u ıg j ast him

The Cossacks! one of them shouted and a moment later a crowd of Russians surrounded Pierre

For a long time he could not understand what was happening to him All around he heard his comrades sobbing with joy

Brothers! Dear fellows! Darlings! old soldiers exclaimed weeping as they embraced Cossacks and hussars

The hussars and Cossacks crowded round the prisoners one offered them clothes another boots and a third bread Pierre sobbed as he sat among them and could not utter a word He hugged the first soldier who approached him and kissed him weeping

Dólokhov stood at the gate of the ruined house letting a crowd of disarmed Frenchmen pass by The French excited by all that had happened were talking loudly among them

ɪ ɪ ɪ

wl es,but s they p ssed Dól kho who ge tly switched his boots w th l s wh p and watcl ed them th cold glassy eyes that boded no good they became lent. On tl e oppo te s d tood Dol kho s Cossack co nt g tl e p son rs d m k g off each hund ed tl chalk line the gate

How m ny? Dól kho a ked th Coss ck "The seco d h dred epl ed the Cos sack.

F le- files!" Dól khov kept y g ha ing dop ed th exp es n fr m the Fre h and h h eyes met those f the p soners they fl hed th cruel l ght.

De iso b headed nd w th a gloomy face, alked beh d some Co sa ks h were carry g the body of Péty Rostó to a l le th t had bee dug the gard

CHAPTER XVI

AFTER TH TWENTY E G ITI O OCTOBER when the frosts bega the fl ht of the F ench as- — s h m n

From Mos w t Vyá ma the F en h rmy f seve ty three th usa d m n not recko ng the Guards (wl o d d noth g duri g th h le wa but p llage) was ed ed to tl ty

m m lted way d pe hed t the s m nt from Mos w t Vyázm from Vyázm t Smolénsk from Sm lén k t th B n d from th Ber t Vil — dep d tly f the grea er lesser te ty f the c ld the purs t, the b rr g f th way or ny other p rticul r co d t Bey d Vyázm the Fre h rmy tead f m g three col m huddled toe th o on ma d so t to th end Berth wrote t h s Em peror (k ow h w f e mm d ff ers llow themsel es t d rge f m the tru h describ g th co d t on f n rmy) d th s hat he sa d

I deem m d eport t l M jesty th cond ion of th various corps I h had occas on

Ge along, get long'

e r

bee see t throw w y r rms l h t t f ff rs wh tever yo ul m t pl m y be the terest f Y Majesty rv d m d th t th rmy h ld be rall ed at Sm lé k d h ld f rst of ll be f eed from — ed es lry n ecessary l ge old ers need d ed es This rs n l medy co trol

N mber 9 tw ty m les tro k

Aft r st gge ng nto Sm lé sk wh cl e med to them p m ed l nd the French en ch g f food k lled e another sacked the r own to es nd when ev ryth n h d been pl ndered fled f rther

They ll went w th ut know g wh th o why th y we e go ng St ll less d d th t gen u Napoleon kn t f n n sued ny o ders to h m But st ll he and those bout him et ed the old h b ts wrote com

o d rs d repo ts er nly on p p r u g them a a ted up n f they could not b carr ed ut nd th ugl they ent tled one a other M jest es H gl es es o Co n they ll f lt th t they wer m erable wretches ho h d d ne u h e l f r wh h th y h d n to p y And th ugh they pretended to be co erned bout th rmy ch was think ng o ly f h m lf d f h w to g t away qu ckly nd e h mself

CHAPTER XVII

T o NTS f th Russ n and F nch rm es dur g th camp n f m Moscow b k t th N men we l k tho e n game of Russ n bl dm n bluff n wh ch t pl y rs bl df lded d on f tl em oc ca lly n s l ttle b ll to f rm the cat h f l wl eabouts F rst he gs h bell fe l ssly but wh n he g ts t r ght

CHAPTER XV

The stores the prisoners and the marshal s baggage train stopped at the village of Shámshevo The men crowded together round the campfires Pierre went up to the fire ate some roast horseflesh lay down with his back to the fire and immediately fell asleep He again slept as he had done at Mozháysk after the battle of Borodinó

Again real events mingled with dreams and again someone he or another gave expression to his thoughts and even to the same thoughts that had been expressed in his dream at Mozháysk

Life is everything Life is God Everything changes and moves and that movement is God And while there is life there is joy in consciousness of the divine To love life is to love God Harder and more blessed than all else is to love this life in one s sufferings in innocent sufferings

Karatáev! came to Pierre s mind

And suddenly he saw vividly before him a long forgotten kindly old man who had given him geography lessons in Switzerland Wait a bit said the old man and showed Pierre a globe This globe was alive—a vibrating ball without fixed dimensions Its whole surface consisted of drops closely pressed together and all these drops moved and changed places sometimes several of them merging into one sometimes one dividing into many Each drop tried to spread out and occupy as much space as possible but others striving to do the same compressed it sometimes destroyed it and sometimes merged with it

That is life said the old teacher

How simple and clear it is thought Pierre How is it I did not know it before?

God is in the midst and each drop tries to expand so as to reflect Him to the greatest extent And it grows merges disappears from the surface sinks to the depths and again emerges There now Karatáev has spread out and disappeared Do you understand my child? said the teacher

Do you understand damn you? shouted a voice and Pierre woke up

He lifted himself and sat up A Frenchman who had just pushed a Russian soldier away was squatting by the fire engaged in roasting a piece of meat stuck on a ramrod His sleeves were rolled up and his sinewy hairy red hands with their short fingers deftly turned the ramrod His brown morose face with frowning brows was clearly visible by the glow of the charcoal

It s all the same to him he muttered turning quickly to a soldier who stood behind him. Brigand! Get away!

And twisting the ramrod he looked gloomily at Pierre who turned away and gazed into the darkness A prisoner the Russian soldier the Frenchman had pushed away was sitting near the fire patting something with his hand Looking more closely Pierre recognized the blue gray dog sitting beside the soldier wagging its tail

Ah he s come? said Pierre And Plat— he began but did not finish

Suddenly and simultaneously a crowd of memories awoke in his fancy—of the look Platón had given him as he sat under the tree of the shot heard from that spot of the dog s howl of the guilty faces of the two Frenchmen as they ran past him of the lowered and smoking gun and of Karatáev s absence at this halt —and he was on the point of realizing that Karatáev had been killed but just at that instant he knew not why the recollection came to his mind of a summer evening he had spent with a beautiful Polish lady on the veranda of his house in Kiev And without linking up the events of the day or drawing a conclusion from them Pierre closed his eyes seeing a vision of the country in summertime mingled with memories of bathing and of the liquid vibrating globe and he sank into water so that it closed over his head

Before sunrise he was awakened by shouts and loud and rapid firing French soldiers were running past him

The Cossacks! one of them shouted and a moment later a crowd of Russians surrounded Pierre

For a long time he could not understand what was happening to him All around he heard his comrades sobbing with joy

Brothers! Dear fellows! Darlings! old soldiers exclaimed weeping as they embraced Cossacks and hussars

The hussars and Cossacks crowded round the prisoners one offered them clothes another boots and a third bread Pierre sobbed as he sat among them and could not utter a word He hugged the first soldier who approached him and kissed him weeping

Dólokhov stood at the gate of the ruined house letting a crowd of disarmed Frenchmen pass by The French excited by all that had happened were talking loudly among them

command, and to ha e walked bo t w th b ch stick and said

Je cesse [t l'empere l st temp d [l general but evertheless immed l ran wa again, ba don g t ts fate t e sca tered fragments f th arm he left be nd.

Then are told of the great ess of soul of th marshals, especiall of Ney—a greatness of soul consistin in thi that h made h s way b ght aro d thro h th forest nd cross the Dn eper d escaped t Orsha band ing standards, artillery d n e tenths f h men.

And last, the final dep rture of the gre t Emperor from his hero rm presented t us b th hi t ria som th n great d characterist f gen us. E en th t final run ing wa described n rdinary la guage th lowest depth f base ess wh ch every ch ld taught to be ashamed f—even that ct fi d justification th hist rians la guage

When is imposs bl t tret h the ery last threads f hist cal ratioc t n) farther when ctions are cl l o trary t all that huma ty calls right o en just tl e historians prod sa g cept of greatness. G eatness, t seems, ex l des the sta dards f ri ht d wro F th gre t ma nothin wr ther o troc ty f r which great ma can be bl med.

C t rr d sa th h t a d there no l er ex ts e ther good o e l b t onl gr d d n t gr d G d is good not gr d is b d. G d is th character t n th r to cep f som pec l mal called heroes. A d N poleon escap g h me arm fur oat d leavi g t pe l th e ho ere t merel h omrades b t w e (n his p) m he had bro ght the feel *que c' t gr d* d h soul is tra q l

Du subl m (h saw som th g bl me n himself) *rid cul l y qu pas* sa d he. A d the wh l wo ld for fifty years has been repeati S *bl m* G d N *pol le G nd Du subl m u rid cul l y q pas.*

A d t occurs to no on that t dmit grea ess no ommensurabl w th th tand ard f h d wr is mer ly to dmit on s own noth ness and mmeasurable meanness.

Fo us w th the standard of good and ev l gi en us by Chri t, no human ctions are n commensurable And there s no greatness where s mpl c ty goodness and truth are absent.

CHAPTER XIX

WHAT RUSSIAN read n the accou t of tl e l st part of tl e camp gn of 8 has not exper enced n u comf t ble feel f regret d s-sat f ct n d perplex ty Who has n t a ked h mself low t s th t tl e F nch we e n t all capt red or destro ed whe our three rm es urro ded tl em n super r numbers when the d sordered French h grv nd f ee urre dered n cr wds and when (the h st ia rel te) the m of the Russ ns was t t p the Fren h to cut them off, and captu e them ll

How wa it that th Russ n rmy wh cl when numer cally weake than the French h d g b ttl t Bo od o d d n t ch eve t p rpose when t had surrou ded the Frencl three s des and wh n ts m was to cap-t e them Can tl e F en h be so normously pe r t us that wh we h d urrounded

curred because K t and T rmáso and Ch ch gó d th man d th t m n d d ot ex cute ch nd ch m neu ers.

B t why d d th y n t execut tho e ma eu ers A d hy f th y w gu lty of not carry g ut p e rra ged pla e they t tr ed

b ut t wa t Kra n nd t the B n (n both cases w had peri f rces) the Fr ch rmy w th ts marsh ls, k gs nd Empero wa n t captured, f that was what th Russ med t.

The expl n t n of this tra ge f ct gi n b R

I have acted th Emperor long eno gh t is time act the general.

I is great

Tha is grea

From d m to the ridiculous is but a ep

Why was th Russ n rmy—wh ch w th feri f rces had w thstood th emy f ll tre gth t Borod ó—d feated t Kra oe nd

place he runs away as quietly as he can and often thinking to escape runs straight into his [illegible]

[illegible] along t[illegible] made t[illegible] [illegible] known but later when they reached the Smolénsk road they [illegible]

Owing to the rapidity of the French flight and the Russian pursuit and the consequent exhaustion of the horses the chief means of approximately ascertaining the enemy s position—by cavalry scouting—was not available Besides as a result of the frequent and rapid change of position by each army even what information was obtained could not be delivered in time If news was received one day that the enemy had been in a certain position the day before by the third day when something could have been done that army was already two days march farther on and in quite another position

One army fled and the other pursued Beyond Smolénsk there were several different roads available for the French and one would have thought that during their stay of four days they might have learned where the enemy was might have arranged some more advantageous plan and undertaken something new But after a four days halt the mob with no maneuvers or plans again began running along the beaten track neither to the right nor to the left but along the old—the worst—road through Krásnoe and Orshá

Expecting the enemy from behind and not in front the French separated in their flight and spread out over a distance of twenty four hours In front of them all fled the Emperor then the kings then the dukes The Russian army expecting Napoleon to take the road to the right beyond the Dnieper—which was the only reasonable thing for him to do—themselves turned to the right and came out onto the highroad at Krásnoe And here as in a game of blindman s buff the French ran into our vanguard Seeing their enemy unexpectedly the French fell into confusion and stopped short from the sudden fright but then they [illegible]

[illegible] army—first Murat s (the vice king s) then Davout s and then Ney s—ran as it were the gauntlet of the Russian army They abandoned one another abandoned all their heavy baggage their artillery and half their men and fled getting past the Russians by night by making semicircles to the right

Ney who came last had been busying himself blowing up the walls of Smolénsk which were in nobody s way because despite the unfortunate plight of the French or because of it they wished to punish the floor against which they had hurt themselves Ney who had had a corps of ten thousand men reached Napoleon at Orshá with only one thousand men left having abandoned all the rest and all his cannon and having crossed the Dnieper at night by stealth at a wooded spot

From Orshá they fled farther along the road to Vilna still playing at blindman s buff with the pursuing army At the Berezina they again became disorganized many were drowned and many surrendered but those who got across the river fled farther Their supreme chief donned a fur coat and having seated himself in a sleigh galloped on alone abandoning his companions The others who could do so drove away too leaving those who could not to surrender or die

CHAPTER XVIII

THIS CAMPAIGN consisted in a flight of the French during which they did all they could to destroy themselves From the time they turned onto the Kaluga road to the day their leader fled from the army none of the movements of the crowd had any sense So one might have thought that regarding this period of the campaign the historians who attributed the actions of the mass to the will of one man would have found it impossible to make the story of the retreat fit their theory But no! Mountains of books have been written by the historians about this campaign and everywhere are described Napoleon s arrangements the maneuvers and his profound plans which guided the army as well as the military genius shown by his marshals

The retreat from Málo-Yaroslávets when he had a free road into a well supplied district and the parallel road was open to him along which Kutuzov afterwards pursued him—this unnecessary retreat along a devastated road—is explained to us as being due to profound considerations Similarly profound considerations are given for his retreat from Smolénsk to Orshá Then his heroism at Krásnoe is described where he is reported to have been prepared to accept battle and take personal

hem

r

bec f ght u der u h co e
th t bta ed t 8 nd the Russ n army
ts purs t f th F e cl tra ned ts strength
t th utmost nd could n t ha e done m
tho t destroy g ts lf

D ri th m eme t f the Russ n army
from T rut to K oe t lost fifty th u
nd k traggl rs that is nu b equ l
t th pop l u f l rge pr n l t wn
H lf th men f ll t f the rmy w thout
battle

A d t of th per od of th camp g —
hen the army l cked boots a d he p k n
coats wa hort f p ons d w th ut
odk nd was camp ut t ght f
m ths th w w tl f fte n degr es f
frost, h there w e o ly s n e gl t
h rs f dayl ght d the rest w s n ght
h h th fl e of disc pl ne can t b
m ta ed wh n me wer tak n nto tl t
te n of death wh e d pl f ls n t I r

l

(m th k ee-deep) t somewl
lse l how so- d so routed d cut ff
the Fre ch d so d so n

Tl R n l lf f wl m d d d d ll
that co ld d l uld h l d e t t
ta e d w thy f tl n t d tl y

—T Ré m —t legrees bel ero F hrenh

not to blame because other Russ ns s tt ng n warm rooms proposed that they sh uld do what was mposs ble

All th t stra ge c ntrad ct on now d fficult t u lerstand between the facts nd tl e l t cal accou ts only ses because the h to ia s deal g with th matter h ve wr tten th hist ry of the beaut ful words and s nt m nts of a us generals and not the hist ry of th events.

h eem

S t ne need only d scaru u e t uj n rts d ge eral plans nd ns d the

nd mply rece e an mmed te u ... solutı n.

The aım f cutt g ff Napoleon and his rmy nev r existed exc pt n the magı t n f a d en people. It could n t exi t because t was seless nd u tta ble

The peopl had ngle im t free the l nd f m n o That m w s tta ed n the first pl e of ts lf as tl e F ench ran way d so t was only essary n t to stop the r fl ght Sec ndly t was tta ed by th gu rrill wa f e h ch w destroy th F nch a d h dly by the f ct th t l rge Russ an army was f ll w the F e ch eady to use ts tr th case th r m ement topped.

The Russ n rm l d to ct l ke wh p t ru n g n m l And the expe enced d er kn w t was better t h ld th wh p ra d m n e than t trik the runn g n m l n the h d.

the Berezina by the disorganized crowds of the French when it was numerically superior?

If the aim of the Russians consisted in cutting off and capturing Napoleon and his marshals—and that aim was not merely frustrated but all attempts to attain it were most shamefully baffled—then this last period of the campaign is quite rightly considered by the French to be a series of victories and quite wrongly considered victorious by Russian historians

The Russian military historians in so far as they submit to claims of logic must admit that conclusion and in spite of their lyrical rhapsodies about valor devotion and so forth must reluctantly admit that the French retreat from Moscow was a series of victories for Napoleon and defeats for Kutuzov

But putting national vanity entirely aside one feels that such a conclusion involves a contradiction since the series of French victories brought the French complete destruction while the series of Russian defeats led to the total destruction of their enemy and the liberation of their country

The source of this contradiction lies in the fact that the historians studying the events from the letters of the sovereigns and the generals from memoirs reports projects and so forth have attributed to this last period of the war of 1812 an aim that never existed namely that of cutting off and capturing Napoleon with his marshals and his army

There never was or could have been such an aim for it would have been senseless and its attainment quite impossible

It would have been senseless first because Napoleon s disorganized army was flying from Russia with all possible speed that is to say was doing just what every Russian desired So what was the use of performing various operations on the French who were running away as fast as they possibly could?

Secondly it would have been senseless to block the passage of men whose whole energy was directed to flight

Thirdly it would have been senseless to sacrifice one s own troops in order to destroy the French army which without external interference was destroying itself at such a rate that though its path was not blocked it could not carry across the frontier more than it [illegible]

wish to take captive the Emperor kings and dukes—whose capture would have been in the highest degree embarrassing for the Russians as the most adroit diplomatists of the time (Joseph de Maistre and others) recognized Still more senseless would have been the wish to capture army corps of the French when our own army had melted away to half before reaching Krásnoe and a whole division would have been needed to convoy the corps of prisoners and when our men were not always getting full rations and the prisoners already taken were perishing of hunger

All the profound plans about cutting off and capturing Napoleon and his army were like the plan of a market gardener who when driving out of his garden a cow that had trampled down the beds he had planted should run to the gate and hit the cow on the head The only thing to be said in excuse of that gardener would be that he was very angry But not even that could be said for those who drew up this project for it was not they who had suffered from the trampled beds

But besides the fact that cutting off Napoleon with his army would have been senseless it was impossible

It was impossible first because—as experience shows that a three mile movement of columns on a battlefield never coincides with the plans—the probability of Chichagov Kutuzov and Wittgenstein effecting a junction on time at an appointed place was so remote as to be tantamount to impossibility as in fact thought Kutuzov who when he received the plan remarked that diversions planned over great distances do not yield the desired results

Secondly it was impossible because to paralyze the momentum with which Napoleon s army was retiring incomparably greater forces than the Russians possessed would have been required

Thirdly it was impossible because the military term to cut off has no meaning One can cut off a slice of bread but not an army To cut off an army—to bar its road—is quite impossible for there is always plenty of room to avoid capture and there is the night when nothing can be seen as the military scientists might convince themselves by the example of Krásnoe and of the Berezina It is only possible to capture prisoners if they agree to be captured just as it is only possible to catch a swallow if it settles on one s hand Men can only be taken prisoners if they surrender according to the rules of strategy and tactics as the Germans did. But the French troops quite

nghtl d d n t ns der that this suited them nce death by h ger d cold awa ted them fl ght or capt ty l ke

F urthly and ch efly t was imposs ble be cause ev r s nce th wo ld began has war der u h co d tion as tho e

e ments of a u g ner ts

tho t destroy g tsel

Dur th m e ent of th Russ n rmy from T ru n to Krá oe t lost f fty th sand si k tragg rs th t s nu be equ l to th popul u n f l rg pro ncial t wn Half the men fell ut f th rmy w thout a battle.

And it of this pe od f the camp n— hen the army lacked boots and sh ep k n coats, was h rt of p n and w th ut odka and was ca p ut t n ght f mon hs n the ow w tl fifteen degrees f frost, h there w re only seven or e ght hours f dayl ht d th est was n ght n hich h fl of discipline cannot be ma ta ed when m w taken int th t rg of death wher discipl n f ls, n t f few hours nly as battl but f mo ths where they were ev ty mom nt fighting death from h ger d ld, wh n half th arm h— is f this period

(mo th k ee-deep now) t s u lse d how so- d so rou ed nd cut off th F ch d so nd so n.

Th Russia s, half f whom died, did all that co ld nd should ha been don to t tu end w rth f th natu n nd they ar

—T Ra m wo egrees below zero Fahrenhei

se other Russ ns, s tt n

we left n hosp tai i u e n nt est th m, f t does not come with n the ran f th r n est ation

Yet ne need ly d scard th tudy of the reports d general pl ns nd cons de tl e n ement of those hundreds of thousands of men who took direct p rt n th events nd all the q estions th t seemed nsoluble easil nd mply rece e n immed te nd certa n solut on.

The im of cutt ng off N poleon nd his army never existed ex ept in th magi t ns f a d en people. It could not exist because t was senseless nd u tta n ble

Th people had n I aim t free th r land f m n a n That im was tta ned in the first pl ce of itself as th French ran way d so t was o ly necessary n t to top the fl ht. Secondly t was ttained by th guerrill warf hich was destroyin th F e ch, and third,y b the f ct th t l rg Russ n army was f ll w th Fr nch, ready to us ts trength n case th r mo ement topped.

Th Russ n arm had to ct l ke whip to runn g an mal. And the exper en ed dri er knew t was better t hold th wh p raised m nace than to trike the runn g n mal n th head.

Book Fifteen: 1812-13

*

CHAPTER I

WHEN SEEING a dying animal a man feels a sense of horror substance similar to his own is perishing before his eyes But when it is a beloved and intimate human being that is dying besides this horror at the extinction of life there is a severance a spiritual wound which like a physical wound is sometimes fatal and sometimes heals but always aches and shrinks at any external irritating touch

After Prince Andrew s death Natásha and Princess Mary alike felt this Drooping in spirit and closing their eyes before th [illegible]

[illegible] ius from any rough and painful contact Everything a carriage passing rapidly in the street a summons to dinner the maid s inquiry what dress to prepare or worse still any word of insincere or feeble sympathy seemed an insult painfully irritated the wound interrupting that necessary quiet in which they both tried to listen to the stern and dreadful choir that still resounded in their imagination and hindered their gazing into those mysterious limitless vistas that for an instant had opened out before them

Only when alone together were they free from such outrage and pain They spoke little even to one another and when they did it was of very unimportant matters

Both avoided any allusion to the future To admit the possibility of a future seemed to them to insult his memory Still more carefully did they avoid anything relating to him who was dead It seemed to them that what they had lived through and experienced could not be expressed in words and that any reference to the details of his life infringed the majesty and sacredness of the mystery that had been accomplished before their eyes

Continued al [illegible] stant avoi[illegible] up to the [illegible] the boundary of what they might not mention—brought before their minds with still greater purity and clearness what they were both feeling

But pure and complete sorrow is as impossible as pure and complete joy Princess Mary in her position as absolute and independent arbiter of her own fate and guardian and instructor of her nephew was the first to be called back to life from that realm of sorrow in which she had dwelt for the first fortnight She received letters from her relations to which she had to reply the room in which little Nicholas had been put was damp and he began to cough Alpátych came to Yaroslávl with reports on the state of their affairs and with advice and suggestions that they should return to Moscow to the house on the Vozdvízhenka Street which had remained uninjured and needed only slight repairs Life did not stand still and it was necessary to live Hard as it was for Princess Mary to emerge from the realm of secluded contemplation in which she had lived till then and sorry and almost ashamed as she felt to leave Natásha alone yet the cares of life demanded her attention and she involuntarily yielded to them She went through the accounts with Alpátych conferred with Dessalles about her nephew and gave orders and made preparations for the journey to Moscow

Natásha remained alone and from the time Princess Mary began making preparations for departure held aloof from her too

Princess Mary asked the countess to let Natásha go with her to Moscow and both parents gladly accepted this offer for they saw their daughter losing strength every day and thought that a change of scene and the advice of Moscow doctors would be good for her

I am not going anywhere Natásha replied when this was proposed to her Do please just leave me alone! And she ran out of the room with difficulty refraining from tears of vexation and irritation rather than of sorrow

After she felt herself deserted by Princess

M ry a d alone n her gr ef N tá h spe t most f the t m I r room by h rs lf s tting huddled p f t and all n the corner of th sofa tearı g nd twistın someth ng w th h r sl der ners us fin rs d gaz n nte tly nd fixedl t h tever her yes chan ed to fall n Th sol tud exh u ted nd tormented h r b t he wa bsolute need of t. As soon as e entered h got up qu ckly h g d her pos t d exp ess n d p cked up a book r some sew n e dently wa t ng m pa ently f the truder to go

She f lt all th time as f she m ght t any mome t pe trate that on hich—w th ter ribl questı g too gre t f her trength—her sp ritual ga was fi d.

O day t ard th end f D cember N tá sha, pale d th n dressed n bl ck woolen go her pl ted hair negl ge tly twisted nto a knot was cr ched fe t nd ll n th corn r d mooth sea ch gly at her Natásh as u ual an wered bef re she had t me to th nk wh t she w uld say Sh sa d Th s can t go on— t won t. You ll get ell—qu te well

Sl e n w saw h m f m the commencement of that scene nd el d what he had tl en felt. She recalled h s long d nd ev re look t th e w ds nd understood the mean ng of the rebuke nd desp n th t protracted ga e

I greed N tásh now sa d t herself that t w uld b dre dful f h l ays con tinued t suffer l s d t then only because it w uld ha e been d eadful f r h m but he und rstood t d ffe ently He thought t w uld be dre dful for me He th n still w hed to l e nd feared death. A d I sa d t so awk wa dly and tup dly! I d d not s y wl t I ffer ntl Had I sa d

I

had wo —t th the s u t ther d f l f f wh ch he had n er be for th h d which h d f rmerly emed t her so far way d mprob ble was n w ea er d m k nd m comp ehen bl han this ıde f l f wher everythı g was ther mptı ess d desol t on uffer g and d n ty

Sh was ga g where he knew him t be b t h ld m gi h m therw than h h d been her Sh w w h m a n as he had been t Mytishch t Tro tsa nd t Y oslá l

Sh saw h face heard h e peated hı ords d her own nd som times d vised ther w rd they m ght ha poken

Ther h l g b k n n armch h l t loak lea g h head n hıs th n p l ha d His hes d eadfull holl w d h shoulders raised H l ps firmly l ed h s eyes gl t er d wr kl mes d goes n o es w hes ust

h m, ra sed his es, u u r u ly

O l g w ld be terr bl sa d h to b nd eself f er to uffer m n. It wo ld be ual t ur A d h looked he a a n eemed t b say g u e sa us to her o ly n her m gin t n Natásha th s time ga h m a d ffe ent n w She t pped him d sa d Terr bl f y u but ot f r m ! You kn w that f me there n th n in l fe but you d to uffer w th y u the great est happ ness f m nd he took he h nd and p essed t h had p essed t that terr ble h nd

r

h ds nd ettı g her t eth w th desp e eff rt.

Sh wa com by w t sorr w d t rs were al eady rı n n h eyes th n he ud denly asked herself t wh m h w say g th Aga n e rth w hr uded n h d dry perpl xit d ga n w tha tra ned frown sh pee ed toward th w ld whe he was. And w w t emed t her he w p ne trat g the my tery But t th n tant wh n t eemed that the n omp hen bl wa eveal g t lf to her lo d rattle f th doo h ndle truck p f lly on h ears. D ya h h ma d nte ed the oom qu ckly and abruptly w th f ht ned look on her f ce nd h w g n o er f her m t ess.

Come t y u P pa t o c plea sa d he with trange excited look. A misf

tune about Peter Ilynich a letter she finished with a sob

CHAPTER II

BESIDES A FEELING of aloofness from everybody Natásha was feeling a special estrangement from the members of her own family All of them—her f —

near to

all their

to the wo n which she had been living of late and she felt not merely indifferent to them but regarded them with hostility She heard Dunyásha s words about Peter Ilynich and a misfortune but did not grasp them

What misfortune? What misfortune can happen to them? They just live their own old quiet and commonplace life thought Natásha

As she entered the ballroom her father was hurriedly coming out of her mother s room His face was puckered up and wet with tears He had evidently run out of that room to give vent to the sobs that were choking him When he saw Natásha he waved his arms despairingly and burst into convulsively painful sobs that distorted his soft round face

Pe Pétya Go go she is calling and weeping like a child and quickly shuffling on his feeble legs to a chair he almost fell into it covering his face with his hands

Suddenly an electric shock seemed to run through Natásha s whole being Te —

g

a feeling of release from the oppressive constraint that had prevented her

immediately forget herself and her own grief

She ran to her father but he feebly waved his arm pointing to her mother s door Princess Mary pale and with quivering chin came out from that room and taking Natásha by the arm said something to her Natásha neither saw nor heard her She went in with rapid steps pausing at the door for an instant as if struggling with herself and then ran to her mother

The countess was lying in an armchair in a strange and awkward position stretching out and beating her head against the wall Sonya and the maids were holding her arms

Natásha! Natásha! cried the countess It s not true it s not true He s lying Natásha! she shrieked pushing those around her away Go away all of you it s not true! Killed! ha ha ha! It s not true!

Natásha put one knee on the armchair stooped over her mother embraced her and with unexpected strength raised her turned her face toward herself and clung to her

Mummy! darling! I am here my dearest Mummy she kept on whispering not pausing an instant

She did not let go of her mother but struggled tenderly with her demanded a pillow and hot water and unfastened and tore open her mother s dress

My dearest darling Mummy my precious! she whispered incessantly kissing her head her hands her face and feeling her own irrepressible and streaming tears tickling her nose and cheeks

The countess pressed her daughter s hand closed her eyes and became quiet for a moment Suddenly she sat up with unaccustomed swiftness glanced vacantly around her and seeing Natásha began to press her daughter s head with all her strength Then she turned toward her daughter s face which was wincing with pain and gazed long at it

Natásha you love me? she said in a soft trustful whisper Natásha you would not deceive me? You ll tell me the whole truth?

Natásha looked at her with eyes full of tears and in her look there was nothing but love and an entreaty for forgiveness

My darling Mummy! she repeated straining all the power of her love to find some way of taking on herself the excess of grief that crushed her mother

And again in a futile struggle with reality her mother refusing to believe that she could live when her beloved boy was killed in the bloom of life escaped from reality into a world of delirium

Natásha did not remember how that day passed nor that night nor the next day and night She did not sleep and did not leave her mother Her persevering and patient love seemed completely to surround the countess every moment not explaining or consoling but recalling her to life

During the third night the countess kept very quiet for a few minutes and Natásha rested her head on the arm of her chair and closed her eyes but opened them again on hearing the bedstead creak The countess was sitting up in bed and speaking softly

How glad I am you have come You are

tired. Won t you h ve some tea N tásha ent p t her "Y u have mpro ed n looks and grown more manly cont nued th count ess taking her daughter hand.

Mamma What e you sayin

N tá ha he is n mo e no m e

And embracin h r daughter the countess began weep f r th first time

CHAPTER III

Princess Mary postpo ed h departure Só ya d th cou t tr ed to r place Natá ha but could t. They sa th t she l ne was bl to restra her mother fro n u reason despa r For three weeks N tasha rema ed consta tly the m ther de leep ng n l u ge cha her room, m k g l er eat nd dr k, d talkin to her cessa tl because th mer sound f her t der caress ng t es soothed her mo her

feel gs.

F m that day a te der nd p ss o at friend w ween w m n was

but mo tl l te sh l ft h r room issues d oma tak g nt rest n l fe. But th same blow that lmost k lled th countess th seco d bl w est red N tásh t life

A p iritual w u d prod ed by re d ng of th p tual body l ke phys cal wou d d. trange t m y seem just deep wo d may heal nd ts edges jo n phy cal d spir tual wou ds al k ca yet heal com p et ly only as th esult f t l f rce from w thi

N tásha wo d l ealed in that way Sh thought her l f wa ended, b t her l f her mother expectedly howed her that the essence f lif —l e—wa ill ct w thin her Lov w k nd so d d l fe

Pri ce A drew l t d ys had bou d Pr n cess M ry and N tásha tog ther this new so row brough th m ull loser t o e ther Pri ess M ry put off her departure and f three weeks looked ft N tásha as f sh h d been k ch ld. Th la t weeks p sed her mother bedroom h d tra ed N tásh phys ical tr gth.

O f ernoo n t g N tásh h ver

her ba k.

I d n t wa t t l p Mary s t by me a littl

"You a e t red—try to sleep.

No no. Why d d you bri g me away? She will be asking f r me.

She s much better She spoke so well today sa d Princess M ry

Natásha l y on the bed and n tl e semidarkness f the room scanned Princess Mary s face.

"Is she l ke h m thought N tásha. "Yes l k nd y t n t l ke. But she qu te orig nal stra ge new nd unknown And she lo es m Wh t s n her heart All that is good. But how? What is her m nd l ke What does she think bout m ? Yes he s plend d

Mary she sa d tim dl draw ng Prin ess Mary s hand to herself M ry you mustn t think m w cked. No? M ry darl how I lo e you! Let us be quite qu te f nds.

her began k s n

of the r time together Wher o e o u other became restless nd hast ned to rejo n he Together they felt m e n harmo y w th ne an the th n ther of them felt w th her self when lon A feel ng tro ger than fri nd ship sprang up between them an exclus e feeling of l fe be ng poss ble only in each ther presence.

Somet mes they were ile t f h urs som times fter they were already bed th y would begin talkin and go n till morn They spok most of what was l ng past. Princess Mary pok of her ch ldhood of her mother her f ther d her daydream and N tásha who with pass e lack of u derstanding had f rmerly turned way from th t life of devo- t n ubm ss n, nd th poetry of Christi n elf sacrifice n w feel g herself bound to

irt es. F r Pri cess Mary l t m g t N tásha s t les of childhood nd ea ly youth there lso pe ed out new nd hithert uncom p eh ded de of life belief in lif and its joyme t.

Just as before they never mentioned *him* so as not to lower (as they thought) their exalted feelings by words but this silence about him had the effect of making them gradually begin to forget him without being conscious of it

Natásha had grown thin and pale and physically so weak that they all talked about her health and this pleased her But sometimes she was suddenly overcome by fear not only of death but of sickness weakness and loss of good looks and involuntarily she examined her bare arm carefully surprised at its thinness and in the morning noticed her drawn and as it seemed to her piteous face in her glass It seemed to her that things must be so and yet it was dreadfully sad

One day she went quickly upstairs and found herself out of breath Unconsciously she immediately invented a reason for going down and then testing her strength ran up stairs again observing the result

Another time when she called Dunyásha her voice trembled so she called again—though she could hear Dunyásha coming—called her in the deep chest tones in which she had been wont to sing and listened attentively to herself

She did not know and would not have believed it but beneath the layer of slime that covered her soul and seemed to her impenetrable delicate young shoots of grass were already sprouting which taking root would so cover with their living verdure the grief that weighed her down that it would soon no longer be seen or noticed The wound had begun to heal from within

At the end of January Princess Mary left for Moscow and the count insisted on Natásha s going with her to consult the doctors

CHAPTER IV

After the encounter at Vyázma where Kutuzov had been unable to hold back his troops in their anxiety to overwhelm and cut off the enemy and so on the farther movement of the fleeing French and of the Russians who pursued them continued as far as Krásnoe without a battle The flight was so rapid that the Russian army pursuing the French could not keep up with them cavalry and artillery horses broke down and the information received of the movements of the French was never reliable

The men in the Russian army were so worn out by this continuous marching at the rate of twenty seven miles a day that they could not go any faster

To realize the degree of exhaustion of the Russian army it is only necessary to grasp clearly the meaning of the fact that while not losing more than five thousand killed and wounded after Tarutino and less than a hundred prisoners the Russian army which left that place a hundred thousand strong reached Krásnoe with only fifty thousand

The rapidity of the Russian pursuit was just as destructive to our army as the flight of the French was to theirs The only difference was that the Russian army moved voluntarily with no such threat of destruction as hung over the French and that the sick Frenchmen were left behind in enemy hands while the sick Russians left behind were among their own people The chief cause of the wastage of Napoleon s army was the rapidity of its movement and a convincing proof of this is the corresponding decrease of the Russian army

Kutuzov as far as was in his power instead of trying to check the movement of the French as was desired in Petersburg and by the Russian army generals directed his whole activity here as he had done at Tarutino and Vyázma to hastening it on while easing the movement of our army

But besides this since the exhaustion and enormous diminution of the army caused by the rapidity of the advance had become evident another reason for slackening the pace and delaying presented itself to Kutuzov The aim of the Russian army was to pursue the French The road the French would take was unknown and so the closer our troops trod on their heels the greater distance they had to cover Only by following at some distance could one cut across the zigzag path of the French All the artful maneuvers suggested by our generals meant fresh movements of the army and a lengthening of its marches whereas the only reasonable aim was to shorten those marches To that end Kutuzov s activity was directed during the whole campaign from Moscow to Vilna—not casually or intermittently but so consistently that he never once deviated from it

Kutuzov felt and knew—not by reasoning or science but with the whole of his Russian being—what every Russian soldier felt that the French were beaten that the enemy was flying and must be driven out but at the same time he like the soldiers realized all the hardship of this march the rapidity of which was unparaleled for such a time of year

But to the generals, especially the f reign ones in the Russian rmy who w shed t dis- tinguish themselves, to ast n sh somebody and for some reason to capture a kin o duke—it seemed that now—when n battle must be horribl and senseless—was the very time to fight and conquer som body Kutuzov merel shrugged his shoulders wh n one fter another they presented projects of maneuvers to be mad with those sold ers—ill shod, in- sufficiently clad, d half tarved—who w thin a mo th and witho t fighti a b tll had dwindled to half th ir number and who at the best if th fl ght continued would ha e to go a greater distance than that they had already traversed, bef re they reached th front er

This longi to distingu sh themselves, to maneuver to overthrow nd t cut off showed itself particularly whenever th Russians tum bled on th French army

So t was t Krásnoe where they expected to find one f th three French column and stum led instead on N poleon himself w th sixteen thousand men. Desp all Kuturo efforts t d that ru n u encounter and to preserv his troops, th massacre of the broken mob f F ch soldiers by worn-out Russ ns contin ed Krásnoe f three days.

T ll Tol dispos t n "Th firs column will march to so nd so c. And as usual nothing happened n cord w th th dispos tion. Prince Eug of Wurt emberg fired from hill over th Fren h crowds tha were ru ng pas d dema ded re f cem nts hich did no rri e. Th F ench. o ding th Russians, dispersed d h d themsel es n t fores by ght, maki th way rou d as best they co ld d co nued their fl ght.

Miloradov ch who sa d h did no wa t to know ythin bo t th commissariat affairs of his detachment, nd could ever be f und when h wa wa ted—that *heval er sa peur et proch* as h tyled himself—who was fond of parleys with th French, sent en voys demandi g th urrender wa ed time, and did not do wha h was ordered do.

"I give you tha colum lads. h said, rid ng p to th troops d po ting out the Fren h th cavalry

A d he cavalry w th purs d sabers urg g horses hat could scarcel move, trot ed with mu h eff rt th lumn presented to them—tha is sa crowd f Frenchmen stark w h co d, fros b en nd star g—and th column that had been presen ed to them Knigh wi hou fea d hou reproach.

threw down ts arms nd surrendered as t had lo been nx ous to do

At Krásnoe they took twenty six thousand prisoners, several hundred cannon, and a st ck called a marshal s staff, nd disputed s to who had distinguished himself and were pleased w th their achievement—though they much regretted not having taken Napoleon or at least marshal o a hero of some sort and repro ched one an ther and especially Kutuzo f ha ng fa led to d so.

These men, carried away by their passions, were but blind tools of the most mel ncholy law of necess ty but cons dered themsel es heroes nd imagi ed that they were accom pl shing a most noble nd honorable deed. They blamed Kutuzov and sa d that from the ery beginning of the campa gn he had pre- ented th ir vanquishin Napoleon that he thou ht of nothing but satisfying his passi n and would n t advanc from th Linen Fac tories because he was comf rtable there, that t Krásnoe he checked the dvance because on learning that Napoleon was there he had qu te lost his head nd that t was probable that h had n understandin w th Napoleon and had been bribed by him, and so on and so on.

Not only d d his contemporaries carried away by their pass ns, talk in this way but posterity ndhist ry ha e cclaimed N poleon as gr d while Kutuzo is described by f r eigners as crafty dissolute, weak old courtier nd by Russians as som thing nd fin t —a sort of puppet useful only because h had a Russian name.

CHAPTER V

In 8 2 nd 8 3 Kutúzov was openly ccused of blundering The Emperor was dissatisfied with him. And n history recently written by order of th Highest Auth rities t is sa d that Kutuzov was a cunning court liar frightened of th nam of N poleon and that b his blunders t Krásnoe and the Berezin he de pri ed th Russian army of the glory of com p ete victory over th F ench.

Such is the fa e not of great men (*gr nds homm*) whom th Russian mind does not acknowledge but of those rar and always soli

W son D ry—L. Tolsto S R bert Thomas Wilson was British mil tary commissioner at th Russian headquarters in 4—Tr.
History f the ea 8 Th haracter f K tuzov and effect ons on th unsatisfactory sults f th b ttles t Krásnoe by Bogdanovich. —L. Tolstoy

tary individuals who discerning the will of Providence submit their personal will to it The hatred and contempt of the crowd punish such men for discerning the higher laws

For Russian historians strange and terrible to say Napoleon—that most insignificant tool of history who never anywhere even in exile showed human dignity—Napoleon is the object of adulation and enthusiasm he is *grand* But Kutuzov—the man who from the beginning to the end of his activity in 1812 never once swerving by word or deed from Borodinó to Vilna presented an example exceptional in history of self sacrifice and a present consciousness of the future importance of what was happening—Kutuzov seems to them something indefinite and pitiful and when speaking of him and of the year 1812 they always seem a little ashamed

And yet it is difficult to imagine an historical character whose activity was so unswervingly directed to a single aim and it would be difficult to imagine any aim more worthy or more consonant with the will of the whole people Still more difficult would it be to find an instance in history of the aim of an historical personage being so completely accomplished as that to which all Kutuzov s efforts *were directed in 1812*

Kutuzov never talked of forty centuries looking down from the Pyramids of the sacrifices he offered for the fatherland or of what he intended to accomplish or had accomplished in general he said nothing about himself adopted no prose always appeared to be the simplest and most ordinary of men and said the simplest and most ordinary things He wrote letters to his daughters and to Madame de Stael read novels liked the society of pretty women jested with generals officers and soldiers and never contradicted those who tried to prove anything to him When Count Rostopchín at the Yauza bridge galloped up to Kutuzov with personal reproaches for having caused the destruction of Moscow and said

How was it you promised not to abandon Moscow without a battle? Kutuzov replied

And I shall not abandon Moscow without a battle though Moscow was then already abandoned When Arakchéev coming to him from the Emperor said that Ermólov ought to be appointed chief of the artillery Kutuzov replied 'Yes I was just saying so myself though a moment before he had said quite the contrary What did it matter to him—who then alone amid a senseless crowd understood the whole tremendous significance of what happening—what did it matter to him whether Rostopchín attributed the calamities of Moscow to him or to himself? Still less could it matter to him who was appointed chief of the artillery

Not merely in these cases but continually did that old man—who by experience of life had reached the conviction that thoughts and the words serving as their expression are not what move people—use quite meaningless words that happened to enter his head

But that man so heedless of his words did not once during the whole time of his activity utter one word inconsistent with the single aim toward which he moved throughout the whole war Obviously in spite of himself in very diverse circumstances he repeatedly expressed his real thoughts with the bitter conviction that he would not be understood Beginning with the battle of Borodinó from which time his disagreement with those about him began he alone said that *the battle of Borodinó was a victory* and repeated this both verbally and in his dispatches and reports up to the time of his death He alone said that *the loss of Moscow is not the loss of Russia* In reply to Lauriston s proposal of peace he said *There can be no peace for such is the people s will* He alone during the retreat of the French said that *all our maneuvers are useless everything is being accomplished of itself better than we could desire* that *the enemy must be offered a golden bridge* that *neither the Tarutino the Vyazma nor the Krásnoe battles were necessary* that *we must keep some force to reach the frontier with* and that *he would not sacrifice a single Russian for ten Frenchmen*

And this courtier as he is described to us, who lies to Arakchéev to please the Emperor he alone—incurring thereby the Emperor's displeasure—said in Vilna that *to carry the war beyond the frontier is useless and harmful*

Nor do words alone prove that only he understood the meaning of the events. His actions—without the smallest deviation—were all directed to one and the same threefold end (1) to brace all his strength for conflict with the French (2) to defeat them and (3) to drive them out of Russia minimizing as far as possible the sufferings of our people and of our army

This procrastinator Kutuzov whose motto was Patience and Time this enemy of de-

u e a t n ga e battle t B rod nó est
— h eparat o is f r it w tl u p r lleled
h b ttle

tla ed t ll his oe u
tory desp te the ass an e f g nerals that
the battle as l t nd desp t the f t tl t
fo an army to ha e t ret re fter w nning
a b ttl was u p ec d ted He al e du ing
the hol etreat ted th t b ttles wl ch
e eless the hould n t be fought and
that new w h uld t be begun n the
fro t ers f Ru cros ed

It easy ow t u derst nd the s g fican e
f these ev nts— f nly we ab tan f m t
tr'b t g to the act ty f th mass m that
e t d nly th h ds f a d en nd du l
—f th ents nd th esults n w l b
f us.

B tl d d that ld m n lone n oppos
u to th g eral p so truly d ern
h mporta e of the people v es of the
vents th t n ll h s t ty he w ne er
u tru to t?

Th so e f th t extr d ry p w r f
pe tr t g the m a g f the nts then
cu g l y n th n t al f el ng wh ch he
possessed f ll pu ty d t gth.

O ly the r cogn t n f the f t tl t h pos-
es ed th feel g cau ed the p ple n so
stra ge m e c ntrary to th T t h
t l t h m— ld n n d sf —to be
th rep es tat e n th n t l w r And
ly th t f l g pl ed h m n th t h gl est
h m pedc tal f m wh l he th c mm nd
er h f dev ted ll l p we n t t l y
g d dest oy g m n but t g d
ho g p ty them.

Th t s mple modest d th f e truly
gr t, figu e uld t b t th f l
m ld l Eu p n l —th ppo d ul
l me —th t h t ry h ented
T l key m can b gr t f
l tkey h h wn con ept f gr t es

CHAPTER VI

TI FIFTI O No ER was tl f t d y f
what called th b ttle f K á Tow d
e en g— fter m ch disput d m ny m
takes m d by ge eral wl d d t go t
th p per pl es d after dj t ts h l
been se t bo t w th t ro ders—whe t
l d b m pl tl t tle emy w e ry
wher fl gl t d tl t the ld a d w uld
be ba tle K t l ft Krás e d we t

h d tl at
rode
rse fol
to Dób oe on h s plump
l wed by an en rmous su te of d scontented
g nerals wl o wh per d m ng themselve be
h nd hı b ck All along the road gr ups of
Fr ncl pr s ners captu ed th t day (th re
h is nd of them) were crowd

n w u
nyth g they had been al l to get hold of
we e t nd n n the ad bes d long row
of u harne sed F ench gu s At the approacl
f the commander in ch ef the buzz f t lk
ea ed and ll eyes we e fixed on Kutuz
who wea g a h te cap w tl a red band and
pad led o erco t th t bulged on h r und
l l g tle ro d on h s
t g
been

c ptu ed

Kut o e med pr ccup ed a d d d n t
l t n t what the gener l wa ay ng He
c e d up h eye w th d t fi l look s
h ga d attent ly nd fixedly t these p son
ers ho p ese ted a spe lly v et hed ap-
p a e Most f them we di figu ed by
f t b tten n es a d l eeks a d ne ly all
h d ed w ll n nd feste ng eye

O e gr up of the F nch tood clo e t th

p es
th s ld r w th th es mm d at ly
tu ed way d nt on w tl wh t h w
d ng

K t v looked l g d tently at the e
two sold ers He pu k r d h f e scre e l
up h ye a d p ly w y d h he d At
tl pot h n t ced Russ n soldie
l gh gly p tt g F en l m n on th
sh ld y g s meth g t l m i f endly

n f t of the Preobrazhé k regim t
Ah th t dards! d Kutu v e dently
detach ng h m lf w th d fficulty f om the

tary individuals who discerning the will of Providence submit their personal will to it The hatred and contempt of the crowd punish such men for discerning the higher laws

For Russian historians strange and terrible to say Napoleon—that most insignificant tool of history who never anywhere even in exile showed human dignity—Napoleon is the object of adulation and enthusiasm he is *grand* But Kutuzov—the man who from the beginning to the end of his activity in 1812 never

ness of the future importance of what was

little ashamed

And yet it is difficult to imagine an historical character whose activity was so unswervingly directed to a single aim and it would be difficult to imagine any aim more worthy or more consonant with the will of the whole people Still more difficult would it be to find an instance in history of the aim of an historical personage being so completely accomplished as that to which all Kutuzov s efforts were directed in 1812

Kutuzov never talked of forty centuries looking down from the Pyramids of the sacrifices he offered for the fatherland or of what he intended to accomplish or had ac

He wrote letters to his daughters and to Madame de Stael read novels liked the society of pretty women jested with generals officers and soldiers and never contradicted those who tried to prove anything to him When Count Rostopchin at the Yauza bridge galloped up to Kutuzov with personal reproaches for having caused the destruction of Moscow and said How was it you promised not to abandon Moscow without a battle? Kutuzov replied And I

battle

doned

the Em

appointed chief of the artillery Kutuzov replied Yes I was just saying so myself though a moment before he had said quite the contrary What did it matter to him—who then alone amid a senseless crowd understood the

matter to him who was appointed chief artillery

Not merely in these cases but continuall did that old man—who by experience of l had reached the conviction that thoughts and the words serving as their expression are not what move people—use quite meaningless words that happened to enter his head

But that man so heedless of his words did not once during the whole time of his activity utter one word inconsistent with the single aim toward which he moved throughout the whole war Obviously in spite of himself in very diverse circumstances he repeatedly expressed his real thoughts with the bitter conviction that he would not be understood Beginning with the battle of Borodinó from which time his disagreement with those about him began he alone said that *the battle of Borodinó was a victory* and repeated this both verbally and in his dispatches and reports up to the time of his death He alone said that *the loss of Moscow is not the loss of Russia* In reply to Lauriston s proposal of peace he said *There can be no peace for such is the people s will* He alone during the retreat of the French said that *all our maneuvers are useless everything is being accomplished of itself better than we could desire* that the *enemy must be offered a golden bridge* that *neither the Tarutino the Vyázma nor the Krásnoe battles were necessary* that *we must keep some force to reach the frontier with* and that *he would not sacrifice a single Russian for ten Frenchmen*

And this courtier as he is described to us who lies to Arakchéev to please the Emperor he alone—incurring thereby the Emperor's displeasure—said in Vilna that *to carry the war beyond the frontier is useless and harmful*

Nor do words alone prove that only he understood the meaning of the events His actions—without the smallest deviation—were all directed to one and the same threefold end (1) to brace all his strength for conflict with the French (2) to defeat them and (3) to drive them out of Russia minimizing as far as possible the sufferings of our people and of our army

This procrastinator Kutúzov whose motto was Patience and Time this enemy of de

ssre ction, ga e battle t Borod 5 n est
reparations f t w th u paralleled
h ttl

t
t
the battle was lost d uesp u
for a army t have t retire after w nnl
a ba tle was u preced ted. H l e du ng
th whol retreat ns ted th t battles wh ch
were us.less then hould n t be f ught, and
t.at a ew war should n t be begun no th
fro tiers of Russia crossed.

It is easy now t u d rsta d th gn fica ce
f these events— f only we bst n from t
tribut to th ct t f the mass m that
existed nly n the heads f d ren d du ls
—fo th eve ts and their results now l e before us.

But how did that old man alone, n oppos
tion to the ge eral p n so truly discern
th importance f th people ew of th
events that n ll his ct vity h was never
nce true to t.

Th source of that extra rdinary power of
penetrat g the mean g of th events then
occurrin la n th national feel ng which h
possessed n full pur ty nd trength.

Only the recogn tion f th f ct that he possessed thi feel caused th peopl n so
strange man er co trary to th Tsar wish,
to select him—an ld man n disfa or—to be
their representati n the national wa And
only that feelin placed him n that highes
human pedestal from which h th command
er in ch ef devo ed ll his powers no t l
ng d destroyin men bu to sa g and
howin p ty them.

That simpl modest, and therefore trul
great, figure could not be cast in th f lse
mol f European hero—th upposed ruler
of men—that his. ry ha vented.

T lackey no man can be great, f a
lackey ha his own con ep ion f greatness.

CHAPTER VI

The fifth of November was t. first da f
wha is called t.e battl of Krasnoe Toward
evenin —after much disputin and many mistakes made by generals w.o did no go to
t.eir proper pla es, nd af er adjutants had
been sent abou with coun erorders—when t
had become plain tha the enemy was every
where in fli ht nd tha there cou.d and wo ld
be no battle, Kutuzov lef Krasnoe nd went
t D broe wl tl er h l ead quarters had that
been transferred

The d y was clear and frosty Kut zo rod
t D3broe n h s plump little wh te horse fol
lowed by n e rmous su te f l scontented
general who whispered m ng them el es be
h nd his b ck. All al g the road gro ps of
French priso ers captured that day (ther
were seven thousand of tl em) were crow l
to warm themsel es at campfires. Near D l roe
n mmense crowd of tattered p so ers, buzz
w th talk and wrapped an l b nd. ged i
an th they had been able to get hold of
were ta d ng n the road bes de a l ng row
of unharnessed French guns. At the pproach
of the commander in ch ef th buzz of t lk
eased and ll eyes were fi ed on Kutuzo
who wear g a white cap w th red ba d nd
m d

captured.

Kutuzo seemed p eoccup ed nd d d not
listen t what the ge eral was say g H
screwed up his eyes w th a d ssat fied look
h gazed ttenti l nd fixedly t these prison
ers, who presented speciall wret hed appearance Most of them wer d figured by
frost b tten noses nd cheeks d nea ly all
h d red swollen d festeri eyes.

O e group f the French stood lose to th
road, a d two of them o e of whom had h
f ce co ered with sores, were teari g a p ece
of raw flesh w th th ha ds. There wa something horrible nd bestial n th fleetin gl nce
they hrew t th riders d n the malevolent
express on w th wh ch l er glan t Kut
zo th soldier w th the sores rned tel
turned away d went on with what he wa
d ng

Kutuzo looked l g d ntentl t these
two soldiers. H puckered his f ce, screwed
up h eyes, d pensi l wayed his head. At
another spot h not ced Russi n soldier
laugh l patt n Frenchman on the
shoulder sa ng som thi gt h m n friendly
ma ner nd Kutuzo with the same expres
sion n hi f ce gain swayed his head.

What were you sayin ?" h asked th gen
eral, who continuin his report directed the
commander n hi f's ttenti n to some stand
rds captured from th Fre ch nd tand ng
in front of th Preobrazhénsk regiment.

Ah th tandards said Kutuzo ev dently
detaching himself w th difficulty from the

tary individuals who discerning the will of Providence submit their personal will to it The hatred and contempt of the crowd punish such men for discerning the higher laws

For Russian historians strange and terrible to say Napoleon—that most insignificant tool of history who never anywhere even in exile showed human dignity—Napoleon is the object of adulation and enthusiasm he is *grand* But Kutuzov—the man who from the beginning to the end of his activity in 181 never once swerving by word or deed from Borodinó to Vilna presented an example exceptional in history of self sacrifice and a present conscious ness of the future importance of wh

I " I cu

And yet it is difficult to imagine an histori cal character whose activity was so uns rv

o the whole people Still more difficult would it be to find an instance in history of the aim of an his torical personage being so completely accom plished as that to which all Kutuzov s efforts were directed in 1812

Kutuzov never talked of forty centuries looking down from the Pyramids of the sac rifices he offered for the fatherland or of what he intended to accomplish or had ac complished in general he said nothing about himself don

be the

said th

He wr s daughters and to Ma dame de Stael read novels liked the society of pretty women jested with generals officers and soldiers and never contradicted those who tried to prove anything to him When Count Rostopchín at the Yauza bridge galloped up to Kutuzov with personal reproaches for having caused the destruct on of Moscow and said How was it you promised not to abandon

doned When Arakchéev coming to him from the Emperor said that Ermólov ought to be appointed chief of the artillery Kutuzov re plied Yes I was just saying so myself though a moment before he had said quite the con trary What did it matter to him—who then alone amid a senseless crowd understood the whole tremendous significance of what

I to him who was appointed chief of the artillery

Not merely in these cases but continually did that old man—who by experience of life had reached the conviction that thoughts and the words serving as their expression are not what move people—use quite meaningless words that happened to enter his head

But that man so heedless of his words did not once during the whole time of his activity utter one word inconsistent with the sin le aim toward which he moved throu hout the whole war Obviously in spite of himself in very diverse circumstances he repeatedly ex pressed his real thoughts with the bitter con viction that he would not be understood Be ginning with the battle of Borodinó from which time his disagreement with those about him began he alone said that *the battle of Borodinó was a victory* and repeated this both verbally and in his dispatches and re ports up to the time of his death He alone said that *the loss of Moscow is not the loss of Russia* In reply to Lauriston s proposal of peace he said *There can be no peace for such is the people s will* He alone during the re

enemy must be offered a golden bridge that *neither the Tarutino the Vyázma nor the Krásnoe battles were necessary that we must keep some force to reach the frontier with* and that *he would not sacrifice a single Rus sian for ten Frenchmen*

And this courtier as he is described to us who lies to Arakchéev to please the Emperor he alone—incurring thereby the Emperor s displeasure—said in Vilna that *to carry the war beyond the frontier is useless and harm ful*

Nor do words alone prove that only he understood the meaning of the events His actions—without the smallest deviation—were all directed to one and the same threefold end (1) to brace all his strength for conflict with the French (2) to defeat them and (3) to drive them out of Russ a minimizing as far as pos sible the sufferings of our people and of our army

This procrastinator Kutúzov whose motto was Patience and Time this enemy of de

O epart f t d persed and waded knee-deep t..o f the s w t b rch f est to the right f the ll g d mmed ately the sound of es a d s o ds the crash ng f branches a d merry ces could be l ea d from there A the ect m d tl e reg ment l wagons and h rses wh ch we e stand ng n a group wa busy gett out caldr s and rye b scu t a d feed the h rses. A th d ect n scattered thro h th vill g rranging quarters f r the taff officers carry ng o t the French corpses that er the huts d dragg ng away boards, dry wood d th tch from the roofs f th campfires or wattle fences to serve f r sh lter

Some fifteen men with merry l outs were sh k g d n the h gh wattle wall of hed the roof of wh h had l eady been remo ed

N tl e ll tog the — h l cried the es d the hu e u f c f the wall sprinkled th s w d cre k g w th frost a e a the gloom of the n ght The l er st kes cracked m d mor nd at last th wall fell a d w th t th men wh had bee push g t. Loud coarse l ughter and joy us h ts ued.

N w th cat h h ld n twos! H d up the lev l Th t s t. Where a e you sh ng to?"

"N w all togeth l But wa t m m nt boy W th so g!

All s ood lent, nd soft plea nt el ty began t g A the d f th th rd ers as the l t n t d ed w y twenty o ces roared nce Oo-oo-oo-oo Th t s t. All togethe l H w y boy l b t de p t th ed ff rts the wattl h rdly m ed d the l e th t f ll wed the hea y bre th g f th m n wa ud ble

He y u of th S xth Company! Des l th t y l Le d h nd will you Y u may a t us f these d ys.

Som tw nty men f the S th Comp ny h w n th way t the ll ge j ed the ha l rs, d th wa tl wall wh ch w bo t thirty fi fee l d even fe t h gh m ed f rw d l g th ll ge treet w y g p ess g upo nd cutt n th h ulders f th gasp g m n

Ge l g F ll g? Wl t are y u t p- p g l ? Th e n w

M rry n eless w ds f bu fl wed freely

Wha are y up t ? dde ly came the u h t o f rg nt m j wh cam pon b m who w h ul ng th burd n. "Ther ar g try her the ge eral h m elf is in that hut and you foul mouth ed des l y u brutes I ll g e it to you! sh t ted he h tt ng the f rst ma t wl o came n h s w y sw ng g bl w on the b ck Can t you make less no se

— — beca ne s lent. The sol l er l o r e l s

on

Don t you l ke it? sa d a f u h ng o ce d moderat ng the r t nes the men mo ed forward

When they were ut of tl e s ll ge they began talk g aga n s l ud as befo e interl r l g th talk w th the same aimless exple t es.

In tl e hut wh h the men had p sed the ch ef off cers h d gatl ered d we e in a m ted talk o er the r tea about the e ent of th d y a d the m neu ers s ggested fo tomorr w It was propo ed to make a fl nk m el to tl e left ut off the V ce-K g (Murat) and captu h m

By the t me th sold ers had dragged the w ttle fence t ts pl ce tl e campf res re bl z on all s des re dy f r cook ng the wood cra kled the w melt g nd bl ck l d ws of sold ers fl tted t a d f o ll o er the occup ed p e where th sn w h d been trodd n d wn

A es nd choppers wer pl ed all arou d E eryth ng was d n w th ut ny o ders le g g en St es of wood were b o ght f r the n ght sh lters we e r gged up f r tl e offi ers cald n w re be g bo led a d mus kets nd a co terme ts put order

The w ttle wall the men h d b ugl t w set up a sem ci cle by the E ghth Company as sh lt f om tl th propp d up by musk t ests a d a campf e was bu lt b fo e t. Th y beat the tattoo called the roll l l — fi es f

CHAPTER VIII

thoughts that preoccupied him

He looked about him absently Thousands of eyes were looking at him from all sides awaiting a word from him

He stopped in front of the Preobrazhénsk regiment sighed deeply and closed his eyes One of his suite beckoned to the soldiers carrying the standards to advance and surround the commander in chief with them Kutuzov was silent for a few seconds and then submitting with evident reluctance to the duty imposed by his position raised his head and began to speak A throng of officers surrounded him He looked attentively around at the circle of officers recognizing several of them

I thank you all! he said addressing the soldiers and then again the officers In the stillness around him his slowly uttered words were distinctly heard I thank you all for your hard and faithful service The victory is complete and Russia will not forget you! Honor to you forever

He paused and looked round

Lower its head lower it! he said to a soldier who had accidentally lowered the French eagle he was holding before the Pre

-h s it.

nen

while the soldiers were shouting Kutuzov leaned forward in his saddle and bowed his head and his eye lit up with a mild and apparently ironic gleam

You see brothers said he when the shouts had ceased and all at once his voice and the expression of his face changed It was no longer the commander in chief speaking but an ordinary old man who wanted to tell his comrades something very important

There was a stir among the throng of officers and in the ranks of the soldiers who moved that they might hear better what he was going to say

You see brothers I know it s hard for you but it can t be helped! Bear up it won t be for long now ! We ll see our visitors off and then we ll rest The Tsar won t forget your service It is hard for you but still you are at home while they—you see what they have come to said he pointing to the prisoners Worse off h n o

too Isn t it so lads?

He looked around and in the direct re

spectful wondering gaze fixed upon him he read sympathy with what he had said His face grew bright nd h s

mild smile

and eyes int

speaking anu bowed his head as if in perplexity

But after all who asked them here? Serves them right the bloody bastards! he cried suddenly lifting his head

And flourishing his whip he rode off at a gallop for the first time during the whole campaign and left the broken ranks of the soldiers laughing joyfully and shouting Hurrah!

Kutuzov s words were hardly understood by the troops No one could have repeated the field marshal s address begun solemnly and then changing into an old man s simplehearted talk but the hearty sincerity of that speech the feeling of majestic triumph combined with pity for the foe and consciousness of the justice of our cause exactly expressed by that old man s good natured expletives was not merely understood but lay in the soul of every soldier and found expression in their joyous and long sustained shouts Afterwards when one of the generals addressed Kutuzov asking whether he wished his *calèche* to be sent for Kutuzov in answering unexpectedly gave a sob being evidently greatly moved

CHAPTER VII

When the troops reached their night s halting place on the eighth of November the last day of the Krásnoe battles it was already growing dusk All day it had been calm and frosty with occasional lightly falling snow and toward evening it began to clear Through the falling snow a purple black and starry sky showed itself and the frost grew keener

An infantry regiment which had left Tarutino three thousand strong but now numbered only nine hundred was one of the first to arrive that night at its halting place—a village on the highroad The quartermasters who

ly one hut available for the regimental commander

The commander rode up to his hut The regiment passed through the village and stacked its arms in front of the last huts.

Like some huge many limbed animal the regiment began to prepare its lair and its food.

and the da cer w th a puzzled sm le I asked him hose ubject he was, and he j bbered in hs wn way A q eer l tl

B t ts tra g f e ds co t ued the man h had dered ttl er wh teness the peasa ts t M háysk we e say g that when they bega b ry g the dead—where the bat tl a y know—well tl ose dead had been ly g there f ea ly m nth and s y the peasa t, they l h te as p per clea a d n powder m ke

l in deed Wh t wa hot ll t nau the cold, ours w ld n t h e rotted e ther But h says, go p t urs d they are all rott n and maggoty So h says we tie our faces up th kerchief d turn our heads away we dra them ff we can hardly d t. But the rs he says, ar wh te p per nd not so much sm ll as a wh ff of gu powder

All were le t.

It must be f m their food sa d the er geant major They used to g bble the sam food as the gentry

N e co tradicted h m.

"That peasant ear M zháj k wher the b ttle was sa d tl e men wer ll called up from ten illages around d they ca ted f r t ty d y nd ull didn t fi ish carrin th dead ay A d for th w l es he say

"That was eal b ttle sa d n ld sold e l the ly w rth emembering but since that t o ly been t rmentı f lk.

And d y u kn w D ddy th day bef yesterday we ra t th m nd my w rd they d dn let us get near bef e they just threw do th musk ts d w nt n th r knees. P d n they say Th t nly o ca e. They say Plát took P leon h mself tw ce B t h did t k w the ght charm H catches him d ca ches h m—n good! H turns into b d his ha ds and fl es way And ther o way f kıll ng h m e ther

"I u first-class li Kisel when I com t look t y u

Liar d ed It th eal truth.

If he f ll t my hands wh n I d caught him I d bury h m l gr und w tl n pen ak to fi l m down. What l t f m n h s ru ned!

W ll yh w w go g to nd t. H w her aga n emarked th old sold wn g

Th co ersati flagged, and the soldiers began ettling d wn to sleep

Look t the st rs. It s wonderful how tl ey sh ne! You w uld th k tl e women h d spre d o t the r l nen sa d one of tl e men ga g with dm ration at the M lky W y

"That s a s gn of a good harvest next year

We shall w nt some m e wood.

You warm your ba k and your belly gets f oze Th t s queer

O Lo d!

What a e you pu l ng fo ? Is the f re only for y u? Look how he s sp awl g

In the lence th t en ued the sn r of th e who had f llen a leep could be hea d. Others tu ned o e nd warmed tl e nsel es n w d ga n exch g ng few words. From a campfire hund ed p ces ff came a sound of ge eral merry laugl ter

H k t them r ri tl ere n tl F fth Comp ny! sa d o e of the sold ers nd wh t l t of tl m tl r r

O e of th men got up and went o er to the F ftl Comp y

They e h g such fun sa d h c m ng b k. Two F ench es l e turned up One s qu te fro en nd th other s an awful sw g ger He gi g s ngs.

Oh I ll go cross d ha e look.

And several of the men went o er to the Fifth Comp ny

CHAPTER IX

TH F FTI Co A Y was b ou cki g at the ry edge of the forest. A huge campfir wa blaz g b ghtly n the m dst of th snow l gl t ng up the branches f trees hea y w th hoarf ost.

Abo t m dn ght they heard the sound of steps n th s w f the f rest, nd the crack l g of dry branches

A bea l ds sa d one f th men

They ll ra ed the heads to l te d out f th f est t th b gl t fir l ght s pped two tra gely clad human f gu es cl n g to ne n ther

Thes were two F nchme who had been hid g n th f est. They came up to tl e f e ho rsely utt g som th g n a l nguag our sold ers d d n t u dersta d O e was talle than the other h wore an offi l t a d seemed qu t exhausted. On appro l g the fir he h d be n go g to t dow b t fell Th other h rt tu dy sold w th h w tied und hi h d w tr er H r ed hi omp on nd said som th g po nt t h m th. Th sold ers s rr unded th Fre chmen sp ead a greatcoat n th groun

degrees of frost and without even full rations (the commissariat did not always keep up with the troops)—they would have presented a very sad and depressing spectacle

On the contrary the army had never under the best material conditions presented a more cheerful and animated aspect This was because all who began to grow depressed or who lost strength were sifted out of the army day by day All the physically or morally weak had long since been left behind and only the flower of the army—physically and mentally—remained

More men collected behind the wattle fence of the Eighth Company than anywhere else Two sergeants major were sitting with them and their campfire blazed brighter than the others For leave to sit by their wattle they demanded contributions of fuel

Eh Makéev! What has become of you you son of a bitch? Are you lost or have the wolves eaten you? Fetch some more wood! shouted a red haired and red faced man screwing up his eyes and blinking because of the smoke but not moving back from the fire And you Jackdaw go and fetch some wood! said he to another soldier

This red haired man was neither a sergeant nor a corporal but being robust he ordered about those weaker than himself The soldier they called Jackdaw a thin little fellow with a sharp nose rose obediently and was about to go but at that instant there came into the light of the fire the slender handsome figure of a young soldier carrying a load of wood

Bring it here—that s fine!

They split up the wood pressed it down on the fire blew at it with their mouths and fanned it with the skirts of their greatcoats making the flames hiss and crackle The men drew nearer and lit their pipes The handsome young soldier who had brought the wood setting his arms akimbo began stamping his cold feet rapidly and deftly on the spot where he stood

Mother! The dew is cold but clear It s well that I m a musketeer he sang pretending to hiccough after each syllable

Look out your soles will fly off! shouted the red haired man noticing that the sole of the dancer s boot was hanging loose What a fellow you are for dancing!

The dancer stopped pulled off the loose piece of leather and threw it on the fire

Right enough friend said he and having sat down took out of his knapsack a scrap of blue French cloth and wrapped it round his foot It s the steam that spoils them he added stretching out his feet toward t... f...
T...

say t...
we r... ...uuble kits!

And that son of a bitch Petróv has lagged behind after all it seems said one sergeant major

I ve had an eye on him this long while said the other

Well he s a poor sort of soldier

But in the Third Company they say nine men were missing yesterday

Yes it s all very well but when a man s feet are frozen how can he walk?

Eh? Don t talk nonsense! said a sergeant major

Do you want to be doing the same? said an old soldier t...
man who

Well y...
they calle... J...k... ...w in a squeaky and unsteady voice raising himself at the other side of the fire a plump man gets thin but for a thin one it s death Take me now! I ve got no strength left he added with sudden resolution turning to the sergeant major Tell them to send me to hospital I m aching all over anyway I shan t be able to keep up

That ll do that ll do! replied the sergeant major quietly

The soldier said no more and the talk went on

What a lot of those Frenchies were taken today and the fact is that not one of them had what you might call real boots on said a soldier starting a new theme They were no more than make believes

The Cossacks have taken their boots They were clearing the hut for the colonel and carried them out It was pitiful to see them boys put in the d...ncer As they turned them over one seemed still alive and ...ll you believe it he jabbered something in their lingo

But they re a clean folk lads the first man I went on He was white—as white as birchbark—and some of them are such fine fellows you might think they were nobles

Well what do you think? They make soldiers of all classes there

But they don t understand our talk at all

Réaum r—eight degrees below zero Fal renh it
—Tr.

said th da cer w th a puzzled m le. I a ked him hose s bject h as and he j bbered in h s n way A queer l tl

B t t stra ge f e ds cont nued tl e man ho had o dered t the r whiteness the peasa ts at Mo háysk were say g that when t ey bega bury g the dead—where the b t le as kn w—well thos dead had b n lyin there f r early m nth, d says the peasant, they l e as hit p per clean and not as mu h sm ll s a puff f powder sm ke.

"Was t from the cold asked so eone

"Y re lever fell w! From the cold n deed Wh t wa h t If t h d been f om the cold urs w uld n t h e rotted ther But he says, go p t ours nd they a e ll rotten and maggoty So l e says, w t e u f es up with kerch fs d turn our head way s we dra them ff we can hardly do t. But th rs h says, are wh te a p per and n t so much mell as whiff of gu powder

All ere l t.

It must be fr m their food said the er geant m jo "They used to g bble the same food as th ge try

N co tradicted h m.

"That peasant ear Mozháy k where the battle was said th m n wer all called up from ten illages ro nd nd they carted f r twenty days d ull did t fi ish cartu g the dead way And as fo th w l es h says

"Th t was real b ttl sa d an old soldier It th ly e w rth remember ng but

they didn t let us get near bef re th y just threw d wn th musk ts and w nt o the knees. Pardon they say Tha nly ne ca e They say Pláto took P leon himself tw ce. B t he d d t kn w th ht charm. He catches him d catches him—n good! H h ds d fl es way

en I

If h f ll to my h nds wh n I d caught him I d bury h m h gr u d w tl n pen t k fi l m d wn. What l t f m n h s ru ed!

W ll h w w go g t d t. H w her emarked th old sold er a n g

Th ersati n fl gged and th soldiers began ettling down to leep.

Look at the stars. It s wo derful how tl ey sh ne You would think the wom n had sp e d out the r l nen " sa d one of tl e men gaz g w th dm rat on t the M lky Way

That s gn of a good h rvest next y r

W shall want some mo e wood.

You warm y u back nd your belly gets frozen That s queer

O Lord!

Wl t ar y u pu h ng for? Is the f re only for yo ? Look h w he s sp awl g

In the s lence th t en ed the s or of th e wh had f llen a leep could be l ea d. Others turned o r d warmed tl emsel es now nd aga n exch ng ng a few words. From a campfire a hu dred p ces off came sound of ge eral merry laugl ter

H rk t them roarin there in tl e F fth Comp y! sa d o e of th sold ers nd what l t f them th r e

O of the men got up nd went o er to the F ftl Comp y

They e h g ch fun sa d he om g b ck. Two Fre ch es l e turned up O e qu te f en a d the othe s an awful swag gere He s s gi g songs.

Oh I ll go cross d h e a look.

And several of th men went over to the Fifth Comp ny

CHAPTER IX

The Fifth Co a y was b ouack ng at the ery edge of the f est. A hug campfir was blaz g b htly n tl e m dst of the snow l ghtu g p the bra ches of trees hea y w th hoa f ost.

About midn ght they heard the sound of tep the s w f th f rest, nd the crack ling of dry branches

A bea l ds sa d o e of the men

They ll ra sed the heads to l ten nd out f the f rest to the bright fir l ght t pped two tra gel cl d human figures h g to o n ther

Thes were two Fr chmen who had been h d g in the f rest. They came up to tl fi e hoarsely utt g som th n n l gu ge our solds rs d d n t understand. One was taller th the other he wore n fficers l t nd eemed qu t exh u ted O app l g the fir h had been go to s t d wn b t f ll The other h rt s urdy sold w tl a h w tied rou d hi head was tr ge He ra se his comp n nd sa d som th n po u to h m uth. The sold ers surr unded th Frenchm n p ead a greatcoat on th groun

for the sick man and brought some buckwheat porridge and vodka for both of them

The exhausted French officer was Ramballe and the man with his head wrapped in the shaw l was Morel his orderly

When Morel had drunk some vodka and finished his bowl of porridge he suddenly became unnaturally merry and chattered incessantly to the soldiers who could not understand him Ramballe refused food and resting his head on his elbow lay silent beside the campfire looking at the Russian soldiers with red and vacant eyes Occasionally he emitted a long drawn groan and then again became silent Morel pointing to his shoulders tried to impress on the soldiers the fact that Ramballe was an officer and ought to be warmed A Russian officer who had come up to the fire sent to ask his colonel whether he would not take a French officer into his hut to warm him and when the messenger returned and said that the colonel wished the officer to be brought to him Ramballe was told to go He rose and tried to walk but staggered and would have fallen had not a soldier standing by held him up

You won t do it again eh? said one of the soldiers winking and turning mockingly to Ramballe

Oh you fool! Why talk rubbish lout that you are—a real peasant! came rebukes from all sides addressed to the jesting soldier

They surrounded Ramballe lifted him on the cr[illegible]
him t[illegible]
their [illegible]
wailing [illegible]

Oh you fine fellows my kind kind friends! These are men! Oh my brave kind friends and he leaned his head against the shoulder of one of the men like a child

Meanwhile Morel was sitting in the best place by the fire surrounded by the soldiers

Morel a short sturdy Frenchman with inflamed and streaming eyes was wearing a woman s cloak and had a shawl tied womanfashion round his head over his cap He was evidently tipsy and was singing a French song in a hoarse broken voice with an arm thrown round the nearest soldier The soldiers simply held their sides as they watched him

Now then now then teach us how it goes! I ll soon pick it up How is it? said the man—a singer and a wag—whom Morel was embracing

Vive Henri Quatre! Vive ce roi vaillant!

sang Morel winking *Ce diable à quatre* [illegible]

Vivariká! Vif seruvaru! Sedyablyaka! repeated the soldier flourishing his arm and really catching the tune

Bravo! Ha ha ha! rose their rou h joyous laughter from all sides

Morel wrinkling up his face laughed too

Well go on go on!

Qui eut le tr ple t lent
De boire de b tt e
Et d êt e un v t galant [illegible]

It goes smoothly too Well now Zaletáev!

Ke Zaletáev brought out with effort ke e e e he drawled laboriously pursing his lips le trip ta la de bu de ba e de tra va ga la! he sang

Fine! Just like the Frenchie! Oh ho ho! Do you want some more to eat?

Give him some porridge it takes a long time to get filled up after starving

They gave him some more porridge and Morel with a laugh set to work on his third bowl All the young soldiers smiled gaily as they watched him The older men who thought it undignified to amuse themselves with such nonsense continued to lie at the opposite side of the fire but one would occasionally raise himself on an elbow and glance at Morel with a smile

They are men too said one of them as he wrapped himself up in his coat Even wormwood grows on its own root

O Lord O Lord! How starry it is! Tremendou ! T[illegible]

They [illegible]
ing that [illegible]
to disport themselves in the dark sky now flaring up now vanishing now trembling they were busy whispering something gladsome and mysterious to one another

CHAPTER X

The French Army melted away at the uniform rate of a mathematical progression and that crossing of the Berezina about which so much has been written was only one intermediate stage in its destruction and not at all the decisive episode of the campaign If so much has been and still is written about the Berezina on the French side this is only be

Long li e Henry the Fourth tl t al ant ki g!
That o ly le! l
Who h d a t ple talent
For d k ng f f ght g
And for be g a gallant ol l boy

cause at the broken b d e cross th t r er the calamities their army had been pre u ly endur g were uddenly oncentrated t one moment into tragic spectacle that rem ned m ery memory d on th Russ an s de merely because P tersburg—far fr m the seat f war— pl n (aga n ne f Pfuel s) had been dev ed to catch N poleon in a trategic trap t the Berezi R er E eryone ssu ed himself that all w uld h ppen accord to pan and theref ted th t t w just f the Be na that lestroyed the

cl thes from our hungry nd indispe s l le sold ers to g e to the French who th ugl n t h rmful or l ated or gu lty we e s mply un necessarv S me Ru s ns even d d th t but they we e except ns

Ce t n destruct on lay bel d the Frencl but n fr nt there was h pe The r sl ps l d been bu ned there was no sal ation sa e n collect efl ght a d on tl at the wholestren th of th F ench w s co centrated.

Th f rtl er tl ey fled the m re wretched be cam the pl l tof the remn nt, espec ll after tl e Ber na o wh ch (n consequence of the P tersl urg plan) pec l h pes l l been pl ced by th Ru ans, nd the ke ner grew h n ns of tl e Russ an commanders wl o ll rg

Th sol mportan e ot u e Ber na lies th f t that t pla nly and ind b tably p ed th f ll cy of ll tl pl n f r cutti ff th emy s retreat and tl e so dness f th only poss bl l n of ct n— th t nd the ge eral mass f tl e army dema ded—n m ly mply t f llow the enemy p Th F nch crowd fled t a co tinually increas n p ed nd ll ts energy was directed to chi ts goal It fled l ke w unded mal nd t was mposs bl to block ts p th. Th was l wn not so much by th arra gem ts m de f r cross n as by hat took pl t th b dges Wh the b dges b k wn unarmed ld rs people from Moscow d w m n w th ch ldren who wer w th th F nch tran port, ll—carr ed by us t a—p essed f rward t bo d to the ce-c ered water and did n t surrender

le d d in

a espectf l form m k po f r h m to k wl ere n he was to bl me They l d n t talk eriously to h m when report g to h m r k g f r h sanct n they appe red to b fulfill ng regr ttable formal ty but they w ked beh nd his b ck d tr ed to m s- lead h m t e ery turn

B cause they c uld ot u dersta d him ll these people as umed th t t was useless to talk to th ld man that h would neve gra p the p fund ty of the pl ns th t he w uld

Th t impulse wa eason ble The o d u f f u es nd f pursuers w equally b d. A l as th ema ned w th th ir wn peopl ch m h h p f h lp f m h f ll w d th d fi pl h h ld m n them. B t th wh rrend ed wh l maining n th same p t ful pl ght, w uld be l wer les l l m ha n th n cess ues f l l Th F h d d t need b f rmed f th f ct that half th p son rs— w th whom h Russ did t know what to do—perished f ld d hu er desp th ir cap rs des sa them they f lt that t co ld t be th rw se Th m mpas n t Russ mma d rs those f rabl to th F ch— d even th F enchm n n th R ian ers —c ld d n th ng f th p so ers. Th F ch peri hed fr m h n dit wh h the Rus n army was tself exposed. I w imposs bl to tak bread nd

sa d—th t t wa n essary to w t p o is tha the m n h d o boots—w s so s mpl wh l what they p posed was so compl cated d les that t wa e d t that h was ld d tup d d th t th y th gh not n power wer comma ders of gen us

Af er the j nct n w th the rmy of the b ill t dm ral nd Petersburg hero W t gen te thi mood d th goss p of th ff eached th r max mum Kut saw th d m ely ghed d hrugged h h uld rs. O ly o fter th ffa f tl Ber d d he g t ngry d wr t t Ben gsen (wh r ported p rately to the Emper) th f ll w letter

O unt of y ur pells f ll health w ll y ur ex llency plea e b so good as to set of f Kal ga on rec pt of this, and the e awa

for the sick man and brought some buckwheat porridge and vodka for both of them

The exhausted French officer was Ramballe and the man with his head wrapped in the shawl was Morel his orderly

When Morel had drunk some vodka and finished his bowl of porridge he suddenly became unnaturally merry and chattered incessantly to the soldiers who could not understand him Ramballe refused food and resting his head on his elbow lay silent beside the campfire looking at the Russian soldiers with red and vacant eyes Occasionally he emitted a long drawn groan and then again became silent Morel pointing to his shoulders tried to impress on the soldiers the fact that Ramballe was an officer and ought to be warmed A Russian officer who had come up to the fire sent to ask his colonel whether he would not take a French officer into his hut to warm him and when the messenger returned and said that the colonel wished the officer to be brought to him Ramballe was told to go He rose and tried to walk but staggered and would have fallen had not a soldier standing by held him up

You won t do it again eh? said one of the soldiers winking and turning mockingly to Ramballe

Oh you fool! Why talk rubbish lout that you are—a real peasant! came rebukes from all sides addressed to the jesting soldier

They surrounded Ramballe lifted him on the crossed arm of [illegible] him to t[illegible] their ne[illegible] wailing [illegible]

Oh you fine fellows my kind kind friends! These are men! Oh my brave kind friends and he leaned his head against the shoulder of one of the men like a child

Meanwhile Morel was sitting in the best place by the fire surrounded by the soldiers

Morel a short sturdy Frenchman with inflamed and streaming eyes was wearing a woman s cloak and had a shawl tied woman fashion round his head over his cap He was evidently tipsy and was singing a French song in a hoarse broken voice with an arm thrown round the nearest soldier The soldiers simply held their sides as they watched him

Now then now then teach us how it goes! I ll soon pick it up How is it? said the man—a singer and a wag—whom Morel was embracing

Vive Henri Quatre Vive ce roi vaillant!

sang Morel winking *Ce diable à quatre* [1]

Vivarika! Vif seruvaru! Sedyablyaka! repeated the soldier flourishing his arm and really catching the tune

Bravo! Ha ha ha! rose their rough joyous laughter from all sides

Morel wrinkling up his face laughed too

Well go on go on!

Qu eut le tr ple t lent
D bo re de b tre
Et d êt e un v rt g l nt [2]

It goes smoothly too Well now Zaletáev!

Ke Zaletáev brought out with effort ke e e e he drawled laboriously pursing his lips le trip ta la-de bu de ba e de tra va ga la! he sang

Fine! Just like the Frenchie! Oh ho ho! Do you want some more to eat?

Give him some porridge it takes a long time to get filled up after starving

They gave him some more porridge and Morel with a laugh set to work on his third bowl All the young soldiers smiled gaily as they watched him The older men who thought it undignified to amuse themselves with such nonsense continued to lie at the opposite side of the fire but one would occasionally raise himself on an elbow and glance at Morel with a smile

They are men too said one of them as he wrapped himself up in his coat Even wormwood grows on its own root

O Lord O Lord! How starry it is! Tremendous! That means a hard frost

They all grew silent The stars as if knowing that no one was looking at them began to disport themselves in the dark sky now flaring up now vanishing now trembling they were busy whispering something gladsome and mysterious to one another

CHAPTER X

THE FRENCH ARMY melted away at the uniform rate of a mathematical progression and that crossing of the Berezina about which so much has been written was only one intermediate stage in its destruction and not at all the decisive episode of the campaign If so much has been and still is written about the Berezina on the French side this is only be

[1] Long l e Henry the Fo rt! th at val a t king! Th

cause at the broken b dge across that r er th cal m t es the r army h d been p e usly endun were suddenly co entrated t one moment int a trag c pect cl tl t rema ed in every mem ry d n the Russ n s de mer ly because n P tersburg—f r from the seat f war—a pl n (a n o of Pfuel) h d bee dev ed to catch N poleon n trategic trap t th Ber zi R er E eryone assu ed himself th t ll w uld h ppen accord to plan, d th f re s ted th t it wa ju t h crossi f the Be zi tl t destroyed the French rmy I real ty the results f th cross-in ere much less d sa tr us to the Fren h— in guns d me lost—th n Krás h d been as th figures h w

The sol importance of the cross n f th Be zina lies th f ct that t pla nly d d b tably p ed tl e fallacy of ll the pl ns f n ff tl nemy s etreat and tl e

he le n

u ually cr speed d ts rgy as d ected t chi ts go l It fled like ded a m l nd t was mposs bl t block ts path This w l wn not so much by th arra gem ts t m d f cross g by h t ook pl t the b d es. Wh n the bridges b k d w u rmed ld rs people from M w nd w men w th ch ld en l o er w th th F ch tra po t, ll—carr ed by vis e t a—p essed f rw d nt boats d to th c ed wat r nd d d n t surrend

That imp lse wa ason ble Th co d u f f git es d f pursuers w equ lly b d. As l g th y rem ed w th th wn peopl ch m ht h p f help f m h f ll d th d fi pl e h h ld m n hem. B t thos wh rr d d wh l maining the same p tiful pl ght, w uld be l l l cl m h n th n ess tes f l f Tl F n h d d t n ed b n f rmed f th f ct h t h lf th p so rs— th wh m tl R d d t kn w wh to do—pe hed f ld d hu ger desp t th cap rs des t sa e them they f lt that t co ld t b therw Th m t comp

Russ n mm d rs th se f rabl t h F ch— d en th F hm n th Russ n serv —c uld d n th f the p iso ers. Th F ch per h d fr m the d t wh h th Russ n army was ts lf exposed. It was mposs bl to tak bread d

clothes from our hungry and ind pens l le sold ers to g e to the Fren h who thou h t ot harmful o l ated or gu lty were s mply u i necess ry Son e Ru s ns even d d tl at but th y were e cept s

Cert n destri ct o lay bel nd the French but in f nt there was hope The r sl ps l l been burned the e was no sal ation sa n collect ell ht d o tl at tl e whole strength of the Fr ch as c centrated.

The farth r tl e fled tl e more wretched be-came th pl ht of the rem nt espec lly after n n on wh cl (n consequen e of been ew wl o ll sburg t o l ule e r d

cule d c ten pt were o se r sc l n espectful f rm mak it mpos ble f h m to k wl ere n he wa t bl me They d d n t talk u ly to h m when r port g to h m or a k g f h s sa ct n they appe red ifll ng a regrettable formal ty l ut

l o

these people ass med th t it was u talk t the old man that l e would ne r gra p th p fu d ty f the pla th t he w uld

l h y n a u u sa d—tl t t wa ne essary t wa t pro r that th men h d n boots—wa so s mpl wh le wh t they p pos d w so compl cated d clever th t t wa e d t th th wa ld d st p d nd that they though n t n power wer mm nders of gen us.

Af th ju ct n w th the army of th b ll nt dmiral d Pet rsburg h ro W tt gens n th s mood and the goss p of th t ff ched th max mum Kut o s w th s nd merely ghed d hrugged h h ulders O ly n e ft th ff of the Ber a l d h g t ngry d wr t to B nn gsen (ho po t d ep rat ly t th Empe o) the foll w in l tter

O count f y ur pell f ll health y ur e ll cy plea e b so good t se f K l ga on e pt of tl and there

further commands and appointments from His Imperial Majesty

But after Pennigsen s departure the Grand Duke Tsarévich Constantine Pávlovich joined the army He had taken part in the beginning of the campaign but had subsequently been removed from the army by Kutuzov Now hav ing come to the army he informed Kutuzov of the Emperor s displeasure at the poor suc cess of our forces and the slowness of their advance The Emperor intended to join the army personally in a few days time

The old man experienced in court as well as in military affairs—this same Kutuzov who in August had been chosen commander in chief against the sovereign s wishes and who had removed the Grand Duke and heir apparent from the army—who on his own authority and contrary to the Emperor s will had decided on the abandonment of Moscow now realized at once that his day was over that his part was played and that the power he was supposed to hold was no longer his And he understood this not merely from the attitude of the court He saw on the one hand that the military business in which he had played his part was ended and felt that his mission was accomplished and at the same time he began to be conscious of the physical weariness of his aged body and of the necessity of physical rest

On the twenty ninth of November Kutuzov entered Vílna—his dear Vílna as he called it Twice during his career Kutuzov had been governor of Vilna In that wealthy town which had not been injured he found old friends and associations besides the comforts of life of which he had so long been deprived And he suddenly turned from the cares of army and state and as far as the passions that seethed around him allowed immersed himself in the quiet life to which he had formerly been ac customed as if all that was taking place and all that had still to be done in the realm of history did not concern him at all

Chichagóv one of the most zealous cutters off and breakers up who had first wanted to effect a diversion in Greece and then in Warsaw but never wished to go where he was sent Chichagóv noted for the boldness with which he spoke to the Emperor and who con sidered Kutuzov to be under an obligation to him because when he was sent to make peace with T 1811 independently of Kut zov at peace had already been con the Emperor that the merit of securing that peace was really Kutuzov s this Chichagóv was the first to meet Kutuzov at the castle where the latter was to stay In undress naval uniform with a dirk and holding his cap under his arm he handed Kutuzov a garrison report and the keys of the town The contemptuously respectful attitude

cusations that were being directed against Kutuzov

When speaking to Chichagóv Kutuzov in cidentally mentioned that the vehicles packed with china that had been captured from him at Borísov had been recovered and would be restored to him

You mean to imply that I have nothing to eat out of On the contrary I can supply you with everything even if you want to give dinner parties warmly replied Chich who tried by every word he spoke to prove his own rectitude and therefore imagined Kutuzov to be animated by the same de sire

Kutuzov shrugging his shoulders replied with his subtle penetrating smile I meant merely to say what I said

Contrary to the Emperor s wish Kutuzov detained the greater part of the army at Vilna Those about him said that he became extra ordinarily slack and physically feeble during his stay in that town He attended to army affairs reluctantly left everything to his gen erals and while awaiting the Emperor s arrival led a dissipated life

Having left Petersburg on the seventh of December with his suite—Count Tolst y Prince Volkonski Arakchéev and others—the Emperor reached Vilna on the eleventh and in his traveling sleigh drove straight to the castle In spite of the severe frost some hun dred generals and staff officers in full parade uniform stood in front of the castle as well as a guard of honor of the Sem nov regi ment

A courier who galloped to the castle in ad vance in a troyka with three foam flecked horses shouted Coming! and Kon nitsyn rushed into the vestibule to inform Kutuzov who was waiting in the hall porter s little lodge

A minute later the old man s large stout figure in full-dress uniform his chest covered with orders and a scarf drawn round his stom ach waddled out into the porch He put on

h hat th ts pe ks to the s des and hold ng h gl es h ha d nd walk n w th n eff rt deways d wn the teps to the le el of the reet, took in h s hand the report he h d prep ed f the Emperor

There was runn ng to d fro and wh sper ing; an ther trojka flew fur usly up and t.en all eyes wer turned on an app o ch ng sl gh which the fig u es of the Emperor and Vo kónsk c uld l eady b descr ed.

From the hab t f fifty years all this h d a phy cally gitat ng effect on the old general f lt h ms lf all o er o- o- om m th

metrau u g o ce.

The Emp ror w th rap d gl nce scanned K t fr m head to foot, f wned f n in stant, b t mmediately m ter ng h ms lf w t p t th old man exte ded l is a ms a d embraced h m. And this en bra too l ted effe t

d the Sem oun d nd ga n p ess g t.e old ra l

(

hich h had l t ned t th Emp m ds th fi ld of Aust l tz even ye rs bef re tted n h f n w

Whe Kut came u f the udy nd w th l w d h d was cross g the b ll oom w th his hea y w ddl ng ga t l arrested by someon say ng

T Ser H h essi

K tu ra sed h head nd look d f a f g wl l t th eyes f Cou t T l tóy wh tood b f re h m h lding l sal which lay m ll bject. Ku u med t u derstand wh t was exp ted of him.

S dd ly he emed to rem mbe sca ly per publ m l fl h d cross l puffy f d b w g l w d especi lly h ook th bj ct that l y n the sal It as th O der f St. G rg f tl F rst Class.

CHAPTER XI

NEXT DAY tl e feld m rshal gave a d nner a d ball l h the Emper r hon red by l is pres enc Kutuzov had received tl e Orde of St George of the F rst Class and tl e Emper r sl wed h m the h gl est h nors but e eryo e mner l d ssatisfact on w th l m

ordered tl e t darus t l to be lowered t tl e Emperor s feet on h s en ter ng the ballroom the Emperor made a wry f ce nd n utte ed someth g in wl ch some people caugl t the w rds the old comed n

Tl e Empero s d pleasu e w th Kut l o was specially ncreased t Viln by tl f ct th t Kutu ov e idently ould not or would t und rstand tl e mpo tance of the com n campa gn

Wl en on the foll w n m rning the Em pero sa d t the fficers assembled b ut h m "Y u ha e not only sa ed Russ a y u ha e sa ed Europe!" they all u derstood that the war was n t ended

Kut lo e w uld not see th s and open l exp es ed h s p n n th t no fresh war l ry tl He s b l n rd sh ps lready e dured by t.e pe p f the po b l ty of fa lu a d o fo th.

Th s be ng the fi ld m rshal frame of m d he was n turally regarded a mer ly a h dra e nd b ta le to the mpend wa

T o d u pleasa t enc u ters w tl tl

p gn—to tran fer the utho ty t the E h mself thus cutt g the ground f m l r the comm der n ch f' feet w th t ups t t g the old man by nf rmi g him of tl e ch ge.

marshal gre t weakness nd f l g health

H h lth h d t be b d f h pl ce to be taken way d g en to n ther And in

further commands and appointments from His Imperial Majesty

But after Bennigsen s departure the Grand Duke Tsarévich Constantine Pávlovich joined the army He had taken part in the beginning of the campaign but had subsequently been removed from the army by Kutuzov Now having come to the army he informed Kutuzov of the Emperor s displeasure at the poor success of our forces and the slowness of their advance The Emperor intended to join the army personally in a few days time

The old man experienced in court as well as in military affairs—this same Kutuzov who in August had been chosen commander in chief against the sovereign s wishes and who had removed the Grand Duke and heir apparent from the army—who on his own authority and contrary to the Emperor s will had decided on the abandonment of Moscow now realized at once that his day was over that his part was played and that the power he was supposed to hold was no longer his And he understood this not merely from the attitude of the court He saw on the one hand that the military business in which he had played his part was ended and felt that his mission was accomplished and at the same time he began to be conscious of the physical weariness of his aged body and of the necessity of physical rest

en

T

governor of Vilna In that wealthy town which had not been injured he found old friends and associations besides the comforts of life of which he had so long been deprived And he suddenly turned from the cares of army and state and as far as the passions that seethed around him allowed immersed himself in the quiet life to which he had formerly been accustomed as if all that was taking place and all that had still to be done in the realm of history did not concern him at all

Chichagóv one of the most zealous cutters off and breakers up who had first wanted to effect a diversion in Greece and then in Warsaw but never wished to go where he was sent Chichagov noted for the boldness with which he spoke to the Emperor and who considered Kutuzov to be under an obligation to him because when he was sent to make peace with Turkey in 1811 independently of Kutuzov and found that peace had already been concluded he admitted to the Emperor that the merit of securing that peace

ress naval uniform with a dirk and holding his cap under his arm he handed Kutuzov a garrison report and the keys of the town The co

of tl

age

beh ov Chichagóv who knew of the accusations that were being directed against Kutuzov

When speaking to Chichagóv Kutuzov incidentally mentioned that the vehicles packed with china that had been captured from him at Borisov had been recovered and would be restored to him

You mean to imply that I have nothing to eat out of On the contrary I can supply you with everything even if you want to give dinner parties warmly replied Chichagov who tried by every word he spoke to prove his own rectitude and therefore imagined Kutuzov to be animated by the same desire

Kutuzov shrugging his shoulders replied with his subtle penetrating smile I meant merely to say what I said

Contrary to the Emperor s wish Kutuzov detained the greater part of the army at Vilna Those about him said that he became extraordinarily slack and physically feeble during his stay in that town He attended to army affairs reluctantly left everything to his generals and while awaiting the Emperor s arrival led a dissipated life

Having left Petersburg on the seventh of December with his suite—Count Tolstoy Prince Volkonski Arakchéev and others—the Emperor reached Vilna on the eleventh and in his traveling sleigh drove straight to the castle In spite of the severe frost some hundred generals and staff officers in full parade uniform stood in front of the castle as well as a guard of honor of the Semenov regiment

A courier who galloped to the castle in advance in a troyka with three foam flecked horses shouted Coming! and Konovnitsyn rushed into the vestibule to inform Kutuzov who was waiting in the hall porter s little lodge

A minute later the old man s large stout figure in full-dress uniform his chest covered with orders and a scarf drawn round his stomach waddled out into the porch He put on

his hat with its peaks to the s des and h ld ng his gloves his hand nd walking w th n effort si eways d wn the steps to the level of the street, took in h s hand the report he had prepared for the Emperor

There was runn ng t and fro and whi per ing; another troyka flew fur ously up nd then all eyes were turned n n appro ching sle h which the figures of the Emperor and Volkónsk could lready be descried.

From the hab t f fifty years all this h d a physically mitaun effect on the old general He carefully a d hast ly felt himself all o er readjusted his hat, and pull n h mself together drew h ms lf up and t the ery moment hen th Emperor ha ng al ghted from the sle h lifted hi eyes to him handed him the report and began speakin n h s smooth insinuating vo ce.

The Emperor with rap d glance scanned K uzo fr m head t foot, fr wned f r n n stant, b t immediat ly master g h mself went up the ld man ex ended his rms and embraced him. And thi embrace too wing to l ta di mp ess n rel ted to his innermost feel ngs, had its usual effect K zo nd he ga sob

Th Empero greeted th fficers nd the Seme guard, and n p ess ng th old w h h m nto the castle.

CHAPTER XI

Next ay the field marshal ga e a d nner and ball whi ch the Emperor honored by h s p es- ence. Kutu o had rece ed the Order of St. George of the First Class a d the Emperor showed h m the h ghest honors but everyone knew of the mper l dissat f ction with h m The propriet es were observed and the Emper or was the first to set that example but every body u derstood that the old man was blame worthy and good for nothing When Kutuzo conf rm n to a custom of Catherine s day ordered the t ndards that h d been captured t be l wered t the Emperor s feet on h s en tering the ballroom the Emperor made a wry f ce and muttered someth n n which some people cau t the words the old comed n

The Empero d pleasure with Kutúzov wa speci lly creased at Vilna by the f ct that Kut zo e de tly could n t or would not understand the mportance of the com campa gn.

When on the f llow ng morn the Em pero sa d to the officers assem led about h m "Y u ha e not only sa ed Russ you ha e sa ed Europe they ll understood that the war was not ended.

Ku uzo l e would n t see this a d open ly e p essed his op n n that no fresh war could mpro e the pos t on or add to the g ory nd lower the

t Krásno nd the Ber zina and him f his in entu ns f f ture campaign broad Kutuzo mad n rejo nder o rema k. The same ubmiss exp ess onless look w th which h had lis ened t th Empero com ma ds n th field o Aus erl tz even years bef re settled n his f ce now

When K tuzo cam ou f th udy nd w h lowered head was cross g the ballroom w th his heavy waddlin ga t, h was arrested by someo e vo ce sayi

"Y ur Seren Highness!

K raised hi head nd looked f long whil nto th eyes of Coun T l tóy who ood bef re him h ldin l er sal er h ch lay small object. Kutuz eemed no t understand what was expec ed of him.

Sud enly h seemed t emember scarcely per eptibl smil flashed cross his puffy f ce, d bow low d respectfully h ook th object that lay n th sal er It was th Order f St. George of the Firs Class.

ships l eady endured by u peop , poss b l ty of fa lure nd so f rth.

Th be g the field marshal s frame f m nd he was n turally regarded as merely h n drance nd b tacl t th impend n wa

To o d u pleasant encounters w th the old man th n tural method was to do what had been d n w th him at Aust litz nd w th B cl y at the beg nn of th Russ n ca p gn—t tran fer th uthority to th Emper o himself thus cu t g th ground from under th commander n chief feet w th ut upset t n the ld man by nf rmin him of th change.

W th this object his taff was gradually re constru ted and ts real trength remo ed nd tran ferred t th Empero Toll K no

fact his health was poor

So naturally simply and gradually—just as he had come from Turkey to the Treasury in Petersburg to recruit the militia and then to the army when he was needed there—now when his part was played out Kutuzov s place was taken by a new and necessary performer

The war of 181 besides its national significance dear to every Russian heart was now to assume another a European significance

The movement of peoples from west to east was to be succeeded by a movement of peoples from east to west and for this fresh war another leader was necessary having qualities and views differing from Kutuzov s and animated by different motives

Alexander I was as necessary for the movement of the peoples from east to west and for the refixing of national frontiers as Kutuzov had been for the salvation and glory of Russia

Kutuzov did not understand what Europe the balance of power or Napoleon meant He could not understand it For the representative of the Russian people after the enemy had been destroyed and Russia had been liberated and raised to the summit of her glory there was nothing left to do as a Russian Nothing remained for the representative of the national war but to die and Kutuzov died

CHAPTER XII

[illegible] they were over After his liberation he reached Orel and on the third day there when preparing to go to Kiev he fell ill and was laid up for three months He had what the doctors termed bilious fever But despite the fact that the doctors treated him bled him and gave him medicines to drink he recovered

Scarcely any impression was left on Pierre s mind by all that happened to him from the time of his rescue till his illness He remembered only the dull gray weather now rainy and now snowy internal physical distress and pains in his feet and side He remembered a general impression of the misfortunes and sufferings of people and of being worried by the curiosity of officers and generals who questioned him he also remembered his difficulty in procuring a conveyance and horses and above all he remembered his incapacity to think and feel all that time On the day of his rescue he had seen the body of Pétya Rostóv That same day he had learned that Prince Andrew after surviving the battle of Borodinó for more than a month had recently died in the Rostóvs house at Yaroslávl and Denísov who told him this news also mentioned Hélène s death supposing that Pierre had heard of it long before All this at the time seemed merely strange to Pierre he felt he could not grasp its significance Just then he was only anxious to get away as quickly as possible from places where people were killing one another to some peaceful refuge where he could recover himself rest and think over all the strange new facts he had learned but on reaching Orel he immediately fell ill When he came to himself after his illness he saw in attendance on him two of his servants Terénty and Váska who had come from Moscow and also his cousin the eldest princess who had been living on his estate at Eléts and hearing of his rescue and illness had come to look after him

It was only gradually during his convalescence that Pierre lost the impressions he had become accustomed to during the last few months and got used to the idea that no one would oblige him to go anywhere tomorrow that no one would deprive him of his warm bed and that he would be sure to get his dinner tea and supper But for a long time in his dreams he still saw himself in the conditions of captivity In the same way little by little he came to understand the news he had been told after his rescue about the death of Prince Andrew the death of his wife and the destruction of the French

A joyous feeling of freedom—that complete inalienable freedom natural to man which he had first experienced at the first halt outside Moscow—filled Pierre s soul during his convalescence He was surprised to find that this inner freedom which was independent of external conditions now had as it were an additional setting of external liberty He was alone in a strange town without acquaintances No one demanded anything of him or sent him anywhere He had all he wanted the thought of his wife which had been a continual torment to him was no longer there since she was no more

Oh how good! How splendid! said he to himself when a cleanly laid table was moved up to him with savory beef tea or when he lay down for the night on a soft clean bed or when he remembered that the French had gone and that his wife was no more *Oh how good how splendid!*

And by old h b t he asked h mself the q esu 'Well and wh t then? What am I go g to do?' And he mmed tely ga e l m self the ans e Well I h ll l e. Ah how splend d

Th ery questu that had forme ly tor me ted h m the th g h had cont nually so ght to fi d—the m of l fe—no longer ex ed fo h m now That earch fo tl e a m merely d sapp red tempo-

he l ad t ll now ga ed o er men s heads and gladly egarded the e er-ch ng eternally great unfathom ble and inf n te l fe a ound h m A d tl e closer he looked the more tran qu l and happy he became That dreadful question 'Wl tf r? wl ch had f rmerly destroyed all h s n ent l ed f ces no longer ex sted for l m To tl t quest on Wh t f r? a s mple e w n w alw ys ready in l soul Be cause th re s a God that God w tho t whose will not one ha r f lls from man s head.

CHAPTER XIII

In external w a s P erre h d hardly changed t all In appe ra ce he was just what he u ed t be As befo e l e was bsent m nded nd

H co ld n t e faith—n t f th n ny kind f rule r w ds or d as, b t faith n n e l g ev r ma fest God. F rmerly he h d sou l t H m ms he s t h m elf Th t ea ch f n aim had been mply a earch f r God nd dd ly his capt ty h h d l ned n t by rds easo but by d ect feel ng hat his urs had t ld h m l g g th t God here d ev rywh e. In l is capt ty h had learned that n K ratáe God w s greater m e nfi te d unf thom bl th n in the A ch tect f th Un rse ecogn ed by th Fr emaso s. He f lt l ke m n who fter tra g hi eyes to e t the f dis ta e fi ds wh t h so ght h ery f All h lif h h d looked the h ds f th m arou d h m wh n he h ld h merely looked n f nt f him w th u tra ng his eyes.

I the past h h d never b n bl to fi d th t great crutable fin t m th g H h d ly felt that t must st som whe d had looked f t. In ryth g ar nd com p h bl he had n only wh was l m ted petty mm pla nd seless. He h d eq pp d himself w th me tal les p d look d to m t p wher petty w ld m d nc h d eem

wh t l y b f re h m o w su h d pucke ed h fo ehead p nf lly a f a nly eek ng to d t ngu h someth ng at a di t nce At present h till forgot wl t w s sa d t h m a d st ll d d not see wl t was bef his eyes b t h now looked w th a sca ely pe c pt ble nd e m lyi n c sm le at wh t w s befo e hum nd listened to wl t w d though dently e nd he r n someth g qu te d ffe ent. F rmerly he had appeared to b k ndl earted but unh ppy man d so people h d been ncl ned to d h m. N w m le t tl e joy of l fe alw ys pl yed r nd his l p nd symp thy f r others sh n n his eyes w th a quest on ng look as n ented a he was

phil th py se med to h m. B ev n u e m m ts f weaknes h h d co nted them h m d h d p tr t d th ds ta es d h had th een th me p tt es ldl es nd n les n ss N w h w ever h h d l arned t ee th great ter l d fi t ryth g nd th f —t se t d j y ts co t mpl t —he n t rally threw way th telescope through wh ch

t n nd k ew h w to listen so th t peop e ead ly t ld h m th most t m te ecr t

The p ncess who h d n e l ked P erre d h d been p t cularly h til to h m nce he had f lt h rs lf u der bl gati st l m aft the ld nts de th n w fte tay g h t t m n O el—where he had com n

others and had shown him only the mb u e

side of her nature but now he seemed to be trying to understand the most intimate places of her heart and mistrustfully at first but afterwards gratefully she let him see the hidden kindly sides of her character

The most cunning man could not have crept into her confidence more successfully evoking memories of the best times of her youth and showing sympathy with them Yet Pierre s cunning consisted simply in finding pleasure in drawing out the human qualities of the embittered hard and (in her own way) proud princess

Yes he is a very very kind man when he is not under the influence of bad people but of people such as myself thought she

His servants too—Terénty and Váska—in their own way noticed the change that had taken place in Pierre They considered that he had become much simpler Terénty when he had helped him undress and wished him good night often lingered with his master s boots in his hands and clothes over his arm to see whether he would not start a talk And Pierre noticing that Terénty wanted a chat generally kept him there

Well tell me now how did you get food? he would ask

And Terénty would begin talking of the destruction of Moscow and of the old count and would stand for a long time holding the clothes and talking or sometimes listening to Pierre s stories and then would go out into the hall with a pleasant sense of intimacy with his master and affection for him

The doctor who attended Pierre and visited him every day though he considered it his duty as a doctor to pose as a man whose every moment was of value to suffering humanity would sit for hours with Pierre telling him his favorite anecdotes and his observations on the characters of his patients in general and especially of the ladies

It s a pleasure to talk to a man like that he is not like our provincials he would say

There were several pr soners f om the r ht

ierre and the princess used to make fun of the tenderness the Italian expressed for him

The Italian seemed happy only when he could come to see Pierre talk with him tell him about his past his life at home and his love and pour out to him his indignation against the French and especially against Napoleon

If all Russians are in the least like you it is sacrilege to fight such a nation he said to Pierre You who have suffered so from the French do not even feel animosity toward them

Pierre had evoked the passionate affection of the Italian merely by evoking the best side of his nature and taking a pleasure in so doing

During the last days of Pierre s stay in Orël his old Masonic acquaintance Count Willarski who had introduced him to the lodge in 180 came to see him Willarski was married to a Russian heiress who had a large estate in Orël province and he occupied a temporary post in the commissariat department in that town

Hearing that Bezukhov was in Orël Willarski though they had never been intimate came to him with the professions of friendship and intimacy that people who meet in a desert generally express for one another Willarski felt dull in Orël and was pleased to meet a man of his own circle and as he supposed of similar interests

But to his surprise Willarski soon noticed that Pierre had lagged much behind the times and had sunk as he expressed it to himself into apathy and egotism

You are letting yourself go my dear fellow he said

But for all that Willarski found it pleasanter now than it had been formerly to be with Pierre and came to see him every day To Pierre as he looked at and listened to Willarski it seemed strange to think that he had been like that himself but a short time before

Willarski was a married man with a family busy with his family affairs his wife s affairs and his official duties He regarded all these occupations as hindrances to life and considered that they were all contemptible because their aim was the welfare of himself and his family Military administrative political and Masonic interests continually absorbed his attention And Pierre without trying to change the other s views and without condemning him but with the quiet joyful and amused smile now habitual to him was interested in this strange though very familiar phenomenon

There was a new feature in Pierre s relations with Willarski with the princess with the doctor and with all the people he now met which gained for him the general good will This was his acknowledgment of the im

possibility of cha ging man s convict ons by vords a d his recogn t n f the poss b l ty of everyo thinki feel n and see n things each from h wn po nt of v ew Th legitimate peculiarity of each nd dual wh ch used to excite and irritat P rre now became basis f the symp thy he f lt for nd th terest he took in, other people. Th differ er e nd sometimes complet contrad ct n between men s op n on nd th r l es nd be tween e ma d ther pleased h m nd drew fr m him a amused nd gentl mile.

I practical matters P erre u expectedl felt within himself center of gravity h had pre viously la ked. Formerly ll pecu iary ques ey to which f or t ll ey ad ur been nable to fi d way o t o ur mises and had gi en t ll who asked as l ng as he had an th to gi e. Formerly he had been imila tat f perplexity w th re gard to every quest n con rn h property hen perso d ised one thing and an o er somethi lse

Now to his urprise he f u d th t h no longer felt either d ubt perplexity bout these questions. Tl er was now w thin him judge who by some rul u kn wn to h m decided wha h uld h uld t be d e.

H was as d fferent as heretof re to mo ey ma ters, b n w h f lt erta n of what ou ht hat h t t be d The first im h had ecourse to h new judge wa when F h priso col l cam to him and, f er talk grea deal bout hi expl ts d ded b mak what m u ted to demand that P err h uld gi h m f ur

imp and eas had been wha used to ap pear so insurmo ta l difficult. At th sam tha h fused th colo l d mand h mad p his m d tha h mus ha recourse to artifi wh n lea in O l to duce th Italian officer to ep som money f which h was evidently in eed. A further proof to P err f his own more set led utlook on pract cal ma ters was furnished by his decis n th egard to his wif d bts and to the re build n of h h uses in and near Moscow

His head stew rd came to h m t O l a d P erre reckoned up w th h m h s d m l ed ncome The burn g f Moscow l ad cost h m acc d t the head tewards calculat on about two m ll n rubles.

To nsole P erre for these los es tl e head teward ga e him n estimate show n that desp te thes losses h ncome would n t be d m n hed but would even be ncr sed if he refused to p y h w fe s debts wh ch l e was und r no obl gat on to meet nd d d not re build h s Moscow h use d the country house on h s Moscow estate wh ch had cost h m e hty thousand rubles yea and brought n nothing

"Yes, of course th t s true sa d P erre w th a cheerful m le. I d n t need all that t all By be g ru ned I ha become much r her

But n January Sa él ch came f m Moscow and ga l m n ount of th tate f th ngs ther d spoke of th estimate an arch tect had made of the cost of rebu ld ng tl e town and country houses speak n f th s f set tled matter About the sam time h rece ed letters from Pr n e Vasil nd other Peters burg acqua tances speak g f h s w fe s debts. And P erre decided that the stewa d s pro posals wh ch had so pleased h m were wro g nd that he must go t Petersburg nd settle his wif s ff rs and must r bu ld n Moscow Wh this was necessary h d d n t know but h knew for certa n that t wa necessary His com w uld be reduced by three fourths, bu h f lt mu t be d ne.

Willarski was go g to Mosc w and they agreed to tra l together

Duri th whol t m of his convalescence n O l P erre had exper nced a feel ng of joy f eedom nd l fe but when duri his journey h f u d h mself n the open wo ld nd saw hundreds of new f ces, that feel g was nt ns f ed. Through ut hi journey h f lt lik schoolboy on hol da E eryone— th stagecoach dri er th post h use o rseers, the peasa ts the roads nd th vill ges— had new gn ficanc fo him. The p esence and remarks of W llarski who continually d pl red th gn rance d po erty f Russia d ts b kward ess compared w th Europe P erre re Wher W ll ple. H d d n contrad ct Willarski and eve

seemed to agree with him—an apparent agreement being the simplest way to avoid discussions that could lead to nothing—and he smiled joyfully as he listened to him

CHAPTER XIV

IT WOULD BE difficult to explain why and whither ants whose heap has been destroyed are hurrying some from the heap dragging bits of rubbish larvæ and corpses others back to the heap or why they jostle overtake one another and fight and it would be equally difficult to explain what caused the Russians after the departure of the French to throng to the place that had formerly been Moscow But when we watch the ants round their ruined heap the tenacity energy and immense number of the delving insects prove that despite the destruction of the heap something indestructible which though intangible is the real strength of the colony still exists and similarly though in Moscow in the month of October there was no government and no churches shrines riches or houses—it was still the Moscow it had been in August All was destroyed except something intangible yet powerful and indestructible

The motives of those who thronged from all sides to Moscow after it had been cleared of the enemy were most diverse and personal and at first for the most part savage and brutal One motive only they all had in common a desire to get to the place that had been called Moscow to apply their activities there

Within a week Moscow already had fifteen thousand inhabitants in a fortnight twenty five thousand and so on By the autumn of 1813 the number ever increasing and increasing exceeded what it had been in 181

The first Russians to enter Moscow were the Cossacks of Wintzingerode's detachment peasants from the adjacent villages and residents who had fled from Moscow and had been hiding in its vicinity The Russians who entered Moscow finding it plundered plundered it in their turn They continued what the French had begun Trains of peasant carts came to Moscow to carry off to the villages what had been abandoned in the ruined houses and the streets The Cossacks carried off what they could to their camps and the householders seized all they could find in other houses and moved it to their own pretending that it was their property

But the first plunderers were followed by a second and a third contingent and with increasing numbers plundering became more and more difficult and assumed more definite forms

The French found Moscow abandoned but with all the organizations of regular life with diverse branches of commerce and craftsmanship with luxury and governmental and religious institutions These forms were lifeless but still existed There were bazaars shops warehouses market stalls granaries—for the most part still stocked with goods—and there were factories and workshops palaces and wealthy houses filled with luxuries hospitals prisons government offices churches and cathedrals The longer the French remained the more these forms of town life perished until finally all was merged into one confused lifeless scene of plunder

The more the plundering by the French continued the more both the wealth of Moscow and the strength of its plunderers was destroyed But plundering by the Russians with which the reoccupation of the city began had an opposite effect the longer it continued and the greater the number of people taking part in it the more rapidly was the wealth of the city and its regular life restored

Besides the plunderers very various people some drawn by curiosity some by official duties some by
officials of
peasants—
to the heart

Within a week the peasants who came with empty carts to carry off plunder were stopped by the authorities and made to cart the corpses out of the town Other peasants having heard of their comrades discomfiture came to town bringing rye oats and hay and beat down one another's prices to below what they had been in former days Gangs of carpenters hoping for high pay arrived in Moscow every day and on all sides logs were being hewn new houses built and old charred ones repaired Tradesmen began trading in booths Cook shops and taverns were opened in partially burned houses The clergy resumed the services in many churches that had not been burned Donors contributed Church property that had been stolen Government clerks set up their baize covered tables and their pigeonholes of documents in small rooms The higher authorities and the police organized the distribution of goods left behind by the French The owners of houses in which much property had been left brought there from other houses complained of the injustice of taking every

r ce ed P lac n the Kreml n

I

to keep all that was l unu u e the pol e d bribed them made out esti mates at t times the alue for go rnm nt stores that had per hed in the fire and demanded relief And Count Rostopchin wrote proclamati

CHAPTER XV

AT THE E f J ry P err went to Mosco and tn ed an nex of hi hous wh ch had not been burned. H called n Count Rostopchi d o some cquaintan es who wer back Mos w nd h nt nded to lea e fo tersburg t o day l te E rybody was celebrating the ct ry everyth ng was bubbl g with life the ru ned but revi city E ery was pl ased to P erre ev ryone w l ed meet h m nd every ne ques ned h m

o h

him— h ther mport t q t t as Where w ld h l W h go g o build Wh was h go g to P tersburg nd would he mind taki g p l f meon ?— h epl ed Yes, perh ps o I th nk so d so n.

H had heard h t th Rostó s we t K tr md b the th h of N tá ha ld m occurred t h m If t d d t was o ly pleasant mem ry f th di t past. H felt h m self not nly f ee from soc al obl gat n but also from that feel g which t eemed t him he had roused hims lf.

O th th d day fter his arr al h hea d from th Drub tsk y th Prin es Mary wa in Mosc w Th d th uffer gs and last d y f Pr Andr h d f n oc p ed P rre th hts d w rred him w th f esh vivid ess. H g h d t d n er th t Pr n ess Mary was n Mosc w nd l n n her hous — h ch h d n t been burned— n V d ul ka Stree h dr th t same g to see her

O hi way to th h u P rr kept th k in f Pri Andrew f their friendship f his a us m ti gs th him and esp lly f th l Borod ó

I poss bl th h d ed n the b ter fram f m nd h wa th n ? I po ble that th meani g f hi! was t disclosed to him before he d ed? thought Pierre He recalled K ratáev and h s de th and in olunta ly began t comp e these two men so different nd yet so m lar in that they h d both l ed and both d ed and in the lo e he felt for both of them.

P erre dro e up to the house of the old pr n e in a most ser us mood. The house l d escaped the fire t showed s ns of damage but ts g n ral aspect wa unch ged. The old footman who met P erre w th a stern face as if wish ng t m ke the s to feel that the absence of the old p ce had n t distu bed the rde of th gs in the hou e inf rmed h m that the princess had gone to her own ap rt m nts and that she rece ed on Sunda s.

An oun e me. Perh ps she w ll see me" said P erre

Yes s sa d the man. Please st p to th po tra t gallery

A few m utes l ter the footm n returned w th Dessalles who brou ht word from the pri ess that sh would be ery gl d to ee P rre f he would excus her want of ere mo y nd m p ta rs to her p rtment.

In rath l w oom l t by one candle sat the pr n ess d w th h r a the p rson d essed n bl ck. P err emember ed that the p n ess lw y h d lady comp n ons, but who th y were d what they we e l ke h ne er knew em mb red. This must be o e of her comp n n he tho ght gl nci at the l dy n the bl ck dress

Th pri cess os qu ckly to meet him nd h ld t he h nd

Yes h sa d looking at his ltered f ce ft l h d k ssed her hand so this is h w we m t ga H often spok of y u en t the ry last h w nt o turn g her eyes from P rr t her c mpan n w th a hyness that urp ised h m f an tant

It wa

Aga n th p n ess gl nced rou u a her omp n w th even m e uneasiness n her

kn w l heard t seco d h d fr m others. I only kn w that he fell n w th the Rost s.

Wh t tra ge o d el

P rre pok rap dly nd w th mat n. He gl nced once t th ompan n s I saw her tt ntı e and kindly gaz fixed n him, nd

as often happens when one is talking felt somehow that this companion in the black dress was a good kind excellent creature who would not hinder his conversing freely with Princess Mary

But when he mentioned the Rostóvs Princess Mary s face expressed still greater embarrassment She again glanced rapidly from Pierre s face to that of the lady in the black dress and said

Do you really not recognize her?

Pierre looked again at the companion s pale delicate face with its black eyes and peculiar mouth and something near to him long forgotten and more than sweet looked at him from those attentive eyes

But no it can t be! he thought This stern thin pale face that looks so much older! It cannot be she It merely reminds me of her

But at that moment Princess Mary said Natásha! And with difficulty effort and stress like the opening of a door grown rusty on its hinges a smile appeared on the face with the attentive eyes and from that opening door came a breath of fragrance which suffused Pierre with a happiness he had long forgotten and of which he had not even been thinking—especially at that moment It suffused him seized him and enveloped him completely When she smiled doubt was no longer possible it was Natásha and he loved her

At that moment Pierre involuntarily betrayed to her to Princess Mary and above all to himself a secret of which he himself had been unaware He flushed joyfully yet with painful distress He tr ed to hide his agitation But the more he tried to hide it the more clearly—clearer than any words could have done—did he betray to himself to her and to Princess Mary that he loved her

No it s only the unexpectedness of it thought Pierre But as soon as he tried to continue the conversation he had begun with Princess Mary he again glanced at Natásha

[illegible]

ssay ing

Pierre had failed to notice Natásha because he did not at all expect to see her there but he had failed to recognize her because the change in her since he last saw her was immense She had grown thin and pale but that was not what made her unrecognizable she was unrecognizable at the moment he entered because on that face whose eyes had always shone with a suppressed smile of the joy of life now when he first entered and glanced at her there was not the least shadow of a smile only her eyes were kindly attentive and sadly interrogative

Pierre s confusion was not reflected by any confusion on Natásha s part but only by the pleasure that just perceptibly lit up her whole face

CHAPTER XVI

She has come to stay with me said Princess Mary The count and countess will be here in a few days The countess is in a dreadful state but it was necessary for Natásha herself to see a doctor They insisted on her comin with me

Yes is there a family free from sorrow now? said Pierre addressing Natásha You know it happened the very day we were rescued I saw him What a delightful boy he was!

Natásha looked at him and by way of answer to his words her e [illegible]

Wh [illegible] tion? splend [illegible]

Yes in these days it would be hard to live without faith remarked Princess Mary

Yes yes that is really true Pierre hastily interrupted her

Why is it true? Natásha asked looking attentively into Pierre s eyes

How can you ask why? said Princess Mary The thought alone of what awaits

Natásha without waiting for Princess Mary to finish again looked inquiringly at Pierre

And because Pierre continued only one who believes that there is a God ruling us can bear a loss such as hers and yours

Natásha had already opened her mouth to speak but suddenly stopped Pierre hurriedly turned away from her and again addressed Princess Mary asking about his friend s la t days

Pierre s confus n had now almost vanished but at the same time he felt that his freedom had also completely gone He felt that there was now a judge of his every word and acti n whose judgment mattered more to him th n that of all the rest of the world As he spok now he was c nsidering what impress on h words would make on Natásha He did n t purposely say things to please her but wh t ever he was saying he regarded from her standpoint

Princess Mary—reluctantly as is usual in such

cases—began t ll f the cond t on n wl ch d Pr nce A drei But P rre' l

t recall l r i t

"Yes, yes d so ? P erre kept s y as h leaned t ard her w tl h wh le body and eagerly l te ed t her story Yes yes so he grew tranqu l d softened? W th ll h s soul he had l sougl t one th ng—to be perfectly good—so he could t be afra d of death. The faults he h d— f he l d ny—we e not f h maki So he d d soft n? Wh t happy th g that he saw y u a n l e added dd ly turn g t N tá l a d look ng at her with eyes f ll f te rs

N tásha f t tch d. She f wned d lo ered he yes f mom t. Sl e hes t ted f ta t wh ther t pe k not.

"Yes, that was happ nes he then said n her qui t c w th ts deep l est n tes Fo m t erta ly was happ es She p ed A d h l e he sa d he was w l g for t the ry m ment l te ed the oom

N tásha b k Sh blu hed p essed her l ped h d he knees d then con trolli herself w th n ev d t eff l fted her head d bega t p k rap dly

W k ew th g f when we sta ted

d d d t k b ut h m.

him d be w th him sl e sa d, tr u d b th qu kly

A d tlet g them t rrupt l h w nt t t ll wh h h d every t ment ned t) — ll h had l ed thro gh d g those three weeks f th j urney d l f t Y oslá l

h l n d nd

to her d f lt nly p ty f h l wh t l e as ff w wh l he w peak g P ess M ry fr w h ff t to h ld b ck h tears t bes d N tá h nd heard f th firs t m l t ry f th e last day f h b th d N ásha l e.

E d tly N tá ha need d t ll th t p n f l y t joy f l tal

Sh pok m l g mos tr fl d ta l w th th m t ecr ts f h so l d seemed as if h could n er finish. S ral times she repeated the same tl ng t ice

Dess lles oice was hea d outs de tl e door ask ng wl etl er l ttle N cl l s m gl t com n to say good n l t

"Well tl at s ll—e erytl ing sa d N tásl

Sl e g t up q kly ju t s N chol s entered almost ran to tl e door wh ch was h d len by cu ta ns stru k her l ead again t t and rusl ed from tl e room with m an e tl er of p i n or sorrow

ed t the doo tl ro gh wl cl she l y

rac

he

ness

l e wl u l l l s

e

o

ll

leep t ll ft two so please u ll

ders pp r God wnsta rs we w ll come in

l

CHAPTER XVII

PIERRE AS S O N nto the l rge brightly l t d g oom a few m utes l ter he hea d foots ps nd P cess M ry ente ed w th N tá h N tá h wa calm tl h a e ere d gra e xp ess n l d n tled on l e f e They ll th ee f them now exper n ed th t feel g f a kw d ess wh cl u u lly f l l ws fte er u and heartf lt talk It is m poss ble to go b ck to tl e same co rsat t talk of tr fles wkw d and yet th des e t p k the nd l nce e ms l k affecta t n Th y went s lently to t bl Tl e foot men d w b ck th ch rs d pusl ed them up gan P rr u f lded h cold table n pk n d es l g to b eak th l looked at N tá h d t Pr n ess M y They had e

h

elf sa d he. O e hears uch improbabl w ders bout y u.

Yes replied Pierre with the smile of mild irony now habitual to him They even tell me wonders I myself never dreamed of! Mary Abrámovna invited me to her house and kept telling me what had happened or ought to have happened to me Stepán Stepánych also instructed me how I ought to tell of my experiences In general I have noticed that it is very easy to be an interesting man (I am an interesting man now) people invite me out and tell me all about myself

Natásha smiled and was on the point of speaking

We have been told Princess Mary interrupted her that you lost two millions in Moscow Is that true?

But I am three times as rich as before returned Pierre

Though the position was now altered by his decision to pay his wife s debts and to rebuild his houses Pierre still maintained that he had become three times as rich as before

What I have certainly gained is freedom he began seriously but did not continue noticing that this theme was too egotistic.

And are you building?

Yes Savélich says I must!

Tell me you did not know of the countess death when you decided to remain in Moscow? asked Princess Mary and immediately blushed noticing that her question following his mention of freedom ascribed to his words a meaning he had perhaps not intended

No answered Pierre evidently not considering awkward the meaning Princess Mary had given to his words I heard of it in Orel and you cannot imagine how it shocked me We were not an exemplary couple he added quickly glancing at Natásha and noticing on her face curiosity as to how he would speak of his wife but her death shocked me terribl
Wh
i
t o er is no longer alive And then such a death without fr ls

L i a incess Mary

Pierre suddenly flushed crimson and for a long time tried not to look at Natásha When he ventured to glance her way again her face was cold stern and he fancied even contemptuous

And did you really see and speak to Napoleon as we have been told? said Princess Mary

Pierre laughed

No not once! Everybody seems to imagine that being taken prisoner means being Napoleon s guest Not only did I never see him but I heard nothing about him—I was in much lower company!

Supper was over and Pierre who at first declined to speak about his captivity was gradually led on to do so

But it s true that you remained in Moscow to kill Napoleon? Natásha asked with a slight smile I guessed it then when we met at the Sukharev tower do you remember?

Pierre admitted that it was true and from that was gradually led by Princess Mary s questions and especially by Natásha s into giving a detailed account of his adventures

At first

irony now

body and

he came to describe the horrors and sufferings he had witnessed he was unconsciously carried away and began speaking with the suppressed emotion of a man re experiencing in recollection strong impressions he has lived through

Princess Mary with a gentle smile looked now at Pierre and now at Natásha In the whole narrative she saw only Pierre and his goodness Natásha leaning on her elbow the expression of her face constantly changing with the narrative watched Pierre with an attention that never wandered—evidently herself experiencing all that he described Not only her look but her exclamations and the brief questions she put showed Pierre that she understood just what he wished to convey It was clear that she understood not only what he sai

not c

gave c

woman protecting whom he was arres

t

t

o u their things snatched off nd their earr ngs torn out he flushed nd grew confused Then a patrol arrived at d all the men —all those who were not looting that is—were arrested and I among them

I am sure you re not telling us e erything I am sure you d something s d Nat ha an l pausing d led o nething f e

Pierre cont nued When he spoke of the exe

ttion he wanted to pass over the horrible de tails but Natásha insisted that he should not omit anything.

Pierre began to tell about Karatáev but paused. By this time he had risen from the table and was pacing the room, Natásha following him with her eyes. Then he added

"No, you can t understand what I learned from that illiterate man—that simple fellow."

"Yes, yes, go on," said Natásha. "Where is he?"

"They killed him almost before my eyes."

And Pierre his voice trembling continually went on to tell of the last days of their retreat, of Karatáev's illness and his death.

He told of his adventures as he had never yet recalled them. He now saw a new meaning in all he had gone through. Now that he was telling it all to Natásha he experienced that pleasure which men have when women listen to him—not clever women who when listening either try to remember what they hear to enrich their minds and when opportunity offers to retell it, or who wish to adopt it to some thought of their own and promptly contribute their own clever comments prepared in their own little mental workshop—but the pleasure given by real women gifted with a capacity to select and absorb the very best a man shows of himself. Natásha without knowing it was all attention: she did not lose a word, no inflection of his voice, no look, no twitch of a muscle in his face, nor a gesture. She caught the unfinished word in its flight and took it straight into her open heart, divining the secret meaning of all Pierre's mental travail.

Princess Mary understood his story and sympathized with him but she now saw something else that absorbed all her attention. She saw the possibility of love and happiness between Natásha and Pierre and the first thought of this filled her heart with gladness.

It was three o'clock in the morning. The footmen came in with sad and stern faces to change the candles, but no one noticed them.

Pierre finished his story. Natásha continued to look at him with bright, attentive eyes

so glanced occasionally at her and tried to think what to say to introduce a fresh subject. Princess Mary was silent. It occurred to none of them that it was three o'clock and time to go to bed.

"People speak of misfortunes and sufferings," remarked Pierre, "but if at this moment I were asked 'Would you rather be what you were before you were taken prisoner or go through all this again?' then for heaven's sake let me again have captivity and horseflesh! We imagine that when we are thrown out of our usual ruts all is lost, but it is only then that what is new and good begins. While there is life there is happiness. There is much, much before us. I say this to you," he added, turning to Natásha.

"Yes, yes," she said, answering something quite different. "I too should wish nothing but to relive it all from the beginning."

Pierre looked intently at her.

"Yes, and nothing more," said Natásha.

"It's not true, not true!" cried Pierre. "I am not to blame for being alive and wishing to live—nor you either."

Suddenly Natásha bent her head, covered her face with her hands, and began to cry.

"What is it, Natásha?" said Princess Mary.

"Nothing, nothing." She smiled at Pierre through her tears. "Good night. It is time for bed."

Pierre rose and took his leave.

Princess Mary and Natásha met as usual in the bedroom. They talked of what Pierre had told them. Princess Mary did not express her opinion of Pierre nor did Natásha speak of him.

"Well, good night, Mary," said Natásha. "Do you know, I am often afraid that by not speaking of him (she meant Prince Andrew) for fear of not doing justice to our feelings, we forget him."

Princess Mary sighed deeply and thereby acknowledged the justice of Natásha's remark, but she did not express agreement in words.

"Is it possible to forget?" said she.

"It did me so much good to tell all about it today. It was hard and painful but good, very good," said Natásha. "I am sure he really loved

said with a mischievous smile such as Princess Mary had not seen on her face for a long time. "He has somehow grown so clean, smooth, and fresh—as if he had just come out of a Russian bath, do you understand? Out of a moral bath. Isn't it true?"

Yes replied Pierre with the smile of mild irony now habitual to him They even tell me wonders I myself never dreamed of! Mary Abrámovna invited me to her house and kept telling me what had happened or

g have noticed that it is very easy to be an interesting man (I am an interesting man now) people invite me out and tell me all about myself

Natásha smiled and was on the point of speaking

We have been told Princess Mary interrupted her that you lost two millions in Moscow Is that true?

But I am three times as rich as before returned Pierre

Though the position was now altered by his decision to pay his wife s debts and to rebuild his houses Pierre still maintained that he had become three times as rich as before

What I have certainly gained is freedom he began seriously but did not continue noticing that this theme was too egotistic.

And are you building?

Yes Savelich says I must!

Tell me you did not know of the countess death when you decided to remain in Moscow? asked Princess Mary and immediately blushed noticing that her question following his mention of freedom ascribed to his words a meaning he had perhaps not intended

No answered Pierre evidently not considering awkward the meaning Princess Mary had given to his words I heard of it in Orel and you cannot imagine how it shocked me We were not an exemplary couple he added quickly glancing at Natásha and noticing on her face curiosity as to how he would speak of his wife but her death shocked me terribly When two people quarrel they are always both in fault and one s own guilt suddenly becomes terribly serious when the other is no longer alive And then such a death without friends and

you are once more an eligible bachelor said Princess Mary

Pierre suddenly flushed crimson and for a long time tried not to look at Natásha When he ventured to glance her way again her face was cold stern and he fancied even contemptuous

And did you really see and speak to Napoleon as we have been told? said Princess Mary

Pierre laughed

No not once! Everybody seems to imagine that being taken prisoner means being Napoleon s guest Not only did I never see him but I heard nothing about him—I was in much lo

about his captivity was gradually led on to do so

But it s true that you remained in Moscow to kill Napoleon? Natásha asked with a slight smile I guessed it then when we met at the Sukharev tower do you remember?

Pierre admitted that it was true and from

uary with him toward everybody and especially toward himself but when he came to describe the horrors and sufferings he had witnessed he was unconsciously carried away and began speaking with the suppressed emotion of a man re-experiencing in recollection strong impressions he has lived through

Princess Mary with a gentle smile looked now at Pierre and now at Natásha In the whole narrative she saw only Pierre and his goodness Natásha leaning on her elbow the expression of her face constantly changing with the narrative watched Pierre with an attention that never wandered—evidently herself experiencing all that he described Not only her look but her exclamations and the brief questions she put showed Pierre that she understood just what he wished to convey It was clear that she understood not only what he said but also what he wished to but could not express in words The account Pierre gave of the incident with the child and the woman for protecting whom he was arrested was this It was an awful sight—children abandoned some in the flames One was snatched out before my eyes and there were women who had their things snatched off and their earrings torn out he flushed and grew confused Then a patrol arrived and all the men—all those who were not looting that is—were arrested and I among the

I am sure you re not telling us everything I am sure you did something said Natásha and pausing added something fine

Pierre continued When I spoke of the exe-

cutio he wa ted t pas o er the horr ble de tails, b t N tá ha ins sted that he sh uld n t m t th

P erre b gan t tell b t K ratáe but p used. By this time h h d en fr m the t bl and a p tl e oom N tá ha f llow

Yes yes g l sa d N tá h Whe h

"Th y k lled h m lmost bef r my eyes

A d P erre h o trembl g c t lly t t tell of th last d y of th etre t f Karatáev ll es d h de th

H

N t he p en ed th t plea wh ch m n h when om l t t h m—n t clev m n wh h l t ther try t remember wh t they hea t ch the m d d when p- port y ffers to et ll t o wh w h t d pt t t som th ght f th r wn d p mptly tribute th wn clev m m ts p p d the w l ttl m tal w k h p—b t th pleasur g by eal m n

se rd, gl q e P err n look

P y t l d h pp ess bet N tá ha d P err d th first th u ht of th fill d h

fo ch

t

u yes t try g t ders d som t l

th

t y w l t It curr d to l them th t t was thr o clo k d time t g t b d.

People spe k of m sf rtu e nd suffer i gs rem rked P erre but f at th s moment I e e asked Would y u rather be hat you were b f e you we e t ken pr o er or go th ough all th s ga n th n f r I ea en s sake l t me ga h capt ty and horseflesh! We m g e that whe e throw i out of u ual rut ll s l t but it o ly then th t h

to N tásha

Yes yes he sa l an wer g someth qu t d ffe ent l too sh ld w h noth but t r l e t ll fr m th beg n ng

P err look d t ntly t her

y u the

S dd ly N tá ha bent he he d covered h f w th h h ds d began t cry

What it N tá h ? sa d Pr ces Mary

N th g noth g She mil d t Pierre th h her tears. Good n ght! It is t me f bed.

P er e os nd took h s lea e.

P ess M ry d N tá ha met as u ual in the bed oom. They talk d of what P err had t ld th m P cess M ry d d n t exp es her p n of P err n r d d N tásha peak f h m

"Well good ht, M ry! sa d N tá ha. D y u kn w I m ft n fra d th t by n t peak g f h m (he me nt Pr c A d ew) f fea f n t d justi e to our feel s e f g t h m

kn bu

u m so m th good to tell ll b t t tod y It wa h d and p ful b t good ery good! sa d N tásh I am h lly l ed h m Th t hy I t ld h m W t all r ght? he dd d uddenly blush

To t ll P rr Oh yes What ple d d man h l sa d Pri es Mary

D y u k M ry N t h sudd nly sa d th mi h e us m le ch as Pr ess M ry had t e n n h f f l t m h h someh w gr n so clean mooth d fresh— f h h d just m o t f Russ n b th d y dersta d O t f m ral b th. Isn t t tru ?

Yes replied Princess Mary He has greatly improved

With a short coat and his hair cropped just as if well just as if he had come straight from the bath Papa used to

I understand why *he* (Prince Andrew) liked no one so much as him said Princess Mary

Yes and yet he is quite different They say men are friends when they are quite different That must be true Really he is quite unlike him—in everything

Yes but he s wonderful

Well good night said Natásha

And the same mischievous smile lingered for a long time on her face as if it had been forgotten there

CHAPTER XVIII

It was a long time before Pierre could fall asleep that night He paced up and down his room now turning his thoughts on a difficult problem and frowning now suddenly shrugging his shoulders and wincing and now smiling happily

He was thinking of Prince Andrew of Natásha and of their love at one moment jealou of her past then reproaching himself for that feeling It was already six in the morning and he still paced up and down the room

Well what s to be done if it cannot be avoided? What s to be done? Evidently it has to be so said he to himself and hastil

I

A few days previously Pierre had decided to go to Petersburg on the Friday When he awoke on the Thursday Savélich came to ask him about packing for the journey

What to Petersburg? What is Petersburg? Who is there in Petersburg? he asked involuntarily though only to himself Oh yes long

and how attentive and how he remembers everything he thought looking at Savélich s old face and what a pleasant smile he has!

Well Savélich do you still not wish to accept your freedom? Pierre asked him

What s the good of freedom to me your excellency? We lived under the late count—the kingdom of heaven be his!—and we have lived under you too without ever being wronged

And your children?

The children will live just the same With such masters one can live

But what about my heirs? said Pierre Supposing I suddenly marry it might happen he added with an involuntary smile

If I may take the liberty your excellency it would be a good thing

How easy he thinks it thought Pierre He doesn t know how terrible it is and how dangerous Too soon or too late it is terrible!

So what are your orders? Are you startin tomorrow? asked Savélich

No I ll put it off for a bit I ll tell you later You must forgive the trouble I have put you to said Pierre and seeing Savélich smile he thought But how strange it is that he should not know that now there is no Petersburg for me and that *that* must be settled first of all! But probably he knows it well enough and is only pretending Shall I have a talk with him and see what he thinks? Pierre reflected No another time

At breakfast Pierre told the princess his cousin that he had been to see Princess Mary the day before and had there met— Whom do you think? Natásha Rostóva!

The princess seemed to see nothing more extraordinary in that than if he had seen Anna Semenovna

Do you know her? asked Pierre

I have seen the princess she replied I heard that they were arranging a match for her with young Rostóv It would be a very good thing for the Rostóvs they are said to be utterly ruined

No I mean do you know Natásha Rostóva?

I heard about that affair of hers at the time It was a great pity

No she either doesn t understand or is pretending thought Pierre Better not say anything to her either

The princess too had prepared provisions for Pierre s journey

How kind they all are thought Pierre What is surprising is that they should trouble about these things now when it can no longer be of interest to them And all for me!

On the same day the Chief of Police came to Pierre inviting him to send a representative to the Faceted Palace to recover things that were to l

And t

into the

fine good looking officer and how kind Fancy

bothering about s h tr fles now! And they actually say he t h est and t kes br bes What en el Bes des why h uldn t he take b bes? That s th w y he w s b ou l t up and everybody d es t. B t wh t a k nd plea ant face nd how he m les s he looks t me

P err w nt to Pr cess Mary s to d nner

A he dro e th ugh the streets past the houses that h d be n burn d down he was surprised by the be ty of tl ose ru n The p cturesq ess f the ch mneystack nd tum bled n wall f the burned-out qu rt rs of the to n, tretch ng out nd c e l ng one an ther r m ded h m of the Rh ne nd the Colo e m. The cabmen he m t and the r p s h carpenters cutt g the t mbe for k wk th Ah

u e

P erre f lt d btful whethe e lly bee there th n ght bef r nd had re lly seen N tash d talked t he P rh ps I m g ned t pe hap I shall g n d find n one th e B t he had hardly nte ed the room befo e he f lt her p es e w th h wh l b ng by the loss f his en e of f ed m She as n the same black d ess w th lt folds and her ha as d e th s me w y the d y b f e yet h as qu t d ffe ent. H d h been l ke this h he t ed th d y bef r l uld not fo mome t h e f l d to e n e her

She was he had kn w her lmo t a a ch ld d l ter n Pr n e Andr w fi n ée A b ght quest g l ght h n n l er yes d l er f was f dly d t ngely rou l exp ess n

P err d ed w th them nd w uld ha pent h wh l even g ther but P n ess M ry w go g t espers nd P erre l ft the h use w th her

Next day he cam ea ly d d nd t y d th wh l ev g Th ugh Pr n es M ry nd N t h w d ntly gl d t tl t

ro e first and complain g of a headach e be gan to say good n ght.

So you are go ng to Petersburg tomorrow? she a ked

— o go ng P erre repl ed l t ly

n l d.

—

nd

m case you h e a ly e sa d he stand g bef re Pr ncess Mary and turn ng ed but n t tak g h s dep rtu e

— l m her h nd and went out.

f po-

ternly nd tently

l ant eyes The wea ess she l d pla nly

h fa e had now quite passed off. W tl a

— d o be p e-

s confu

ansl ed

and were replaced y e nt He qu ckly m ed an armchair toward Pr nces Mary

Yes I w nted to t ll you sa d he nswer g he look as f he had spoken Princess help me! Wh t am I to d ? Can I h pe? Pr n cess my dear fr d l tent I kn w t ll I m n t wo thy of her I kn w t s m

s

w th h s h nd

W ll he went on w th an ev dent effo t t elf cont l nd coheren e I don t kn w when I began to l he but I ha lo ed her nd her l ne all my l fe and I lo e l er so tl at I cann t mag ne l fe w thout her I can t p p s to her t p esent but the th ht that pe haps l e m ght someday be my w fe nd th t I m y be m s g th t poss b l ty th t po b l ty s terr ble Tell me can I l p ? *Tell m wh t f m t do d* p n ess h dd d after a p us nd t ched her h nd a

d

y

e

t pped b cau e he h d se n by u uu n

wish d f

To speak to her now wouldn t do said the princess all the same

But what am I to do?

Leave it to me said Princess Mary I know

Pierre was looking into Princess Mary s eyes

Well? Well? he said

I know that she loves will love you Princess Mary corrected herself

Before her words were out Pierre had sprung up and with a frightened expression seized Princess Mary s hand

What makes you think so? You think I may hope? You think ?

Yes I think so said Princess Mary with a smile Write to her parents and leave it to me I will tell her when I can I wish it to happen and my heart tells me it will

No it cannot be! How happy I am! But it can t be How happy I am! No it can t be! Pierre kept saying as he kissed Princess Mary s hands

Go to Petersburg that will be best And I will write to you she said

To Petersburg? Go there? Very well I ll go But I may come again tomorrow?

Next day Pierre came to say good by Natásha was less animated than she had been the day before but that day as he looked at her Pierre sometimes felt as if he was vanishing and that neither he nor she existed any longe t

[illegible] that filled his soul with joy

When on saying good by he took her thin slender hand he could not help holding it a little longer in his own

Is it possible that this hand that face those eyes all this treasure of feminine charm so strange to me now is it possible that it will one day be mine forever as familiar to me as I am to myself? No that s impossible!

Good by Count she said aloud I shall look forward very much to your return she added in a whisper

And these simple words her look and the expression on her face which accompanied them formed for two months the subject of inexhaustible memories interpretations and happy meditations for Pierre I shall look

[illegible] ppy I am! What is happening to me? How happy I am! said Pierre to himself

CHAPTER XIX

There was nothing in Pierre s soul now at all like what had troubled it during his courtship of Hélène

He did not repeat to himself with a sickening feeling of shame the words he had spoken or say Oh why did I not say that? and Whatever made me say *Je vous aime?* On the contrary he now repeated in imagination every word that he or Natásha had spoken and pictured every detail of her face and smile and did not wish to diminish or add anything but only to repeat it again and again There was now not a shadow of doubt in his mind as to whether what he had undertaken was right or wrong Only one terrible doubt sometimes crossed his mind Wasn t it all a dream? Isn t Princess Mary mistaken? Am I not too conceited and self confident? I belie e [illegible]

[illegible] himself Doesn t he know that he is a man just a man while I ? I am something altogether different and higher

That was the only doubt often troubling Pierre He did not now make any plans The happiness befor [illegible]

A joyful unexpected frenzy of which he had thought himself incapable possessed him The whole meaning of life—not for him alone but for the whole world—seemed to him centered in his love and the possibility of being loved by her At times everybody seemed to him to be occupied with one thing only—his future happiness Sometimes it seemed to him that other people were all as pleased as he was himself and merely tried to hide that pleasure by pretending to be busy with other interests In every word and gesture he saw allusions to his happiness He often surprised those he met by his significantly happy looks and smiles which seemed to express a secret understanding between him and them And when he realized that people might not be aware of his happiness he pitied them with his whole heart and felt a desire somehow to explain to them that all that occupied them was a mere frivolous trifle unworthy of attention

When it was suggested to him that he should enter the civil service or when the war or any general political affairs were discussed on the assumption that everybody s welfare depended on this or that issue of events he would listen

with mild and p t m le a d urp e l ppy pl n f the futu e She spoke l ttle of peop by h tra c mm ts. But at tl time h saw e erybody—both tl se wl o as he magi ed, u derstood tl e eal mean n of u (that is wh t h s feel n) and those unf rtu tes wh es de tl) lid n t und r stand – th b l tl ht f th em t n th t e th.n h mself nd at on e th ut ny eff rt sa every ne he met ev ryth ng th t was good d w rthy f b n l d

Whe deal g w th the aff rs and p pers of his dead w fe, her mem ry rou d n l m no feeli b t p ty that h had n t known the bliss h now k ew Prin V l ho ha obtained ew post and so n f esh dec ra tio was part ularly p ud t th t me seemed t him p thet c k ndly ld man mu h to be p t ed.

Of ft l fe P rr recalled th per od f bliss f l san ty All the ev he f rmed of m and ci cumstan es t this t m e mained tru f h m lw ys. He n t nly d d not ren u c h m subsequen ly but wh n he wa doubt wa dly t r he ferred t the ews he h d h ld t th t e of his mad ess nd they alw s p o ed corr t.

I m y F e ppea ed ra ge nd que then h th ht, b t I was n t so mad I seemed. O th contrary I wa th n w ser nd had m e ht th n t n the t m nd ders ood all that w rth u dersta d

bef l l em h l e wa fl w th l d by l peopl w tl ca se h d ed d b bl causes f lo d em.

CHAPTER XX

After P erre tur th t first even w th wa ust n

h rt t d w h his h cropped som th h dd nd unk w hers lf but irr p ess bl w k n N t h soul

E rvth her f w lk look nd c as dd l l ed T h wn urp po f l f nd h p f h pp es ose to th f d d ma ded sa isf ct n F m that even h seemed ha f rgot n ll tha had h ppe ed her Sh no l n m pl ed f h pos n d d t say w d bo t th past, d l never feared to mak

P erre b t l en Pr nces Mary ment one l h m a l g ext ou l ed l gl t once m re k t dled in her eyes a d her l p curved w th a stran sm le

Tl e ch n tl t took place n N tá h at f rst u pr e l P incess M ry but l en she und rstood ts mea n t gr e e l l er Can sh l e l ed my brother so l ttle as to be ble to for t h m so soon? he thou l t wh n d on tl e ch B t wl en he was nd wer tly t

rrepress bl nd u l c h r p esen P n es Mary felt that l e had en oa h her e en in l er l e rt. I t

d heerful

Wh n P ess M ry eturned t her room fter he nocturn l t lk w th P erre N tásha m t l e on the th esh ld

He h poken Yes He h s poken he repeated

And joyful y t p thet c exp es on wh ch e med to beg f rgi ess f r her joy settled on N tá ha f ce

I wanted t l n t the doo b t I knew y u would t ll m

U d rsta d bl d t h the look w tl wl l N tá l ga ed t l e med to P n ess M ry d sorry l wa t l e t t n l es w ds pa ned h r f mo-ment. Sl e men bered h r b tl e d l s l e

B t wl t to be d ne? She can t l elp t thou ht the p ess.

A d w th a sad d rather tern look he t ld N tásl ll that P rr had sa d. On hear g th t h wa go to Petersburg N tásha unded.

T P tersburg h peated if unable t understand

But n cin the gr ed exp ess n n Pr n cess Mary f h guessed th eason f that sad ess d dd nly began t cry

M ry sa d he ll m wh t I h uld do I am fra d f be g b d. What er you tell me I w ll do T ll m

Y u l h m

Yes wh pered N tásha.

Th n why re y u cry I m happy f r y sak said Pri ess M ry who b caus of those tears qu te f rga N tásha joy

It won t be just yet—someday Think what fun it will be when I am his wife and you marry Nicholas!

Natásha I have asked you not to speak of that Let us talk about you

They were silent awhile

But why go to Petersburg? Natásha suddenly asked and hastily replied to her own question But no no he must Yes Mary He must

First Epilogue 1813-20

*

CHAPTER I

SEVE. YEARS had p ssed. The st rm tos ed sea f Europe n h tory h d ubs ded w th n ts shores a d seem d t h e b come calm But th myster us f ces that mo e hum n ty (mys- t us because the l w f the m t n are un k nt)c nt nu d t p rt

Tl gh th u f c of tl se f l t ry seemed m t less the m ement of l um ty w t as u eas ly th fl w of t me V us gr ps f peopl f rmed and d ssol ed th com f rm t n d d sol t n of k n d ms d d pl ceme t of peoples w s n co rse f p p rat n

The ea f h tory was n t dri en p smod cally f m h t h as p ously It as seeth g its d pths. H st figu es ere n t borne by th w s fr m e h to n ther as bef e Th y n w em d t t te n on pot. Th hi t cal figu es t th head of ar m es wh f rm ly fl cted th m ment of th ma ses by der wars camp gn d battles refl cted th estles mo ment by pol t cal d d pl m t comb n t n l ws d treat es

h h

on

dem th h to cal p rs n ges w h p caused what they d cribe t

t All th w ll known p ple f th t pe- riod f m Alexa der nd N p leon t M dam d Sta l Ph t us Sch ll g F chte Ch tea bri d nd the est p ss b f the tern j d m t nd ar qu tted con l m d co d g t wheth they cond ed t p gr ss t t

A cord g to the c nts u n took pl t that t m Russ lso d the ch ef culp t was Alex d I th same m n who ord h m w th ch f ca f the l b- eral m em t t the mm em t f h b g th sa f Russ

There is Rus n l teratu e n w f om choolboy essay st t learn d h t n

who d es not throw h s l ttle st ne at Alexan der fo th ngs he d d wrong at th per od of h s re gn

He ought to l a e acted n tl s way a d in th t w y In th ca e he d d ell and in th t ca e b dly H beh ed adm rably at the be g nn n of l s r gn id du ng 812 b t act ed badly by g n a nst tut on to Poland — l H ly All nce entrust — power sm also e ac

acted b dly by t e a my nd d sb nd ng the Semeno reg ment

It w uld t k d n p ges to enumerate ll the p cl s th h to n ddres to h m b ed n the r knowledge of wl at s good fo h man ty

Wh t d thes repro ches mean?

D n t th ery a t ons f r h ch the l isto- s pra Ale der I (th l beral attempts at the beg nn f h m h s t uggle w th N poleon th firmness he d pl yed n 8 2 and th camp gn of 18 3) fl w f m the same sources—th cir umsta ces of his b th ed ca t d l fe—that made l s person l ty hat t wa nd f m wl ch the acti n f r wh ch th y bl n l m (the H ly All n e the re to- rat n f Pol nd and the react n of 8 d l ter) lso fl ed?

In wh t d es tl ubstance f tho e p ch es l e?

It l es n the f t th t an h t r charact r h es nos

ns p rabl f m power ch ract w l o t ery m ment of h l fe f lt a espon b l ty f ll th t w h pp g n Eu p d not every

tue (the historians do not accuse him of that)—had not the same conception of the welfare of humanity fifty years ago as a present day professor who from his youth upwards has been occupied with learning that is with books and lectures and with taking notes from them

But even if we assume that fifty years ago Alexander I was mistaken in his view of what was good for the people we must inevitably assume that the historian who judges Alexander will also after the lapse of some tim [illegible] table because watching the movement of history we see that every year and with each new writer opinion as to what is good for mankind changes so that what once seemed good ten years later seems bad and vice versa And what is more we find at one and the same time quite contradictory views as to what is bad and what is good in history some people regard giving a constitution to Poland and forming the Holy Alliance as praiseworthy in Alexander while others regard it as blameworthy

The activity of Alexander or of Napoleon cannot be called useful or harmful for it is impossible to say for what it was useful or harmful If that activity displeases somebody this is only because it does not agree with his limited understanding of what is good Whether the preservation of my father's house in Moscow or the glory of the Russian arms or the prosperity of the Petersburg and other universities or the freedom of Poland or the greatness of Russia or the balance of power in Europe or a certain kind of European culture called progress appear to me to be good or bad I must admit that besides these things the action of every historic character has other more general purposes inaccessible to me

But let us assume that what is called science [illegible] us say that Alexander could have done everything differently let us say that with guidance from those who blame him and who profess to know the ultimate aim of the movement of humanity he might have arranged matters according to the program his present accusers would have given him—of nationality freedom equality and progress (these I think cover the ground) Let us assume that this program was possible and had then been formulated and that Alexander had acted on it What would then have become of the activity of all those who opposed the tendency that then prevailed in the government—an activity that in the opinion of the historians was good and beneficent? Their activity would not have existed there would have been no life there would have been nothing

If we admit that human life can be ruled by reason the possibility of life is destroyed

War and Peace was completed in 1869 —Tr.

CHAPTER II

If we assume as the historians do that great men lead humanity to the attainment of certain ends—the greatness of Russia or of France the balance of power in Europe the diffusion of the ideas of the Revolution general progress or anything else—then it is impossible to explain the facts of history without introducing the conceptions of *chance* and *genius*

If the aim of the European wars at the beginning of the nineteenth century had been the aggrandizement of Russia that aim might have been accomplished without all the preceding wars and without the invasion If the aim was the aggrandizement of France that might have been attained without the Revolution and without the Empire If the aim was the dissemination of ideas the printing press could have accomplished that much better than warfare If the aim was the progress of civilization it is easy to see that there are other ways of diffusing civilization more expedient than by the destruction of wealth and of human lives

Why did it happen in this and not in some other way?

Because it happened so! *Chance* created the situation *genius* utilized it says history

But what is *chance*? What is *genius*?

The words *chance* and *genius* do not denote any really existing thing and therefore cannot be defined Those words only denote a certain stage of understanding of phenomena I do not know why a certain event occurs I think that I cannot know it so I do not try to know it [illegible] drives each evening into a special enclosure to feed and that becomes twice as fat as the others must seem to be a genius And it must appear an astonishing conjunction of genius

with a hole series of extraord n ry ch nces that this ram who n t d of gett ng int the general f ld every even n goes into a pec al enclosur where ther are o ts—th t th ery rm swellin w th f t is killed for me t.

noo e that r y m d er as h t t d d ger

t happen cu ta of h e or g us

I

ur ken, may we discern u q periences in th l es f hust r c characters nd perce the cause of the effect they prod e (comm ns rable w th d n ry hum n cap bilit es) d th n th words ch e and g us becom erflu us.

k w

v

se e d purpos f tl es nts u t ly sh ll ha no need t e ex ept nal b l ty d g n us n N poleon nd Ale de b t e h ll be un bl t der them t be yth but l k th m n nd w h ll n t be bl ged t ha e course t h f n expla u f hos mall ts wh ch m d these peopl what they er but t w ll be clear that ll those m ll ev nts were ev ta ble.

By d card g claim to k wledge f the lt m t p rpos we h ll l arly pe tha just ca n t ma n bl ssom o seed f y le pl n better u d t than thos p od es so is mposs ble t mag e people mo complet ly d p edd wn t h m lles d ta l f the purpos they h d to f lfill tha N poleo d Alexander w th all th ir eced ts.

CHAPTER III

Ti ei ME T d ess nt l m fican e f the Eur pea ev nts f th beg f th n neteentl century l es in the mo ement of the mass of the Eur pe n peoples from west to e t nd afterwards from east to est. The commencement of that mo ement vas the mo ement from est to east For the peoples of the v est to be abl to make th r warl ke mo e ment to Moscow t was necessary (1) that they should f rm themsel es nto m l tary group of s ze able to endure a coll s on w th the warl ke m l tary gr up of the east (2) that they sh uld aband n all established trad t ons and customs nd (3) th t dur ng the r m l tary m ement they should ha e at their head a man wl could ju t fy to h ms lf and to them th decept on robber es and murders which would h e to be comm tted du ing that move m nt.

And beg nn n w th the French Re olut on the old nadequ t lyl rge group as destroyed, as well a the ld hab ts nd trad t ns nd step by step a group was f rmed of larger d men ons w th new cust ms nd trad t ons nd m n w produced who would stand at th head of th com n mo em t and bear the espo b l ty f all th t had to be d ne.

A m n w th ut con ct ns w thout h b ts w th ut trad t w th ut n me and n t even Frenchman emerges—by what seem the tra gest chances—fr m am ng all the seeth ng Fr nch p rt es and th ut j n n ny one of th m s born forward to a p omi nent po t

Th gn rance of h colleagues the weak ness nd on fica ce of h oppo ents the franknes f h f l hoods, nd the dazzl g nd elf-conf dent l mitat ons f this m n ra se h m t th head of the army The brill nt qu l t es f the sold ers of th rmy ent to Italy h pponents eluctance to figl t d h own ch ld h uda ty a d s lf-confid nce cu e him m l tary f me I numerabl o- called ch c ccomp ny h m e ery here Th d f nto h ch h f ll w th the rul ers f Fran turn to h ad tage H s t t mpts t d h p edest ned p th un uccessful h n t e ed nto the Russ n serv nd th pp ntm nt h seeks n Tur k y comes t n th Dur g the war n Italy he eral t mes n the rg of destru t n d ch t m s ed n unexpected man ne Ow g to a u dipl mat c con dera t th Russian arm es—just those wh ch might h e destroyed h p estig —d n t p- pea up n th c till he is no lon er there.

O his tu n f m Italy h f nds the go ernm nt n Paris n p ocess f dissol t n n

which all those who are in it are inevitably wiped out and destroyed And by chance an escape from this dangerous position presents itself in the form of n ml expedition tc accompanies ders without are crowned which subsequently did not let a single boat pass allows his entire army to elude it In Africa a whole series of outrages are committed against the almost unarmed inhabitants And the men who commit these crimes especially their leader assure themselves that this is admirable this is glory—it resembles Caesar and Alexander the Great and is therefore good

This ideal of *glory* and *grandeur*—which consists not merely in considering nothing wrong that one does but in priding oneself on every crime one commits ascribing to it an incomprehensible supernatural significance—that ideal destined to guide this man and his associates had scope for its development in Africa Whatever he does succeed The plague does not touch him The cruelty of murdering prisoners is not imputed to him as a fault His chil l l l ' –

intoxicated by the crimes he has committed so successfully he reaches Paris the dissolution of the republican government which a year earlier might have ruined him has reached its extreme limit and his presence there now as a newcomer free from party entanglements can only serve to exalt him—and though he himself has no plan he is quite ready for his new role

He had no plan he was afraid of everything but the parties snatched at him and demanded his participation

He alone—with his ideal of glory and grandeur developed in Italy and Egypt his insane self adulation his boldness in crime and frankness in lying—he alone could justify what had to be done

He is needed for the place that awaits him and so almost apart from his will and despite his indecision his lack of a plan and all his mistakes he is drawn into a conspiracy that aims at seizing power and the conspiracy is crowned with success

He is pushed into a meeting of the legislature In alarm he wishes to flee considering himself lost He pretends to fall into a swoon and says senseless things that should have ruined him But the once proud and shrewd rulers of France feeling that their part is played out are even more bewildered than he and do not say the words they should have said to destroy him and retain their power

Chance millions of *chances* give him power and all men as if by agreement co-operate to confirm that power *Chance* forms the characters of the rulers of France who submit to him *chance* forms the character of Paul I of Russia who recognizes his government *chance* contrives a plot against him which not only fails to harm him but confirms his power *Chance* puts the Duc d Enghien in his hands and unexpectedly causes him to kill him—thereby convincing the mob more forcibly than in any other way that he had the right since he had the might *Chance* contrives that though he directs all his efforts to prepare an expedition against England (which would inevitably have ruined him) he never carries out that intention but unexpectedly falls upon Mack and the Austrians who surrender without a battle *Chance* and *genius* give him the victory at Austerlitz and by *chance* all men not only the French but all Europe—except England which does not take part in the events about to happen—despite their former horror and detestation of his crimes now recognize his authority the title he has given himself and his ideal of g n l –

I st several times in 1805 1806 1807 and 1809 gaining strength and growing In 1811 the group of people that had formed in France unites into one group with the peoples of Central Europe The strength of the justification of the man who stands at the head of the movement grows with the increased size of the group During the ten year preparatory period this man had formed relations with all the crowned heads of Europe The discredited rulers of the world can oppose no reasonable ideal to the insensate Napoleonic ideal of *glory* and *grandeur* One after another they hasten to display their insignificance before him The King of Prussia sends his wife to seek the great man s mercy the Emperor of Austria considers it a favor that this man receives a daughter of the Caesars into his bed the Pope the guardian of all that the nations hold sacred utilizes religion for

th ggra d ement of the great man It is not N poleo h p ep es h m. If f r the acc m pl hme t f hi le so m ch as ll those ou d h m wh p ep e h m to take o h m yll the h le respon bil ty f r hat is h p- Ther s no step n e le e

n d e to dep e h m i u reaso and to p p e h m f r h s terribl part. A d when h ready so too are the forces

The vas pushes eastw d d reaches is final goal—Moscow Th t ty taken the R ssia army uffers hea er losses th n the oppos rm es h d ffered th f rmer w r from Austerl tz to Wagram. Put udd ly ead of those h d that g us wh ch h therto had so co ust tly led h m by an u terrupted ser es f ccesses to the p des- u ed goal umerable equ e of erse / occu —f m th cold his head t Bo od nó to the parks wh h et Moscow on fir nd the f osts— d tead of g n us tu- p d ty d mmea ur bl baseness becom es dent.

Th va ers flee m b k fi a n nd ll the chan es ar w n t f N poleo but lways ga nst h m

A co ermo ement is then ccompl hed from eas to wes w th ema kabl esem bla ce t the p eced g m eme f om west t ea t. Attempted dr es f om east to west— m lar to th co trary mo ements of 80 80 1 809—p ecede the grea westward moveme t ther is the sam coalesc nt group f en rm u d m n ns th same adl es f th peopl f Centr l Eur pe to the m em h sam hes ta n m dw y d th sam cr rap l y as the g l s pp oach d

P h ul mat oal eached Th N p eon government nd army destr yed. N poleo himself is o lo ger f y ccount ll h ct es dentl p t f l d mean bu a expl cabl h occurs The ll es d es N poleo wh m they ega d as

h ppea ed ten years p ev u l d o ea later— tlawed b a d B t by s me

stra g l n n on perce es th s H s part is n t y t ended. The m n who ten years be fore nd a year later was c ns dered n out lawed br gand is sent t an l nd two d ys m eason s pre rds re re pa d h m

CHAPTER IV

THE FLOO OF NATIO s beg ns to subs de i to its n rmal channels The wa es of the gre t mo em t ab te and on the calm su face ed d es are f med n wl ch flo t the d pl mat is who ma ne that they ha e cau ed the floods to ab t

Put th mo th e a n dde ly becomes d t bed. The d pl mat is th k th t the r disagre me t re the cause of th s fresh p es of n ur l f ces they t cip te wa be

pect. It ises a l

befo e—P Th last b kw l of the mo m nt f m th west occurs a b kw h wh ch h nar ntly n perable d p-

ptur u ly gre t the ma they u seu u t way bef nd w ll curse a n mo th later

Th m n s t ll need d i just fy the fin l coll ct e t.

And som years p d wh ch he play

that peopl had mistaken l str gth as l unse h nd u ted h t o

The ma r h b ht th d ma to close d tr pped th cto hows h m to u

Se what y u bel eved Th is h Do y u n w se th t t was t h b t I who mo ed y u

I u da ed l y th f c f the m ement, t wa l g bef peopl u derst od this

St ll greater coherence d es tab l ty s

which all those who are in it are inevitably wiped out and destroyed And by chance an escape from this dangerous position presents itself in the form of an aimless and senseless expedition to Africa Again so called *chance* accompanies him Impregnable Malta surrenders without a shot his most reckless schemes are crowned with success The enemy s fleet which subsequently did not let a single boat pass allows his entire army to elude it *In* Africa a whole series of outrages are committed against the almost unarmed inhabitants *And the men who commit these crimes* especially their leader assure themselves that this is admirable this is glory—it resembles *Caesar and Alexander the Great and is there*fore good

This *ideal of glory and grandeur—which* consists not merely in considering nothing wrong that one does but in priding oneself on every crime one commits ascribing to it an incomprehensible supernatural significance—that ideal destined to guide this man and his associates had scope for its development in Africa Whatever he does succeeds The plague does not touch him The cruelty of murdering prisoners is not imputed to him as a fault His childishly rash uncalled for and ignoble departure from Africa leaving his comrades in distress is set down to his credit and again the enemy s fleet twice lets him slip past When intoxicated by the crimes he has committed so successfully he reaches Paris the dissolution of the republican government which a year earlier might have ruined him has reached its *extreme limit and his presence there now as a* newcomer free from party entanglements can only serve to exalt him—and though he him*self has no plan he is quite ready for his new* role

He had no plan he was afraid of everything but the parties *snatched at him and demanded* his participation

-

to be done

He is needed for the place that awaits him and so almost apart from his will and despite his indecision his lack of a plan and all his mistakes he is drawn into a conspiracy that aims at seizing power and the conspiracy is crowned with success

He is pushed into a meeting of the legislature In alarm he wishes to flee considering himself lost He pretends to fall into a swoon and says senseless things that should have ruined him But the once proud and shrewd rulers of France feeling that their part is played out are even more bewildered than he and do not say the words they should have said to destroy him and retain their power

Chance millions of *chances* give him power and all men as if by agreement co-operate to *confirm that power Chance forms the charac*ters of the rulers of France who submit to him *chance* forms the character of Paul I of Russia who *recognizes* his government *chance* contrives a plot against him which not only fails to harm him but confirms his power *Chance* puts the Duc d Enghien in his hands and unexpectedly causes him to kill him—thereby con*vincing the mob more forcibly than in any* other way that he had the right since he had the might *Chance* contrives that though he directs all his efforts to prepare an expedition against England (which would inevitably have ruined him) he never carries out that intention but unexpectedly falls upon Mack and the Austrians who surrender without a battle *Chance* and *genius* give him the victory at Austerlitz and by *chance* all men not only the French but all Europe—except England which does not take part in the events about to happen—despite their former horror and detestation of his crimes now recognize his authority the title he has given himself and his ideal of grandeur and glory which seems excellent and reasonable to them all

As if measuring themselves and preparing for the coming movement the western forces push toward the east several times in 1805 1806 1807 and 1809 gaining strength and *growing In 1811 the group of people that had* formed in France unites into one group with the peoples of Central Europe The strength *of the justification of the man who stands* at the head of the movement grows with the increased size of the group During the ten year *preparatory period this man had formed rela*tions with all the crowned heads of Europe The discredited rulers of the world can op*pose no reasonable ideal to the insensate Na*poleonic ideal of *glory* and *grandeur* One after another they hasten to display their insig*nificance before him* The King of Prussia sends his wife to seek the great man s mercy the Emperor of Austria considers it a favor that *this man receives* a daughter of the Caesars into his bed the Pope the guardian of all that the nations hold sacred utilizes religion for

not get up ₇a n desp te the doctor s encour
Th untess p ssed a f rtn ht n

for e him f ha n uis p
erty—that bei g the ch ef fault of wh ch he wa
f er ece g commun n and

l
e
l
d
ll
t
a
orthy man. u
days. A d which of us has n t we knesses
f his o n?

It wa just when th count affairs h d become so l ed that t was mposs ble t say hat w uld happen f he l ed an ther year that he u expectedly died

N ch las was w th th Russian army n Pari hen th w f his f ther d th reached him. H t nce res gned his comm ss on and th twaiti f t to be accepted took lea f bse ce and we t to Moscow The tate of the co t ff irs becam qu t obvi us month fter his death urpris g e ery n by th immense t tal of mall d bts th xist n e n ed Th debts

h ch h held sacred and the l w i t hear f fus nd pted th nh t nce together with th bl gat n t p y the d bts

Th credit rs who h d so l g been lent, estra ed by ague but powerful nflu nce ed b th counts

becam the mos exa g u
N ch las was allowed n esp nd n pea e and those wh had seemed to p ty th old m n —th cause f th ir losses (f they we losses) — ow em rseles ly purs ed th u h ir who had l taril undertak n th d bts d was b usly n t guilty f contract g them.

Not one of the plans N chol s tried succeeded th estate was sold by auct on f r h lf ts lue and h lf the debts still rema ned unp d. N chol s accepted th rty thousand rubles offered h m by h s br ther n law Bezuk h to p y off debts he regarded as genu nely due f alue rece ed And to a o d bein m p oned f the em nder as the cred tors th eatened h re-entered the go ernment service

H could not ejo n th army where he w uld h e been m d col nel at the next a cancy f r h s mother now clung to h m as her ne hold on l f d so desp te h reluctance to rem n Moscow mon people who h d kn wn h m befo e and desp te h s abhorrence of th ci l service l e cepted po t in Moscow n that ers c doffed the u form of wh ch h was so f nd and mo ed w th his m ther a d Sónya to small h use on the Si tsev V razh k.

N tásh d P err were l ng n Petersburg t the t me and h d n clea dea of N ch l circumstances H ng borrowed money from his brother n l w N cholas tr ed to h de h s wretched cond t n from h m. His pos t on was the m e difficult because w th h dred rubles h h d not

a,
ge
n
ns

she h d been used t from childhood a u unble to ealiz h w hard t was f h r son k pt d ma di g n w carr g (wh ch they d d n t keep) to end f f e d, n w some pe s e articl of food f r herself r w e f her son o m ey t buy a p esent as a ur p f r N tá ha or Sónya or f r N cholas himself

Sónya kept h us tt nded on her unt, read t her put up th h r wh ms nd cr t

dmi ed her p t n e and dev ti n but tried to k p loof fr m her
t n enm h her f

A poo q arter f Moscow —Tr.

seen in the life of Alexander I the man who stood at the head of the countermovement from east to west

What was needed for him who overshadowing others stood at the head of that movement from east to west?

What was needed was a sense of justice and a sympathy with European affairs but a remote sympathy not dulled by petty interests a moral superiority over those sovereigns of the day who co-operated with him a mild and attractive personality and a personal grievance against Napoleon And all this was found in Alexander I all this had been prepared by innumerable so called *chances* in his life his education his early liberalism the advisers who surrounded him and by Austerlitz and Tilsit and Erfurt

During the national war he was inactive because he was not needed But as soon as the necessity for a general European war presented itself he appeared in his place at the given moment and uniting the nations of Europe led them to the goal

The goal is reached After the final war of 1815 Alexander possesses all possible power How does he use it?

Alexander I—the pacifier of Europe the man who from his early years had striven only for his people s welfare the originator of the liberal innovations in his fatherland—now that he seemed to possess the utmost power and therefore to have the possibility of bringing about the welfare of his peoples—at the time when Napoleon in exile was drawing up childish and mendacious plans of how he would have made mankind happy had he retained power—Alexander I having fulfilled his mission and feeling the hand of God upon him suddenly recognizes the insignificance of that supposed power turns away from it and gives it into the hands of contemptible men whom he despises saying only

Not unto us not unto us but unto Thy Name! I too am a man like the rest of you Let me live like a man and think of my soul and of God

As the sun and each atom of ether is a sphere complete in itself and yet at the same time only a part of a whole too immense for man to comprehend so each individual has within himself his own aims and yet has them to serve a general purpose incomprehensible to man

A bee settling on a flower has stung a child And the child is afraid of bees and declares that bees exist to sting people A poet admires the bee sucking from the chalice of a flower and says it exists to suck the fragrance of flowers A beekeeper seeing the bee collect pollen from flowers and carry it to the hive says that it exists to gather honey Another be[illegible]

[illegible] its race A botanist notices that the bee flying with the pollen of a male flower to a pistil fertilizes the latter and sees in this the purpose of the bee s existence Another observing the migration of plants notices that the bee helps in this work and may say that in this lies the purpose of the bee But the ultimate purpose of the bee is not exhausted by the first the second or any of the processes the human mind can discern The higher the human intellect rises in the discovery of these purposes the more obvious it becomes that the ultimate purpose is beyond our comprehension

All that is accessible to man is the relation of the life of the bee to other manifestations of life And so it is with the purpose of historic characters and nations

CHAPTER V

NATÁSHA S WEDDING to Bezukhov which took place in 1813 was the last happy event in the family of the old Rostóvs Count Ilyá Rostóv died that same year and as always happens after the father s death the family group broke up

The events of the previous year the burning of Moscow and the flight from it the death of Prince Andrew Natásha s despair Pétya s death and the old countess grief fell blow after blow on the old count s head He seemed to be unable to understand the meaning of all these events and bowed his old head in a spiritual sense as if expecting and inviting further blows which would finish him He seemed now frightened and distraught and now unnaturally animated and enterprising

The arrangements for Natásha s marriage occupied him for a while He ordered dinners and suppers and obviously tried to appear cheerful but his cheerfulness was not infectious as it used to be on the contrary it evoked the compassion of those who knew and liked him

When Pierre and his wife had left he grew very quiet and began to complain of depression A few days later he fell ill and took to his bed He realized from the first that he would

I expected noth g el e he t ld herself callin her p de t her d. I h en th ng to do th him d I o ly wanted to ee the old lad wh was al ays k d t me and t whom I am under m ny obligat ns.

B t she co ld n t p cify herself with these reflections feel kin to emorse troubled her when he th ught f her t. Thou h he had firml resol ed n t to call on th Rostó s again d t f r t the whole matte she felt herself all the tim wkward pos t on. And hen she asked herself hat distressed her he had to dm t that t was her lat n to Rostó H cold, pol t manner did n t express his feeling f her (he knew th t) but t con cealed som thi d u t'l he could disco er what that someth wa she felt th t she could not be t ease.

O e day m d ter when tu n the schoolroom ttend g t her neph w lessons, sh was f rmed that Rost had called. W th firm resol t n t t betray herself d n t show her tatu h nt f M dem selle Bourien and went w th her to the draw room.

Her first gl ce t N ch l f e told her that h had ly come to f lfill the demands f pol t ess d sh firmly esol ed to main ta th t e wh ch h ddressed her

They spok of the co ntess health of their mutual friends of th l test war ws d h the ten m utes equired by p priety had el psed fter wh ch is to may ise Nicholas got p to say good by

W th M dem selle Bour enn h lp the pri es had mainta ed th co ersat n ery well, b t t th ry last mome t, just when h ose he was so tired f talki of what did not terest her and h m nd was so full f th q est why h l e was granted so l t tl happ ess lif that n fit of bsent mi dedness she sat till her lum us eyes gazin fixedly bef her n t ot ci g that he had risen.

N cholas glanced t her nd wish g to p pear not to t e her bstracti n mad some remark t M dem isell Bour n e nd th n ga looked t the p ess. Sh till sat mo so less w th look f uffer n her g tle f H ddenl f lt sorry f l er nd was vaguely consci u tha he m ht be the cause h sad ess her f ce exp essed. H wished to h p her d say something pleasa t, b t could th k f th g t say

Good by Pri ess sa d he

Sh tarted, flushed, d hed deeply

Oh I beg your pard n she sa d as if wak ng up Ar you go g already Count? Well then good by! Oh but the cush on for the cou tess!

Wa t a moment I ll fetch t sa d Made m selle Bouri nne and she left the room.

They both sat s lent th an o cas n l gla e t one nother

Yes Princess sa d N cholas t last w th a sad mile t doesn t seem l ng ago ce we first met at Boguchárovo but h w m ch water has fl wed s n e the In wh t distress w ll eem d to be th n yet I wo ld g e much to b back that time but there s no b ng n t back.

P n ess Mary gazed nt ntly into his eyes w th her own lum ous ones a he sa d th Sh s med t be try ng to fath n the l dden mean f hi words which w uld expl n his feel g fo her

Yes es, said sh but you ha e no eason to regret the past, Co t. As I understa d you p es t l f I th nk you w ll lways recall t w th satisfacti n because the self sacr fice that fills t n w

I cannot ccept you pra se he interr pted her hurr edly On the co trary I contu u lly

cold exp ess n But th p cess h d ca ght

and to all your family that I th ght you w uld not con der my ympatl y m placed but I was m taken nd sudde ly her o ce trem bled. I d n t kn w why sh continued re co ering hers lf, but y u used to be different nd

There thousand reasons why I yi g speci l empha on th why Thank y u Princess he dded softly Sometimes it is hard.

So that why! Th t s why! a o ce whis pered n Pr cess M ry soul No t was not only that gay k nd and frank look not only that handsom exter that I lo ed in h m I di ned his ble resolut self sacr ficing pirit too she sa d to herself. Yes he is poo now and I am ch. Yes that s the only reason

Yes ere t n t f that And remem bering h f rme t derness, d looki g n w t h k nd, sorrowful f ce h udd nly un derstood th cause f his coldness.

freedom and now behaved as if all that had passed between them had been long forgotten and could never in any case be renewed

Nicholas

The idea of

salary prove y did he not save anything but to comply with his mother s demands he even incurred some small debts He could see no way out of this situation The idea of marrying some rich woman which was suggested to him by his female relations was repugnant to him The other way out—his mother s death—never entered his head He wished for nothing and hoped for nothing and deep in his heart experienced a gloomy and stern satisfaction in an uncomplaining endurance of his position He tried to avoid his old acquaintances with their commiseration and offensive offers of assistance he avoided all distraction and recreation and even at home did nothing but play cards with his mother pace silently up and down the room and smoke one pipe after another He seemed carefully to cherish within himself the gloomy mood which alone enabled him to endure his position

CHAPTER VI

At the beginning of winter Princess Mary came to Moscow From reports current in town she learned how the Rostóvs were situated and how the son has sacrificed himself for his mother as people were saying

I never expected anything else of him said Princess Mary to herself feeling a joyous sense of her love for him Remembering her friendly relations with all the Rostóvs which had made her almost a member of the family she thought it her duty to go to see them But

t them a few weeks after her arrival in Moscow

Nicholas was the first to meet her as the

cour

his

as sl

his face assumed a cold stiff proud expression she had not seen on it before He inquired about her health led the way to his mother and having sat there for five minutes left the room

When the princess came out of the countess room Nicholas met her again and with marked solemnity and stiffness accompanied her to the anteroom To her remarks about his mother s health he made no reply What s that to you? Leave me in peace his looks seemed to say

Why does she come prowling here? What does she want? I can t bear these ladies and all these civilities! said he aloud in Sónya s

a

to conceal her delight

She is so kind and Mamma is so fond of her!

Nicholas did not reply and tried to avoid speaking of the princess any more But after her visit the old countess spoke of her several times a day

She sang her praises insisted that her son must call on her expressed a wish to see her often but yet always became ill humored when she began to talk about her

Nicholas tried to keep silence when his mother spoke of the princess but his silence irritated her

She is a very admirable and excellent young woman said she and you must go and call on her You would at least be seeing somebody and I think it must be dull for you only seeing us

But I don t in the least want to Mamma

You used to want to and now you don t Really I don t understand you my dear One day you are dull and the next you refuse to see anyone

But I never said I was dull

Why you said yourself you don t want even to see her She is a very admirable young woman and you always liked her but now suddenly you have got some notion or other in your head You hide everything from me

Not at all Mamma

If I were asking you to do something disagreeable now—but I only ask you to return a call One would think mere politeness required it Well I have asked you and now I won t interfere any more since you have secrets from your mother

Well then I ll go if you wish it

It doesn t matter to me I only wish it for your sake

Nicholas sighed bit his mustache and laid out the cards for a patience trying to divert his mother s attention to another topic

The same conversation was repeated next day and the day after

After her

pectedly chi

cess Mary confessed to herself that she had been right in not wishing to be the first to call

"I expected othi g else she told herself

I am under m y obl gat ns.

B t he could n t p cify hers lf w th these reflectu feel k to emorse tro bled her whe h th ht f her is t. Tho h she had firml resol ed ot t call on th Rostó s agai a d t f rget the wh le m tte he f lt herself all the t me ana kward pos ti n. And hen she ked herself what distressed her he had to dmit that t was he relati to Rostó H cold pol t m did n t exp ess his feel g f her (he knew th t) but t con cealed someth and ntil he could d co er hat that somethin wa she felt that sh could t be t ea e

O day midw ter when s tti n the *schoolroom ttend t h nephew s lessons,* sh as f rmed that Rost h d called. W th firm esol ti n t to betray herself nd n t show her g tati n f e t f M dem lle Bour d went w th her to the draw room.

Her first glance t N ch la fa e told her that h had nly come to f lfill the dema ds f p l ess d he firmly resol ed to main ta the to e wh ch he ddressed her

They spoke f the co tess health, of their m tual friends f th l test wa new d h th ten mi utes equi ed by p p ety had elapsed after wh ch is to may rise N chol got up to say good by

W th M dem is ll Bou e es h lp th P es had ma ta ed the co ersa on ery ell, b t t th ry last m m t, just wh n h ose sh as so tured f talki of what d d not terest her d her m nd was so full of th q es why he l ne wa gra t d so l t tl happ ess l f that f t of bs nt mindedness she sat ll her lum us eyes gaz g fixedly bef r her n t t ci g that he had risen.

Nicholas glanced t her nd, wishi g to p pear not t ce he bstra t mad some remark to M dem sell Bourienne nd th n a looked t th p ess. Sh till t mo tio less w th look f uffer on he g ntl f H ddenly f lt sorry f her nd was vaguely nsci u that h mi ht b *th* caus th sad ess her f ce expressed. H wished to h lp her d say som th g pleasant, but could th k f th t say

Good b Pr es! sa d l

Sh tarted, flushed, d hed deeply

Oh I beg your pardon she sa d as if wak ng up Are you go ng already Count? Well the good by! Oh but the cu h n for the countess!

W t moment I ll fetch it sa d M de mo elle Bourienne a d he left the room

They both s t s l nt th a occas n l gl nce t o e nother

"Yes Pr n ess said N ch las at l t w th a sad m le t doesn t seem lo g go si ce we first m t at Bogu háro but l ow much water has fl wed s nce *then! In wh t distress we all* eemed to b th n yet I w uld g e much to br back th t t me but there no b ing i g it back.

P n ess Mary gazed intently into his eyes w th her own lum ous nes a he sa d this Sh eemed to be try g to fath m the hidden mean n of h s w rds wh ch would expl n h s *feel g* f her

"Yes yes said sh but you h e no reason to egr t the past, Cou t As I understand y ur pres nt l fe I th k y u w ll always *recall it* w th sati facti n becau the self sacr fice that fills t now

I cannot ccept you pra e he terr pted he h rr edly On the contrary I co tinu lly rep o ch myself But this is n t t all n te esti g or cheerful subject.

H f ce ga n resumed its f rme stiff nd

nd t all your f mily that I thou ht you w uld not c ns de my ymp thy mispl ed b t I wa mistaken nd sudd nly her e trem bled I d n t know why she continued re co eri g herself but you used t be d ffer t nd

There are thousa d reason *why* l y g pecial emphas on the *why* Thank y u Pri ess h dded softly Som times t is hard

So that why! Th t why whis pered n Pr ess M ry soul. N t was not nly that gay *k nd and frank look n* t o ly th t h dsome exte th t l l ed n him I di ed h bl esol t lf sacrifici g pirit *too* h sa d to herself. Yes h is poor now

But why Count why? she almost cried unconsciously moving closer to him Why? Tell me You must tell me!

He was silent

I don t understand your *why* Count she continued but it s hard for me I confess it For some reason you wish to deprive me of our former friendship And that hurts me There were tears in her eyes and in her voice I have had so little happiness in life that every loss is hard for me to bear Excuse me good by! and suddenly she began to cry and was hurrying from the room

Princess for God s sake! he exclaimed trying to stop her Princess!

She turned round For a few seconds they gazed silently into one another s eyes—and what had seemed impossible and remote suddenly became possible inevitable and very near

CHAPTER VII

In the winter of 1813 Nicholas married Princess Mary and moved to Bald Hills with his wife his mother and Sónya

Within four years he had paid off all his remaining debts without selling any of his wife s property and having received a small inheritance on the death of a cousin he paid his debt to Pierre as well

In another three years by 1820 he had so managed his affairs that he was able to buy a small estate adjoining Bald Hills and was negotiating to buy back Otrádnoe—that being his pet dream

Having started farming from necessity he soon grew so devoted to it that it became his favorite and almost his sole occupation Nicholas was a plain farmer he did not like innovations especially the English ones then coming into vogue He laughed at theoretical treatises on estate management disliked fac to [illegible]

work on his estate He always had before his mind s eye *the estate* as a whole and not any particular part of it The chief thing in his eyes was not the nitrogen in the soil nor the oxygen in the air nor manures nor special plows but that most important agent by which nitrogen oxygen manure and plow were made effective—the peasant laborer When Nicholas first began farming and began to understand its different branches it was the serf who especially attracted his attention The peasant seemed to him not merely a tool but also a judge of farming and an end in himself At first he watched the serfs trying to understand their aims and what they considered good and bad and only pretended to direct them and give orders while in reality learning from them their methods their manner of speech and their judgment of what was good and bad Only when he had understood the peasants tastes and aspirations had learned to talk their language to grasp the hidden meaning of their words and felt akin to them did he begin boldly to manage his serfs that is to perform toward them the duties demanded of him And Nicholas management produced very brilliant results

Guided by some gift of insight on taking up the management of the estates he at once unerringly appointed as bailiff village elder and delegate the very men the serfs would themselves have chosen had they had the right to choose and these posts never changed hands Before analyzing the properties of manure before entering into the *debit* and *credit* (as he ironically called it) he found out how many cattle the peasants had and increased the number by all possible means He kept the peasant families together in the largest groups possible not allowing the family groups to divide into separate households He was hard alike on the lazy the depraved and the weak and tried to get them expelled from the commune

He was as careful of the sowing and reaping of the peasants hay and corn as of his own and few landowners had their crops sown and harvested so early and so well or got so good a return as did Nicholas

He disliked having anything to do with the domestic serfs—the drones as he called them—and everyone said he spoiled them by his laxity When a decision had to be taken regarding a domestic serf especially if one had to be punished he always felt undecided and consulted everybody in the house but when it was possible to have a domestic serf conscripted instead of a land worker he did so without the least hesitation He never felt any hesitation in dealing with the peasants He knew that his every decision would be approved by them all with very few exceptions

He did not allow himself either to be hard on or punish a man or to make things easy for or reward anyone merely because he felt inclined to do so He could not have said by what standard he judged what he should or should not do but the standard was quite firm and

fi teinh nm d.

Ofte peaking w th ex t n of some fa l ure or irregul rity he w uld s y Wh t can ed w tho r R ss an peasants? and mag ined that he c ld n t bear them

Yet h l ed Russ n p asa ts nd their ay f l fe w th h whole so l and for that ery e so l d u derst od d ss m l ted the e w y d m n er of farm ng h h od ced good re ults

of

to on n hbor! Wh t I want is that our ch ldren sh uld not h ve t go begg ng I mu t put our aff irs n o der wh le I m al e th ts all. And t do th t order and strictness re essent al Th t s ll bout it! said he clench n h s go us f st And f rness f cours he added for f the peasant n k d and hungry and l as ly one m serable h rse h can do no good e ther for h mself or for me

And all N chola d d was fru tful—prob bly just becaus he refu ed to ll w h mself to and o oth rs for vir

sta d hy he wa so p rt cul ly u d happy h after g tt g p t day b e k a d pe d g the wh le m rn g n the fields o o the thresh g floo h eturned fr m the ha e tea w th w th of ithew l corn all ght l the f ct th t his (N u las') thea es er al eady t ck d bef e nyone lse h d h harvest Sh d d t understand h he tepped t fr m the w d w to the vera da d smiled under his mustach and ked so joyfully wh n warm steady rain bega t fall n the dry and thirsty hoots of th yo g oats hy whe th w d carried way th eaten cl ud durn the h y h rvest he ld *return* fr m th barn flushed, un burned, d perspiri w th mell of wormwood d g tian his hair and, gleefully rubbin his hands w uld say "W ll o m e da d my gra n d th peasants will ll be u der co er

S ll less d d h u derstand why he, kind hearted d lways ready o anticipat her w hes hould becom lmost desperat when sh brought him petiti n from some peasant me or women who had ppealed to her to be excused som w k wh he that is d N cholas, hould obstina ly efuse her ngrily ask ng her not t terfere what was n t her bus ess. Sh felt h had world part, which h lo ed passio tely and which had laws h had no fathomed.

Som times when trying to understand him, sh pok f the good work he was doing for his serfs, h would be exed and reply Not in t. least. never en ered my head and I wouldn t do *that* for their good. That all poetry and old wives' talk—all that doing good

f h dm n trat on was u o y p l m ng the serfs He was m ter the peasants ff rs first and then h own Of c u se he wa not to be t fled w th e ther—in a word h was a real master!

CHAPTER VIII

O MATTER conn cted with h s m n gement som times w rr ed N cholas nd that was his qu ck tempe together w th his old hussar habt of mak ng f ee use of his fists. At first he saw *noth ng repreh n ble* in this but in the second year of his marriage his v ew f th t f rm of pun hm nt suddenly cha ged.

O ce n ummer he had e t f r the llage lder from Boguchárо a man who had uc

ing that morn g Amo other th ngs h po of the Bogu hárovo lder Countess M ry turned ed and then p l but co tinued to t w th head bowed nd l ps comp essed nd ga e her husband no eply

"S ch an nsolent sco ndrel he cried, gr w hot ga n th mere recollect on of h m. "If he had told me h was dru k and d d n t see But what is the matter with you Mary h uddenl asked.

Cou tess Mary raised her head nd tried *to* peak, but hastily looked down gain and her lips puckered.

"Why whatever is the matter my dearest?"

The looks of th plain Countess Mary always

improved when she was in tears She never cried from pain or vexation but always from sorrow or pity and when she wept her radiant eyes acquired an irresistible charm

The moment Nicholas took her hand she could no longer restrain herself and began to cry

Nicholas I saw it he was to blame but why do you Nicholas! and she covered her face with her hands

Nicholas said nothing He flushed crimson left her side and paced up and down the room He understood what she was weeping about but could not in his heart at once agree with her that what he had regarded from childhood as quite an everyday event was wrong Is it just sentimentality old wives tales or is she right? he asked himself Before he had solved that point he glanced again at her face filled with love and pain and he suddenly realized that she was right and that he had long been sinning against himself

Mary he said softly going up to her it will never happen again I give you my word Never he repeated in a trembling voice like a boy asking for forgiveness

The te flo d

ess ey

Ni

she ask u o change the subject looking at his finger on which he wore a ring with a cameo of Laocoon s head

Today—it was the same affair Oh Mary don t remind me of it! and again he flushed I give you my word of honor it shan t occur aga n n ll

anc

A

lage u s c t stewards the blood rushed to his face and his fists began to clench Nicholas would turn the broken ring on his finger and would drop his eyes before the man who was making him angry But he did forget himself or

he

ng

very last time

Mary you must despise me! he would say I deserve it

You should go go away at once if you don t feel strong enough to control yourself she would reply sadly trying to comfort her husband

Amo

and consequently some thought him proud and others thought him stupid The whole summer from spring sowing to har

h

s or spent his time reading The books he read were chiefly historical and on these he spent a certain sum every year He was collecting as he said a serious library and he made it a rule to read through all the books he bought He would sit in his study with a grave air reading—a task he first imposed upon himself as a duty but which afterwards became a habit affording him a special kind of pleasure and a consciousness of being occupied with serious matters In winter except for business excursions he spent most of his time at home making himself one with his family and entering into all the details of his children s relations with their mother The harmony between him and his wife grew closer and closer and he daily discovered fresh spiritual treasures in her

From the time of his marriage Sónya had l d n

g a u kind to his cousin She thoroughly realized the wrong he had done Sónya felt herself to blame toward her and imagined that her wealth had influenced Nicholas choice She could not find fault with Sónya in any way and tried to be fond of her but often felt ill will toward her which she could not overcome.

Once she had a talk with her friend Natásha about Sónya and about her own injustice toward her

You know said Natásha you have read the Gospels a great deal—there is a passage in

t at hath not shall be taken away You remember? She is one that hath not why I don t know Perhaps she l cks egotism I don t know but from her s taken away and everything has been taken away Sometimes I am dreadfully sorry for her Formerly I very much wanted Nicholas to marry her but I always had a sort of presentiment that it would not come off She is a *sterile flower* you know—like some strawberry blossoms Sometimes I am sorry for her and sometimes I think she

doesn't feel it as you I would.

Though Countess Mary told Natásha that those words in the Gospel mu t be understood differently yet looki g at Sónya he agreed w th explan ti n It eally seemed d

r

scously ccepted from her w u t gratitude.

The co try seat t B ld H lls had been rebuilt, thou h n t n the same scale as under t ld pri e.

The b ild gs be u unde stra tened cir cumsta es, were m than s mple. The m mense house o the ld t ne f undati ns was d It had bare

rooms f r the house erf nd part is is tors. Wh l fam l es f the Ros ó s nd Bolkó ks relati ns som t mes came t Bald H lls w th sixteen h rses nd d n of erv a ts d tayed for m nths. Bes des th t, f ur times year o the nam days nd b rthdays of th hosts, as ma y as hundred tors would gather ther f day r tw The est f th year l fe pursued its u b ken u e with its d ary occup ti ns nd its b eak fasts, l ches din ers d uppers, p ded o t f th prod ce f th estate.

CHAPTER IX

IT WAS the ev f St. N ch las the fifth of December 8 N tásha had been tayi g t her brother w th her husb nd d childr n earl tum P erre h d g P tersburg b ess f his wn f three weeks as he sa d, b t had rema ed there nearly even ks d was expected b k every minute

Bes des the Bez kh f mily N h las old fr d the tired Ge eral V fl Dmítr ch Deniso was tay g w th the Rostó this fifth f December

O th th, wh ch was h n me day when th h use w uld be full f is t rs N ch las k ew h w uld h to excha ge his Tartar tun for tail co t, and put n narrow boots w th po nted toes nd dr ve to the new church he h d bu lt and then rece e is tors who w uld come to congratul te him offer them refreshments and talk about the elect on of th n b l ty but he cons dered h mself ent tled to spend the eve of that day in h usual way He exam ned the b l ff a cou ts of the ll ge in Ryazán wh ch bel ged to his wife s neph ew wrote two bu ess letters and walked o er es. cattle yards nd stables be

t

t

the g which th wh le household had assembled. t that table were his m ther h mother s old lady compan on Beló a his w fe their th ee ch ldren w th their governess and tutor his w fe nephew w th his tutor Sónya De so Natásha her thr e ch ldren the r go ernes nd old M chael I áno ch the l te pri ce ar ch tect, wh was l ng on n retireme t at Bald Hills.

Countess Mary sat t the ther end of the table. When her husb d took his pl e she concluded fr m th rap d manner n wh ch after tak g up his tabl n pk n he pushed b ck th tumbler nd w neglass stand g be f re him th t he wa out of humo as wa sometimes the case when he came n t di ne trai ht from the f rm—esp ci lly bef e th soup Countess Mary well k w that mood ersel fwa n good frame

quired whether eryth g was go g w on

and w hed to nd the n ersat n Sh knew her rem ks sou ded unn tural but could n t refra n f m ki g m m e q est ns.

Tha ks to D iso th co ersat on t tabl soon becam ge eral d lively a d he d d n t talk to h husb nd Wh n th y l ft the tabl d went usu l to thank the old co nt ess Cou tess M ry held out her hand nd

kissed her husband and asked him why he was angry with her

You always have such strange fancies! I didn t even think of being angry he replied

But the word *always* seemed to her to imply Yes I am angry but I won t tell you why

Nicholas and his wife lived together so happily that even Sónya and the old countess who felt jealous and would have liked them to disagree could find nothing to reproach them with but even they had their moments of antagonism Occasionally and it was always just after they had been happiest together they suddenly had a feeling of estrangement and hostility which occurred most frequently during Countess Mary s pregnancies and this was such a time

Well *messieurs et mesdames* said Nicholas loudly and with apparent cheerfulness (it seemed to Countess Mary that he did it on purpose to vex her) I have been on my feet since six this morning Tomorrow I shall have to suffer so today I ll go and rest

And without a word to his wife he went to the little sitting room and lay down on the sofa

That s always the way thought Countess Mary He talks to everyone except me I see

I see that I am repulsive to him especially when I am in this condition She looked down at her expanded figure and in the glass at her pale sallow emaciated face in which her eyes now looked larger than ever

And everything annoyed her—Denisov s

[illegible]

, [illegible] excuse Countess Mary found for feeling irritated

Having sat awhile with her visitors without understanding anything of what they were saying she softly left the room and went to the nursery

The children were playing at going to Mos

[illegible]

band and his unreasonable crossness worried her She got up and walking on tiptoe with difficulty went to the small sitting room

Perhaps he is not asleep I ll have an explanation with him she said to herself Little Andrew her eldest boy imitating his mother followed her on tiptoe She did not notice him

she crossed her path everywhere) Andrew may wake him

Countess Mary looked round saw little Andrew following her felt that Sónya was right and for that very reason flushed and with evident difficulty refrained from [illegible]

harsh

Sónya [illegible]

ly and

another door From the room in which Nicho-

[illegible]

[illegible] listened to it she saw before her his smooth handsome forehead his mustache and his whole face as she had so often seen it in the stillness of the night when he slept Nicholas suddenly moved and cleared his throat And at that moment little Andrew shouted from outside the door Papa! Mamma s standing here! Countess Mary turned pale with fright and made signs to the boy He grew silent and quiet ensued for a moment terrible to Countess Mary She knew how

[illegible]

I can t get a moment s peace Mary is that you? Why did you bring him here?

I only came in to look and did not notice forgive me

Nicholas coughed and said no more Countess Mary moved away from the door and took the boy back to the nursery Five minutes later little black eyed three year-old Natásha her father s pet having learned from her brother that Papa was asleep and Mamma was in the sitting room ran to her father unobserved by her mother The dark eyed little girl boldly opened the creaking door went up to the sofa with energetic steps of her sturdy little legs and having examined the position of her father who was asleep with his back to her rose on tiptoe and kissed the hand which lay under his head Nicholas turned with a tender smile on his face

Natásha Natásha! came Countess Mary s frightened whisper from the door Papa wants to sleep

No Mamma he doesn t want to sleep said little Natásha with conviction He s laughing

Nicholas lowered his legs rose and took his daughter in his arms

Come in Mary he said to his wife

She went in and sat down by her husband

I did not notice him following me she

n d timidly I just looked n

H din h s l ttle g rl with one rm N ch las gla ced t h w fe and s e ng her gu lty ex press on put h ther rm rou d l er nd kissed her h r

M y l k ss M mma he a ked Natásha

N tásh sm led ba hfully

Aga she comm nded, po nt g w th a perempt ry gesture to the spot where N cho las had pl ced the k ss

I d t know why you th k I m cross h uest on he knew

to m

M ry don t talk n nsen Y u ought to be ashamed f y urs lf he said ga ly

It seems t be that y u can t l e me that I m so plain lways and now n this d

Oh h w absurd you re It s not be uty hat endears. t s l th t makes u e be uty It ly M l i d wom n f that k nd wh e lo ed f th beauty But do I l m w fe l d tl h r b t l d n t kn w h w t p t t. W th ut y u o wh n some thi comes between u l k th l eem lost d ca t d yth n Now d l l e my fin ger? I don t l t b ju t try t cut t off!

I m t l k th t my lf but I u d rst nd. So yo re t gry w th me?

Awf lly ry! h sa d sm l g nd get ti g up A d mooth g his ha h began to pa th room.

Do you kn w M ry wh t I e been th k g? h bega mmed t ly th nk ng l ud h w fe p es n n w th t they had m de t p

H d d n t k f he wa eady to l t n to h m. H d d t ca e A th ught had occurred t h m d so t belo ed h r l A d h t ld he f h te u n t persuade P rre to tay w th them t ll p g

Co ess M ry l t ed t ll he h d fin hed made som m k nd n her urn be an th k g l d. He th ghts wer bout th ch ld

Y u can ee the w m n n h l dy h sa d F h po t g l tl N tá h Y ep ch us w m n w th be g llog cal Here loo c. I say P p wants to l pl b t h says, N h l u h g A d h was right, sa d Co tess M ry w th h ppy m l

Yes, yes And N cholas, tak ng h s l ttl da ghter n his tro g h d l fted her h gh pl ced her on his shoulder held her by tl e legs and p ced the room w th her There was n express n of ca efree happ ness on the f ces of both father and daugl ter

But you know you may be unfa r You are too fond of th s one his wife wl ispered in French

Yes but what m I to do? I try not to show

At that m m nt tl ey heard the so nd of tl e doo pulley nd footsteps n the h ll nd ante room s if someo e h d arri ed

room O t of b eath he too u e ch ld qu kly from h shoulder a d pressed ded h m of

society nd d n ng the maiul s h s ld father h d danced *D el Co p r* with h s d u hte

It h t s he N chol ! sa d Countess Mary e-ente ng tl e room a few m nutes l t er N w our N tá h ha come to l fe You h uld h e e n h r ecstasy a d how he caught t for ha ng tayed away so l ng Well come lo g n w qu ck qu kl It t me you two were p ted she added look ng m l ngly at the l ttle g l who lu g to l e father

N ch l w t out h ld the ch ld by tl e h d

Countess M ry rem ed n the s tt groom

I h uld ne e ne r ha e bel e ed th t o e could be so h ppy sh wh p ed to her lf A sm le l t up her f ce b t t the same t me h ghed n l her deep eyes exp essed a qu t d ess tl gh h felt through her happ ess that tl ere n th so t of hap p ess u tt n ble n th l fe nd of wh cl he olunta ly thought at that stant.

CHAPTER X

N TÁ HA M ED n th e ly spri g of 8 3 d n 82 l eady h d thre d u l ters bes des f whom he h d l ged and wh m sh was n w nurs g She l d gr wn t te nd b der so th t it w d fficult t cog this bust m th ly w m the sl m l ely N tásha f f rme d ys. Her fea tures w e m e d fi ed nd h d a calm soft nd serene exp ess n In her fa there was

none of the ever glowing animation that had formerly burned there and constituted its charm Now her face and body were often all that one saw and her soul was not visible at all All that struck the eye was a strong hand some and fertile woman The old fire very rarely kindled in her face now That happened only when as was the case that day her hus band returned home or a sick child was conva lescent or when she and Countess Mary spoke of Prince Andrew (she never mentioned him to her husband who she imagined was jealous of Prince Andrew s memory) or on the rare occasions when something happened to induce her to sing a practice she had quite abandoned since her marriage At the rare moments when the old fire did kindle in her handsome fully developed body she was even more attractive than in former days

Since their marriage Natásha and her hus band had lived in Moscow in Petersburg on their estate near Moscow or with her mother that is to say in Nicholas house The young Countess Bezukhova was not often seen in so ciety and those who met her there were not pleased with her and found her neither at tractive nor amiable Not that Natásha liked solitude—she did not know whether she liked it or not she even thought that she did not—but with her pregnancies her confinements the nursing of her children and sharing every moment of her husband s life she had de mands on her time which could be satisfied only by renouncing society All who had known Natásha before her marriage wondered at the change in her as at something extraordinary Only the old countess with her maternal in stinct had realized that all Natásha s outbursts had been due to her need of children and a husband—as she herself had once exclaimed at Otrádnoe not so much in fun as in earnest—and her mother was now surprised at the sur prise expressed by those who had never under stood Natásha and she kept saying that she had always known that Natásha would make an exemplary wife and mother

Only she lets her love of her husband and [illegible]

[illegible] of her appearance than when she was unmar ried and should fascinate her husband as much as she did before he became her husband Na tásha on the contrary had at once abandoned all her witchery of which her singing had been an unusually powerful part She gave it up just because it was so powerfully seductive She took no pains with her manners or with delicacy of speech or with her toilet or to show herself to her husband in her most becomin attitudes or to avoid inconveniencing him by being too exacting She acted in contradic tion to all those rules She felt that the allure ments instinct had formerly taught her to use would now be merely ridiculous in the eyes of her husband to whom she had from the first moment given herself up entirely—that is with her whole soul leaving no corner of it hidden from him She felt that her unity with her hus band was not maintained by the poetic feel ings that had attracted him to her but by something else—indefinite but firm as the bond bet een her own body and soul

To fluff out her curls put on fashionable dresses and sing romantic songs to fascinate her husband would have seemed as strange as to adorn herself to attract herself To adorn herself for others might perhaps have been agreeable—she did not know—but she had no time at all for it The chief reason for devoting no time either to singing to dress or to choos ing her words was that she really had no time to spare for these things

We know that man has the faculty of becom ing completely absorbed in a subject however trivial it may be and that there is no subject so trivial that it will not grow to infinite propor tions if one s entire attent on is devoted to it

The subject which wholly engrossed Natá sha s attention was her family that is her hus band whom she had to keep so that he should belong entirely to her and to the home and the children whom she had to bear bring into the world nurse and bring up

And the deeper she penetrated not with her mind only but with her whole soul her whole being into the subject that absorbed her the larger did that subject grow and the weaker and more inadequate did her own pow ers appear so that she concentrated them whol ly on that one thing and yet was unable to ac complish all that she considered necessary

There were then as now con ersat ons and discussions about women s rights the relations of husband and wife and the r freedom and rights though these themes were not yet termed *quest ons* as they are now but these topics were not merely uninteresting to Na

this, she positi ely did not understa d them.

These q estio s, th n as n w existed only for those ho see nothi in marri e but the pleasure married people get from n another that is, onl the be nn gs of marriage nd not its whol gn ficance which l es n the f

wh ch
test
then
the
t f
fam-

il

If t purpose f d nner is to n ur sh the body man who eats two dinners at o ce may perhaps get more enjoyment but will not ttain his purpose for his tomach will n t d est h two dinners.

the
hus-
but
nd
hol

r husba ds tha re needed f
hat is, w fe on husband. N tá h need
ed husb d. A husba d wa gi en her nd h
h n t only saw o

N tásha d d n t care f soci ty n g but prized th m re the society of h rela tives—Countess Mary nd her brother her mother d Só ya. She valued th comp ny f those to whom h could com trid di sheveled from th nursery n her dress n gown end of

tha bab wa much be er

T ch an exte t had N tá h l herself go tha th wa sh dressed and d d her ha her ll-chosen words, d her jeal usy—she was jeal us f Só ya f th governess d f every woman pretty o pl —w re hab ual ub jects of jest to those bou her Th gen ral p was that P erre wa u der h w f humb wh ch was really true. From th ery firs days f th married l f N tá ha h d an nou ced her dema ds. P erre wa greatly sur p sed by hi w fe s view to him a perfectly no el one that every moment of l l fe be lo ged to her and to the fam ly H s w fe s de m nds ast n shed him but they also fl ttered h m nd he ubm tted to them.

n con ted n the f ct that

t
e
d

lea t underst nd but o

great mporta ce To m ke up for th s, at home P erre h d the ri ht t regulate his l fe and that of the whole f mily e actly a he chose At hom N tásh pl ced herself in the pos t n of a sla e to her husba d and the whole hous hold w nt on t ptoe when he w occup ed—that was read n or wr t n h s study P erre h d but to how p rt al ty for anyth g t get just wh t he l ked d ne always. He had only to express a w h and Natásha would jump up a d run to fulfill it.

The ntire h us h ld was go erned accord

d l cat wh n they h d to ch e tl e w nurse three times nd N tá h fell ll from de pa P erre o e day t ld her of Rousseau ew w th wh ch h qu t agreed th t t h e w t nurse unn tural a d h rmful. When h next b by was born desp te th oppos tion of her mother the doct rs d even of her hu ba d himself—who were ll gorously opposed to her nurs g her baby h rself a t then unheard of d con dered njur us— he n isted on havi g her o n way a d fter th t nursed ll h b b es herself

It very oft n h ppened that n m m t of rrita n hu band nd w f would h ve a d s pute, but l g fterwards P erre to his ur

prise and delight would find in his wife s ideas and actions the very thought against which she had argued but divested of everything superfluous that in the excitement of the dispute he had added when expressing his opinion

After seven years of marriage Pierre had the joyous and firm consciousness that he was not a bad man and he felt this because he saw himself reflected in his wife He felt the good and bad within himself inextricably mingled and overlapping But only what was really good in him was reflected in his wife all that

-

CHAPTER XI

Two months previously when Pierre was already staying with the Rostóvs he had received a letter from Prince Theodore asking him to come to Petersburg to confer on some important questions that were being discussed there by a society of which Pierre was one of the principal founders

On reading that letter (she always read her husband s letters) Natásha herself suggested that he should go to Petersburg though she would feel his absence very acutely She attributed immense importance to all her husband s intellectual and abstract interests though she did not understand them and she always dreaded being a hindrance to him in such matters To Pierre s timid look of inquiry after reading the letter she replied by asking him to go but to fix a definite date for his return He was given four weeks leave of absence

Ever since that leave of absence had expired more than a fortnight before Natásha had been in a constant state of alarm depression and irritability

Denísov now a general on the retired list and much dissatisfied with the present state of affairs had arrived during that fortnight He looked at Natásha with sorrow and surprise as at a bad likeness of a person once dear A dull dejected look random replies and talk about the nursery was all he saw and heard from his former enchantress

Natásha was sad and irritable all that time especially when her mother her brother Sónya or Countess Mary in their efforts to console her tried to excuse Pierre and suggested reasons for his delay in returning

It s all nonsense all rubbish—those d scus sions which lead to nothing and all those idiotic societies! Natásha declared of the very affairs in the immense importance of which she firmly believed

And she would go to the nursery to nurse Pétya her only boy No one else could tell her anything so comforting or so reasonable as this little three month-old creature when he lay at h ' -
movem
little no
you are jealous you would like to pay him out you are afraid—but here am I! And I am he and that was unanswerable It was more than true

During that fortnight of anxiety Natásha resorted to the baby for comfort so often and fussed over him so much that she overfed him and he fell ill She was terrified by his illness and yet that was just what she needed While attending to him she bore the anxiety about her husband more easily

She was nursing her boy when the sound of Pierre s sleigh was heard at the front door and the old nurse—knowing how to please her mistress—entered the room inaudibly but hurriedly and with a beaming face

Has he come? Natásha asked quickly in a whisper afraid to move lest she should rouse the doz ng baby

He s come ma am whispered the nurse

The blood rushed to Natásha s face and her feet involuntarily moved but she could not jump up and run out The baby again opened his eyes and looked at her You re here? he seemed to be saying and again lazily smacked his lips

Cautiously withdrawing her breast Natásha rocked him a little handed him to the nurse and went with rapid steps toward the door But at the door she stopped as if her conscience reproached her for hav ng in her joy left the child too soon and she glanced round The nurse with raised elbows was lifting the infant over the rail of his cot

Go ma am! Don t worry go! she whispered smiling with the kind of familiarity that grows up between a nurse and her mistress

Natásha ran with light footsteps to the anteroom

Denísov who had come out of the study in

f gured face

He s come! she exclaimed as she ran past,

ed Denisov felt that he too was d l ghted that Pierre whom h did not much care f had returned.

On reach ng the vestibule N tásha saw a tall figure in fur coat unwindi his scarf. It is It really h H has come he sa d to herself, and rushing at him embraced him, pressed his head t her breast, d th n pushed him ba k d eared t his ruddy happy f ce covered with hoarfrost. "Yes, t is he happy and co tented.

Then all at once sh remembered the t tures f suspense she had experienced f r the last f rtnight, nd the jo that had lit up her face vanished sh fr wned nd o erwhelmed Pierre with torre t f reproaches and angry words.

"Yes, t all very well f r you. You are pleased, you had good time. But what abo t me. Y u might t least ha e shown con sideration for the children. I am nurs n and my milk was poiled. Pétya was at death s door But you wer enjoying yourself. Yes, enjoying"

P erre knew he was not to blame, f r he could not have come soo er h knew th s out burst wa unseemly nd would blow over in minut or two bo ll h knew that he himself was bright d happy H wan ed to smile but dared not even th nk of d n so He mad p teous, frigh ened fa nd bent down.

I could n t, on my h n But how is Pét ya?"

All right now Come along! I wonder you re not ashamed If only you could see what I was lik without you, how I suffered

"You are well

Come, come! sh sa d, no lettin go of hi arm. And they wen their rooms.

When N cholas nd his wife cam to look for P erre h wa n th ursery holding his baby son, who was aga wake, on h huge right palm d da dl him. A bl ssful bri h smile was fixed n th baby broad fa with ts toothless pen mo th. Th t rm was long si o er d ther was bri ht, joyous un sh N tásha face as sh gazed enderly her husband and child.

A d ha you talked everythin well o er w th Prin Theodore she asked.

"Yes, cap tal!

"You see, he holds t up. (Sh meant th bab head.) B t h w h d d frighten m

You seen th p incess? I true sh in love with tha

"Yes, just fancy

At that moment N holas and Countess Mary came n P erre w th th baby on his hand stooped, kissed them, nd repl ed to their inquiries. But n spite of much that was interesti and had to be discussed the baby w th th l ttl cap on ts un teady head evidentl absorbed all his attention.

How sweet sa d Countess Mary look ng t and pl ng with the baby "Now N cholas he added, turn ng to her husband I can t understa d how t ou d n t see the charm of these del cious marvels.

I don t nd can t, repl ed N cholas, look ng coldly at the baby A lump of flesh. Come along P erre

And yet he such n affectionate father sa d Countess Mary *indicating her hu band,* but only fter they are vea old or so

"Now P erre nurses them splendidly " sa d N tasha. H sa s his hand is just made fo a baby seat. Just look

Onl not for this " P erre uddenly ex claimed with a laugh, and shifting the baby h ga e him to th nurse.

CHAPTER XII

AS IN EVERY large household, there were at Bald Hills several perfectly distinct wo lds wh ch merged nt one harmon ous whole though each r ta ned ts own peculiar t es and mad concess on to the others. E ery event, joyful or sad, that took pl ce that house was important to ll these wo lds, but ea h had ts own pec l reason to rejo e or grieve o er that occurrence ndepend ntl of th others.

F nstance P erre r turn was jo ful d important event nd they all felt t to be so.

The servants—th most reliable judges of their masters because they judge not by th ir con ersation o expressions f feel ng but by

would all ece e handsom p esents f the hol days.

Th children and th ir go ernesses were glad of P erre return because no o e else drew them int th social l fe f the household as h did. H al n could play o the cl vicho d that cossaise (hi onl p ece) to which as he sa d, all poss bl dances could be da ed, and they felt ur he had brought p esents f them all.

Young N cholas now slim l d of fif een,

delicate and intelligent with curly light brown hair and beautiful eyes was delighted because Uncle Pierre as he called him was the ol

c

c

v

N ... had brought him up had done her utmost to make him love her husband as she loved him and little Nicholas did love his uncle but loved him with just a shade of contempt Pierre however he adored He did not want to be an hussar or a Knight of St George like his uncle Nicholas he wanted to be learned wise and kind like Pierre In Pierre s presence his face always shone with pleasure and he flushed and was breathless when Pierre spoke to him He did not miss a single word he uttered and would afterwards with Dessalles or by himself recall and reconsider the meaning of everything Pierre had said Pierre s past life and his unhappiness prior to 1812 (of which young Nicholas had formed a vague poetic picture from some words he had overheard)

h ... d

... ticularly fond) and especially Pierre s friendship with the father whom Nicholas could not remember—all this made Pierre in his eyes a hero and a saint

From broken remarks about Natásha and his father from the emotion with which Pierre spoke of that dead father and from the careful reverent tenderness with which Natásha spoke of him the boy who was only just beginning to guess what love is derived the notion that his father had loved Natásha and when dying had left her to his friend But the father whom the boy did not remember appeared to him a divinity who could not be pictured and of whom he never thought without a swelling

...

ways helped to enliven and unite any company he was in

The grown up members of the family not to mention his wife were pleased to have back a friend whose presence made life run more smoothly and peacefully

The old ladies were pleased with the presents he brought them and especially that Natásha would now be herself again

Pierre felt the different outlooks of these various worlds and made haste to satisfy all their expectations

Though the most absent minded and forgetful of men Pierre with the aid of a list his wife drew up had now bought everything not forgetting his mother and brother in law s commissions nor the dress material for a present to Belóva nor toys for his wife s nephews In the early days of his marriage it had seemed strange to him that his wife should expect him not to forget to procure all the things he undertook to buy and he had been taken aback by her serious annoyance when on his first trip he forgot everything But in time he grew used to this demand Knowing that Natásha asked nothing for herself and gave him commissions for others only when he himself had offered to undertake them he now found an unexpected and childlike pleasure in this purchase of presents for everyone in the house and never forgot anything If he now incurred Natásha s censure it was only for buying too many and too expensive things To her other defects (as most people thought them but which to Pierre were qualities) of untidiness and neglect of herself she now added stinginess

From the time that Pierre began life as a family man on a footing entailing heavy expenditure he had noticed to his surprise that

... to improve

Life was cheaper because it was circumscribed that most expensive luxury the kind of life that can be changed at any moment was no longer his nor did he wish for it He felt that his way of life had now been settled once for all till death and that to change it was not in his power and so that way of life proved economical

With a merry smiling face Pierre was sorting his purchases

What do you think of this? said he unrolling a piece of stuff like a shopman

Natásha who was sitting opposite to him with her eldest daughter on her lap turned her sparkling eyes swiftly from her husband to the things he showed her

That s for Belóva? Excellent! She felt the quality of the material It was a ruble an arshin I suppose?

Pierre told her the price

Too dear! Natásha remarked How pleased the children will be and Mamma too! O

kind t..en just coming into fashion.

Adele tempted me" she kept on telling me to buy it, returned P erre.

"When am I to wear t?" and Natásha stuck in her coil f hair "When I take l ttle Másha into society Perhaps they will be fashi n ble ag..n by then. W ell let s go now

And collecti the presents they went first to the nursery and then to the old countess rooms.

The countess was s ttin with her compan on Belova, playin grand patience as usual, when Pierre and N tásha came nto the drawi g room with parcels under their arms.

The countess was now o er sixty was qu te gra and wore a cap w th a frill that sur rounded her face. Her f ce had hri eled, her upper lip had sunk n, and her eyes were dim.

After the deaths of her son nd husband in such rapid succession she f lt herself be ng ccidentally forgotten in thi wo ld and left without aim or object f r her existence. She te, drank, slept, or kept awake, but d d not l've Life gave her no new impressions. She wanted nothin from li! but tranquillity nd t..at tranquillity nly death could give her B t until death came she had to go on l ving, that is, to use her vital f ces. A peculiarity oc sees in very young children and very old peopl was particularly ev dent in her Her lif had no external ms—only a need to exercise her various functions d clin ti ns was p- parent. Sh h d t eat, leep th nk, peak, weep work, give vent t her ger and so on merely because she had tomach, a bra n muscles, nerves, and li er She d d these things not under any external impulse as people n the ful vigor of life d when beh nd the purpose for which they tri that f exercisin their functions remains unn ticed. Sh talked only because she phys cally needed to exercise her lu gs and lu s. She cried as child does, be- cause her nose had o be cleared, and so on. Wha for peopl their full go is an aim was f her evide tly merely p etext.

Thus th morn n —especially f h had ea en anythi g rich th day bef —she f lt a eed of bei an ry and w uld choose as th handiest pretext Belóva deafness.

Sh would begin to say somethin to her in low to from th ther end f th room.

It seems li tl warmer today my dear sh woud murmur

And when Belóva repl ed Oh yes, they come, h would mu er gr ly "O Lord! How stupid and deaf sh is!

Another pretext would be her snuff which would seem too dry or too damp r not rubbed fine enough. After these fits of irritab l ty her face would grow yellow and her ma ds knew by nf ll ble sympt ms when Beló a would aga n be deaf the snuff damp and the count ess f ce yellow Just as she needed to wo k off her pleen so she had sometimes t exercise her still-existing faculty of thinking—and the pre- text for that was game of patience. When she needed to cry the deceased count would be the pretext. When she wanted to be agitated, N cholas nd his health would be the pretext, and when she felt need to speak sp tefully the pretext would be Countess Mary When her ocal organs needed exercise, wh ch was usually toward seven o clock when she had had n after-dinner rest in a darkened room, the pretext would be the retelling of the same tories o er and o er again to the same audi- ence.

Th old l dy s conditi n was understood by the whole h usehold though n one ever poke of t, and they all made every possible effort to sati fy her needs. Only by rare gl nce ex changed w th sad smile between N cholas, P err Natásha, and Cou tess Mary was the common understand ng of her condition ex p essed.

But those glances expressed something m e they sa d that she had played her part in life, that what they now saw was not her whole self that we must all become like her nd that they were gl d to yield to her to re- tra n themsel es for thi once precious being formerly as full of l fe as themsel es but now so much to be p tied. *Meme to mori* sa d these glances.

Only th really heartless, th tup d ones of tha hous hold, and th l ttle children failed to understand this and vo ded her

CHAPTER XIII

W hen P erre d hi w f entered the drawing room th cou ess was n o e f her customary tates n wh ch she needed the mental exertion of playin p ti nce d so—th h by f rce of hab t sh greeted him w th th words sh al ways used when P erre o her son returned aft er n bse ce H h t m my dear high tim ! We were all weary of wa ting f you. Well thank God! and rece ed her prese ts with an ther customary remark It s not the gift

that moment when it diverted her attention from the unfinished game

She finished her game of patience and only then examined the presents They consisted of a box for cards of splendid workmanship a bright blue Sèvres tea cup with shepherdesses depicted on it and with a lid and a gold snuff box with the count s portrait on the lid which Pierre had had done by a miniaturist in Petersburg The countess had long wished for such a box but as she did not want to cry just then she glanced indifferently at the portrait and gave her attention chiefly to the box for cards

Thank you my dear you have cheered me up said she as she always did But best of all you have brought yourself back—for I never saw anything like it you ought to give your wife a scolding! What are we to do with her? She is like a mad woman when you are away Doesn t see anything doesn t remember anything she went on repeating her usual phrases Look Anna Timoféevna she added to her companion see what a box for cards my son has brought us!

Belóva admired the presents and was de

that they could not discuss before the old countess—not that anything was hidden from her but because she had dropped so far behindhand in many things that had they begun to converse in her presence they would have had to answer inopportune questions and to repeat what they had already told her many times that so and so was dead and so and so was married which she would again be unable to remember—yet they sat at tea round the samovar in the drawing room from habit and Pierre answered the countess questions as to whether Prince Vasíli had aged and whether Countess Mary Alexéevna had sent greetings and still thought of them and other matters that interested no one and to which she herself was indifferent

Conversation of this kind interesting to no one yet unavoidable continued all through teatime All the grown up members of the family were assembled near the round tea table at

next to him At tea a sat in their accustomed places Nicholas beside the stove at a small table where his tea was handed to him Mílka the old gray borzoi bitch (daughter of the first Milka) with a quite gray face and large black eyes that seemed more prominent than ever lay on the armchair beside him Denísov whose curly hair mustache and whiskers had turned half gray sat beside Countess Mary with his general s

understand He told her of external social

now for the most part scattered about the world and like herself were garnering the last ears of the harvests they had sown in earlier years But to the old countess those contemporaries of hers seemed to be the only serious and real society Natásha saw by Pierre s animation that his visit had been interesting and that he had much to tell them but dare not say it before the old countess Denísov not being a member of the family did not understand Pierre s caution and being as a malcontent much interested in what was occurring in Petersburg kept urging Pierre to tell them about what had happened in the Semenovsk regiment then about Arakchéev and then about the Bible

the health of Prince Iván and Countess Mary Alexéevna

Well and all this idiocy—Gossner and Tatáwinova? Denísov asked Is that weally still going on?

Going on? Pierre exclaimed Why more than ever! The Bible Society is the whole government now!

What is that *mon cher ami?* asked the countess who had finished her tea and evidently needed a pretext for being angry after her meal What are you saying about the government? I don t understand

Well you know *Maman* Nicholas interposed knowing how to translate things into his mother s language Prince Alexander Golítsyn has founded a society and in consequence has great influence they say

Arakchéev and Golítsyn incautiously remarked Pierre are now the whole government! And what a government! They see treason everywhere and are afraid of everything

Well and how is Prince Alexander to blame? He is a most estimable man I used to meet him at Mary Antónovna s said the

u tess a ffe ded t ne a d st ll more fended that th y ll rem ed s lent he ent o Nowaday e eryone find f ult A ospel Soci ty! W ll a d wh t harm s there that and she rose (e rybody else got up to) d w th severe e press n s led back her table n the s tt g room

The mela ch ly s lence th t foll wed was roke by th sou d of the ch ld e s vo ces nd la ghter from th next room. E d ntly ome jolly exciteme t wa go g on there

"F ished fi shed! l ttle N tásh s gleeful ell rose abo them all

P erre e cha ged gl ces w th Cou tess Mary nd N ch l (N tásh he ne r lost ught f) d sm led l app ly

"That del ghtf l m c sa l he

It mea s that A na M kíro has f nished her s ockin sa d Cou tess M ry

No Mon e ir Dessalles, I w ll ask my unt to let me stay repl ed N cholas Bolkó skt al so in a wh sper

M t te please let me stay sa l he go- n up to h s au t.

H s f ce e pres ed entreaty agitat on and ecst sy Countess M ry glanced at h m and turned to P erre

"Wl n you are here he can t tear himself way she sa d

I w ll bring h m to you d rectly Mon eur Dessalles. Good n ht! sa d P erre g ng h s hand to the Sw ss tutor and he turned to you g N chola w th a sm le You and I l a n t see a yth g of one another yet H l ke l e s grow ng Mary! l e ad led ad dress Countess M ry

Like my fathe ? sked the boy flush g cr mson a d look g up at Pierre w th bri ht ecst t c eyes.

l erre nodded n l went on w th what he

well. Wh n l as dr h re tod y the ne re I got t the h use the m e n ous I grew As I e tered th anteroom I heard Andrú l peal of l ghter d th t m nt th t ll wa well.

I k w I k th t feel sa d N cho- las. B t I m t t go there— hose stock gs to be rp e f me

P erre went t th h ld d the sh ut ing d laughter grew t ll l u ler

Come A M kíro n P erre s o ce

from Sónya—wh sat eary but resolute at tl e samo ar— d qu est ned l erre The curly he ded del cate boy sat with sh n n eyes un not ced n a corner st t ng every t w a d th n an l muttering someth ng to h self and e de tly expe enc ng a ne n l powe ful em t n he turned h curly head w th l is th n neck po ed by h s turn-d wn coll r to- ward the pl ce wl ere P erre sat

Th con ersat n turned on the contempo- rary goss p about thos n power n wl ch most people ee the ch ef s t est of l me

o ces filled the room. "Tw two! they h ted

Th mea t t o tocki gs, wh h by secret process k wn ly to hers lf Ann M kíro sed t k t t th sam t me the same redles d wh cl when they were ready he alwa t mph tly d ne o t of the oth er in the h ldren prese ce

CHAPTER XIV

Soon after th the h ldren cam n t say good ght. They k ssed ev ryo e the tut rs d governesses m le th bow d th y ent o t. O ly ou N ch l d h tut r rema ed. Dessalles wh pered to the boy to com d nstairs.

on wl t l erre told then

O e ed to l e to b Germ n— ne mu t l ce w th T tá o a d M dame Kw de e d wead Eckartsl u e nd tl e bw hw Oh tl y h uld let th t fine fello v Bo p e los —he d knock ll this non n e ut f th m F cy g th comm l of the Sen r weg t to a fell l ke that S hwatzl l cr ed

N h l th gh free from De lso read ness t f d I ult w tl ey tyth l th ught th t d u f the go ern e t was a very sc us d w gl ty m tt d the f ct th t

that moment when it diverted her attention from the unfinished game

She finished her game of patience and only then examined the presents They consisted of a box for cards of splendid workmanship a bright blue Sèvres tea cup with shepherdesses depicted on it and with a lid and a gold snuff box with the count s portrait on the lid which Pierre had had done by a miniaturist in Pe tersburg The countess had long wished for such a box but as she did not want to cry just then she glanced indifferently at the portrait and gave her attention chiefly to the box for cards

Thank you my dear you have cheered me up said she as she always did But best of all you have brought yourself back—for I never saw anything like it you ought to give your wife a scolding! What are we to do with her? She is like a mad woman when you are away Doesn t see anything doesn t remember any thing she went on repeating her usual phrases Look Anna Timoféevna she added to her companion see what a box for cards my son has brought us!

Belóva admired the presents and was delighted with her dress material

Though Pierre Natásha Nicholas Countess Mary and Denísov had much to talk about that they could not discuss before the old countess—not that anything was hidden from her but because she had dropped so far behindhand in many things that had they begun to converse in her presence they would have had to answer inopportune questions and to repeat what they had already told her many times that so and so was dead and so and so *was married which she would again be unable* to remember—yet they sat at tea round the samovar in the drawing room from habit and Pierre answered the countess quest ons as to whether Prince Vasíli had aged and whether Countess Mary Alexéevna had sent greetings and still thought of them and other matters that interested no one and to which she herself was indifferent

Conversation of this kind interesting to no one yet unavoidable continued all through teatime All the grown up members of the family were assembled near the round tea table at which Sónya presided beside the samovar The

ble where his tea was handed to him Mílka the old gray borzoi bitch (daughter of the first Mílka) with a quite gray face and large black eyes that seemed more prominent than ever lay on

understand He told her of external social

now for the most part scattered about the world and like herself were garnering the last ears of the harvests they had sown in earlier years But to the old countess those contemporaries of hers seemed to be the only serious and real society Natásha saw by Pierre s animation that his visit had been interesting and that he had much to tell them but dare not say it before the old countess Denísov not being a member of the family did not understand Pierre s caution and being as a malcontent much interested in what was occurring in Petersburg kept urging Pierre to tell them about what had happened in the Semënovsk regiment then about Arakchéev and then about the Bible Society Once or twice Pierre was carried away and began to speak of these things but Nicholas and Natásha always brought him back to the health of Prince Iván and Countess Mary Alexéevna

Well and all this idiocy—Gossner and Tatáwinova? Denísov asked Is that weally still going on?

Going on? Pierre exclaimed Why more *than ever! The Bible Society is the whole gov*ernment now!

What is that *mon cher ami!* asked the countess who had finished her tea and evidently needed a pretext for being angry after her meal What are you saying about the go ernment? I don t understand

Well you know *Maman* Nicholas interposed knowing how to translate things into his mother s language Prince Alexander Golitsyn has founded a society and in consequence has great influence they say

Arakchéev and Golítsyn incautiously remarked Pierre are now the whole government! And what a government! They see treason everywhere and are afraid of everythin

Well and how is Prince Alexander to blame? He is a most estimable man I used to meet him at Mary Antónovna s said the

cou tess in a offended to e a d till m re ended h t they all rema ned lent, sl e A

too) and w th a e tie e t her table n the s tt ng room.

The mel choly s l n e th t f ll wed was broken by the sou ds f the ch ldren s ces a d l ghter f m the next room. E dently some jolly excitem nt wa go g on tl ere

Fin hed fi hedl l ttle Natá h gleeful yell rose bo e them ll

P erre excha ged gla ces w th Cou tess Mary a d N ch l s (N tá h he ne er lost ht of) a d sm led l pp ly

"That del ght l m sa d he

It mea that A n M káro n h s fin hed

It is al ays the first th g th t tells n w ll Whe I as dr g he e tud y the neare I got t the h use the m e us I grew As I entered th anteroom I heard A dru l a s peals f la ghter d th t meant that ll was w ll.

I k w l k w that feel g sa d N ho- l B t l m t go there—tl ose stock ngs a to be urpri f m

P erre we t t th ch ld d the sh ut d l ghter grew st ll l ler

Come A M ká n P err o ce was heard say g com he t the m ddle f th room a d t thew rd l comm d O t o, d whe I say thre Y u t nd h re d y n my rms—w ll n wl On ewo! sa d P rr d a l nc f ll wed th ee — d pt usly b eatl les ery of h ld en s es fill d the room. Tw tw l they h t d

This me t t tocki gs wh ch by secret p ocess kn wn ly t h rself A M káro n used to k t t th sam t m th same eedles d wh ch wh th y we e dy he alway tr mph tly d ew o e ut f th oth er in th ch ldren p ese

CHAPTER XIV

Soon after this th h ld n cam n to s y good ght. They k ed every e the tut rs d g ernesses m de th bow d hey t out. O ly y u N ch las d h tut em d Dessalles whi pe d t th boy to om d *nstairs*

N M n e r Dessalles, I w ll a k my aunt to let me stay replied N i hola Bolkón ki al so in wl per

Ma ta te p lea e let me st y sa l he go- in up to h s au t

H s f ce exp essed entreaty agitat on and ecsta y Countess M ry gla ced t h m a d turned to P erre

"Wl en you are here he can t tear himself aw y he sa d.

I w ll l r ng h m to you l rectly M n ieur Dessalles. Good n htl sa d P erre g g his ha d t the Sw ss tut r a l h turned to y u g N chol s w th a sm le "You a d I h e t see nyth g of o e a tl er yet H w l ke l e grow ng Mary! he added ad d ess g Cou tes M ry

Like my f tl er? a ked the boy fl l g cr mson a d look up at P erre w tl br l t cest t c eyes.

P erre nodded a d went on w tl wh t he had been say ng when the ch ldr n had inter

samo a — nd quest ned l erre i l e t j hea led d l cate boy sat with h n eyes un n t d n a corner ta t every now a d tl d mutter ng someth g to h msell nd e d ntly exper e a new nd powe ful em t n he turned his curly l ead w th l is th neck expo ed by h s turn-d wn ollar to- ward the pl ce wl ere P erre sat.

The con ersat tur ed on the contempo- rary goss p abo t those in power in wl ich most people ee the ch f i terest of h me

p d d m d f tibl nd h rp omm ts n what l erre t ld them

On u ed t ha e to b G rm —n o e m t d ce w th T tdw o a a d M lame Kw de er nd wead Eck t h u en nd the bw thw n Oh they h ld let th t f e f llow B n p t lose—h d knock all th s n n e e out of th m! F cy g ng tl comm d f the Sem o weg me t to fell l ke that Schw tzl h cr ed.

N holas th h f ee f m Deniso ead ness t fi d f ult w th ev ryth l thought th t d cu f th go ernm nt wa ery er d we gl ty matte a d the f ct that

that moment when it diverted her attention from the unfinished game

She finished her game of patience and only then examined the presents They consisted of a box for cards of splendid workmanship a bright blue Sèvres tea cup with shepherdesses depicted on it and with a lid and a gold snuff box with the count s portrait on the lid which Pierre had had done by a miniaturist in Petersburg The countess had long wished for such a box but as she did not want to cry just then she glanced indifferently at the portrait and gave her attention chiefly to the box for cards

Thank you my dear you have cheered me up said she as she always did But best of all you have brought yourself back—for I never saw anything like it you ought to give your wife a scolding! What are we to do with her? She is like a mad woman when you are away Doesn t see anything doesn t remember anything she went on repeating her usual phrases Look Anna Timoféevna she added to her companion see what a box for cards my son has brought us!

Belóva admired the p…

[illegible]

…t they could not discuss before the old countess—not that anything was hidden from her but because she had dropped so far behindhand in many things that had they begun to converse in her presence they would have had to answer inopportune questions and to repeat what they had already told her many times that so and so was dead and so and so was married which she would again be unable to remember—yet they sat at tea round the samovar in the drawing room from habit and Pierre answered the countess questions as to whether Prince Vasíli had aged and whether Countess Mary Alexéevna had sent greetings and still thought of them and other matters that interested no one and to which she herself was indifferent

Conversation of this kind int…

[illegible]

…their accustomed places Nicholas beside the stove at a small table where his tea was handed to him Mílka the old gray borzoi bitch (daughter of the first Mílka) with a quite gray face and large black eyes that seemed more prom…

[illegible]

…tunic unbuttoned Pierre sat between his wife and the old countess He spoke of what he knew might interest the old lady and that she could understand He told her of external social events and of the people who had formed the circle of her contemporaries and had once been a real living and distinct group but who were now for the most part scattered about the world and like herself were garnering the last ears of the harvests they had sown in earlier years. But to the old countess those contemporaries of hers seemed to be the only serious and real society Natásha saw by Pierre s animation that his visit had been interesting and that he had much to tell them but dare not say it before the old countess Denísov not being a member of the family did not understand Pierre s caution and being as a malcontent much interested in what was occurring in Petersburg kept urging Pierre to tell them about what had happened in the Semënovsk regiment then about Arakchéev and then about the Bible Society Once or twice Pierre was carried away and began to speak of these things but Nicholas and Natásha always brought him back to the health of Prince Iván and Countess Mary Alexéevna

Well and all this idiocy—Gossner and Tatáwinova? Denísov asked Is that weally still going on?

Going on? Pierre exclaimed Why more than ever! The Bible Society is the whole government now!

What is that *mon cher ami?* asked the countess who had finished her tea and evidently needed a pretext for being angry after her meal What are you saying about the government? I don t understand

Well you know *Maman* Nicholas interposed knowing how to translate things into his mother s language Prince Alexander Golitsyn has founded a society and in consequence has great influence they say

Arakchéev and Golitsyn incautiously remarked Pierre are now the whole government! And what a government! They see treason everywhere and are afraid of everything

Well and how is Prince Alexander to blame? He is a most estimable man I used to meet him at Mary Antónovna s said the

w lfare d the general safety

"Yes b t it s a secret soc ety I the ef re a hostile nd harmf l o e wh ch can only cause harm.

Wh ? D d th Tugenbbu d wh ch sa ed Europe (they d d n t th n enture to s g gest that R ss h d sa ed Europe) lo a y harm The Tu e dbu d s all ce of vir t e t lo e n ut ll lp t s wh t Ch t p ached o the Cross.

N tá ha wh h l come n d r g th e n l b l It

because sh k ew th t t spra g t wh le so l) b t t was h m ted a d en thus t ppeara ce th t m de l e gl d.

The boy w th the th n neck t etcl g ut from th turn-d wn coll r—whom every ne had f rgott n—gazed t P rrew th even great er d mo e rapt us joy E ery w d of P rre burned to h hea t d w th a n

It ot t ll wh t you ppos b t is h t th Germ T ge lb nd wa d wh t l m propos g

N my fw endl Th T g lbu l s ll ewy ell f r the us g eat rs b t l d n t u d rsta d t d can t even pwon u e t, int rposed D lso l d nd esol te

I weet th t eve ryth g here w tt n d h w bl but the *T g db d I d n t* derst d. If we n t t fied l t us h e *b t of wn Th t ll w ght. J su ote h mm*

P erre m led N á h began t l ugh but N ch l k tted h b ws t ll m re nd be ga p g t Perr th t ler w op s pect f y gr h d th t ll the d g h pok f ed ly n h mag a t P err m ta ed th ntrary d hi m tal f cul were greate nd m e ful N ch l f lt h m ll corne ed. This m d h m t ll gr f he wa fully con ed t by son g b by som th g th n h m ger th n easo f the just e f h p

I w ll t lly u thi h sa d is g nd try

D lso m kes pl y w th th m l f th G rm w d *B d* d th R u rd b l *n* —Tr. l m y m

ing w th nervously tw tch ng f ngers to prop t orner l ut f ı lly al n lon

my duty t obey t g l fées or lered me t le l q dron g nst y u nd cut you d wn l l ul l n t l es t te an t sta t l ut l ul l lo t l you may ar gue bout th t as y u l ke

A wkwa d l ce f ll wed these w rds. her

ol ject The co rsat w tt l ger n th u pleasa tly host le t ne of N hol l t rema k.

Whe tl ey ll got t p to go in t t per l t tle N ch l Bolkón k we t p t P erre p le n l w th sh n n r l nt eyes.

Un le P erre y no If l p were al e w ul l he agree w th you l ked

A d P erre u ld nly re l ed wh t a spec l t depe dent complex l powerful p ocess of th ght nd feel ng mu t h e been go ng d t w

Yes l u id left th study

Th l d looked l wn an l eemed n w f r the first t me t t ew l the h d l e to the th gs on the t bl He flu l ed d went up to N h l s.

Un le f rg me l d d th t u ten t lly l e sa d po t g to the b k ns l the

b t u de u

A d l tly ppress ng h e t n with d ff lty he t rn d aw y f om the boy

Y u ght n t t h be n l e at ll he sa d.

CHAPTER XV

TH CO ERSATIO t upp r wa n t about pol t cs soc et es b t turned th bject N ch l l ked best— coll t n f 8 D lso tarted these nd P erre w p rt cu

A had been appointed Minister of This and *B* Governor General of That and that the Emperor had said so and so and this minister so and so seemed to him very important And so he thought it necessary to take an interest in these things and to question Pierre The questions put by these two kept the conversation from changing its ordinary character of gossip about the higher government circles

But Natásha knowing all her husband s ways and ideas saw that he had long been wishing but had been unable to divert the conversation to another channel and express his own deeply felt idea for the sake of which he had gone to Petersburg to consult with his new friend Prince Theodore and she helped him by asking how his affairs with Prince Theodore had gone

What was it about? asked Nicholas

Always the same thing said Pierre looking round at his listeners Everybody sees that things are going so badly that they cannot be allowed to go on so and that it is the duty of all decent men to counteract it as far as they can

What can decent men do? Nicholas inquired frowning slightly What can be done?

Why this

Come into my study said Nicholas

Natásha who had long expected to be fetched to nurse her baby now heard the nurse calling her and went to the nursery Countess Mary followed her The men went into the study and little Nicholas Bolkónski followed them unnoticed by his uncle and s t do n

c

Why this began Pierre not sitting down but pacing the room sometimes stopp

s abandoned himself altogether to this mysticism (Pierre could not tolerate mysticism in anyone now) He seeks only for peace and only these people *sans foi ni loi* can give it him—people who recklessly hack at and strangle everything—Magnítski Arakchéev and *tutti quanti* You will agree that if you did not look after your estates yourself but only wanted a quiet life the harsher your steward was the more readily your object might be attained he said to Nicholas

Well what does that lead up to? said Nicholas

Without fa th or law

Well everything is going to ruin! Robbery in the law courts in the army nothing but flogging drilling and Military Settlements the people are tortured enlightenment is suppressed All that is young and honest is crushed! Everyone sees that this cannot go on Everything is strained to such a degree that it will certainly break said Pierre

t ing in Petersburg

Told whom?

Well you know whom said Pierre with a meaning glance from under his brows Prince Theodore and all those To encourage culture and philanthropy is all very well of course The aim is excellent but in th

e his face darkened and he went up to the boy

Why are you here?

Why? Let him be said Pierr

u expecting th

must join hands as closely as they can to withstand the general calamity Everything that is young and strong is bein enticed away and depraved One is lured by women another by honors a third by ambition or mon

No indep

What I sa

let the *mo* e of not virtue alone but independence and action as well!

Nicholas who had left his nephew irritably pushed up an armchair sat down in it and listened to Pierre coughing discontentedly and frowning more and more

But action with what aim? he cried And what position will you adopt toward the government?

Why th

need

Not n

it sa true conservatives—a society of gentlemen in the full meaning of that word It is only to prevent some Pugachev or other from killing my children and yours and Arakchéev from send ng me off to some Mil tary Settlement We join hands only for the public

Pugache Cossack le der of a g eat peas nt r s g n C th er ne the Great s time —Tr.

th re—wh t ul l you l e sa l
were quite r ght and I t 1 l

d t es d cated t us) u
that th gh we m ght expose urs l es t r ks
m t t k h ld en
"Yes th t tl Tl t s ju t wh t I sa d to
ally
wn
ty
N ch
— d ll th u l
olas, wh h d gone nto my study d broke
ll my thi gs.
Ah, N ch las d y u kn w I am often
m

no
llh e ch ld e t
H ise n ta tly al e w th h tho ghts.
Well I do t th k y u eed repr ch
yo rself h ccount. All that the f dest
m ther co ld d f her so y u ha d ne
dared f h m and f cours I m gl d
f t. He fin l d f n l d! Th ev n g
h l te ed t P rre sort f tra d
fa cy—a we we e go g t pper I looked
d he had b ke everyth on my tabl to
b ts d he t ld m f t h mself t o cel I
ev knew hum to t ll n u truth A fi l d,
who heart

l d.

hum to ha mp
"W ll w t b f l g N t ummer I ll
take h m to P t rsb g sa d N ch las "Yes,
P err l ay wa d mer d al ays w ll
be he co t ued turn g t th talk n the
t d wh ch h d ev d tly d u bed h m
"Well wh t bus ess of m wh t goes n
th e—wh th Arakchéev is b d nd ll that?
What bus ess was t f m e wh I marr ed
d was so d ep n d b th t I wa threat ed
with p ison nd had m ther wh co ld t
u d rstand ? And then ther are you
and th ch ld n d ur ff rs I t f my
pleasur th t I am h f rm th
ffi f m m g t n ght? N but I know

I t work t comf rt my mother t rep y
y u a l not t lea e t l e ch l l en such begg rs
a I was.
Co tes M ry w ted to tell l m that man
does not l e by bread al e and th t he at
t cl ed too much import nce to tl ese m tter
But she knew she mu t not say tl l that t
l l be useles t d so Sl e only took l s

th k l d
"Y u kn w M ry today El M tr fán ch"
(th wa l o ersee) came back f m tl
Tambó est te nd t ld m they are alrea l
f th f rest

noe b l re long a d au cu
k l l n

l d
w th t
wo l l

somet mes a k her wh t h l u bee say
a d be exed f l e n t ed that he l d been
h k g bout someth else B t he h l to

I p ss o te tenderness. Bes des th teet
wh ch absorbed her ltog ther a l h n lered
h r from f ll w g the let l f her hu l d

e a ose from the d ffer ce in the r ages
b t he f lt hers lf t fil me towa d h m nd
p m ed her he rt t do better d t ac
compl h th mpos ble—n th l f to l e
h l usb d h ch ld e l ttle N chol d
all h ne gl bors as Christ lo ed mank d.

lar! — he
fan

A ... as having undressed in his study and given instructions to the steward who had been waiting for him went to the bedroom in his dressing gown where he found his wife still at her table writing

What are you writing Mary? Nicholas asked

Countess Mary blushed She was afraid that what she was writing would not be understood or approved by her husband

She had wanted to conceal what she was writing from him but at the same time was glad he had surprised her at it and that she would now have to tell him

A diary Nicholas she replied handing him a blue exercise book filled with her firm bold writing

A diary? Nicholas repeated with a shade of irony and he took up the book

It was in French

Decem er 4 Today hen Andr sha (her eldest boy) woke up l e did not sh to dres and Ma demoiselle Lou e ent for me He va naughty and ol st nate I tr e threats I it he only grew angr er Then I took the matter n hand I left h m alone and l egan with nurse s l elp to get tl e other cl ildren up telling him that I d l no him For a lo — then he jum and sol l ed s time It was ... ied him most was that he ha l grieved me After ar ls n the evening when I gav him his ticket he ga n began cry ng piteo sly an l kiss ng me One can lo any thing th him l y tenderness

What is a ticket? Nicholas inquired

I have begun giving the elder ones marks every evening showing how they have be haved

Nicholas looked into the radiant eyes that were gazing at him and continued to turn over the pages and read In the diary as set down everything in the children s lives that seemed noteworthy to their mother as showing their characters or suggesting general reflections on educational methods They were for the most part quite insignificant trifles but did not seem so to the mother or to the father either now that he read this diary about his children for the first time

Under the date 5 was entered

eating! I think that puni l ment by depriving chil dren of sw eets only develops the r greediness Must tell Nicholas this

Nicholas put down the book and looked at his wife The radiant eyes gazed at him ques tioningly would he approve or disapprove of her diary? There could be no doubt not only of his approval but also of his admiration for his wife

Perhaps it need not be done so pedantically thought Nicholas or even done at all but this untiring continual spiritual effort of which the sole aim was the children s moral welfare delighted him Had Nicholas been abl lyze h steady on his ... uer at her spirituality and at the lofty moral world almost beyond his reach in which she had her being

He wa ness rece her in the more tha ... such a soul not only be longed to him but was part of himself

I quite quite approve my dearest! said he with a significant look and after a short pause he added And I behaved badly today You weren t in the study We began disputing —Pierre and I—and I lost my temper But he is impossible such a child! I don t know what would become of him if Natásha didn t keep him in hand Have you any ! wen ...

A
sha t

Well then you know Nicholas went on growing hot at the mere recollection of their discussion he wanted to convince me that it is every honest man s duty to go against the government and that the oath of allegiance and duty I am sorry you weren t there They all fell on me—Denísov and Natásha Natásha is absurd How she rules over him! And yet there need only be a discussion and she has no words of her own but only repeats his sayings added Nicholas yielding to that irresistible incl nation which tempts us to judge those nearest and dearest to us He forgot that what he was saying about Natásha could have been applied word for word to h mself in relation to his w fe

Yes I have noticed that said Countess Mary

When I told him that duty and the oath were above everything he started proving goodness knows what! A p ty you were not

one banner—that of active virtue. Prince Ser gey is ... fellow and clever."

Natasha would have had no doubt as to the greatness of Pierre's idea, but one thing disconcerted her. "Can a man so important and necessary to society be also my husband? How did this happen?" She wished to express this doubt to him. "Now who could decide whether he is really cleverer than all the others?" she asked herself, and passed in review all those whom Pierre most respected. Judging by what he had said there was no one he had respected so highly as Platón Karatáev.

"Do you know what I am thinking about?" she asked. "About Platón Karatáev. Would he have approved of you now, do you think?"

Pierre was not at all surprised at this question. He understood his wife's line of thought.

"Platón Karatáev?" he repeated, and pondered, evidently sincerely trying to imagine Karatáev's opinion on the subject. "He would not have understood ... yet perhaps he would."

"I love you awfully!" Natasha suddenly said. "Awfully, awfully!"

"No, he would not have approved," said Pierre, after reflection. "What he would have approved of is our family life. He was always so anxious to find seemliness, happiness, and peace in everything, and I should have been proud to let him see us. There now—you talk of my absence, but you wouldn't believe what special feeling I have for you after separation."

"Yes, I should think ..." Natasha began.

"No, it's not that. I never leave off loving you. And one couldn't love more, but this is something special. ... Yes, of course—" he did not finish because their eyes meeting said the rest.

"What nonsense it is," Natasha suddenly exclaimed, "about honeymoons, and that the greatest happiness is at first! On the contrary, now is the best of all. If only you did not go away! Do you remember how we quarreled? And it was always my fault. Always mine. And what we quarreled about—I don't even remember!"

"Always about the same thing," said Pierre with a smile. "Jealo..."

"Don't say it! I can't bear it!" Natasha cried, and her eyes glittered coldly and vindictively. "Did you see her?" she added, after a pause.

"No, and if I had I shouldn't have recognized her."

They were silent for a while.

"Oh, do you know? While you were talking in the study I was looking at you," Natasha began, evidently anxious to disperse the cloud that had come over them. "You are as like him as two peas—like the boy." (She meant her little son.) "Oh, it's time me to go to him. ... milk's come. ... But I'm sorry to leave you."

They were silent for a few seconds. Then suddenly turning to one another at the same time they both began to speak. Pierre began with self-satisfaction and enthusiasm, Natasha with a quiet, happy smile. Having interrupted one another they both stopped to let the other continue.

"No. What did you say? Go on, go on."

"No, you go on, I was talking nonsense," said Natasha.

Pierre finished what he had begun. It was the sequel to his complacent reflections on h... ...

who ...

I only wished to say that ideas that have great results are always simple ones. My whole idea is that if ... people are united and constitute a power, then honest folk must do the same. Now that's simple enough.

"Yes."

"And what were you going to say?"

"I? Only nonsense."

"But all the same?"

"Oh nothing, only a trifle," said Natasha, smiling still more brightly. "I only wanted to tell you about Pétya: today nurse was coming to take him from me, and he laughed, ... his eyes, and clung to me. I'm sure he thought he was hiding. Awfully sweet! There, now he's crying. Well, good-by!" and she left the room.

Meanwhile downstairs in young Nicholas Bolkónski's bedroom a little lamp was burning as usual. (The boy was afraid of the dark and they could not cure him of it.) Dessalles slept propped up on four pillows and his Roman nose emitted sounds of rhythmic snoring. Little Nicholas, who had just waked up in a cold perspiration, sat up in bed and gazed before him with wide-open eyes. He had had a terrible dream. He had dreamed that he and Uncle Pierre, wearing helmets such as were depicted in his Plutarch, were leading a huge army. The army was made up of white slanting lines that filled the air like the cobwebs that float about in autumn and which Dessalles called *les fils de la Vierge*. In front was Glory, which was similar to those threads

Countess Mary s soul always strove toward the infinite the eternal and the absolute and could therefore never be at peace A stern expression of the lofty secret suffering of a soul burdened by the body appeared on her face Nicholas gazed at her O God! What will become of us if she dies as I always fear when her face is like that? thought he and placing himself before the icon he began to say his evening prayers.

CHAPTER XVI

NATÁSHA AND PIERRE left alone also began to talk as only a husband and wife can talk that is with extraordinary clearness and rapidity understanding and expressing each other s thoughts in ways contrary to all rules of logic without premises deductions or conclusions and in a quite peculiar way Natásha was so used to this kind of talk with her husband that for her it was the surest sign of something being wrong between them if Pierre followed a line of logical reasoning When I a h ing n l

v that they were on the verge of a quarrel

From the moment they were alone and Natásha came up to him with wide-open happy eyes and quickly seizing his head pressed it to her bosom saying Now you are all mine mine! You won t escape! —from that moment this conversation began contrary to all the laws of logic and contrary to them because quite different subjects were talked about at one and the same time This simultaneous discussion of many topics did not prevent a clear understanding but on the contrary was the surest sign that they fully understood one another

I

rea

ing dream so in this intercourse contrary to all laws of reason the words themselves were not consecutive and clear but only the feeling that prompted them

Natásha spoke to Pierre about her brother s life and doings of how she had suffered and lacked life during his own absence and of how she was fonder than ever of Mary and how Mary was in every way better than herself In saying this Natásha was sincere in acknowledging Mary s superiority but at t

I

u that now especially after having seen many women in Petersburg he should tell her so afresh

Pierre answering Natásha s words told her how intolerable it had been for him to meet ladies at dinners and balls in Petersburg

I have quite lost the knack of talking to ladies he said It was simply dull Besides I was very busy

Natásha looked intently at him and went on

Mary is so splendid she said How she understands children! It is as if she saw straight into their souls Yesterday for instance Mitya was naughty

How like his father he is Pierre interjected

Natásha knew why he mentioned Mitya s likeness to Nicholas the recollection of his dispute with his brother in law was unpleasant and he wanted to know what Natásha thought of it

Nicholas has the weakness of never agreeing with anything not generally accepted But I understand that you value what opens up a fresh line said she repeating words Pierre had once uttered

No the chief point is that to Nicholas ideas and discussions are an amusement—almost a pastime said Pierre For instance he is collecting a library and has made it a rule not to buy a new book till he has read what he had already bought—Sismondi and Rousseau and Montesquieu he added with a smile You know how much I he began to soften down what he had said but Natásha interrupted him to show that this was unnecessary

So you say ideas are an amusement to him

Yes and for me nothing else is serious All the time in Petersburg I saw everyone as in a dream When I am taken up by a thought all else is mere amusement

Ah I m so sorry I wasn t there when you met the children said Natásha Which was most delighted? Lisa I m sure

Yes Pierre replied and w

t

c s pulling his own way

But I succeeded in uniting them

my

say

may us

you ve the right and let the e be but

Second Epilogue

*

CHAPTER I

History is th l e of n t ns nd f human ty T seize d put to words, t describe d rectl t e lif f human ty even of a s le natio ppears impos ble.

Th cient h orians all empl yed one and the sam method to descr be and seize the pparentl lus e th l fe f people. They described the ct f d dual who ruled the peop d regarded the t t f those men as epresent th ct t f t who nati n.

The q est n bow did ind duals mak na t ns ct as they wished nd b what wa he will f these di ual themsel es gu ded the cients met by recogniz d wh ch subjected th na ons to th w ll f chosen man nd gu ded th w ll f tha chosen ma so to ccomplish ends that were p edes ned.

For th cien these ques o were sol ed b belief th direct participation f the De ty human airs.

Modern his ry theory rejects both these principles.

It would seem that ha rejected the be lef f the cients man ubjection t th Deity and in pred ermi ed m t ward which nations re led, modern h ry shou d stud no th manifestations f power b t he causes that prod t. But modern his ry has not don that. H theory jected th view h ld by th ancients, till f llows them in practi

Ins ead f men endowed with d n th ty and direct. u ded b th will f God, modern hist ry has gi n us ther heroes en dowed with extra rd nary perhuma capa ties, or simpl men f ery vari us k nds, f om monarchs to journalists, who lead th masses. Instead f th f rmer di in ly ppo n ed im f th Jewish, Greek, or Roman nat ns, which ancient histo ians ewarded as rep esent th progress f human modern history has postula ed ts wn ims—th w lfare of th F ench, German, or En lish people, in ts h ghest bstract on the welfa e and l t n of human t in general by wh h u u ll mea t that of the peo les occu a small northwes erly port on of a large co t ent.

Modern h ry ha rejected the bel ef of t e ent w th ut repl c g them b new co ept o d the log c of th tuat l ol l wed the h t ians, after they had appa entl rejected th d ine author t of th k n nd th f te f the cients, to rea h the sam con lusion by nother road that is, to recognize ( ) nation gu ded by d dual m n d ( ) th ex tence of known a m to wh h these nation and human ty t large nd

At he ba is of the wo ks of all th modern h t r n from G bbon to Buckle desp te th seemi d sa ements nd t e appar ent no lt of th r outlooks, lie those two old, una o dabl assumpti ns.

I th first pla e the h t rian descr bes th e ct ty f d duals who n his op on ha directed huma t (hist ria c ders o l monarchs, general and m n ers be ch men wh le nother l cs l —

o French realm to nother t l bert e jus y d rta k d f ct limit n of a small corner f th wo ld called Europe

I 9 fermen arises n Pa is t gr ws, p eads, d is exp essed by mo em t of peoples from west t east. Several t mes t mo es eastward d collides with u mo eme t f om th east westward. In t reaches ts extrem l m t, Moscow a d th n w th emarkabl symmetry counterm e ment occurs from east t west, attracti t as th first mo em t had done, the n tio f midd, Europe. Th untermo ement ea hes th tarti point f the first mo ement in the

but rather thicker He and Pierre were borne along lightly and joyously nearer and nearer

[illegible] Uncle Nicholas stood before them in a stern and threatening attitude

Have you done this? he said pointing to some broken sealing wax and pens I loved you but I have orders from Arakchéev and will kill the first of you who moves forward Little Nicholas turned to look at Pierre but Pierre was no longer there In his place was his father—Prince Andrew—and his father had neither shape nor form but he existed and when little Nicholas perceived him he grew faint with love he felt himself powerless limp and formless His father caressed and pitied him But Uncle Nicholas came nearer and nearer to them Terror seized young Nicholas and he awoke

My father! he thought (Though there were two good portraits of Prince Andrew in the house Nicholas never imagined him in human form) My father has been with me and caressed me He approved of me and of Uncle Pierre Whatever he may tell me I will do it Mucius Scaevola burned his hand Why should not the same sort of thing happen to me? I know they want me to learn And I will learn But someday I shall have finished learning and then I will do something I only pray God that something may happen to me such as happened to Plutarch s men and I will act as they did I will do better Everyone shall know me love me and be delighted with me! And suddenly his bosom heaved with sobs and he began to cry

Are you ill? he heard Dessalles voice asking

No answered Nicholas and lay back on his pillow

He is good and kind and I am fond of him! he thought of Dessalles But Uncle Pierre! Oh what a wonderful man he is! And my father? Oh Father Father! Yes I will do something with which even *he* would be satisfied

Second Epılogue

*

CHAPTER I

H st ay is the l fe of at on nd of hum n ty T a d p t i t rds to de cr be d re tly the l f f h m n ty r e en f a single n t app mpo s ble

The a t h t n all empl y d one d the me method t de cr be d e ze t tl elus e—the l fe f pe ple

h le t

De ty f m ff rs

Modern h t ry th ry r ject b th tl se p ple

It w ld m th t h g je ted th be l f f th ct t m bj t n t the D ty d p d t rm ed m t w d h h e l d mod h t ry h uld t dy t tl e m fest t f pow b t the e tl t p d e t But mode h tory h t d th H g th ry r j t d th w held by th ts t t ll f ll ws th m pra

I ead f m *d w d w h d tl* y d d tly gu d d by th w ll f G d mod l t ry l as g th her d d th tra d ry p l m p t es mply m f ry k d f m m f t j l t wh l d th m sses l d f l e f m r d ly ppo t d m f the J w h G k R m wl l e th ga d d p ese t g the p ogress f h m ty m d l s ry ha post l t d wn m —tl e w ll e f the F h Germ E f h pe pl o n ts

h ghest ab t act on the w lfa e and c il n t on of h man ty g neral by wh ch s t su ally me nt th t f the peoples occı p) g a sm ll no tl we t rly port n of a larg con t ent

M dern h t ry h s rejected the bel efs of t w th ut repla g them by a new

s m lus on by nother road tı t o re og ( ) *nat ons gu ded by* nd du l men nd (2) the ex st n e of a known a m to wh h these *n t n a d human ty at l ge t nd g*

At tl e b s of the w ks of ll the modern l t r f m G bb n to Buckle desp te the r eem g d greements and th app r nt n lty f th r outlooks l e those two old

u

ly m n chs g e ls nd m n ter as be ng uch men wh le n th clude al tors lea n d men eformers phil phe d p et) Sec dly t um d th t the g l t w d wl ch l um n ty ıs b g led s kn wn to the h st to e f tl tl g l the gre t e f the R man Sp l F e h realm t the t l be ty e j l ty d ta n k d f l t n f a mall *r f tl e w ld call d Eu pe*

In 89 ferment es n P t g p e ds nd e p sed by m em t f p pl f om we t to e t. Several t me t e tw d nd ll des w th a t m em t f m tl e e t westw rd In 8 2 t e h ts trem l m t M c w d tl w th em k bl symm try a unterm m t rs f om t to west tt act g t t th fi t m me t h d d e the t f m ddl E pe Th term m tre cl s th sta t g p nt f th f t m eme t in the

west—Paris—and subsides.

During that twenty-year period an immense number of fields were left untilled, houses were burned, trade changed its direction, millions of men migrated, were impoverished, or were enriched, and millions of Christian men professing the law of love of their fellows slew one another.

What does all this mean? Why did it happen? What made those people burn houses and slay their fellow men? What were the causes of these events? What force made men act so? These are the instinctive, plain, and most legitimate questions humanity asks itself when it encounters the monuments and tradition of that period.

For a reply to these questions the common sense of mankind turns to the science of history, whose aim is to enable nations and humanity to know themselves.

If history had retained the conception of the ancients it would have said that God, to reward or punish his people, gave Napoleon power and directed his will to the fulfillment of the divine ends, and that reply would have been clear and complete. One might believe or disbelieve in the divine significance of Napoleon, but for anyone believing in it there would have been nothing unintelligible in the history of that period, nor would there have been any contradictions.

But modern history cannot give that reply. Science does not admit the conception of the ancients as to the direct participation of the Deity in human affairs, and therefore history ought to give other answers.

Modern history replying to these questions says: you want to know what this movement means, what caused it, and what force produced these events? Then listen:

Louis XIV was a very proud and self-confident man; he had such and such mistresses and such and such ministers and he ruled France badly. His descendants were weak men and they too ruled France badly. And they had such and such favorites and such and such mistresses. Moreover, certain men wrote some books at that time. At the end of the eighteenth century there were a couple of dozen men in Paris who began to talk about all men being free and equal. This caused

France a man of genius—Napoleon. He conquered everybody everywhere—that is, he killed many people because he was a great genius. And for some reason he went to kill Africans, and killed them so well and was so cunning and wise that when he returned to France he ordered everybody to obey him, and they all obeyed him. Having become an Emperor he again went out to kill people in Italy, Austria, and Prussia. And there too he killed a great many. In Russia there was an Emperor, Alexander, who decided to restore order in Europe and therefore fought against Napoleon. In 1807 he suddenly made friends with him, but in 1811 they again quarreled and again began killing many people. Napoleon led six hundred thousand men into Russia and captured Moscow; then he suddenly ran away from Moscow, and the Emperor Alexander, helped by the advice of Stein and others, united Europe to arm against the disturber of its peace. All Napoleon's allies suddenly became his enemies and their forces advanced against the fresh forces he raised. The Allies defeated Napoleon, entered Paris, forced Napoleon to abdicate, and sent him to the island of Elba, not depriving him of the title of Emperor and showing him every respect, though five years before and one year later they all regarded him as an outlaw and a brigand. Then Louis XVIII, who till then had been the laughingstock both of the French and the Allies, began to reign. And Napoleon, shedding tears before his Old Guards, renounced the throne and went into exile. Then the skillful statesmen and diplomatists (especially Talleyrand, who managed to sit down in a particular chair before anyone else and thereby extended the frontiers of France) talked in Vienna and by these conversations made the nations happy or unhappy. Suddenly the diplomatists and monarchs nearly quarreled and were on the point of again ordering their armies to kill one another, but just then Napoleon arrived in France with a battalion, and the French, who had been hating him, immediately all submitted to him. But the Allied monarchs were angry at this and went to fight the French once more. And they defeated the genius Napoleon and, suddenly recognizing him as a brigand, sent him to the island of St. Helena. And the exile, separated from the beloved France so dear to his heart, died a lingering death on that rock and bequeathed his great deeds to posterity. But in Europe a reaction occurred and the sovereigns once again all began to oppress their subjects.

It would be a mistake to think that this is

~ nts. of the rom es f his e of that period.

The tran ess and b urdity of these re plies arise fr m th f ct th t modern history like deaf man nswers quest ns no one has asked.

If the purpose f h tory be to g e descr p tion f th mo ement f human ty d of th peoples, the first quest n—n the bse e of reply t which ll the est w ll be incom p hens'ble— what is th power that mo es peoples T this, modern hist ry l bor usly ep es ther that \ poleon was great gen us or that Louis XIV was ery p ud r that erta n writers wrote certa n books

All th t may be so nd mank nd is eady to ree w th t, but t is n t what was asked. All th t w uld be nterest g f we recognized d e power b sed n tself nd lways con sistently direct ts n tions through N po leo Lou s-es, nd writers b t we do n t knowledge ch a power and theref be f re peak bout N poleon Louis-es d thors, w ught t be sh wn the connecti n isu between these men nd th m ement f th n u ns.

If tead f di power some other force has ppeared, t sh ld be explained n hat th ew f con sts f th whol n terest f history l es p ecisely n that f ce.

His ry seems to assume that this f is self-evide and k wn to every ne But in p f every desire to regard t as kn wn readi m y his cal w ks cann t h lp doubti wl ether th ew f rc so vari usl ders ood by tl hist ans themsel es, is eall q t w ll kn wn to everybody

CHAPTER II

W orce moves th n u ns

B graph cal hi rian d historians of separa e u understand thi f rce power nheren n heroes l rulers. In th ir rra events occur sol l by the w ll f a N poleo d Alexa der o general of the persons they describe. The n wers gi en by this ki d l h orian to th questi n f ha f causes events to happen ar satis factory ly as lo g there is but his torian to each event. As soon as historians of d ffe ent n t on l ties and tendencies beg n to describe the s me event, the repl es they gi e mmediately lose ll mean ng, for th s for e s understood by them ll not only d ffere tly but often in qu te contrad ct ry ways O e hist r an says that an event was produced by Napoleon s power an ther that it was p o d ced by Alexander's a th rd that it was due to the power of some other person Bes des this hist rians of that kind contradict each other even n their tatement as to the force on wh ch the autho ty of some p rt cular per n was based. Thiers Bon partist, says that N poleon s power wa based n his v rtu nd ge us. Lanfrey a Republ ca says it was based on hi trickery and deception of the people So the historians of this class, by mutu

s

s

tual question.

Writers of un ersal history who deal w th all the n t on seem t recognize how erro- eous is the peci list histori n view of the f r e wh ch p oduces events. They do n t ecogn e t as power inh ent n heroes nd

t n n looks f r the cause of the e ent t t th power f one man b t n the nteracti n of many persons connected w th the ent.

A cording to thi v ew the power of hist ri cal personages rep ese ted as the product of ma y f rces can n lo er t would seem, be rega ded as f ce that tself p oduces events Yet in most cases un ersal historians till em pl y th co ception of power as a fo e th t tself p od ces events nd treat t as their cause. In th ir expos ti n hist ri char cter first the product of his time, a d hi power nly th esultant of various f ces a d then his power is tself f produ g events. Gerv us Schlosser nd others f n tance t one tim pro N poleon t be prod ct of the Rev l u n, of th dea of '89 and so f rth nd t another pl nly say that th campaign of 8 2 nd other thi gs they do n t like were simp y the p od ct of N poleon misdirected will nd that th ery deas of 89 were arrested n the dev lop- ment by N poleon cap ce. Th deas of th Rev lution d th general temper f the e p od ced N poleo s pow B t N poleon s power upp essed th deas f the Revol u n and th general temper of the ge.

This curious contradiction is not accidental Not only does it occur at every step but the universal historians accounts are all made up of a chain of such contradictions This contradiction occurs because after entering the field of analysis the universal historians stop half way

To find component forces equal to the composite or resultant force the sum of the components must equal the resultant This condition is never observed by the universal historians and so to explain the resultant forces they are obliged to admit in addition to the insufficient components another unexplained force affecting the resultant action

Specialist historians describing the campaign of 1813 or the restoration of the Bourbons plainly assert that these events were produced by the will of Alexander But the universal historian Gervinus refuting this opinion of the specialist historian tries to prove that the campaign of 1813 and the restoration of the Bourbons were due to other things beside Alexander s will—such as the activity of Stein Metternich Madame de Stael Talleyrand Fichte Chateaubriand and others The historian evidently decomposes Alexander s power into the components Talleyrand Chateaubriand and the rest—but the sum of the components that is the interactions of Chateaubriand Talleyrand Madame de Stael and the others evidently does not equal the resultant namely the phenomenon of millions of Frenchmen submitting to the Bourbons That Chateaubriand Madame de Stael and others spoke certain words to one another only affected their mutual relations but does not account for the submission of millions And therefore to explain how from these relations of theirs the submission of millions of people resulted —that is how component forces equal to one *A* gave a resultant equal to a thousand times *A* —the historian is again obliged to fall back on power—the force he had denied—and to recognize it as the resultant of the forces that is he has to admit an unexplained force acting on the resultant And that is just what the universal historians do and consequently they not only contradict the specialist historians but contradict themselves

Peasants having no clear idea of the cause of rain say according to whether they want rain or fine weather The wind has blown the clouds away or The wind has brought up the clouds And in the same way the universal historians sometimes when it pleases them and fits in with their theory say that power is the result of events and sometimes when they want to prove something else say that power produces events

A third class of historians—the so-called historians of culture—following the path laid down by the universal historians who sometimes accept writers and ladies as forces producing events—again take that force to be something quite different They see it in what is called culture—in mental activity

The historians of culture are quite consistent in regard to their progenitors the writers of universal histories for if historical events may be explained by the fact that certain persons treated one another in such and such ways why not explain them by the fact that such and such people wrote such and such books? Of the immense number of [illegible]

[illegible] y that this indication is the cause But despite their endeavors to prove that the cause of events lies in intellectual activity only by a great stretch can one admit that there is any connection between intellectual activity and the movement of peoples and in no case can one admit that intellectual activity controls people s actions for that view is not confirmed by such facts as the very cruel murders of the French Revolution resulting from the doctrine of the equality of man or the very cruel wars and executions resulting from the preaching of love

But even admitting as correct all the cunningly devised arguments with which these histories are filled—admitting that nations are governed by some undefined force called an *idea*—history s essential question still remains unanswered and to the former power of monarchs and to the influence of advisers and other people introduced by the universal historians another newer force—the *idea*—is added the connection of which with the masses needs explanation It is possible to understand that Napoleon had power and so events occurred with some effort one may even conceive that Napoleon together with other influences was the cause of an event but how a book *Le Contrat social* had the effect of making Frenchmen begin to drown one another cannot be understood without an explanation of the causal nexus of this new force with the event

Undoubtedly some relation exists between all who live contemporaneously and so it is

poss'b e to f. d some co nection between the n-ellectual ctivit of m n and their histori- cal movements, just as such connecti n may be found between t.. mo ements of human- ty a.d commerce, handicraft, gardenin or anyt... else you p ease. But wh ntellectual ctivity is co .s dered b th hi t rian of cul- ture to be the cause or expres on f th whole his orical movement hard to understand. Onl th f lowi co .s derati ns can ha e led t.. historian to such conclus n ( ) t.a h. ory is writt n b learned men and so t is na ural and greeabl f r them to think t.at t.e ctivit of th ir class supplies the bas of t.. mo em t of all humanity just as similar bel f is n tural and greeabl to traders, ricult.rists, d so diers (if they do not express t. that is merel because traders and soldiers d n t writ hist ry) and ( ) that spiritual ctivity nl ht nment civilization, cu ture, i.eas, ar all n tinct, indefin con- ceptions under whose banner t very easy to use words ha ing ull less defin e meaning, a.d which can t.eref re be eadily ntroduced in an theory

B not t speak of th trins c quality of his ries f th. kind (which ma poss bl even be f use to someo f somethin.) the his- t ries of culture, to which all general hist ries tend mo and more to ppro ima are si n can from th fact tha af er seri usl and mir el examinin various religious, philo- soph c. and pol tical doctri es as causes f events soo as t.ey have to describe ual hist ri even such as th campai n f S f m .an they voluntaril describe t as resulti from exercise of power—and sa plain. that tha campaign was th resul of N po eon will. Speaking so, th hist rians of cul ure in untaril trad ct t.emselves, nd show t.at th ew f rc t.ey ha e devised d es not oun f wha happens n hist ry d tha his ri ca l be explained b n- troducin power which t.ey pparently do not recognize.

CHAPTER III

A OCOMOTIVE mo n Someo a.ks "Wha moves A peasa sa t.. devil mo es t. Another man sa th locomoti mo es be- se is heel go ro d. A third asserts that t.e cause f its mo em Lies in th smok h ch the w nd carries wa

Th pe sa irref ble. H has devised ou et expl na n. To f him some- would ha pro him t.at there is no devil or another peasant would ha e to expa n to him that t is not the devil but a German, who mo es the locomoti e. Only then as result of the contradiction will they see that they are both wrong But the man who says that the mo ement of the wheels i th cause efutes himself for having once begun to nalyze h ought to go on d expl n further wh the wheel go round and t ll he has reached the ul mate cause of the mo e ment of the locomo n the pressure of steam n the bo ler he has no right to st p n his search f th cause. Th man who expl ns the mo ement of the locomoti e b th moke that carried back has noticed that the wheel do not supply an explanation and ha taken the first n that occurs to him and n his turn has offered that as an expl nation.

Th nly conception that can explain the mo ement of th locomotive is that of f rce comm nsurate w th the mo em nt observed.

The only concept n that can expla n the mo em nt of th peoples is that of some force commen urat w th the whole mo em nt of the peoples.

Yet to upply this conception var ous h s- torian take forces of di erent kinds, all of which are incommensurate w th the mo ement observed. Som see it as f rce directl n..er ent in heroes, the peasant sees the devil n th locomoti e others as force resu..in from se eral ot..er f rces, like the mo em nt f th wheels others again as an nte..ectual influence lik th .mok that is blown way

So lo g hist ries are written of separate indi iduals, whether Caesars, Alexanders, Luthers, o Voltaires, and n t th histories of all bsolu ely ll thos. who take part in an ev nt, t is quite imposs'bl to describe the mo ement of human ty w thout th concep- tion f force compelling m n to direct th ir ctivity t ward certai.n end. A d th onl uch co cepti n known to historians that of power

This concept. n is the n handl b means f which t.. ma erial of his ry as t present expounded, can be dealt with. d ho e who breaks tha handl o.., as Buckl did, w th u find. som o.her m thod of treat h rical ma erial, merel depri es him- .f f th o e poss b way of deal w th t. Th ecessity of th conception of power as n explan ti n f hist rical events is best dem- nstrated b t.. uni ersal historians and his- ri rs of culture t. emse. es f they pro- fessedl ject tha o ep .on b inev .ably

have recourse to it at every step

In dealing with humanity s inquiry the science of history up to now is like money in circulation—paper money and coin The biographies and special national histories are like paper money They can be used and can circulate and fulfill their purpose without

them You need only [illegible]

will of heroes produces events and such histories as Thiers will be interesting and instructive and may perhaps even possess a tinge of poetry But just as doubts of the real value of paper money arise either because being easy to make too much of it gets made or because people try to exchange it for gold so also doubts concerning the real value of such histories arise either because too many of them are written or because in his simplicity of heart someone inquires by what force did Napoleon do this?—that is wants to exchange *the current paper money for the real gold of actual comprehension*

The *writers of universal histories and of the* history of culture are like people who recognizing the defects of paper money decide to substitute for it money made of metal that has not the specific gravity of gold It may indeed make jingling coin but will do no more than that Paper money may deceive the ignorant but nobody is deceived by tokens of base metal that have no value but merely jingle As gold is gold only if it is serviceable not merely for exchange but also for use so universal historians will be valuable only when they can reply to *history s essential question what is power? The universal historians give contradictory replies to that question* while the historians of culture evade it and answer something quite different And as counters of imitation gold can be used only among a group of people who agree to accept them as gold or among those who do not know the nature of gold so universal historians and historians of culture not answering humanity s essential question serve a currency for some purposes of their own only in universities and among *the mass of readers who have* a taste for *what they call serious reading*

CHAPTER IV

Having abandoned the concept on of the ancients as to the divine subjection of the will of a nation to some chosen man and the subjection of that man s will to the Deity history cannot without contradictions take a single step till it has chosen one of two things either a return to the former belief in the direct intervention of the Deity in human affairs or a definite explanation of the meaning of the force producing historical events and termed power

A return to the first is impossible the belief has been destroyed and so it is essential to explain what is meant by power

Napoleon ordered an army to be raised and go to war We are so accustomed to that idea and have become so used to it that the question why did six hundred thousand men go to fight when Napoleon uttered certain words seems to us senseless He had the power and so what he ordered was done

This reply is quite satisfactory if we believe that the power was given him by God But as soon as we do not admit that it becomes essential to determine what is this power of one man over others

It cannot *be the direct* physical power of a *strong man over a weak one—a domination based on the application or threat of physical* force like *the power of* Hercules *nor can it* be based on the effect of moral force as in their simplicity some historians think who say that the leading figures in history are heroes that is men gifted with a special strength of soul and mind called genius This power cannot be based on the predominance of moral strength for not to mention heroes such as Napoleon about whose moral qualities opinions differ widely history shows us that neither a Louis XI nor a Metternich who ruled over *millions of people had any particular moral qualities but on the contrary were generally morally weaker than any of the millions they* ruled over

If the source of power lies neither in the physical nor in the moral qualities of him who possesses it it must evidently be looked for elsewhere—in the relation to the people of the man who wields the power

And that is how power is understood by the science of jurisprudence *that exchange bank of history* which *offers to exchange history s understanding of power for* true *gold*

Power is the collective will of the people transferred by expressed or tacit consent to their chosen rulers

In the domain of jurisprudence which consists of discussions of how a state and power might be arranged were it possible for all that to be arranged it is *all very clear* but when

ppl ed to historv that d f'n tion of power eeds explanat

The scie c of jurisprudence regards the state nd po er a the ncients regarded f re—namel as someth ng e ist n bsol tely But f hist ry the state a d power re me ely ph om just as f modern phys cs fire is not an elem t but a pl n men n

From this f d m ntal d fference between the ew h ld by hist ry and that held by jurisprudence t f ll s th t ju prud nce can sh uld m j es- of

po er tum t can n we n tt g

If po er be the collect w ll of the people tra ferred t the rul was Pugach rep-rese tatu f th w ll of the people? If n t then hy wa N poleon I Why wa N poleon III crim nal wl en h was t ken p soner t Boulogne d why l er n wer th se criminals wh m he rrested?

Do p lace r lut n — *n which sometimes* nly t o or thr peopl take part—transfer the w ll f the people t n w ruler In nter nat nal l s, is the w ll of the peopl lso tra sf rred t th c q ero W the w ll f the Co federatu n f tl e Rh n tra f rred

t fi ht th Austri

T these q estu th ee nswers are pos-sibl

Either to ssum ( ) th t th w ll f th peopl is l ays co ditu lly tran ferred to th ruler rul rs they h e chos n nd that th ef every emergence f nev pow er erv truggl a t th power n p- po ted, sh uld be bsolut ly egarded n fri em t f the eal po er- o (2) th t h w ll f th peopl tra ferred t the lers co d t llv d defi t nd k wn d u s, d t how tha all l m tat ns fl ts d destructu n f pow *lt from* no bs rvan by th rulers f the nd u d wh ch th power w n rus ed hem (3) tha h w ll f the peopl is d legated o th rulers o d t n lly b t tha th d n unkn wn nd n defi d that th ppeara of sev ral hor ties, th truggles d th f ll re lt sol l f m h grea er lesser f lfill m t by th rulers of these u kn w d ns n which the w ll f th peopl trans-

ferred from some people to others.

A d these are the three ways n which the h sto ans d expl in the rel tion of tl e people to the r rulers.

Some hist rian —those b ograph cal nd pec l st histor n alre ly referred to— n tl mpl city f l *to understand the ques t on of tl e mean* of power seem to cons ler tl t tl e colle t w ll f the people s uncon d t n lly tran ferred to h tor cal perso s, a d therefore when descr b g some s n le st te th y ssume tl t p ticul r po er to be the one bsolute and eal powe and that ny other f rce oppos ng this is n t a powe but a iol ti n of power—mere olenc

The r theory u t ble for prim ti e and peaceful per ods of h tory h s the con en ence— n ppl cat n to omplex nd t rmy periods n the life of nat ons dur n wh h a ous powers arise simultaneously and tru gle w tl one anotl er—that a Leg t mist l s- t r n w ll pro e that the N t on l Con en t on *the D ect ry a d Bon p rte we e mere* nfr ngers f tl e true power wh le Republ can and Bo p rt t w ll p o e tl e o e th t the Con entio nd the othe that th En p re was the eal pow r and th t ll th otl ers were l t n of power E d ntly the ex pl natu ns furn shed by these h st rian be g *m tually contrad ct ry can only satis fy y un* ch ldr n

Recognizi the f l ty of this ew of h t ry othe set of h to s say th t power rests n cond t nal delegat on of th ll f the peopl t tl ir rul rs, nd th t h t cal l ders h e po er only c ndit on lly on

h s ns do n t sa o f they d tl ey con tinually contrad ct on an the

Each l ist n cord g to h view of wh t *con t tutes* n t on p ogress looks f these cond u s the great ess, ealth free d m nl h me t f th cit en f France o some ther country B t n t to ment on th h t n contrad ctio to the n ture

d m nd l ht nment of the people how s t th t Louis XIV d I an th T rr ble end tl gn tra q lly whil Lou XVI d Cha les I re execu ed by the peopl ? To

this question historians reply that Louis XIV's activity contrary to the program reacted on Louis XVI But why did it not react on Louis XIV or on Louis XV—why should it react just on Louis XVI? And what is the time limit for *such reactions? To these questions there are* and can be no answers Equally little does this view explain why for several centuries the *collective will is not withdrawn from certain* rulers and their heirs and then suddenly during a period of fifty years is transferred to the

explaining these rapid transfers of the peop e s *will from one individual to another* especially *in view of international relations conquests* and alliances the historians are obliged to admit that some of these transfers are not normal delegations of the people's will but are accidents dependent on cunning on mistakes *on craft or on the weakness of a diplomatist* a ruler or a party leader So that the greater part of the events of history—civil wars revolutions and conquests—are presented by these historians not as the results of free transferences *of the people's will but as results of the* ill directed will of one or more individuals that is once again as usurpations of power And so these historians also see and admit historical events which are exceptions to the theory

These historians resemble a botanist who having noticed that some plants grow from seeds *producing two cotyledons should insist* that all that grows does so by sprouting into two leaves and that the palm the mushroom *and even the oak which blossom into* full growth and no longer resemble two leaves are deviations from the theory

Historians of the third class assume that the

oric per

iditions

are un I o istorical

personages have power only because they fulfil the will of the people which has been delegated to them

But *in that* case if the force that moves nations lies not in the historic leaders but in the nations themselves what significance have those leaders?

The leaders these *historians tell us* express the will of the people the activity of the leaders represents the activity of the people

But in that case the question arises whether *all the activity of the leaders serves as an ex*pression of the people's will or only some part of it If the whole activity of the leaders serves as the expression of the people's will as some historians suppose then all the details of the court scandals contained in the biographies *of a Napoleon or a Catherine serve to express* the life of the nation which is evident nonsense but if it is only some particular side of the activity of an historical leader which serves to express the people's life as other so called *philosophical historians believe then to* determine which side of the activity of a leader expresses the nation's life we have first of all to know in what the nation's life consists

Met by this difficulty historians of that class devise some most obscure impalpable and *general abstraction which can cover all con*ceivable occurrences and declare this abstraction to be the aim of humanity's movement The most usual generalizations adopted by almost all the historians are freedom equality *enlightenment progress civilization and cul*ture Postulating some generalization as the goal of the movement of humanity the historians study the men of whom the greatest number of monuments have remained kings *ministers generals authors reformers popes* and journalists to the extent to which in their opinion these persons have promoted or hin

n no way

ization and as the connection of the peop with the rulers and enlighteners of humanity *is only based on the arbitrary assumption that* the collective will of the people is always trans*ferred to the men whom we have noticed it* happens that the activity of the millions who migrate burn houses abandon agriculture and destroy one another never is expressed in the account of the activity of some dozen people *who did not burn houses practice agricul*ture or slay their fellow creatures

History proves this at every turn Is the ferment of the peoples of the west at the end of the eighteenth century and their drive east*ward explained by the activity of* Louis XIV XV and XVI their mistresses and ministers and by the lives of Napoleon Rousseau Diderot Beaumarchais and others?

Is the movement *of the Russian people east*ward to Kazán and Siberia expressed by details of the morbid character of Iván the Terrible and by his correspondence with Kúrbski?

Is the movement of *the peoples at the time*

f the Crusades expl d by the l fe d acu ty f the Godfrey nd tl e Lou s-es nd the r l d es? For us that m ement of the peoples from west to st w th ut le ders th cro d f v grants and w th Pete the Hermit, rem s n omp eh n ble. And yet m e compreh n ble th essat on of that mo eme t when rat nal a d s cred a m for the Cru de—the del era ce of Jerusalem—h d bee cl rly d fin d by h tor c le ders P pes k gs a d kn ghts incited th peoples t free the H ly Land but the people d d n t go f r th u kn wn cause h ch h d pr ly impl lled them t g no l ger e isted. Th hi t ry f the Godf eys nd the M e s gers ca dently n t co the l fe f the peoples. A d th history f the Godf eys d the M es gers h em ned the h t ry of Godf eys d M es g rs but the h t ry of th l f f the peoples a d the mpul es h em ed u k wn

St ll less d es the h t ry of uth rs nd r f rmers e pl n t us the l fe of the peoples

The h t ry of cult pl t us tl e mp l es d co d t n of l fe nd th ht f r t f rmer We learn th t Luther h d a h t temp nd d uch d uch th gs w learn th t R ss u w s p ous d r te ch d uch book but e do t learn why ft th R f rm n th peoples m sacred ther r why du g th F e ch Rev l t n they gu ll t ed o her

If we t both thes k d of hi t ry as is do by the ewest h t ri s we hall h ve the h t ry f m chs d wr t rs but not th hi ry f tl e l f of th peoples.

CHAPTER V

T u r f th t n t co ta ed the l es f few m f th co ne t n between thos m d th t has been f und. Th theory th t th t b ed n th ra t f the ll ct w ll f people t ta h cal p rson es hy pothes firmed by h p r e f l s-tory

Th theory f h tra f f th llec ll f tl peopl to hist perso m y perhap expl m ch th doma f j is-P d d be es l f ts purposes, b t is ppl ca t h ry soon lu q ests l wars occur—th t soo h ry bev s—h t theory expla n no h

Tl theory em rr f tabl just because the act of tran ference of the people s will can n t be er fed f r it never occurred

Wh te er happe s and whoe e m y stand t the head of aff irs the theory can always say tl t such nd such a person took the le d becau e the collect e v ll was tran ferred to h m.

Th repl es th s theory g es to l i tor cal quest on ar l ke the repl es of a man wl o w tching the m ements of a herd of cattl and p y no attent on to the vary ng qu l ty of tl e p turage n d ff rent parts of the field to the dr ng of the herdsm n sh uld at tr b te th d ecti n the herd takes to what an m l happ n to be at its head

"The h rd goes in th t d rect on because the an m l n f ont le ds t nd the collect e w ll of all tl e otl er an mals s ested in th t l der Th s is wh t h t ri ns of the f rst cl ss say—those wh ssum the uncond ti l tra fe ence of the people s w ll

If th n m ls le d ng the herd ch nge th h ppens b cau e th collect e w ll of all the n m ls s tran ferr d from on le der to an otl r co d to wh ther the nim l s or n t le d them n the d r ct n selected by the wh le he d Such s the r ply of l s t ri n who ssum th t the collect e w ll f the people s delegated t rul rs unde co d t s wh ch they rega d kn wn. (W th th m thod f ob ervat on it ften happens tl t th ob rver fl ed by the d e t he h m lf p ef rs ega d th as l ad rs wh ow g to tl e peopl s chan e of d ct on e n l ger n front but on one de o even n the ear)

If the an m ls n f t are co t nually hanm g nd the d ect n of th wh le l erd

the l d e m ist watch the m me ts of it l d of

ge

Th theory f the tran feren of the w ll f the peopl to h t perso s is merely p raphr — est t ment f the quest n n ther words.

Wh t causes h t cal e nts P wer Wh t pow ? Pow th collect will of tl e p ple tr ferred to o e pers Und what c nditi is th w ll f the peopl delega ed

to one person? On condition that that person expresses the will of the whole people That is power is power in other words power is a word the meaning of which we do not understand

If the realm of human knowledge were confined to abstract reasoning then having subjected to criticism the explanation of power that juridical science gives us humanity would conclude that power is merely a word and has no real existence But to understand phenomena man has besides abstract reasoning experience by which he verifies his reflections And experience tells us that power is not merely a word but an actually existing phenomenon

Not to speak of the fact that no description of the collective activity of men can do without the conception of power the existence of power is proved both by history and by observing contemporary events

Whenever an event occurs a man appears or men appear by whose will the event seems to have taken place Napoleon III issues a decree and the French go to Mexico The King of Prussia and Bismarck issue decrees and an army enters Bohemia Napoleon I issues a decree and an army enters Russia Alexander I gives a command and the French submit to the Bourbons Experience shows us that whatever event occurs it is always related to the will of one or of several men who have decreed it

The historians in accord with the old habit of acknowledging divine intervention in human affairs want to see the cause of events in the expression of the will of someone endowed with power but that supposition is not confirmed either by reason or by experience

On the one side reflection shows that the expression of a man s will—his words—are only part of the general activity expressed in an event as for instance in a war or a revolution and so without assuming an incomprehensible supernatural force—a miracle—one cannot admit that words can be the immediate cause of the movements of millions of men On the other hand even if we admitted that words could be the cause of events history shows that the expression of the will of historical personages does not in most cases produce any effect that is to say their commands are often not executed and sometimes the very opposite of what they order occurs

Without admitting divine intervention in the affairs of humanity we cannot regard power as the cause of events

Power from the standpoint of experience is merely the relation that exists between the expression of someone s will and the execution of that will by others

To explain the conditions of that relationship we must first establish a conception of the expression of will referring it to man and not to the Deity

If the Deity issues a command expresses His will as ancient history tells us the expression of that will is independent of time and is not caused by anything for the Divinity is not controlled by an event But speaking of commands that are the expression of the will of men acting in time and in relation to one another to explain the connection of commands with events we must restore (1) the condition of all that takes place the continuity of movement in time both of the events and of the person who commands and (2) the inevitability of the connection between the person commanding and those who execute his command

CHAPTER VI

ONLY THE EXPRESSION of the will of the Deity not dependent on time can relate to a whole series of events occurring over a period of years or centuries and only the Deity independent of everything can by His sole will determine the direction of humanity s movement but man acts in time and himself takes part in what occurs

Reinstating the first condition omitted that of time we see that no command can be executed without some preceding order having been given rendering the execution of the last command possible

No command ever appears spontaneously or itself covers a whole series of occurrences but each command follows from another and never refers to a whole series of events but always to one moment only of an event

When for instance we say that Napoleon ordered armies to go to war we combine in one simultaneous expression a whole series of consecutive commands dependent one on another Napoleon could not have commanded an invasion of Russia and never did so Today he ordered such and such papers to be written to Vienna to Berlin and to Petersburg tomorrow such and such decrees and orders to the army the fleet the commissariat and so on and so on—millions of commands which formed a whole series corresponding to a series

f events wh ch brou ht tl e French rm es in
t
com

i
be
ex
p esseu—u ta om
m ds d d n t corresp d t the course of
er ts the first ca e but d d so correspond
in th l tt r

F o der to be cert nly executed t s
ecessary th t a m n h uld o der wl t can
wh t
n
n

h ch m ll p t c p t d but i e
mplest eve t fo n e ther case m ll o s of
b tacles may t pr t t execut on
E ery rder executed alway one f an m
mense mber u execut d All the mposs ble
o d rs o t t w th the ours of events
rema execu ed O ly the poss ble o es
get l ked p w tl con cut es of c m
m rrespo d g t s es f e nts nd
re executed.

Our f lse co cep th t ev nt cau ed
by comma d wl ch p ecedes t d e to the
f ct that wh tl t h s t k n pl ce nd
t of tl sa d f thers th few com
ma ds wh ch were t w th th t e t
h be ecuted w f rmet bo t the thers
th t t ecu ed becaus tl ey could
be Ap rt from tl t th ch f u e of
rr tl m t e is d e t tl f t th t
th h cal co nts wh le e es f

d w th h result p od d by th t
series f d correspo d g w th tl
g eralıza th wh l es f mm d
lso ge eral ed t gle p ss n of
w ll

W say th t N poleo w hed t ad
R ss d aded t. I eal y ll N
poleo t ty we er f d yth g
sembl g p ess f h w h but fi d
ser es f d rs p es n f h w ll
ery l d d fi tely d ted Am d
a l g se es f cu ed d rs of N po
leo se es f tl camp gn f 8 w
carr ed t— t because those ord rs d ff ed

n any way from the other unexecuted orders
but b cause they co nc ded w th tl e course of
eve ts that led the Fre ch army into Russ
just s n ste c l w rk th s or tl t f gure c mes
ut not beca e the c l r was la d o t from tl s
de o m tl at way but because it w s f d
i ste i l
t ne of
d th t a
con nand can ne er be e e c e eve t
but th t a cert n def i te depe d nce e ts
b tween tl e tw

To u dersta d in wh t tl s depende ce
co s ts t i necess ry to re nstate an tl er
om tted co d t n of every command proceed
i g not from the De ty but from m n wl ch
is that the man wl o g es the comm nd l n
self takes p rt in the e e t.

Th r l tion of tl co im nder to tl o e
h omma d s ju t I t called power
Tl rel ti n ns sts in the f ll w ng
hu te n

ct o tl e relat n betw et u ose ta b t
n t s l ays the ame

Men un t g n these comb n t al ays
ss me uch l ti towa d one anothe that
th l rge numb t ke mo e d e t tl re
and the sm ll r n mb r less d ect l e n
tl e collect e a t n f r h ch they h e om
b n d

Of ll tl e comb nat ns n h ch men u te
fo collect a t n o e f the m st str k ng
and def n te ex n ples s n rmy

E ry rmy compo ed of lower grades of
the ers e—th ra k nd file—of v l om th e
e alway th greatest number of the next
l gl m l t ry nk—corporals nd n com
m ss l off rs of wh m there e f w
d of st ll l e off ers of whom tl e e
st ll fev er nd so on to the h l est m l t ry
comm nd wl ch *co e trated one per*
son

A m l t ry rganizat n may b qu te co

of th co co ts f the next h gl e grades
f th rmy nd so on to the pex tl p t
f wh ch w ll rep ese t the c mm nde
ch f

The sold ers f wl m there a e the most
f rm the l wer t n f th cone and t
b The sold er l m elf doe th tabb g
h ck g bu n g a d p ll g g a d al ays

receives orders for these actions from men above him he himself never gives an order The noncommissioned officers (of whom there are fewer) perform the action itself less frequently than the soldiers but they already give commands An officer still less often acts directly himself but commands still more frequently A general does nothing but command the troops indicates the objective and hardly ever uses a weapon himself The commander in chief never takes direct part in the action itself but only gives general orders concerning the movement of the mass of the troops A similar relation of people to one another is seen in every combination of men for common activity—in agriculture trade and every administration

And so without particularly analyzing all the contiguous sections of a cone and of the ranks of an army or the ranks and positions in any administrative or public business whatever from the lowest to the highest we see a law by which men to take associated action combine in such relations that the more directly they participate in performing the action the less they can command and the more numerous they are while the less their direct participation in the action itself the more they command and the fewer of them there are rising in this way from the lowest ranks to the man at the top who takes the least direct share in the action and directs his activity chiefly to commanding

This relation of the men who command to those they command is what constitutes the essence of the conception called power

Having restored the condition of time under which all events occur we find that a command is executed only when it is related to a corresponding series of events Restoring the essential condition of relation between those who command and those who execute we find that by the very nature of the case those who command take the smallest part in the action itself and that their activity is exclusively directed to commanding

CHAPTER VII

WHEN AN EVENT is taking place people express their opinions and wishes about it and as the event results from the collective activity of many people some one of the opinions or wishes expressed is sure to be fulfilled if but approximately When one of the opinions expressed is fulfilled that opinion gets connected with the event as a command preceding it

Men are hauling a log Each of them expresses his opinion as to how and where to haul it They haul the log away and it happens [illegible] about what he was doing or reflect on or command what would result from the common activity while the man who commanded more would evidently work less with his hands on account of his greater verbal activity

When some larger concourse of men direct their activity to a common aim there is a yet sharper division of those who because their activity is given to directing and commanding take less part in the direct work

When a man works alone he always has a certain set of reflections which as it seems to him directed his past activity justify his present activity and guide him in planning his future actions Just the same is done by a concourse of people allowing those who do not take a direct part in the activity to devise considerations justifications and surmises concerning their collective activity

For reasons known or unknown to us the French began to drown and kill one another And corresponding to the event its justification appears in people's belief that this was necessary for the welfare of France for liberty and for equality People ceased to kill one another and this event was accompanied by its justification in the necessity for a centralization of power resistance to Europe and so on Men went from the west to the east killing their fellow men and the event was accompanied by phrases about the glory of France the baseness of England and so on History shows us that these justifications of the events have no common sense and are all contradictory as in the case of killing a man as the result of recognizing his rights and the killing of millions in Russia for the humiliation of England But these justifications have a very necessary significance in their own day

These justifications release those who produce the events from moral responsibility These temporary aims are like the broom fixed in front of a locomotive to clear the snow from the rails in front they clear men's moral responsibilities from their path

Without such justification there would be no reply to the simplest question that presents itself when examining each historical event How is it that millions of men commit collec

tı e crimes—make war comm t mu de and

~ ~ d I ther ny coll c h

the result of the will of several m

I hate r direct on a h p m es the flo v f tl e ‘a es t cuts w ll l ys b notic ble head f t. T those on board the sh p the m em t of th e wa es w ll be the only per cept'ble mot n

O ly by watch g clos ly m ment by moment the m m t f th t flow nd c mp r t w th th mo eme t of the h p d e rs l es th t ry b t f t oc ca d by the f rv d m me t of the sh p a d th t w wer l d t erro by the f ct th t we urselv s wer mpe cept bly m

W th same f we w tch mom t by m m t th m m t f h st r cal cha acter (th t re e t bl h the e t ble dit n f ll that rs—the t nuity f m m t t m) d d n t l e ght f tl e esse t l ct f h t cal p rs s th th m es

Wh th h p m es d ect n ther e d th m w e h d of t when t t f eq tly th wa l e d f l t m f q ly B t wh t m y t m the l ys w ll b the w nt p t g ts m em t.

What h ppen t lw ys ppears th t ju t th t t w f es n d decr ed Wher e th h p m y g th rush f w ter h h h d ts cr es ts m e m t f m h d f t d t d t eems t mer ly m f ts lf but go h h p m m t lso

E m ly tl p es f tle ll f h l p rs wl h m ia ds er f d ts h h m d h t th e d p ded th m m d P xam th e t th m l e d h t wh h th l t cal perw ood h pe pl w l f d tha h y d tl d rs w d j e dent n

e ents The incontestable proof of th s deduc t n s th t how e many comma ds ere ssued the e ent d e not t ke place unless the e a e otl er cau es for it but a soon a n e ent o curs—be t wl at it m y—then out of all the c nt nu lly e pres ed shes of l f fe e t pe ples me w ll al ays be f und l ch by the r me n n nd the r t me of utterance a e rel ted as c mm nds t the e ents

Arr ng t tl con lu on we can eply d e tly and po t ely to these two esse t al qu st n f h t ry

( ) Wh t po e ?

( ) Wh t f rc produces the m ement of th nat ons?

( ) P we s the relat on of a g en pe n t the nd du ls n wh cl tl e mo e tl s pers n e presses op n ons p ed ct on and ju t f t ons f the collect e a t n tl t s perf rmed the les is hu p t cip t on n that a ti

(2) Th mo ement f t ons is cau ed n t by p wer n by ntellectual a t ty nor e en by c mb n t on of the two as h to ans h e upposed but by the cu ty f all the pe ple wh part p te n the e ents nd wl o lways comb ne n ucl a w y tl at tl se t k g the l rge t d e t sha in the e nt tak on themsel es th l ast esp n b l ty a d ce rs

M rally the w lder f power ppears to

tl e but the u n f the t

O n the wo d the c nc pt n of cau e is n ppl cable t tl ph nomena e a ex m n

In th l st nal e each tl e c le of nfi ty— h t f n l l m t to h cl n e ery do m f tl ugl t m r son rr f t t pl y g th tl subj t. Ele t city pro d es he t h t p odu el t ty At ms ttra t ch th nd toms pel one other

Spe k g f the te ct n f he t d el t c tv nd f t m w cann t say hy tl urs nd w s y th t t becau t s n ble them because t must be so d th t t s l Th s m ppl t h cal ev ts Why w r nd lut n oc cu w d not kn w W nly know th t t p d the o the th t people mb n e t f rm t n h ch th y ll take p t nd w say th t this s so becaus

it is unthinkable otherwise or in other words that it is a law

CHAPTER VIII

IF HISTORY DEALT *only with external phenomena the establishment of this simple and obvious law would suffice* and we should have finished our argument But the law of history relates to man A particle of matter cannot tell us that it does not feel the law of attraction or repulsion and that that law is untrue but man who is the ubject of history says plainly I am free and am therefore not subject to the law

The presence of the problem of man s free will though unexpressed is felt at every step of history

All seriously thinking historians have involuntarily encountered this question All the contradictions and obscurities of history and the false path historical science has followed are due solely to th lack of a solution of that question

If the will of every man were free that is if each man could act as he pleased all history would be a series of disconnected incidents

If in a thousand years even one man in a million could act freely that is as he chose it is evident that one single free act of that man s in violation of the laws governing human action would destroy the possibility of the existence of any laws for the whole of humanity

If there be a single law governing the actions of men free will cannot exist for then man s will *is subject to that law*

In this contradiction lies the problem of free will which from most ancient times has occupied the best human minds and from most

ject of observation from whatever point o view—theological historical ethical or philosophic—*we find a general law of necessity to which he (like all that exists) is subject But regarding him from within ourselves as what we are conscious of* we feel ourselves to be free

This consciousness is a source of self cognition quite apart from and independent of reason Through his reason man observes him self but only through consciousness does he know himself

Apart from consciousness of self no observation or application of reason is conceivable

To understand observe and draw conclusions man must first of all be conscious of him self as living A man is only conscious of him self as a living being by the fact that he wills *that is is conscious of his volition* But his will —*which* forms the essence of his life—man *recognizes* (and can but recognize) as free

If observing himself man sees that his will is always directed by one and the same law (whether he observes the necessity of takin food using his brain or anything else) he can not recognize this never varying direction of his will otherwise than as a limitation of it Were it not free it could not be limited A man s will seems to him to be limited just be free

that this illogical reply is an irrefutable demonstration of freedom

That reply is the expression of a consciousness that is not subject to reason

If the consciousness of freedom were not a separate and independent source of self consciousness it would be subject to reasoning and to experience but in fact such subjection does not exist and is inconceivable

A series of experiments and arguments proves to every man that he as an object of *observation is subject to certain laws and man*

experiments and arguments proves to ...

the complete freedom of which he is consc ous in *himself* is impossible and that his every action depends on his organization his character and the motives acting upon him yet man never submits to the deductions of these experiments and argun ents Having learned from experiment and argument that a stone falls d wnwards a man indubitably believes this and always expects the law that he has learned to be fulfilled

But learning just as certainly th at his will is subject to la s he does not and cannot be l e e th s

However often experiment and reasoning may show a man that under the same conditions nd with the same character he will do the same thing as before yet when under the same conditions and with the same character he approaches for the thousandth t me the action that always ends *in the same ay he feels as certainly convinced as before the experiment that he can act as he pleases* E ery man

savage or sage however ncontestably reason and experiment m y pro to h m that it i mposs ble t m g two d ff e t courses ecı ly the same cond t ons

pos ble t m y b t ı so ı co cept of f e d m ot nly ould he be ble to u d rsta d l fe b t h w ld be bl to lı e l a le m ment.

He co ld n t l because all man s efforts ll h mp lses t l fe are only eff rts to n rease f eedom We lth a d po e ty f me d bscurity power nd subord n t tre gth d weak ess he lth d d e cul t a d gn ra e w k nd le ure eple t d hu ger rtu d ce e nly greater lesser degrees of fr edom

\m h g n f eed m ca t be con ce ed f ex ept dep ed of l fe.

If the co ept f fr ed m ppears to easo t be less contrad ct n l ke th pos b l ty f perf rm two ct ns t ne d th m ta t of t m o of an ff t th t ca e th t ly p es th t c n

result of the con tra ned act v ty of man? That quest n for h story h popu most n of free-

p nted matter—l as the q ts d m f ll b e put on a le el on wl ch the que tı n tself cannot ex t. In ur t me the m jo ıty of so-called ad anced people—th t s the cro d of gnoramu es—ha e taken the rk of the n tural st l deal w th ones de f the quest n f r a solut n of th whole pr blem

They say d wr te nd p nt th t the soul h l fe of m n nus- c

t ty f the nerves the sou a u ı ll do n t ex st b cause t n unknown per od of t me e spra f om the pes They say th n t at all suspe t g th t th usand of years go th t s me l of neces ty h ch w th su h rdor they a e n wtr ng t p o e by phys ol gy and m n m el cknowl h nkers n t e

th t th le f the n tural sc e es ın thı m tte s me ly to serv an instrument f r the llum n t n f one d of t. F r the f ct ı

by ery w th t ept n th s ce ess w th t wh h c pt f m n poss bl co t tes the the s d f th q es- tı

M is the creat n f ll pow rful ll good d ll see g God Wh t the pt f wh h es from the co sc us- ess f ma s f ed m? Th t quest n f r theology

Th t f m ubject to g neral mm t bl l w p essed t ust cs. Wh t d m ma esp b l y t soc ety th con ep- f wh h es lts fr m tl ept n f f eed m? Th ıs q es f jur p de

M t p oceed f m h n te char ct d th m es t g po h m. What ıs sc d h p p n f gh d t n th t f ll ws f m th con sc us ess f f eed Th t q est n f h cs.

M ectıo w th the ge eral l f f h ma y ppe rs bj t t l w wh ch de- m ha l f B t th sam man p rt f m tha ect ppears be free H w h ll th pa t l f f t n d f huma ty b regarded—as the es l of th f ee o the

If men des ended from the pes t n un k wn p od of t me th t s mp hen bl that they wer m d fr m h dful of earth cert period of t me (n th first tl unkn wn qu nt ty th t m n the s nd ase the n) nd the quest n f h w m n co sc u ess of f eed m t b eco led th th l w of necess ty to wh cl he ubj t cann t b l ed by com p rat pl y l ry d ool gy f r n f o rabb t n pe w ca observ only th muscul rs us ty but n man w ob- rs co u ess as w ll as tl e muscul r nd n rs us ct ty

Th n tural ts nd tl e f ll ers th nk

ing they can solve this question are like plasterers set to plaster one side of the walls of a church who availing themselves of the absence of the chief superintendent of the work should in an access of zeal plaster over the windows icons woodwork and still unbuttressed walls and should be delighted that from their point of view as plasterers everything is now so smooth and regular

CHAPTER IX

FOR THE SOLUTION of the question of free will or inevitability history has this advantage over other branches of knowledge in which the question is dealt with that for history this question does not refer to the essence of man s free will but to its manifestation in the past and under certain conditions

In regard to this question history stands to the other sciences as experimental science stands to abstract science

The subject for history is not man s will itself but our presentation of it

And so for history the insoluble mystery presented by the incompatibility of free will and inevitability does not exist as it does for theology ethics and philosophy History surveys a presentation of man s life in which the union of these two contradictions has already taken place

In actual life each historic event each human action is very clearly and definitely understood without any sense of contradiction although each event presents itself as partly free and partly compulsory

To solve the question of how freedom and necessity are combined and what constitutes the essence of these two conceptions the philosophy of history can and should follow a path contrary to that taken by other sciences Instead of f d

d

r

d story should deduce a definition of the conception of freedom and inevitability themselves from the immense quantity of phenomena of which it is cognizant and that always appear dependent on these two elements

Whatever presentation of the activity of many men or of an individual we may consider we always regard it as the result partly of man s free will and partly of the law of inevitability

Whether we speak of the migration of the peoples and the incursions of the barbarians or of the decrees of Napoleon III or of some one s action an hour ago in choos

itability governing the actions of these people is clearly defined for us

Our conception of the degree of freedom often varies according to differences in the point of view from which we regard the event but every human action appears to us as a certain combination of freedom and inevitability In every action we examine we see a certain measure of freedom and a certain measure of inevitability And always the more freedom we see in any action the less inevitability do we perceive and the more inevitability the less freedom

The proportion of freedom to inevitability decreases and increases according to the point of view from which the action is regarded but their relation is always one of inverse proportion

A sinking man who clutches at another and drowns him or a hungry mother exhausted by feeding her baby who steals some food or a man trained to discipline who on duty at the word of command kills a defenseless man—seem less guilty that is less free and more subject to the law of necessity to one who knows the circumstances in which these people were placed and more free to one who does not know that the man was himself drowning that the mother was hungry that the soldier was in the ranks and so on Similarly a man who committed a murder twenty years ago and has since lived peaceably and harmlessly in society seems less guilty and his action more due to the law of inevitability to someone who considers his action after twenty years have elapsed than to one who examined it the day after it was committed And in the same way every action of an insane intoxicated or highly excited man appears less free and more inevitable to one who knows the mental condition of him who committed the action and seems more free and less inevitable to one who does not know it In all these cases the conception of freedom is increased or diminished and the conception of compulsion is correspondingly decreased or increased according to the point of view from which the action is regarded So that the greater the conception of necessity the smaller the conception of freedom and vice versa

Religion the common sense of mankind the science of jurisprudence and history itself understand alike this relation between

eces ty a d f eed m.

All cases w th t e cept n n h ch u to cepuo of Ir ed m d eces tv t n crea ed d dim ished depe d n th ee con derat n

( ) Th el u n t the e tern l world of th m wh comm t th deeds.

( ) H st l t n t t me

(3) H rel uon to tl e causes lead ~ t the ctio

Th first cons derat n is th l arnes of ur pe cept f the ma s rel t n t the ext rn l o ld d the gre te o lesser clea ess f u dersta d f the defi te pos t occup ed by the m n n r l t n t e ery th coex t g w th h m Th s wl t makes te d t that drown ma less f e d m subject t ne ess ty than n sta d g on dry gro d d that m kes the a t of → H

If e de ma l e p rt tro rel u to everyth ng ar u d him e ch c u of h eems t us free But f w ee h s rel t o to a ythi g ro d h m f we ee hu ect w th yth g wh tev —w th ma l peaks to h m book h read the k wh ch he is ga ed even w th the he b eathes th l ght that f ll n the th ~ bo t h m—w ee th t d of these ci cum ta es h nfl n n h m d co trol t lea t som d f h ty And the m we perc e f these fl es th mo e co pu n f h f eed m dim n hes d th m ep n f th neces ty th t w ghs h m crea es.

Tl eco d co rat the m e less id t m l t f th ma t th wo ld *d the clearness f ou pe cepc f the* pl th m ct n oc p es t m Th t th gro d wh ch m kes th f ll of th first m es It g th p od ct of the hu ma ta ppea es d n ly less f tha ma try to m rr ge tod y It h ease f y th I f d y f peopl who l ed t es go d e n ted w th m t m ca seem t m f ee tl I f f co temporary th eq es f wh ch ll u k wn m

Th degree f ou *co* pt f f eed m es b l t d pend h espect n th gr er lesser l pse f m b een tl pe f rma f th nd j dgment f t.

If I exam ne an act I perf rmed a moment g n pprox mately the same circumsta ces a those I m n no my act on ppe rs to me u *d ubtedly f ee But if I exam* ne an act p rf rmed a month ago then be n d ffer ent ci cum t n es I cann t help recogn z ng that f th t a t h d not be n committ d much th t esulted f m t—good agreeable and e en es t al— ld not l a e t ken pl ce If I efle t on an ct on st ll m re rem te ten years go o mo e then the conseque es of my act n a e st ll pl n r to me nd I f d t l rd to m gi e h t w uld h e h ppe ed I d th t ct on n t be n performed Tl e fa tl r I go b ck mem ry or wh t s the s me tl ng tl f rth r I go f rw rd n my j d~me t tl e mo e d btful becomes my b l ef n the f ee d m f my t on.

In l t ry e find a ery m l r progress of con ct n n ern g tl part pl yed by f ee w ll n the g neral aff rs f hum n ty A temporary e ent em to us t be d b t bly the d of all the kn wn p rt c p nts but w tl m e emote e ent we lready s ts n e t bl esults wl ch p e nt u con de ng anyth ls po ble And tl e f rtl er we go b k ex m n g events the less arb trary do they ppear

The Au tro-Pruss an ar appears to us un d ubt dly th esult of tl e crafty c nduct of B m rck and so on The N poleo c wars t ll em t u th ugh al eady quest n bly t b th outcome of thei l eroes w ll But n th Crus des we l e dys e ne nt occupy g ts defi te pl e in h t ry a d w th ut wh h w cann t m ~ e th mod rn h tory f Europe th gh to th cl ron clers of the Crusades th t event ppeared m ely due t the w ll of ert people In regard to the migrat n f the peoples t does n t ent ny es l d tod y t uppos th t the a t n f the Eu pe wo ld depended on At t l caprice The f rthe b ck l t ry the bje t f o ob erv t n l es the m d ubt f l does the f w ll f thos co erned n th e t b me nd the mo e m n fest the la f tab l ty

Th th d co derat n the degree to wh ch w pp hend that e dless ch of cau s t n es tably dem ded by eason n wh ch ch ph m n comp h nded and ther f m n s e ery ct must h e ts d fi t pl result f wh t h gon be f re d as cau f wh t w ll foll w

The b tt w qu ted w th the phy olo~ cal p ych lo~ical nd hist cal laws de

duced by observation and by which man is controlled and the more correctly we perceive the physiological psychological and historical causes of the action and the simpler the action we are observing and the less complex the character and mind of the man in question the more subject to inevitability and the less free do our actions and those of others appear

When we do not at all understand the cause of an action whether a crime a good action or even one that is simply nonmoral we ascribe a greater amount of freedom to it In the case of a crime we most urgently demand the punishment for such an act in the case of a virtuous act we rate its merit most highly In an indifferent case we recognize in it more individuality originality and independence But if even one of the innumerable causes of the act is known to us we recognize a certain element of necessity and are less insistent on punishment for the crime or the acknowledgment of the merit of the virtuous act or the freedom ... on Th ... crimi ... is ... r

or mother or self sacrifice with the ... ty of a reward is more comprehensible than gratuitous self sacrifice and therefore seems less deserving of sympathy and less the result of free will The founder of a sect or party or an inventor impresses us less when we know how or by what the way was prepared for his activity If we have a large range of examples if our observation is constantly directed to seeking the correlation of cause and effect in people s actions their actions appear to us more under compulsion and less free the more correctly we connect the effects with the causes If we examined simple actions and had a vast number of such actions under observation our conception of their inevitability would be still ... The dishonest conduct of the son of ...

relapse into drunkenness ... tions that seem to us less free the better we understand their cause If the man whose actions we are considering is on a very low stage of mental development like a child a madman or a simpleton—then knowing the causes of the act and the simplicity of the character and intelligence in question we see so large an element of necessity and so little free will that as soon as we know the cause prompting the action we can foretell the result

On these three considerations alone is based the conception of irresponsibility for crimes and the extenuating circumstances admitted by all legislative codes The responsibility appears greater or less according to our greater or lesser knowledge of the circumstances in which the man was placed whose action is being judged and according to the greater or lesser interval of time between the commission of the action and its investigation and according to the greater or lesser understanding of the causes that led to the action

CHAPTER X

THUS OUR CONCEPTION of free will and inevitability gradually diminishes or increases according to the greater or lesser connection with the external world the greater or lesser remoteness of time and the greater or lesser dependence on the causes in relation to which we contemplate a man s life

So that if we examine the case of a man whose connection with the external world is well known where the time between the action and its examination is great and where the causes of the action are most accessible we get the conception of a maximum of inevitability and a minimum of free will If we examine a man little dependent on external conditions whose action was performed very recently and the causes of whose action are beyond our ken we get the conception of a minimum of inevitability and a maximum of freedom

In neither case—however we may change our point of view however plain we may make to ourselves the connection between the man and the external world however inaccessible it may be to us however long or short the period of time however intelligible or incomprehensible the causes of the action may be—can we ever conceive either complete freedom or complete necessity

(1) To whatever degree we may imagine a man to be exempt from the influence of the external world we never get a conception of freedom in space Every human action is inevitably conditioned by what surrounds him and by his own body I lift my arm and let it fall My action seems to me free but asking myself whether I could raise my arm in every direction I see that I raised it in the direction in which there was least obstruction to that action either from things around me or from the construction of my own body I chose one out of all the possible directions because in it there were fewest obstacles For my action to be free it was necessary that it should encoun

he les. T co ce e of a man be ng h ch m er get a c ept l l eeu if I m e u n comm tt d a se o d o I r t ch t m dy p ssed To con c mys o l ft t the ext m me t. But I m n t wa b t n m f m d g so t the first m ment when I asked th q est on. Time ha gone by which I co ld t deta th rm I th n lifted s no lo er the same as the arm I n w r fra from l ft g nor is th r n wh ch I l fted t the same th t n w urr u ds me The m ment n wh ch th first m em t wa made s rre oca bl d at that m me t I could m ke o ly m em t a d wh t er m me t I m de w ld be th ly Th t I d d n t l ft my rm mom nt l t does n t p e that I could h bst ed f m l ft g t then A ds ce l c ld m k l e m ment t that s gl m m nt of t me it could n t ha bee any ther To mag e t a f e t is essary t ma e t n the prese t on the bou dary b tw en th p t nd the f tur — th t is outs d tim which mpo ble

(3) H wever m ch the d ffculty f u de sta d g the cau es m y be crea ed we ever rea h co ept f compl t f eed m th t hl sea h f caus f w th ut cau no phe nom is co able l rais my rm to perf rm ct dep d ntly f ny cause, b t my w h t perf rm ct o w th ut a cause is th ca f my t n

B t ev f — mag g man qu t exempt from ll fl es exam n g o ly h mo m t ry ct th p es u e ked by cause — we e d t so fi t ly mall rema d f tal l ty as equ led ero w sh ld even th t h rr ed t the co p l mpl e f ed m n man f be g fl en ed by th ex rn l w ld t d ts de f t m d d pend t of cause no l er ma

I h sam way e n es m g the co o of ma q dev id l f eedom d ent rely subject to the l of inev t b l ty

(1) H we er we may ere e ur knowl ed of the cond t o s of pace s l ch m n s s tu ted that knowled e can never be com pl te f the number of those c d t s s a fin t the nfin ty of sp ce And therefore I n a n t ll the cond t ons flu nc ng men a e d fined there s no omplete nev ta b l ty but a certa e sure of freed m re m ns

( ) However we may p ol n th period f time between the cu n e a e e m n ng nd the judgm nt upon t, th t p r od w ll be fin te wh le t me nfin te and so th s e pect too th re can ne er be absol te ine ta b l ty

(3) H we er access ble may be th cha n of causat n f y ct on we l ll never kn the wh le cha n nc it is endless nd so again we n er e ch bsolute nev tab l ty

But bes des th s e n f dm tt ng the re m n g m mum of f ecdom to equ l zero we sumed n some g n case — a f r n t n e n that of a dy m n unborn b be o n d t — complete b e of fr edom by so do ng we sh uld destr y the ery concept n of m n n the ca e w are m n g f r as oon the e no freed m there i also no m n And so the conc pt on of the ct of a man subj ct solely t the l w of inev t b l t w th out a y element f f ed m i just as imposs ble th c n pt on of a m n s c mpletely f ee ct

And so to m tl ct n f m n n t ely ubj t t the l w of n tab l ty w th out y freed m e mu t as ume the k owl edge of an f t numb r f p ce rel tions an fi t ly l n per od of tim a d n fi i er es f causes.

To m g ne m n perf ctly f ee nd n t ubject t th l w of e tab l ty we must hev d b bev d

t b l ty is lf that mere form w thout co t nt.

In th ec d ca f f edom were pos ibl w th ut tab l ty w ho ld h rr ed t u o d u ned f ed m bey nd p ce t me d cause which by th f ct f t be g un co d ti ed d u l m ted w uld b n th ng, o me e o tent w th ut f rm

W l ld f t h eached those tw f d m ntal f wh ch man s w l l utlook

on the universe is constructed—the incomprehensible essence of life and the laws defining that essence

Reason says (1) space with all the forms of matter that give it visibility is infinite and cannot be imagined otherwise ( ) Time is infinite motion without a moment of rest and is unthinkable otherwise (3) The connection between cause and effect has no beginning and can have no end

Consciousness says (1) I alone am and all that exists is but me consequently I include space (2) I measure flowing time by the fixed moment of the present in which alone I am conscious of myself as living consequently I am outside time (3) I am beyond cause for I feel myself to be the cause of every manifestation of my life

Reason gives expression to the laws of inevitability Consciousness gives expression to the essence of freedom

Freedom not limited by anything is the essence of life in man s consciousness Inevitability without content is man s reason in its three forms

Freedom is the thing examined Inevitability is what examines Freedom is the content Inevitability is the form

Only by separating the two sources of cognition related to one another as form to content do we get the mutually exclusive and separately incomprehensible conceptions of freedom and inevitability

Only by uniting them do we get a clear conception of man s life

Apart from these two concepts which in their union mutually define one another as form and content no conception of life is possible

All that we know of the life of man is merely a certain relation of free will to inevitability that is of consciousness to the laws of reason

All that we know of the external world of nature is only a certain relation of the forces of nature to inevitability or of the essence of life to the laws of reason

The great natural forces lie outside us and we are not conscious of them we call those forces gravitation inertia electricity animal force and so on but we are conscious of the force of life in man and we call that freedom

But just as the force of gravitation incomprehensible in itself but felt by every man is understood by us only to the extent to which we know the laws of inevitability to which it is subject (from the first knowledge that all bodies have weight up to Newton s law) so too the force of free will incomprehensible in itself but of which everyone is conscious is intelligible to us only in as far as we know the laws of inevitability to which it is subject (from the fact that every man dies up to the knowledge of the most complex economic and historic laws)

All knowledge is merely a bringing of this essence of life under the laws of reason

Man s free will differs from every other force in that man is directly conscious of it but in the eyes of reason it in no way differs from any other force The forces of gravitation electricity or chemical affinity are only distinguished from one another in that they are differently defined by reason Just so the force of man s free will is distinguished by reason from the other forces of nature only by the definition reason gives it Freedom apart from necessity that is apart from the laws of reason that define it differs in no way from gravitation or heat or the force that makes things grow for reason it is only a momentary undefinable sensation of life

And as the undefinable essence of the force moving the heavenly bodies the undefinable essence of the forces of heat and electricity or of chemical affinity or of the vital force forms the content of astronomy physics chemistry botany zoology and so on just in the same way does the force of free will form the content of history But just as the subject of every science is the manifestation of this unknown essence of life while that essence itself can only be the subject of metaphysics even so the manifestation of the force of free will in human beings in space in time and in dependence on cause forms the subject of history while free will itself is the subject of metaphysics

In the experimental sciences what we know we call the laws of inevitability what is unknown to us we call vital force Vital force is only an expression for the unknown remainder over and above what we know of the essence of life

So also in history what is known to us we call laws of inevitability what is unknown we call free will Free will is for history only an expression for the unknown remainder of what we know about the laws of human life

CHAPTER XI

History examines the manifestations of man s free will in connection with the external world in time and in dependence on cause that is

t defines th s f eed m by the laws of re on nd so h story s sc e e only in so far as th f ee will s defi d by tl o e l ws.

The rec gn u f m n fre w ll some- th cap ble of flue ci h to cal e nts th t s, a n t s bje t to l s the ame f h tory th wn t on of f e f rce m in the he e ly bod es ould be for astron my

Th t ssumpt n would d troy the poss b l ty f the ex t nce f l s tl t s f any scie ce wh t r If the se n a s n le body m g f ely th n the l s of K pl r and Newt e neoati d and n co cept n of the m me t of the he enly b dies ny l gere ts If any s ngl ct on s due to f ee ll the n t a s gle h sto cal l can e t f h to cal events

erty common to all unknow n nfin tely sm ll elements

In nother form but alon the s me p th of h otl er sc ences l e pr ceeded

erty of attract one a o t on of tl e cau e of tl mo e-

study of the mo eme t o u l m n ty n l n t tl e n rrat n of ep les n es of nd d l t too sett ng aside tl e

of the on s ut la s f h s t

CHAPTER XII

bef o yes the m d f th tm m t T l er nd define tho e l the p bl m f h st ry

F m tl t dpo t fr m wh ch the s en fl t ry w ega d ts ubje t n th p th t ow f ll ek g th cau e of nt n ma f e w ll a ct f e unc t n f tl l mposs ble f h w r m n f e w ll

m graphy f th nc nts by u p l w t m ht h e b en po ble to et n the f l l l

ld But e en afte the d co ry u of Cope cus tl Pt lema c o ld v ere t ll st l d f l g t e

O l b ed tl l m nt t t l t th f es m l th t by rec d g t f t ly m ll q t ty ca w n e rs l es f h bs l t n ess b l ty f the ca es d then te d f k g cau es h t rv w ll k h di ry f l w ts p l l m

F m the t me tl first p rson s d and p ed th t tl numb of b th r of cr me s ubje t to m tl m t cal l nd th t tl of m nt d term d by

Tl ch f lese l ws h l g b n b g d l w thod f h gl t h ch h ry m d pt b k d ou m l et l w h l ll des t t w d h h e erd ss g ndd se tl ca es f pl m tl ld m l od f h ry

n wh cl h yl d be n bu lt e ues u n the es en

By refut g the n w l w th f rm v f h ry m ht h e be n ed but w th ut fut g tl m t w uld em mpo ble to t u tudy l t c nts as th results of m f ll F f t n m le f g n t t bl h d t n m grat s f peoples took pl n c equen of uch nd uch g ogr pl etl nograph c o eco- co d t tl en the f ll of tl l d l wl pp t u t h estab- lished th t m de f go e nme t o occas ned

All l m ci n es l tra l d al th t p l Arr g f es m l m tl em t cs tl f es b l l e p es f l d h ew p oces f h egrat n f k w f t l m ll qua es Ab d g tl co ept n f caus m h m es eek l w th t th p p-

on the universe is constructed—the incomprehensible essence of life and the laws defining that essence

Reason says (1) space with all the forms of matter that give it visibility is infinite and cannot be imagined otherwise (2) Time is infinite motion without a moment of rest and is unthinkable otherwise (3) The connection between cause and effect has no beginning and can have no end

Consciousness says (1) I alone am and all that exists is but me consequently I include space (2) I measure flowing time by the fixed moment of the present in which alone I am conscious of myself as living consequently I am outside time (3) I am beyond cause for I feel myself to be the cause of every manifestation of my life

Reason gives expression to the laws of inevitability Consciousness gives expression to the essence of freedom

Freedom not limited by anything is the essence of life in man s consciousness Inevitability without content is man s reason in its three forms

Freedom is the thing examined Inevitability is what examines Freedom is the content Inevitability is the form

Only by separating the two sources of cognition related to one another as form to content do we get the mutually exclusive and separately incomprehensible conceptions of

Apart from these two concepts which in their union mutually define one another as form and content no conception of life is possible

All that we know of the life of man is merely a certain relation of free will to inevitability that is of consciousness to the laws of reason

All that we know of the external world of nature is only a certain relation of the forces of nature to inevitability or of the essence of life to the laws of reason

The great natural forces lie outside us and we are not conscious of them we call those forces gravitation inertia electricity animal force and so on but we are conscious of the force of life in man and we call that freedom

But just as the force of gravitation incomprehensible in itself but felt by every man is understood by us only to the extent to which we know the laws of inevitability to which it is subject (from the first knowledge that all bodies have weight up to Newton s law) so too the force of free will incomprehensible in itself but of which everyone is conscious is intelligible to us only in as far as we know the laws of inevitability to which it is subject (from the fact that every man dies up to the knowledge of the most complex economic and historic laws)

All knowledge is merely a bringing of this essence of life under the laws of reason

Man s free will differs from every other force in that man is directly conscious of it but in the eyes of reason it in no way differs from any other force The forces of gravitation electricity or chemical affinity are only distinguished from one another in that they are differently defined by reason Just so the force of man s free will is distinguished by reason from the other forces of nature only by the definition reason gives it Freedom apart from necessity that is apart from the laws of reason that define it differs in no way from gravitation or heat or the force that makes things grow for reason it is only a momentary undefinable sensation of life

And as the undefinable essence of the force moving the heavenly bodies the undefinable essence of h

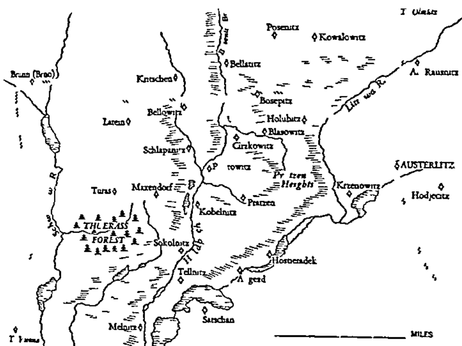
t of history But just as the subject of every science is the manifestation of this unknown essence of life while that essence itself can only be the subject of metaphysics even so the manifestation of the force of free will in human beings in space in time and in dependence on cause forms the subject of history while free will itself is the subject of metaphysics

In the experimental sciences what we know we call the laws of inevitability what is unknown to us we call vital force Vital force is only an expression for the unknown remainder over and above what we know of the essence of life

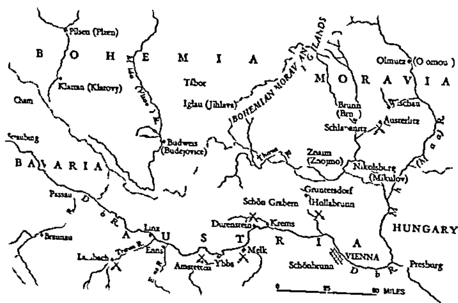
So also in history what is known to us we call laws of inevitability what is unknown we call free will Free will is for history only an expression for the unknown remainder of what we know about the laws of human life

CHAPTER XI

HISTORY EXAMINES the manifestations of man s free will in connection with the external world in time and in dependence on cause that is



I BATTLE OF AUSTERLITZ



II WAR OF 1805

the migrations can no longer be regarded as the cause

And yet the former history continues to be

[illegible]

philology and geology w [illegible] dict its assumptions

The struggle between the old views and the new was long and stubbornly fought out in physical philosophy Theology stood on guard for the old views and accused the new of violating revelation But when truth conquered theology established itself just as firmly on the new foundation

[illegible]

accuses the new view of subverting revelation

In the one case as in the other on both sides the struggle provokes passion and stifles truth On the one hand there is fear and regret for the loss of the whole edifice constructed through the ages on the other is the passion for destruction

To the men who fought against the rising truths of physical philosophy it seemed that if they admitted that truth it would destroy faith in God in the creation of the firmament and in the miracle of Joshua the son of Nun To the defenders of the laws of Copernicus and Newton to Voltaire for example it seemed that the laws of astronomy destroyed religion and he utilized the law of gravitation as a weapon against religion

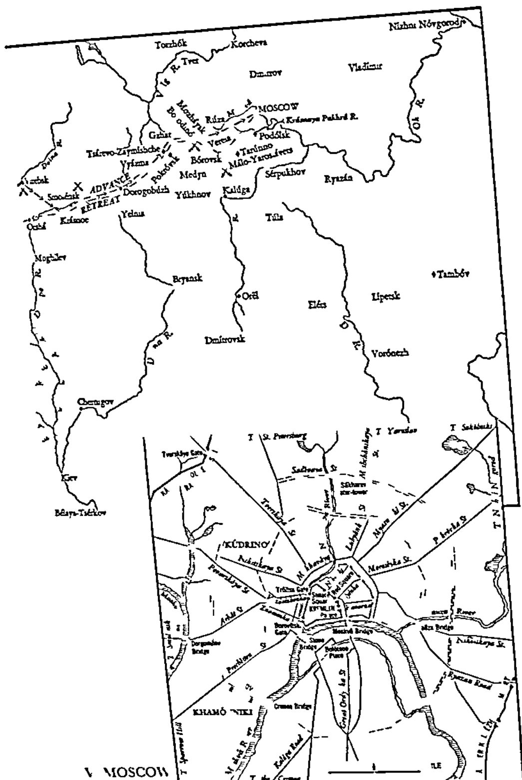
Just so it now seems as if we have only to admit the law of inevitability to destroy the conception of the soul of good and evil and all the institutions of state and church that have been built up on those conceptions

So too like Voltaire in his time uninvited defenders of the law of inevitability today use that law as a weapon against religion though the law of inevitability in history like the law of Copernicus in astronomy far from destroying even strengthens the foundation on which the institutions of state and church are erected

As in the question of astronomy then so in the question of history now the whole difference of opinion is based on the recognition or nonrecognition of something absolute serving as the measure of visible phenomena In astronomy it was the immovability of the earth in history it is the independence of personality—free will

As with astronomy the difficulty of recognizing the motion of the earth lay in abandoning the immediate sensation of the earth's fixity and of the motion of the planets so in history the difficulty of recognizing the subjection of personality to the laws of space time and cause lies in renouncing the direct feeling of the independence of one's own personality But as in astronomy the new view said *It is true that we do not feel the movement of the earth but by admitting its immobility we arrive at absurdity while by admitting its motion (which we do not feel) we arrive at laws* so also in history the new view says *It is true that we are not conscious of our dependence but by admitting our free will we arrive at absurdity while by admitting our dependence on the external world on time and on cause we arrive at laws*

In the first case it was necessary to renounce the consciousness of an unreal immobility in space and to recognize a motion we did not feel in the present case it is similarly necessary to renounce a freedom that does not exist and to recognize a dependence of which we are not conscious



Nizhni Nóvgorod
Torzhók
Korcheva
Tver
Dmitrov
Vladímir
MOSCOW
Mozhaysk
Rúza
Krásnaya Pakhrá R.
Oka R.
Gzhat
Podólsk
Vereya
Tarútino
Tsárevo-Zaymíshche
Vyázma
Bórovsk
Málo-Yaroslávets
ADVANCE
RETREAT
Smolénsk
Dorogobúzh
Medyn
Sérpukhov
Ryazán
Kalúga
Yúkhnov
Krásnoe
Yelnya
Orshá
Túla
Mogilév
Bryansk
Tambóv
Orël
Eléts
Lipetsk
Dmítrovsk
Vorónezh
Chernígov
Kiev
Bélaya-Tsérkov
St. Petersburg
Yaroslavl
Tverskáya Gate
Sadóvaya St.
Tverskáya St.
KÚDRINO
Lubyanka St.
Myasnitskaya St.
Pokróvka St.
Povarskáya St.
Red Square
KREMLIN
Arbát St.
Borovítsk Gate
Moskvá Bridge
Stone Bridge
Dorogomílov Bridge
Prechistenka St.
Ryazan Road
Crimean Bridge
Great Ordynka St.
KHAMÓVNIKI
Kalúga Road
Sparrow Hill
MOSCOW

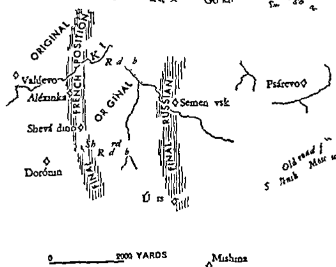
BALTIC SEA

Riga
D na R.
Memel
T uroggen
Dunaburg
Drissa
Drs R.
Polótsk
Tils
Nieme R.
K vno
Sventziany
Kam
Ostróvn
K gsberg
ADVANCE
RETREAT
Glubokoie
Lepel
Dantzic
F edland
Eyla
Barenst
Vilna
V ilya R.
Oshmiany
Borisov
KINGDOM OF PRUSSIA
M lodechn
Minsk
Allens ein
Grodn
Ber zi a R.
Thorn
N em R.
O tr lénka
W lk wysk
P en
DUCHY
Plock
Pultúsk
V l R.
WARSAW
W he R.
Kálisch
OF
B g R.
Bres Li ovsk
PRIPET
Pinsk
Pripet R.
M zyr
WARSAW
MARSHES
KINGDOM OF PRUSSIA
K a R.

0 50 100 MILES

III ADVANCE AND RETREAT OF NAPOLEON 1812

Bezzúbovo
PLAN
Mlloe
Nó oe
R.
Vói
FRENCH
Zakhárino
PLAN



IV BORODINÓ